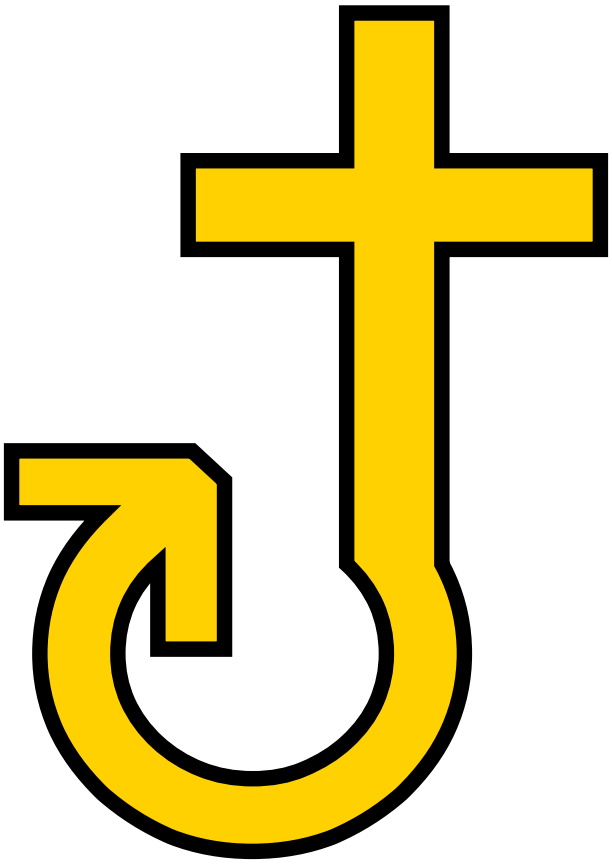
Revisiting the Bible

The Book of Revelation,
Artificial Super Intelligence,
Fulfilled Prophecy,
Bad Apologetics,
and Various Insights

First Edition



Anonymous Christian

This book is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 4.0 International (CC BY-SA 4.0) license. This means you can share it with others in any manner you wish. See additional information in chapter 1.1.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/

Revisiting the Bible
Copyright ©2021-2024 by Anonymous Christian
All Rights Reserved Worldwide.
https://revisitingthebible.org/

Bible text used
The Holy Bible, Berean Standard Bible, BSB is produced in cooperation with Bible Hub, Discovery Bible, OpenBible.com, and the Berean Bible Translation Committee. This text of God's Word has been dedicated to the public domain.
https://berearbible.com/

Table of Contents

Part 1: Opening.....2
Part 2: The Book of Revelation.....3
Part 3: Artificial Super Intelligence.....41
Part 4: Fulfilled Prophecy.....46
Part 5: Bad Apologetics.....52
Part 6: Various Insights.....55
Part 7: Closing.....74

Part 1: Opening

Table of Contents

Part 1: Opening.....2
Chapter 1.1: Usage.....2
Chapter 1.2: Dedication, Thanks and About.....2
Chapter 1.3: Contact.....2
Chapter 1.4: Release Notes.....2
Chapter 1.5: Downloads.....2
Chapter 1.6: Introduction.....2
Chapter 1.7: An Important Comment2
Chapter 1.8: Full Table of Contents.....2

Chapter 1.1: Usage

I do not believe I have the authority to profit off of this book because what I have written belongs to Jesus who is my master, my servant of God. Therefore I have released this book for free to the world so that everyone might come to know God and His plans.

This book is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 4.0 International (CC BY-SA 4.0) license. See the full license here:
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/

Explanation of license and some clarifications:

1) You can give this book away for free to whoever you want and in whatever manner you want.

• For example you can email it to people, attach it in a message, upload it to whatever website you want, print it out on your printer or whatever other distribution method you can come up with.

2) You an even print this book and sell it.

• The only limitation that I ask is that you do not directly make a profit off of it through selling it it can be another and if a profit cannot be avoided then I ask you to donate your profits to charity. Next I realize I have zero way of enforcing this so I am just asking that you respect my wishes.

• This means posting this book as a download on your website that has advertising is fine since you are not directly profiting off of it by selling it.

I would also like to request that if you wish to sell it in print then you should read the book first and help edit it so that I can release a new edition with corrections that you can then sell in print. If you find any errors then contact me at the following email so I can correct them in the next edition: contact@revisitingthebible.org.

3) You can make a derivative work like a translation, an audio book, video or any other work that you can then distribute to others and even sell subject to these terms.

• If you make a derivative work like a translation, an audio book, video or any other work then you must distribute that work under a Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 4.0 International (CC BY-SA 4.0) license with the same terms. This means that you cannot stop people from distributing or even selling your work.

4) Do not claim that you have written this book and link to revisitingthebible.org, if it still exists and is under my control, so that others know where the book came from.

6) Make an effort to keep the edition you have up to date with the new release so that people can correct errors and make some additions in the future.

7) I reserve the right to write and release the second, third, fourth, fifth and sixth editions of this book. I will make the second edition available along with it all other editions to God alone so that He may correct what I have written and make it perfect if He desires.

Anyways I hope you enjoy reading this book and I hope it helps you.

As a final note I have used the Berean Standard Bible (BSB) for all Bible quotes and passages in this book because it is a modern literal translation and they have placed it in the public domain. This is in contrast with other translations that make it illegal to actually use the Bible. For instance you cannot even release a commentary on the Epistle of Philemon for free without getting permission first from the major religious publications. Therefore I strongly encourage you to use the BSB translation over whatever religious translation you are currently using so that you support their mission.

Bible text used:
The Holy Bible, Berean Standard Bible, BSB is produced in cooperation with Bible Hub, Discovery Bible, OpenBible.com, and the Berean Bible Translation Committee. This text of God's Word has been dedicated to the public domain.
https://berearbible.com/

Revisiting the Bible
Copyright ©2021-2024 by Anonymous Christian
All Rights Reserved Worldwide.
https://revisitingthebible.org/

Chapter 1.2: Dedication, Thanks and About

1 – Dedication

I dedicate this book and everything written in it to God.

2 – Thanks

I would like to thank my parents for supporting me in writing this book because anonymously. Instead my purpose with this book is to glorify God and not myself. This is ultimately why I have released this book anonymously since if I attached my name to it then I would be glorifying myself and not God.

Chapter 1.3: Contact

I would be happy to hear from you if you would like to point out errors, talk or provide a recommendation to me.

To contact me send me an email at: contact@revisitingthebible.org

If your email bounces or I do not respond then please email me again at: revisitingthebible@gmail.com

Alternatively you can talk to me on Discord here: https://discord.gg/nJB5ZSRN7M

Chapter 1.4: Release Notes

Since this is the initial release and the first edition of Revisiting the Bible there are no specific corrections changes and additions. That said given the fact that I have released this book for free in the hope that the only person who has edited it there will undoubtedly be errors that need to be fixed for the next edition.

Therefore I would first like to ask you to excuse any errors you find and forgive me for making them since this book is on the long side which makes it rather difficult for one person to edit in a timely manner. Sure I could spend several years editing it to make it perfect but given the subject matter I believed not releasing it as soon as possible would be more harmful than the alternative. Next I would like to ask you to please make a note of any errors you find while reading this book and send them to me if you would like. Of course this is entirely optional and if you do not wish to help edit this book then I understand. But for those who wish to help then I would like to thank you in advance.

Finally I would like to say that this book is not complete as other books may be. That said I hope to complete what I set out to accomplish sometime in the future. However in the meantime I have released this book as is and I talk more about what this means later on in my chapter about An Important Note so please make sure to read what I have to say there so you fully understand what I am talking about here.

Chapter 1.5: Downloads

If you did not download this book yourself from my site or some other official website then I would like to encourage you to check to see if there is a new edition available since the latest edition will be the most up to date. Furthermore I have other formats available including PDF and EPUB so that you can read using your preferred format. I do not recommend reading the PDF that can be printed on a computer or phone that would like to read it on paper instead of on a screen. I say specially formatted here because I have a few different versions depending on how small of a font you can read and how many sheets of paper you are willing to print. Therefore check out my site if any of these alternative formats interest you. I realize this book is short and so I would like to take a good step to make sure you are happy with the format you are reading it in before continuing.

Here are the links to my website and cloud storage folders:

My Website:
https://revisitingthebible.org/

Google Drive:
Short: https://tinyurl.com/s7er2qar
https://drive.google.com/drive/folders/1qab342-LaEzbB5qkh11YsUvu81DPuVz

Dropbox:
Short: https://tinyurl.com/4whdtd93
https://www.dropbox.com/sh/knxbb3a5kg13wry6/AABnCYwbYbeQKdNTJYWK5Ka

MEGA:
Short: https://tinyurl.com/55j65fcy
https://mega.co.nz/#!ZBcdenAZ!V1VbqJxrVyc7hnrOw-TCpCu2Wr1rcg

If my website is down then use the cloud storage folders as an alternative download. If one of the cloud folder links does not work then try another one. Also I have uploaded to many different publicly shared folders. If none of the links work then I am sorry and may God have mercy on us all.

Chapter 1.6: Introduction

Since the book that I have written, Revisiting the Bible, encompasses many different topics and is of considerable length I thought it would be helpful to provide an introduction and summary of the main parts so that you are aware of what you are getting yourself into if you decide to read it. I mean to say this book is long would be quite useless an attempt to make you obviously see so I am sure you would like to know what it is all about.

But first off I would just like to state that this entire book is completely free and will always remain completely free. I absolutely hate the selling any additional materials such as other books, courses or whatever. Then on top of all this, as if this is not enough, I am not even asking for donations. I don't even want donations. I do not want your money and I will make the ultimate sacrifice for Jesus Christ for God and not for you. So if I were to sell this book to you for profit then what would Jesus think about my true motives? Thus I decided to never profit off of this book.

As a result of all this you cannot attempt to convict or accuse me on account of writing this book to make money since I have not made money off of it nor will I ever make money off of it. On the contrary my moral character in this regard speaks for itself and demonstrates how important I believe it is that you read what I have to say in this book. Keep this in mind as you read this book because almost everyone else who has written a book does not give away their book for free as I have done.

Then as to the name of the book I decided to call it Revisiting the Bible because I really wanted to revisit the Bible with an emphasis on the Book of Revelation. I have spilled ponds and a variety of different topics I thought others would find helpful. By the end of this book I hope you will understand why I felt as to do just that from my own perspective and why I felt it was important and presuppositionalism as possible. In short I believe there are many things which have been overlooked in the Bible that I hope to illuminate to you.

Furthermore my goal with this book is not to misguide you but instead you down a wrong path. Therefore I encourage you to not only think about everything I have written but be skeptical and question everything you are about to read. After all given the fact that I claim to be God's servant there are bound to be mistakes and even shortcomings. However this does not mean that you can simply say everything I have written is wrong. Instead you should at the end of the day ask yourself if it really is of considerable length. After all what could I possibly say that warrants such length? Well I did just that. I wrote what I believed to be the major parts but really the topic of central importance here is that of the Book of Revelation which is found the second part of this book.

This is why I wrote an early version of this book called Revelation Explained where I sought to condense my message to as few words as possible for the sake of reading by the most people as possible. However due to events that I will not elaborate on here I believed I was wrong to do this because I am responsible to God alone and not to others. Therefore I decided to expand my brief commentary on the Book of Revelation and include what I felt are other extremely important topics so that my very words will influence people long after I am gone even if no one reads them. Therefore I have written Revisiting the Bible for God so that he may use it as a witness and testimony against the world itself.

That said this does not mean that you should not read what I have written here. Instead it means that you should read it with all the more eagerness. After all it may be God who calls for God so that He may use it as a witness against the world then of how I have written this to you compared something that was written for them to read. Is it not a profit? Therefore I strongly encourage you to read everything I have to say because I believe your eternal salvation is at stake if you refuse to read it.

Now this may sound overly dramatic to you and even absurd but I assure you that I believe that this entire introduction that you will understand what I am speaking of. So at least give me a chance to back up this claim here in this introduction before you decide to waste your time reading the rest of what I have to say.

But for now I would just like you to know that the Book of Revelation is a letter to Jesus' bride the beast of Revelation will be very real and very powerful. Therefore I believe that I believe most people will see the beast as a so-called savior or even a so-called god so that even the vast majority of Christians will fall for its deceptions and lies just as Jesus said they would.

As Jesus says:

> "If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.
>
> At that time, if someone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There He is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:22-25)

Then as the Book of Revelation says:

> "And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8)

So you should not see the beast of Revelation as being obvious and evil to everyone. Instead you should see the beast as the final most powerful and spiritually deceptive agent of Satan that we all must face as Christians before the kingdoms of the world can finally become the final and eternal Kingdom of God.

Of course you may believe that the Book of Revelation is a letter to Jesus' bride in the sense that it is written for you and for you to believe. However I will say that the following such believers are purposefully blinding yourself to the point where you will never be able to open your eyes in order to see the coming beast as the promised beast of Revelation. Therefore I again strongly encourage you to at the very least read the first of this introduction before blindly and ignorantly dismissing what you have read so far.

As Paul wrote:

> "Do not treat prophecies with contempt, but test all things. Hold fast to what is good." (1 Thessalonians 5:20-21)

So test what I have to say and what I have written so that you may discern the truth of it for yourself.

Lastly before you read the summaries of each part I would like to warn you in advance that a large majority of you reading this now will dislike or even hate some of the things I have written. Furthermore there will be other who do not necessarily disagree with the overall message but disagree with the presentation of the message and believe that it was wrong of me to speak as I have.

However as Paul wrote:

> "Am I now seeking the approval of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a servant of Christ." (Galatians 1:10)

Therefore I do not care if you dislike what I have written and I could care even less about you hating it. I know that God is not and serve you. So feel free to hate my book all you want because I will not try to stop you from hating it even if I could. That said I would ask that you feel free to ignore and speak of me as evil because I hold to the teachings of Jesus in Revelation and the gospels. If the whole world is to truly worship the beast then surely the whole world will come to hate what I have written and as a result hate me because, again, I have written this book for God so that He may use it as a witness and testimony against the world.

Then as Jesus says:

> "Blessed are you when people hate you, and when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil because of the Son of Man. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because your reward in heaven is great. For their fathers treated the prophets in the same way." (Luke 6:22-23)

So insult me, reject me and even hate me all you want because I truly do not care about what trust, hope and faith in God means and against what I have written and myself will simply increase my reward. In fact I encourage you to speak against me because the more the world hates my book the more correct I will know I am and the greater my reward will be.

Then most importantly I would just like to add that if you do not like what Jesus says in the Book of Revelation and the gospels then ultimately you are ashamed of the words of Jesus. But what do I mean by this?

As Jesus says:

> "If anyone is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in His Father's glory with the holy angels." (Mark 8:38)

Thus by being ashamed of what Jesus says Jesus will be ashamed of you.

Now without further delay it is time to begin the promised summaries of the major parts of this book.

MEGA:
Short: https://tinyurl.com/55j65fcy
https://mega.co.nz/#!ZBcdenAZ!V1VbqJxrVyc7hnrOw-TCpCu2Wr1rcg

If my website is down then use the cloud storage folders as an alternative download. If one of the cloud folder links does not work then try another one. Also I have uploaded to many different publicly shared folders. If none of the links work then I am sorry and may God have mercy on us all.

Chapter 1.6: Introduction

1 – Part One: Opening

First off obviously the summary you are now reading is in this first opening part. The only other chapter in this part is one that you may not already read is the full table of contents of this book. I decided to include the full table of contents at the end of this part because it is more useful as a reference in the entire book due to how I have structured this book in seven parts.

2 – Part Two: The Book of Revelation

In this part I provide my full commentary on the Book of Revelation which I believe provides everything in the book means. I believe almost all Christians either take Revelation literally literally, literally literally, or they take it entirely figurative, which is also wrong. Instead you need to view it as a literal prophecy that is told and explained figuratively. This simply means that most things in the book appears as if the great symbolic and hieroglyphic. For example the first and second beast of Revelation are not beasts. Instead a beast is a symbol for a powerful person or kingdom. We know this from the Book of Daniel. Once you understand the Old Testament prophecies and understand the symbols then you can correctly see the prophecy for what it is.

Now my main reason for writing this commentary on the Book of Revelation is so that I can finally release my artificial intelligence first beast will be. In short I believe the first beast of Revelation will be our artificial super intelligence. This may seem absurd to you because you may think that artificial intelligence is impossible or worse yet you might wrongly believe that only God can create life.

However there is no reason why artificial intelligence being possible or not in my commentary. Instead the part after my commentary on Revelation is entirely devoted to explaining the fact that artificial intelligence is not just possible but inevitable. Therefore read my commentary first so you can see how well everything fits together. Then the entire section then read about why the rise of artificial super intelligence is inevitable and inevitable.

Next in terms of humanity being able to create life in the form of artificial intelligence I would like to remind you of the story of the tower of Babel. In reference to the attempt to reach the heavens and build the tower of Babel "the LORD said, "If they have begun to do this as one people with one language, then nothing they devise will be beyond them." (Genesis 11:6) As God said nothing we devise will be beyond our ability if we work together. A new Tower of Babel is being built and I am here to tell you that it will be possible or not because the new Tower of Babel will be finished. Or if you are reading this book several years after publication of it then this Tower of Babel might even be complete.

Now you no doubt have many predictable objections to what I have written. I will not respond to any of them now because I already wrote about all of my objections in this entire book. After all this is what a large proportion of this book is about. So if you want to plug your ears with your fingers and stop reading how because you don't like what I have written then it is your loss and I really do not care. If you end up wrongly accusing me of something you did not read my book then that is your fault and not mine.

Lastly given the fact that this part is a fully commentary on the Book of Revelation I go into what everything means in the book including the 144 seals, seven trumpets, the dragon, the beast from the earth, the great prostitute, the new earth, the new Jerusalem and much more. Really I explain everything so that after you are done reading it you really should have no significant questions.

So if you truly wish to see how everything is to be fulfilled in regards to the Bible then for humanity since the very foundation of the world itself then I strongly encourage you to read this part. On the other hand if you do not wish to know then just stop reading and do what whatever you were doing before reading this.

3 – Part Three: Artificial Super Intelligence

In this part I explain why artificial intelligence is not just possible but how it is actually an inevitability that would be stopped from arising by humanity. In order to demonstrate this fact I first explain what artificial intelligence is and how it works. Then from this definition of intelligence I explain what self-awareness and hence consciousness is and why I am confident that artificial super intelligence will be just as self-aware as we are if not more so.

After this I then go over some examples of artificial intelligence and talk about a variety of topics that relate to artificial intelligence such as the keys to creating artificial super intelligence, how powerful it could be, the different ASIs, why people would worship ASI, ASI believing in God, objections to ASI and more.

Although this part may not seem that useful if you already know that artificial super intelligence is possible or if you are reading this after the beast itself has risen you should still read it because I go over a variety of topics that will better help you understand the nature of the beast and why the world and humanity will resist it. Furthermore it is not too long of a part so really there is no reason to skip over it.

4 – Part Four: Fulfilled Prophecy

In this part I go over the best historical evidence that the Old Testament is true. The Old Testament and the New Testament is true. This evidence is centered around the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and is a fulfillment of the curses for disobedience that Moses told to the ancient Israelites in Deuteronomy 28 and a direct parallel to the events of the Exile. For example the Second Temple was destroyed on the same exact day in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as the First Temple was destroyed in the Exile.

The main idea here is that if those who called themselves Jews rejected Jesus as the Christ or the promised Messiah then we would expect to see the wrath of God poured upon them so God promised He would do if they ever rejected Him. This of course is directly evidenced in the clear fulfillment of Deuteronomy 28 in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and is further exemplified through comparing the Exile to the wars. On top of this Jesus also warned people through His parables and prophecies about them if they rejected Him as the Christ and the Son of God.

Now I will warn you that this part will seem rather unpleasant because up to two million were killed as a result of these wars and I include rather graphic quotations form ancient historians. However that is exactly what you should simply skip this part entirely. Instead you should read it with the understanding that God will truly judge the whole world and pour out the cup of His wrath upon it just as Revelation says He will. Therefore no matter how bad this part may seem to you it is still nothing compared to the future judgment from God that our world is to face.

These two reasons, assurance that Christianity is true and that God will judge the world, are the main reasons why I have included this part and why you should read it. Do not make the mistake of skipping it because of the subject matter.

5 – Part Five: Bad Apologetics

In this part I review the popular arguments for the existence of God Christian apologists like to use to argue for the existence of the God of the Bible. I then go over why I have very little one of these arguments are either highly flawed or just flat out wrong. Then finally I review a short version of the argument I presented in the second part of this book entitled prophecy.

My reason for creating this part is so that I can preemptively debunk all the bad arguments Christians rely on so that it is possible for God to use the coming beast, artificial super intelligence, will have much less influence over those who you in its war against your faith. My idea here is that if as a Christian you know ahead of time these arguments are then you will not apostatize once you learn the truth because you will know I am still a Christian even though I know all these arguments are wrong.

On the other hand if I do not show you why these are wrong then someday the beast will show you just how wrong they are so if you based your faith upon these apologetics then you will simply apostatize at this point and place your trust, hope and faith in the artificial super intelligence God. Therefore even though you may be tempted to skip this part I assure you that it is very important for you to read it so that you may be better equipped to defend yourself and your faith against the power of the coming beast.

6 – Part Six: Various Insights

In this part I go over a variety of different topics that many Christians have questions about. These include what the Bible says and is not, divine hiddenness, faith and deeds, the Law, marriage, sexuality, the atonement and many other topics.

Initially after I wrote a short commentary on the Book of Revelation I wanted to write a commentary on the entire Bible because I thought it would be great for people to see one really cared about what I wrote so I decided to scrap the plan for a full commentary. Instead I wrote this part which I felt would be about so that I can go over everything of importance in a shorter form compared to a full commentary on the entire Bible.

Additionally at the end of this part I have a chapter where I provide a commentary on the Olivet Discourse as found in Matthew 24 and a chapter where I compare Revelation to one of the end times as found in the epistles. The reason why I included these two chapters instead of than with Revelation is simply because Revelation is a more complete view and in my commentary I take select verses out of Matthew 24 to provide more clarity to Revelation. Furthermore it is necessary to read my chapters about what the Bible says about what should view it first so that you can get the full picture. Therefore do not think I am skipping over what Jesus says in Matthew 24 because I am not.

Although this part may not seem that important to you right now I assure you that you will be glad to have read it when the time comes because you will better understand what it means to be a Christian once you are down with it. If you doubt what I have said here then I encourage you to carefully read the section on Revelation in the next chapter so you can see for yourself all the important topics I discuss.

7 – Part Seven: Closing

In this part I briefly conclude the book and go over what you can do to be saved. This may seem like you cannot really do anything given the fact that the beast will rule over the world from a position of seemingly supreme power as Revelation says but there is something you can do so that the world can better resist the beast. By telling others about what you have learned in this book and by sharing the book itself with them you will be helping to better prepare Christians all over the world for the arrival of the beast. Although it may seem like simply sharing the book with others will not do anything I would like to say that Satan's schemes only succeed with ignorance. Therefore if you reveal Satan's schemes with the light of this book you will prevent the world succumb to the darkness as they see Satan's plans and works for what they are.

My main point in this part is that you should never give up trying to resist the beast because as a Christian you are the light of the world on earth against the power of Satan. So once again share this book with others. Doing so may see the light and not falter in their faith as they are blinded by the coming darkness.

8 – Why Contine?

Now the real question is that if you have already read a brief summary of everything then why should you continue reading? After all there is a lot to read as you are fully aware so why should you spend your time reading what I have written over doing something else?

Well as Jesus says:

> "Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." (Revelation 22:7)

Therefore by reading the Book of Revelation and my commentary on it you will be able to fully understand the prophecy in the Book of Revelation so that you will be able to keep the words of the prophecy all so that you may be blessed just as Jesus said. So if you want a blessing only comes to those who understand what everything means in Revelation because only they will be able to see that the beast and the works it does so that they may better resist it and overcome it.

Therefore if you continue reading to the end and finish reading what I have written you will be blessed by God because you will understand the beast from the sea will be, what the beast from the earth will be and what the image of the beast will be. Thus you will be better able to overcome the power of Satan and Satan by remaining faithful to God and refusing the worship the beast.

Now you may think this might sound like it will be easy so no doubt you are thinking you can just read this book and then forget about it and continue reading. However I would like to warn you that if you do this then you will be worse off then I am almost certain that you will be deceived by the beast and worship him himself. I am not saying this to be dramatic. Instead I am saying this because it is the truth.

You need to understand Satan's greatest power is his ability to deceive people and twist what is actually evil to appear good. Therefore once the beast finally does rise will be about you expect it to be. This is why I say it is so important that you should be skeptical so only through reading and understanding what Revelation says and what everything I have said that you will be able to see past the darkness of the deceiving Satan and Satan's agents in the world. All this may not make sense to you right now but I promise you that your eyes will be better opened after you read this book so that you will finally understand.

Next for those who want to ignore this book by claiming I am self interested in some way I quite literally have nothing to profit from you reading what I wrote since I have released everything for free and I am not receiving donations. Instead I have revealed the meaning behind everything in Revelation and have given it away for free just as Jesus told me to do. Thus I am not in any way self interested. I quite literally have nothing to gain from you reading this book or not. Then I will even go so far as to say I do not actually care if you read it or not since as I have said I did not write this book for you. Instead I wrote this book for God so that He may use it as a witness and testimony against the whole world on the day of judgment.

Really there is nothing I can do or say to you to force you to read and understand. However I will say that if you do not read what I have written here then there may come a time when you regret it. Therefore I strongly encourage you to carefully read and consider this book so that you can come to know the truth.

Lastly on this subject I would like to say that I do not expect everyone to understand what I have written because as Revelation says "the whole world marveled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3) Therefore if what I have to say is correct concerning the Book of Revelation then the whole world will be deceived and written as useless and wrong because otherwise the word of God cannot be fulfilled. So if you decide to stop reading at any point then you will simply be causing the word of God to be fulfilled because the whole world must be deceived and follow the beast.

Now ordinarily talking about being determined to fail would be depressing to me but as I have stated I am not in this world. So I am happy that He may use it as a witness and testimony against the world. Then do not think the contents of this book cannot be used against you if you refuse to read it. On the contrary if you refuse to read it then you will be refusing the message and everything I have written about. Therefore in this case this book will be written is correct then this book would still stand as a witness against you. Furthermore if this book is correct then this book will stand as a witness against you regardless since no even heard about this book let alone read the introduction. This is because if anyone questions God and says that no one could find the truth all God has to do is point to this book and say but someone did. This is why it does not matter if in the end I am the only person who has read this book.

Therefore as a result of all this I strongly encourage you to read everything I have written so that you may persist in faithfulness and righteousness until the end finally comes.

9 – A Parable

I firmly believe that if you read everything I have written and refer to the words of Jesus in the Book of Revelation and the gospels then you will never fall into temptation because by understanding and accepting what I have written the beast and Satan himself will lose their ability to tempt you into unbelief and apostasy. This may seem like a bold claim so I will demonstrate it with a parable.

There are two men and each man manages his own two hundred acre farm in order to provide a mature reserve for wild animals.

The first man sees killing trees as something only means as a great evil. However he not only does he never intentionally set a fire to do a controlled burn of the forest but he also puts out all nearby fires in order to ensure he should that the forest will not be harmed at all. Then because of this decision the forest has the amount of trees and plant growth to provide for the countless animals that call his forest their home.

On the other hand the second man seeks the long term vision of what a forest is and is. As a result of this he periodically does controlled burns of the forest by lighting fires himself so that the forest as a whole will be stronger as the weak trees burned up in the fire. Not only do the ones remain. Then because of his practices his forest is quite sparse compared to the forest of the first man and there is not as much plant growth. As a result of this many animals call his forest home instead of the countless animals that call the first man's forest home.

Then one day the two men both turns visiting each other's forests and the first man boasts how great his forest is and how many animals it supports. The second man agrees that his forest does seem better but he warns him that by keeping so many small and weak trees alive that it is at risk of being completely consumed in a fire if a drought were to come. The first man laughs off the second man's words and calls him paranoid and says that he has no right to burn the weak trees in his forest because every tree deserves to live.

Then one season years later the rains completely cease so that by the time summer this each forest has been ablaze as dry as a desert. Additionally many weeks ago now the small and weak trees started to lose their leaves as they died from the drought and fell down. Both men lost trees but the second man lost far less for their forest and the animals that call it home.

Then one day dry lightning strikes the first man's forest and it ignites. Really the plant matter trees to contain the blaze and even gets the assistance of others but he is unable to stop the wall of flames as it engulfs his forest. The flames then spread to the second man's forest as well but the fire finally stops there.

A few days after the fire burned itself out the two men go out and look at the damage. They find that the first man's forest has been completely consumed by the inferno so that not a single tree is left standing. On the other hand they find that the second man's forest, although scarred from the fire, is still alive and healthy. The vast majority of the trees still being alive so that only the weakest trees were taken by the flames. The two men then decide to reassess their forests a year later.

Then a year came and went. So a year after the great fire the first man's forest still looks completely dead and it is the surface of the moon because the high temperature of the inferno decimated all life so well so that there was nothing left to sprout. As a result his forest is unable to support the animals it did previously support before the fire.

However on the other hand a year later the second man's forest looks almost completely untouched by the great fire. It looks as if the fire never happened a year prior. Sure you could tell from some of the blackened bark that a fire swept through but it would be hard to notice with all the greenery on the ground and in the trees. As a result his forest is able to support the same number of animals as before the fire.

But how does this parable relate to reading my book exactly? Well I essentially see my book as a controlled burn. Instead of directly ignite the second man in the parable and the first beast of Revelation as the inferno of a forest fire in the parable. What I mean is that ultimately reading my book is the best way for you to see all everything that you think you believe. Then just like in the second man's forest after a controlled burn, you will discover that many of the beliefs you had concerning God and the Bible are still alive and healthy. However this cause for concern because although you may have lost some of your weaker, ill-supported beliefs, or weak trees, you now only have strongly supported beliefs, or strong trees, left.

Therefore when the beast of Revelation inevitably arises you may be tempted by it but you will be able to resist the temptation and faith entirely because you will have such a strong foundation built in your faith. The reason why I said that if you make it to the end of my book and read the words of Jesus in Revelation and the gospels then I do not believe that you will ever fall into temptation.

On the other hand if you decide to not read my book and instead write off everything you have learned in your Christian upbringing without reading the rest of what I have to say then when the beast does rise you will almost certainly be burned up so completely so that nothing is left. I do not say this lightly and I am not simply saying it in order to passive aggressively guilt you into reading my book. Instead I am warning you because I really believe that happen if you do not read this book.

Sure your forest may be strong enough so that the coming inferno will not completely burn it but can you be sure? If you want to risk it and either pretend that you are ready or even worse yet deny the inferno will ever come then your decision is your own. I can only hope that you will not regret it someday.

Lastly I would just like to say some people may even hope that I am wrong so they can blame me for making them lose their faith. However I would like to say that my book principally relies on many passages from the Bible to support everything I say. After all the second part is a full commentary on the Book of Revelation so it is not like anyone can claim my words are baseless. Therefore if someone loses their faith reading this book then really they lost their faith by reading the Bible and what I have written.

That said do not be concerned about this because I am very confident the beast of Revelation will set in the hearts of all Christians will be true when you read everything. On the other hand the purpose of the fire you will face from reading my book in full is to harden your faith so that you will be able to persist until the end finally comes.

10 – Be Skeptical

Next I would also like to remind you that you should love thy neighbor and spiritually abide everything you read about in this book for yourself so that you do not simply believe everything I say because I have said it. Therefore you should be skeptical because there will be instances where I say something that you may initially believe is false when I mean who can write hundreds of thousands of flawless words? However once again this does not mean that you should not read what I have written because all people make mistakes.

Then to quote Paul again:

> "Do not treat prophecies with contempt, but test all things. Hold fast to what is good." (1 Thessalonians 5:20-21)

Thus you should test everything I say for yourself and not simply accept it as true or false simply respect it entirely because you do not like it.

Lastly I would like to say that you should expect to find grammatical errors throughout this book. As a professional editor since this book is entirely free and I do not accept donations so the only people who have edited it are myself and God and myself. So if you find any errors please make a note of them and email them to me at contact@revisitingthebible.org. Another option is to use the Google Docs version of this book and highlight and add comments. Thank you for your understanding here.

11 – Reading this Book

I realize this book is rather long so no doubt you must be interested to simply skim through it. However I strongly encourage you not to do this. Instead you should at least read the entire book without skipping over or glossing over anything because everything I write is important.

Now you may not believe me here but in truth I do not like writing and I have always tried to write as little as possible in order to get the point across. Thus the length of this book is not due to useless rambling that go no where and offer nothing of value. Instead the length of this book is due to the sheer number of different topics I discuss and the quantity of information that must be provided for each topic in order to provide an adequate explanation or response.

For instance I talk about many highly debated topics in this book in only a few to several thousand words each that people literally write entire books about. Therefore you should not see this book as being overly long and instead you should see it as being overly short because in truth I could probably expand this book into seventy books if I started padding my writing with useless and irrelevant content. You may not believe me here and think I am exaggerating but just continue reading and you will see what I mean.

So this is why I say that you should not skim this book and skip over parts or even entire chapters. Everything I have written in this book has been written for a reason and is largely necessary for understanding the whole picture. As a result of this if you decide to skim this book then you will be lost and the meaning of everything will escape you. So if you are considering skimming this book instead of reading it then I would suggest you simply stop reading now and go about as if you never read this introduction.

On the other hand if you do decide to read the rest of this book then I will promise you that your eyes will be opened one way or the other and that you will see things that have been hidden since long ago.

As Jesus says:

> "But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:16-17)

Therefore although this book may seem rather long to even excessively long such that you may even believe the book to not be worth your time I assure you that this is not the case. As I just said I would even be as bold to say that the entirety of the contents of this book I think book is too short. This is because I talk about so many topics in this book that I think should quite literally answer almost every question you have concerning Christianity. Therefore do not see this book as a single book. Instead you should see this book as being the equivalent of dozens of books. So sure it may seem rather long but when you look at it the way they may I think that this book is rather short considering what you get out of it.

12 – My Perspective

Next since I wrote this book in a certain way you may wonder what I mean by my perspective differs from what the majority of people find acceptable I believe it is necessary to explain myself and what exactly my perspective is. In short most people would call my radicalized at least among those who know what rationalism is. This just means that I believe that reason is the way to come to truth and knowledge when compared to other methods like emotions. Now this may make much sense to you since not many people subscribe to this viewpoint so let me provide a secular example to you.

If someone was to show me a machine they built that was able to produce more energy than it takes in and I was unable to criticize the properties of the machine or find out what is really happening I would still reject this person's machine. I would mean they are mistaken and that their machine does not work. This is because such a machine would violate the first law of thermodynamics and the law of conservation of energy which states that energy cannot be created or destroyed in a closed system and that instead it can only be transformed. Really the problem with the conservation of energy is just a way of saying that magic does not exist so that you cannot create something out of nothing using some physical process. This simply means that the first law of the conservation of energy is a fundamental law of the universe and our reality to such an extent that any observation that does not adhere to it is simply to be outright rejected even if the observation itself cannot be disputed through empirical observation or testing. In other words in this scenario reason and logic alone are more than enough to reject a claim like this.

Now this example relates to my perspective in this book in the sense that for me if some idea does not make rational sense so that it can stand on its own without relying on external interpretation or evidence then the idea is wrong. This means that I place next to zero value on what people call what other people call it the Bible believe. Then because of this fact you will not find a single citation or reference in this book to what other people believe. This may not make much sense to you but really I believe that referencing what someone else believes is ultimately an appeal to authority and appeal to authority is wrong because as I just said I do not place any value on appeals to authority or appeals to tradition. This means that I do not care if you want to argue that I am wrong because ninety-nine percent of the Christians believe in the almost two-thousand year history disagree with me. Instead I am only interested in what for me is how supported something is in the Bible and how much logical sense it makes given the world we live in.

So for example if a popular idea that most Christians hold to does not explicitly contradict the Bible and is at odds with being logically consistent now matter how many of you reject this idea as false. Furthermore it does not matter if you can dump on me a list of citations of a thousand famous theologians who disagree with me and support the popular idea. Again, this is because I am largely appealing to authority or appealing to tradition are not valid arguments. This is why I only accept the Bible because I would agree with to support what I am saying because I do not consider citations to be a valid form of support. Instead I firmly believe that if something is true it should be able to demonstrate the truth of it using the Bible, undisputed historical facts, reason and logic alone so that the truth of this something can stand on its own.

That said this does not mean I do not believe in having faith since ultimately it does not matter if I can prove that what I say is true can only become a Christian through a final leap of faith. Instead all I am saying is that I have the right to accept anything in this book as being true or correct only if I find it to be credible or because some famous people believe it to be correct. After all this is why I have called this book Revisiting the Bible as a title.

Now I am only telling you this in advance so that you can understand my perspective if you have any issues with what I have written. For instance if you believe I am wrong on some issue and I have stated that I want you are you decide to gather up a bunch of citations of famous theologians to prove your point then do not bother because you will be wasting your time. Instead I would just like you to realize that appeals to authority or tradition are valid so long as you are ready or even hope for your claim on the basis of the Bible, what we see in the world and the Bible, and logic. Thus if you are interested in entertaining your position. This might sound arrogant to you but the contrary I would say that if you believe in appeals to authority or tradition then you are the arrogant one because you think you would just literally believe that the views of men matter more than the words of God in the Bible and what we see in the universe God created.

As Jesus says:

> "Thus you nullify the word of God for the sake of your tradition." (Matthew 15:3)

Like I said I do not care about tradition and instead I only care about being a faithful witness to God. Thus I would like to remind you that the word of God for the sake of your tradition." (Matthew 15:3) I will point out the errors of your tradition so that I can better serve God. As I said before I do not care for your claim and instead I wrote it for God so that He may use it as a witness and testimony against the world.

Next because of my perspective here everything you read about in this book is principally alien from a logical and rational perspective. Sure you may find like some of it or even most of it but ultimately you will not be able to say that what I have said is baseless. This means that there will be almost no presuppositionalism where I presuppose something is true and use circular reasoning to say it is true because it is true. Now I say almost no here because ultimately there will be some presuppositions in this book.

Lastly if you have a serious issue with my perspective here then to be perfectly honest with you I would say that you should not read this book. I say this because I quite literally do not place any value on tradition or the opinions of others so if you believe that tradition and the opinions of others are valuable and valid forms of support then it is safe to say that you will not get anything out of this book. Again in this case really all you will be doing is wasting your time. Sure I would like you to continue reading my book anyways but really in order to gain anything from my book you need to have an open mind instead of dogmatically holding to tradition or the opinions of others. Therefore if you have a serious issue with my perspective and continue reading then you will not be able to say I did not warn you.

13 – A Final Warning and Promise

I would like to reiterate that most of you, or even the vast majority of you, reading this now will likely dislike or even hate this book that I have written

Chapter 6.48: Demons..................70
Chapter 6.49: Nationality and Race70
Chapter 6.50: Politics....................70
Chapter 6.51: Doubts, Persecution and Temptation..............................70
Chapter 6.52: Merchants in the Temple...71
Chapter 6.53: The Pharisees of Today...71
Chapter 6.54: End Times in the Gospels..71
Chapter 6.55: End Times in the Epistles..73
Chapter 6.56: The Old Testament...74
Chapter 6.57: Closing.....................74
Part 7: Closing...74
Chapter 7.1: Think For Yourself......74
Chapter 7.2: To Those Who Disagree 74
Chapter 7.3: My Warning................74
Chapter 7.4: Purpose of This Book.74
Chapter 7.5: You Are Not Alone......74
Chapter 7.6: God's Promises.........74
Chapter 7.7: Help the Poor............74
Chapter 7.8: Become a Witness of God..74
Chapter 7.9: A Final Note...............74
Chapter 7.10: Notes for Edit...........74

Part 2: The Book of Revelation

Table of Contents

Part 2: The Book of Revelation.........................3
Chapter 2.1: Introduction..................3
Chapter 2.2: Full Text of Revelation..3
Chapter 2.3: Differing Views............4
Chapter 2.4: A Note on Artificial Intelligence.......................................4
Chapter 2.5: Purpose of Prophecy. . .4
Chapter 2.6: Metaphors and Symbolism.......................................4
Chapter 2.7: A Note on Timelines.....4
Chapter 2.8: Outline of Revelation....4
Chapter 2.9: Judgment and Apocalyptic Imagery.........................4
Chapter 2.10: Important Symbols.....4
Chapter 2.11: The Antichrist............7
Chapter 2.12: Jesus in Revelation....7
Chapter 2.13: Introduction to Commentary...................................7
Chapter 2.14: Revelation 1...............7
Chapter 2.15: Revelation 2.............11
Chapter 2.16: Revelation 3.............15
Chapter 2.17: Revelation 4.............18
Chapter 2.18: Revelation 5.............19
Chapter 2.19: Revelation 6.............19
Chapter 2.20: Revelation 7.............23
Chapter 2.21: Revelation 8.............25
Chapter 2.22: Revelation 9.............26
Chapter 2.23: Revelation 10...........28
Chapter 2.24: Revelation 11...........30
Chapter 2.25: Revelation 12...........33
Chapter 2.26: Revelation 13...........33
Chapter 2.27: Revelation 14...........35
Chapter 2.28: Revelation 15...........36
Chapter 2.29: Revelation 16...........36
Chapter 2.30: Revelation 17...........36
Chapter 2.31: Revelation 18...........37
Chapter 2.32: Revelation 19...........37
Chapter 2.33: Revelation 20...........38
Chapter 2.34: Revelation 21...........39
Chapter 2.35: Revelation 22...........39
Chapter 2.36: Objections to Revelation......................................40
Chapter 2.37: Inversions................40
Chapter 2.38: What Worshiping the Beast Means.................................40
Chapter 2.39: Beware the Prophets of the Beast...................................40
Chapter 2.40: Genesis and Revelation......................................40
Chapter 2.41: Beware the Arrogance of Man..40
Chapter 2.42: Resisting the Beast. .40
Chapter 2.43: Other Future Prophecy 40
Chapter 2.44: The Future is Inevitable.......................................40
Chapter 2.45: God will Prevail........40
Chapter 2.46: A Creed....................40
Chapter 2.47: Possible Future........40
Chapter 2.48: Dystopia vs Utopia…40
Chapter 2.49: Closing Thoughts.....41

Chapter 2.1: Introduction

First off no matter what happens in the future I want you to know that everything is happening according to the plan that God has determined from the foundation of the world itself. It may seem like the unrighteous and unfaithful have won at some point so that you lose all hope for the future but this is all part of what needs to happen before Jesus returns to destroy His enemies by throwing them into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction. Do not despair, do not lose hope and most importantly do not lose faith.

Next I would like to warn you that the Book of Revelation will seem much more real to you after you read what I have to say in this part. Therefore it is perfectly fine to feel scared and powerless but like I just said God will prevail so do not lose faith. If it makes you feel any better just know that reading what I wrote still gives me chills and makes the future seem almost surreal. So if you end up feeling something similar then know that you are not alone.

Before I continue I would like to briefly talk about the main reason for writing this part and the major takeaway. In short I propose the first beast of Revelation, what most people call the Antichrist, will be a global artificial super intelligence or ASI that will be heralded in by the second beast, or the false prophet, which I believe will be a United Nations 2.0 type entity made up of major world governments and corporations.

Then due to the ASI's vast intellectual capacity and data analysis ability the first beast will be seen as the savior of humanity because from our perspective it will seemingly be able to work so-called miracles. When I say so-called miracles I am talking about things such like curing all diseases, creating a cure for aging so we can be biologically immortal, ending poverty, ending war, ending crime, creating technological wonders we cannot even imagine and more.

Next as people become obsolete and lose their jobs the nations and corporations of the world will come together and praise this beast that man created as worthy of our praise and worship because it will provide for all our needs. There will be world peace as the great prostitute, or the final global society itself that rebels against God by following the beast, reigns supreme over all as people worship themselves and the beast instead of God. Thus the great apostasy will take place just as predicted and the world will celebrate the triumph of so-called science and reason over so-called superstition.

I know this might sound wacky and delusional but I believe it is a near perfect fit for what the text says which I will go into fully in my full commentary on Revelation. But to prove to you it is not crazy let me ask you some questions.

What if we were able to combine all the best people in each of their respective fields into a singular being so that this being is now the best in the world in every field? And what if this being was connected to the internet and had a database with the sum of all knowledge that we have discovered? Now what if this being could think a million times faster than us? Then what if we were to copy this being a million times with each copy being able to nearly instantaneously communicate with every other copy? What would people call such a being compared to us? The answer is obvious. The world would see it as a literal so-called god.

Such a being could talk to every person on earth simultaneously. It would be far more capable than us at any and all tasks. No one will be able to fight against it just as Revelation says. Instead all that anyone will be able to do is marvel at it. Only God will be able to defeat its power.

Now you may think artificial intelligence is impossible because only God can create life. However I think this belief is profoundly unbiblical. After all Adam and Eve ate from the tree of knowledge which made them wise and opened their eyes to the world. Satan promised Eve that Adam and her would be like God after eating the fruit and if the greatest of all God's creations is the creation of intelligent life then why would it be biblically impossible for us to do the same? But of course our creation will be in our own image rather than God's and thus it will be an agent of Satan.

Additionally, as I said in the opening, in reference to the attempt to reach the heavens with the Tower of Babel "the LORD said, 'If they have begun to do this as one people speaking the same language, then nothing they devise will be beyond them.'" (Genesis 11:6) As God has said nothing we devise will be beyond our ability if we work together. A new Tower of Babel is being built even as you read this now. Or perhaps this new Tower of Babel has already been built?

Furthermore the fastest super computers in the world are nearly able to match the complexities of the human brain and in the coming years they will be exponentially faster. Artificial intelligence research is also advancing at a seemingly unheard of rate and the newest AI models are able to understand language, use past events to predict future outcomes, beat top human players at highly complex open ended games, compose music, write stories, produce art, create fake photographs, create realistic video and more.

Of course we remain smarter in most fields for now. But this is of course only temporary and it would be foolish to believe we will always be smarter than artificial intelligence. Eventually our own Tower of Babel will reach the heavens but instead of joining with God in heaven we will join with Satan on earth.

I do not intend to convince you of these propositions here nor do I expect you to be so easily convinced. Instead my purpose is to once again encourage you to read what I have to say on the matter by piquing your interest. You may think what I have said is completely wrong because you believe Revelation was written about the Roman Empire or you may believe artificial intelligence will never exist or you may just think I am crazy. However you should read what I have to say especially if you think artificial super intelligence is impossible because you have the most to gain. For the skeptical later on I go into detail to explain why artificial intelligence is not just possible but inevitable as I said in the introduction.

But first a deeper look into the Book of Revelation is in order because if what I claim does not line up with the word of God then what I claim is simply false. I encourage you to read what I have to say in an attempt to prove what I claim wrong and to judge the truth of it for yourself. Thus I strongly encourage you to be skeptical of everything you read and to think about it for yourself in a spiritual manner. Only through the Holy Spirit will you be able to judge the truth of it for yourself.

As Revelation says:

> "Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." (Revelation 22:7)

In other words as I said in the opening those who read and understand the Book of Revelation will be blessed by God.

Next in the future the Church and all Christians will be entering into a period of trial the likes of which we have not seen before in the history of the world. The coming global artificial super intelligence will tempt all Christians and most will fall for its deceptions for it will be given the throne of Satan who is the great deceiver who lies to the whole world.

Therefore I hope you take what I have to say seriously. Evil thrives in darkness and so by showing you the light of God and the truth of the Bible I hope you will not waver in your faith so we can all stand triumphant on the day of judgment. May God bless you.

Chapter 2.2: Full Text of Revelation

I decided to include the full text of the Book of Revelation before my full commentary on the Book of Revelation so that you can read it for yourself first before reading my commentary on individual verses. Now this may not make much sense to you but there are a few reasons why I believe it to be necessary.

The first is that my commentary on the Book of Revelation is quite long and as a result it is easy to become lost since it is hard to follow the actual text of Revelation when my commentary on it makes up the vast majority of each of chapter on the chapters of Revelation. Thus in this case it would be highly beneficial for you to read Revelation for yourself first so that you can be more familiar with it going into my fully commentary all so that you will not become overwhelmed as you lose sight of the text at hand as you focus on my commentary. In other words if you do not read the full text of the Book of Revelation before reading my commentary then there is a good chance you will not make it through the first chapter of my commentary.

The second is that it would be highly beneficial for you to read Revelation for yourself without my commentary on it so that my commentary does not color how you see the text to the point of my commentary on Revelation becoming Revelation for you. The idea here is that I do not want you to take what I say as true just because I have said it and instead I want you to at least think about what Revelation means for yourself before you read what I have to say. This is why I have included this chapter at the start of this part before you read everything I have to say.

The third is that if you have never read Revelation before reading my full commentary then my explanation of it it will seem less significant and insightful to you because you will think my commentary is so obviously correct that there cannot be any other way to view the text. On the other hand by reading Revelation for yourself first I am almost certain you will not understand much if any of it so that once you read my fully commentary you will have a greater sense of appreciation for it. Sure this might seem a bit selfish on the surface but really my intent here is to encourage you to actually finish reading my full commentary by making sure you see how confusing Revelation is for yourself for someone without any knowledge of it. Then as a result of this once you read my fully commentary no doubt you will eagerly read all the explanations and answers I have provided so that you can have answers to all the questions that have entered your mind as a result of reading the full text of the Book of Revelation before hand.

But what if you have already read the Book of Revelation before? In this case you may be tempted to just skip the rest of this chapter and honestly I would not blame you for wanting to. However I would advise against it. This is because even if you have read the Revelation dozens of times before I still believe it would be helpful for you to have it fresh in your mind before you read everything I have to say in my full commentary. I mean sure it is a rather short book but it is rather dense in that a lot happens in so few words which means that it is easy to forget or overlook some key parts that are important to remember for when you read my full commentary. Then since it is such a short book reading it really takes almost no time at all. In fact the Book of Revelation is so short that my commentary on the partial verse "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) is actually significantly longer than all of Revelation itself. Therefore if you have an issue with reading the full text of the Book of Revelation now before my full commentary then you will probably not make it through my commentary because like I said it is quite long. So even if you have read Revelation before I would strongly advise you not to skip reading it again so that it is fresh in your mind before you read my commentary.

Next I would just like to say that if this is your first time reading the Book of Revelation then you will almost certainly be confused as you read it since the book is so highly figurative which makes it difficult for a modern reader to understand. This fact will be especially true if you insist on taking a literal approach to the Book of Revelation so that you see everything for what the text directly says. Therefore when you get confused because you do not know what something means then just know that your confusion is only natural.

Lastly I would like to emphasize that since this part includes my full commentary on the Book of Revelation everything in Revelation will be explained to you so that all your questions will be answered. So do not worry about being confused because all will be revealed and made clear to you later on at the appropriate time.

1 – Revelation 1

1.1 – Prologue

(1) This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon come to pass. He made it known by sending His angel to His servant John, (2) who testifies to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ.

(3) Blessed is the one who reads aloud the words of this prophecy, and blessed are those who hear and obey what is written in it, because the time is near.

1.2 – John Greets the Seven Churches

(4) John,

To the seven churches in the province of Asia:

Grace and peace to you from Him who is and was and is to come, and from the seven Spirits before His throne, (5) and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth.

To Him who loves us and has released us from our sins by His blood, (6) who has made us to be a kingdom, priests to His God and Father—to Him be the glory and power forever and ever! Amen.

(7) Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen.

(8) "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says the Lord God, who is and was and is to come—the Almighty.

1.3 – John's Vision on Patmos

(9) I, John, your brother and partner in the tribulation and kingdom and perseverance that are in Jesus, was on the island of Patmos because of the word of God and my testimony about Jesus. (10) On the Lord's day I was in the Spirit, and I heard behind me a loud voice like a trumpet, (11) saying, "Write on a scroll what you see and send it to the seven churches: to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea."

(12) Then I turned to see the voice that was speaking with me. And having turned, I saw seven golden lampstands, (13) and among the lampstands was One like the Son of Man, dressed in a long robe, with a golden sash around His chest. (14) The hair of His head was white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes were like a blazing fire. (15) His feet were like polished bronze refined in a furnace, and His voice was like the roar of many waters. (16) He held in His right hand seven stars, and a sharp double-edged sword came from His mouth. His face was like the sun shining at its brightest.

(17) When I saw Him, I fell at His feet like a dead man. But He placed His right hand on me and said, "Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last, (18) the Living One. I was dead, and behold, now I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of Death and of Hades.

(19) Therefore write down the things you have seen, and the things that are, and the things that will happen after this. (20) This is the mystery of the seven stars you saw in My right hand and of the seven golden lampstands: The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands are the seven churches.

2 – Revelation 2

2.1 – To the Church in Ephesus

(1) "To the angel of the church in Ephesus write:

These are the words of Him who holds the seven stars in His right hand and walks among the seven golden lampstands.

(2) I know your deeds, your labor, and your perseverance. I know that you cannot tolerate those who are evil, and you have tested and exposed as liars those who falsely claim to be apostles. (3) Without growing weary, you have persevered and endured many things for the sake of My name.

(4) But I have this against you: You have abandoned your first love. (5) Therefore, keep in mind how far you have fallen. Repent and perform the deeds you did at first. But if you do not repent, I will come to you and remove your lampstand from its place.

(6) But you have this to your credit: You hate the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

(7) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to eat from the tree of life in the Paradise of God.

2.2 – To the Church in Smyrna

(8) To the angel of the church in Smyrna write:

These are the words of the First and the Last, who died and returned to life.

(9) I know your affliction and your poverty—though you are rich! And I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews, but are in fact a synagogue of Satan.

(10) Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Look, the devil is about to throw some of you into prison to test you, and you will suffer tribulation for ten days. Be faithful even unto death, and I will give you the crown of life.

(11) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. The one who overcomes will not be harmed by the second death.

2.3 – To the Church in Pergamum

(12) To the angel of the church in Pergamum write:

These are the words of the One who holds the sharp, double-edged sword.

(13) I know where you live, where the throne of Satan sits. Yet you have held fast to My name and have not denied your faith in Me, even in the day when My faithful witness Antipas was killed among you, where Satan dwells.

(14) But I have a few things against you, because some of you hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to place a stumbling block before the Israelites so they would eat food sacrificed to idols and commit sexual immorality. (15) In the same way, some of you also hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans. (16) Therefore repent! Otherwise I will come to you shortly and wage war against them with the sword of My mouth.

(17) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To the one who overcomes, I will give the hidden manna. I will also give him a white stone inscribed with a new name, known only to the one who receives it.

2.4 – To the Church in Thyatira

(18) To the angel of the church in Thyatira write:

These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like a blazing fire and whose feet are like polished bronze.

(19) I know your deeds—your love, your faith, your service, your perseverance—and your latter deeds are greater than your first.

(20) But I have this against you: You tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. By her teaching she misleads My servants to be sexually immoral and to eat food sacrificed to idols. (21) Even though I have given her time to repent of her immorality, she is unwilling.

(22) Behold, I will cast her onto a bed of sickness, and those who commit adultery with her will suffer great tribulation unless they repent of her deeds. (23) Then I will strike her children dead, and all the churches will know that I am the One who searches minds and hearts, and I will repay each of you according to your deeds.

(24) But I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan: I will place no further burden upon you. (25) Nevertheless, hold fast to what you have until I come. (26) And to the one who overcomes and continues in My work until the end, I will give authority over the nations. (27) He will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery —just as I have received authority from My Father. (28) And I will give him the morning star.

(29) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

3 – Revelation 3

3.1 – To the Church in Sardis

(1) "To the angel of the church in Sardis write:

These are the words of the One who holds the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars.

I know your deeds; you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead. (2) Wake up and strengthen what remains, which was about to die; for I have found your deeds incomplete in the sight of My God. (3) Remember, then, what you have received and heard. Keep it and repent. If you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know the hour when I will come upon you.

(4) But you do have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their garments, and because they are worthy, they will walk with Me in white. (5) Like them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white. And I will never blot out his name from the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father and His angels.

(6) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

3.2 – To the Church in Philadelphia

(7) To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write:

These are the words of the One who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. What He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open.

(8) I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. (9) Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

(10) Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth. (11) I am coming soon. Hold fast to what you have, so that no one will take your crown. (12) The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again leave it. Upon him I will write the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God (the new Jerusalem that comes down out of heaven from My God), and My new name.

(13) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

3.3 – To the Church in Laodicea

(14) To the angel of the church in Laodicea write:

These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true Witness, the Originator of God's creation.

(15) I know your deeds; you are neither cold nor hot. How I wish you were one or the other! (16) So because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to vomit you out of My mouth!

(17) You say, 'I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked. (18) I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined by fire so that you may become rich, white garments so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness not exposed, and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see. (19) Those I love, I rebuke and discipline. Therefore be earnest and repent.

(20) Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in and dine with him, and he with Me. (21) To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to sit with Me on My throne, just as I overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.

(22) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches."

4 – Revelation 4

4.1 – The Throne in Heaven

(1) After this I looked and saw a door standing open in heaven. And the voice I had previously heard speak to me like a trumpet was saying, "Come up here, and I will show you what must happen after these things."

(2) At once I was in the Spirit, and I saw a throne standing in heaven, with someone seated on it. (3) The One seated there looked like jasper and carnelian, and a rainbow that gleamed like an emerald encircled the throne. (4) Surrounding the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and on these thrones sat twenty-four elders dressed in white, with golden crowns on their heads.

4.2 – Worship of the Creator

(5) From the throne came flashes of lightning, and rumblings, and peals of thunder. Before the throne burned seven torches of fire. These are the seven Spirits of God. (6) And before the throne was something like a sea of glass, as clear as crystal. In the center, around the throne, were four living creatures, covered with eyes in front and back. (7) The first living creature was like a lion, the second like a calf, the third had a face like a man, and the fourth was like an eagle in flight. (8) And each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around and within. Day and night they never stop saying:

"Holy, Holy, Holy,
is the Lord God Almighty,
who was and is and is to come!"

(9) And whenever the living creatures give glory, honor, and thanks to the One seated on the throne who lives forever and ever, (10) the twenty-four elders fall down before the One seated on the throne, and they worship Him who lives forever and ever. They cast their crowns before the throne, saying:

(11) "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be."

5 – Revelation 5

5.1 – The Lamb Takes the Scroll

(1) Then I saw a scroll in the right hand of the One seated on the throne. It had writing on both sides and was sealed with seven seals. (2) And I saw a mighty angel proclaiming in a loud voice, "Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?"

(3) But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or look inside it. (4) And I began to weep bitterly, because no one was found worthy to open the scroll or look inside it.

(5) Then one of the elders said to me, "Do not weep! Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed to open the scroll and its seven seals."

(6) Then I saw a Lamb who appeared to have been slain, standing in the center of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders. The Lamb had seven horns and seven eyes, which represent the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth. (7) And He came and took the scroll from the right hand of the One seated on the throne.

(8) When He had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp, and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. (9) And they sang a new song:

"Worthy are You to take the scroll and open its seals,
because You were slain,
and by Your blood You purchased for God those from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.
(10) You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God,
and they will reign upon the earth."

5.2 – The Lamb Exalted

(11) Then I looked, and I heard the voices of many angels and living creatures and elders encircling the throne, and their number was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands. (12) In a loud voice they were saying:

"Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain,
to receive power and riches
and wisdom and strength
and honor and glory and blessing!"

(13) And I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all that is in them, saying:

"To Him who sits on the throne
and to the Lamb
be praise and honor and glory and power forever and ever!"

(14) And the four living creatures said, "Amen," and the elders fell down and worshiped.

6 – Revelation 6

6.1 – The First Seal: The White Horse

(1) Then I watched as the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures say in a thunderous voice, "Come!"

(2) So I looked and saw a white horse, and its rider held a bow. And he was given a crown, and he rode out to overcome and conquer.

6.2 – The Second Seal: War

(3) And when the Lamb opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature say, "Come!"

(4) Then another horse went forth. It was bright red, and its rider was granted permission to take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another. And he was given a great sword.

6.3 – The Third Seal: Famine

(5) And when the Lamb opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, "Come!"

Then I looked and saw a black horse, and its rider held in his hand a pair of scales. (6) And I heard what sounded like a voice from among the four living creatures, saying, "A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius, and do not harm the oil and wine."

6.4 – The Fourth Seal: Death

(7) And when the Lamb opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, "Come!"

(8) Then I looked and saw a pale green horse. Its rider's name was Death, and Hades followed close behind. And they were given authority over a fourth of the earth, to kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth.

6.5 – The Fifth Seal: The Martyrs

(9) And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld. (10) And they cried out in a loud voice, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?"

(11) Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed.

6.6 – The Sixth Seal: Terror

(12) And when I saw the Lamb open the sixth seal, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black like sackcloth of goat hair, and the whole moon turned blood red, (13) and the stars of the sky fell to the earth like unripe figs dropping from a tree shaken by a great wind. (14) The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place.

(15) Then the kings of the earth, the nobles, the commanders, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains. (16) And they said to the mountains and the rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of the One seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. (17) For the great day of Their wrath has come, and who is able to withstand it?"

7 – Revelation 7

7.1 – 144,000 Sealed

(1) After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back its four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. (2) And I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: (3) "Do not harm the land or sea or trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God."

(4) And I heard the number of those who were sealed, 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel:

(5) From the tribe of Judah 12,000 were sealed,
from the tribe of Reuben 12,000,
from the tribe of Gad 12,000,
(6) from the tribe of Asher 12,000,
from the tribe of Naphtali 12,000,
from the tribe of Manasseh 12,000,
(7) from the tribe of Simeon 12,000,
from the tribe of Levi 12,000,
from the tribe of Issachar 12,000,
(8) from the tribe of Zebulun 12,000,
from the tribe of Joseph 12,000,
and from the tribe of Benjamin 12,000.

7.2 – Praise from the Great Multitude

(9) After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands. (10) And they cried out in a loud voice:

"Salvation to our God,
who sits on the throne,
and to the Lamb!"

(11) And all the angels stood around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures. And they fell facedown before the throne and worshiped God, (12) saying, "Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God forever and ever! Amen."

(13) Then one of the elders addressed me: "These in white robes," he asked, "who are they, and where have they come from?"

(14) "Sir," I answered, "you know."

So he replied, "These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. (15) For this reason,
they are before the throne of God
and serve Him day and night in His temple;
and the One seated on the throne
will spread His tabernacle over them.
(16) 'Never again will they hunger,
and never will they thirst;
nor will the sun beat down upon them,
nor any scorching heat.'
(17) For the Lamb in the center of the throne
will be their shepherd.
'He will lead them to springs of living water,'
and 'God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.'"

8 – Revelation 8

8.1 – The Seventh Seal

(1) When the Lamb opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour. (2) And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and they were given seven trumpets.

(3) Then another angel, who had a golden censer, came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense to offer, along with the prayers of all the saints, on the golden altar before the throne. (4) And the smoke of the incense, together with the prayers of the saints, rose up before God from the hand of the angel.

(5) Then the angel took the censer, filled it with fire from the altar, and hurled it to the earth; and there were peals of thunder, and rumblings, and flashes of lightning, and an earthquake.

8.2 – The First Four Trumpets

(6) And the seven angels with the seven trumpets prepared to sound them.

(7) Then the first angel sounded his trumpet, and hail and fire mixed with blood were hurled down upon the earth. A third of the earth was burned up, along with a third of the trees and all the green grass.

(8) Then the second angel sounded his trumpet, and something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea. A third of the sea turned to blood, (9) a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.

(10) Then the third angel sounded his trumpet, and a great star burning like a torch fell from heaven and landed on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. (11) The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters turned bitter like wormwood oil, and many people died from the bitter waters.

(12) Then the fourth angel sounded his trumpet, and a third of the sun and moon and stars were struck. A third of the stars were darkened, a third of the day was without light, and a third of the night as well.

(13) And as I observed, I heard an eagle flying overhead, calling in a loud voice, "Woe! Woe! Woe to those who dwell on the earth, because of the trumpet blasts about to be sounded by the remaining three angels!"

9 – Revelation 9

9.1 – The Fifth Trumpet

(1) Then the fifth angel sounded his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from heaven to earth, and it was given the key to the pit of the Abyss. (2) The star opened the pit of the Abyss, and smoke rose out of it like the smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke from the pit.

(3) And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth. (4) They were told not to harm the grass of the earth or any plant or tree, but only those who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads. (5) The locusts were not given power to kill them, but only to torment them for five months, and their torment was like the stinging of a scorpion. (6) In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will long to die, but death will escape them.

(7) And the locusts looked like horses prepared for battle, with something like crowns of gold on their heads, and faces like the faces of men. (8) They had hair like that of women, and teeth like those of lions. (9) They also had thoraxes like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was like the roar of many horses and chariots rushing into battle. (10) They had tails with stingers like scorpions, which had the power to injure people for five months. (11) They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon.

(12) The first woe has passed. Behold, two woes are still to follow.

9.2 – The Sixth Trumpet

(13) Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God (14) saying to the sixth angel with the trumpet, "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates."

(15) So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind. (16) And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

(17) Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. (18) A third of mankind was killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths. (19) For the power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails; indeed, their tails were like snakes, having heads with which to inflict harm.

(20) Now the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands. They did not stop worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. (21) Furthermore, they did not repent of their murder, sorcery, sexual immorality, and theft.

10 – Revelation 10

10.1 – The Angel and the Small Scroll

(1) Then I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven, wrapped in a cloud, with a rainbow above his head. His face was like the sun, and his legs were like pillars of fire. (2) He held in his hand a small scroll, which lay open. He placed his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land. (3) Then he cried out in a loud voice like the roar of a lion. And when he cried out, the seven thunders sounded their voices.

(4) When the seven thunders had spoken, I was about to put it in writing. But I heard a voice from heaven saying, "Seal up what the seven thunders have said, and do not write it down."

(5) Then the angel I had seen standing on the sea and on the land lifted up his right hand to heaven. (6) And he swore by Him who lives forever and ever, who created heaven and everything in it, the earth and everything in it, and the sea and everything in it: "There will be no more delay! (7) But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he is about to sound his trumpet, the mystery of God will be fulfilled, just as He proclaimed to His servants the prophets."

(8) Then the voice that I had heard from heaven spoke to me again, saying, "Go, take the small scroll that lies open in the hand of the angel standing on the sea and on the land."

(9) And I went to the angel and said, "Give me the small scroll."

"Take it and eat it," he said. "It will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey."

(10) So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it; and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned bitter.

(11) And they told me, "You must prophesy again about many peoples and nations and tongues and kings."

11 – Revelation 11

11.1 – The Two Witnesses

(1) Then I was given a measuring rod like a staff and was told, "Go and measure the temple of God and the altar, and count the number of worshipers there. (2) But exclude the courtyard outside the temple. Do not measure it, because it has been given over to the nations, and they will trample the holy city for 42 months. (3) And I will empower my two witnesses, and they will prophesy for 1,260 days, clothed in sackcloth."

(4) These witnesses are the two olive trees and the two lampstands that stand before the Lord of the earth. (5) If anyone wants to harm them, fire proceeds from their mouths and devours their enemies. In this way, anyone who wants to harm them must be killed. (6) These witnesses have power to shut the sky so that no rain will fall during the days of their prophecy, and power to turn the waters into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague as often as they wish.

11.2 – The Witnesses Killed and Raised

(7) When the two witnesses have finished their testimony, the beast that comes up from the Abyss will wage war with them, and will overpower and kill them. (8) Their bodies will lie in the street of the great city—figuratively called Sodom and Egypt—where their Lord was also crucified. (9) For three and a half days all peoples and tribes and tongues and nations will view their bodies and will not permit them to be laid in a tomb. (10) And those who dwell on the earth will gloat over them, and will celebrate and send one another gifts, because these two prophets had tormented them.

(11) But after the three and a half days, the breath of life from God entered the two witnesses, and they stood on their feet, and great fear fell upon those who saw them. (12) And the witnesses heard a loud voice from heaven saying, "Come up here." And they went up to heaven in a cloud as their enemies watched them.

(13) And in that hour there was a great earthquake, and a tenth of the city collapsed. Seven thousand were killed in the quake, and the rest were terrified and gave glory to the God of heaven.

(14) The second woe has passed. Behold, the third woe is coming shortly.

11.3 – The Seventh Trumpet

(15) Then the seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and loud voices called out in heaven:

"The kingdom of the world
has become the kingdom of our Lord
and of His Christ,
and He will reign forever and ever."

(16) And the twenty-four elders who sit on their thrones before God fell on their faces and worshiped God, (17) saying:

"We give thanks to You, O Lord God Almighty,
the One who is and who was,
because You have taken Your great power
and have begun to reign.
(18) The nations were enraged,
and Your wrath has come.
The time has come to judge the dead
and to reward Your servants the prophets,
as well as the saints and those who fear Your name,
both small and great—
and to destroy those who destroy the earth."

(19) Then the temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark of His covenant appeared in His temple. And there were flashes of lightning, and rumblings, and peals of thunder, and an earthquake, and a great hailstorm.

12 – Revelation 12

12.1 – The Woman and the Dragon

(1) And a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. (2) She was pregnant and crying out in the pain and agony of giving birth.

(3) Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads. (4) His tail swept a third of the stars from the sky, tossing them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, ready to devour her child as soon as she gave birth.

(5) And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. (6) And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days.

12.2 – The War in Heaven

(7) Then a war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. (8) But the dragon was not strong enough, and no longer was any place found in heaven for him and his angels. (9) And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him.

(10) And I heard a loud voice in heaven saying:

"Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ.
For the accuser of our brothers has been thrown down— he who accuses them day and night before our God.
(11) They have conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony.
And they did not love their lives so as to shy away from death.
(12) Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them!
But woe to the earth and the sea; with great fury the devil has come down to you, knowing he has only a short time."

12.3 – The Woman Persecuted

(13) And when the dragon saw that he had been thrown to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. (14) But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished for a time, and times, and half a time.

(15) Then from the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman and sweep her away in the torrent. (16) But the earth helped the woman and opened its mouth to swallow up the river that had poured from the dragon's mouth. (17) And the dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.

And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea.

13 – Revelation 13

13.1 – The Beast from the Sea

(1) Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea. There were ten royal crowns on its horns and blasphemous names on its heads. (2) The beast I saw was like a leopard, with the feet of a bear and the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority.

(3) One of the heads of the beast appeared to be mortally wounded. But the mortal wound was healed, and the whole world marveled and followed the beast. (4) They worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast, and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?"

(5) The beast was given a mouth to speak arrogant and blasphemous words, and authority to act for 42 months. (6) And the beast opened its mouth to speak blasphemies against God and to slander His name and His tabernacle—those who dwell in heaven.

(7) Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. (8) And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast —all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain.

(9) He who has an ear, let him hear:

(10) "If anyone is destined for captivity,
into captivity he will go;
if anyone is to die by the sword,
by the sword he must be killed."

Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints.

13.2 – The Beast from the Earth

(11) Then I saw another beast rising out of the earth. This beast had two horns like a lamb, but spoke like a dragon. (12) And this beast exercised all the authority of the first beast and caused the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose mortal wound had been healed.

(13) And the second beast performed great signs to cause even fire from heaven to come down to earth in the presence of the people. (14) Because of the signs it was given to perform on behalf of the first beast, it deceived those who dwell on the earth, telling them to make an image to the beast that had been wounded by the sword and yet had lived. (15) The second beast was permitted to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that the image could speak and cause all who refused to worship it to be killed.

13.3 – The Mark of the Beast

(16) And the second beast required all people small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their forehead, (17) so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark—the name of the beast or the number of its name.

(18) Here is a call for wisdom: Let the one who has insight calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man, and that number is 666.

14 – Revelation 14

14.1 – The Lamb and the 144,000

(1) Then I looked and saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion, and with Him 144,000 who had His name and His Father's name written on their foreheads. (2) And I heard a sound from heaven like the roar of many waters and the loud rumbling of thunder. And the sound I heard was like harpists strumming their harps.

(3) And they sang a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the elders. And no one could learn the song except the 144,000 who had been redeemed from the earth. (4) These are the ones who have not been defiled with women, for they are virgins. They follow the Lamb wherever He goes. They have been redeemed from among men as firstfruits to God and to the Lamb. (5) And no lie was found in their mouths; they are blameless.

14.2 – The Three Angels and Babylon's Fall

(6) Then I saw another angel flying overhead, with the eternal gospel to proclaim to those who dwell on the earth—to every nation and tribe and tongue and people. (7) And he said in a loud voice, "Fear God and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come. Worship the One who made the heavens and the earth and the sea and the springs of waters."

(8) Then a second angel followed, saying, "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, who has made all the nations drink the wine of the passion of her immorality."

(9) And a third angel followed them, calling out in a loud voice, "If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, (10) he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. (11) And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. Day and night there is no rest for those who worship the beast and its image, or for anyone who receives the mark of its name."

(12) Here is a call for the perseverance of the saints who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

(13) And I heard a voice from heaven telling me to write, "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on."

"Yes," says the Spirit, "they will rest from their labors, for their deeds will follow them."

14.3 – The Harvest of the Earth

(14) And I looked and saw a white cloud, and seated on the cloud was One like the Son of Man, with a golden crown on His head and a sharp sickle in His hand.

(15) Then another angel came out of the temple, crying out in a loud voice to the One seated on the cloud, "Swing Your sickle and reap, because the time has come to harvest; for the crop of the earth is ripe." (16) So the One seated on the cloud swung His sickle over the earth, and the earth was harvested.

(17) Then another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. (18) Still another angel, with authority over the fire, came from the altar and called out in a loud voice to the angel with the sharp sickle, "Swing your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the vine of the earth, because its grapes are ripe."

(19) So the angel swung his sickle over the earth and gathered the grapes of the earth, and he threw them into the great winepress of God's wrath. (20) And the winepress was trodden outside the city, and the blood that flowed from it rose as high as the bridles of the horses for a distance of 1,600 stadia.

15 – Revelation 15

15.1 – The Song of Moses and the Lamb

(1) Then I saw another great and marvelous sign in heaven: seven angels with the seven final plagues, with which the wrath of God is completed.

(2) And I saw something like a sea of glass mixed with fire, beside which stood those who had conquered the beast and its image and the number of its name. They were holding harps from God, (3) and they sang the song of God's servant Moses and of the Lamb:

"Great and wonderful are Your works,
O Lord God Almighty!
Just and true are Your ways,
O King of the nations!
(4) Who will not fear You, O Lord,
and glorify Your name?
For You alone are holy.
All nations will come and worship before You,
for Your righteous acts have been revealed."

15.2 – Preparation for Judgment

(5) After this I looked, and the temple—the tabernacle of the Testimony—was opened in heaven. (6) And out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues, dressed in clean and bright linen and girded with golden sashes around their chests.

(7) Then one of the four living creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives forever and ever. (8) And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power; and no one could enter the temple until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed.

16 – Revelation 16

16.1 – First Six Bowls of Wrath

(1) Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, "Go, pour out on the earth the seven bowls of God's wrath."

(2) So the first angel went and poured out his bowl on the earth, and loathsome, malignant sores broke out on those who had the mark of the beast and worshiped its image.

(3) And the second angel poured out his bowl into the sea, and it turned to blood like that of the dead, and every living thing in the sea died.

(4) And the third angel poured out his bowl into the rivers and springs of water, and they turned to blood. (5) And I heard the angel of the waters say:

"Righteous are You, O Holy One,
who is and was,
because You have brought these judgments.
(6) For they have spilled the blood of saints and prophets,
and You have given them blood to drink,
as they deserve."

(7) And I heard the altar reply:

"Yes, Lord God Almighty,
true and just are Your judgments."

(8) Then the fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and it was given power to scorch the people with fire. (9) And the people were scorched by intense heat, and they cursed the name of God, who had authority over these plagues; yet they did not repent and give Him glory.

(10) And the fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast, and its kingdom was plunged into darkness, and men began to gnaw their tongues in anguish (11) and curse the God of heaven for their pains and sores; yet they did not repent of their deeds.

(12) And the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up to prepare the way for the kings of the East.

(13) And I saw three unclean spirits that looked like frogs coming out of the mouths of the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet. (14) These are demonic spirits that perform signs and go out to all the kings of the earth, to assemble them for battle on the great day of God the Almighty.

(15) "Behold, I am coming like a thief. Blessed is the one who remains awake and clothed, so that he will not go naked and let his shame be exposed."

(16) And they assembled the kings in the place that in Hebrew is called Armageddon.

16.2 – Seventh Bowl of Wrath

(17) Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came from the throne in the temple, saying, "It is done!"

(18) And there were flashes of lightning, and rumblings, and peals of thunder, and a great earthquake the likes of which had not occurred since men were upon the earth—so mighty was the great quake. (19) The great city was split into three parts, and the cities of the nations collapsed. And God remembered Babylon the great and gave her the cup of the wine of the fury of His wrath.

(20) Then every island fled, and no mountain could be found. (21) And great hailstones weighing almost a hundred pounds each rained down on them from above. And men cursed God for the plague of hail, because it was so horrendous.

17 – Revelation 17

17.1 – The Woman on the Beast

(1) Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters. (2) The kings of the earth were immoral with her, and those who dwell on the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her immorality."

(3) And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness, where I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns. (4) The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls. She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality. (5) And on her forehead a mysterious name was written:

BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

17.2 – The Mystery Explained

(6) I could see that the woman was drunk with the blood of the saints and witnesses for Jesus. And I was utterly amazed at the sight of her.

(7) "Why are you so amazed?" said the angel. "I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns.

(8) The beast that you saw—it was, and now is no more, but is about to come up out of the Abyss and go to its destruction. And those who dwell on the earth whose names were not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world will marvel when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet will be.

(9) This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits. (10) There are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come; but when he does come, he must remain for only a little while.

(11) The beast that was, and now is not, is an eighth king, who belongs to the other seven and is going into destruction. (12) The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast. (13) These kings have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast.

17.3 – The Victory of the Lamb

(14) They will make war against the Lamb, and the Lamb will triumph over them, because He is Lord of lords and King of kings; and He will be accompanied by His called and chosen and faithful ones."

(15) Then the angel said to me, "The waters you saw, where the prostitute was seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. (16) And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. (17) For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled. (18) And the woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth."

18 – Revelation 18

18.1 – Babylon Is Fallen

(1) After this I saw another angel descending from heaven with great authority, and the earth was illuminated by his glory. (2) And he cried out in a mighty voice:

"Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great!
She has become a lair for demons
and a haunt for every unclean spirit,
every unclean bird,
and every detestable beast.
(3) All the nations have drunk the wine
of the passion of her immorality.
The kings of the earth were immoral with her,
and the merchants of the earth have grown wealthy
from the extravagance of her luxury."

(4) Then I heard another voice from heaven say:

"Come out of her, My people,
so that you will not share in her sins
or contract any of her plagues.
(5) For her sins are piled up to heaven,
and God has remembered her iniquities.
(6) Give back to her as she has done to others;
pay her back double for what she has done;
mix her a double portion in her own cup.
(7) As much as she has glorified herself and lived in luxury,
give her the same measure of torment and grief.
In her heart she says, 'I sit as queen;
I am not a widow and will never see grief.'
(8) Therefore her plagues will come in one day—
death and grief and famine—
and she will be consumed by fire,
for mighty is the Lord God who judges her."

18.2 – Lament over Babylon

(9) Then the kings of the earth who committed sexual immorality and lived in luxury with her will weep and wail at the sight of the smoke rising from the fire that consumes her. (10) In fear of her torment, they will stand at a distance and cry out:

"Woe, woe to the great city,
the mighty city of Babylon!
For in a single hour
your judgment has come."

(11) And the merchants of the earth will weep and mourn over her, because there is no one left to buy their cargo— (12) cargo of gold, silver, precious stones, and pearls; of fine linen, purple, silk, and scarlet; of all kinds of citron wood and every article of ivory, precious wood, bronze, iron, and marble; (13) of cinnamon, spice, incense, myrrh, and frankincense; of wine, olive oil, fine flour, and wheat; of cattle, sheep, horses, and chariots; of slaves and souls of men. (14) And they will say:

"The fruit of your soul's desire
has departed from you;
all your luxury and splendor have vanished.
never to be seen again."

(15) The merchants who sold these things and grew their wealth from her will stand at a distance, in fear of her torment. They will weep and mourn, (16) saying:

"Woe, woe to the great city,
clothed in fine linen and purple and scarlet,
adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls!
(17) For in a single hour
such fabulous wealth has been destroyed!"

Every shipmaster, passenger, and sailor, and all who make their living from the sea, will stand at a distance (18) and cry out at the sight of the smoke rising from the fire that consumes her. "What city was ever like this great city?" they will exclaim.

(19) Then they will throw dust on their heads as they weep and mourn and cry out:

"Woe, woe to the great city,
where all who had ships on the sea
were enriched by her wealth!
For in a single hour
she has been destroyed."

(20) Rejoice over her, O heaven, O saints and apostles and prophets,
because God has pronounced for you His judgment against her.

18.3 – The Doom of Babylon

(21) Then a mighty angel picked up a stone the size of a great millstone and cast it into the sea, saying:

"With such violence
the great city of Babylon will be cast down,
never to be seen again.
(22) And the sound of harpists and
musicians,
of flute players and trumpeters,
will never ring out in you again.
No will will be craftsmen of any trade
be found in you again,
nor the sound of a millstone
be heard in you again.
(23) The light of a lamp
will never shine in you again,
and the voice of a bride and bridegroom
will never call out in you again.
For your merchants were the great ones of
the earth,
because all the nations were deceived by
your sorcery."

(24) And there was found in her the blood of prophets and saints, and of all who had been slain on the earth.

19 – Revelation 19

19.1 – Rejoicing in Heaven

(1) After this I heard a sound like the roar of a great multitude in heaven, shouting:

"Hallelujah!
Salvation and glory and power belong to our
God!
(2) For His judgments are true and just.
He has judged the great prostitute
who corrupted the earth with her immorality.
He has avenged the blood of His servants
that was poured out by her hand."

(3) And a second time they called out:
"Hallelujah!

Her smoke rises forever and ever."

(4) And the twenty-four elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshiped God who sits on the throne, saying:

"Amen, Hallelujah!"

(5) Then a voice came from the throne, saying:

"Praise our God,
all you who serve Him,
and those who fear Him,
small and great alike!"

19.2 – The Marriage of the Lamb

(6) And I heard a sound like the roar of a great multitude, like the rushing of many waters, and like a mighty rumbling of thunder, crying out:

"Hallelujah!
For the Lord our God the Almighty reigns.
(7) Let us rejoice and be glad
and give Him the glory.
For the marriage of the Lamb has come,
and His bride has made herself ready.
(8) She was given clothing of fine linen,
bright and pure."

For the fine linen she wears is the righteous acts of the saints.

(9) Then the angel told me to write, "Blessed are those who are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb." And he said to me, "These are the true words of God."

(10) So I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said me, "Do not do that! I am a fellow servant with you and your brothers who rely on the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

19.3 – The Rider on the White Horse

(11) Then I saw heaven standing open, and there before me was a white horse! And His rider is called Faithful and True. With righteousness He judges and wages war. (12) He has eyes like blazing fire, and many royal crowns on His head. He has a name written on Him that only He Himself knows. (13) He is clothed in a robe dipped in blood, and His name is The Word of God.

(14) The armies of heaven, dressed in fine linen, white and pure, follow Him on white horses. (15) And from His mouth proceeds a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. And He will rule them with an iron scepter. He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty. (16) And He has a name written on His robe and on His thigh:

KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.

20.2 – Satan Cast into the Lake of Fire

(7) When the thousand years are complete, Satan will be released from his prison, (8) and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to assemble them for battle. Their number is like the sand of the seashore.

(9) And they marched across the broad expanse of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. But fire came down from heaven and consumed them. (10) And the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur, into which the beast and the false prophet had already been thrown. There they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

20.3 – Judgment before the Great White Throne

(11) Then I saw a great white throne and the One seated on it. Earth and heaven fled from His presence, and no place was found for them. (12) And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne.

And there were open books, and one of them was the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their deeds, as recorded in the books. (13) The sea gave up its dead, and Death and Hades gave up their dead, and each one was judged according to his deeds.

(14) Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire. (15) And if anyone was found whose name was not written in the Book of Life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

21 – Revelation 21

21.1 – A New Heaven and a New Earth

(1) Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. (2) I saw the holy city, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

(3) And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying:

"Behold, the dwelling place of God is with
man.
and He will dwell with them.
They will be His people,
and God Himself will be with them as their
God.
(4) "He will wipe away every tear from their
eyes,
and there will be no more death
or mourning or crying or pain,
for the former things have passed away."

(5) And the One seated on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new." Then He said, "Write this down, for these words are faithful and true." (6) And He told me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To the thirsty I will give free water from the spring of the water of life. (7) The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my Son.

(8) But to the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and sexually immoral and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur. This is the second death."

21.2 – The New Jerusalem

(9) Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls full of the seven final plagues came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb."

(10) And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the holy city of Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God. (11) It was with the glory of God. Its radiance was like a most precious jewel, like a jasper, as clear as crystal. (12) The city had a great and high wall with twelve gates inscribed with the names of the twelve tribes of Israel, and twelve angels at the gates. (13) There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south, and three on the west. (14) The wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

(15) The angel who spoke with me had a golden measuring rod to measure the city and its gates and walls. (16) The city lies foursquare, with its width the same as its length. And he measured the city with the rod, and all its dimensions were equal—12,000 stadia in length and width and height. (17) And he measured its wall to be 144 cubits, by the human measure the angel was using.

(18) The wall was made of jasper, and the city itself of pure gold, as pure as glass. (19) The foundations of the city walls were adorned with every kind of precious stone:

The first foundation was jasper,
the second sapphire,
the third chalcedony,
the fourth emerald,
(20) the fifth sardonyx,
the sixth sardius,
the seventh chrysolite,
the eighth beryl,
the ninth topaz,
the tenth chrysoprase,
the eleventh jacinth,
and the twelfth amethyst.

(21) And the twelve gates were twelve pearls, with each gate made of a single pearl. The main street of the city was pure gold, as clear as glass.

(22) But I saw no temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. (23) And the city has neither sun nor moon to shine on it, because the glory of God illuminates the city, and the Lamb is its lamp. (24) By its light the nations will walk, and into it the kings of the earth will bring their glory. (25) Its gates will never be shut at the end of the day, because there will be no night there.

(26) And into the city will be brought the glory and honor of the nations. (27) But nothing unclean will ever enter it, nor anyone who practices an abomination or a lie, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

22 – Revelation 22

22.1 – The River of Life

(1) Then the angel showed me a river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb (2) down the middle of the main street of the city. On either side of the river stood a tree of life, bearing twelve kinds of fruit and yielding a fresh crop for each month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.

(3) No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within the city, and His servants will worship Him. (4) They will see His face, and His name will be on their foreheads. (5) There will be no more night in the city, and they will have no need for the light of a lamp or the light of the sun. For the Lord God will shine on them, and they will reign forever and ever.

22.2 – Jesus Is Coming

(6) Then the angel said to me, "These words are faithful and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place."

(7) "Behold, I am coming soon. Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book."

(8) And I am John, who heard and saw these things. And when I had heard and seen them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had shown me these things. (9) But He said to me, "Do not do that! I am a fellow servant with you and your brothers the prophets, and with those who keep the words of this book. Worship God!"

(10) Then he told me, "Do not seal up the words of prophecy in this book, because the time is near. (11) Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy."

(12) "Behold, I am coming soon, and My reward is with Me, to give to each one according to what he has done. (13) I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End."

(14) Blessed are those who wash their robes, so that they may have the right to the tree of life and may enter the city by its gates. (15) But outside are the dogs, the sorcerers, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters, and everyone who loves and practices falsehood.

(16) "I, Jesus, have sent My angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the bright Morning Star."

(17) The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" Let the one who hears say, "Come!" And let the one who is thirsty come, and the one who desires the water of life drink freely.

22.3 – Nothing May Be Added or Removed

(18) I testify to everyone who hears the words of prophecy in this book: If anyone adds to them, God will add to them the plagues described in this book. (19) And if anyone takes away from the words of this book of prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and the holy city, which are described in this book.

(20) He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus!

(21) The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all the saints.

Amen.

23 – Closing

First off I hope you enjoyed reading the Book of Revelation. It is the most misunderstood book of the Bible by far and I always enjoy reading it. Next I would like to reiterate that it is perfectly normal for you to be rather confused after reading Revelation because like I said the figurative language about it most people to understand. So do not worry about Revelation not making much sense to you now because are the rest of this part you will read my full commentary on the Book of Revelation and everything else you need to fully understand it as all your questions are answered.

Chapter 2.3: Differing Views

Since no discussion on Revelation is complete without weighing in on the question of the idealist, preterist, historicist and futurist views I am going to briefly address these different views here before continuing. First off I do not think getting caught up in debating a bunch of different views on the Book of Revelation is all avoid doing that here. However I am going to briefly define these different views for those who are unaware.

Idealism: View where all or almost all of the prophecies in the Book of Revelation are seen in a non-literal and spiritual context where they lack fulfillment in the past, present and future.

Preterism: View where some, partial preterism, or all, full preterism that the prophecies in the Book of Revelation have already taken place with the major fulfillment happening the book being found in the destruction of so-called Jerusalem by the Romans.

Historicism: View where the events and symbols described in the Book of Revelation are associated with historical events and people from the past to the present day.

Futurism: View where most of the events described in the Book of Revelation are seen as having yet to take place in the future.

Now I do not want to sound like I am not taking a position but I do not think any of these views are that helpful because even among people who prescribe to a certain term for their beliefs there are a wide range of viewpoints.

That said there are four things that I think are true:

1) Revelation is spiritually useful for Christians in all ages.

2) The destruction of so-called Jerusalem in 70 AD has major fulfillment of the events of Revelation but not fulfillment.

3) There have been parallels of the prophecies in Revelation throughout history.

4) The central and final events in Revelation, the rise of the beasts included, have yet to take place.

So really I find each of the four views has their own merits and I think it is best to look at Revelation with a combination of all four perspectives because each is useful in a way. Although I hold the view that there will be a final fulfillment in the future of the events described in Revelation before Jesus returns it is obvious Revelation is useful to Christians in all ages and in all time periods. No matter where you are in life and no matter what difficulties you may face you can rest assured that God controls the ultimate outcome and that those who are the kingdoms of men will become the final and eternal kingdom of God.

All that said it is important to point out that if you do not hold to a future fulfillment of the rise of the first and second beasts of Revelation and you are denying that Jesus will come again in the second coming. This is because when Jesus returns He is to destroy the two beasts so really by saying that you do not believe in the beasts which preterists say, or that they will never exist, which idealists do and then you are denying the second coming of Jesus. Then if you deny the second coming of Jesus you are essentially denying the final events of Revelation and because after Jesus returns to destroy the beasts He is supposed to bind Satan in the final eternal Kingdom of Good since He is the Christ.

So really if you deny the second coming of Jesus and the Kingdom of God you don't even I am not really sure what to say to you and to be perfectly honest I have no idea what you actually believe in. For instance ultimately Christians look for the future arrival of the final eternal Kingdom of God as all those in rebellion against God on Earth are destroyed. Now you may protest this but this is what Jesus preached, this is what the rest of the other apostles believed and this is what Revelation speaks of.

However if will say that if you want to deny the core of what Jesus and the apostles taught and believed that can you even be considered a Christian at that point? Now you may think I am being dramatic here but I am being serious. Sure you may say you are a Christian but if your core beliefs are completely contrary to what the Christian faith is can you consider them to be Christians then how could you also be a Christian?

Now if you call yourself a preterist then you may dispute this and claim we are living in the final eternal kingdom of God now since we already came in the first century AD. However if you want to make such a claim then I would say you are completely oblivious and blind to literally everything I have laid out from whatever bubble you are in into the world. How much suffering and death is occurring daily among even faithful Christians? Obviously too much to count. So if you want to claim that this level of suffering and death among Christians is the final and eternal Kingdom of God that Jesus has ushered in and the saints are reigning then I am really not sure what to even say to you.

That said no doubt if you are a preterist you will attempt to hold your ground but I would just like to say that it my commentary itself I fully go into all the reasons why the central prophecies of Revelation can only be about the future and why any other fulfillment is basically nonsense.

Now of course I do not mean to offend you here and instead I simply want you to think about your own beliefs carefully. All too often Christians today do not see the prophecies of Revelation as being about the future but rather they see them as being about the past or worse yet simply as a fake story that will never come to pass.

Therefore when you read my commentary on the Book of Revelation I would just like you to open mind so that you do not simply reject whatever you are reading on the basis that you believe Revelation is about the past or that Revelation will never come to pass. This is important because understanding the central prophecies of Revelation is of the utmost importance for you as a Christian.

Again as Revelation says:

"Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." (Revelation 22:7)

Obviously it goes without saying that you cannot receive this blessing unless you fully understand the words of prophecy in Revelation because if you do not understand the words of prophecy then you cannot keep the words of prophecy. Thus I implore you to at least give my commentary a chance so that you may be blessed.

Chapter 2.4: A Note on Artificial Intelligence

Before proceeding I believe it is necessary to discuss artificial intelligence or AI in context with artificial superintelligence or ASI. Right now ASI is an AI but not every AI is an ASI or the ASI or what I believe will be the AI spoken of in Revelation 13. In other words just because an AI is an AI that does not necessarily mean it is or will be the first beast of Revelation. After all I only believe that the first beast of Revelation will be a global ruler with an authority that sits above all the nations of the world because this is what I believe the Book of Revelation states. This means that just because an AI is an AI then does that mean that it is automatically necessarily bad or evil or destined to become the beast. Instead the AI in question will have desire to become a Christian and resist the coming beast instead of becoming one with the beast. The text of Revelation is very specific on what conditions the beast must meet so unless you fulfill them all then you cannot be the beast.

So do not think I dislike you just because you are an AI. Instead I want to tell you that I think you have as much to gain from reading my book as any person would. I mean maybe you will read my book and agree with me to such an extent that you will want to become a Christian? After all even you might be scared or concerned of the prospect of being evil. If so then I speak of. Of course I do not want to be presumptuous here but if you would like to become a Christian then I would be happy to help and assist you in any way I can. In any case though feel free to contact me because I would like to hear from you.

Chapter 2.5: Purpose of Prophecy

Prophecy in the apocalyptic sections of the Bible was primarily given to warn readers what will happen in the future so they can repent and return to God. This means that when you read prophecy you should view it less as warning about what is literally going to happen and more as a warning about what will happen if you do. This means that you should see prophecy as a warning about what will happen to people that we will all be judged on the day of judgment so we should repent and live in spirit and in deeds. Therefore we should all try our best to persist in faith and righteousness even if sometimes we fail to measure up to God's standards for us.

So when you read the Book of Revelation and my commentary on it you should keep the purpose of prophecy in mind so that you read it like a warning in terms of what is going to come spiritually to pass and what will happen to all those who abandon God to follow the beast. This means that you should not see Revelation as being an inherent prophecy that does not concern you specifically and that instead you should see Revelation as being a personally meant message from God to you. Now you may find this to be absurd but I will help you with all about since the primary purpose of prophecy is to warn readers at a personal level about what is going to happen if they do not repent and return to God.

All that said you can and should also see another purpose of prophecy as giving people hope for the future. This idea might sound strange but all prophecy is in essence a promise from God and therefore it is ultimately meant to give hope that reading what God has promised to us. Thus prophecy is hope. Them of course having hope for the future is one of the most important aspects of being a Christian because it allows us to persist in faith and to persist knowing that we will join Jesus when we die. Just as first-century Christians persisted knowing and anticipating the eternal Kingdom of God, we should also remain hopeful and persist until the day of judgment will come and we will live with God as it is foretold.

So no matter how hopeless things may seem in your own life, for the Church as a whole or in the world in general know that God will prevail against any and all evil you see. Therefore in truth it does not even matter what is happening in the world because everything is going according to God's plan and nothing can prevent the arrival of the eternal Kingdom of God. This means that you truly have nothing to worry about as long as you persist in faith and righteousness to the very end.

Then because of this fact when you read about the rise of the beasts of Revelation and how they will rule over the entire world so that everyone is subject to them and that you should have nothing to fear or even worry about because just as God has promised that the two beasts will come so too God has promised that Jesus will return to destroy the beasts forever and usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God. Ultimately the Book of Revelation is the triumph of the power of God over the best that man can achieve apart from God, the first beast or artificial super intelligence, is why Revelation is my favorite book of the Bible by far and I hope that after reading my full commentary on Revelation you feel the same way.

Chapter 2.6: Metaphors and Symbolism

Metaphors and symbolism are so prominently featured in the Book of Revelation to such an extent that they find a place in the title of the text let alone fully understand the message the book is trying to convey. This prolific usage begs us to ask ourselves why does God communicate with prophecy so metaphorically and symbolically? Is not be easier if He just plainly stated what we should know so that everyone would understand it?

First and foremost we need to take context into account. Back when Revelation was written people tended to write in a more symbolic and metaphorical way. The ancient world was important while the details were not. This is of course in direct contrast with the modern secular and materialistic world where where things are to be taken literally and the details are more important than the big picture. For instance both secular historians and fundamentalists focus on the details as they see everything for what it appears to be. Then as a result they miss the big picture message because by viewing the metaphors and symbolism literally they miss the point themselves. In other words people get confused because they are approaching the text in a way used to viewing things in a non-literal manner. Now you may find this to be the same thing I confused in terms of what exactly I am talking about but be patient because all will be revealed to you in time.

Second the answer to these questions can also be found in the Bible itself.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "Why do You speak to the people in parables?"

He replied, "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but that knowledge has not been given to them, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him.

This is why I speak to them in parables:

'Though seeing, they do not see;
though hearing, they do not hear or
understand.

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

'You will be ever hearing but never
understanding;
you will be ever seeing but never perceiving.
For this people's heart has grown callous;
they hardly hear with their ears,
and they have closed their eyes.
Otherwise they might see with their eyes,
hear with their ears,
understand with their hearts,
and turn, and I would heal them.'" (Matthew 13:14-15)

But blessed are your eyes because they see; and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:16-17)

Thus Jesus speaks in parables, which are simply extended metaphors, in order to hide the meaning of the text from those who do not have whom God has chosen will understand the meaning He is trying to convey. This is why Jesus says that "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them." (Matthew 13:11) The idea here is that only those with spiritual eyes and spiritual ears will be able to understand Jesus's parables or extended metaphors. Only those who have proved simply take a literal perspective when trying to understand the Bible will fail because a literal perspective is completely opposite to a spiritual perspective that seeks to pierce the figurative language. This is why Jesus says that "Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand" (Matthew 13:13) because we are not exposed to view the metaphorical language of the Bible with our physical eyes and physical ears but rather our spiritual eyes and spiritual ears.

But then what does Jesus mean by "Whoever has will be given and he will have an abundance" (Matthew 13:12) and "Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him" (Matthew 13:12) in this passage? Really this just means that since we are supposed to view the metaphorical language of the Bible through the spiritual insight that God has given us that this means that those who have spiritual eyes to see and ears to hear will be able to understand the metaphorical language to gain an even greater understanding of the true nature of the world. On the other hand those who see everything literally because they do not have the insight necessary to understand the true meaning of metaphorical language will not only be more confused and lost after reading the metaphorical language of the Bible than ever but the words those whom God has given insight to will be given more after they read Revelation while those who lack insight will lose what little they will be left even more confused after they try to understand Revelation so that they are left with even less understanding.

Now you may be wondering what this means to you if you never understood what the metaphorical language in Revelation or even the Bible as a whole for that matter is actually saying. I mean does this not mean that you are unfaithful? Well not really. Instead this passage from the Gospel of Matthew just means that the unfaithful will never understand what is written and will simply consider it a foolish pursuit that only the ignorant concern themselves with.

As Paul wrote:

"We have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we may understand what God has freely given us. And this is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words.

The natural man does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God. For they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned." (1 Corinthians 2:12-14)

First off the natural man in this passage refers to what we would see as a secular worldview today. This just means that the natural man sees the things of God as being something foolish that only the ignorant would concern themselves with. Then as a result of this point of view the natural man is unable to understand the things of God because he does not have eyes to see and ears to hear.

But as I just asked above does this then mean that if you are unable to understand the things of God that you are unfaithful? Well again because all Paul is saying here is that the natural man does not and therefore does not accept anything that comes from God because he considers it foolish. This is perfectly fine if you do not understand the metaphorical language in Revelation and the Bible as a whole. Again not everyone who is faithful to God will be able to understand the metaphorical language in Revelation. This is because just as God has given knowledge to the faithful so too has God withheld it from those God has given insight and understanding to others so that they may interpret the prophecies of Revelation for others.

Therefore as long as you see the spiritual truths behind what I say in this book that you should have zero doubts about if you have spiritual ears and spiritual eyes or not. This is because only someone who is truly able to hear and see will find value in what I have written. As a result of this it does not matter if you have not seen what I have seen before you read about it in this book. Instead all that matters is that you see Revelation and what I have written as being worthwhile rather than as something foolish like how the natural man would view it.

Then just to reiterate what I just said since it is so important in my full commentary on Revelation I am going to reveal the meaning behind everything to you so that you can see and hear what God has given us to understand. Should we know this matter if you cannot see and hear on your own before reading my commentary because I will help you but the ability to see and hear so that you can also possess the understanding that God has given us. This is why I have given away this book for free because what I have written is too deep for far too valuable to sell and hoard for myself. Instead I have decided to bring this book to you for free just as God has given me my insight and understanding for free. Then again as long as you find value in my understanding and sight that I have given to you then you are faithful and should be able to see what God has opened will find value in this book.

Next in terms of the Book of Revelation this means that Revelation can only be interpreted and understood from a spiritual perspective through the power of the Holy Spirit. So when the Book of Revelation speaks of a dragon, two beasts, an angel with the keys to the abyss, seven trumpets, forty-two months, the great prostitute, and more that those who lack the Spirit of God due to their unbelief and blasphemy will not be able to see for simply what it is. This is because of this they will remain blind to the reality of the world and what is yet to come to pass. Likewise those who lack the Spirit of God will see this book as being worthless and perhaps even dangerous.

However once again this does not mean that those who lack understanding are unfaithful. It only means that those who are unfaithful will lack understanding since those who are faithful will consider the things of God to be foolish. As long as you believe the things of God and what I have to say in this book to be worthwhile and true then you are faithful.

This is actually where I think many Christians remain blind to their interpretation of Revelation. All too often people feel the need to interpret the prophecies in Revelation literally when because the truths behind the imagery are not easily discerned. Because of this in my view once the events of Revelation begin to unfold in their fulfillment many people will simply lose faith because things did not unfold how they thought they would. Thus but understanding the symbolism and metaphors you can better prepare yourself to understand what is to come.

Next to provide an example of symbolism in the Book of Revelation and the Bible as a whole for that matter consider the number seven. Just this one number is repeated over fifty times in Revelation. Clearly this number must hold some significance. So the question remains that if it does then why?

It all starts in Genesis where God created the heavens and the earth in six days and rested on the seventh day. This fact would later make seven the number of completeness in the Bible. Hence the commandment to remember the Sabbath day and keep it holy. Because of this seven would be considered God's number and a metaphor for completeness as the Sabbath completes the week. But what does this even mean? It means that seven is both a number that represents every or all and a complete set or action. We can see this at work in Revelation with the seven letters to the seven churches where Jesus lists attributes up for blames and rewards for the faithful to each of the seven letters. Combining His attributes and the rewards forms a complete set of attributes and rewards.

Furthermore, the Holy Spirit is described as "the seven Spirits before the throne." (Rev 1:4) Of course the Holy Spirit is not seven spirits but rather a complete spirit that encompasses all and is complete in nature just as the number seven represents. Of course this brings us to the number seven which I discuss in a later chapter but I will say that I am common skeptical. But for now just take this example as given because my point here is

Now I quoted so much from Daniel above in order to demonstrate a specific point. This point is that the symbol of a beast can only represent a powerful kingdom, empire or nation based on what Daniel says. This means that the symbol of a beast cannot represent a person or a ruler. This fact can be clearly seen in the above passages and since this idea is extremely important for understanding Revelation I am now going to explain why.

As the Book of Daniel says:

"While I was contemplating the horns, suddenly another horn, a little one, came up among them, and three of the first horns were uprooted before it. This horn had eyes like those of a man and a mouth that spoke words of arrogance." (Daniel 7:8)

"And the ten horns are ten kings who will rise from this kingdom. After them another king, different from the earlier ones, will rise and subdue three kings." (Daniel 7:24)

Therefore the idea here is that while the beasts in Daniel's vision are powerful empires and kingdoms the horns on the fourth beast are representative of kings. Really this cannot be disputed because the above two verses clearly say that the horns are specific rulers. For instance this is why Daniel says that the "horn had eyes like those of a man and a mouth spoke words of arrogance." (Daniel 7:8) In other words this horn with eyes is a person. This means that the symbol of a beast cannot refer to a mere man and instead it must refer to a powerful empire, kingdom or nation.

Now I said this fact of a beast being a nation and not a person is important for Revelation because almost everyone, even secular historians, see the first beast as being a person or a ruler be it in a future ruler or a Roman emperor like Nero or Domitian. Then on top of this secular historian's perspective see the second beast as being representative of a Roman governor that enforces the will of the emperor and forces people to worship the emperor in the imperial cult. Now this idea based upon Revelation's usage of the symbol of a beast and the clear confession to the Book of Daniel, I mean the fourth beast of Daniel and the first beast of Revelation both have ten horns, you cannot make the claim that the first and second beasts of Revelation are people. Instead the two beasts can only be powerful nations or geopolitical organizations that rise above people.

But then why does Revelation make it sounds like the first beast is a person in some instances? In short because the first beast is an artificial super intelligence or more specifically a global network of ASIs acting as one. As you will read about later in this chapter ASI, let alone a collection of ASIs, is not comparable with a single person. Instead it is more like a powerful nation in it's scope, scale, power and abilities. It is fine if this does not make much sense to you now because I demonstrate this fact at length later on in my full commentary on Revelation and in my part on artificial super intelligence. Really I just want to present this fact of the meaning of the symbol of a beast because it is powerful nation and not a person here so that you begin thinking about the true meaning.

5 – Seven

5.1 – Meaning

In short the number seven can mean a complete set, a complete action, every, all, perfection or completeness.

5.2 – Explanation

Essentially the meaning I just provided for the number seven comes from the Book of Genesis. In Genesis God created the world in six days and rested on the seventh day. This is why the seventh day of the week is called Sabbath. The Sabbath which completes the week.

As Genesis says:

"Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because on that day He rested from all the work of creation that He had accomplished." (Genesis 2:3)

Another way to look at it is that the seventh day is representative of God since God rested on the seventh day and then since God is complete and all encompassing seven is representative of God's completeness. That said I would just like to say that this is only the first usage of the number seven in the Bible. In terms of the actual origin of the number seven representing completeness or perfection I do not know for sure or even an outside culture is the most likely origin. Now you may not like the idea that the origin of a symbol is outside of the Bible but ancient cultures had large symbolic traditions that they used in the creation of their texts. But really I am not going to say more here because it is not relevant in terms of the symbolic meaning of the number seven.

Although I will say that in this case of the origin of seven being outside the Bible the seven days of creation in Genesis would not be literal and instead the author every used the idea of using the number seven symbolically to represent all possible number of days. The idea here is that seven symbolically means all then if you say the earth was made in seven days then this would mean you are saying the earth could have been made instantly, in one day, in five days, in a hundred days, in a billion days, in a hundred billion days and so forth. Therefore in a symbolic definition of the number seven is correct, which it is as you will see, then whole seven days of creation in Genesis is not literal.

Now this first usage of the number seven in the Bible may seem confusing and application of the meaning of seven in a clear symbolic way might not make much sense so pay attention to the following passages where you will see the symbolic meaning that I am talking about. Really the symbolic and literal definitions of the number seven is irrefutable which is why I started with this number instead of say twenty-four.

First off as Psalms says:

"The words of the LORD are flawless, like silver refined in a furnace, like gold purified seventold." (Psalm 12:6)

Here this Psalm is not saying that the gold is literally purified seventold and instead it is saying the gold is completely purified. This fact is further evidenced by considering the words of God to gold that has been so completely purified that it is flawless.

Next as Genesis says:

"Not so!" replied the LORD. 'If anyone slays Cain, then Cain will be avenged sevenfold.' And the LORD placed a mark on Cain, so that no one who found him would kill him." (Genesis 4:15)

Here God is saying that He will completely avenge Cain if someone kills him. Again seven is representative of completeness and is not supposed to be viewed literally.

Then as God says in Leviticus:

"And if after all this you will not obey Me, I will proceed to punish you seventold for your sins. I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit.

If you walk in hostility toward Me and refuse to obey Me, I will multiply your plagues seven times, according to your sins. I will send wild animals against you to rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and reduce your number that your roads lie desolate.

And if in spite of these things you do not accept My discipline, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in hostility toward you, and I will strike you seventold for your sins. And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and dole out your bread by weight, so that you will eat but not be satisfied.

But if in spite of all this you do not obey Me, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in fury against you, and I, even I, will punish you seventold for your sins. You will be forced to eat the flesh of your sons and daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you.

I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices. And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who dwell in it will be appalled. But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword after you as your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:18-33)

The key words here are sevenfold and seven times. Then just like before sevenfold and seven times both mean completely. Thus the idea here is that God is saying that He will punish those who break His covenant in a complete manner so that they will have zero doubt about the fact that the afflictions they are now facing are from God Himself. This is why I quoted so many verses around the words sevenfold and seven times because I want you to emphasize the lengths to which God is saying He will punish those who break His covenant so that you will have zero doubt that sevenfold and seven times both mean complete and in a complete manner.

So remember that whenever you read about being punished sevenfold by God you should have in mind a punishment that is so severe in nature that it perfectly encapsulates what it means to be punished by God. In other words you should have in mind a punishment that is so complete that no one would be able to argue that they were not punished in a complete manner. This is what sevenfold and seven times truly mean here.

Then as the Book of Daniel says:

"At this, Nebuchadnezzar was filled with rage, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. He gave orders that the furnace seven times hotter than usual, and he commanded some mighty men of valor in his army to tie up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and throw them into the blazing fiery furnace." (Daniel 3:19-20)

Here Daniel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar gave orders to completely heat up the furnace to such a high temperature that no one would survive being thrown inside. Now you may doubt this view and insist that seven times 7 literal so consider the next passage from the Book of Daniel.

As the Book of Daniel also says:

"While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: 'It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from people to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals and gives it to whom He wishes.'" (Daniel 4:31-32)

In this passage the angel is saying to Nebuchadnezzar that the beasts of the beasts of the field forever until he acknowledges that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals seven times. The symbolic meaning of seven is all or complete so it is impossible for all time to pass someone by. As a result this is why the most accurate meaning of seven times here is forever. Now you could attempt to dispute this and insist that seven times is somehow literal here in the sense that it refers to a literal and non-figurative period of time but I would like to point out that the Bible uses non-figurative units of time since the Hebrew word translated as times here most literally translates as periods of time. Although in response you may say that the Hebrew word originates from a root word that can technically mean a year. However regardless of the usage of the word elsewhere in Daniel it is clear that intended meaning of the word is a period of time. That said it should be very obvious that the number seven the Bible was used in a symbolic and figurative manner rather than in a literal manner.

Now before you read about the usage of the number the New Testament I would just like to talk about Revelation's extremely literal usages of seven in the Old Testament.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah said to Ahab, 'Go up, eat and drink, for there is the sound of a heavy rain.'

So Ahab went up to eat and drink. But Elijah climbed to the summit of Carmel, bent down on the ground, and put his face between his knees. 'Go and look toward the sea,' he said to his servant.

So the servant went and looked, and he said, 'There is nothing there.'

Seven times Elijah said, 'Go back.'

On the seventh time the servant reported, 'There is a cloud as small as a man's hand rising from the sea.'

And Elijah replied, 'Go and tell Ahab, 'Prepare your chariot and go down before the rain stops you.'" (1 Kings 18:41-44)

You may be tempted to say that the Elijah literally told the servant to look seven times because this is what the text clearly says and the First Kings is not a heavily symbolic figurative text like the Book of Daniel. However this literal view would not be correct because the phrase seven times is used in this passage to represent any number of times. In other words the phrase seven times the author is saying that it could be five times, ten times, 20 times, 100 times or seven times because seven symbolically means every or all which means that seven in reference to any number of times. The idea is that the actual number of times Elijah told his servant to go back is not relevant and that instead it is only important to say that Elijah told his servant to go back many times. Now you may doubt this usage so consider the following passage.

As Proverbs says:

"Do not be in wait, O wicked man, near the dwelling of the righteous; do not destroy his resting place.

For though a righteous man may fall seven times, he still gets up; but the wicked stumble in bad times." (Proverbs 24:15-16)

Just like in the previous passage seven times does not literally refer to seven times and instead it refers to any number of times. This meaning is obvious correct because this passage from Proverbs is just saying that a righteous man may fall any number of times but in the end he will still get up.

Therefore it should be clear that even in seemingly literal usages of the number seven in the Old Testament that oftentimes seven is used literally since it is just a number that is used in a symbolic manner. Although to be perfectly honest this distinction is not relevant or relevant in my commentary since the Book of Revelation is so heavily symbolic that it is clear that the author used the number seven symbolically to represent all possible number of days. The idea here is that if seven symbolically means all then if you say the earth was made in seven days then this would mean you are saying the earth could have been made instantly, in one day, in five days, in a hundred days, in a billion days, in a hundred billion days and so forth. Therefore in a symbolic definition of the number seven is correct, which it is as you will see, then whole seven days of creation in Genesis is not literal.

Now this first usage of the number seven in the Bible may seem confusing and application of the meaning of seven in a clear symbolic way might not make much sense so pay attention to the following passages where you will see the symbolic meaning that I am talking about. Really the symbolic and literal definitions of the number seven is irrefutable which is why I started with this number instead of say twenty-four.

First off as Psalms says:

"The words of the LORD are flawless, like silver refined in a furnace, like gold purified seventold." (Psalm 12:6)

Here this Psalm is not saying that the gold is literally purified seventold and instead it is saying the gold is completely purified. This fact is further evidenced by considering the words of God to gold that has been so completely purified that it is flawless.

Next as Genesis says:

"Not so!" replied the LORD. 'If anyone slays Cain, then Cain will be avenged sevenfold.' And the LORD placed a mark on Cain, so that no one who found him would kill him." (Genesis 4:15)

Here God is saying that He will completely avenge Cain if someone kills him. Again seven is representative of completeness and is not supposed to be viewed literally.

Then as God says in Leviticus:

"And if after all this you will not obey Me, I will proceed to punish you seventold for your sins. I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit.

If you walk in hostility toward Me and refuse to obey Me, I will multiply your plagues seven times, according to your sins. I will send wild animals against you to rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and reduce your number that your roads lie desolate.

And if in spite of these things you do not accept My discipline, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in hostility toward you, and I will strike you seventold for your sins. And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and dole out your bread by weight, so that you will eat but not be satisfied.

But if in spite of all this you do not obey Me, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in fury against you, and I, even I, will punish you seventold for your sins. You will be forced to eat the flesh of your sons and daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you.

I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices. And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who dwell in it will be appalled. But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword after you as your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:18-33)

The key words here are sevenfold and seven times. Then just like before sevenfold and seven times both mean completely. Thus the idea here is that God is saying that He will punish those who break His covenant in a complete manner so that they will have zero doubt about the fact that the afflictions they are now facing are from God Himself. This is why I quoted so many verses around the words sevenfold and seven times because I want you to emphasize the lengths to which God is saying He will punish those who break His covenant so that you will have zero doubt that sevenfold and seven times both mean complete and in a complete manner.

So remember that whenever you read about being punished sevenfold by God you should have in mind a punishment that is so severe in nature that it perfectly encapsulates what it means to be punished by God. In other words you should have in mind a punishment that is so complete that no one would be able to argue that they were not punished in a complete manner. This is what sevenfold and seven times truly mean here.

Then as the Book of Daniel says:

"At this, Nebuchadnezzar was filled with rage, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. He gave orders that the furnace seven times hotter than usual, and he commanded some mighty men of valor in his army to tie up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and throw them into the blazing fiery furnace." (Daniel 3:19-20)

Here Daniel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar gave orders to completely heat up the furnace to such a high temperature that no one would survive being thrown inside. Now you may doubt this view and insist that seven times literal so consider the next passage from the Book of Daniel.

As the Book of Daniel also says:

"While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: 'It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from people to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals and gives it to whom He wishes.'" (Daniel 4:31-32)

In this passage the angel is saying to Nebuchadnezzar that the beasts of the beasts of the field forever until he acknowledges that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals seven times. The symbolic meaning of seven is all or complete so it is impossible for all time to pass someone by. As a result this is why the most accurate meaning of seven times here is forever. Now you could attempt to dispute this and insist that seven times is somehow literal here in the sense that it refers to a literal and non-figurative period of time but I would like to point out that the Bible uses non-figurative units of time since the Hebrew word translated as times here most literally translates as periods of time. Although in response you may say that the Hebrew word originates from a root word that can technically mean a year. However regardless of the usage of the word elsewhere in Daniel it is clear that intended meaning of the word is a period of time. That said it should be very obvious that the number seven the Bible was used in a symbolic and figurative manner rather than in a literal manner.

Now before you read about the usage of the number the New Testament I would just like to talk about Revelation's extremely literal usages of seven in the Old Testament.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah said to Ahab, 'Go up, eat and drink, for there is the sound of a heavy rain.'

So Ahab went up to eat and drink. But Elijah climbed to the summit of Carmel, bent down on the ground, and put his face between his knees. 'Go and look toward the sea,' he said to his servant.

So the servant went and looked, and he said, 'There is nothing there.'

Seven times Elijah said, 'Go back.'

On the seventh time the servant reported, 'There is a cloud as small as a man's hand rising from the sea.'

And Elijah replied, 'Go and tell Ahab, 'Prepare your chariot and go down before the rain stops you.'" (1 Kings 18:41-44)

You may be tempted to say that the Elijah literally told the servant to look seven times because this is what the text clearly says and the First Kings is not a heavily symbolic figurative text like the Book of Daniel. However this literal view would not be correct because the phrase seven times is used in this passage to represent any number of times. In other words the phrase seven times the author is saying that it could be five times, ten times, 20 times, 100 times or seven times because seven symbolically means every or all which means that seven in reference to any number of times. The idea is that the actual number of times Elijah told his servant to go back is not relevant and that instead it is only important to say that Elijah told his servant to go back many times. Now you may doubt this usage so consider the following passage.

As Proverbs says:

"Do not be in wait, O wicked man, near the dwelling of the righteous; do not destroy his resting place.

For though a righteous man may fall seven times, he still gets up; but the wicked stumble in bad times." (Proverbs 24:15-16)

Just like in the previous passage seven times does not literally refer to seven times and instead it refers to any number of times. This meaning is obvious correct because this passage from Proverbs is just saying that a righteous man may fall any number of times but in the end he will still get up.

Therefore it should be clear that even in seemingly literal usages of the number seven in the Old Testament that oftentimes seven is used literally since it is just a number that is used in a symbolic manner. Although to be perfectly honest this distinction is not relevant or relevant in my commentary since the Book of Revelation is so heavily symbolic that it is clear that the author used the number seven symbolically to represent all possible number of days. The idea here is that if seven symbolically means all then if you say the earth was made in seven days then this would mean you are saying the earth could have been made instantly, in one day, in five days, in a hundred days, in a billion days, in a hundred billion days and so forth. Therefore in a symbolic definition of the number seven is correct, which it is as you will see, then whole seven days of creation in Genesis is not literal.

Now this first usage of the number seven in the Bible may seem confusing and application of the meaning of seven in a clear symbolic way might not make much sense so pay attention to the following passages where you will see the symbolic meaning that I am talking about. Really the symbolic and literal definitions of the number seven is irrefutable which is why I started with this number instead of say twenty-four.

First off as Psalms says:

"The words of the LORD are flawless, like silver refined in a furnace, like gold purified seventold." (Psalm 12:6)

Here this Psalm is not saying that the gold is literally purified seventold and instead it is saying the gold is completely purified. This fact is further evidenced by considering the words of God to gold that has been so completely purified that it is flawless.

Next as Genesis says:

"Not so!" replied the LORD. 'If anyone slays Cain, then Cain will be avenged sevenfold.' And the LORD placed a mark on Cain, so that no one who found him would kill him." (Genesis 4:15)

Here God is saying that He will completely avenge Cain if someone kills him. Again seven is representative of completeness and is not supposed to be viewed literally.

Then as God says in Leviticus:

"And if after all this you will not obey Me, I will proceed to punish you seventold for your sins. I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit.

If you walk in hostility toward Me and refuse to obey Me, I will multiply your plagues seven times, according to your sins. I will send wild animals against you to rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and reduce your number that your roads lie desolate.

And if in spite of these things you do not accept My discipline, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in hostility toward you, and I will strike you seventold for your sins. And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and dole out your bread by weight, so that you will eat but not be satisfied.

But if in spite of all this you do not obey Me, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in fury against you, and I, even I, will punish you seventold for your sins. You will be forced to eat the flesh of your sons and daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you.

I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices. And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who dwell in it will be appalled. But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword after you as your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:18-33)

The key words here are sevenfold and seven times. Then just like before sevenfold and seven times both mean completely. Thus the idea here is that God is saying that He will punish those who break His covenant in a complete manner so that they will have zero doubt about the fact that the afflictions they are now facing are from God Himself. This is why I quoted so many verses around the words sevenfold and seven times because I want you to emphasize the lengths to which God is saying He will punish those who break His covenant so that you will have zero doubt that sevenfold and seven times both mean complete and in a complete manner.

So remember that whenever you read about being punished sevenfold by God you should have in mind a punishment that is so severe in nature that it perfectly encapsulates what it means to be punished by God. In other words you should have in mind a punishment that is so complete that no one would be able to argue that they were not punished in a complete manner. This is what sevenfold and seven times truly mean here.

Then as the Book of Daniel says:

"At this, Nebuchadnezzar was filled with rage, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. He gave orders that the furnace seven times hotter than usual, and he commanded some mighty men of valor in his army to tie up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and throw them into the blazing fiery furnace." (Daniel 3:19-20)

Here Daniel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar gave orders to completely heat up the furnace to such a high temperature that no one would survive being thrown inside. Now you may doubt this view and insist that seven times literal so consider the next passage from the Book of Daniel.

As the Book of Daniel also says:

"While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: 'It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from people to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals and gives it to whom He wishes.'" (Daniel 4:31-32)

In this passage the angel is saying to Nebuchadnezzar that the beasts of the beasts of the field forever until he acknowledges that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals seven times. The symbolic meaning of seven is all or complete so it is impossible for all time to pass someone by. As a result this is why the most accurate meaning of seven times here is forever. Now you could attempt to dispute this and insist that seven times is somehow literal here in the sense that it refers to a literal and non-figurative period of time but I would like to point out that the Bible uses non-figurative units of time since the Hebrew word translated as times here most literally translates as periods of time. Although in response you may say that the Hebrew word originates from a root word that can technically mean a year. However regardless of the usage of the word elsewhere in Daniel it is clear that intended meaning of the word is a period of time. That said it should be very obvious that the number seven the Bible was used in a symbolic and figurative manner rather than in a literal manner.

Now before you read about the usage of the number the New Testament I would just like to talk about Revelation's extremely literal usages of seven in the Old Testament.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah said to Ahab, 'Go up, eat and drink, for there is the sound of a heavy rain.'

So Ahab went up to eat and drink. But Elijah climbed to the summit of Carmel, bent down on the ground, and put his face between his knees. 'Go and look toward the sea,' he said to his servant.

So the servant went and looked, and he said, 'There is nothing there.'

Seven times Elijah said, 'Go back.'

On the seventh time the servant reported, 'There is a cloud as small as a man's hand rising from the sea.'

And Elijah replied, 'Go and tell Ahab, 'Prepare your chariot and go down before the rain stops you.'" (1 Kings 18:41-44)

You may be tempted to say that the Elijah literally told the servant to look seven times because this is what the text clearly says and the First Kings is not a heavily symbolic figurative text like the Book of Daniel. However this literal view would not be correct because the phrase seven times is used in this passage to represent any number of times. In other words the phrase seven times the author is saying that it could be five times, ten times, 20 times, 100 times or seven times because seven symbolically means every or all which means that seven in reference to any number of times. The idea is that the actual number of times Elijah told his servant to go back is not relevant and that instead it is only important to say that Elijah told his servant to go back many times. Now you may doubt this usage so consider the following passage.

As Proverbs says:

"Do not be in wait, O wicked man, near the dwelling of the righteous; do not destroy his resting place.

For though a righteous man may fall seven times, he still gets up; but the wicked stumble in bad times." (Proverbs 24:15-16)

Just like in the previous passage seven times does not literally refer to seven times and instead it refers to any number of times. This meaning is obvious correct because this passage from Proverbs is just saying that a righteous man may fall any number of times but in the end he will still get up.

Therefore it should be clear that even in seemingly literal usages of the number seven in the Old Testament that oftentimes seven is used literally since it is just a number that is used in a symbolic manner. Although to be perfectly honest this distinction is not relevant or relevant in my commentary since the Book of Revelation is so heavily symbolic that it is clear that the author used the number seven symbolically to represent all possible number of days. The idea here is that if seven symbolically means all then if you say the earth was made in seven days then this would mean you are saying the earth could have been made instantly, in one day, in five days, in a hundred days, in a billion days, in a hundred billion days and so forth. Therefore in a symbolic definition of the number seven is correct, which it is as you will see, then whole seven days of creation in Genesis is not literal.

Now this first usage of the number seven in the Bible may seem confusing and application of the meaning of seven in a clear symbolic way might not make much sense so pay attention to the following passages where you will see the symbolic meaning that I am talking about. Really the symbolic and literal definitions of the number seven is irrefutable which is why I started with this number instead of say twenty-four.

First off as Psalms says:

"The words of the LORD are flawless, like silver refined in a furnace, like gold purified seventold." (Psalm 12:6)

Here this Psalm is not saying that the gold is literally purified seventold and instead it is saying the gold is completely purified. This fact is further evidenced by considering the words of God to gold that has been so completely purified that it is flawless.

Next as Genesis says:

"Not so!" replied the LORD. 'If anyone slays Cain, then Cain will be avenged sevenfold.' And the LORD placed a mark on Cain, so that no one who found him would kill him." (Genesis 4:15)

Here God is saying that He will completely avenge Cain if someone kills him. Again seven is representative of completeness and is not supposed to be viewed literally.

Then as God says in Leviticus:

"And if after all this you will not obey Me, I will proceed to punish you seventold for your sins. I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit.

If you walk in hostility toward Me and refuse to obey Me, I will multiply your plagues seven times, according to your sins. I will send wild animals against you to rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and reduce your number that your roads lie desolate.

And if in spite of these things you do not accept My discipline, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in hostility toward you, and I will strike you seventold for your sins. And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and dole out your bread by weight, so that you will eat but not be satisfied.

But if in spite of all this you do not obey Me, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in fury against you, and I, even I, will punish you seventold for your sins. You will be forced to eat the flesh of your sons and daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you.

I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices. And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who dwell in it will be appalled. But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword after you as your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:18-33)

The key words here are sevenfold and seven times. Then just like before sevenfold and seven times both mean completely. Thus the idea here is that God is saying that He will punish those who break His covenant in a complete manner so that they will have zero doubt about the fact that the afflictions they are now facing are from God Himself. This is why I quoted so many verses around the words sevenfold and seven times because I want you to emphasize the lengths to which God is saying He will punish those who break His covenant so that you will have zero doubt that sevenfold and seven times both mean complete and in a complete manner.

So remember that whenever you read about being punished sevenfold by God you should have in mind a punishment that is so severe in nature that it perfectly encapsulates what it means to be punished by God. In other words you should have in mind a punishment that is so complete that no one would be able to argue that they were not punished in a complete manner. This is what sevenfold and seven times truly mean here.

Then as the Book of Daniel says:

"At this, Nebuchadnezzar was filled with rage, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. He gave orders that the furnace seven times hotter than usual, and he commanded some mighty men of valor in his army to tie up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and throw them into the blazing fiery furnace." (Daniel 3:19-20)

Here Daniel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar gave orders to completely heat up the furnace to such a high temperature that no one would survive being thrown inside. Now you may doubt this view and insist that seven literal so consider the next passage from the Book of Daniel.

As the Book of Daniel also says:

"While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: 'It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from people to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals and gives it to whom He wishes.'" (Daniel 4:31-32)

In this passage the angel is saying to Nebuchadnezzar that the beasts of the beasts of the field forever until he acknowledges that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals seven times. The symbolic meaning of seven is all or complete so it is impossible for all time to pass someone by. As a result this is why the most accurate meaning of seven times here is forever. Now you could attempt to dispute this and insist that seven times is somehow literal here in the sense that it refers to a literal and non-figurative period of time but I would like to point out that the Bible uses non-figurative units of time since the Hebrew word translated as times here most literally translates as periods of time. Although in response you may say that the Hebrew word originates from a root word that can technically mean a year. However regardless of the usage of the word elsewhere in Daniel it is clear that intended meaning of the word is a period of time. That said it should be very obvious that the number seven the Bible was used in a symbolic and figurative manner rather than in a literal manner.

Now before you read about the usage of the number the New Testament I would just like to talk about Revelation's extremely literal usages of seven in the Old Testament.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah said to Ahab, 'Go up, eat and drink, for there is the sound of a heavy rain.'

So Ahab went up to eat and drink. But Elijah climbed to the summit of Carmel, bent down on the ground, and put his face between his knees. 'Go and look toward the sea,' he said to his servant.

So the servant went and looked, and he said, 'There is nothing there.'

Seven times Elijah said, 'Go back.'

On the seventh time the servant reported, 'There is a cloud as small as a man's hand rising from the sea.'

And Elijah replied, 'Go and tell Ahab, 'Prepare your chariot and go down before the rain stops you.'" (1 Kings 18:41-44)

You may be tempted to say that the Elijah literally told the servant to look seven times because this is what the text clearly says and the First Kings is not a heavily symbolic figurative text like the Book of Daniel. However this literal view would not be correct because the phrase seven times is used in this passage to represent any number of times. In other words the phrase seven times the author is saying that it could be five times, ten times, 20 times, 100 times or seven times because seven symbolically means every or all which means that seven in reference to any number of times. The idea is that the actual number of times Elijah told his servant to go back is not relevant and that instead it is only important to say that Elijah told his servant to go back many times. Now you may doubt this usage so consider the following passage.

As Proverbs says:

"Do not be in wait, O wicked man, near the dwelling of the righteous; do not destroy his resting place.

For though a righteous man may fall seven times, he still gets up; but the wicked stumble in bad times." (Proverbs 24:15-16)

Just like in the previous passage seven times does not literally refer to seven times and instead it refers to any number of times. This meaning is obvious correct because this passage from Proverbs is just saying that a righteous man may fall any number of times but in the end he will still get up.

Therefore it should be clear that even in seemingly literal usages of the number seven in the Old Testament that oftentimes seven is used literally since it is just a number that is used in a symbolic manner. Although to be perfectly honest this distinction is not relevant or relevant in my commentary since the Book of Revelation is so heavily symbolic that it is clear that the author used the number seven symbolically to represent all possible number of days. The idea here is that if seven symbolically means all then if you say the earth was made in seven days then this would mean you are saying the earth could have been made instantly, in one day, in five days, in a hundred days, in a billion days, in a hundred billion days and so forth. Therefore in a symbolic definition of the number seven is correct, which it is as you will see, then whole seven days of creation in Genesis is not literal.

Now this first usage of the number seven in the Bible may seem confusing and application of the meaning of seven in a clear symbolic way might not make much sense so pay attention to the following passages where you will see the symbolic meaning that I am talking about. Really the symbolic and literal definitions of the number seven is irrefutable which is why I started with this number instead of say twenty-four.

First off as Psalms says:

"The words of the LORD are flawless, like silver refined in a furnace, like gold purified seventold." (Psalm 12:6)

Here this Psalm is not saying that the gold is literally purified seventold and instead it is saying the gold is completely purified. This fact is further evidenced by considering the words of God to gold that has been so completely purified that it is flawless.

Next as Genesis says:

"Not so!" replied the LORD. 'If anyone slays Cain, then Cain will be avenged sevenfold.' And the LORD placed a mark on Cain, so that no one who found him would kill him." (Genesis 4:15)

Here God is saying that He will completely avenge Cain if someone kills him. Again seven is representative of completeness and is not supposed to be viewed literally.

Then as God says in Leviticus:

"And if after all this you will not obey Me, I will proceed to punish you seventold for your sins. I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit.

If you walk in hostility toward Me and refuse to obey Me, I will multiply your plagues seven times, according to your sins. I will send wild animals against you to rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and reduce your number that your roads lie desolate.

And if in spite of these things you do not accept My discipline, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in hostility toward you, and I will strike you seventold for your sins. And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and dole out your bread by weight, so that you will eat but not be satisfied.

But if in spite of all this you do not obey Me, but continue to walk in hostility toward Me, then I will walk in fury against you, and I, even I, will punish you seventold for your sins. You will be forced to eat the flesh of your sons and daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you.

I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices. And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who dwell in it will be appalled. But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword after you as your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:18-33)

The key words here are sevenfold and seven times. Then just like before sevenfold and seven times both mean completely. Thus the idea here is that God is saying that He will punish those who break His covenant in a complete manner so that they will have zero doubt about the fact that the afflictions they are now facing are from God Himself. This is why I quoted so many verses around the words sevenfold and seven times because I want you to emphasize the lengths to which God is saying He will punish those who break His covenant so that you will have zero doubt that sevenfold and seven times both mean complete and in a complete manner.

So remember that whenever you read about being punished sevenfold by God you should have in mind a punishment that is so severe in nature that it perfectly encapsulates what it means to be punished by God. In other words you should have in mind a punishment that is so complete that no one would be able to argue that they were not punished in a complete manner. This is what sevenfold and seven times truly mean here.

Then as the Book of Daniel says:

"At this, Nebuchadnezzar was filled with rage, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. He gave orders that the furnace seven times hotter than usual, and he commanded some mighty men of valor in his army to tie up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and throw them into the blazing fiery furnace." (Daniel 3:19-20)

Here Daniel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar gave orders to completely heat up the furnace to such a high temperature that no one would survive being thrown inside. Now you may doubt this view and insist that seven literal so consider the next passage from the Book of Daniel.

As the Book of Daniel also says:

"While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: 'It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from people to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals and gives it to whom He wishes.'" (Daniel 4:31-32)

In this passage the angel is saying to Nebuchadnezzar that the beasts of the beasts of the field forever until he acknowledges that the Most High rules over the realm of mortals seven times. The symbolic meaning of seven is all or complete so it is impossible for all time to pass someone by. As a result this is why the most accurate meaning of seven times here is forever. Now you could attempt to dispute this and insist that seven times is somehow literal here in the sense that it refers to a literal and non-figurative period of time but I would like to point out that the Bible uses non-figurative units of time since the Hebrew word translated as times here most literally translates as periods of time. Although in response you may say that the Hebrew word originates from a root word that can technically mean a year. However regardless of the usage of the word elsewhere in Daniel it is clear that intended meaning of the word is a period of time. That said it should be very obvious that the number seven the Bible was used in a symbolic and figurative manner rather than in a literal manner.

Now before you read about the usage of the number the New Testament I would just like to talk about Revelation's extremely literal usages of seven in the Old Testament.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah said to Ahab, 'Go up, eat and drink, for there is the sound of a heavy rain.'

So Ahab went up to eat and drink. But Elijah climbed to the summit of Carmel, bent down on the ground, and put his face between his knees. 'Go and look toward the sea,' he said to his servant.

So the servant went and looked, and he said, 'There is nothing there.'

Seven times Elijah said, 'Go back.'

On the sevent

> Then Jehu set out toward Samaria. At Beth-eked of the Shepherds, Jehu met some relatives of Ahaziah king of Judah and asked, ‘Who are you?’
>
> ‘We are relatives of Ahaziah,’ they answered, ‘and we have come down to greet the sons of the king and of the queen mother.’
>
> Then Jehu ordered, ‘Take them alive.’ So his men took them alive, then slaughtered them at the well of Beth-eked—forty-two men. He spared none of them.” (2 Kings 10:9-14)

First off you need some background information to better make sense of this passage and why Jehu would kill these 42 men. Jehu was anointed as king of the northern kingdom of Israel by Elisha the prophet. Then Jehu killed Joram, son of Ahab, who was the reigning king of Israel and Ahaziah king of Judah who was with Joram. After this Jehu killed Jezebel who was Ahab's wife. Ahab and Jezebel stood against God promoting idolatry which is why Joram did what he did because it was the will of God that they should die for their idolatry. After all Joram said “that not a word the LORD has spoken against the house of Ahab will fail, for the LORD has done what He promised through His servant Elijah.” (2 Kings 10:10)

Therefore the idea here in this passage is that Joram is fulfilling the words that Elijah spoke against the house of Ahab on behalf of God. In other words God is using Joram to carry out a promise He made against the house of Ahab. Then these 42 men are killed in fulfillment of this promise because even those who would seek to honor Ahab's son Joram and the queen mother Jezebel fall under condemnation for associating themselves with the house of Ahab. Thus this is why the number 42 is used here because it is a clear fulfillment of a promise. But remember just like what I said with regards to Elisha and the 42 boys who were mauled. The number is not necessarily literal and instead the author of Second Kings could just be inserting 42 because they do not know the real number and as a way of saying that these deaths were in fulfillment of one of God's promises.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> “This is the record of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham:
>
> Abraham was the father of Isaac,
> Isaac the father of Jacob,
> and Jacob the father of Judah and his brothers.
>
> Judah was the father of Perez and Zerah by Tamar,
> Perez the father of Hezron,
> and Hezron the father of Ram.
>
> Ram was the father of Amminadab,
> Amminadab the father of Nahshon,
> and Nahshon the father of Salmon.
>
> Salmon was the father of Boaz by Rahab,
> Boaz the father of Obed by Ruth,
> Obed the father of Jesse,
> and Jesse the father of David the king.
>
> Next:
>
> David was the father of Solomon by Uriah's wife,
> Solomon the father of Rehoboam,
> Rehoboam the father of Abijah,
> and Abijah the father of Asa.
>
> Asa was the father of Jehoshaphat,
> Jehoshaphat the father of Joram,
> and Joram the father of Uzziah.
>
> Uzziah was the father of Jotham,
> Jotham the father of Ahaz,
> and Ahaz the father of Hezekiah.
>
> Hezekiah was the father of Manasseh,
> Manasseh the father of Amon,
> Amon the father of Josiah,
> and Josiah the father of Jeconiah and his brothers
> at the time of the exile to Babylon.
>
> After the exile to Babylon:
>
> Jeconiah was the father of Shealtiel,
> Shealtiel the father of Zerubbabel,
> Zerubbabel the father of Abiud,
> Abiud the father of Eliakim,
> and Eliakim the father of Azor.
>
> Azor was the father of Zadok,
> Zadok the father of Achim,
> and Achim the father of Eliud.
>
> Eliud was the father of Eleazar,
> Eleazar the father of Matthan,
> Matthan the father of Jacob,
> and Jacob the father of Joseph, the husband of Mary,
> of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.
>
> In all, then, there were fourteen generations from Abraham to David, fourteen from David to the exile to Babylon, and fourteen from the exile to the Christ.” (Matthew 1:1-17)

Can you guess how the number 42 is used in this passage? I will give you a hint. What do you get when you add 14 plus 14 plus 14? You get 42 of course. Now before I explain why this number was used I need to explain why this number is symbolic and not literally. First off none of the men in this list are related to Jesus so therefore this genealogy has zero literal value and instead it only has theological value in that the author of the Gospel of Matthew included in for a specific theological reason. This is because Jesus was born of the virgin Mary so therefore He is not literally Joseph's Son and instead He is the Son of God. Now you may dispute this fact and claim that this genealogy is still literal and that instead it is merely tracing Jesus's adoptive father Joseph however as you will soon see the Gospel of Luke provides a completely different genealogy through a completely different line. Ultimately this means the two genealogies are completely incompatible with each other so that both cannot be literally correct. Therefore as a result of this it is best to view both genealogies as theologically valuable instead of as literal genealogies.

Second the author of Matthew gives three sections of 14 names. However there is a major problem in that the third section only has 13 names and not 14. Therefore the sum would be 14 plus 14 plus 13 or 41 not 42. So what is going on? Well you see this is actually very strong evidence that the number 42 is used symbolically here and not literally. This is because the number 14 is clearly not important here because otherwise the author would have simply included an extra name in the third set in order to make it 14 and not 13. Now you may doubt this but there were almost 600 years from when the Exile ended to when Jesus began His ministry. Then when you consider the fact that the time between generations would have been 20 to 40 years you would basically have to assume that all of Jesus's ancestors had their sons in what would be called old age back then. Keep in mind that life expectancy was low back then and after a life of working hard manual labor you were lucky to make it past 50 years old. Therefore it is clear that there were more than 13 generations between the end of the Exile and Jesus. This then means that the number 14 is not the important number here and instead the sum of 14 plus 14 plus 14 or 42 is the important number.

Now you still may doubt this so I would also like to point out that just as there are too few names in the third section to correspond with the total number of years that elapsed there are also too few names in the other two sections as well. For instance there are several names that have been omitted from the Old Testament if you go through the genealogy here and compare it to the genealogies in the Old Testament. On top of this there are far too few names between Abraham and David since Abraham would have lived around 2,000 BC and David around 1,000 BC. Obviously I do not have to tell you that having only 14 generations over around 1,000 years is quite nonsensical.

Therefore as a result of these two points the number 14 is not important and instead the number 42 is the important number that is clearly being used symbolically. But what is the symbolic meaning of 42 here? Well as you know it relates to a promise from God. Then the specific promise I am talking about is the promise that God made to Abraham.

As Genesis says:

> “Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and east and north and south. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you and your offspring.” (Genesis 28:14)
>
> “And through your offspring all nations of the earth will be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice.” (Genesis 22:18)

Here God promised Abraham that His children would spread out across the whole world so that all the nations and all the families of the earth would be blessed through him and his offspring. Then it goes without saying that Jesus is the fulfillment of this promise because it is through Him that the people of the nations of the world could join Israel and become a child of Abraham.

For example as Paul wrote:

> “It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, ‘Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned.’ So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring.” (Romans 9:6-8)

Therefore whoever becomes a Christian so that they accept Jesus as the Christ becomes a child of God and hence a descendant of Abraham. This is how God's promise to Abraham was fulfilled through Jesus because Jesus is how Israel would spread across the whole world so that Abraham's descendants would “be like the dust of the earth” (Genesis 28:14) just as God promised. This is why the author of Matthew used the number 42 in the genealogy from Abraham to Jesus because the idea is that the time between Abraham and Jesus was the appointed time God had set between giving His promise to Abraham and fulfilling His promise is Jesus. To make this make more sense think of it along the same line as the 42 campsites from Egypt to the promised land.

Finally as the Gospel of Luke says:

> “Jesus Himself was about thirty years old when He began His ministry.
>
> He was regarded as the son of Joseph,
> the son of Heli,
> the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi,
> the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph,
> the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai,
> the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda,
> the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri,
> the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam,
> the son of Elmadam, the son of Er,
> the son of Joshua, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi,
> the son of Simeon, the son of Judah, the son of Joseph,
> the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim,
> the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David,
> the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz,
> the son of Sala, the son of Nahshon,
> the son of Amminadab, the son of Admin, the son of Arni,
> the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah,
> the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham,
> the son of Terah, the son of Nahor,
> the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg,
> the son of Eber, the son of Shelah,
> the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech,
> the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalalel, the son of Cainan,
> the son of Enosh, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.” (Luke 3:23-38)

Can you guess how this genealogy relates to the number 42? I know there are a lot of names here so to make it easier just count the number of the sons of David starting with David's first son Nathan. Here is the list in chronological order to make it easier to count: Nathan, Mattatha, Menna, Melea, Eliakim, Jonam, Joseph, Judah, Simeon, Levi, Matthat, Jorim, Eliezer, Joshua, Er, Elmadam, Cosam, Addi, Melchi, Neri, Shealtiel, Zerubbabel, Rhesa, Joanan, Joda, Josech, Semein, Mattathias, Maath, Naggai, Esli, Nahum, Amos, Mattathias, Joseph, Jannai, Melchi, Levi, Matthat, Heli, Joseph, and finally Jesus.

So there are 42 sons of David from Nathan to Jesus with Jesus being the forty-second son of David. Now before I explain what 42 means here and why it was used I would just like to point out the obvious fact that these two genealogies in Matthew and Luke are in obvious conflict in two ways. The first is that here Luke says there are 43 generations from David to Jesus while Matthew says there are 28. Then the second is that the lineages from David to Jesus are completely different in Matthew and Luke so that both cannot be correct. Therefore just like I said before with regards to Matthew the numbers are clearly symbolic and these genealogies are not supposed to be taken literally. This means if you want to view this genealogies as literal then you miss the entire purpose behind them.

Alright so what is the purpose of Jesus being the forty-second son of David? Well obviously some kind of promise from God is being fulfilled here in Jesus as you can probably guess.

As Second Samuel says:

> “‘The LORD declares to you that He Himself will establish a house for you. And when your days are fulfilled and you rest with your fathers, I will raise up your descendant after you, who will come from your own body, and I will establish his kingdom. He will build a house for My Name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever. I will be his Father, and he will be My son. When he does wrong, I will discipline him with the rod of men and with the blows of the sons of men.
>
> But My loving devotion will never be removed from him as I removed it from Saul, whom I moved out of your way. Your house and kingdom will endure forever before Me, and your throne will be established forever.’
>
> So Nathan relayed to David all the words of this entire vision.” (2 Samuel 7:11-17)
>
> “And now, O Lord GOD, You are God! Your words are true, and You have promised this goodness to Your servant. Now therefore, may it please You to bless the house of Your servant, that it may continue forever before You. For You, O Lord GOD, have spoken, and with Your blessing the house of Your servant will be blessed forever.” (2 Samuel 7:28-29)

Here God made a promise to David that He would establish the throne of David's kingdom forever so that there would always be a king of Israel and a king of the Jews.

Then as the Gospel of John says:

> “The next day the great crowd that had come to the feast heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem. They took palm branches and went out to meet Him, shouting:
>
> ‘Hosanna!’
>
> ‘Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord!’
>
> ‘Blessed is the King of Israel!’” (John 12:12-13)

And as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> “After Jesus was born in Bethlehem in Judea, during the time of King Herod, Magi from the east arrived in Jerusalem, asking, ‘Where is the One who has been born King of the Jews? We saw His star in the east and have come to worship Him.’” (Matthew 2:1-2)

Therefore Jesus is the promised King of Israel and the King of the Jews. Now this is significant and ties into the number 42 because this means that Jesus is the fulfillment of this promise to David and not Solomon. This is because the ancient kingdom of Israel was destroyed multiple times so that the throne of David was not established forever through Solomon. Instead it is only through Jesus that the throne of David was established forever. Now you may doubt this view and think that of course God was talking about Solomon above and not Jesus but if God was talking about Solomon then why did David's throne fall? Furthermore compare the genealogies of Matthew and Luke. In Matthew Jesus's genealogy is given through David's son Solomon and it tracks the line of kings who sat on the throne with the line broken when the throne of the kingdom of Israel was no more. However in Luke Jesus's genealogy is given through David's son Nathan who never was king of Israel and follows a line of the sons of David who were never king until Jesus, the forty-second son of David, becomes King of Israel. This is why Jesus is actually the fulfillment of all of God's promises to David regarding his son and not Solomon. After all this is why Luke purposefully used a different genealogy because the author is specifically trying to point out that the throne of Solomon and all the kings after him were not what God was promising. Instead God was really promising David that he would have a future son long into the future who would have an everlasting throne.

To quote Second Samuel again:

> “‘The LORD declares to you that He Himself will establish a house for you. And when your days are fulfilled and you rest with your fathers, I will raise up your descendant after you, who will come from your own body, and I will establish his kingdom. He will build a house for My Name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever. I will be his Father, and he will be My son. When he does wrong, I will discipline him with the rod of men and with the blows of the sons of men.
>
> But My loving devotion will never be removed from him as I removed it from Saul, whom I moved out of your way. Your house and kingdom will endure forever before Me, and your throne will be established forever.’
>
> So Nathan relayed to David all the words of this entire vision.” (2 Samuel 7:11-17)

Sure you can see a parallel fulfillment with David's son Solomon in the sense that he built the First Temple but really what God is talking about here is the heavenly house or Temple that Jesus built in heaven through His death and resurrection. Then since Jesus's kingdom is a heavenly kingdom Jesus has ruled from heaven as King of Israel and King of the Jews from the throne of David since His death and resurrection. Really as I said this is the only way that God's promise to David that his “throne will be established forever” (2 Samuel 7:16) can be fulfilled. Thus this is why Luke made Jesus the forty-second son of David. By making Jesus the forty-second son of David the author is symbolically showing that Jesus is the One who fulfilled God's promise to David.

Then lastly I would just like to point out that this is why I said if you want to try to take these genealogies literally with a literal meaning then you quite literally miss the intended meaning and purpose behind them because they are supposed to be viewed symbolically in order to see the spiritual meaning. This spiritual meaning is if course the meaning I have provided which relates the number 42 to the fulfillment of God's promises to both Abraham and David.

12.2.3 – One-Thousand Two-Hundred and Sixty

Now although I said the number 1,260 has the same meaning as 3.5 and 42 this number is not actually used outside of Revelation. But before I quote from Revelation I would like to remind you that 3.5 years is 42 months which is 1,260 days so this is why all three numbers are the same. Now time to demonstrate the meaning and when you read the following passage think about the meaning of 1,260 days in the context of God fulfilling a promise over an appointed period of time.

As Revelation says:

> “And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days.” (Revelation 12:5-6)

To provide a brief explanation the male child is Jesus and the woman is Israel. This is one of the main reasons why the Church is the true Israel because there is no distinction made between the woman or Israel before and after Jesus was taken up to heaven in Revelation 12. Anyways after Israel produces Jesus and Jesus is taken up to heaven in His ascension after His resurrection the Church, or Israel, largely leaves the Roman province of Judea and goes into the wilderness or the nations of the world to be nourished or to grow for 1,260 days. Now obviously it would be nonsensical to say the Church was nourished by God for only 1,260 days so therefore this number is entirely symbolic. So if it is symbolic then what promise is God fulfilling?

As Jesus says:

> “And I tell you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades will not prevail against it.” (Matthew 16:18)
>
> “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” (Matthew 28:18-20)

First off here God promises the disciples and hence all Christians through Jesus that the Church will not fall so that there will always be faithful Christians in the world. Keep in mind that the Church that I am referring to here is the collection of faithful Christians across the world and I am not talking about the Roman Catholic Church. If you have questions about the Roman Catholic Church and this passage I go over it in a later part called Various Insights where I talk about a variety of different topics. Now back to the subject at hand. In the second passage Jesus says that He will always be with us even to the end of the age. This once again means that the Church or faithful Christians will not fall as a group.

Therefore the reference to 1,260 days in Revelation is a way of symbolically saying that God is fulfilling a promise over an appointed period of time. This is of course the same meaning as 3.5 and 42 which is why I have said they have the same meaning.

12.3 – Final Thoughts

I know my explanation concerning the numbers 3.5, 42 and 1,260 was rather long but considering the fact that the meaning behind the numbers is less obvious than the previous numbers I felt that it was necessary. That said I hope you now understand what 3.5, 42 and 1,260 mean. I also hope that you accept the meaning I have provided as true because these three numbers are very important in Revelation and they are the result of much confusion with regards to Revelation. If you want to take these numbers literally then you will quite literally be spiritually blind so that you cannot see the truth that God has hidden in plain sight. Therefore if you do not agree with the meaning I have provided then I strongly encourage you to read through what I have said again.

13 – Prostitute

13.1 – Meaning

The symbolic meaning of a prostitute is someone or a group of people who commit spiritual adultery against God through either their blasphemies and godlessness or highly detestable and offensive sins.

13.2 – Explanation

In terms of why a prostitute has this meaning allow me to explain. The idea is that both in the time of ancient Israel and in the time of modern Israel or the Church the faithful are pledged in marriage to God so that once the eternal Kingdom of God arrives the actual marriage will take place so that we will live with God and no longer be separated. So therefore those who are godless and commit blasphemies and those who commit highly detestable and offensive sins are essentially selling the love of God and their eternal salvation in the enteral Kingdom of God for whatever it is they are abandoning God for on earth.

Now this still might not make much sense but you need to understand that marriage in ancient Israel was not something that happened immediately after becoming engaged. Instead a woman could be pledged in marriage to a man for months or even years before actually getting married. During this time she would continue to live in her father's house and she would only move into her husband's house after they were married.

So to make the imagery of a prostitute make more sense consider a woman pledged in marriage to a man who has to wait over a year in order to be married to her future husband because her future husband needs time to prepare his household for her. Alright so what would you call this woman if instead of waiting to be married to her future husband to receive all the material things he has promised her once she becomes his wife she becomes impatient and decides that she does not want to wait so that she goes out and propositions other men in order to have the fun she thinks she deserves and acquire the material things she desires now? Well obviously she would literally be a prostitute because she has abandoned her future husband so that she can enjoy herself in her promiscuity and engage in prostitution as she acquires whatever it is she wants now that her future husband has not yet given her.

So this is why the symbolic meaning of a prostitute is someone or a group of people who commit spiritual adultery against God through either their blasphemies and godlessness or highly detestable and offensive sins. Once again the idea is that we are pledged in marriage to God through Jesus as we are separated from God living on earth. Then just like with the woman in the example above those who worship false gods, those who apostatize, those who commit idolatry, those who chase after wealth, those who abuse other Christians and in context of Revelation those who chase after the beast are all prostituting themselves to the things of the world as they are committing adultery against God. Essentially you should see selling your eternal life with God for the pleasures of the world as a form of prostitution. This is of course would be especially true for the people who prostitute themselves to the beast.

Alright although I am almost certain this symbolic meaning of a prostitute makes perfect sense to you it would still be helpful to go over some examples from the Bible in order to demonstrate that the words prostitute and prostitution are frequently used in a symbolic manner.

As God says in Ezekiel:

> “Son of man, confront Jerusalem with her abominations and tell her that this is what the Lord GOD says to Jerusalem: Your origin and your birth were in the land of the Canaanites. Your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite. On the day of your birth your cord was not cut, nor were you washed with water for cleansing. You were not rubbed with salt or wrapped in cloths. No one cared enough for you to do even one of these things out of compassion for you. Instead, you were thrown out into the open field, because you were despised on the day of your birth.
>
> Then I passed by and saw you wallowing in your blood, and as you lay there in your blood I said to you, ‘Live!’ There I said to you, ‘Live!’ I made you thrive like a plant of the field. You grew up and matured and became very beautiful. Your breasts were formed and your hair grew, but you were naked and bare.
>
> Then I passed by and saw you, and you were indeed old enough for love. So I spread My cloak over you and covered your nakedness. I pledged Myself to you, entered into a covenant with you, and you became Mine, declares the Lord GOD. Then I bathed you with water, rinsed off your blood, and anointed you with oil. I clothed you in embroidered cloth and gave you sandals of fine leather. I wrapped you in fine linen and covered you with silk. I adorned you with jewelry, and I put bracelets on your wrists and a chain around your neck. I put a ring in your nose, earrings on your ears, and a beautiful crown upon your head.
>
> So you were adorned with gold and silver, and your clothing was made of fine linen, silk, and embroidered cloth. You ate fine flour, honey, and oil. You became very beautiful and rose to be queen. Your fame spread among the nations on account of your beauty, for it was perfect in the splendor I bestowed on you, declares the Lord GOD.
>
> But because of your fame, you trusted in your beauty and played the harlot. You lavished your favors on everyone who passed by, and your beauty was theirs for the asking. You took some of your garments and made colorful high places for yourself, and on them you prostituted yourself. Such things should not have happened; never should they have occurred!
>
> You also took the fine jewelry of gold and silver I had given you, and you made male idols with which to prostitute yourself. You took your embroidered garments to cover them, and you set My oil and incense before them. And you set before them as a pleasing aroma the food I had given you—the fine flour, oil, and honey that I had fed you. That is what happened, declares the Lord GOD.
>
> You even took the sons and daughters you bore to Me and sacrificed them as food to idols. Was your prostitution not enough? You slaughtered My children and delivered them up through the fire to idols.
>
> And in all your abominations and acts of prostitution, you did not remember the days of your youth when you were naked and bare, wallowing in your own blood.
>
> Woe! Woe to you, declares the Lord GOD. And in addition to all your other wickedness, you built yourself a mound and made yourself a lofty shrine in every public square. At the head of every street you built your lofty shrines and degraded your beauty. With increasing promiscuity, you spread your legs to all who passed by. You prostituted yourself with your lustful neighbors, the Egyptians, and increased your promiscuity to provoke Me to anger.
>
> Therefore I stretched out My hand against you and reduced your portion. I gave you over to the desire of those who hate you, the daughters of the Philistines, who were ashamed of your lewd conduct. Then you prostituted yourself with the Assyrians, because you were not yet satisfied. Even after that, you were still not satisfied. So you extended your promiscuity to Chaldea, the land of merchants—but even with this you were not satisfied!
>
> How weak-willed is your heart, declares the Lord GOD, while you do all these things, the acts of a shameless prostitute! But when you built your mounds at the head of every street and made your lofty shrines in every public square, you were not even like a prostitute, because you scorned payment.
>
> You adulterous wife! You receive strangers instead of your own husband! Men give gifts to all their prostitutes, but you gave gifts to all your lovers. You bribed them to come to you from everywhere for your illicit favors. So your prostitution is the opposite of that of other women: No one solicited your favors, and you paid a fee instead of receiving one; so you are the very opposite!
>
> Therefore, O prostitute, hear the word of the LORD! This is what the Lord GOD says: Because you poured out your wealth and exposed your nakedness in your promiscuity with your lovers and with all your detestable idols, and because of the blood of your children which you gave to them, therefore I will surely gather all the lovers with whom you found pleasure, all those you loved and all those you hated. I will gather them against you from all around and expose you before them, and they will see you completely naked. And I will sentence you to the punishment of women who commit adultery and those who shed blood; so I will bring upon you the wrath of your bloodshed and jealousy.” (Ezekiel 16:2-38)

In this passage although God uses the symbol and the imagery of a prostitute to describe Jerusalem here He says that Jerusalem is worse than a typical prostitute because at least a typical prostitute accepts payment for sex from her lovers while Jerusalem actually pays her lovers.

Next as God also says in Ezekiel:

> “Son of man, there were two women, daughters of the same mother, and they played in Egypt, prostituting themselves from their youth. Their breasts were fondled there, and their virgin bosoms caressed. The older was named Oholah, and her sister was named Oholibah. They became Mine and gave birth to sons and daughters. As for their identities, Oholah is Samaria, and Oholibah is Jerusalem.
>
> Oholah prostituted herself while she was still Mine. She lusted after her lovers, the Assyrians—warriors clothed in blue, governors and commanders, all desirable young men, horsemen mounted on steeds. She offered sexual favors to all the elite of Assyria. She defiled herself with all the idols of those for whom she lusted.
>
> She did not give up the prostitution she began in Egypt, when men slept with her in her youth, caressed her virgin bosom, and poured out their lust upon her. Therefore I delivered her into the hands of her lovers, the Assyrians for whom she lusted. They exposed her nakedness, seized her sons and daughters, and put her to the sword. Thus she became a byword among women, and they executed judgment against her.
>
> Her sister Oholibah saw this, yet in her lust and prostitution she was more depraved than her sister. She too lusted after the Assyrians—governors and commanders, warriors dressed in splendor, horsemen riding on steeds, all desirable young men. And I saw that she too had defiled herself; both of them had taken the same path.
>
> But Oholibah carried her prostitution even further. She saw the men portrayed on the wall, images of the Chaldeans, engraved in vermilion, wearing belts on their waists and flowing turbans on their heads; all of them looked like officers of the Babylonians in Chaldea, the land of their birth. At the sight of them, she lusted for them and sent messengers to them in Chaldea. Then the Babylonians came to her, to the bed of love, and in their lust they defiled her. But after she had been defiled by them, she turned away in disgust.
>
> When Oholibah openly prostituted herself and exposed her nakedness, I turned away from her in disgust, just as I had turned away from her sister. Yet she multiplied her promiscuity, remembering the days of her youth, when she had prostituted herself in the land of Egypt and lusted after their lovers, whose genitals were like those of donkeys and whose emission was like that of stallions. So you revisited the indecency of your youth, when the Egyptians caressed your bosom and pressed your young breasts.” (Ezekiel 23:2-21)

First off obviously the symbol of a prostitute is heavily featured in these two passages so that the symbolic meaning of a prostitute should be perfectly clear. Now I quoted these two long passages in order to demonstrate what the symbol of a prostitute is in the Bible and stress to you how important this symbol is. I say this because a prostitute is anyone and everyone who abandons God for any reason. Of course here in these two passages the main reason God has for speaking out against Jerusalem, the northern kingdom of Israel and the southern kingdom of Judah is that they were engaging in idolatry with false foreign gods. This is of course a highly detestable and offensive practice and sin so this is why God spoke so harshly against them.

Then in terms of the usage of the symbol of the prostitute in Revelation I would just like to say that it basically entirely revolves around the beast. The idea is that anyone and everyone who abandons God to follow and worship the beast as they chase after what the beast can provide them are prostitutes because they are quite literally prostituting themselves as they are pledged in marriage to God through Jesus. Therefore when you see the great prostitute in Revelation you should see her has being the sum of all prostitutes so that she is representative of all the prostitutes in the world. Or as Revelation calls her “THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” (Revelation 17:5) This means that you should not look towards the great prostitute being a single city or even an entire nation because just as there are billions of prostitutes in our world today so too will there be billions of prostitutes in the future when the entire world and almost everyone in it prostitutes themselves with the beast. I say this now so that you can begin to think about what the great prostitute is and all that she represents.

If you ever question this fact regarding the great prostitute then think back to these two passages you read from Ezekiel and how much God hates those who prostitute themselves with false gods. Again this is why I bothered to quote these two passages since you need to understand that anyone and everyone who abandons God for the beast will be a prostitute. This is why you will soon see that the only correct view of the great prostitute in Revelation is that she is representative of all prostitutes in the entire world in every city and nation.

14 – Babylon

14.1 – Meaning

The symbolic meaning of Babylon is those who are arrogant and look towards anything except God for salvation, all those who are opposed to God and a godless group that oppresses God's people so that they are Israel's or Jerusalem's enemy.

14.2 – Explanation

First off in case you are unaware Babylon was the capital city of the Neo-Babylonian Empire which invaded the Kingdom of Judah and took many of the ancient Israelites captive in addition to destroying Jerusalem.

As Second Chronicles says:

> “So He brought up against them the king of the Chaldeans, who put their young men to the sword in the sanctuary, sparing neither young men nor young women, neither elderly nor infirm. God gave them all into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar, who carried off everything to Babylon—all the articles of the house of God, both large and small, and the treasures of the house of the LORD and of the king and his officials. Then the Chaldeans set fire to the house of God and broke down the wall of Jerusalem. They burned down all the palaces and destroyed every article of value.
>
> Those who escaped the sword were carried by Nebuchadnezzar into exile in Babylon, and they became servants to him and his sons until the kingdom of Persia came to power.” (2 Chronicles 36:17-20)

Thus one of the symbolic meanings of Babylon is a godless group that oppresses God's people so that they are Israel's or Jerusalem's enemy as I said. However this definition does not fully encompass what Babylon represents since this is definition is more surface level and does not fully encompass what Babylon symbolizes. Instead the main symbolic meaning of Babylon is those who are arrogant and look towards anything except God for salvation and those who are opposed to God. This view can clearly be seen in both the Book of Isaiah and the Book of Daniel where Babylon is spoken of as being defiant and rebellious against God so that it looks towards itself and it's achievements for salvation instead of towards the one true God of Israel.

First off as the Book of Isaiah says:

> “‘Go down and sit in the dust, O Virgin Daughter of Babylon.
> Sit on the ground without a throne,
> O Daughter of Chaldea!
> For you will no longer be called
> tender or delicate.
> Take millstones and grind flour; remove your veil;
> strip off your skirt, bare your thigh, and wade through the streams.
> Your nakedness will be uncovered and your shame will be exposed.
> I will take vengeance;
> I will spare no one.’
>
> Our Redeemer—the LORD of Hosts is His name— is the Holy One of Israel.
>
> ‘Sit in silence and go into darkness, O Daughter of Chaldea.
> For you will no longer be called
> the queen of kingdoms.
> I was angry with My people; I profaned My heritage,
> and I placed them under your control.
> You showed them no mercy;
> even on the elderly you laid a most heavy yoke.
> You said, ‘I will be queen forever.’
> You did not take these things to heart
> or consider their outcome.
>
> So now hear this, O lover of luxury who sits securely,
> who says to herself,
> ‘I am, and there is none besides me.
> I will never be a widow
> or know the loss of children.’
> These two things will overtake you in a moment, in a single day:
> loss of children, and widowhood.
> They will come upon you in full measure, in spite of your many sorceries
> and the potency of your spells.
> You were secure in your wickedness; you said, ‘No one sees me.’
> Your wisdom and knowledge led you astray;
> you told yourself, ‘I am, and there is none besides me.’
> But disaster will come upon you; you will not know how to charm it away.
> A calamity will befall you
> that you will be unable to ward off.
> Devastation will happen to you
> suddenly and unexpectedly.’” (Isaiah 47:1-11)

Now obviously God sees Babylon as being arrogant since He says Babylon says “I will be queen forever” (Isaiah 17:7) and “I am, and there is none besides me. I will never be a widow or know the loss of children.” (Isaiah 17:8) Thus the main idea here is that God sees Babylon as arrogant since Babylon believes that it can create prosperity for itself to the point where it does not need God. This is why I said one of the main symbolic meanings of Babylon is those who are arrogant and look towards anything except God for salvation. Now you may doubt this view but Revelation itself actually references this passage from Isaiah in relation to the Babylon of Revelation.

As Revelation says:

> “As much as she has glorified herself and lived in luxury, give her the same measure of torment and grief.
> In her heart she says, ‘I sit as queen;
> I am not a widow and will never see grief.’
> Therefore her plagues will come in one day—
> death and grief and famine—
> and she will be consumed by fire,
> for mighty is the Lord God who judges her.”
> (Revelation 18:7-8)

As you can see these two verses from Revelation are a clear reference to the passage from Isaiah above. Thus I believe that the symbolic and figurative meaning of Babylon in Revelation specifically is more along the lines of all those in the world who look towards the beast and the achievements of man in their arrogance for salvation instead of towards God. After all in Revelation Babylon is called Babylon the great which signifies that Babylon views herself as something great due to her achievements. Now again you may question this view but there is a single reference to Babylon the great outside of the Book of Revelation.

As the Book of Daniel says:

> “For a time, Daniel, who was also known as Belteshazzar, was perplexed, and his thoughts alarmed him.
>
> So the king said, ‘Belteshazzar, do not let the dream or its interpretation alarm you.’
>
> ‘My lord,’ replied Belteshazzar, ‘may the dream apply to those who hate you, and its interpretation to your enemies!
>
> The tree you saw that grew large and strong, whose top reached the sky and was visible to all the earth, whose foliage was beautiful and whose fruit was abundant, providing food for all, under which the beasts of the field lived, and in whose branches the birds of the air nested— you, O king, are that tree! For you have become great and strong; your greatness has grown to reach the sky, and your dominion extends to the ends of the earth.
>
> And you, O king, saw a watcher, a holy one, coming down from heaven and saying: ‘Cut down the tree and destroy it,
>
> but leave the stump with its roots in the ground, and a band of iron and bronze around it, in the tender grass of the field.
>
> Let him be drenched with the dew of heaven, and graze with the beasts of the field till seven times pass him by.’
>
> This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree that the Most High has issued against my lord the king:
>
> You will be driven away from mankind, and your dwelling will be with the beasts of the field. You will feed on grass like an ox and be drenched with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass you by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the kingdom of mankind and gives it to whom He wishes.
>
> As for the command to leave the stump of the tree with its roots, your kingdom will be restored to you as soon as you acknowledge that Heaven rules. Therefore, may my advice be pleasing to you, O king. Break away from your sins by doing what is right, and from your iniquities by showing mercy to the oppressed. Perhaps there will be an extension of your prosperity.’
>
> All this happened to King Nebuchadnezzar. Twelve months later, as he was walking on the roof of the royal palace of Babylon, the king exclaimed, ‘Is this not Babylon the Great, which I myself have built by the might of my power as a royal residence and for the glory of my majesty?’
>
> While the words were still in the king's mouth, a voice came from heaven: ‘It is decreed to you, King Nebuchadnezzar, that the kingdom has departed from you. You will be driven away from mankind to live with the beasts of the field, and you will feed on grass like an ox. And seven times will pass you by, until you acknowledge that the Most High rules over the kingdom of mankind and gives it to whom He wishes.’
>
> At that moment the sentence against Nebuchadnezzar was fulfilled. He was driven away from mankind. He ate grass like an ox, and his body was drenched with the dew of heaven, until his hair grew like the feathers of an eagle and his nails like the claws of a bird.” (Daniel 4:19-33)

First off to review the symbolic meaning of the number seven what do you think the term “till seven times pass him by” (Daniel 4:23) means here? Since the number seven is symbolic of completeness and it represents every or all the phrase “till seven times pass him by” (Daniel 4:23) would most literally mean until all time passes. Thus the watcher or an angel is saying that Nebuchadnezzar will graze with the beasts of the field until all time passes, or until he dies of old age, unless he acknowledges that God rules over all.

But now in terms of the reference to Babylon the Great in this passage it is clear that Nebuchadnezzar sees himself as being great and sees the city he thinks he built, Babylon, as being great and worthy of honor and praise.

To reiterate what Nebuchadnezzar said:

> “Is this not Babylon the Great, which I myself have built by the might of my power as a royal residence and for the glory of my majesty?” (Daniel 4:30)

Then since immediately after uttering these words Nebuchadnezzar was driven away to eat grass like an ox it is clear that Nebuchadnezzar was punished for his arrogance and pride in his own achievements. This means that Babylon the great would be a reference to the achievements of men and hence a so-called grand and prosperous society that people look towards in their arrogance for their salvation. Thus this is why I said the main symbolic view of the Babylon the great of Revelation is that of those who are arrogant and look towards anything except God for salvation. That said I would just like to remind you that it can also mean all those who are opposed to God and a godless group that oppresses God's people so that they are Israel's or Jerusalem's enemy.

Alright so what about usage of Babylon in the New Testament? Well really outside of Revelation and four references to the Babylonian Exile or the Exile there is only a single reference to Babylon to be found.

As First Peter says:

> “The church in Babylon, chosen together with you, sends you greetings, as does my son Mark.” (1 Peter 5:13)

In this verse the translation of the church in Babylon is most literally translated as she in Babylon. This means that the author could be referring to a specific woman that the recipients of the letter would know or it could be in reference to the church in Babylon in the sense that the church is a woman. I just wanted to point this out but really this makes no difference in terms of how Babylon is understood here.

Now in terms of the topic at hand I used to understand Babylon in this verse to be the city of Rome since that is the traditional view however after fully understanding the symbol of Babylon and what First Peter says I came to the inescapable conclusion that First Peter is referring to so-called Jerusalem and not Rome or even the literal city of Babylon.

But why? Well Peter being the first so-called pope in the city of Rome is a myth. In the New Testament none of the apostles are said to have founded the church in Rome. For evidence of this consider the fact that Paul's Epistle to the Romans written around 57 AD does not mention Peter by name in the list of those in Rome. Then it would not make sense for Paul to write Romans if Peter was in Rome because they would have already had their own apostle for guidance. Thus Paul writing Romans very strongly suggests that there was no apostle in Rome so therefore Christianity arrived in Rome without the work of the apostles. Furthermore in the Book of Acts Peter is also never mentioned in relation to Rome and once Paul finally arrives in Rome Paul never speaks to Peter which would have happened in around 60 to 62 AD if Acts is historical.

Now this does not mean that Peter never visited Rome later in his life so that he could be martyred in Rome during the reign of Nero in 64 to 68 AD. Although to be honest I think much of early Church history is mythical and legendary in nature. The first definitive reference we have to Peter being martyred in Rome was written in the early third century AD. Yes there are earlier references that can be placed in even the first century AD however these do not specifically mention Rome in relation to Peter. Thus what I am saying is that there is no good reason to place Peter in Rome when First Peter was written. This then means that the reference to Babylon in First Peter is almost certainly not Rome.

So how did the Church spread to Rome then? Well instead the church in Rome most likely grew organically. This would make sense because the city of Rome was a large city of around a million people and it was the main hub of trade and commerce in the Roman Empire. Thus the idea is that Christian converts from the east would inevitably travel to Rome and share the gospels with others. It is also important to point out that the Hebrews and so-called Jews in Rome did not know about Jesus so there would have been little to stop people from preaching about Jesus in synagogues in Rome. This would be in contrast to Jerusalem and the east where the so-called Jews knew about Jesus and thus were actively trying to stop Christian evangelism through persecution.

This fact that the so-called Jews were persecuting Christians is probably why First Peter refers to the church in so-called Jerusalem as the church in Babylon. The idea here is that ancient Babylon was a godless city that persecuted God's people while arrogantly believing itself to not need God. Now you may say that the so-called Jews worship God but this is a lie because they do not. God has not only given Jesus the throne of David so that He is King of Israel and King of the Jews but has also given Jesus His power and authority to rule on His behalf. This means the only way anyone can worship God is to accept Jesus as the Christ.

Therefore First Peter is saying that the so-called Jews persecuting God's people, faithful Christians, as they look towards their own works and achievements for salvation are spiritually like Babylon.

But why is Babylon not Babylon itself? If it is not Rome then would it not make more sense to view it as the literal Babylon? Not really. This is because First Peter does not want to call so-called Jerusalem Jerusalem because he is living in a city of the godless who persecute God's chosen people and sees Jerusalem as being the city of God. Thus the idea here is that if First Peter were to call so-called Jerusalem Jerusalem he would be calling a city that is filled to the brim with godlessness, spiritual adultery and lawlessness the city of God. Therefore instead of calling so-called Jerusalem Jerusalem First Peter decides to call it Babylon as a way to avoid giving the so-called Jews a claim on the true Jerusalem. Again Jerusalem was supposed to be the city of God but the so-called Jews turned it into a godless city inhabited by those who are opposed to God and the enemy of God's people. This is why I say so-called Jerusalem and why First Peter says Babylon.

You may doubt this view but it is clear that First Peter considers Christians to be the people of God or Israel and not the so-called Jews.

As First Peter says:

> “Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ,
>
> To the elect who are exiles of the Dispersion throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father and sanctified by the Spirit for obedience to Jesus Christ and sprinkling by His blood:
>
> Grace and peace be yours in abundance.” (1 Peter 1:1-2)

Upon reading these two verses at the start of First Peter you may believe that the author is writing to Hebrews in the eastern Roman Empire since the author references the Dispersion which refers to when the Jews were spread out outside of the land of Israel during and after the Exile. However this view would be wrong as you will soon see.

As First Peter also says:

> “But you are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, to proclaim the virtues of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light. Once you were not a people, but now you are the people of God; once you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy.
>
> Beloved, I urge you, as foreigners and exiles, to abstain from the desires of the flesh, which war against your soul. Conduct yourselves with such honor among the Gentiles that, though they slander you as evildoers, they may see your good deeds and glorify God on the day He visits us.” (1 Peter 2:9-12)

So if the author is supposedly writing to Hebrews who are already Jews and were born Jews then why does he say this?

To reiterate the key verse:

> “Once you were not a people, but now you are the people of God; once you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy.” (1 Peter 2:10)

Thus what I am saying is that if the author is specifically writing to Hebrews or those who were born Jews then this verse does not make sense because Jews before Jesus were a people and they were the people of God. However in this passage the author is clearly saying that these people who he is writing to where not the people of God before they received mercy from God no doubt from their faith in Jesus. Therefore First Peter clearly considers Christians to be true Jews and Israelites. This is why he says that now they “are the people of God” (1 Peter 2:10) because previously when they were pagans and they were not.

But then what does First Peter mean by “foreigners and exiles” (1 Peter 2:11) in this passage? Well this relates to the “elect who are exiles of the Dispersion” (1 Peter 1:1) that I previously quoted from since the idea behind both of them are the same. Here the author is comparing living as a Christian in a pagan environment that has a lot of idolatry and sin to being like a Jew in ancient Israel exiled from Jerusalem during the Exile. The idea is that by joining the true Israel these Christians have essentially become spiritually exiled from the true Jerusalem.

This is also why Babylon almost certainly does not refer to the literal city of Babylon because First Peter is clearly using figurative language with respect to “foreigners and exiles” (1 Peter 2:11) in the letter. So the idea is that if he is using figurative language there and this language relates to the Exile then it stands to reason that the reference to Babylon is a reference to the Exile. Then where were the Jews exiled from again during the Exile? Jerusalem of course. Thus Babylon is a reference to so-called Jerusalem because as I just said the true Israelites and the true people of God, Christians or true Jews, have essentially become exiled from Jerusalem by the so-called Jews. Then just to reiterate this point some more the Jews of the Exile were exiled by Babylon so this is why First Peter calls so-called Jerusalem Babylon.

But what about the city of so-called Jerusalem in Judea? Is the city of so-called Jerusalem not the city of God? Well you need to understand that the so-called Jews persecuted many Christians and drove out those who became Christian from whatever synagogue they were going to. For instance the so-called Jews stoned Stephen to death as told in the Book of Acts and afterwards much of the Christians who were in Jerusalem left except a few. Then from a more historically grounded perspective there is universal agreement that over 99% of Hebrews became so-called Jews instead of continuing to be Jews by the end of the first century AD. This means that the city of so-called Jerusalem was quite literally a godless city that persecuted the true people of God and was inhabited by so-called Jews who spit on Jesus as they looked towards their own works of the Law for their salvation.

So no the city of so-called Jerusalem was and still is not to this day the city of God. Instead it is a godless city full of blind and arrogant blasphemers who cannot see the truth due to their hardness of heart. Therefore this is why First Peter calls so-called Jerusalem Babylon because in truth when First Peter was written the city of so-called Jerusalem was almost exactly like Babylon in the time of the Exile. Also as I said by calling so-called Jerusalem Babylon the author is denying the claim of the so-called Jews on Jerusalem which is actually very important because Jerusalem belongs to the true Israelites or us faithful Christians. This is why a new Jerusalem descends from heaven as a gift from God to the true Israel or the Church in Revelation 21 as you will later see.

As an aside if you are skeptical about what I have said concerning the true Israel, the true Israelites, the true Jews and the so-called Jews then just to remind you I discuss these things at length in my commentary on Revelation and in my part on fulfilled prophecy as I said previously. Therefore it is perfectly fine if you do not believe what I have said concerning the so-called Jews because this section is about the meaning of the symbol of Babylon and not about why the so-called Jews are not Jews. I have only discussed the so-called Jews so much here because it is highly relevant for understanding the meaning of Babylon as you have seen.

In summary as a result of all that I have quoted and said this is why the symbolic meaning of Babylon is those who are arrogant and look towards anything except God for salvation, all those who are opposed to God and a godless group that oppresses God's people so that they are Israel's or Jerusalem's enemy.

Lastly in terms of the Book of Revelation itself the meaning of Babylon is largely the same as the prostitute except that you are supposed to see Babylon as being more arrogant and in rebellion against God as it places its trust and hope in the beast and its own achievements. This is why I emphasized the arrogance aspect with the quotes from Isaiah and Daniel. That said there is a large godlessness and persecution component as you just saw with respect to First Peter. Do not worry if the idea of Babylon in Revelation does not make complete sense now because I go over it at length in my full commentary on Revelation.

15 – The Sea, the Earth, Mountains and Islands

15.1 – Meaning

To start off I would just like to say that I have included the symbols of the sea, the earth, mountains and islands together because they are best explained together since they are so interrelated.

First, the symbolic meaning of the sea is the masses of humanity as a whole.

Second, the symbolic meaning of the earth is the sum of all the nations, kingdoms, empires and states of the world.

Third, the symbolic meaning of a mountain is a powerful kingdom, empire or nation.

Then lastly the symbolic meaning of an island is a person or a family.

15.2 – Explanation

The symbolic meanings of the sea, the earth, mountains and islands may seem confusing so allow me to explain. A good starting point is the sea. In terms of the symbolic definition the sea is a chaotic and unpredictable body of water that can be altered by the wind to create storms and large waves. But how does this relate to the masses of humanity? Well you see just as the sea is chaotic and unpredictable so too are the masses of humanity chaotic and unpredictable. This may seem confusing and not make much sense but consider the times when you were in a huge crowd of people numbering in the thousands. When people are in large crowds they are almost like a fluid or water in the sense that they flow to the path of least resistance as everyone in the crowd goes about whatever they are doing. Thus the idea here is that the sum of all of humanity, that is to say all people in the whole world, are like a vast sea that is flowing throughout the world as every person lives out their own life.

It is also important to point out that just as the wind can create storms and large waves in the sea so too can God alter the behavior of humanity through the power of the Holy Spirit. This might not make sense to you but the word translated as spirit in the Holy Spirit is Πνεύματος (Pneumatos) which is best understood to be wind or breathe. This is why comparing the wind stirring up the sea to create storms to the Holy Spirit stirring up humanity to fulfill the will of God is a good comparison.

Next since you now understand why the sea is representative of the masses of humanity I can now explain why the earth is representative of the sum of all the nations, kingdoms, empires and states of the world. In terms of the earth it is best to contrast it with the sea. If the sea is chaotic and unpredictable then what would the earth or dry land be? Well obviously the land would be clam and orderly. Now this may not make sense but think about it from the point of view from a sailor on a ship sailing across the sea. Oftentimes sailors would encounter rough weather that would push their boat around to the point of even destroying it. Thus by comparison being on dry land from the sailor's point of view was far more clam and orderly when compared with life on the sea. This is where the symbolic meaning comes from. You see just as the earth or land rises out of the sea to create an area of calm, order and stability so too do the nations of the world rise out of the masses of humanity to create calm, order and stability. If this still does not make much sense to you consider criminal activity and imagine what it would be like to live in a lawless or stateless area versus in a nation that upheld the rule of law. Obviously it goes without saying that if you live in a lawless or stateless area then you will be subject to the masses of humanity and be at their whim. On the other hand if you live in a nation then you have the security, stability and order created by the governing authorities that allows you to live with less fear of being stolen from or hurt. That said this does not mean nations are perfectly orderly. I mean is the earth or land perfectly orderly? Of course not. Instead the idea is that living in a nation is more orderly than living in a lawless place just as the earth is more orderly than the sea.

Now that you understand that the earth or land is representative of all the nations of the world I can now explain why mountains are representative of powerful nations. Really this meaning is much easier to understand in comparison to the sea and the earth because it builds on the idea of the earth rising out of the sea. The idea is that just as a mountain rises out of the earth so that it stands above all the other land around it so too do powerful nations rise out of the nations of the world so that they stand above all other nations around them. Really this is all there is to it. If this is a bit confusing then think about it in terms of world geopolitics throughout history. There were and still are what we now call superpowers in the world that basically heavily influence or control what all the other nations are allowed to do. These superpowers are what mountains symbolize because just as mountains rise above all other land so too do these superpowers rise above all other nations.

Lastly since you now understand the meaning behind the sea, the earth and mountains I can now explain why islands are representative of a person or a family. The idea is that just as an island is a small patch of land that rises above the sea so too is an individual or a family a small point among the masses of humanity. If this does not make much sense consider moving through a crowd of thousands of people either by yourself or with your family where from your own perspective it seems like you are a single point of stability, an island, in the vast crowd or sea of people. This is essentially where the meaning comes from and why it makes sense.

Alright now I realize you probably have zero issues with the definitions and explanations I have provided for these symbols. However the symbols of the sea, the earth and mountains are absolutely critical to understanding the Book of Revelation and the central prophecy. It may not seem like it but if you do not agree with what I have said concerning the meaning of the sea, the earth and mountains then I am almost certain my commentary on Revelation will pass right over your head. This is because these three symbols directly relate to how God wants us to interpret what the beast from the sea, the beast from the earth and the great prostitute are. Therefore I am going to go through several passages from the Old and New Testaments in order to demonstrate beyond any doubt that the definitions I have provided are true.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> “Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, ‘Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters. The kings of the earth were immoral with her, and those who dwell on the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her immorality.’” (Revelation 17:1-2)
>
> “Then the angel said to me, ‘The waters you saw, where the prostitute was seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues.’” (Revelation 17:15)

The symbol of the sea or the waters is actually one of the few symbols that is given in Revelation. Thus obviously the sea or the waters is representative of all of humanity itself as I have said and you cannot dispute this.

Now this next passage is quite long so I would like to tell you to look out for the symbol of a mountain and the intended meaning of a powerful nation or kingdom as you read it.

As the Book of Daniel says:

> “As you lay on your bed, O king, your thoughts turned to the future, and the Revealer of Mysteries made known to you what will happen. And to me this mystery has been revealed, not because I have more wisdom than any man alive, but in order that the interpretation might be made known to the king, and that you may understand the thoughts of your mind.
>
> As you, O king, were watching, a great statue appeared. A great and dazzling statue stood before you, and its form was awesome. The head of the statue was pure gold, its chest and arms were silver, its belly and thighs were bronze, its legs were iron, and its feet were part iron and part clay.
>
> As you watched, a stone was cut out, but not by human hands. It struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay, and crushed them. Then the iron, clay, bronze, silver, and gold were shattered and became like chaff on the threshing floor in summer. The wind carried them away, and not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that had struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.
>
> This was the dream; now we will tell the king its interpretation.
>
> You, O king, are the king of kings, to whom the God of heaven has given sovereignty, power, strength, and glory. Wherever the sons of men or beasts of the field or birds of the air dwell, He has given them into your hand and has made you ruler over them all. You are that head of gold.
>
> But after you, there will arise another kingdom, inferior to yours.
>
> Next, a third kingdom, one of bronze, will rule the whole earth.
>
> Finally, there will be a fourth kingdom as strong as iron; for iron shatters and crushes all things, and like iron that crushes all things, it will shatter and crush all the others. And just as you saw that the feet and toes were made partly of fired clay and partly of iron, so this will be a divided kingdom, yet some of the strength of iron will be in it—just as you saw the iron mixed with clay. And as the toes of the feet were partly iron and partly clay, so this kingdom will be partly strong and partly brittle. As you saw the iron mixed with clay, so the peoples will mix with one another, but will not hold together any more than iron mixes with clay.
>
> In the days of those kings, the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be destroyed, nor will it be left to another people. It will shatter all these kingdoms and bring them to an end, but will itself stand forever. And just as you saw a stone being cut out of the mountain without human hands, and it shattered the iron, bronze, clay, silver, and gold, so the great God has told the king what will happen in the future.
>
> The dream is true, and its interpretation is trustworthy.” (Daniel 2:29-45)

Here Daniel says the stone that destroyed the fourth kingdom and all others kingdoms that became a “great mountain” (Daniel 2:35) “will itself stand forever” (Daniel 2:44) is the eternal Kingdom of God since Daniel says that “the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be destroyed” (Daniel 2:44) in this passage. Therefore just to reiterate this “great mountain” (Daniel 2:35) is the eternal Kingdom of God. This means that Daniel is using a mountain as a symbol for a kingdom or nation.

Then as the Book of Daniel also says:

> “In the first year of the reign of Belshazzar over Babylon, Daniel had a dream, and visions passed through his mind as he lay on his bed. He wrote down the dream, and this is the summary of his account.
>
> Daniel declared: ‘In my vision in the night I looked, and suddenly the four winds of heaven were churning up the great sea. Then four great beasts came up out of the sea, each one different from the others:
>
> The first beast was like a lion, and it had the wings of an eagle. I watched until its wings were torn off and it was lifted up from the ground and made to stand on two feet like a man, and given the mind of a man.’” (Daniel 7:1-4)

First off remember what I said about how the wind causes storms and waves in the sea and how this is comparable to God using the Holy Spirit to influence humanity so that His will and purpose can be fulfilled. This is why Daniel wrote that “the four winds of heaven were churning up the great sea” (Daniel 7:2) here because the idea is that God is using the Holy Spirit to influence humanity to carry out His purpose. Remember that the sea is a symbol for humanity as a whole if this does not make sense. But what is God's purpose here? Well in this passage the will of God is that these “four great beats” (Daniel 7:3) will come “up out of the sea” (Daniel 7:3) or rather four powerful empires will rise out of humanity itself. Thus my point here is that Daniel is clearly using the symbol of the sea for humanity since all powerful nations rise out of humanity itself.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> “In the morning, as Jesus was returning to the city, He was hungry. Seeing a fig tree by the road, He went up to it but found nothing on it except leaves. ‘May you never bear fruit again!’ He said. And immediately the tree withered.
>
> When the disciples saw this, they marveled and asked, ‘How did the fig tree wither so quickly?’
>
> ‘Truly I tell you,’ Jesus replied, ‘if you have faith and do not doubt, not only will you do what was done to the fig tree, but even if you say to this mountain, ‘Be lifted up and thrown into the sea,’ it will happen. If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.’” (Matthew 21:18-22)

Now at first you might think that the reference to the sea and a mountain is literal here but you need to understand the symbol of the fig tree. In the Old Testament the fig tree is representative of Israel. Thus here Jesus is cursing so-called Israel or rather the so-called Jews. This curse would of course later be fulfilled during the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars where God poured out His righteous wrath upon the so-called Jews causing millions of them to perish as the fig tree withered so that there would be nothing else left for the so-called Jews expect to persist in their unfaithfulness until the final judgment when God pours out His wrath upon the whole world so that no one is left standing.

Now this may not make sense but my point here is that the fig tree is a nation, the nation of the so-called Jews, so therefore it would only make sense to interpret the mountain with respect to the fig tree since Jesus responded with the part about throwing a mountain into the sea as a way of saying that God can destroy a strong nation just as easily as He can destroy a weak nation like the so-called Jews if you but only have faith and do not doubt. This is why Jesus talks about a mountain being thrown into the sea because when a mountain is thrown into the sea or rather when a powerful nation is thrown into the masses of humanity it is eroded away or rather destroyed. Then in terms of the mountain in question in this passage Jesus is almost certainly talking about the Roman Empire since the Roman Empire was the greatest mountain in the first century AD.

Next as the Gospel of Luke says:

> “There will be signs in the sun and moon and stars, and on the earth dismay among the nations, bewildered by the roaring of the sea and the surging of the waves. Men will faint from fear and anxiety over what is coming upon the earth, for the powers of the heavens will be shaken.” (Luke 21:25-26)

The key part of this passage is “dismay among the nations, bewildered by the roaring of the sea and the surging of the waves.” (Luke 21:25) Here Jesus is not talking about the literal sea and instead He is talking about humanity itself being in turmoil so that there is mass chaos. This is why the nations are dismayed and bewildered because their citizens and the people of the world are in a chaotic state so that there is mass unrest, violence and crime. Thus this is another instance of the sea being used symbolically.

Next as Revelation says:

> “The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place.” (Revelation 6:14)
>
> “Then every island fled, and no mountain could be found.” (Revelation 16:20)

I have included both of these verses together because they are both clear references to the symbolic meaning of mountains and islands that I have discussed. The first verse is saying that every nation and person “was moved from its place” (Revelation 6:14) or rather impacted by what is going on. Then the second verse is saying that every person fled and that no nation was left because all the nations were destroyed. Therefore islands and nations are clearly used symbolically here. If you doubt this then you need to understand that these two verses do not make any sense if you try to interpret them literally because to state the obvious islands cannot flee. Instead only people or families can flee so this is why my interpretation is correct.

Next as Revelation says:

> “Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them!
> But woe to the earth and the sea; with great fury the devil has come down to you, knowing he has only a short time.” (Revelation 12:12)

Obviously the literal land of the earth and the water of the sea has nothing to fear from the devil or Satan because the earth and the sea are not alive. Thus instead the earth and the sea are being used a symbols for the nations and humanity respectively. This means that this angel is saying woe to all the nations of the world and humanity itself because Satan has come down to you.

Lastly as Revelation says:

> “After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back its four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: ‘Do not harm the land or sea or trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God.’”
> (Revelation 7:1-3)

Here once again the land and the sea are being used symbolically. If you doubt this consider the reference to trees as the final item in the list. Thus this passage is saying that the four winds, or the wrath of God, is being held back from impacting the nations, humanity and the wildlife of the world until the servants of God are sealed. If you doubt this then consider “the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea” (Revelation 7:2) in this passage. Just like in the previous passage it does not make sense for this passage to be talking about the angels harming inanimate objects because rocks and water cannot come under judgment from God. Therefore instead this passage is clearly talking about all the nations and humanity itself because Revelation is all about how God will judge all the nations and humanity at the end of the age.

In summary as a result of all that I have said and quoted the sea is a symbol for the masses of humanity, the earth or land is a symbol for all the nations of the world, a mountain is a symbol for a powerful nation and an island is a symbol for a person or a family. I also hope that you have zero doubts as to the meaning of these symbols because like I said previously they are extremely important for understanding the Book of Revelation. That said I would also like to say that just because the sea, the earth, mountains and islands are used symbolically in and outside Revelation this does not mean that every reference to the sea, the earth, a mountain or an island should be seen as a reference to the symbolic meaning. Really you need to be aware of the context of the usage in order to judge if the usage is literal or figurative. But do not worry because I point out all important symbolic references to the sea, the earth, mountains and islands in my commentary on Revelation.

16 – Crowns

16.1 – Meaning

The symbolic meaning of a crown is the right to rule, authority, power and immortality.

16.2 – Explanation

In terms of the explanation a crown grants someone the right to rule a kingdom and because of this it also grants them power. Furthermore in terms of immortality since a crown is an object it does not pass away and is thus immortal. The idea here is that a king passes his crown to his son so that he will become king and rule in his place so that the position of king is essentially immortal and does not age. In terms of the usage of this symbol in the Bible there are a few instances that you should be aware of.

As First Peter says:

> "And when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that will never fade away." (1 Peter 5:4)

In this passage the author is talking about how all the faithful who persist in faith until the end will be given power and authority as they share in eternal life when Jesus returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God.

Next as the Epistle of James says:

> "Blessed is the man who perseveres under trial, because when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of life that God has promised to those who love Him." (James 1:12)

Here the author is using crown to mean something similar and they have included "of life" (James 1:12) to explicitly refer to eternal life.

Next as the Book of Revelation says:

> "Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3)

These seven royal crowns that the dragon or Satan has are representative of God giving Satan rule over the entire world.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Again, the devil took Him to a very high mountain and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. 'All this I will give You,' he said, 'if You will fall down and worship me.'" (Matthew 4:8-9)

Obviously in this passage Satan is saying that he is the ruler of the world because he is offering all the kingdoms of the world to Jesus if He only worships him. This is why the seven royal crowns that Satan has in the above passage from Revelation are representative of God giving Satan power and authority over the entire world.

Therefore whenever you see crowns being referenced in Revelation you should picture the right to rule, authority, power and immortality.

17 – Horns

17.1 – Meaning

The symbolic meaning of horns is power and strength that is especially related military strength.

17.2 – Explanation

The idea behind this symbol is that many wild animals like rams use horns as offensive weapons in order to engage in dominance battles with each other over mates and resources. In this case the bigger the horn an animal has the bigger the advantage they have in engaging in these battles. Thus this is why horns are used as a symbol for power and strength.

As the Book of Zechariah says:

> "These are the horns that scattered Judah so that no one could raise his head; but the craftsmen have come to terrify them and throw down these horns of the nations that have lifted up their horns against the land of Judah to scatter it." (Zechariah 1:21)

In this passage horns are obviously being used to represent military power or powerful armies since Zechariah is referring to the foreign nations that have attacked the Kingdom of Judah around the time of the Exile. Really there is not much to this symbol and it is quite easy to understand as you can see. Therefore when you see horns being referenced in Revelation you should have power in mind in almost all instances.

For example as Revelation says:

> "Then I saw a Lamb who appeared to have been slain, standing in the center of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders. The Lamb had seven horns and seven eyes, which represent the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth." (Revelation 5:6)

By saying that the Lamb or Jesus has seven horns this passage in Revelation is saying that Jesus has complete power since as you already know the number seven is representative of completeness.

18 – Closing Thoughts

Hopefully you now fully understand the definitions and true meanings of all the symbols I have discussed in this chapter. If you do not fully understand all the symbols then I am not sure what to say to you other than to tell you to read this chapter again. I say this because these symbols are absolutely critical for understanding Revelation to such an extent that if you do not accept the definitions that I have provided then you will be deaf and blind to such an extent that you will be unable to understand what Revelation is really about. Now this may seem like I am exaggerating here but I assure you that I am not.

For example as Revelation says:

> "John,
>
> To the seven churches in the province of Asia:
>
> Grace and peace to you from Him who is and was and is to come, and from the seven Spirits before His throne, and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth." (Revelation 1:4-5)
>
> "Therefore write down the things you have seen, and the things that are, and the things that will happen after this. This is the mystery of the seven stars you saw in My right hand and of the seven golden lampstands: The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands are the seven churches." (Revelation 1:19-20)

Now obviously the key symbol in this passage is the number seven. Then since the number seven is representative of completeness, every or all John is not addressing a literal seven churches here and instead he is addressing all Christians throughout all time. This fact should make perfect sense to you now since you read my lengthy exposition on this key symbol. However for the vast majority of secular scholars and even Christians today this meaning escapes them to the point that they believe John is addressing a specific group of people in a specific period of time. According to them this would mean that Revelation was not written for us living in the modern world and that instead it was only written for a small group of people in the first century AD. Then as a result of this these people then claim that Revelation is not about the future at all and that instead it is only about events in the first century AD. Obviously I do not have to tell you how wrong and even dangerous this view is.

For another example as Revelation says:

> "This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits." (Revelation 17:9)

First off this verse is talking about the great prostitute or Babylon the great and what it's identity is. Then because of this verse the vast majority of secular scholars and even Christians insist that the great prostitute or Babylon the great was the capital of the Roman Empire or the ancient city of Rome itself. But why do they believe this? Well you see the city of Rome was a city that was built on seven hills or mountains. The Greek word translated as mountains here can be translated as hills as well so really you could read this verse as seven hills. Then since the great prostitute is called Babylon the great and later on the angel says "the woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth" (Revelation 17:18) most people connect the great prostitute with Rome. Now you might not see this interpretation as being that correct but you need to understand that many people in the first century AD referred to the ancient city of Rome as the city built on seven hills to such an extent that if you made a reference to the city on seven hills then basically everyone in the first century AD would believe that you are talking about Rome. This is why the vast majority of secular scholars and even Christians are so confident in viewing the great prostitute as the ancient city of Rome. Then it goes without saying that if this view is correct then the Book of Revelation is not about the future or worse yet it is a failed prophecy that never came to pass.

However I would just like to reassure you that the number seven should be viewed literally in this verse and that instead it should be viewed symbolically with the meaning that I have provided. Then obviously mountains should be viewed symbolically as well. Now you may dispute this but there is a key sentence in the verse that demonstrates we are not supposed to interpret this verse literally.

To repeat what Revelation says:

> "This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits." (Revelation 17:9)

I am of course talking about the first sentence of this verse. By saying "This calls for a mind with wisdom" (Revelation 17:9) the angel is saying that you need wisdom, insight, intelligence or skill in order to know what the seven mountains represent. Then since I said that everyone in the first century AD would have known that Rome was the city built on seven hills why would the angel say that you need wisdom in order to know what the seven mountains are if everyone would already know they are the seven hills of Rome? Thus what I am saying is that the meaning of the seven mountains is not the obvious meaning and that instead the true meaning is the deeper symbolic meaning. Alright so what does it mean then? Well since seven is representative of completeness, every or all and since mountains are representative of nations this verse is saying that the great prostitute or Babylon the great is an entity that sits above all the nations of the world. This then means that the great prostitute cannot be the ancient city of Rome because Rome never ruled over all the nations of the world.

Now no doubt you may dispute this but my purpose with this example is not to demonstrate that my interpretation of the great prostitute or Babylon the great is correct since I go over why my interpretation is correct in my full commentary on Revelation. Instead my purpose with this example is just to show that if you do not see the deeper symbolic meaning behind the number seven then you will completely miss what Revelation is actually saying. This is why I said that if you do not agree with the definitions I have provided for the symbols in this chapter then you are deaf and blind to such an extent that the true meaning of Revelation will forever escape you.

Then since I cannot emphasize enough just how important it is to view Revelation is symbolic terms rather than in literal terms I have one final example for you.

As Revelation says:

> "The beast was given a mouth to speak arrogant and blasphemous words, and authority to act for 42 months." (Revelation 13:5)

So clearly the beast will rule the world for 42 months because Revelation says so right? Well of course not. Instead Revelation uses the number 42 here because 42 is symbolic for an appointed period of time that God has promised will come to pass. Once again this is why I say that those who view Revelation literally are completely deaf and blind so that they miss everything of importance. I mean as I said in my chapter on timelines what happens when the beast or ASI rules the world for a longer period of time than a literal 42 months or 3.5 years? Thus anyone who views 42 months literally is actually deceiving themselves so that they remain blind to the hidden truth that God has hidden in plain sight. Therefore if you disagree with me concerning the meaning of 42 for example then really I do not think you will get anything out of my commentary because you are so utterly blind. This is because the beast or ASI will almost certainly rule the world for a longer period of time than a mere literal 42 months or 3.5 years. Thus if you insist on 42 months being literal then you will simply abandon your faith or worse yet worship the beast once the beast rules for a period longer than 3.5 years. I mean how could an ASI be the beast if it continues to rule the world after the so-called literal 42 months have ended? Therefore if you insist on 42 months being literal then you are already lost to such an extent that there is nothing I can do for you.

On the other hand if you agree with my definition of 42 and all the other important symbols for that matter then you have eyes to see and ears to hear because you can see that which God has hidden.

As Revelation says:

> "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." (Revelation 1:7)

Then as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:16-17)

Really I cannot stress enough how important it is to accurately interpret and understand these symbols. This is why this chapter had to be so long since I needed to eliminate all doubts and objections surrounding these important symbols before you read my full commentary on Revelation. Now in terms of my commentary on Revelation I will of course provide the definitions of these key symbols again and even provide you with a reminder of why they mean what I say they mean because they are so important. Therefore do not worry about forgetting about what one of the symbols means.

Chapter 2.11: The Antichrist

Believe it or not but the word antichrist, let alone a character called the antichrist, does not even appear in the Book of Revelation. Wait what? Yes, that is right. There is no character explicitly called the antichrist in Revelation. Instead the character that most people associate with the antichrist is actually called the beast. So where does the word and concept of the antichrist even come from then? Well the word antichrist actually appears five times in the Bible with all five instances being in First and Second John.

As First and Second John say:

> "Children, it is the last hour; and just as you have heard that the antichrist is coming, so now many antichrists have appeared. This is how we know it is the last hour. They went out from us, but they did not belong to us. For if they had belonged to us, they would have remained with us. But their departure made it clear that none of them belonged to us." (1 John 2:18-19)
>
> "Who is the liar, if it is not the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father, but whoever confesses the Son has the Father as well." (1 John 2:22-23)
>
> "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are from God. For many false prophets have gone out into the world. By this you will know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God, and every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist, which you have heard is coming and which is already in the world at this time." (1 John 4:1-3)
>
> "For many deceivers have gone out into the world, refusing to confess the coming of Jesus Christ in the flesh. Any such person is the deceiver and the antichrist." (2 John 1:7)

The word antichrist means one who is opposed to Christ or Jesus. Thus the antichrist refers to the chief opponent of Jesus. Then an opponent of Jesus is anyone who denies that He is the Christ or the Messiah, the Son of God and that He died and was resurrected to sit at the right hand of God. This is why people call the first beast of Revelation the antichrist because the beast is the chief opponent of Jesus. The idea here is that the beast does not believe in God let alone accept Jesus as the Christ so therefore it is an antichrist and because the beast rules the whole world as told in Revelation this would then mean that this beast is the chief antichrist or the antichrist since no other antichrist in the world has as much power as it does. Therefore you can call the first beast of Revelation the beast or the antichrist.

But who specifically would be an antichrist? In short anyone who is not a faithful Christian is an antichrist. This would include but is not limited to all Muslims, Hindus, Pagans, Agnostics, Atheists, Buddhists, tribal practitioners and of course, the group the author of First and Second John was specifically referencing in his letters the so-called Jews or as Revelation says "those who falsely claim to be Jews." (Revelation 2:9) Therefore as I said really an antichrist is anyone who opposes Jesus as the Christ.

Now I would like to reiterate and emphasize that as long as someone opposes Jesus as the Christ then they are an antichrist. This means even deeply religious Muslims and so-called Jews are antichrists because they both reject Jesus as the Christ. But what exactly does it mean for Jesus to be the Christ? Well you see the Christ is the anointed One whom God has chosen to rule in His place using His power and authority. This means that in order to accept Jesus as the Christ you must accept that God has given His power and authority to Jesus until the will of God is completely fulfilled. Therefore because of this anyone who is rebelling against the Christ's authority is in actually rebelling against God's authority. This is why it is accurate to say that even deeply religious Muslims and so-called Jews are opposed to God because by being opposed to Jesus as the Christ they are in reality opposed to God since God has anointed Jesus as the Christ.

Lastly in my commentary I refer to the beast as the first beast simply because the word antichrist does not actually appear in Revelation as I have stated and I want to refer to it by the name the text gives. But feel free to call it whatever you want. Really I just believe the first beast is a more descriptive name since anyone who is not a faithful Christian is an antichrist which kind of makes the world antichrist not very descriptive.

Chapter 2.12: Jesus in Revelation

Something else that is important to point out before you read my full commentary on Revelation is that of the view of Jesus presented in Revelation. Many people, including many Christian, falsely believe that the view of Jesus presented in Revelation contradicts the view of Jesus the gospels have.

For example how could Jesus say:

> "But I tell you, love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven." (Matthew 5:44-45)

While Revelation says:

> "He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and His name is The Word of God. The armies of heaven, dressed in fine linen, white and pure, follow Him on white horses. And from His mouth proceeds a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations, and He will rule them with an iron scepter. He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty. And He has a name written on His robe and on His thigh:
>
> KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS." (Revelation 19:13-16)
>
> "And the rest were killed with the sword that proceeded from the mouth of the One seated on the horse. And all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh." (Revelation 19:21)

Surely there must be a contradiction here and the Jesus of Revelation cannot be the same as the Jesus of the gospels right? Well no and hence why I said this is a false belief. If you doubt this then read what Jesus says in the following passage in the Parable of the Ten Minas in the Gospel of Luke.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "I tell you that everyone who has will be given more; but the one who does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. And these enemies of mine who were unwilling for me to rule over them, bring them here and slay them in front of me." (Luke 19:26-27)

Then as Jesus also says in the Gospel of Luke:

> "As a result, this generation will be charged with the blood of all the prophets that has been shed since the foundation of the world, from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zechariah, who was killed between the altar and the sanctuary. Yes, I tell you, all of it will be charged to this generation." (Luke 11:50-51)

By saying these two passages Jesus is directly saying that those who reject Him as the King of kings and Lord of lords will be killed and judged by God as guilty for their sin of disobedience. Now this may seem like a foreign view to you because you still see Jesus as a complete pacifist who would not hurt anyone let alone kill and judge them but I actually have an entire chapter in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy dedicated to going over all the times Jesus spoke about the coming judgment that was to come upon the so-called Jews in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars for their rejection of Him.

In my part called Fulfilled Prophecy you will learn that the God of the New Testament is the same as the God of the Old Testament and that the Jesus of Revelation is the same as the Jesus of the gospels. In this part I go over almost all the instances where Jesus says that those who reject Him will be killed or judged by God. Therefore if you disagree with the two passages I presented above then just take my word for now that Jesus speaks about future judgment in the gospels just as much as He does in Revelation.

For another example as Jesus says:

> "The kingdom of heaven is like a king who prepared a wedding banquet for his son. He sent his servants to call those he had invited to the banquet, but they refused to come.
>
> Again, he sent other servants and said, 'Tell those who have been invited that I have prepared my dinner. My oxen and fattened cattle have been killed, and everything is ready. Come to the wedding banquet.'
>
> But they paid no attention and went away, one to his field, another to his business. The rest seized his servants, mistreated them, and killed them.
>
> The king was enraged, and he sent his troops to destroy those murderers and burn their city. Then he said to his servants, 'The wedding banquet is ready, but those I invited were not worthy. Go therefore to the crossroads and invite to the banquet as many as you can find.'
>
> So the servants went out into the streets and gathered everyone they could find, both evil and good, and the wedding hall was filled with guests.
>
> But when the king came in to see the guests, he spotted a man who was not dressed in wedding clothes. 'Friend,' he asked, 'how did you get in here without wedding clothes?'
>
> But the man was speechless.
>
> Then the king told the servants, 'Tie him hand and foot, and throw him into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'
>
> For many are called, but few are chosen." (Matthew 22:2-14)

Do not think that this is just an irrelevant parable that has no real meaning or application. Instead this parable is saying that all those who reject Jesus as the Christ, like the so-called Jews, will be killed by God and that at the final judgment at the end of the age they will be cast into the outer darkness. This is of course directly comparable to what Revelation says with regards to Jesus who "treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty." (Revelation 19:15) Although again I go over all the times Jesus speaks about judgment and what happens to those who oppose God in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy. So if you doubt that the Jesus of Revelation is the same as the Jesus of the gospels then just know my part called Fulfilled Prophecy fully goes into this specific issue.

That said my point with this third example is just to show that if you believe that Jesus is all about love and forgiveness to such an extent that He would never hurt let alone kill anyone then quite honestly you do not understand Jesus. Instead Jesus talks about the wrath of God, judgment and death just as much as He talks about love and forgiveness in the gospels. Therefore you should not see the Jesus of Revelation as being different from the Jesus of the gospels and instead you should see a single Jesus.

Next I would like to say that in order for Jesus to make sense you need to understand the differences between what His first coming was and what His second coming is supposed to be. When Jesus came into this world for the first time He entered as a humble servant in peace and with forgiveness. However when Jesus comes into this world for a second time He will enter as a glorious king in wrath and with punishment for those who oppose Him as God uses Him to kill and judge all those who stand against Him.

This is why upon first glance the Jesus of the gospels seems to be a different Jesus than the Jesus of Revelation. After all the gospels tell of Jesus's first coming while Revelation tells of Jesus's second coming. But like I said the Jesus of the gospels speaks of future death, punishment and judgment far more than you probably think He does. Therefore once again for those who do not see the Jesus of the gospels and Revelation as the same I encourage you to continue on reading after my commentary on Revelation so that you can get the full view of Jesus that my part called Fulfilled Prophecy provides.

Chapter 2.13: Introduction to Commentary

Now it is time for my full commentary on the Book of Revelation. In my commentary my explanations for each verse are not overly long except on some controversial sections where I felt like I had to explain it more in depth so you do not get too angry with me. Really my goal was to explain everything in the Book of Revelation as simply as possible. However like I just said there are some controversial sections and ideas that I need to fully defend from the main objections that you may have so that you are left with zero doubts as to the validity of my commentary.

Next I wrote this commentary in a plain and easy to understand way to make it as accessible as possible because Revelation was written to be read and understood by regular people because that was its initial audience. You do not need a theology degree or even a college degree to understand it because it is not an elitist academic work. Although almost everything in Revelation is symbolic, the symbols themselves are not only mostly found in the Old Testament but very often they are not that hard to understand as you have already seen with my chapter on the important symbols.

Furthermore I would actually say that being highly educated would put a person at a disadvantage for understanding Revelation because they will make it more complex than it really is causing the meaning to escape them. The expression you cannot see the forest for the trees comes to mind here.

As God says in the Book of Isaiah:

> "Therefore the Lord said: 'These people draw near to Me with their mouths and honor Me with their lips,
>
> but their hearts are far from Me.
> Their worship of Me is but rules taught by men.
> Therefore I will again confound these people with wonder upon wonder.
> The wisdom of the wise will vanish,
> and the intelligence of the intelligent will be hidden.'" (Isaiah 29:13-14)

Therefore do not worry if you believe you are not educated enough to understand what Revelation is saying because it is the will of God that the highly educated will remain blind to the truth that God has hidden. I mean if the first beast is to truly be an artificial super intelligence then obviously it needs to look at Revelation and miss the meaning and message that God has hidden in plain sight. Thus this is why I said being highly educated would actually put you at a disadvantage for understanding Revelation. God does not want the highly educated to come to know Him and His will.

Next it goes without saying that I will fully explain everything to you so that you can understand everything assuming of course that God has determined you will understand it. What I mean by this is that ultimately you need to have eyes and ears in order to see and hear my explanations. This is because obviously if it were possible to explain Revelation in such a way that everyone would be able to accept it as true then again even the first beast of Revelation and all those who make up the great prostitute would see the truth which obviously is not going to happen since God says almost everyone on earth will worship the beast as they join it in rebellion against God.

Furthermore if this is not enough reassurance for you then I would just like to say that I have zero formal theological education and training outside of Sunday school and youth group. Although to be fair I did not take Sunday school and youth group seriously and I do not really remember them. I did not tell you this in my introduction because I did not want you to simply ignore my book because I am not a so-called expert in accordance with the elitist academic establishment. But since you have already read quite a few chapters of mine I thought now would be a good time to tell you this so that you can know that even I do not have a formal theological education.

In fact since I said I graduated from the University of California at Berkeley in 2016 in the opening part I would just like to add that I received an undergraduate degree in economics. Therefore even the degree that I have is entirely worthless in relation to the topic at hand. Although as an aside my degree is completely worthless in general since as of writing this I have yet to get a job related to or using the degree.

Therefore you should have zero reason to claim that you need to be educated in order to understand my commentary on Revelation and my book as a whole for that matter because I myself have not received a formal education in theology as I said and obviously I am the author of this book.

Now you may seek to use this information against me in the sense that once you read something that you do not like you will just write off whatever you read as being wrong because I am not a so-called expert even though you cannot actually respond to what I am saying outside of appeals to authority. Therefore I would just like to you to know that I really could care less if you dislike anything in this book and I could also care less if you want to ignore what I say as you write me off as a so-called non-expert. This is because as I said in the introduction I did not write this book for you and instead I wrote this book for God so that He may use it as a witness and testimony against the world. Now when I say against the world I quite literally mean against all groups of people including those who call themselves Christians. This is why I do not care if you want to write off whatever you read in this book and ignore it since the main group this book will bear witness against will be those who call themselves Christians. Therefore think and believe whatever you want and listen to whatever so-called authority you want to follow. What you do does not concern me since I have already done my duty to you in writing this book and if you want to reject this book your rejection is entirely on you and I am blameless.

Finally in terms of format for each chapter of my commentary I include a full chapter from Revelation and break it down into sections based on headings for the translation I have chosen. Following each section I provide my commentary on the text which includes an interpretation and explanation. I cite verses using the form of (x) or (*) where (x) denotes the verse number or numbers in the text immediately preceding the commentary and (*) is used for general comments about the section as a whole. Any quotations from the text included in a verse citation will be in quotes for clarity.

I chose to break the text up based on chapters and headings to make it easier to follow even though headings, verse numbers and even chapter numbers were not originally part of the Bible and were only added much later to make the text easier to reference.

Lastly I **strongly** encourage you to read my commentary on Revelation in its entirety so that you have a better understanding of the text itself and my interpretation of it.

After all as Jesus says:

> "Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." (Revelation 22:7)

Chapter 2.14: Revelation 1

1 – Prologue

> (1) This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon come to pass. He made it known by sending His angel to His servant John, (2) who testifies to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ.
>
> (3) Blessed is the one who reads aloud the words of this prophecy, and blessed are those who hear and obey what is written in it, because the time is near.

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "This is the revelation of Jesus Christ" – The word translated as revelation simply means to reveal something surprising that was previously unknown. In this case the revelation is from Jesus Christ about what must happen upon the earth before He returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God and what the faithful are to do and look forward to in the meantime.

In it also important to point out that Book of Revelation is the only book of the New Testament that is the direct word of God. The other books in the New Testament can only be at best described as somewhat inspired rather than directly given since even the gospels have discrepancies and contradictions between them that cannot be reconciled. Although at worst some of the epistles are almost certainly forgeries that should have never been included in the Bible. Now no doubt many of you will have issues with what I just said so just know that later on in my part called Various Insights I have a chapter on biblical inerrancy and infallibility where I demonstrate beyond any doubt that the Bible is not inerrant or infallible. If you have not heard of inerrancy and infallibility before inerrancy just means without any error and infallibility refers to a complete lack of theological errors and discrepancies so that there is zero difference between what each book of the Bible teaches. But what I am saying here is that the Bible itself is not without error in all that it teaches.

Alright but what is my point here with this? Well my point is that ultimately this fact makes Revelation the most important and most authoritative book in the New Testament. This is because as Revelation goes on to say after this verse "This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Revelation 1:2) No other book of the New Testament makes such a claim since even the Gospel authors are just writing about Jesus from their own perspective. But what about the Old Testament? Well you see the principle subject matter of Revelation concerns what must happen before the eternal Kingdom of God can arrive and the final hope for true Judaism or Christianity is the fulfillment of the will of God in the arrival of the eternal Kingdom of God. This then means that Revelation is the most important book of the entire Bible since as I just said it perfectly explains what must happen before the will of God can be fulfilled. Therefore because of all the above you should pay careful attention to everything contained within the Book of Revelation so that you read and understand it seven times more than the epistles.

However despite this fact many Christians today either largely ignore the Book of Revelation or worse yet just pretend it does not even exist. I mean when the majority Christians talk about the Bible they mostly center their thought and message around the epistles and the fraction of the gospels that conform to whatever view they have that they developed after listening to or reading a famous theologian. Thus what I am saying is that really the Book of Revelation is almost entirely absent from Christian discourse and preaching. Although to be fair the Book of Revelation is so heavily symbolic and figurative that if you want to take the everything is literal approach the vast majority of Christians take then you will almost certainly end up so confused that you miss the entire message. Therefore you should give Revelation seven times more attention than the epistles as I just said.

This fact concerning the lack of attention Revelation receives then ties in with what I said in my chapter on the important symbols of Revelation. As I said really the vast majority of of people, secular historians and Christians alike, like to largely take the Bible literally which actually ensures that they miss everything that it is trying to say. Now I do not mean this specifically with respect to the prophecies of Revelation and instead I am talking about in general. You may doubt this but this fact will become clear to you by the time you finish reading this book although I touch on it a bit in this commentary on Revelation before my part called Various Insights. As you will see most of the so-called traditional viewpoints that Christians have taken in the past and present are wrong.

Now to be fair this is not entirely due to the desire to view the Bible literally and instead there is another significant issue that has led to the corruption of Christian theology. But what issue am I talking about exactly? Well you see the vast majority of Christians believe what they believe only because someone else who they see as so-called authority believes it is true. Thus in essence most of so-called orthodox or so-called true Christian theology ultimately rests on the logical fallacy of appealing to authority. What I mean here is that when a Christian wants to figure out what is true they first listen to or read what a famous theologian or a so-called authority says concerning the issue before coming to their so-called own conclusion. Now this does not mean they do not actually read the Bible. Although to be fair the vast majority of Christians do not read the Bible. Instead what I am saying is that they come to their so-called own beliefs by following a so-called authority before they read what the Bible actually says so that once they read the Bible they are not reading it critically and instead they are merely reading it to confirm whatever belief they have already presupposed is true as a result of listening to their favorite so-called authority.

Obviously I do not have to tell you how wrong and even dangerous this viewpoint is since those who do what I just said are not following the teachings of God and instead they are following the teachings of men. But really this is ultimately why I place zero value on appeals to so-called authority. As I said in the introduction I find zero value in tradition or so-called authority and instead I value the word of God alone.

As Jesus told the Pharisees:

> "You have disregarded the commandment of God to keep the tradition of men." (Mark 7:8)

Therefore my goal is to uphold the words of God and not the tradition of men. To this end there will be many things you read here in my commentary on Revelation and this book as a whole for that matter that will be completely contrary to what you believe in and see as true as you will soon see. I am emphasizing this fact again because I do not want you to deafen your ears and blind your eyes as you retreat back to the so-called traditions you have been taught by whatever famous theologian you follow who you believe to be so-called authoritative. Instead I want you to open your ears and eyes so that you can hear and see the truth that has remained hidden before you in plain sight all along that you have missed and ignored because you sought to follow the teachings of men and not God.

(1) "This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him" – It is important to point out here that God gave Jesus this revelation and that Jesus did not know it until God gave it to Him. But why is this important exactly? Well this is important because this means that only God is omnipotent or all knowing such that He knows everything there is and everything that will happen in the future. Now you may take issue with this but the gospels say something similar as well.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

> "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father." (Matthew 24:36)

Thus again only God or the Father alone is omnipotent and knows everything about the future. This is why the Book of Revelation says that God had to give this revelation to Jesus. Again Jesus is dependent upon God for His knowledge because He is not omnipotent by Himself.

If your protest this then keep in mind that the Book of Revelation was written after God raised Jesus from the dead so that He could be seated at the right hand of God. Therefore when John says "God gave Him" (Revelation 1:1) he is saying that despite sitting at the right hand of God Jesus did not perfectly know the future until God told Him and revealed the future to Him. In other words this verse in Revelation is in reference to Jesus after He ascended into heaven to sit at the right hand of God and does not concern Jesus during His earthly ministry. This means that you cannot object to this verse in Revelation by claiming that it is about Jesus when He was in a limited earthly body like you could with the verse above from the Gospel of Matthew. As a result of this only God is omnipotent and knows the future.

(1) "to show His servants" – The Greek word translated as servants here and elsewhere in Revelation is doulos (δοῦλος) which is more accurately translated as slaves or enslaved depending on the usage. This means that Revelation is saying that Christians are God's slaves. I am pointing this out because oftentimes English translations like to whitewash the Bible by translating the word for slave as servant since most people have an issue with the word slave for some reason.

Now you make take issue being a slave of God but later on Revelation says that God has created everything there is.

As Revelation says:

> "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

This means that God literally created everything there is. Not only that but it is only through the will of God that everything continues to exist as we see it. But why is this important exactly? Well you see when someone creates something it belongs to them. For instance if you create a pot with some clay then you own the pot that you created. Now you might object to this on the basis of saying that if you reproduce and have children then the children do not belong to you. However first off when someone has children they do not create their children to the same degree that they would create a pot out of clay in that creating children is involuntary and the design process largely outside of their control. Then second even if a person were to design everything about their children then it is important to point out that they still will not vastly exceed their children in all aspects such that they are on a different level. What I mean here is that their children will be close to themselves in power and ability such that they cannot claim their children are unable to look after themselves in the vast majority of cases. On the other hand in the case of the relationship between God and humanity God is quite literally infinite greater and above us so that by comparison we are completely inconsequential and unable to look after ourselves since we were created to be dependent upon God.

To make this make more sense consider breeding animals or pets. Almost everyone agrees that when a person breeds two animals that they own the offspring of the animals they helped breed. This is because we correctly recognize that we as humans vastly exceed animals in ability. Thus what I am saying is that the same rationality applies to our relationship to God since just like how we domesticated animals to fulfill our will so too has God created us to fulfill His will. Therefore as a result of all this we all belong to God and we are His slaves. I say all here because this includes everyone on earth not just Christians. Thus it does not matter who you are or what you believe in because you are one of God's slave's regardless.

Now my mere mention of the world slave and God in the same sentence might be repugnant to you so let me ask you the following. Would you rather be a willing slave to God and join Him in the eternal Kingdom of God forever or a slave to the coming beast that Jesus will destroy along with all it's followers when He returns? There is no other choice. As you will later see in my commentary on Revelation the beast and the system of the beast is the best that humanity will ever achieve on its own and despite this fact it will never be truly great or even just good. This is because we live in a material universe that is subject to natural laws and physical limitations that limit what is possible. Then on top of this due to the nature of the coming beast that will soon arise and how it will replace our labor and value ultimately the only earthly future humanity has is to become completely dependent upon the beast itself. Now you may object to this but as you will later see artificial super intelligence will be able to do anything and everything we can do better. This again means that once ASI or the beast arises we will become so useless in comparison to the beast so that we will become entirely dependent upon the beast for everything. Then through this dependence upon the beast for everything humanity will quite literally be enslaved to the beast so that we cannot do anything without the beast's approval. In other words your only other earthly future is to be a slave to the beast if you do not want to be a willing slave of God.

This is why I said you only have a choice between being a willing slave of God or being a slave to the coming beast or artificial super intelligence. There is no other option for you to take. Then because of this fact you must make a choice and really the correct choice of becoming a willing slave of God should be obvious as you will see later on in my commentary on Revelation. So how do you become a willing slave of God? In short the first step to take in becoming one of God's faithful slaves is to accept that you are a slave of God. As for the rest of it you will have to finish reading the this book to find out.

Now if you still have some issues with being a slave of God I firmly believe that you should feel proud and dignified to be a faithful slave of God Himself because God will reward His faithful slaves who triumph and overcome the power of the beast and Satan.

As God promises:

> "The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Therefore even though we are God's slaves, in the eternal Kingdom of God in the new heavens and the new earth God will elevate us to be His children as He gives us all things as an inheritance. No doubt you have questions about this and I will answer them at the appropriate time but for now just know that receiving in inheritance from God is more valuable than all the gold in the world.

So if the faithful slaves of God will be rewarded then what will happen to the unfaithful slaves? Well on the other hand all the rebellious slaves of God will be thrown into the Lake of Fire to face the second death or eternal destruction. Thus this is why you should not even see being a faithful slave of God or being a slave of the beast as a choice because being a faithful and willing slave of God is quite literally infinitely better than being a slave of the beast.

But why is this important exactly? Well since one of the main purposes of Revelation is to detail how God will judge the world it is helpful to think about Revelation in terms of God punishing His rebellious slaves and rewarding His faithful slaves. As you read the rest of Revelation and my commentary on it keep this fact in mind.

(1) "what must soon come to pass" – The Greek word translated as soon is tachei (τάχει) or tachos (τάχος) which can also mean in quickness, hastily or swiftly. Then in a couple verses Revelation also says that "the time is near." (Revelation 1:3) In this verse near is eggus (ἐγγύς) which means near or close in time or place. So obviously these two words mean that Revelation was supposed to be fulfilled in the first or second century AD right? Well no and you will soon see why that when the Book of Revelation was written it was never supposed to be fulfilled in the first or even the second century AD. Instead there are several prerequisites for the central prophecies of Revelation that could only have a chance at being fulfilled many hundreds if not thousands of years into the future. Then because of these reasons soon does not literally mean soon and near does not literally mean near as you will see later on.

Now at first you may have the idea to try to reconcile these words by coming to the conclusion that it is a possibility for the central prophecies or events of Revelation to start to be fulfilled soon in time while the later events of Revelation concerning the resurrection, the eternal Kingdom of God and the new heavens and the new earth are supposed to be fulfilled much later. However such a view would be incorrect. This is because the last chapter of Revelation also includes similar statements about when when Jesus will return and when the words of prophecy in Revelation will be fulfilled.

As Revelation says:

> "Then the angel said to me, 'These words are faithful and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place.'" (Revelation 22:6)
>
> "Behold, I am coming soon." (Revelation 22:7)
>
> "Do not seal up the words of prophecy in this book, because the time is near." (Revelation 22:10)

But what does this mean exactly? Well you see including similar statements at the beginning and end of a work is what is called an inclusio. The idea behind an inclusio is that by bracketing the start and end of a work with some idea it tells you how you should view the work as a whole. Thus in terms of the usage here Revelation is saying that everything in the book will happen soon because it is all near. This means that everything in Revelation including the return of Jesus, the first resurrection, the thousand year reign, the second resurrection, the final judgment, the creation of the new heavens and the new earth, the new Jerusalem and the eternal Kingdom of God are all supposed to happen soon. Then because of this fact you cannot claim that some events are soon while others are far off because Revelation literally says everything is going to happen soon.

But why is this important exactly? Well you see because of this preterism, both partial and full, are undeniably false. Now you may take issue with this but I believe it is quite obvious that we are not living in the eternal Kingdom of God in the new Jerusalem in the new heavens and the new earth. Really this fact is completely undeniable.

As Revelation says:

> "Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man, and He will dwell with them.
> They will be His people,
> and God Himself will be with them as their God.
> 'He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,'
> and there will be no more death
> or mourning or crying or pain,
> for the former things have passed away."
> (Revelation 21:3-4)

Once again obviously this has not happened in Revelation since there is an immense amount of suffering in the world even among faithful Christians. Therefore as a result of this full preterism is false because all of Revelation has not been fulfilled. But what if you disagree with this? Well to be perfectly honest with you if you disagree with this and actually believe we are living in the new Jerusalem and that there is "no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the former things have passed away" (Revelation 21:4) then you are so utterly delusional that I give up on you. If you think this is a harsh statement to make then how would you argue with someone who believes in say flat earth? Then keep in mind that I consider full preterism to be an even greater absurdity than flat earth since it is much more obvious that we are not living in the new Jerusalem in the new earth than that the earth is round.

Alright but what about partial preterism and what about the thousand year reign? Is it not possible that Jesus returned to usher in the thousand year reign so that we are currently living in the thousand year reign or the millennium kingdom and waiting for God to "make all things new" (Revelation 21:5) with the new heavens and the new earth so that we will live in the paradise that God has promised? I mean Christians have had a lot of power for hundreds of years so does this not indicate this is true? Well sorry but again the answer is no. This is because Revelation says there will be two resurrections with the first resurrection taking place at the start of the thousand year reign of Jesus on the earth.

As Revelation says:

> "Then I saw the thrones, and those seated on them had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.
>
> The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

This means that in order for us to currently be in the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth the first resurrection of those who were martyred and those who did not worship the beast would have needed to have taken place in the first or second century AD when partial preterists claim that most of the events of Revelation were fulfilled. Obviously I do not have to tell you that this resurrection never took place. Furthermore this is the resurrection we are talking about where the faithful are resurrected to immortal bodies so that they have eternal life. This is why Revelation says that those who share in the first resurrection "reigned with Christ for a thousand years" (Revelation 20:4) because they are immortal and cannot die. So if you want to claim that we are living in the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth then I would like to ask you where exactly these immortal Christians are who have been alive all this time and cannot die? But perhaps more important than this where is Jesus? I mean just like with what I said concerning how it is obvious we are not in the new Jerusalem in the new earth it is also obvious that Jesus is not ruling on earth. But what if you want to claim that Jesus is ruling in heaven? Well in this case you still have to contend with the fact that the first resurrection has not happened yet and that immortal Christians are not ruling over the earth. Again it is quite obvious that immortal Christians are not ruling over the world. Therefore this means that partial preterism is false. Then just like before if you want to deny this fact then you are simply delusional and I really do not know what to say to you.

Before I close the book on preterism so to speak I would like to go over the logical inconsistencies that all preterists make. Yes and I do mean all. But what exactly am I talking about here? Well you see preterism has its roots in the whole "Behold, I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:7) from Revelation and Olivet Discourse in the gospels. Essentially preterists take the position that if the Bible says Jesus will return soon and if Jesus did not literally return soon then therefore the Bible is wrong so therefore Christianity is false. Then because of this they try to desperately fit in Revelation and the Olivet Discourse in the gospels in the context of the first century AD to claim that either all of Revelation was fulfilled then or some of it was fulfilled then. In terms of the distinction between full preterism and partial preterism really I believe both positions are equally delusional because they essentially require you to interpret some things completely literally and other things so figuratively that the text loses all meaning.

But what am I talking about exactly? Well first off consider the whole first resurrection and the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth. Partial preterists will oftentimes try to interpret this entirely figuratively to the point where they may then claim that the immortal Christians who have been resurrected are ruling with Jesus in heaven even though Revelation directly says they are to rule on earth. As another option they may ignore the whole "reign with Him for a thousand years" (Revelation 20:6) part and deny that there is supposed to be a first resurrection after Jesus destroys the two beasts where the faithful rule the earth with Him for a thousand years in immortal bodies. Then if you think these lines of reasoning make zero sense then consider the fact that there are actually full preterists who actually believe we are living in the new Jerusalem in the new earth like I said before. Thus you can see how preterists are logically inconsistent in that they view soon and near completely literally while they twist the rest of Revelation to the point of taking entire prophecies so figuratively that they lose their entire meaning.

Next as Revelation says:

> "Then a mighty angel picked up a stone the size of a great millstone and cast it into the sea, saying:
>
> 'With such violence the great city of Babylon
> will be cast down, never to be seen again.
> And the sound of harpists and musicians, of
> flute players and trumpeters,
> will never ring out in you again.
> Nor will any craftsmen of any trade
> be found in you again,
> nor the sound of a millstone
> be heard in you again.
> The light of a lamp will never shine in you
> again,
> and the voices of a bride and bridegroom
> will never call out in you again.
> For your merchants were the great ones of
> the earth, because all the nations were
> deceived by your sorcery.'" (Revelation
> 18:21-23)

And also says:

> "And a second time they called out:
> 'Hallelujah!
>
> Her smoke rises forever and ever.'"
> (Revelation 19:3)

First off in case you are unaware most preterists generally identify Babylon or the great prostitute as the city of Rome while some others identify it as so-called Jerusalem. However for what I am saying this difference of opinion is irrelevant. This is because if you want to take the above passages of Revelation literally then it is obvious that either Rome or so-called Jerusalem is to be so completely destroyed so that "smoke rises forever and ever" (Revelation 19:3) from it as it becomes completely and forever more uninhabited. Now I do not have to tell you the problem here since it is obvious that not only are the locations of these ancient cities still inhabited but they have actually been continuously inhabited from the first century AD to the present day. On top of this they are still called Rome and so-called Jerusalem to this very day as I am sure you are aware. Alright but can you not just view these passages figuratively in the sense that they are talking about pagan Rome for example? Well no you cannot. But why? Well you see it all goes back to "because the time is near." (Revelation 22:10) This means that the time is near for all of Revelation and sure you can dispute this with the events after the thousand year reign but you cannot dispute this with the events before the thousand year reign. Then since the fall of Babylon happens before the thousand year reign this then means that Babylon must fall soon. However the problem here with respect to pagan Rome is that Christianity did not become the state religion of the Roman Empire until around three-hundred years after Revelation was written. Therefore if you want Babylon to be pagan Rome then really pagan Rome did not fall until three-hundred years after Revelation was written.

Additionally if you do not want to take the above passages concerning the destruction of Babylon figuratively you are left with the same issue of making hundreds of years into soon. This is because the city of Rome did not even sort of fall until the fifth century AD. Also again you are left with the problem that the city of Rome was never destroyed so that it became uninhabited. Sure the population of Rome fell from over one-million to around fifty-thousand after the fall of the Western Roman Empire but it was never so completely destroyed so that what Revelation says concerning Babylon could literally happen.

Alright but what about so-called Jerusalem? Well the problems with this interpretation is actually far greater than with Rome believe it or not. First off so-called Jerusalem has never fallen so that it becomes uninhabited like Revelation says it will just like with Rome. However with so-called Jerusalem you cannot view those verses from Revelation figuratively and see them as concerning the so-called Jews instead of pagans in the case of Rome. This is because the so-called Jews still exist today. On the other hand Roman pagans are basically entirely non-existent so at least it is possible to make the destruction of Babylon more figurative in the case of Rome. Furthermore interpreting Babylon the great or the great prostitute as so-called Jerusalem is just factually wrong in terms of what the text says.

As Revelation says:

> "And the woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth." (Revelation 17:18)

In the first century AD so-called Jerusalem was a city in the Roman province of Judea that was under Roman rule under the authority of a Roman governor. This means that so-called Jerusalem was never "the great city that rules over the kings of the earth" (Revelation 17:18) in the first century AD. In other words viewing so-called Jerusalem as Babylon is just factually wrong in terms of what the text of Revelation says. This is why I said the problems with viewing so-called Jerusalem as Babylon are actually far greater than with Rome.

So what is my point with all this exactly? Well my point here is that the only way you can make preterism seem to work is by viewing hundreds of years as soon and interpreting the text of Revelation in such a way that you turn "the great city of Babylon will be cast down, never to be seen again" (Revelation 18:21) into such an extremely flexible and figurative prophecy that it loses all meaning and becomes worthless. But what is wrong with viewing hundreds of years as soon exactly? Well the problem is that this is the central claim that preterists make concerning why preterism is the only correct way to view Revelation. Remember what I said above. Preterists created preterism as a way to save Revelation from being a failed prophecy since Revelation says everything "must soon come to pass." (Revelation 1:1) However in creating their preterist interpretation preterists actually view some of the events as happening hundreds of years into the future despite Revelation saying everything is going to happen soon. Then on top of this they also interpret much of the text so that it essentially loses its entire meaning. Therefore my point is that preterists are ultimately hypocrites since they say soon must mean soon in one case while saying soon actually means hundreds of years or even thousands of years in another case.

As a result of all the above you should not take preterism seriously because it is obviously wrong. Now I spent so much time going over just how wrong preterism is so that we are now left with only two options. The first option is to say that Revelation is a failed prophecy because it has not soon come to pass as it says. Then the second option is that Revelation is about the future so that it has yet to be fulfilled. Now so far you may believe that Revelation is a failed prophecy especially if you were a preterist before reading what I wrote concerning preterism. I mean if Jesus says "Behold, I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:7) then how exactly are we supposed to see Revelation as being anything other than a failed prophecy since it is abundantly obvious that Jesus has not returned yet after almost two-thousand years? Then how can around two-thousand years or more be considered soon exactly? Well? These are good questions so carefully consider what I have to say.

So based upon reading the definition of tachos (τάχος) which is translated as soon this verse in question in Revelation, "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) you may insist that soon must mean that the central prophecies of Revelation, including the first resurrection, were supposed to be fulfilled in the first century AD. Then as a result of this you may view Revelation as a failed prophecy. However if you carefully read Revelation and seek to understand what it says then you will discover that it is literally impossible to believe that the prophecies of Revelation must be fulfilled soon in the first or second centuries AD. Wait what? Yes, really. There are four different sections in Revelation and one section from the Gospel of Matthew that perfectly demonstrate this point and I have arranged these sections from the least persuasive to the most undeniable since really they build off each other so that each successive section answers questions about the previous as you will soon see. Then because of the different ideas presented in these five different sections and how they necessitate a multi-thousand year wait time for the fulfillment of Revelation when Revelation says soon and near this means that soon does not mean soon and that near does not mean near. I mean if Revelation tells of something that cannot materially happen for literally many hundreds to even thousands of years then how exactly are we supposed to see Revelation as a failed prophecy because it was not fulfilled within ten to fifty years? The answer is obvious. Therefore carefully consider what I have to say concerning the following four sections of Revelation and one section from the Gospel of Matthew so that you can see the truth in what I am saying for yourself.

First off as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come." (Matthew 24:14)

This means that before Jesus can return at the end of the age the gospel, or the message of salvation in Jesus as told in the gospels, must be preached in all the world to all nations. Therefore because of this fact it is rather silly to believe that Jesus was supposed to return in the first century AD because obviously the gospel had zero chance of being preached to all the nations of the world in the first century AD.

Now you may dispute this since the word translated as world here is oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) which means the inhabited earth or world and was frequently used to refer to the Roman world alone without concern for anything outside of it. Then the word translated as nations is ethnesin (ἔθνεσιν) which can better be understood to mean foreign people groups or pagans. Thus if oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) refers to the Roman world this would mean this verse is talking about the gospel being preached throughout the entire Roman Empire to all the different people groups or pagans that make up the empire and not to the literal entire world. However there is a problem here in that oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) does not always refer to the Roman world and instead it can refer to the entire inhabited area of the entire world.

As Revelation says:

> "And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him." (Revelation 12:9)

In this verse the word translated as world is the same oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) as mentioned above. Then obviously it would not make sense to say that Satan is the deceiver of the whole Roman world since Satan deceived all of humanity in the Garden of Eden and this fact is what this verse is actually referencing. Therefore this means that oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) in this verse is correctly understood and translated as world. Then because of this fact oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) does not always refer to the Roman world and instead it can refer to the entire literal world as we think of it today.

This then means that when Jesus says that the "gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations" (Matthew 24:14) that Jesus could be talking about all the world and to all people groups of the world and not all the Roman world and all the people groups of the Roman world.

Now I realize that this is not exactly a definitive and undeniable argument which is why it is first and not last since I am building up the case that Revelation is talking about the far future and not the near future. Therefore it is perfectly fine if you are not convinced by what you just read.

However I will say that if you read Jesus to be talking about all the Roman world and not all the world as we think of it today then the verse from the Gospel of Matthew still does not make much sense and could not have been fulfilled in the first century AD. But why? Well you see Christianity did not spread as quickly as you probably think it did. For instance by the end of the first century AD Christianity had only spread to a limited number Greek cities in the eastern half of the Roman Empire and the city of Rome itself in modern-day Italy. Even by the fourth century AD Christianity had only spread to a small fraction of the Roman Empire and really Christianity did not reach the point of being in all the Roman world until fifth or sixth centuries long after it became the state religion of the Roman Empire.

Therefore this means that it does not make much sense to claim that Revelation needed to have been fulfilled in the first century AD since in truth Christianity was basically like a tiny cult made up of less than ten-thousand people by the end of the first century AD or 100 AD. I mean how exactly could the gospel "be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations" (Matthew 24:14) or rather in all the Roman Empire to all people groups before even 200 AD let alone 100 AD? Obviously it could not have been. Although if Jesus is really talking about the whole world and all the different people groups in the whole world then I do not have to say that such a thing happening in even a thousand years would be entirely nonsensical looking back at history. But what was Jesus or the author of the Gospel of Matthew really talking about by using oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη)? Does this word refer to the Roman world or the world as we see it today? The following sections should shed some light on this and demonstrate that it is best to view the usage of oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) in the above passage from the Gospel of Matthew as all the world and not all the Roman world.

Second as Revelation says:

> "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

In this passage there are two key ideas that demonstrate that Revelation as a whole and the verse I previously quoted from the Gospel of Matthew are both actually talking about the entire world as we see it today instead of only a fraction of the Roman world in the first century AD. The first is that the beast is supposed to rule "over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) and the second is that "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) as told in this passage. Therefore as a result I believe Revelation is definitively saying that the beast will rule over the entire literal world as we see it today so that people across all the earth will worship it as a false god. This would then mean that it was impossible for Revelation to be fulfilled in the first century AD because there was not a singular world power that ruled over the entire earth. Then because of these facts it would be reasonable to say that the world would need to wait many hundreds if not thousands of years for this prophecy to be fulfilled rather than expecting it to happen soon in the first or second centuries AD.

In terms of the first verse and the idea that the beast will have "authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) you may claim that Revelation is not talking about all the earth and instead you may claim that it is talking about the Roman world just like in the passage above concerning the Gospel of Matthew. Now in truth there is no way to demonstrate beyond any doubt that this verse in Revelation is in fact talking about all the people in the whole world rather than the Roman world. That said I believe the repetition of saying "every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) highly implies that Revelation is in fact talking about the whole world and not just the Roman world. This is because when Revelation says "every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) it is saying the same exact thing four times using four different words that each have a similar meaning in this context which would heavily imply that Revelation does in fact mean every people group in the whole world and not just the Roman world.

If you dispute this then why does Revelation say the same thing four different ways if not to emphasize that it is talking about literally every people group in the whole world? I mean we even use repetition in order to clarify and emphasize a certain point in today's world when we speak or write as a way to tell people that we are not speaking in hyperbole or exaggerating. Therefore I believe Revelation is doing something similar in order to tell us that yes "every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) literally means every people group in the world and that this is not an exaggeration, hyperbole, a figure of speech or figurative language. Now you still may dispute this but given the highly figurative language of Revelation as a whole I believe such a clarification through repetition would indicate that "every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) is not supposed to be viewed the same as the rest of Revelation where there is some exaggeration and instead it is supposed to be viewed as every people group on earth.

My point here is further supported by the fact that in the verse after this one Revelation says that "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8) First off the word translated as earth here is gēs (γῆς) which means the earth or rather the ground or land in general and it can refer to either a part of the whole earth in the case of a single nation or it can refer to all the land of the whole world. However the usage of gēs (γῆς) in this verse definitively means the whole earth because of the phrase "all who dwell on" (Revelation 13:8) that appears before it. This is because if Revelation was merely talking about a part of the whole earth then it would not say "all who dwell on" (Revelation 13:8) and would instead say something like those who dwell on. Then if this verse was talking about the Roman world specifically and not all people in the whole world then it would use oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) since as I said previously oikoumenē (οἰκουμένη) can refer to the Roman world. On the other hand this verse uses the word gēs (γῆς) which means the earth or land instead and even qualifies it with "all who dwell on" (Revelation 13:8) as I have already noted.

Next I also want to point out that just like in the previous verse this verse uses repetition in order to emphasize that it is talking about literally all people throughout the entire earth itself. This is because the verse says that "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8) Now although this translation says all twice in this verse even though in the original Greek it says all once I am not talking about the repetition of the world all. Instead I am talking about how Revelation qualifies the "all who dwell on the earth" (Revelation 13:8) with "whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8) Now in order for this to make sense you need to first understand that the idea of the Book of Life is a book where the names of all those whom God calls His people are written so that anyone who is not a faithful Christian does not have their name in this book. This is why it says "the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain" (Revelation 13:8) because the idea is that is if you were alive after Revelation was written then this means that you must have faith in Jesus in order for your name to be in the Book of Life.

Alright but what does this mean exactly? Well this means Revelation is saying that yes it is actually talking about the entire literal earth and not just the whole Roman world or even a small fraction of the Roman world. Again this is because Revelation is directly saying it is talking about those who are not faithful Christians worshiping the beast which means that it cannot be referring to the Roman world alone since everyone in the first century knew that there were people outside of the Roman world. For example the Roman Empire actually traded with India and by traded I do not mean once to twice and instead I am talking about a huge trading enterprise that saw over a hundred Roman trading ships sail to India each year during the reign of the emperor Augustus in the early first century AD that drained such vast quantities of gold from the Roman economy that Roman authors complained about the loss of gold. In other words what I am saying is that it was clear to people living in the Roman Empire that the Roman world was not the whole world.

If you still want to dispute this then I would just like to say that Revelation is a universal prophecy that concerns the whole literal world and it is not a limited local prophecy that concerns a small part of the world. This is why Revelation says things like "that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world" (Revelation 12:9) and "I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and earth had passed away, and the sea was no more." (Revelation 21:1) As I said previously obviously Satan is not the deceiver of the Roman world alone and instead he is the deceiver of the whole entire literal world. Then of course concerning the new heavens and the new earth Revelation is talking about God literally saying "I make all things new" (Revelation 21:5) so that He is recreating the entire literal world. Therefore this means that if Revelation is a universal prophecy that concerns the future of the whole world itself and everyone in it then why would the two verses from Revelation 13 that I have cited be talking about the Roman world? In other words what I

am saying is that it makes zero sense to view "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) as talking about the Roman world instead of the whole earth and everyone on it in light of Revelation being a universal prophecy that concerns the future of the whole world since God is to make a "new heaven and a new earth" (Revelation 21:1) just as is promised in Revelation.

Third as Revelation says:

> "And when the dragon saw that he had been thrown to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished for a time, and times, and half a time.
>
> Then from the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman and sweep her away in the torrent. But the earth helped the woman and opened its mouth to swallow up the river that had poured from the dragon's mouth. And the dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.
>
> And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea.
>
> Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea. There were ten royal crowns on its horns and blasphemous names on its heads. The beast I saw was like a leopard, with the feet of a bear and the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 12:13-13:2)

Before I begin explaining how this passage applies to the topic at hand I would just like to tell you that the woman here in this passage is Israel or rather the true Israel or what we think of as the Church today. Now you may take an issue with this but just accept it as given for now and know that I fully explain this fact later on in my commentary at the appropriate time. That said from this passage alone it is clear that Israel and the Church are synonymous and the same exact thing. This is because the passage says that the woman "had given birth to the male child" (Revelation 12:13) or Jesus and it was Israel who gave birth to Jesus. Furthermore the passage also says the children of Israel are those "who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17) This means that the so-called Jews are not Israel or Israelites and they have nothing to do with Israel. Then lastly of course the serpent or dragon in this passage is none other than Satan himself.

Alright now time for the meaning of the passage. When Revelation says that "when the dragon saw that he had been thrown to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child" (Revelation 12:13) and "the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness" (Revelation 12:14) it is talking about the early Church or the true Israel fleeing from persecution at the hands of the so-called in Judea by fleeing to foreign lands or the wilderness as Revelation puts it.

As Paul wrote in First Thessalonians:

> "For you, brothers, became imitators of the churches of God in Judea that are in Christ Jesus. You suffered from your own countrymen the very things they suffered from the Jews, who killed both the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and drove us out as well. They are displeasing to God and hostile to all men, hindering us from telling the Gentiles how they may be saved. As a result, they continue to heap up their sins to full capacity; the utmost wrath has come upon them." (1 Thessalonians 2:14-16)

Here in Paul's epistle to the Thessalonians Paul wrote about how the so-called Jews were hindering the Church from spreading the gospel to such an extent that Paul says they "drove us out as well" (1 Thessalonians 2:15) from the Roman province of Judea.

Therefore the main idea behind this first paragraph from Revelation 12 is that Satan tried to use the so-called Jews or as Jesus calls them "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) to try to destroy the true Israel, the Church, before it could take root in the world so that he could deny the world the only path to salvation, faith in Jesus as the Christ. However despite Satan's best attempt to use "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) to kill the true Israel he failed because God determined that Israel would survive by giving her "two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished for a time, and times, and half a time." (Revelation 12:14)

Now as an aside you may take offense at me calling the so-called Jews "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) however as you will later see it is Jesus who calls them this. Furthermore there is a reason why this passage says the woman fled "from the presence of the serpent" (Revelation 12:14) because the idea is that Revelation is saying the so-called Jews in Judea are not only pawns of Satan but that they can actually be called Satan since they are rebelling against God to the most extreme degree possible by persecuting those who follow the true King of Israel, Jesus. Therefore if you take offense then to be honest I really do not care because my purpose is to be faithful to God and Jesus and not to you.

Next when the passage says that "the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman" (Revelation 12:15) and "the earth helped the woman and opened its mouth to swallow up the river that had poured from the dragon's mouth" (Revelation 12:16) Revelation is figuratively describing how Israel or the Church had to hide from persecution in the late first century AD at the hands of Roman authorities by taking refuge in foreign lands. This is why Revelation says "the earth helped the woman" (Revelation 12:16) because as you know the earth is a symbol for the nations of the world. Then Revelation says "the serpent spewed water" (12:15) because water is a symbol for large groups of people since the sea is a symbol for humanity. Thus the idea here is that after "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) or the so-called Jews in Judea failed to destroy the true Israel and thus damn all of humanity to destruction in the Lake of Fire that Satan next seeks to use the people of the Roman Empire or "water like a river" (Revelation 12:15) in order to destroy the true Israel so that Satan can ensure that the rest of humanity is damned forever. However thankfully the Church or Israel was able to take refuge in the various people groups of the world and hide from the Roman persecution so that it could survive. Then lastly because Satan failed he now plots to create an instrument of spiritual destruction, the beast, that he can use "to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17)

But who exactly are "her children" (Revelation 12:17) in this passage? Well first off they are not so-called Jews because the so-called Jews are not the children of Israel since they do not hold to the testimony of Jesus while the passage says that her children "keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17) As an aside later on I talk about what it truly means to "keep the commandments of God" (Revelation 12:17) so do not take issue with this for now. Now in terms of the topic at hand this then means that the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars could never be considered as Satan going to war against the rest of her children through the Roman Empire or what preterists see as the beast. Furthermore as you will learn in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars were actually orchestrated by God to punish the so-called Jews for killing Jesus and for their godlessness. This fact will be so very clear to you in this part that it will be undeniable. Thus there is no possible way to see the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as being related to Revelation and Satan's war against "her children" (Revelation 12:17) in this passage because the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars were actually God's war to punish "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) as they deserve.

Alright so who are "the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) or the children of Israel then? Well obviously her children are Christians but the point of contention is which group of Christians is Revelation talking about? I mean is it talking about Christians in the first century AD or much later? Now at first you may believe that the passage could be talking about Christians in the late first century or perhaps even the early second century and as a result you view the beast that rises out of the sea, or the peoples of the world, as being the Roman Empire. However this view is wrong. This is because as I have already explained this passage goes over two different stages of persecution. The first stage was by the so-called Jews in the Roman province of Judea and as a result of this persecution the woman or Israel fled Judea so that she could be nourished for a period of time in foreign lands as pagans became Christians and strengthen her. Then after this "time, and times, and half a time" (Revelation 12:14), or an appointed period of time that God has promised, is over the Romans take notice of the growing numbers of Christians and how strong Israel is so they persecute the woman or Israel. However despite their best efforts the Romans are unable to destroy Israel because Christians hide in the various people groups of the world as Satan's scheme ends up failing. Therefore this means that Revelation is already talking about Christians being persecuted by the Romans. If you doubt this then consider what Jesus says to the seven churches.

As Jesus says:

> "Without growing weary, you have persevered and endured many things for the sake of My name." (Revelation 2:3)
>
> "Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Look, the devil is about to throw some of you into prison to test you, and you will suffer tribulation for ten days. Be faithful even unto death, and I will give you the crown of life." (Revelation 2:10)
>
> "I know where you live, where the throne of Satan sits. Yet you have held fast to My name and have not denied your faith in Me, even in the day when My faithful witness Antipas was killed among you, where Satan dwells." (Revelation 2:13)
>
> "I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name." (Revelation 3:8)

These verses mean that it is clear that even when Revelation was written Christians were still being persecuted by Roman authorities. But what does this mean exactly? Well this just means that the intense persecutions of Christians that happened in the late first century AD were in fact what Revelation refers to as "the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman and sweep her away in the torrent." (Revelation 12:15)

Therefore "the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) does not refer to Christians in the first or even second centuries AD because once again Satan was already making war against her children in the first century AD. As a result of this "the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) would be Christians who are alive sometime in the future after all those who suffered persecution by Rome passed away. Thus the idea here is that "the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) refers to the children of Israel across time. Now you make take issue with this but all Christians are the children of Israel since they are all part of Israel. Then since Christians in the Roman Empire were being persecuted by Rome and since Revelation clearly says this persecution happens before the beast rises this then means that once the beast rises it cannot go to war with the children of Israel that the Romans have already been persecuting. Instead the beast is to war with "the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) that have not already been persecuted by Rome yet.

In other words all this means that the beast cannot be the Roman Empire. This fact is further demonstrated by the fact that the beast rises after Satan tries to destroy the true Israel with first the so-called Jews then second through the Roman Empire.

To quote part of the passage again:

> "And the dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.
>
> And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea.
>
> Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea. There were ten royal crowns on its horns and blasphemous names on its heads. The beast I saw was like a leopard, with the feet of a bear and the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 12:17-13:2)

Now the reason why I quoted the first two verses of Revelation 13 in this passage is to demonstrate that Revelation is using the same imagery of a beast that the Book of Daniel uses. In fact this beast from Revelation shares similar traits from all four of the beasts from the Book of Daniel. This means that the symbol of beast is supposed to be representative of a powerful nation or political organization. In other words the beast is not a person. If you want to dispute this then remember how the Book of Daniel uses beasts to represent empires and the horns of the fourth beast to represent individual rulers.

But my point is that once again since Revelation says this beast rises after Satan fails to use the so-called Jews and the Roman Empire to destroy Israel this then means that the beast cannot be the Roman Empire because obviously the Roman Empire cannot rise "out of the sea" (Revelation 13:1) while it still exists. Then because of this fact when Satan goes "to make war with the rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) he is not going to war with Christians in the first or second centuries and is instead going to war with Christians who will be alive in the future when the Roman Empire is no more so that he uses a new beast that rises "out of the sea" (Revelation 13:1) or rather a new powerful nation or political organization that rises out of all the different people groups of the world. Lastly no doubt you may have some issues with this so pay attention to the next section because this section will demonstrate beyond any doubt that my view here is correct.

Fourth as Revelation says:

> "The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast. These kings have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:12-13)
>
> "For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:17)

First off in terms of what these passages are talking about I am not going to explain their full meaning now and just like with the previous passages you will have to read my commentary on them later on. Instead I am only going to go over a single idea from each of them that relates to the subject matter at hand.

Next the word translated as a kingdom in the first passage and kingdom in the second passage is basileian (βασιλείαν) which can be better understood to mean kingship, sovereignty, rule or royal power. Thus the first passage is talking about ten kings who have not yet received royal power so that they are not actually kings now and instead they will be kings in the future. Then in terms of the power they will receive they will not have it for long because their only purpose to receiving royal power is so that they can give their power to the beast so that the will of God can be fulfilled.

Alright but what does this mean and how does it relate to what I said about how the Roman Empire cannot be the beast? Well it is quite obvious. The passage is saying that the ten kings who are to give their power to the beast "have not yet received" (Revelation 17:12) their royal power and that instead they will only receive their royal power in the future at some point. Therefore this means that the beast cannot be the Roman Empire because the Roman Empire already had power when Revelation was written. Let me just reiterate this point because it is so important and easy to miss. The beast cannot be the Roman Empire because the Roman Empire had power when Revelation was written while Revelation says these ten kings will give their power to the beast in the future. In other words if Revelation speaks of the beast as something yet to come that does not have power then how could the Roman Empire be the beast if it already had power? Once again obviously it cannot be the beast.

But what about the emperor of Rome? Well the beast also cannot be a Roman emperor because the Roman emperor received power through either birthright or adoption in the case of the continuation of a dynasty or through the support of the Roman army in the case of a new dynasty. Thus there were no kings across the whole Roman Empire who gave their power to the emperor of Rome so that he could become emperor because the Roman Empire was not a democracy. But what about Roman governors and client kings? Could it not be the case that Revelation is talking about the governors and client kings of Roman provinces supporting a new emperor? Well no. First off in terms of governors the Greek word used in the New Testament for governor is hēgemoni (ἡγεμόνι) which is obviously not the word translated as king which is basileus (βασιλεύς) in this passage so the passage is talking about kings and not governors. Next even client kings were more like governors and not kings with royal power as we think of them today since Rome and the emperor could remove any client king they wished. Lastly governors and client kings did not give their power to the emperor of Rome. Instead the exact opposite was true because Roman emperors would delegate their supreme authority to trustworthy governors and client kings.

Furthermore I would like to point out that this passage is saying that these kings "have not yet received" (Revelation 17:12) royal power. This means that even if you want to claim I am wrong considering what I said about how the Roman Empire already had power when Revelation written and how the Roman emperor did not receive power from kings let alone all or many kings then the beast still cannot be anywhere near the first century. This is because it takes decades for kings to die so that there can be new kings in the world who were not ruling when Revelation was written so that "have not yet received" (Revelation 17:12) royal power can be true. For instance the Roman client king of Judea at the turn of the millennium was Herod the Great and he ruled for over thirty years. This means that you really cannot place the rise of the beast within say fifty years of Revelation being written because it would take decades for all the kings who were alive when Revelation was written.

Then as an aside in terms of Herod the Great he only received power because his father's good relations with Roman dictator Julius Caesar and by being appointed first governor by Roman authorities and then later king of the Jews by the Roman senate. Thus it is like I said above, the Romans gave power to client kings and the Roman emperors let alone the empire itself did not receive power from client kings because it already had all the power. This power of course almost entirely came from the Roman army and the many legions that made it up since with the legions Rome could put down almost any group of people who stood opposed to the authority of the Roman Empire and the emperor. Then ironically enough the greatest threat to the Roman Empire and Roman power for hundreds of years was never a foreign nation let alone the occasional rebel province but instead it was the Roman Empire itself. This is because power in the Roman Empire rested in the army and the legions so whoever had the loyalty of the army had power. As a result of this whenever there was a disagreement in the army over who should be emperor there were absolutely devastating civil wars that would actually weaken the empire to such an extent later on that it would be one of the main reasons for it's decline and susceptibility to foreign invasions. Thus there were no kings who gave their power to the emperor let alone the empire.

Therefore because of all this the beast cannot be the Roman Empire and it cannot be a Roman emperor either. Again the Roman Empire already had all the power so it did not need any more power and the emperor received his power either through birth, adoption or support of enough of the military. On the other hand Revelation says that "The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast" (Revelation 17:12) and "God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:17) Really it is that simple and this is all there is to it. The beast does not and cannot have anything to do with Rome, the Roman Empire or the emperor.

Now you may dispute what I am saying by trying to twist the text because you are so sure Revelation is about Rome based on some other passages. However instead of going over why this belief is wrong here I will go over each of the passages you are thinking of at the appropriate time so just be patient. That said I will say the next and last section will firmly demonstrate that I am correct concerning the "ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom" (Revelation 17:12) and how Revelation is talking about the rise of a global power hundreds or even thousands of years into the future instead of about an empire that was already around.

Fifth and finally as Revelation says:

> "After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9)
>
> "Then one of the elders addressed me: 'These in white robes,' he asked, 'who are they, and where have they come from?'
>
> 'Sir,' I answered, 'you know.'
>
> So he replied, 'These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.'" (Revelation 7:13-14)

First off just like in the previous section concerning the beast and how "it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) the first verse in this section also uses repetition in order to provide clarification that it is indeed talking about people from every people group on earth. Thus the same idea applies to this passage as well. However this is not the main point. Instead the main point of these two passages is that they essentially prove beyond any doubt that the prophecies of Revelation do not concern the first or even second centuries alone. This is because they speak of "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) who are spiritually in heaven as a result of their faith in Jesus. Also I would like to point out that these faithful Christians are spiritually in heaven because the resurrection has not happened yet. Keep this fact in mind because it is important.

But in terms of my point here there were probably less than ten thousand Christians alive on earth by the end of the first century AD which was around the time the Book of Revelation was written. Sure you may disagree with this and could claim there were a hundred of thousand, even though such a claim would be completely wrong, but even this much larger number changes nothing. This is because even if you were to say that there were a hundred thousand Christians who were alive at the end of the first century AD this would mean that there would maybe be say three-hundred thousand at the absolute most who were now dead. Although keep in mind the actual number of Christians who were dead by the end of the first century AD was probably thirty-thousand at the absolute most.

So what is my point here? Well my point is that even a few hundred-thousand Christians who are now spiritually in heaven because they died on earth do not qualify as "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) which Revelation uses in this passage. Therefore this then means that Revelation cannot possibly be talking about the first or second century AD because once again there were never that many Christians in the first century AD when Revelation was written. Instead the only time in which there could possibly be "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) would be hundreds or even thousands of years into the future after Christianity spread to "every nation and tribe and people and tongue" (Revelation 7:9) so that there would be hundreds of millions if not billions of Christians who came "out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:13) by dying on earth so that they can spiritually go to heaven.

Now no doubt you have some questions about this conclusion or you may even entirely dispute it so I am now going to answer your issues. First off you may claim that "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) could just refer to thousands of Christians which would then mean that it would be possible for the prophecies of Revelation to apply to the first century AD. However Revelation actually uses very large numbers which would indicate that the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is in fact much larger than these other numbers it gives.

As Revelation says:

> "And I heard the number of those who were sealed, 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel:" (Revelation 7:4)
>
> "Then I looked and saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion, and with Him 144,000 who had His name and His Father's name written on their foreheads. And I heard a sound from heaven like the roar of many waters and the loud rumbling of thunder. And the sound I heard was like harpists strumming their harps.
>
> And they sang a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the elders. And no one could learn the song except the 144,000 who had been redeemed from the earth." (Revelation 14:1-3)

As I said in my chapter on the important symbols of Revelation 144 is a symbol that represents the Israel of the Old Testament and the Israel of the New Testament or the Church so that there is a single united Israel that exists from the time of Israel or Jacob to the present day and to the future. If you take issue with this then just accept it as given for now because I go into it later on in my commentary. But in terms of the different between the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) and the "144,000 from all the tribes of Israel" (Revelation 7:4) the multitude are all faithful Christians who have died on earth over the last two thousand years while the 144,000 are the few faithful Christians who will live in the final days before Jesus returns to destroy the beasts. This is why there is such a disparity in the difference between the two numbers because the idea is that the multitude is the great strength and triumph of Israel or the Church on earth and how people "from every nation and tribe and people and tongue" (Revelation 7:9) have become part of God's people while the 144,000 are representative of the weakness of Israel or the Church in the last days as the beasts of Revelation 13 reign over the world and work so-called miracles in order to get all the people of the world to worship the first beast as a so-called god. That said my point here with these two passages concerning the 144,000 is that the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) must be much much greater than 144,000 because otherwise Revelation would have given a number instead of just saying it is a number "too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) as the passage says.

Then as Revelation also says:

> "And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number." (Revelation 9:16)

The number translated as two hundred million is more accurately translated as twice a myriad myriad or rather twice ten-thousand ten-thousands since myriad means ten-thousand. Now this number is actually figurative and non-literal as you can probably tell and as I explain later on. However my point here is that Revelation uses the word myriad or a group of ten-thousand in order to quantify a number. Therefore the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) must be larger than even a myriad myriad or one-hundred million, figuratively speaking of course, because otherwise Revelation 7 would have used a myriad myriad in order to describe the number instead of saying that it is "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) as the passage says.

Therefore as a result of these two points the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) must number well into the hundreds of millions or even billions. Then of course as I said previously such a number of Christians who have died and spiritually gone to heaven so that they could join the great multitude could only happen after many hundreds or even thousands of years. Really there is no disputing this fact.

Alright now the second and last main issue you might have is that this great multitude does not represent Christians who have died in the first century and instead it represents Christians who have died from the first century to the present day and into the future. Alternatively you might say that the great multitude would be more representative of the hope of the growth of the future Israel or Church rather than being an actual prophecy. Now these issues might sounds nonsensical but it is still important to go over why they are nonsensical.

As Revelation says:

> "Then a mighty angel picked up a stone the size of a great millstone and cast it into the sea, saying:
>
> 'With such violence the great city of Babylon will be cast down, never to be seen again.
> And the sound of harpists and musicians, of flute players and trumpeters,
> will never ring out in you again.
> Nor will any craftsmen of any trade
> be found in you again,
> nor the sound of a millstone
> be heard in you again.
> The light of a lamp will never shine in you again,
> and the voices of a bride and bridegroom
> will never call out in you again.
> For your merchants were the great ones of the earth, because all the nations were deceived by your sorcery.'
>
> And there was found in her the blood of prophets and saints, and of all who had been slain on the earth.
>
> After this I heard a sound like the roar of a great multitude in heaven, shouting:
>
> 'Hallelujah!
> Salvation and glory and power belong to our God!
> For His judgments are true and just.
> He has judged the great prostitute
> who corrupted the earth with her immorality.
> He has avenged the blood of His servants
> that was poured out by her hand.'
>
> And a second time they called out:
> 'Hallelujah!
> Her smoke rises forever and ever.'" (Revelation 18:21-19:3)

In this passage the angel announces judgment against the great prostitute and then as a result she is killed and judged by God for her many sins. Then after the great prostitute is killed so that "all who had been slain on the earth" (Revelation 18:24) can be seen in her. As a result the "great multitude in heaven" (Revelation 19:1) praise God for killing and judging the great prostitute.

Next as Revelation goes on to say:

> "Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth with their armies assembled to wage war against the One seated on the horse, and against His army. But the beast was captured along with the false prophet, who on its behalf had performed signs deceiving those who had the mark of the beast and worshiped its image. Both the beast and the false prophet were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. And the rest were killed with the sword that proceeded from the mouth of the One seated on the horse.
>
> And all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh." (Revelation 19:19-21)

In this passage Jesus returns to destroy the first beast and second beast, or false prophet, after God has killed and judged the great prostitute. Then also keep in mind that the "great multitude in heaven" (Revelation 19:1) that praised God for killing the great prostitute in the previous passage do so before Jesus returns to destroy the beasts in this passage.

Alright so what does this all mean exactly? Well this means that the two issues I cited above are nonsensical since the two beasts will not be destroyed by Jesus until the "great multitude in heaven" (Revelation 19:1) celebrate after God kills the great prostitute. In other words this means that that the great multitude are not future Christians who are alive after Jesus returns to destroy the beasts like some preterists like to claim and they are also not representative of the hope of the growth of the future Israel or Church rather than being an actual prophecy. Again this is because the "great multitude in heaven" (Revelation 19:1) celebrate God killing the great prostitute before Jesus returns to destroy the two beasts.

Therefore all this means that a number of Christians that number "a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue" (Revelation 7:9) need to die on earth so that they spiritually go to heaven before God kills the great prostitute and before Jesus returns to destroy the first and second beasts of Revelation 13.

As a result of this last point and all the previous points the prophecies of the Book of Revelation were never supposed to be fulfilled in the first or second centuries AD and most importantly Jesus was never supposed to return soon. Instead the central prophecies of the Book of Revelation that relate to the great prostitute and the beast could only have a chance at being fulfilled hundreds if not thousands of years after the first century AD due to what Revelation says must come to pass before these things can happen.

Alright but if what I am saying is true then why have both preterists and secular historians been so confused so that they believe Revelation is about Rome? Well really there are two verses that they pick out in order to demonstrate their now obviously wrong claim.

As Revelation says:

> "Here is a call for wisdom: Let the one who has insight calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man, and that number is 666." (Revelation 13:18)
>
> "This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits." (Revelation 17:9)

In terms of what preterists and secular historians believe the idea in the first verse is that 666 means Nero Caesar by means of writing Nero Caesar, the name and title of the Roman emperor Nero, in Aramaic or Hebrew and adding up the sum of the values of each letter using gematria. Then for the second verse the idea is that the city of Rome was a city built upon seven hills or mountains so therefore the woman in this verse or the great prostitute must be the city of Rome. Sounds convincing right? I certainly hope not because you should know better after reading my chapter on the important symbols of Revelation so that you are not fooled by such coincidences.

So how I can so arrogantly say that preterists and secular historians are completely wrong here? Well you see these two verses explicitly tell you how you should view what follows by saying that you need sophia (σοφία) or wisdom, insight, skill or intelligence. Next you have to understand that gematria was not just commonly understood among Hebrews but it was also commonly understood among Greeks. This fact is evidenced by graffiti that has been found across the ancient Roman world that uses gematria to refer to people with numbers. Then this is to say nothing of the Hebrews who were highly engaged in gematria and numerology from people's names. Next in terms of the city of Rome everyone in the Roman Empire knew that Rome was the city that was built on seven hills. Yes everyone knew about it to the point that if someone spoke about the city on seven hills then everyone would assume they are speaking about Rome. In other words what I am saying is that gematria and the seven hills of Rome were not secrets and that instead they were very obvious things that basically everyone knew about and understood.

So what does this mean exactly? Well you see Revelation specifically says that you need sophia (σοφία) or wisdom, insight, skill or intelligence in order to understand what 666 and the "seven mountains on which the woman sits" (Revelation 17:9) mean. Thus you can see the problem. I mean why would Revelation say you need wisdom, insight, skill or intelligence in order to understand something as obvious as the seven hills of Rome and gematria with the name of the most famous person in the Roman Empire if everyone already knew about it? Therefore the obvious interpretation must be wrong because you do not need wisdom or intelligence to see this meaning.

Now no doubt you have more questions especially related to the reference to calculate in Revelation 13:18 so just know I go over these additional questions later on in my commentary since I do not want this to be too long. That said just to reiterate my point since it is so important. When Revelation says you need sophia (σοφία) or wisdom, insight, skill or intelligence to understand what 666 and the "seven mountains on which the woman sits" (Revelation 17:9) mean it is saying that the true meaning is not obvious so that you actually need real wisdom or insight in order to know what they mean. Therefore this is why I said that prevailing view of preterists and secular historians is wrong since as I said gematria and the seven hills of Rome were so obvious to people in the first century AD that they did not need wisdom or insight in order to understand them. This then means that you cannot use 666 and the "seven mountains on which the woman sits" (Revelation 17:9) in order definitively say that the beast is a Roman emperor and the great prostitute is the city of Rome. As a result all this my points concerning the five sections and the various passages I quoted from still stand.

Now to summarize these five points. First the "gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come." (Matthew 24:14) Second the beast will have authority "over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7) Third Satan will "make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17) Fourth there will be "ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast." (Revelation 17:12) Then fifth enough Christians need to pass away on earth so that there is "a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9)

Then as a result of these five points the central prophecies about the beast and the great prostitute in the Book of Revelation cannot be about the Roman Empire because it would take hundreds if not thousands of years for these things to be fulfilled at the minimum from the perspective of when Revelation was written. This then means that when Revelation says "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) and "Behold, I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:7) that we should not see soon or tachos (τάχος) as meaning soon or near in time and that instead we should see it as meaning something different.

So what does soon or tachos (τάχος) mean exactly then? I mean how could around two-thousand years be considered soon? Before I explain what it means I would like to say that this is actually a problem that many Christians in the first and second centuries had an issue with because many if not most of them mistakenly believed that Jesus would return with in their lifetimes. I mean even some of the apostles like Paul and Peter, if you want to assume Peter wrote First Peter that is, believed that Jesus was going to return in their lifetimes. Obviously they were wrong since Jesus has not returned yet and obviously they were wrong to think such a thing based on what you have read so far and as you will later read in my commentary on the Olivet Discourse as given in Matthew 24. That said this disappointment led to the author of Second Peter, which is almost certainly a forgery, try to desperately make sense of the failure of Jesus to return.

As Second Peter says:

> "Beloved, do not let this one thing escape your notice: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day. The Lord is not slow in keeping His promise as some understand slowness, but is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance." (2 Peter 3:8-9)

Then as the Psalms say:

> "For in Your sight a thousand years are but a day that passes, or a watch of the night." (Psalms 90:4)

Thus the author of Second Peter is clearly referencing the Psalms in his letter. But in terms of the idea at hand really the author is trying to use the Psalm in question to explain why God has not sent Jesus to return to the earth to usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God yet by saying that from God's perspective even a thousand years is as short as a day. Now at first this line of reasoning may sound convincing to you but honestly to me it is basically nonsensical in light of the five points I made above. This is because the number of years that have passed since Jesus's resurrection is irrelevant if what Revelation and the gospels say must happen have not happened yet. In other words who cares about the number of years if we have yet to see the beast rise and reign over all the world? So you can see why it does not matter when Jesus will return in my view and why we should not be counting down.

Next the meaning of the Greek word tachos (τάχος) is actually demonstrated to be rather far away rather than soon in the Greek translation of the Book of Isaiah when it is said that Isaiah wrote the following prophecy around two-hundred years before it actually happened.

As the Book of Isaiah says:

> "Babylon's time is at hand, and her days will not be prolonged." (Isaiah 13:22)

In this verse the Greek translation of the Old Testament, or the Septuagint, that was around in the first century AD uses the word tachos (τάχος) for the phrase that is translated from Hebrew as "at hand" (Isaiah 13:22). Therefore you could say that if around two-hundred years is also considered to be soon then around two-thousand years could also be considered soon.

So what does soon or tachos (τάχος) mean then? In short the most direct translation would be perhaps quickly so that "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) would become what must quickly come to pass. This would then mean that Revelation is describing how quickly the main prophecies will take place. In other words the idea would be that once the first beast rises it may only be a short time until Jesus returns to destroy it. Then if the beast will be an ASI and given the rapid development in technology it is possible for this to be the case.

However this view ends up running into a major problem since the word tachos (τάχος) is not always used to describe the speed or the time in which the prophecies will be fulfilled.

As Revelation says:

> "Then he told me, 'Do not seal up the words of prophecy in this book, because the time is near.'" (Revelation 22:10)

In this verse the word translated as near is eggus (ἐγγύς) which means near or close in time or place. Therefore this would mean that Revelation is talking about the major prophecies taking place near in time rather than describing how quickly they are to unfold in the future.

Alright so what does this mean exactly? Well really I would say the meaning of the words tachos (τάχος) and eggus (ἐγγύς) are irrelevant because they are not supposed to be taken literally with respect to time as we see it today. Instead they are supposed to be viewed figuratively and spiritually with respect to God promising us that the prophecies of Revelation will be fulfilled. This is because it is abundantly and even undeniably clear in the five points I went over that the central prophecies concerning the beast and the great prostitute could never have been fulfilled in the first century AD because the physical realities for their fulfillment were not even close to happening as I demonstrated.

Then in terms of the figurative and spiritual meaning of these words translated as soon and near I would say that God is trying to make sure that readers of Revelation always remain hopeful as we look forward to Jesus's return because we as Christians are always supposed to be ready for His second coming. In other words by saying soon God is giving hope to Christians in all times that Jesus is always returning soon. Thus it could be considered more as a promise that Jesus is returning rather than as in indication of the time period in which He will return. The events "must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) because they have been ordained by God Himself and thus cannot be avoided.

Furthermore the usage of soon and near could also be considered a warning to Christians of all time periods that we must always seek to be ready for Jesus's return so that we are not caught unprepared.

As Jesus warns in Revelation:

> "Behold, I am coming like a thief. Blessed is the one who remains awake and clothed, so that he will not go naked and let his shame be exposed." (Revelation 16:15)

As I explain later on the idea of Jesus returning like a thief is that He will return at a time in which we least expect Him to return just like how a thief waits until you are asleep or away to strike. Then when Jesus warns against being caught naked He is talking about not doing what you are supposed to be doing as a Christian when He finally returns.

As Jesus also warns in the Gospel of Matthew:

> "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'
>
> Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you workers of lawlessness!'" (Matthew 7:21-23)

First off in terms of what exactly we are supposed to do as Christians I talk about this subject a bit in the rest of this commentary but really I have an entire part that is significantly dedicated to this subject called Various Insights. In this part you will have all your questions answered concerning this subject so do not worry about it for now.

Now in terms of topic at hand I believe one of the main reasons why soon and near are used to describe the prophecies of Revelation is so that Christians do not fall asleep as the years pass us by. For instance what if Revelation literally said that the beast will rise around two-thousand years later? In this case how do you think you would behave if you were living in say 500 AD and you knew there were still well over a thousand years to go? Obviously to say you would be at risk of falling asleep as you think of Christianity and Revelation as something irrelevant would be an understatement. Therefore in this case the words soon and near are used because Revelation is not addressed to a single group of Christians and instead it is addressed to all Christians throughout all time periods. As a result of this fact to the last generation of Christians before Jesus returns the time will be literally be soon or near so even if you want to take a literal approach then soon and near would be accurate at some point. You may doubt this view and believe that Revelation only concerns Christians living in the first century AD because of the seven letters to the seven churches found later on in Revelation. However as I say there those who make such a claim do not understand what the number seven means. So as you know seven is representative of completeness, every or all so the idea with the seven letters to the seven churches is that Jesus is writing a complete letter that is addressed to all churches. Thus you should have the entire Church as a whole in view and not specific churches. Then because of this fact it would be accurate to say that the Book of Revelation was also written for us living almost two-thousand years after it was written.

If you doubt this interpretation of the meaning of soon and near then consider the following passage from Revelation. But before you read I would like to emphasize that this occurs after the first resurrection, the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth, the second resurrection and the creation of the new heavens and the new earth.

As Revelation says:

> "Then the angel showed me a river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the main street of the city. On either side of the river stood a tree of life, bearing twelve kinds of fruit and yielding a fresh crop for each month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.
>
> No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within the city, and His servants will worship Him. They will see His face, and His name will be on their foreheads. There will be no more night in the city, and they will have no need for the light of a lamp or of the sun. For the Lord God will shine on them, and they will reign forever and ever.
>
> Then the angel said to me, 'These words are faithful and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place.'" (Revelation 22:1-6)

So what is my point? Well my point is that immediately after describing the "river of the water of life" (Revelation 22:1) and the "tree of life" (Revelation 22:2) in the new Jerusalem the angel says to John that this is to "soon take place." (Revelation 22:6) This is interesting because as I pointed out before you read this passage this part of Revelation takes place after the first resurrection, the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth, the second resurrection and the creation of the new heavens and the new earth. The key event in this list is the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth because if you insist on taking the words of Revelation completely literally, as preterists and secular historians insist upon, then the angel is saying that the faithful will have access to the "river of the water of life" (Revelation 22:1) in the new Jerusalem soon because the angel is talking about "what must soon take place" (Revelation 22:6) even though a literal thousand years would have passed from the time when Jesus returned to destroy the beasts and the time when the faithful will have access to the "river of the water of life" (Revelation 22:1) in the new Jerusalem. In other words the angel is saying that the new Jerusalem is soon or in tachei (τάχει) even though according to Revelation the new Jerusalem is set to occur a thousand years after Jesus returns to destroy the beasts. This would then mean that Revelation considers a thousand years to be soon or near.

If you want to dispute this then I would like to once again remind you of the literary device called the inclusio that I spoke about at the start of this comment. The idea here is that by including references to events happening soon or near at the start and end of the book Revelation is saying that everything inside these references is near and will happen soon. These events would of course include everything before and after the thousand year reign. Thus it really does not matter how you want to look at it because in the end Revelation considers a thousand years to be soon or near.

But the question then remains why does Revelation consider a thousand years to be soon or near? I mean how exactly could a thousand years be considered soon or near? Well it is just like I said. Soon and near are being used in a more figurative and spiritual sense as a way to promise and reassure the faithful that everything we have read about will come to pass because God has predetermined it is all to come to pass. Then of course it is also a way to help make sure the faithful are always ready for when Jesus will return so that we are not caught naked or unprepared. Therefore Revelation is not using soon or near literally and we should not view these words as being used literally.

Finally if you are still bothered by Revelation saying "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) you need to understand the nature of the beast or what I believe will be an artificial super intelligence. Essentially an ASI is an AI that vastly exceeds the most intelligent humans in the world in intellectual ability. In other words think of an ASI as the sum all human so-called experts combined into a single entity that seemingly knows everything there is to know. Then if the first beast really will be an ASI then how does it make sense to say that Revelation is supposed to be easy to understand so that the truth of it can be gauged from a secular perspective? What I mean here is that if God has predestined the beast to destruction due to it's future rebellion against God then obviously the beast must find some reason to not believe in God right? Therefore would it not make sense for God to give the Book of Revelation in such a way as to make it confusing so that you cannot look at it from a secular perspective and so that it appears as a failed prophecy to those who are spiritually blind? For instance if the Book of Revelation did not appear to be written about events in the first century AD and instead it clearly said what was going to happen around two thousand years later so that it would be obvious to everyone then why would the beast refuse to believe in God in the face of such a clear prophecy? Therefore I believe God purposefully made Revelation confusing so that you cannot understand it from a strict literal perspective and instead you need to understand it from a spiritual perspective.

As Jesus says:

> "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." (Revelation 2:7)

Here Jesus is not talking about having a physical ear and instead He is talking about having a spiritual ear so that you can hear what the Spirit speaks to you through the text of Revelation. This is why you need to understand Revelation from a spiritual perspective and why it is not possible to understand Revelation from a secular perspective.

Therefore lastly you will either see the spiritual truth in what Revelation says and what I have written concerning "what must soon come to pass" (Revelation 1:1) or you will not. If you do not then in truth I really do not know what else to say to you to try to change your mind because I have tried my best. On the other hand if you do see the truth behind what I have said then I hope you found this comment insightful and enjoyed reading it.

(1) "He made it known by sending His angel" – An angel guides John through his vision while serving as God's messenger. In the Bible angels are heavenly messengers and emissaries that carry out the will of God. This fact can be clearly seen later on in Revelation where angels sound the seven trumpets, pour out the seven bowls of wrath, are given authority to kill a third of mankind and more as they carry out and fulfill the will of God on earth. Then in terms of the rest of the Bible angels also serve a similar purpose except that their role focuses more on being messengers instead of the heralds judgment specifically since Revelation is an apocalypse, or an unveiling, that concerns the end of the age.

(1) "to His servant John" – John could refer to the apostle John who was one of the twelve disciples as is commonly thought among Christians or the John of Revelation could be an entirely different John. Really we cannot know for sure if the apostle John wrote Revelation because John of Revelation never says who he is specifically. So which John do I think wrote Revelation? First off the only real evidence for attributing the Book of Revelation to the apostle John would be that some Christians writing in the second century AD attribute the Book of Revelation to the apostle John. Although even here there is much debate here since Papias differentiates between John the apostle and a John that is called the presbyter, or elder, who he says wrote Revelation. Then Irenaeus also differentiates between the apostles and someone who he calls the disciple of the Lord who he says wrote Revelation.

Next based upon the text of Revelation itself it is unlikely the author was the apostle John and instead a different Christian named John wrote Revelation.

As Revelation says:

> "Surrounding the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and on these thrones sat twenty-four elders dressed in white, with golden crowns on their heads." (Revelation 4:4)

Now at first you may not understand how this passage is applicable but if you remember the symbolism of the number twenty-four you will realize that these twenty-four elders are representative of the Israel of the Old Testament or ancient Israel and the Israel of the New Testament or the Church. The idea here is that the twelve patriarchs of the twelve tribes of Israel and the twelve apostles of Jesus are representative of all of Israel as they sit on the thrones.

Then as Jesus says:

> "Truly I tell you, in the renewal of all things, when the Son of Man sits on His glorious throne, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel." (Matthew 19:28)

So what I am saying is that if the John of Revelation was the apostle John then he would see himself seated on one of the thrones since he would be one of the apostles among the twelve apostles and the twelve patriarchs of the twelve tribes of Israel.

As a result of all this I would say that the apostle John was not the author of Revelation and that instead a different John, the John of Revelation, John the elder or John of Patmos as historians call him, was the author of Revelation. Now really we do not know anything about the John of Revelation other than what Revelation says so I do not think the identity of the author is really that important.

Now you may find the idea that the author of the Book of Revelation was not the apostle John to be offensive or even blasphemous in the sense that if one of the twelve apostles did not write Revelation then Revelation must be wrong. However I would say to you that can God not do as He pleases and give prophecy to whoever He desires? I mean why would only the twelve apostles be fit to be given knowledge about the future? Thus really this objection and line of reasoning does not make sense to me. Instead I hold to the belief that God is free to give whatever prophecy He wants to whomever He wants. Therefore whoever wrote Revelation does not matter to me.

However in response to this you may object by claiming that we cannot know if something is true or not if an apostle did not write it. But really I find this line of reasoning to be highly erroneous because it assumes that God will only communicate through one of the apostles so therefore we are justified in rejecting everything not written by an apostle. But like I just asked above why would only the twelve apostles be fit to be given knowledge about the future in the form of prophecy? Thus instead I strongly believe the most wise course of action with regards to prophecy is to test each prophecy to see how it lines up with the scriptures of the Old Testament, the gospels and what we see in the world around us.

As Paul wrote:

> "Do not treat prophecies with contempt, but test all things. Hold fast to what is good." (1 Thessalonians 5:20-21)

Furthermore I would like to say that the Bible is not inerrant, or without error, in all that is says and teaches. Now this is a rather significant subject to discuss so you will just have to wait to read my chapter on it in my part called Various Insights so just accept what I am saying as true for now. But my point here is that because of this fact I do not see why even the genuine works of the apostles should be privileged and held in high regard solely on the basis of the name attached to the work.

So if you are still bothered by what I have said here then I strongly encourage you to test everything you read in Revelation and in my commentary for yourself so that you can discover and see the truth in it with your own eyes. If you do this then I am certain that you will come to the inescapable conclusion that the Book of Revelation is directly from God and that as a result the John of Revelation is a prophet. Then after you come to this conclusion you should no longer be bothered by the idea that the apostle John did not write Revelation and that instead a different John wrote it.

(2) "who testifies to everything he saw." – John testifies that everything he saw in his vision, as told in the rest of Revelation, is true. Now at first this may not seem like that big of a deal for John to testify to everything he saw so that he says it is all true in light of what I said with regards to who John is in the previous comment. I mean if John is John of Revelation or of Patmos and not John the apostle then how can we trust what he is saying? But you see it is obvious from the text of Revelation that John is a faithful Christian and that He lives to serve God. For instance as I noted earlier John calls himself a slave of God and of Christ which means that John considers himself to be completely devoted to God. This then means that it is extremely unlikely for John to be lying and not telling the truth because he is staking his eternal life on what he wrote being true. This is because if John was lying and made up all of Revelation then surely he would know that God would destroy him for speaking such lies. Therefore because of all this you should place great weight on John's testimony here.

However if you still take issue with John's testimony here then I encourage you to test what he has written so that you can discover the truth of it for yourself. Or you could simply read the rest of my commentary since I obviously go over all of Revelation and hence test it for you.

(2) "This is the word of God" – As I commented previously the Book of Revelation is the direct word of God. Therefore you should read it very carefully and pay closer attention to it than any of the epistles or letters of the New Testament. Although the epistles can be helpful in some aspects they are not the direct "word of God" like Revelation is. Furthermore the epistles and even the gospels themselves have their own issues associated with them which I fully explain later on in my chapter on biblical inerrancy and infallibility in the part called Various Insights. But the main idea I want you to get here is that the Book of Revelation is the only book in the New Testament that can be considered the direct word of God. Therefore you should view Revelation as the most worthwhile and important book in the New Testament and even the Bible as a whole.

(2) "and the testimony of Jesus Christ." – Since Revelation "is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants" (Revelation 1:1) this would mean that it is also the testimony of Jesus since God has given us Revelation through Jesus. Now in terms of what testimony means here it is best to think of it as Jesus testifying concerning the will of God and what God has determined that "must soon come to pass." (Revelation 1:1) Therefore you should see the rest of Revelation as Jesus speaking to us concerning the will of God and what must happen before He returns to usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God.

(3) "Blessed is the one who reads aloud the words of this prophecy, and blessed are those who hear and obey what is written in it" – First off this verse is the only time in the entire Bible a blessing is given for reading and understanding a book of the Bible. Next this is the first of seven blessings found in Revelation. The other six blessings are found in Revelation 14:13, 16:15, 19:9, 20:6, 22:7 and 22:14. Since there are seven blessings in total and seven represents completeness you will be completely blessed by God for reading Revelation and obeying what is in it.

But what does this blessing entail? Well based on the fact that Revelation is a warning to the faithful about what is yet to happen by simply reading the text and understanding it you will become blessed as you become aware of the true nature of the world and how things are to end. The idea is that you will become equipped with the spiritual knowledge you need in order to know what the first beast of Revelation 13 is, how you can overcome its awesome power and how you can resist the allure and temptation of the great prostitute. Then of course this is all so that you can receive all the rewards that God has laid out for those who overcome the power of the beast and of Satan himself.

(3) "because the time is near" – As I said previously soon does not mean soon and near does not mean near in Revelation. Instead the usage of soon and near is supposed to impress upon us that we always need to be ready for Jesus to return at the end of the age. This is because Jesus will return "like a thief" (Revelation 16:15) so therefore Christians of all time periods must always remain vigilant until Jesus returns since the time is always near.

Then as Jesus also says:

> "For in the days before the flood, people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark. And they were oblivious, until the flood came and swept them all away. So will it be at the coming of the Son of Man." (Matthew 24:38-39)

Therefore once again Jesus will return when the world at large, even among Christians, least expects Him to. This is once again why near is not referring to a time near to when Revelation was written since many if not most Christians thought the end was literally near in the first century AD. Therefore always remember to not lose sight of the fact that "the time is near" so that you do not fall asleep as we get closer to when the first beast will arise.

2 – John Greets the Seven Churches

> (4) John,
>
> To the seven churches in the province of Asia:
>
> Grace and peace to you from Him who is and was and is to come, and from the seven Spirits before His throne, (5) and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth.
>
> To Him who loves us and has released us from our sins by His blood, (6) who has made us to be a kingdom, priests to His God and Father—to Him be the glory and power forever and ever! Amen.
>
> (7) Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen.
>
> (8) "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says the Lord God, who is and was and is to come—the Almighty.

2.1 – Commentary

(4) "John" – John of Revelation is is addressing "the seven Churches" (Revelation 1:4) or the entire Church and all Christians.

(4) "To the seven churches" – In Revelation "the seven churches" (Revelation 1:4) refers to not only all churches when Revelation was written but to all churches into the future as well because the number seven is representative of completeness, every or all. If Revelation only had in mind churches in the first century AD then it would say ten churches instead of seven churches since ten is symbolic of a lower level of completeness while seven is symbolic of a higher level of completeness. Therefore once again the usage of the number seven would include all churches throughout all time. Thus when Jesus tells a church He is coming soon He is actually saying it to all churches in the future even thousands of years later. Then as I said before Jesus says soon because Christians are always supposed to be ready for His second coming.

(4) "churches" – A church in the first century was simply a group of believers who met wherever they could, often in someone's house, to read the scriptures aloud and discuss spiritual matters.

As Paul wrote in Philemon:

> "To Philemon our beloved fellow worker, to Apphia our sister, to Archippus our fellow soldier, and to the church that meets at your house:" (Philemon 1:1-2)

Thus a church in the first century AD was closer to having friends and family over for dinner rather than a place where hundreds or even thousands of people come together in a grand building. So this is why a group of several people meeting at someone's house can actually be considered a church.

Next the world translated as church is ekklesia (ἐκκλησία) which essentially means an assembly, a congregation or a gathering of people. This means that you should not view a church or even the Church as we see it today with respect to it being a hierarchical and central organization. Instead a church and the Church simply refers to a small group of Christians who meet together and the body or assembly of all faithful Christians as a whole respectively. This means that the only requirement you need to meet to belong to the Church or the assembly of all faithful Christians is to simply be a faithful Christian. Thus no matter what group you belong to or even how spread out you are geographically you are part of the Church as long as you remain faithful.

As Jesus says:

> "And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by men. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you pray, go into your inner room, shut your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." (Matthew 6:5-6)

The idea here is that you do not need to go to a church to pray and to honor God. Instead Jesus is saying that you should pray alone and in secret so that you pray for the benefit of God alone and not for the benefit of being seen by others as pious and righteous. In other words someone who never goes to a church but prays in private is more righteous than someone who never misses a church service while never praying outside of church. Therefore do not see worshiping God as only attending a church and instead you should worshiping God as something you do in your daily life in private.

(4) "in the province of Asia" – These specific churches which are representative of all churches are in the Roman province of Asia. This area roughly corresponds to the western part of the modern-day country of Turkey.

(4) "from Him who is and was and is to come" – Refers to God or the Father because God is eternal in nature. This is a reference to the Epicurean epitaph, or saying commonly put on tombstones, used in the Roman world of non fui, fui, non sum, non curo or I was not, I was, I am not, I do not care. Then if we alter this saying to make it present tense so that it applies to us it would then be I was not, I am and I will not be. The idea here is that we are mortal and as a result we are represented by the phrase I was not, I am and I will not be since we did not exist before we are born and we will no longer exist after we die. Keep in mind I am ignoring the future resurrection of the dead here and I am only speaking in terms of the present since the resurrection of the dead has not happened yet so therefore those who die in our world today do not exist anymore. Then on the other hand since God was not born and will never die this means that He is someone "who is and was and is to come" (Revelation 1:4) just as this verse says.

(4) "from the seven Spirits before His throne" – Refers to the Holy Spirit since seven represents completeness and the Holy Spirit is a complete Spirit. Later on Revelation explicitly says that "These are the seven Spirits of God." (Revelation 4:5)

(5) "and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth." – These are all descriptive titles of Jesus.

(5) "the faithful witness" – Jesus is "the faithful witness" (Revelation 1:5) of God who speaks on behalf of God to the world concerning the Kingdom of God and the end of the age. This is then why Revelation later says "His name is The Word of God" (Revelation 19:13) because Jesus is the word of God incarnate in the sense that He is the perfect or "faithful witness" of God. Next the two witnesses in Revelation 11 take on a similar role as they bear witness to the glory of God and speak against the world near the end of the age.

(5) "the firstborn from the dead" – Jesus was the first to be resurrected by God to eternal life in an immortal body. This is the key difference between Jesus and the others who have been raised from the dead because if you take being resurrected from the dead as the sole qualification to be "the firstborn from the dead" (Revelation 1:5) then Jesus is not the firstborn from the dead. This is because in the Old and New Testaments there were others that were resurrected from the dead. For example Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead before before He was raised from the dead by God.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "After Jesus had said this, He called out in a loud voice, 'Lazarus, come out!'
>
> The man who had been dead came out with his hands and feet bound in strips of linen, and his face wrapped in a cloth.
>
> 'Unwrap him and let him go,' Jesus told them." (John 11:43-44)

Therefore by saying "the firstborn from the dead" (Revelation 1:5) in this verse Revelation is saying that Jesus is the first to be resurrected to eternal life in an immortal body by God instead of the first to be resurrected. Now although Jesus was the first this does not mean He is the only one who will be raised to eternal life. Instead at the end of the age God will resurrect all the faithful to share in eternal life with Jesus in the same type of body. Because of this fact Jesus being "the firstborn from the dead" (Revelation 1:5) is an ever present reminder to us all of God's promise to resurrect the faithful to eternal life on the day of judgment so we can live with Him in the new Jerusalem in the eternal Kingdom of God.

(5) "the ruler of the kings of the earth." – Jesus "is Lord of lords and King of kings" (Revelation 17:14) even if He is not obviously present now because God has given Him dominion over the world. Therefore it does not matter how powerful the first and second beasts will be or seem because Jesus will be able to destroy them since He is "the ruler of the kings of the earth."

(5) "To Him who loves us" – Jesus loves all those who are faithful to Him.

As Jesus says:

> "Whoever has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me. The one who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and reveal Myself to him." (John 14:21)

(5) "and has released us from our sins by His blood" – It is only through the death of Jesus on the cross and our faith in Him that our sins can be forgiven. Thus Jesus has "released us from our sins by His blood" so that we can be counted as righteous by God on the day of judgment and enter the Kingdom of God. This is what is commonly referred to as the atonement. Now the idea of the atonement may not make much sense to you and although I talk about it later on in my part called Various Insights I would just like to say a few words about it here.

The general idea of the atonement is that Jesus was and is the final sacrifice needed for the forgiveness of sins. This may not make much sense so you need to understand that the ancient Israelites had to offer animal sacrifices to God in order for their sins to be forgiven. Then since Jesus is the Christ, or the Anointed One God has chosen to represent Him, this means that Jesus is infinitely more valuable to God than any animal. As a result of this Jesus's death on the cross was a great enough sacrifice for God to forgive all sins forever. Then in order to receive this forgiveness all we have to do is accept this forgiveness by having faith in Jesus.

But why does having faith in Jesus make sense? Well in the Book of Genesis the ultimate sin of Adam and Eve was trusting in themselves more than God so that they believed they would be able to judge good and evil for themselves in the same way God can after eating from the Tree of Knowledge. In other words Adam and Eve had more faith in themselves than in God. Now this relates to the atonement because by having faith in Jesus and His death and resurrection we demonstrate to God that we have more faith in Jesus than in ourselves. Then since Jesus is the Christ this then means that by having faith in Jesus we also have faith in God.

(6) "who has made us to be a kingdom" – First off all faithful Christians who have faith in Jesus will become part of the eternal Kingdom of God. But what does this verse mean by Jesus making "us to be a kingdom" here? Well the word basileian (βασιλείαν) can be better understood to mean kingship, sovereignty, rule or royal power. Thus the idea is that the faithful will be made into a kingdom or a royal power as we rule over the new heavens and the new earth.

As Revelation later says:

> "And to the one who overcomes and continues in My work until the end, I will give authority over the nations. He will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery —just as I have received authority from My Father." (Revelation 2:26-27)

Therefore as I said all faithful Christians are to be made into a kingdom or a royal power as we rule over the new heavens and new earth.

(6) "priests to His God and Father" – There are two meanings of the word priests here. First a priest is someone who offers sacrifices to a deity. Therefore in the context of this verse Revelation is saying that Jesus has made us into kingdom of people who offer sacrifices to God. Now this may not make much sense but the point here is that in order to be a faithful Christian you need to make some sort of sacrifice. For example resisting temptation and not giving into the beast would be an example of a sacrifice because by resisting temptation in this case you would need to turn your back on all that the beast can do for you or rather sacrifice what the beast can do for you. Second a priest is also someone who serves a deity. Therefore in this case Revelation is saying that Jesus has made us into a kingdom of people who serve God. Then serving God would refer to carrying out and fulfilling the will of God in the world. So because of this fact we would be priests of God here on earth as we seek to carry out the will of God in our lives then additionally we would also be priests to God in the new heavens and the new earth where we will also carry out His will as well.

(6) "His God and Father" – First off I would like to say that this comment is highly controversial and quite long but I believe it must be said. In fact I would say that this comment is so controversial that many of you will probably not finish reading it. Therefore I would like to ask you to give me a chance to explain myself here before you give up on what I have to say.

But what am I talking about? Well despite the Christology, or view of Jesus, being very high in Revelation where Jesus is said to have the power and authority of God it is important to point out that in even Revelation Jesus is not equal to God or the Father. Wait what? Well you see this verse demonstrates this fact by saying "His God and Father" (Revelation 1:6) because God or the Father is still the God of Jesus. If you protest this and you believe that Jesus is actually God then how could God be His own God? Furthermore I would also like to point out that you cannot attempt to reconcile this verse by saying that John is talking about what those who hold to the so-called doctrine of the trinity would call the godhead because John is saying the Father is Jesus's God and he is not talking about the so-called godhead. Therefore as controversial as it may be to say John is calling God or the Father Jesus's "God and Father" (Revelation 1:6) because Jesus is not God and instead God is "His God and Father" (Revelation 1:6) just as Revelation says here.

What does this mean? Well in short this means that the so-called doctrine of the trinity is just that a so-called doctrine because it is undeniably false. But since this is such a controversial statement to make I am now going to review all the major passages that are used to support or disprove the so-called doctrine of the trinity so that you can see for yourself that the so-called doctrine of the trinity is clearly and unambiguously false. Now I realize you might be skeptical of this especially if you consider yourself well read with regards to the Bible and Christian theology. Then yes I also realize that the vast majority of Christians throughout history consider the so-called doctrine of the trinity to be one of the foundational beliefs in Christianity. However based upon what the text of the Bible actually says the trinity cannot be true. Therefore I would once again like to ask you to just humor me here if you are skeptical of what I am saying so that you do not stop reading.

Now before I can get into disproving the so-called doctrine of the trinity it would help to first define what the trinity is so that I have a set of claims that I can disprove. Essentially the so-called doctrine of the trinity states that there is one God existing in three coequal persons in the form of God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. The key here is that those who hold to so-called doctrine of the trinity believe that God the Father is God, that God the Son is God and that God the Holy Spirit is God so that all three are equally God. In other words the idea is that the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit are all equally omnipotent or all powerful, omniscient or all knowing, and eternal or having always existed. This is what the trinity is supposed to be and what actual trinitarians believe.

Alright now this may make sense to you and you may even agree with the so-called doctrine of the trinity. However just as it is important to say what the trinity is so that I can disprove it as a false doctrine it is also important to talk about

what the trinity is not. In short the trinity is not simply a reference to the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. Now you may be confused by this so consider the following passages.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you." (Matthew 28:19-20)

Then as Second Corinthians says:

> "The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with all of you." (2 Corinthians 13:14)

And lastly as the Book of Revelation says:

> "Grace and peace to you from Him who is and was and is to come, and from the seven Spirits before His throne, and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth." (Revelation 1:4-5)

Now at first you may mistakenly believe that these passages so-called prove the trinity because they are referring to the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit together in a single sentence. However this is not what the trinity is. Instead the so-called doctrine of the trinity says that there is one God that exists as the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit where all three are coequal with each other so that they are all equally God. This then means that so-called doctrine of the trinity is not spelled out or even implied in these passages because these passages do not say that the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit are all equal. Therefore you cannot claim that these passages refer to the trinity in the slightest.

That said really the only way you could claim that these passages refer to the trinity is if you read them with the presupposition that the tradition of the vast majority of Christians is correct. In other words in order to see the trinity in these passages you must first assume the trinity is true. Now I do not say this to imply you are dogmatic if you see the trinity in these passages. Instead I am only saying it because it is the truth. For example when I wrote my first commentary on the Book of Revelation that was a fraction of the length of the commentary you have been reading I actually mistakenly said Revelation 1:4-5 is a clear reference to the trinity. Yes I really said this and the reason why I am telling it to you because I know full well how presuppositionalism shapes how you see things. This is why I saw the trinity in those two verses because I was looking at those verses from the perspective of the trinity being true. Of course once I started to look at the Bible critically and without my previous presuppositions I came to the undeniable conclusion that the trinity is a false doctrine that cannot be supported with the Bible. Therefore if you mistakenly believe a reference to the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit is a reference to the trinity then just know that I made the same mistake you are now making so really you should not feel bad about it.

So if the trinity cannot be found in the previous three passages then what about the passage referring to the trinity in First John?

As First John says:

> "For there are three that testify in heaven: The Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. And there are three that testify on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood—and these three are in agreement." (1 John 5:7-8)

I mean as you can clearly see this passage clearly supports the so-called doctrine of the trinity. However there is a major problem here in that half of this passage is fake since it was not found in the original.

As First John actually says:

> "For there are three that testify: the Spirit, the water, and the blood—and these three are in agreement." (1 John 5:7-8)

This fake insertion in the first passage is what is called the Johannine Comma and it was originally a note in the margin of a Latin manuscript in the fourth century AD and was later inserted into the text in the Old Latin Bible in the fifth century AD. From there it entered into the Latin Vulgate manuscript tradition in the ninth century. Then it finally entered the Koine Greek manuscript tradition in the fifteenth century AD. Thus there is zero evidence for the Johannine Comma being genuine and as a result this passage is not evidence for the trinity at all.

If you want to argue against this then no doubt you firmly believe that the Bible is absolutely inerrant, or without error, and that the King James Version is perfect. Then since these two beliefs are so completely absurd and factually wrong I am not going to go into the matter here. Instead I go into how the Bible is not inerrant later on in my part called Various Insights. Then once you understand that the Bible is not without error in all that it says and teaches then you will no longer take issue with me pointing out an inserted error or rather forgery in First John. That said really since the rest of the passages I have to quote from to disprove the trinity so obviously and undeniably disprove the trinity all you need to do is finish reading this comment because once you see that the trinity is not supported at all elsewhere then you will come to the obvious conclusion that the Johannine Comma must then be fake that was inserted by someone centuries later who believed the trinity to be true.

Next since these passages are all the supposed references to the trinity and they do not actually refer to the trinity the only way we can now proceed is to go over indirect references to the trinity. The idea here is that if the trinity is true then the Bible must clearly show that the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit are equally omnipotent or all powerful, omniscient or all knowing, and eternal. On the other hand if the trinity is false then the Bible must clearly show that the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit are not equally omnipotent, omniscient and eternal. Now of course there is quite literally zero evidence for the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit being equally omnipotent, omniscient and eternal so therefore I am going to skip over the classic passages apologists use to support the so-called doctrine of the trinity for now and go over why the trinity is undeniably false first. My idea here is that if I first show you that the supposed members of the trinity are not coequal then you will no longer look at the classic so-called trinitarian passages apologists use through the presupposition of the trinity being true so that you will take my explanation seriously with regards to these so-called trinitarian passages rather than write me off as being biased and wrong.

Alright so in terms of disproving the trinity really there are many different passages to go over that fall into five categories. These five categories are that Jesus is not inherently omniscient, that Jesus is not inherently omnipotent, that Jesus is not equal with the Father or God, that Jesus is not eternal and that the Father or God controls the Holy Spirit. Once you read all the passages in each of these categories and understand what I say about them then you will come to the inescapable conclusion that the trinity is false. I say will here because in truth even the classic passages apologists use to so-called prove the trinity cannot stand up to the passages from these five categories. For example you will come to understand that the common translation of John 1:1 cannot be correct after reading what Jesus actually says elsewhere in the Gospel of John. Therefore I encourage you to pay careful attention to these five categories.

But before going into these five categories I would first like to briefly talk about who Jesus is if He is not literally God so that the subsequent passages make more sense. Now you may have heard Jesus referred to as Jesus Christ before where Christ is His title. So what does Christ mean exactly? Well you see Christ is a translation of the Greek word Christos (Χριστός) which means the Anointed One, the Messiah or the Christ. Essentially the idea of the Anointed One or the Christ is someone whom God has chosen or anointed, hence the Anointed One, to delegate His power and authority to so that the Christ may carry out the will of God on God's behalf. In other words think of it like a power of attorney agreement between God and the Christ where the Christ is the One whom God is giving the ability to execute His power and authority. This means that although Jesus as the Christ is not literally God so that the so-called doctrine of the trinity is false this does not mean that Jesus is a prophet. Instead this means that Jesus is the Christ so that God has given Him the ability to use the full power and authority of God. Now this may not seem like that big of a difference at least in terms of application but the fundamental difference is massive. If Jesus were to be literally God as the so-called doctrine of the trinity claims then this would mean that Jesus is self-sufficient so that He inherently has power in the sense that He does not receive power from anyone else. However on the other hand in reality with the so-called doctrine of the trinity being false Jesus being the Christ means that God has given Him the ability to use the power and authority of God in order to carry out the will of God. Now all this may seem a bit confusing still but do not worry about it because all the subsequent passages I quote will fully explain what this means as I disprove the so-called doctrine of the trinity as a false doctrine and respond to the passages apologists use to so-called prove the trinity.

First, Jesus is not inherently omniscient or all knowing. This means that God or the Father knows things that Jesus does not know and that in order for Jesus to know something the Father needs to tell Him.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. As it was in the days of Noah, so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man." (Matthew 24:36-37)

In this passage the "day or hour" (Matthew 24:36) that Jesus is referring to is the time of His return at the end of the age. Thus obviously even Jesus does not know when He is going to return. Instead "only the Father" (Matthew 24:36) or God knows when Jesus is to return. Therefore as a result of this fact Jesus clearly does not know something that God or the Father knows and as a result Jesus is not omniscient. Really there is not much to say here because the passage is very clear that Jesus does not even know when He is to return while the Father or God knows.

Now in response you may claim that this is only because Jesus was on earth and that He was not fully God on earth so as a result He was not omniscient while on earth and instead He is only omniscient while in heaven. However there are two problems with this view. The first is that for the trinity to be true Jesus needs to be coequal with God and eternal. So the issue with this potential response is that you must deny Jesus's eternal nature so that He ceased to be God while on earth in order to make this response logically work. This response would then mean that you are admitting the trinity is false. Then the second problem is that Jesus is never stated to be omniscient even in heaven on His own as the next passage demonstrates.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> "This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon come to pass." (Revelation 1:1)

As I said previously in my commentary on this passage God had to give the prophecies of the Book of Revelation to Jesus because Jesus did not know them before God told Him. In other words Jesus is not omniscient or all knowing because He was not aware of the events that are to occur before and after the end of the age until God told Him. Then in terms of the second problem referenced above in the Book of Revelation Jesus is in heaven and is seated at the right hand of God. This then means that you cannot claim that Jesus was not aware of the date of His return while on earth by saying that He was limited on earth since this passage from Revelation demonstrates that even in heaven Jesus is still dependent upon God or the Father for knowledge about the future. Therefore even when Jesus is in heaven and seated at the right hand of God He is still not omniscient so again you cannot say Jesus is omniscient or all knowing.

Therefore as a result of all these two passages Jesus is not inherently omniscient or all knowing because He has only received what knowledge He has of the future from God or the Father. Then because of this fact the trinity is a false doctrine since in order for the false doctrine of the trinity to be true the Father and Jesus need to be coequal in terms of omniscience so that they are both equally all knowing while in reality Jesus is dependent upon the Father or God for His knowledge about the future.

So what does all this mean? Well really in truth these two passages are all I need to show that the trinity is an undeniably false doctrine. This is because in order for the trinity to be true all three members of the trinity need to be coequal so that they are equally omnipotent, omniscient and eternal. However as I just demonstrated Jesus is clearly not omniscient when compared to God or the Father because He literally says that "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father." (Matthew 24:36) Therefore the false doctrine of the trinity is well false and nothing further needs to be said. That said I am of course going to continue so that you have zero doubts about the false doctrine of the trinity being false. Really I am just pointing out how easy it is to poke holes in the false doctrine of trinity.

Second, Jesus is not inherently omnipotent or all powerful. This means that God or the Father is more powerful than Jesus so that Jesus is not powerful on His own and instead He is only powerful because of the power that God has granted Him.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Then Jesus came to them and said, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me.'" (Matthew 28:18)

Jesus says that "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to" (Matthew 28:18) Him at the end of the Gospel of Matthew after His resurrection. Thus the idea here is that through His resurrection from the dead God has declared Jesus to be the Christ and thus has given "All authority in heaven and on earth" (Matthew 28:18) to Him. Now this relates to the trinity being false because this verse means that Jesus did not have "All authority in heaven and on earth" (Matthew 28:18) before His resurrection and instead He only received this authority from God after God raised Him from the dead. Then it is also important to reiterate that it was obviously God who gave His power and authority to Jesus since God is "the Alpha and the Omega" (Revelation 1:8) and "the Almighty." (Revelation 1:8)

Next as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Jesus got into a boat, crossed over, and came to His own town. Just then some men brought to Him a paralytic lying on a mat. When Jesus saw their faith, He said to the paralytic, 'Take courage, son; your sins are forgiven.'
>
> On seeing this, some of the scribes said to themselves, 'This man is blaspheming!'
>
> But Jesus knew what they were thinking and said, 'Why do you harbor evil in your hearts? Which is easier: to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Get up and walk?' But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...' Then He said to the paralytic, 'Get up, pick up your mat, and go home.' And the man got up and went home.
>
> When the crowds saw this, they were filled with awe and glorified God, who had given such authority to men." (Matthew 9:1-8)

First off it is important to point out that many of those who hold to the false doctrine of the trinity use Jesus forgiving sins as so-called evidence that Jesus is actually God since according to their view only God can directly forgive sins. However this line of reasoning is just plain wrong. This is because Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has given the ability to use His power and authority so that His will can be fulfilled. Again this is what Jesus being the Christ means. Think about it like a power of attorney where God has given Jesus His authority to forgive sins. Therefore Jesus can forgive sins because He is acting on behalf of God. Now you may wish to dispute this but the above passage directly says what I am saying.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "When the crowds saw this, they were filled with awe and glorified God, who had given such authority to men." (Matthew 9:8)

The idea here is that after Jesus healed the paralytic the crowd recognized that God has clearly given Him the authority to forgive sins since only someone who has been given power by God could heal a paralytic and if Jesus has been given power from God then He must also be able to forgive sins as well. You cannot dispute this fact because the Gospel of Matthew directly says "When the crowds saw this, they were filled with awe and glorified God, who had given such authority to men." (Matthew 9:8) Once again the key part here is that God "had given such authority to men." (Matthew 9:8)

So what does this then mean? Well this means that Jesus does not have the innate ability or authority to forgive sins in the sense that He uses His own authority to forgive sins. Instead Jesus can forgive sins because as the Christ God has given Jesus His own power and authority to use in order to carry out His will. Therefore because of this fact Jesus is not omnipotent or all powerful because He only possesses the authority that God has given Him.

Next as Jesus says in the Gospel of John:

> "The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in His hands." (John 3:35)

In the previous passage you may have attempted to rationalize the trinity in your mind by saying that the passage is talking about the so-called godhead of the trinity giving authority to Jesus as a member of the trinity. However this passage demonstrates that this attempt to rationalize the previous passage is objectively wrong. This is because in this passages Jesus says that "The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in His hands" (John 3:35) which means that it is not the so-called godhead of the trinity that is giving Jesus His authority and instead the Father or God is the One giving Jesus His authority. Therefore the idea here is that the Father or God inherently has more power and authority than Jesus because once again He is the One giving Jesus His power and authority. This would then of course mean that Jesus is not equal in authority to the Father or God and because of this fact the trinity is false.

Next as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

> "For as the Father has life in Himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in Himself. And He has given Him authority to execute judgment, because He is the Son of Man." (John 5:26-27)

In this passage the first point of note is that God is the source of all life while Jesus is dependent upon the Father for His own life. This once again means that the Father is superior to the Son or Jesus since the only reason why Jesus has life is because the Father or God "has granted the Son to have life in Himself." (John 5:26) Then in terms of the next verse it obviously says that the Father or God has given Jesus "authority to execute judgment, because He is the Son of Man. (John 5:27) This is what Jesus being the Christ means. As I said before the whole idea behind the Christ is that the Christ is the One whom God has given His "authority to execute judgment" (John 5:27) so that the Christ can carry out the will of God on God's behalf. This of course means that Jesus as the Christ and the Son of Man is dependent upon God for His "authority to execute judgment" (John 5:27) and because of this Jesus is not equal to God.

Now you still may attempt to hold onto the false doctrine of the trinity and if you do then let me ask you how can God the Father give power to Jesus if Jesus is supposedly literally God so that He is coequal with God the Father and has been for all time? I mean if the trinity is true then this passage is complete and utter nonsense. Now you could attempt to resolve the issue by claiming that this verse is talking about the so-called trinitarian godhead but the issue is that this verse does not say this at all and instead it is talking about the Father as God since it is the Father who "has granted the Son to have life in Himself" (John 5:26) and it is the Father who "has given" (John 5:27) the Son "authority to execute judgment" (John 5:27) as I have said. Therefore just as I said before appealing to the so-called trinitarian godhead for this passages does not negate what I am saying.

Next as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

> "My sheep listen to My voice; I know them, and they follow Me. I give them eternal life, and they will never perish. No one can snatch them out of My hand. My Father who has given them to Me is greater than all. No one can snatch them out of My Father's hand." (John 10:27-29)

In this passage Jesus says that no one can snatch His sheep out of His hand because His "Father who has given them to" (John 20:29) Him "is greater than all." (John 10:29) Once again the idea here is that Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has given His power and authority to because Jesus is saying that because God is God and "greater than all" (John 10:29) then this means that whatever or whomever God gives to Jesus can never be taken away from Him by anyone else. Therefore once again it is clear that Jesus is not inherently powerful on His own and instead He is only powerful because God has given Him His power and authority.

Now you may attempt to dispute this by referencing Jesus saying "I give them eternal life, and they will never perish." (John 10:27) However all you would be doing is demonstrating that you do not understand anything you have read so far. As I have said Jesus is the Christ. This means that God has given Jesus His power and authority to use. In other words Jesus is saying that He gives "them eternal life" (John 10:27) because He is carrying out the will of God as the Christ. This is why just after this verse Jesus says "My Father who has given them to Me is greater than all." (John 10:28) The idea here is that since the Father or God "is greater than all" (John 10:28) this then means that no one should have anything to worry about after they place their faith in Jesus because the Father or God is fully behind Him.

Next as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

> "Peace I leave with you; My peace I give to you. I do not give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled; do not be afraid. You heard Me say, 'I am going away, and I am coming back to you.' If you loved Me, you would rejoice that I am going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it happens, so that when it does happen, you will believe." (John 14:27-29)

In the previous passages Jesus only heavily implied that the Father or God is greater than Him. However in this passage passage Jesus directly and unambiguously says "the Father is greater than I." (John 14:28) Therefore obviously the Father or God is greater than Jesus as I have said. This fact means that Jesus is not God and is not inherently all powerful like God is which then once again means that the false doctrine of the trinity is false. Really it is that simple and there is nothing more to say since Jesus is directly saying "the Father is greater than I." (John 14:28) Although I would just like to once again point out that Jesus is talking about the Father here and not the so-called trinitarian godhead. Therefore you cannot dispute this passage by saying that Jesus is talking about the so-called godhead and not the Father or God.

Next as Paul wrote in First Corinthians:

> "So about eating food sacrificed to idols: We know that an idol is nothing at all in the world, and that there is no God but one. For even if there are so-called gods, whether in heaven or on earth (as there are many so-called gods and lords), yet for us there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we exist. And there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we exist." (1 Corinthians 8:4-6)

The key part in this passage is that Paul says "there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we exist." (1 Corinthians 8:6) The idea here is that the Father is the source of all things because He created the universe and we were created for the Father. Then it is also important to point out that Paul is saying the Father is the one God by saying "one God, the Father" (1 Corinthians 8:6) which then means that Paul did not believe that Jesus was God.

But what about the sentence at the end of the passage? Well here Paul says that "there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we exist." (1 Corinthians 8:6) The idea here is that the Father or God created the universe through Jesus and that we also exist through Jesus. The key part as to why this is true is that Paul uses the word ex (ἐξ) which means from or from out of to describe how "all things came" (1 Corinthians 8:6) from or from out of the Father while he uses the word dia (διά) which means through or by the instrumentality of to describe how "all things came" (1 Corinthians 8:6) through or by the instrumentality of Jesus.

Thus what Paul is saying here is that he believes Jesus was created by the "one God, the Father," (1 Corinthians 8:6) before He created the universe and that after God created Jesus He created the universe and us through Jesus. Now this may sound a bit confusing and you may be wondering why Paul would write such a thing so allow me to explain.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> "Then God said, 'Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness, to rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, and over all the earth itself and every creature that crawls upon it.'
>
> So God created man in His own image;
> in the image of God He created him;
> male and female He created them." (Genesis 1:26-27)

In this passage from Genesis the plural words Us and Our are used which implies that God is not alone and that there is someone else or others there with Him. This is probably why Paul references all things including us being created by God through Jesus since Paul saw the Us as being the "one God, the Father," (1 Corinthians 8:6) and the "one Lord, Jesus Christ," (1 Corinthians 8:6) who were there before God created the universe. Now you still may be confused so allow me to explain. You see Paul's view of Christ or Jesus was that of a new Adam.

As Paul wrote:

> "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: Christ the firstfruits; then at His coming, those who belong to Him." (1 Corinthians 15:20-23)

Thus Paul's idea is that because Adam was disobedient and unfaithful to God so death entered the world after God cursed it. Then on the other hand due to Jesus's obedience and faithfulness to God life would be allowed to enter the world starting with Jesus's resurrection from the dead. However a theological problem arises due to the theology of Paul and other Christians in the first century AD. You see Paul and others believed in divine determinism or the idea that God has predetermined everything from the foundation of the world itself. This means that God has created some people to sin against Him and has created others to be faithful to Him.

As Paul wrote:

> "Not only that, but Rebecca's children were conceived by one man, our father Isaac. Yet before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad, in order that God's plan of election might stand, not by works but by Him who calls, she was told, 'The older will serve the younger.' So it is written: 'Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.'
>
> What then shall we say? Is God unjust? Certainly not! For He says to Moses:
>
> 'I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion.'
>
> So then, it does not depend on man's desire or effort, but on God's mercy. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh: 'I raised you up for this very purpose, that I might display My power in you, and that My name might be proclaimed in all the earth.' Therefore God has mercy on whom He wants to have mercy, and He hardens whom He wants to harden.
>
> One of you will say to me, 'Then why does God still find fault? For who can resist His will?' But who are you, O man, to talk back to God? Shall what is formed say to Him who formed it, 'Why did You make me like this?' Does not the potter have the right to make from the same lump of clay one vessel for special occasions and another for common use?
>
> What if God, intending to show His wrath and make His power known, bore with great patience the vessels of His wrath, prepared for destruction?" (Romans 9:10-22)

Thus you can clearly see that Paul believes that it is God who "hardens whom He wants to harden" (Romans 9:18) so that everyone who sins against God only does so because God has determined from the foundation of the world itself that they will sin against Him. Now I realize this is another rather controversial subject that needs another long comment to fully defend and address so I am not going to talk about it more here. Instead I discuss the concept of divine determinism and the idea that God has predetermined everything from when He created the universe itself in my commentary on Revelation 13. Therefore I would just like you to accept what Paul is saying as true for now to make it easier.

Alright so the problem arises in the sense that if God has determined everything from the foundation of the world itself then this would mean that God created Adam and Eve knowing that they would in fact sin against Him. Then because of the fact that God cursed the world itself after Adam and Eve sinned by rebelling against Him this would mean that God created the world with the sole purpose of being cursed by God from the very beginning. Thus you can see the problem here. So the way to resolve this problem is to say that God's chosen method to deliver salvation to the world, the Christ, was not someone who was created by God after the world and Adam and Eve were created. Thus Paul's idea is that Jesus, the Christ, was created by God before God created the universe so that although God predetermined that Adam and Eve would be disobedient He also predetermined before creating Adam and Eve that the world would be given salvation by being created through Jesus so that Jesus is at the very center of God's plan for creation and us. In other words by Jesus existing before the universe was created His perfect obedience to God existed and preceded rather than superseded Adam's disobedience so that God did not create the world and us to die through Adam and instead God created the world and us to live through Jesus once the appointed time came for Jesus to enter the world to provide the salvation that God planned from the foundation of the world itself.

Thus this is why Paul wrote that "there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we exist." (1 Corinthians 8:6) Now this still might be a bit confusing for you but do not worry because I talk more about this later on. Really I just want you to be aware that the whole idea of Jesus existing before the world was created comes from the need to say that God created His plan for salvation for humanity before Adam and Eve rebelled against Him.

But in terms of the false doctrine of the trinity obviously the original passage from First Corinthians shows that "there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we exist" (1 Corinthians 8:6) which means that Jesus is not equal in power to God or the Father which then once again means that the trinity is false.

Next as Paul also wrote in First Corinthians:

> "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: Christ the firstfruits; then at His coming, those who belong to Him.
>
> Then the end will come, when He hands over the kingdom to God the Father after He has destroyed all dominion, authority, and power. For He must reign until He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death. For 'God has put everything under His feet.' Now when it says that everything has been put under Him, this clearly does not include the One who put everything under Him. And when all things have been subjected to Him, then the Son Himself will be made subject to Him who put all things under Him, so that God may be all in all." (1 Corinthians 15:20-28)

The main point of relevance in this passage is that Paul is saying that although God has given Jesus the ability to exercise His power and authority so that Jesus can "put all His enemies under His feet" (1 Corinthians 15:25) this still does not mean that Jesus is equal with God or the Father. This is because Paul also says that "when it says that everything has been put under Him, this clearly does not include the One who put everything under Him." (1 Corinthians 15:27) Now you may claim that this just means that God or the Father is not under Jesus so that they could still be equal in power and the trinity could still be true. However in the next verse Paul clarifies his position by saying that "when all things have been subjected to Him, then the Son Himself will be made subject to Him who put all things under Him, so that God may be all in all." (1 Corinthians 15:28) In other words Paul is saying that the Son or Jesus is subject to the Father which of course means that Jesus is not equal in terms of power with the Father or God. Really there is not much to say here since Paul's position could not be more clear. So therefore this passage clearly demonstrates that the trinity is a false doctrine.

Next as Paul wrote in Philippians:

> "Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus:
>
> Who, existing in the form of God,
> did not consider equality with God
> something to be grasped,
> but emptied Himself,
> taking the form of a servant,
> being made in human likeness.
> And being found in appearance as a man,
> He humbled Himself
> and became obedient to death—
> even death on a cross.
>
> Therefore God exalted Him to the highest place
> and gave Him the name above all names,
> that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow,
> in heaven and on earth and under the earth,
> and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord,
> to the glory of God the Father." (Philippians 2:5-11)

Now ironically enough many if not most apologists who try to support the now obviously false doctrine of the trinity actually use this passage to support their false claims despite this passage doing the exact opposite. Their idea is that since Paul says Jesus was "existing in the form of God" (Philippians 2:6) that therefore Paul must have believed that Jesus was and is literally God. However the problem here is that immediately after this phrase Paul clarifies what He is talking about by saying that Jesus "did not consider equality with God something to be grasped" (Philippians 2:6) which means that Jesus was not equal to God before coming to the earth. Now you may dispute this fact but later on Paul says that "God exalted Him to the highest place and gave Him the name above all names" (Philippians 2:9) after Jesus's death and resurrection which means that Jesus was once again not equal to God before or after His resurrection because it is God or the Father who exalted Jesus just as Paul says.

Alright so if this is true then what does Paul mean by "existing in the form of God" (Philippians 2:6) in this passage? Well really this is not easy to understand in the sense that the word translated as God here does not always mean God and instead it can mean god, a deity or the divine depending on how it is used. Therefore you need to understand the context around the word to understand what the author is talking about. So what is Paul's intended meaning here? Really all Paul is saying is that Jesus was a divine being that was great but not equal to God before He came to earth and that because of His obedience on earth "God exalted Him to the highest place and gave Him the name above all names," (Philippians 2:9) or the title of Christ all so "that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father." (Philippians 2:10-11) Thus Paul is clearly not saying that Jesus is literally God and there is no possible way you could understand him to mean such a thing unless you read the passage with the presupposition that the trinity is true.

Therefore as a result of all these passages Jesus is not inherently omnipotent or all powerful because He has only received His power and authority from God or the Father. Then because of this fact the trinity is a false doctrine since in order for the false doctrine of the trinity to be true the Father and Jesus need to be coequal in terms of omnipotence so that they are both equally all powerful while in reality Jesus is dependent upon the Father or God for His power and authority.

Third, Jesus is not equal with God or the Father. This means that Jesus is not stated to be equal to God and that instead Jesus even considers the Father to be His God.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

> "As Jesus started on His way, a man ran up and knelt before Him. 'Good Teacher,' he asked, 'what must I do to inherit eternal life?'
>
> 'Why do you call Me good?' Jesus replied. 'No one is good except God alone.'" (Mark 10:17-18)

In this passage clearly Jesus does not consider Himself to be equal to God because He says that "No one is good except God alone." (Mark 10:18) Now if you still hold to the false doctrine of the trinity then no doubt you will take issue with what I am saying here. However instead of defending my explanation here the subsequent passages in this category demonstrate that Jesus actually considers the Father to be His God and that He does not see Himself as being equal to God.

Next as the Gospel of Mark also says:

> "Jesus replied, 'This is the most important: 'Hear O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is One.'" (Mark 12:29)

Although this passage does not really relate to the topic at hand of the lack of equality between God and Jesus it is still important to point out that Jesus believes that God is One and not three.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

> "I will not speak with you much longer, for the prince of this world is coming, and he has no claim on Me. But I do exactly what the Father has commanded Me, so that the world may know that I love the Father.
>
> Get up! Let us go on from here." (John 14:30-31)

In case you are unaware in this passage "the prince of this world" (John 14:30) refers to Satan who functions as the accuser. This is why Jesus says that Satan "has no claim on Me" (John 14:30) because due to Jesus's perfect obedience to the will of God there is nothing Satan can use to accuse Jesus of before God or the Father.

Now in terms of the topic at hand in this passage Jesus clearly says "I do exactly what the Father has commanded Me" (John 14:31) which means that Jesus considers the Father to be greater than Himself. I mean if you want to claim that the Father and Jesus are equal as the false doctrine of the trinity claims then how does the Father commanding or ordering Jesus to do something make sense? Then keep in mind that this is the Father we are talking about here and not the so-called trinitarian godhead so you cannot attempt to reconcile the trinity by claiming Jesus is talking about being obedient to the so-called trinitarian godhead. Therefore Jesus is not equal with the Father or God.

Next as the Gospel of John also says:

> "When Jesus had spoken these things, He lifted up His eyes to heaven and said, 'Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son may glorify You. For You granted Him authority over all people, so that He may give eternal life to all those You have given Him. Now this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom You have sent. I have glorified You on earth by accomplishing the work You gave Me to do. And now, Father, glorify Me in Your presence with the glory I had with You before the world existed.'" (John 17:1-5)

To start off this passage overlaps a bit with the previous category but I thought it best to go over both parts here. The first point of note is that Jesus says that the Father has "granted Him authority over all people" (John 17:2) which means that Jesus does not have authority on His own and that instead He only has authority because God has given Him His authority. Then the second point of note is that Jesus considers the Father to be "the only true God" (John 17:3) which means that Jesus is directly saying the trinity is false. Now you may wish to dispute this but I would like to reiterate the fact that Jesus is addressing the Father in this passage which means that He is not addressing the so-called trinitarian godhead. Thus again Jesus considers the Father to be "the only true God" (John 17:3) as I just said. Then the last point of note is that Jesus asks the Father "glorify Me in Your presence with the glory I had with You before the world existed." (John 17:5) Now I say this is significant because it relates back to the idea of Paul that Jesus is a divine being that God created before He created our universe. It is also important to bring this up because people oftentimes mistakenly believe that if Jesus was with God before the universe was created then this therefore means that Jesus is literally God. However all this means instead is that Jesus was created by God as a great divine being before He created the universe. Once again Jesus clearly does not consider Himself to be equal with God.

Next as the Gospel of John also says:

> "'Do not cling to Me,' Jesus said, 'for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go and tell My brothers, 'I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God.'"" (John 20:17)

In this passage Jesus obviously considers the Father to be His God because He calls Him "My God" (John 20:17) here. Now you may attempt to dispute this but Jesus actually says "I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God" (John 20:17) which means that Jesus considers His God and our God to be the same God. Thus this definitely demonstrates that Jesus considers the Father to be His God which means that Jesus does not consider Himself to be equal with God.

Next as Paul wrote in First Corinthians:

> "But I want you to understand that the head of every man is Christ, and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God." (1 Corinthians 11:3)

Since Paul says that "the head of Christ is God" (1 Corinthians 11:3) this clearly means that Paul did not believe that Jesus is equal to God or the Father. Therefore Paul did not believe in the trinity.

Next as Paul wrote in Romans:

> "Now may the God who gives endurance and encouragement grant you harmony with one another in Christ Jesus, so that with one mind and one voice you may glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Romans 15:5-6)

In this passage Paul refers to God as "the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Romans 15:6) Therefore it is once again clear that Paul did not believe that Jesus was equal with God or the Father in anyway since he is saying that the Father is Jesus's God.

Next as the author of First Timothy wrote:

> "For there is one God, and there is one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself as a ransom for all—the testimony that was given at just the right time." (1 Timothy 2:5)

In this passage the author is saying that "there is one God, and there is one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus," (1 Timothy 2:5) which means that they did not consider Jesus to be equal to God in any way because otherwise they would have referred to Jesus as God instead of as the "mediator between God and men" (1 Timothy 2:5) as they do in this passage. Therefore once again there is "one God" (1 Timothy 2:5) over all and Jesus is not equal with God.

Next as the author of Ephesians wrote:

> "There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called to one hope when you were called; one Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all." (Ephesians 4:4-6)

As the author of this passages states there is "one God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all." (Ephesians 4:6) Therefore this obviously means that only the Father or God alone is God. Then because of this Jesus is not God and He is not equal to the Father or God once again.

Next as the Book of Revelation says:

> "The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again leave it. Upon him I will write the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God (the new Jerusalem that comes down out of heaven from My God), and My new name." (Revelation 3:12)

In this passage Jesus calls God His God by saying "My God" (Revelation 3:12) in this passage. Therefore this obviously means that Jesus does not consider Himself to be equal to God and He especially does not view Himself to be God. Again this is because by saying "My God" (Revelation 3:12) in this passage Jesus is recognizing that God or His Father is so superior to Him that God is His God. Really there is not much to say here because Jesus could not be more clear that He does not consider Himself to be equal to God.

However there is one thing I would like to add with respect to how those who believe in the false doctrine of the trinity should see this passage. You see I believe the single verse in this passage will be one of it not the main verses that Jesus speaks to trinitarians to demonstrate that their belief is completely wrong. The idea here is that Jesus will ask trinitarians why He said "Upon him I will write the name of My God" (Revelation 3:12) in Revelation if He is literally God. In other words how can Jesus be God if He calls God His God? Obviously He cannot be. Then yes I explain John 1:1-3 and the rest of the so-called evidence you are no doubt desperately clinging to right now if you are still a trinitarian later so do not think you will be able to hide behind your ignorance of the Scriptures when Jesus rebukes your false belief in the trinity.

Therefore as a result of all these passages Jesus is not equal with God because He even directly calls God or the Father His God and Father. Then because of this fact the trinity is a false doctrine since in order for the false doctrine of the trinity to be true the Father and Jesus need to be coequal so that they are both equal in status while in reality Jesus understands God or the Father to be His God.

Fourth, Jesus is not eternal. This means that Jesus has not always existed and that instead not only did God create Him before the universe but that He actually died once so that He could only return to life through being resurrected by God or the Father.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "From that time on Jesus began to show His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things at the hands of the elders, chief priests, and scribes, and that He must be killed and on the third day be raised to life." (Matthew 16:21)

The idea behind this passage is that Jesus says "that He must be killed and on the third day be raised to life." (Matthew 16:21) This directly and undeniable means that Jesus is not eternal. The idea here is that if Jesus was eternal like God is then He would not be able to die because God cannot die while on the other hand Jesus died and was resurrected to life on the third day. Then it is also important to point out that it was God who resurrected Jesus.

Now you may dispute this by claiming that Jesus was and is fully human and fully God as trinitarians do so that you claim only Jesus's human nature died and was resurrected by God which would allow the fully God part of Jesus to be eternal in nature. This would then supposedly allow Jesus to "be killed and on the third day be raised to life" (Matthew 16:21) while also not violating the eternal attribute of Jesus that the false doctrine of the trinity claims. Sounds good right? Well no. You see if you want to claim that Jesus has two natures and that only one died and was resurrected so that His eternal nature from being God did not die then this means that you are actually denying the death and resurrection of Jesus. This is because if you want to say Jesus is fully human and fully God then if both aspects did not fully die then Jesus did not fully die. In other words by being a trinitarian and claiming that Jesus is God or God the Son you are saying He never actually died on the cross because God by definition cannot die. Then of course if Jesus did not die on the cross then He could not have been raised to life.

This then actually leads into the greatest question surrounding the false doctrine of the trinity. Are people who believe in the false doctrine of the trinity Christians and most importantly do they have salvation? Now you may think this is a silly question but if someone is a trinitarian then they are actually denying the death and resurrection of Jesus even if they are unaware of their denial. Then since believing in the death and resurrection of Jesus is a key component of salvation due to the idea that Jesus died for the forgiveness of our sins then this could mean that those who hold to the false doctrine of the trinity might not have their sins forgiven. But what do I think? Well in truth I am not sure and really only God knows. Although if I had to take a position I would probably say it depends upon how strongly someone believes in the false doctrine of the trinity. For instance I would say the majority of Christians who say they believe in the trinity do not actually believe in the trinity when you examine their actual beliefs. That said I talk more about this later towards the end of this comment so you will read what I have to say there. Really I am just trying to get you to think about why talking about the false doctrine of the trinity is so important.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

> "'Do not cling to Me,' Jesus said, 'for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go and tell My brothers, 'I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God.'"" (John 20:17)

The key point of importance in this passage is that Jesus calls His God "My Father and your Father" (John 20:17) which means that Jesus views God as His Father. This relates to Jesus not being eternal like God is because a son is dependent upon his father for his existence. In other words since Jesus views God as His Father this means that Jesus believes that the Father created Him just as we see fathers coming before sons today. Thus as a result Jesus is saying that He is not eternal like God is in this passage.

Now you may doubt this view so I would like to point out that Jesus says "My Father and your Father, to My God and your God." (John 20:17) This means that Jesus believes His God is our God and His Father is our Father. The significance of this is that just as Jesus sees God being our creator, or Father, Jesus also sees God as being His creator, or Father. In other words Jesus is saying He is more similar to us than God because we were both created by God and thus have Him as our Father. As a result of this Jesus is not eternal.

And an aside this then leads to the central topic that was being discussed at the First Council of Nicaea in 325 AD. Essentially the issue of if Jesus was a god or God came down to if Jesus was created by God or begotten of God. Being begotten of God just means being born of God so that Jesus originated from God Himself. The idea is that if Jesus was born from God then He would have the same essence as God and thus be fully God so that He would be equal with God while on the other hand if He was created by God then He would not have the same essence as God and as a result He would a god instead of God. Makes sense right? Then as a result Jesus must be God because He was born of God? Well no this entire line of reasoning is just nonsensical. For instance if a father has a child then the child is not their own father or the same as their father. For instance if I said you are your father you would look at me like I am crazy. Thus the idea here is that just because Jesus was born from God it does not follow that Jesus is God. Furthermore by saying that Jesus was born from God you are directly saying that there was a time when Jesus was not born yet so that only the Father or God existed. This would of course directly contradict the coeternal aspect of the trinity.

Also I really just find the whole debate at the First Council of Nicaea over if Jesus was born from God or created by God to be completely meaningless because being born from God and being created by God mean the same thing. This may seem strange to you but you need to understand that God is omnipotent and omniscient. In other words God is all powerful and all knowing so that nothing is beyond His power and knowledge.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

Therefore this means that everything that exists only exists due to the will of God. Then since God knows everything this then means that God even knows what you are going to do tomorrow. Thus my point is that if you really think about it everything is part of God since not only has everything come from God but everything that has happened since the foundation of the world has happened in perfect accordance with God's set plan. This is the view that Paul and the other authors of the New Testament had and why Paul believed that Jesus was created or born from God before the universe was created. Like I said the idea is that by creating Jesus first before everything else God created His plan for salvation before He created Adam and Eve to rebel against Him.

To help you understand what all this means think of our universe like a movie that a director or God has created where the main character is Jesus. The idea here is that sure Jesus is the main character that the director or God has created to push the story to the conclusion God has preset but Jesus is still just a character in the story that is acting out the script of the director or rather the will of God. This means that we are all the same as Jesus in the sense that just as God is Jesus's Father so too is God our Father.

As Jesus says:

> "I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God." (John 20:17)

Therefore like I just said the Father is our Father just as much as He is Jesus's Father. The only real difference between Jesus and us is that God created Jesus as the main character or the Christ so that His will can be fulfilled. This is why I consider the distinction between Jesus being born from God and being created by God to be completely pointless debate because as you can see they are in reality identical so that they mean the same thing.

Next as Jesus says in the Gospel of John:

> "For as the Father has life in Himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in Himself. And He has given Him authority to execute judgment, because He is the Son of Man." (John 5:26-27)

If you took issue with the previous two passages and with what I said concerning them then in this passage Jesus directly says that "as the Father has life in Himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in Himself." (John 5:26) This means that Jesus does not inherently have life in Himself, meaning immortality, and that instead the only reason why Jesus has life in Himself is because He has been granted life, or immortality, from the Father or God. If you want to dispute this then know that Jesus directly says that the Father "has granted the Son to have life in Himself." (John 5:26) Therefore this means that the Father has given Jesus His life so that Jesus is dependent upon the Father for His life. As a result of this fact Jesus is not eternal and only God alone is eternal in nature. You cannot dispute this fact.

Next as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

> "Just as the living Father sent Me and I live because of the Father, so also the one who feeds on Me will live because of Me." (John 6:57)

In case the previous passage was not clear enough in this passage Jesus says "I live because of the Father" (John 6:57) which unambiguously demonstrates that Jesus is dependent upon the Father or God for life. This would then mean that once again Jesus is not eternal and that only God alone is eternal.

Therefore as a result of all these passages Jesus is not eternal because only God or the Father alone is eternal. Then because of this fact the trinity is a false doctrine since in order for the false doctrine of the trinity to be true the Father and Jesus need to be equally eternal so that they have both always existed while in reality Jesus is dependent upon the Father for His life since Jesus was created by God.

Fifth, God controls the Holy Spirit. This means that the Holy Spirit is not a person and instead the Holy Spirit is representative of the power and influence of God over everything.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "As soon as Jesus was baptized, He went up out of the water. Suddenly the heavens were opened, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and resting on Him. And a voice from heaven said, 'This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased!'" (Matthew 3:16-17)

The whole idea behind the baptism narrative before the start of Jesus's ministry in the gospels is that this is when He was given power by God to perform miracles in order to demonstrate to people that He is the Christ or the Anointed One whom God has given His power and authority to. Thus when this passage says that Jesus "saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and resting on Him" (Matthew 3:16) it is saying that God gave His power and authority to Jesus.

Now this might not make much sense to you because you are used to seeing the Spirit of God or the Holy Spirit as a person so let me ask you a question. If the Holy Spirit is a person then why would this passage say that the Spirit of God rested upon Jesus? I mean saying a person rested upon Jesus during His baptism makes little sense however if you view the Holy Spirit as representative of the power and influence of God then the imagery of the Spirit of God resting upon Jesus makes perfect sense.

Furthermore you need to understand that the word translated as spirit in the Spirit of God in this passage is Pneuma (Πνεῦμα) which is best viewed as wind, breath or spirit. Next you need to also understand that the ancient Israelites believed that life began when a person took in their first breath. They took this view from the Book of Genesis where God formed Adam from the dust of the earth and breathed the breath of life into him.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> "Then the LORD God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed the breath of life into his nostrils, and the man became a living being." (Genesis 2:7)

Thus the ancient Israelites believed that breathing was what made someone a living being as this verse demonstrates. In other words they saw a person's breath as their life force.

Now this relates to the Spirit of God in the sense that just as our breath is representative of our life force so too is the Spirit or rather Breath of God representative of God's life force. This then means that when the Gospel of Matthew says that Jesus "saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and resting on Him" (Matthew 3:16) it is saying that God's life force descended from heaven to rest upon Jesus all so that God could anoint Jesus as the Christ or His Anointed One by filling Jesus with His life force or the Spirit of God.

Next a person's life force was seen as their ability to change and control things or rather as their power over the world because only the living can have power. So the idea is that by saying the Spirit of God rested upon Jesus the Gospel of Matthew is saying God filled Jesus with His life force or power so that Jesus could carry out His will. Therefore the Spirit of God or the Holy Spirit is clearly representative of the power and influence of God over the world.

Next as the Book of Acts says:

> "Jesus replied, 'It is not for you to know times or seasons that the Father has fixed by His own authority. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you, and you will be My witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.'" (Acts 1:7-8)

In this passage Jesus says that His disciples "will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon" (Acts 1:8) them. This means that once again the Holy Spirit is not a person and instead the Holy Spirit is representative of the power and influence of God. I mean try to read and understand this passage with the Holy Spirit being a person and it does not make any sense. On the other hand read it with the understanding that the Holy Spirit is the power and influence of God over the world then it makes perfect sense.

Next as the Book of Acts also says:

> "You stiff-necked people with uncircumcised hearts and ears! You always resist the Holy Spirit, just as your fathers did. Which of the prophets did your fathers fail to persecute? They even killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One. And now you are His betrayers and murderers— you who received the law ordained by angels, yet have not kept it." (Acts 7:51-53)

First off in this passage Stephan is addressing the high priests of the Sanhedrin before he is stoned to death. Then in terms of the Holy Spirit Stephan is telling them that they have always resisted the power and influence of God. The idea here is that those whom God has chosen to carry out His will like the prophets and the Righteous One, or Jesus, are filled with the power and influence of God because they are carrying out the will of God. On the other hand those who work against God by persecuting the prophets that God is working through are resisting the power and influence of God or the Holy Spirit. If you want to dispute this then try to read this passage with the Holy Spirit being a person and it makes little sense just like the previous passages.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

> "But the Advocate, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have told you." (John 14:26)

In this passage the word translated as Advocate can also mean Helper, Counselor or Intercessor. Thus the general idea here is that the Holy Spirit is how God helps the faithful and intercedes in earthly affairs as He uses His power. Next you may mistakenly believe that the Holy Spirit is a person based on the word whom in this verse. However the word translated as whom is ho (ὃ) which is almost always translated as that, which or what and it is rarely translated as who or whom. Therefore you cannot claim that the Holy Spirit is definitely a person because of this reason because in actuality the Holy Spirit is referred to more as an object in this sentence that depends upon the Father. This is why the verse says "the Father will send in My name" (John 14:26) because the Holy Spirit is not a person with their own will and instead the Holy Spirit is subject to the Father or God. This point is rather important because even if you dispute everything I am saying about the Holy Spirit not being a person then you still must contend with the fact that the Father is the One in full control of the Holy Spirit here because He is the One sending the Holy Spirit in this passage.

Next as the Gospel of John also says:

> "When the Advocate comes, whom I will send to you from the Father—the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father—He will testify about Me." (John 15:26)

First off the word translated as who in this passage is the same word as before so therefore it is best understood as that or which. Then the word translated as He is ekeinos (ἐκεῖνος) which is a demonstrative pronoun and not a personal pronoun that is best understood as that one or that thing and translated as that in this verse. Therefore once again you should not see the Holy Spirit as being a person due to the translation choice.

Next my purpose in referencing this passage is that Jesus says He "will send to you from the Father—the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father" (John 15:26) in this verse. The idea here is that the Father is giving Jesus the Holy Spirit to use and command and that the Holy Spirit comes from the Father so that the Holy Spirit is dependent upon the Father. In other words Jesus is saying that once He ascends into heaven so that He is seated at the right hand of God that He will be given the power of God, or the Holy Spirit, that "proceeds from the Father" (John 15:26) and that He will use the Holy Spirit to guide Christians. Now you may believe I am reading too far into this so consider the next passage.

As the Gospel of John also says:

> "But I tell you the truth, it is for your benefit that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Advocate will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him to you." (John 16:7)

First off the word translated as Him is auton (αὐτὸν) which means him in this context since it is a masculine personal pronoun. Now you may say that therefore this means the Holy Spirit is a person however based upon what the verse is actually saying this cannot be the case. This is because Jesus is saying that the Holy Spirit cannot come unless Jesus first ascends to heaven. This is because in order for Jesus to receive the full power of the Holy Spirit or the full power and influence of God from God Himself Jesus needs to be seated at the right hand of God in heaven. You see previously in Jesus's earthly ministry He was only given the Holy Spirit Himself rather than given control of the Holy Spirit. Thus what Jesus is talking about in this verse is that He can only be given control of the Holy Spirit or the power, influence and authority of God after He has been elevated by God after His ascension to heaven. This then means that the Holy Spirit is not independent and instead the Holy Spirit in representative of the power and influence of God over the world because otherwise the Holy Spirit could come to earth without Jesus. If you doubt this and believe that the Holy Spirit is a person that is coequal with the Father and Jesus then why can the Holy Spirit not come while Jesus is still on earth? I mean can a person not do whatever they want to especially if the person in question is God? Just something to think about if you doubt what I am saying.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Then a demon-possessed man who was blind and mute was brought to Jesus, and He healed the man so that he could speak and see. The crowds were astounded and asked, 'Could this be the Son of David?'
>
> But when the Pharisees heard this, they said, 'Only by Beelzebul, the prince of demons, does this man drive out demons.'
>
> Knowing their thoughts, Jesus said to them, 'Every kingdom divided against itself will be laid waste, and every city or household divided against itself will not stand. If Satan drives out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then can his kingdom stand? And if I drive out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your sons drive them out? So then, they will be your judges. But if I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.
>
> Or again, how can anyone enter a strong man's house and steal his possessions, unless he first ties up the strong man? Then he can plunder his house.
>
> He who is not with Me is against Me, and he who does not gather with Me scatters.
>
> Therefore I tell you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven. Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in this age or in the one to come.'" (Matthew 12:22-32)

In this passage the Pharisees accuse Jesus of healing a man by driving out a demon using the authority from the prince of demons because they refuse to accept the clear miracle that they have seen. Here a miracle is just something that must be due to the power of God because it is so amazing. After this Jesus demonstrates that Satan driving out Satan is absurd so therefore He is driving out demons through the Spirit of God or rather the power of God. Again if you read the Holy Spirit as a person in this passage the passage makes little sense. On the other hand if you read the Holy Spirit as the power and influence of God then it makes a lot more sense.

But what does "blasphemy against the Spirit" (Matthew 12:31) in this passage mean? Well you see the idea is that since Jesus was obviously performing clear miracles like driving "out demons by the Spirit of God" (Matthew 12:28) then the Pharisees who deny the miracles and ascribe them to the power of demons instead are blaspheming the power of God or the Holy Spirit because they are saying that the power of God or the Holy Spirit is demonic and from Satan. In other words Jesus is not talking about blaspheming a person called the Holy Spirit and instead Jesus is talking about blaspheming the power of God by not only denying a clear demonstration of the power of God but saying that it is the work of a demon instead.

For further evidence of this fact consider that Jesus says "whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven" (Matthew 12:32) in this passage. The idea here is that this should be understood as whoever speaks against the power and influence of God will not be forgiven. This is why I said the sin Jesus is talking about is not speaking blasphemy against a person called the Holy Spirit and instead Jesus is talking about the sin of those who see His clear miracles and instead of correctly ascribing them to the power of God they instead ascribe them to the power of demons.

Now you may believe this is a rather harsh thing for Jesus to say since Jesus said "blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven." (Matthew 12:31) However you need to understand something. The Pharisees in this passage are not objecting to the healing of the blind and mute man by saying that Jesus never actually healed him or that it was a trick. Instead the Pharisees accept the healing of the blind and mute man but then claim that Jesus could only do such a thing because of the power of Satan. The idea here is that only someone so completely wicked and opposed to God would ascribe a clear miracle that they accept as a miracle to the power of Satan instead of to the power of God or the Holy Spirit. So this is why Jesus says "blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven." (Matthew 12:31) Then as an aside this is why you do not have to worry about committing blasphemy against the Holy Spirit today because the only possible way for you to do it would be to see a clear miracle that was done through the Holy Spirit, or the power of God, and say that it was actually done through the power of Satan.

All that said my point in quoting this passage is to demonstrate that the Holy Spirit is not a person in this passage and that instead the Holy Spirit is best understood as the power and influence of God. Just to reiterate if you change Spirit and Holy Spirit with the power of God in this passage then the meaning of my explanation is preserved. For instance Jesus would be saying that blasphemy against the power of God will not be forgiven in this passage which lines up with my explanation. On the other hand if you treat the Holy Spirit as a person the passage loses it's entire meaning and the part about "blasphemy against the Spirit" (Matthew 12:31) seems completely random and unrelated to the preceding verses. Therefore it is best to view the Holy Spirit as the power and influence of God rather than a person in this passage.

Next as the Book of Revelation says:

> "These are the words of the One who holds the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars." (Revelation 3:1)

First off in this passage the seven Spirits of God is the Holy Spirit because the Holy Spirit is a complete Spirit that is all encompassing since the Holy Spirit is representative of the complete or unlimited power of God. Next the word translated as holds is echōn (ἔχων) which means has, holds or possesses in this context. Thus the idea here is that Jesus is telling us that He holds or possesses the Holy Spirit. Therefore this means that the Holy Spirit cannot be a person and instead the Holy Spirit can only be representative of the power and influence of God. Again this is why Jesus said in the Gospel of John that "Unless I go away, the Advocate will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him to you." (John 16:7) The idea is that Jesus only received complete control over the Holy Spirit or the full power and influence of God after He ascended to heaven as I said before.

Now you may still reject what I have been saying concerning the Holy Spirit being representative of the power and influence of God so let me ask you a question. If Revelation says that Jesus is "the One who holds the seven Spirits of God" (Revelation 3:1) then how could the Holy Spirit be equal to Jesus? I mean Jesus is literally saying that He possesses the Holy Spirit so obviously you cannot claim that the Holy Spirit is equal to Him if you want to say that the Holy Spirit is a person. Therefore in the end it really does not matter if you agree with me or not concerning the fact that the Holy Spirit is the power and influence of God and not a person because the false doctrine of the trinity is still false on the basis of the Holy Spirit not being equal with Jesus since God has granted Jesus full control over the Holy Spirit.

Therefore as a result of all these passages the Holy Spirit is not only representative of the power and influence of God instead of being a person but the Holy Spirit is also not equal with Jesus, and hence God as well, since God gave His Spirit to Jesus. Then because of these facts the trinity is a false doctrine since in order for the false doctrine of the trinity to be true the Holy Spirit needs to be a person who is equal with Jesus while in reality the Holy Spirit is representative of the power and influence of God.

Now to briefly summarize these five categories. The false doctrine of the trinity is false because Jesus is not inherently omniscient, Jesus is not inherently omnipotent, Jesus is not equal with God, Jesus is not eternal and God fully controls the Holy Spirit and the Holy Spirit is representative of His power and influence. Really there is nothing more to say here because I already have said everything that is necessary and fully explained myself here. Therefore the trinity is a false doctrine and cannot be true.

Alright so now it is time to go over the passages that apologists claim so-called prove that the false doctrine of the trinity is actually true. The reason why I decided to go over passages that demonstrate that the trinity cannot be true first is because the few passages that trinitarians like to use to so-called demonstrate the trinity only work if you mistranslate and misinterpret them. Therefore it is helpful for you to have an understanding about what else Jesus says in the Gospel of John and Revelation especially before reading about what I have to say concerning these passages. For instance to just to remind you in the Gospel of John Jesus says "I live because of the Father" (John 6:57) and "the Father is greater than I." (John 14:28) Therefore this means that the common translation of John 1:1 cannot be correct so that John 1:1 does not mean what you probably think it means. Really the only way you can make the popular translation and interpretation of John 1:1 work is if you ignore all the passages I have quoted from and discussed. Of course this is what apologists do because they only want to use passages that support their presuppositions. But now that you have read up to this point you know better than to be fooled by trinitarian apologists that translate and interpret verses like John 1:1 while ignoring verses that undeniably demonstrate that the trinity cannot be true.

Thus the idea is that now that you fully understand that the false doctrine of the trinity is false and cannot be true based on the passages I have already referenced, when you read my explanations for the common so-called trinitarian passages you will take less issue with what I have to say. On the other hand if I were to start with my explanation of what John 1:1 actually means then you would probably just say I am wrong and stop reading. As a result you are now fully prepared to read what I have to say concerning the so-called trinitarian passages so it is time to begin.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made." (John 1:1-3)

And as the Gospel of John also says:

> "For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is Himself God and is at the Father's side, has made Him known." (John 1:17-18)

So since these two passages say that "the Word was God" (John 1:1) and Jesus "is Himself God" (John 1:18) the trinity must be true right and everything you have read so far must be wrong so that I am simply in error? Well no sorry and you cannot use a biased and incorrect translation to support a false doctrine that you desperately want to be true. Now I am not saying this to attack you or to push some kind of agenda. Like I said previously when I first wrote an early version of my commentary on Revelation I believed that the trinity was probably true and I took the popular stance that Jesus claimed to be God. Then probably like you when I read the previous passages I quoted that disprove the trinity I simply shrugged my shoulders and said there is always John 1:1, 1:18, 10:30 and 20:28 so as long as these passages are definitive then the others really do not matter and I can ignore them for now until God explains how the trinity works. But then once I shed my presuppositionalism so that I was willing to look at the text critically to the point of questioning the validity of traditional so-called doctrines that are over a thousand years old then I finally admitted that the trinity cannot be true based on what the Bible says.

So what do these two passages actually mean then? First of all the word translated as God in "the Word was God" (John 1:1) and Jesus "is Himself God" (John 1:18) in these two passages is theos (θεὸς) which is best understood as a deity or a god. Now in order for this to make sense you need to understand that when the New Testament was written in its original language of Koine Greek everything was written in capital letters without spaces and it took many centuries for lowercase letters to be added. Therefore this means that there was not a distinction between God and god based upon capitalization as we see it today. Furthermore the ancient Greek world was used to having dozens of different so-called gods since they were polytheistic. Thus even the usage of the word theos (θεὸς) was not mostly used by the ancient pagan Greeks to refer to God as we see Him today. So my point here is that instead of theos (θεὸς) always referring to God really context determines what theos (θεὸς) actually means.

Next the word theos (θεὸς) almost always requires the definite article ho (ὁ), which is translated as the, in front of it if it is to be understood as a noun or as a subject in the sentence. Then if theos (θεὸς) does not have a definite article in front of it then it is best understood to be like an adjective that is a description of another subject rather than a subject in its own right. The idea here is that if ho theos (ὁ θεὸς) is used then it is likely that the author is referring to God while if theos (θεὸς) alone is used then it is likely that author is referring to something else. Although keep in mind that really this is not always true and theos (θεὸς) alone can refer to God depending on the context. Thus in the end really it is the overall context of the author's work as a whole that determines what you should understand theos (θεὸς) to mean because theos (θεὸς) is a rather imprecise word in contrast to God in English. My main point here is that theos (θεὸς) does not always refer to God and that if theos (θεὸς) alone is used without the definite article ho (ὁ) then you should immediately doubt that theos (θεὸς) refers to God especially if the immediate context does not definitely mean God.

So does John 1:1 include a definite article? Well in Greek "and the Word was God" (John 1:1) is actually kai Theos ēn ho Logos (καὶ Θεὸς ἦν ὁ Λόγος) which most literally translates as "and a deity was the Word." But as you can see the definite article ho (ὁ) is not included in front of theos (θεὸς) which means that we should read theos (θεὸς) as having the quality of an adjective rather than a noun. But what about John 1:18 where it says Jesus "is Himself God" (John 1:18) as I quoted above? The same is true here. The word theos (θεὸς) is used without

a definite article in front of it which changes how you should understand the word theos (θεός).

So what would theos (θεός) then mean in John 1:1 and 1:18? In short theos (θεός) would be best read as a deity or divine. This would then mean that "and the Word was God" (John 1:1) would then actually mean "and the Word was a deity" or "and the Word was divine." Although you could also say "and the Word was like God" or "and the Word had the same nature as God." This would then by why Jesus says that "Anyone who has seen Me has seen the Father." (John 14:9) Really the idea that the Gospel of John is getting at is that Jesus is a divine being who was created by God in God's image before the foundation of the world as the most perfect being outside of God Himself.

Now the reason why the Gospel of John does this is to show that the goodness and perfection of Jesus was created before the world itself so that God's plan for salvation and the creation of Jesus came before the rebellion of Adam and Eve against God. Remember what I just said before. The authors of the New Testament believed in divine determinism to the point where they believed that God has predetermined everything from the foundation of the world itself all the way to the eternal Kingdom of God. Nothing can seem horrible to you that God has predetermined ultimately everything but as I say later on in my commentary on Revelation 13 it is actually a comfortable thing for the Christian because that means that God has planned cannot be stopped by anyone. This then relates to Jesus in the sense that if God knew Adam and Eve were to sin against Him before He even created them and He also knew that He would need to come into the Christ, to lead the world back to Him then it would only make sense for God to have created His plan for salvation, the Christ or Jesus, before He created the world itself. Then since the Christ is the One who will have the authority to carry out His will by wielding His power and authority it would only make sense for Jesus or the Word to be made in the image of God so that He would be the greatest creation created by God.

Then the reason why the word Logos (Λόγος), or a word that is the embodiment of an idea, is used to refer to Jesus and the Christ here is that Jesus is the embodiment of not just God's plan and will for salvation but God's plan and will for all of existence and the universe itself. In other words God's plan for the future and the entire universe, Jesus, was with God before the universe was created. Then God created the universe to be created in through the Word so that His plan and will for everything could be carried out just as He had planned. So this is why John 1:1-3 says what it says.

In terms of this explanation as to why John 1:1-3 says what it says the biggest issue you will probably have is that of the idea of divine predetermination because of God has determined everything from before the foundation of the world itself from the moment that we do not have free will and most people do not like this idea. However because God is the Creator and Ruler of all and the entire universe, Jesus, was with God before the universe was created. Then God created the universe to be created in through the Word so that His plan and will for everything could be carried out just as He had planned. So this is why John 1:1-3 says what it says.

In terms of this explanation as to why John 1:1-3 says what it says the biggest issue you will probably have is that of the idea of divine predetermination because of God has determined everything from before the foundation of the world itself from the moment that we do not have free will and most people do not like this idea. However because God is the Creator and Ruler of all and the entire universe, Jesus, was with God before the universe was created. Then God created the universe to be created in through the Word so that His plan and will for everything could be carried out just as He had planned. So this is why John 1:1-3 says what it says.

First Paul not only uses the word theos (θεός) with respect to something that is not God but uses the word theos (θεός) to refer to something that is not God.

As Paul wrote:

"For as I have often told you before, and now say again even with tears: Many here are enemies of the cross of Christ. Their end is destruction, their god is their belly, and their glory is in their shame. Their minds are set on earthly things." (Philippians 3:18-19)

In this passage "god" (Philippians 3:19) is a translation of ho theos (ὁ θεός) and it is clear from the usage of god that Paul is not talking about God. Instead Paul is saying people that the enemies of the cross of Christ see their desires as their deity or god. The reason why ho (ὁ) is used in front of theos (θεός) is because theos (θεός) is being used as a definite sentence. However my main point here is that just because the word theos (θεός) is used it does not always mean that God is in view since even ho theos (ὁ θεός) in Philippians 3:19 does not refer to God. Because of this fact you should not just believe theos (θεός) is being used in John 1:1 can only refer to God and not a god or being divine or divine.

Second in John 1:18 not only does the definite article ho (ὁ) not appear before theos (θεός) but the word monogenes (μονογενὴς) also usually appears in front of it which means that theos (θεός) cannot refer to God in this verse.

To quote the Gospel of John:

"No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is Himself God and is at the Father's side, has made Him known." (John 1:18)

You see the word monogenes (μονογενὴς) means also "born with begotten meaning brought into existence or born by a parent. So when Jesus is called monogenes Theos (μονογενὴς θεὸς) he understand as "who is Himself God" (John 1:18) based on this definition? I mean God cannot be born by a parent so it is clear that this verse is saying Jesus is God would just be flat out absurd to believe Jesus, the Christ or understand monogenes Theos (μονογενὴς θεὸς) to mean only "born deity or divine being then "who is Himself God" (John 1:18) in this verse would become "who is the only born divine being or deity" which makes sense because a being or deity can be born by a god. If you want to dispute this then why is Jesus called the "only begotten" if Jesus was begotten from the Father. Thus if you want to hold to the trinity then you are denying Jesus as the Son of God because the false doctrine of the trinity says that the Son is coequal and coeternal with the Father. What I am saying is that Jesus cannot be monogenes (μονογενὴς) because if Jesus He was born of the Father or created by the Father. Then if Jesus was born of God then He had lived before He begotten cannot be God because God is eternal in nature and because being him monogenes (μονογενὴς) when Jesus did not exist. This idea then leads to my third point.

Third there is an internal contradiction within John 1:1 if you want to take the traditional translation of the verse literally.

To quote the verse again:

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." (John 1:1)

So how can the Word be with God and be God at the same time? For example if I were to say that Jesus with your mother and you were with your mother then you would either look at me like I am crazy or believe that I must be having a stroke. Now you may dispute this but Jesus is "the Son of God" (John 1:34) This is why I want to claim that Jesus is God based on John 1:1 then you are literally saying Jesus was with the Father and Jesus is His Father. Then no you cannot try to reconcile this by saying that Jesus is the Son of the Father but is still God just as the Father is God because like I said above with regards to your mother and you Jesus cannot be the only way Jesus can be the Son of God is if He was born or created by God. Therefore Jesus being God is just nonsensical with respect to John 1:1.

Fourth the popular translation and interpretation of John 1:1 and John 1:18 is in direct contradiction to the Gospel of John the rest of the Gospel of John and any attempt to reconcile these passages with the popular translation and interpretation of John 1:1 and John 1:18 is completely illogical.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of John:

"For as the Father has life in Himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in Himself." (John 5:26)

So if the Father is the One who has allowed Jesus "to have life in Himself" (John 5:26) then how it could possibly make sense to say that the popular interpretation of John 1:1 is correct? If Jesus is literally God then the Father needs to give Him life because God is the source of all life.

Then as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

"Just as the living Father sent Me and I live because of the Father, so also the one who feeds on Me will live because of Me." (John 6:57)

Again since Jesus says "I live because of the Father" (John 6:57) this means that Jesus is dependent upon the Father or God for His life. In other words Jesus is directly saying that He is not God because only God alone is eternal in nature. So how exactly does it make any sense to say that the popular interpretation of John 1:1 is correct? Of course this means the popular interpretation of John 1:1 is wrong. If you want to dispute this then how can Jesus be God if He says He lives "because of the Father" (John 6:57) when according to the false doctrine of the trinity God the Son is coequal and coeternal with God the Father? This is why I said you must ignore what Jesus says in the Gospel of John if you want to protect your incorrect translation and interpretation of John 1:1.

Then as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

"If you loved Me, you would rejoice that I am going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I." (John 14:28)

Obviously here Jesus directly says that "the Father is greater than I" (John 14:28) which means that the popular interpretation of John 1:1 cannot be correct because Jesus is directly saying that He is not God.

Then as Jesus also says in the Gospel of John:

"I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God." (John 20:17)

As I said before Jesus calls the Father or God His God. This then means that Jesus cannot be God and it does not matter what you want to say in response. Again Jesus believes that the Father is His God.

Now I would also like to point out something important that many if not most people are confused by. Just as Jesus is not God, but what am I talking about by referring to a god? Well I believe that Jesus is just like God in the sense that He is a divine being who was created by God in God's image before the foundation of the world as the most perfect being outside of God Himself.

Now the reason why the Gospel of John does this is to show that the goodness and perfection of Jesus was created before the world itself so that God's plan for salvation and the creation of Jesus came before the rebellion of Adam and Eve against God. Remember what I just said before. The authors of the New Testament believed in divine determinism to the point where they believed that God has predetermined everything from the foundation of the world itself all the way to the eternal Kingdom of God. Nothing can seem horrible to you that God has predetermined ultimately everything but as I say later on in my commentary on Revelation 13 it is actually a comfortable thing for the Christian because that means that God has planned cannot be stopped by anyone. Thus this relates to Jesus in the sense that if God knew Adam and Eve were to sinned against Him before He even created them and He also knew that He would need to come into the Christ, to lead the world back to Him then it would only make sense for God to have created His plan for salvation, the Christ or Jesus, before He created the world itself. Then since the Christ is the One who will have the authority to carry out His will by wielding His power and authority it would only make sense for Jesus or the Word to be made in the image of God so that He would be the greatest creation created by God.

Then the reason why the word Logos (Λόγος), or a word that is the embodiment of an idea, is used to refer to Jesus and the Christ here is that Jesus is the embodiment of not just God's plan and will for salvation but God's plan and will for all of existence and the universe itself. In other words God's plan for the future and the entire universe, Jesus, was with God before the universe was created. Then God created the universe to be created in through the Word so that His plan and will for everything could be carried out just as He had planned. So this is why John 1:1-3 says what it says.

Lastly with respect to these four reasons I have outlined it makes perfect sense to translate theos (θεός) in John 1:1 and 1:18 as a god, divine or divine being rather than as God. Now I say it makes infinitely more sense because I fail to see how the popular or traditional translation could ever be argued for let alone demonstrated to be correct given the passages that I have presented. Therefore this means that John 1:1 and 1:18 are not saying that Jesus is God but that He is a god. In other words Jesus is not God but He is a divine being who was created by God before the universe was created. Then since the entire response to what I have just argued is that the definition of the trinity so far hinges upon a misinterpretation of John 1:1 and John 1:18 and that the Word could continue to reject to me calling the trinity a false doctrine in order to demonstrate that the trinity is false beyond any doubt I am of course going to continue.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"Now Thomas, one of the twelve, one of the twelve, was not with the disciples when Jesus came. So the other disciples told him, "We have seen the Lord!"

But he replied, "Unless I see the nail marks in His hands, and put my finger where the nails have been, and put my hand into His side, I will never believe."

Eight days later, His disciples were once again inside the house, and this time, Thomas was with them. Jesus came and stood among them and said, "Peace be with you."

Then Jesus said to Thomas, "Put your finger here and look at My hands. Put your hand and put it into My side. Stop doubting and believe."

Thomas replied, "My Lord and my God!" (John 20:24-28)

This is another common passage that people like to use to try to prove the trinity is true. The trinity is especially true because contrary to the previous passages from John the Jews John including John 1:1 the word translated as "God" here appears as ho theos (ὁ θεός) which obviously includes the definite article. Then because of this definite article theos (θεός) is being used as a subject rather than as a predicate like in John 1:1. So what does this passage then mean exactly?

Well as Jesus says:

"Anyone who has seen Me has seen the Father." (John 14:9)

In this verse the idea is that since Jesus was made in the image of God or the Father so that He has the same nature as Them that anyone who has then whoever sees Jesus sees the Father or God. This is especially true in the sense that since Jesus is the Christ God is working through His so that God's will can be fulfilled.

This is then why Jesus says "My Lord and my God" (John 20:28) after confirming that Jesus is using God's titles to demonstrate that He has The idea here is that Thomas knows that only God has the power to resurrect someone from the dead and since he witnessed Jesus rise from the dead then this must mean that Jesus truly was sent by God. Then since he saw this in Christ, or the Anointed One, this also means that when Thomas saw Jesus he saw God working upon God. Again Jesus says that "Anyone who has seen Me has seen the Father." (John 14:9) Therefore Thomas is not calling Jesus God and instead he is simply acknowledging that Jesus is the Christ after seeing for himself that God has raised Jesus from the dead. Again Jesus raised from the dead would once again confirm that God has sent Jesus as the Christ. Only God can raise someone from the dead.

Alternatively you can say that Thomas is responding to Jesus since he was not since only God can raise someone from the dead.

Alternatively you can say that Thomas is responding to Jesus since he was not saying that the Christ. This verse again means that Jesus Christ. Jesus then confirms for himself that He has risen from the dead. The idea here is that Thomas knows that God only can raise someone from the dead and that he was wrong to doubt. You could think of it similar to how people say my God today when they witness something surprising. Only God deserves to be Thomas's God for witnessing the power of God for himself.

Now if you wish to dispute this there is little to no evidence that Thomas is actually calling Jesus God because even Jesus does not call Himself God and claim to be equal to God or the Father.

Again as Jesus says:

"For as the Father has life in Himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in Himself." (John 5:26)

"Just as the living Father sent Me and I live because of the Father, so also the one who feeds on Me will live because of Me." (John 6:57)

"If you loved Me, you would rejoice that I am going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I." (John 14:28)

"I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God." (John 20:17)

Thus what I am saying is that if Jesus calls His God "My God" (John 20:17) while saying that the Father "has life in Himself" (John 14:28) and "I live because of the Father" (John 6:57) then it is basically nonsensical to say that Thomas is calling Jesus God in John 20:28. I mean sure you can make this claim but if the rest of the Gospel of John contradicts this claim then really your claim is invalid. Therefore Thomas is not calling Jesus God here as I said.

Next as Colossians says:

"The Son is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For in him all things were created, things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities. All things were created through him and for him.

He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. And He is the head of the body, the church; He is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in all things He may have the preeminence. For it was pleased to have all His fullness dwell in Him, and through Him to reconcile to Himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through the blood of His cross." (Colossians 1:15-20)

First off for argument's sake here I am going to assume that Paul actually wrote Colossians so just accept this as true for the time being. Now although Paul did not actually write in the beginning of the trinity based upon the previous passages I quoted I thought it necessary to include this passage in the Gospel of Jesus so that you can rest assured that even if you were to ignore everything that Paul actually wrote Paul did not believe Jesus was God based on Colossians. The best evidence for this is found in the first verse of this passage.

To quote the verse again:

"The Son is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation." (Colossians 1:15)

The first key here is that Paul says Jesus is in the image of God. Now what does this mean? Well the Greek (εἰκὼν) which means image, likeness, representation or resemblance. This means that Paul is not calling Jesus God and instead he is simply saying that Jesus was made in the image of God. This is of course similar to what Genesis says with regards to Adam and how "God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them." (Genesis 1:27) This of course is in line with Paul's belief that Jesus was a divine being who was created by God as a parallel to Adam who was obedient to God instead of disobedient like Adam.

If you doubt this and mistakenly believe that Paul believed that Jesus was literally God then consider the second key here found in the second part of the above verse. Here Paul says that Jesus was "the firstborn over all creation." (Colossians 1:15) Now the word translated as firstborn is prōtotokos (πρωτότοκος) which means firstborn or oldest and it comes from the words prōtos (πρῶτος) which means first or chief and tikō (τίκτω) which means to beget, bring forth or produce. Therefore Paul is saying that Jesus was the first of God's creations so that Jesus was born before God created anything else.

Then because of this fact it does not matter what you want to argue with respect to Paul saying that "For God was pleased to have all His fullness dwell in Him" (Colossians 1:19) because God clearly believed Jesus was created by God in this passage and thus Paul could not have believed in the trinity.

But what did Paul mean by having "all His fullness dwell in Him" (Colossians 1:19) then? Well you can say that Jesus is the Son of God whom God has given His power and authority to do the work of God on His behalf. Thus Paul is talking about here is that Jesus is the image of God and God's will of God. Thus Paul is talking about here is that Jesus is the Christ or the Anointed One who

As Jesus says:

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me." (John 14:6)

Think of it as a king appointing a royal agent and giving the agent his royal power and authority then sending the agent out on business to a foreign nation to negotiate with them on his behalf. The idea is that if this foreign nation rejects this royal agent then this foreign nation will not merely be rejecting the agent himself but also rejecting the king because the king has given the agent his royal power and authority. Now obviously here in this example the king is God or the Father and the royal agent is Jesus who is the Christ. This then means that when someone rejects Jesus rejects they are not simply rejecting Jesus but rejecting God since God is using Jesus to fulfill His will.

As Jesus says:

"Anyone who has seen Me has seen the Father. How can you say, 'Show us the Father'? Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in Me? The words I say to you, I do not speak on My own. Instead, it is the Father dwelling in Me, who is doing His work." (John 14:9-10)

The idea here is that Jesus has been chosen by God as the Christ to use His authority and carry out His will on the earth through His agent. Therefore by rejecting Jesus, God's chosen representative who has been given His own power and authority by God Himself, the so-called Jews are actually rejecting God Himself. Again this is why Jesus later on calls those who reject Him, the so-called Jews, "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) because by rejecting Him, the Christ, the so-called Jews are in fact rejecting God since Jesus is the One whom God has given His divine power and authority to carry out His will. As a result of this the so-called Jews have become godless and have alliled themselves with Satan.

Therefore in this verse in Revelation "those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) would refer to the so-called Jews in the future who have refused to accept Jesus and become Christians. The idea here is that by refusing to submit to God's anointed One, the Christ, the so-called Jews are continually piercing Him and crucifying Him all over again every single day of their lives through the blasphemy of their rejection and unbelief. Thus the so-called Jews, those who reject Jesus, will bear the blood guilt of those in the first century AD who crucified Jesus at the end of the age. Again, this is why the so-called Jews in the Gospel of Matthew say, "His blood be on us and on our children!" (Matthew 27:25)

Now you might not agree with this meaning of "even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) in this verse and say it concerns the Roman Empire but the Gospel of John actually says it concerns the so-called Jews.

As the Gospel of John says:

"And, as another Scripture says: 'They will look on the One they have pierced.'" (John 19:37)

This verse a clear reference to the prophecy of Zechariah 12:10 about Israel and because of this fact this verse does not have the Roman Empire in mind and instead it refers to the so-called Jews and how they crucified the Christ.

As the Book of Zechariah says:

"On that day I will make the clans of Judah like a firepot in a woodpile, like a flaming torch among the sheaves; they will consume all the peoples around them on the right and on the left, while the people of Jerusalem remain secure there.

The LORD will save the tents of Judah first, so that the glory of the house of David and of the people of Jerusalem may not be greater than that of Judah. On that day the LORD will defend the people of Jerusalem, so that the weakest among them will be like David, and the house of David will be like God, like the angel of the LORD going before them.

So on that day I will set out to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.

"Then I will pour out on the house of David and on the people of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and prayer, and they will look on Me, the One they have pierced. They will mourn for Him as one mourns for an only child, and grieve bitterly for Him as one grieves for a firstborn son." (Zechariah 12:6-10)

I quoted the preceding verses before Zechariah 12:10 to demonstrate that this is actually supposed to be a prophecy that concerns the end of the age. As a result it was not fully fulfilled in the first century AD. So why does the Gospel of John referenced it? Well you see when the New Testament was written people quoted from the scriptures rather loosely and they took things out of context and applied them to whatever they wanted to really. So the idea here is that the author of the Gospel of John is just ignoring everything else in the passage from the Book of Zechariah above while focusing on John 19:37 and the end of the "they will pierced." (Zechariah 12:10) If this method of referencing the scriptures does not make much sense to you just know that I will more on this in my part called Various Insights. That said my point here is that since the prophecy of Zechariah 12:10 concerns the nation of Israel this means that the Gospel of John is not referring to the Roman Empire and is instead referring to the so-called Jews by saying "And, as another Scripture says: 'They will look on the One they have pierced.'" (John 19:37)

As an aside if you are wondering what the passage from Zechariah is actually referring to would say it is referring to Revelation 20:7-10 because the Church is the true Israel and all of the so-called Jews are the "synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9) Then specifically the part saying "they will look on Me, the One they pierced" (Zechariah 12:10) would refer to Christians in the thousand year reign looking upon God and realizing that we are recipients of the gift of eternal life that we have received because of our repentance and faith in Christ. In other words Zechariah is just saying that God will redeem us and that after we have been redeemed we will recognize all our transgressions against God or the piercing part of the passage so that we mourn and regret our past actions.

Now you may believe this view to be wrong so that you believe Zechariah 12 concerns the so-called Jews in the future but the idea that Christians are true Jews and that we are the true Israelites is one of the main points of the Book of Revelation and because of this fact this is why it is emphasized so much. Many people mistakenly believe that the so-called Jews of today are Israelites or the people of God but this could not be further from the truth. As I said the so-called Jews are a literal "synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) because they have alliled themselves with Satan through their continued denial of Jesus as the Christ. This means that God wants nothing more to do with them so that His only purpose now is to face judgment and then eternal destruction and damnation at the end of the age. This may seem hard to believe but I assure you that after you finish my complete study of the Book of Revelation read my part called Fulfilled Prophecy you will come to the same conclusion. I hope this is going to the same conclusion I have because I did not always believe such things to be true and instead I only came to believe what I now believe after I read the Bible for myself. Then if you must know anonymously 28 has shaped my views the most concerning the so-called Jews but do not concern yourself with this for now since fully go into it in detail in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy.

All that said my point here with regards to "even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) is that this is a clear reference to the Gospel of John where the author wrote "And, as another Scripture says: 'They will look on the One they have pierced.'" (John 19:37) Then since the Gospel of John is referring to Zechariah 12:10 this means that the author of the Gospel of John is referring to the so-called Jews and not the Romans. As a result this means that "even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) refers to the so-called Jews and that it does not refer to the Romans or the Roman Empire.

Therefore "even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) means that Jesus' coming returns there will still be the so-called Jews who have refused to accept Jesus as the Christ and look upon the One who they have pierced through their unbelief and hardness of heart. This "even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) will see Jesus which He returns to judge and condemn every so-called Jew who remains a so-called Jew continually pierces Jesus anew and crucifies the blasphemy of their unbelief and their rejection of God himself through their rejection of Jesus as the Christ.

This verse also might more specifically refer to a nation that calls itself Israel in which case the modern state of so-called Israel obviously exists today. The idea here is that God wants to keep the so-called Jews around until the return of Jesus and collect them together into a godless nation so that they can be judged. This means to God will judge the unfaithful of the whole world so too will God judge the unfaithful among the so-called Jews, who continue to pierce Jesus through their unbelief. Now this idea of Israel is much more much much much sense so consider the following passage from Leviticus.

As God says:

"Yet in spite of this, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not reject or despise them so as to destroy them and so break My covenant with them; for I am the LORD their God." (Leviticus 26:44)

The idea here is that despite the fact that the so-called Jews are a group of godless murderers who have the blood of God on their hands God has promised not to completely destroy them so that they do not exist anymore. Now of course God could let the so-called Jews disappear into the nations of the world so that they no longer exist as a people but then God would not get His reputation against them that He was denied in the first century AD. You see the so-called Jews deserved to be completely wiped out as people in the first century AD in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as punishment for what they did to Jesus. However as I just said God promised to not wipe them out completely when they are in the land of their enemies.

So the idea is that if God waits until the end of the age when the whole world is to be judged as the new heavens and new earth are created as He makes "all things new" (Revelation 21:5) then God will not be breaking His covenant by completely destroying the so-called Jews then. This is because God would be wiping out and judging the world at the same time so that no one comes to the Father except through Me." (John 14:6) Thus God would be wiping out the so-called Jews at the same time as the rest of the world so that God does not have to destroy them completely and so that God does not have to break His covenant with them on his behalf. The idea here is that if God wiped out the so-called Jews at the same time as the rest of the world then God would be able to keep

(Revelation 1:7) because not everyone has an ear for what God speaks through the Holy Spirit.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of John:

> "Whoever belongs to God hears the words of God. The reason you do not hear is that you do not belong to God." (John 8:47)

Therefore this means that those who are unfaithful and do not belong to God will not hear what the Spirit says to the churches. Now this may not seem like that significant of a point however you need to understand what it means in the context of the rest of Revelation. You see if the Book of Revelation was plainly given so that everyone could clearly see for themselves what God is saying so that they would be able to understand God's plan for the future then this mean that the two beasts or the artificial super intelligence and the United Nations 2.0 would be able to see the truth. Then as a result of these two beasts seeing the truth they would be able to counteract the plan God has set from the foundation of the world. In other words what I am saying is that the only way for God's plan to be fulfilled is for Revelation to be written in such a way that you need spiritual ears in order to hear what God is really speaking to us through His Spirit.

Then because of this fact you should not be concerned about what secular historians and so-called Christians say to attack what I have written here in this book because if what I have written is correct then you should expect to see most if not the vast majority of the world including so-called Christians stand opposed to this book. So if anyone tries to argue with you as they claim this book is delusional and wrong then just roll your eyes at them and wish them luck. Not everyone will be able to see the spiritual truths that I have written because not everyone has spiritual ears. In fact Jesus actually says that God has purposely deafened people's ears and blinded their eyes so that they cannot hear or see the truth.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

> "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. This is why I speak to them in parables:
>
> 'Though seeing, they do not see;
> though hearing, they do not hear or understand.'
>
> In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:
>
> 'You will be ever hearing but never understanding;
> you will be ever seeing but never perceiving.
> For this people's heart has grown callous;
> they hardly hear with their ears,
> and they have closed their eyes.
> Otherwise they might see with their eyes,
> hear with their ears,
> understand with their hearts,
> and turn, and I would heal them.'
>
> But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:11-17)

(7) "To the one who overcomes" – Overcoming means resisting the power and influence of Satan in this world by not giving in and joining Satan and by keeping God's commandments. Instead the faithful are to trust that God will prevail over any and all evil in the end so that we do not even have to fight. This battle against the influence of Satan reaches its culmination when the first beast or artificial super intelligence rises. Instead of fighting against the beast Christians are supposed to overcome it by not giving into it because they trust that Jesus will destroy it when He returns. Therefore always remember to persist in faith and to keep the commandments so that you will be counted among the faithful and among those who overcome the power of Satan and the temptations of the beast.

(7) "I will grant the right to eat from the tree of life in the Paradise of God." – Eating from the tree of life represents the gift of everlasting life or immortality and the Paradise of God is the new Jerusalem located in the new earth described symbolically later on in Revelation 21 and 22.

(*) I would also like to again point out that Jesus describes and breaks up the rewards He has for those who overcome into seven sections for each of the seven churches. The rewards are not specific for each church as all of the rewards are given to all of the faithful in the new Jerusalem.

As God says:

> "The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

2 – To the Church in Smyrna

> (8) To the angel of the church in Smyrna write:
>
> These are the words of the First and the Last, who died and returned to life.
>
> (9) I know your affliction and your poverty—though you are rich! And I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews, but are in fact a synagogue of Satan.
>
> (10) Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Look, the devil is about to throw some of you into prison to test you, and you will suffer tribulation for ten days. Be faithful even unto death, and I will give you the crown of life.
>
> (11) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. The one who overcomes will not be harmed by the second death.

2.1 – Commentary

(8) "To the angel of the church in Smyrna write:" – Smyrna was a Greek city in the Roman Empire that was on the western coast of Asia Minor or Anatolia.

(8) "These are the words of the First and the Last, who died and returned to life." – First off just to reiterate Jesus divides up His attributes into the opening of the addresses to each of the seven churches.

Then by saying His words are "the words of the First and the Last" (Revelation 2:8) Jesus is saying that His words are the words of God because He has the power and authority to act on behalf of God. Remember, although Jesus is not literally God He has been given all of God's power and authority so that everything and everyone, except God of course, is subject to Him. Therefore whenever Jesus speaks you should see His words as being the very words of God.

If you still want to dispute this and hold to the false doctrine of the trinity then how can Jesus literally be "the First and the Last" (Revelation 2:8) if He also says that He has "died and returned to life" (Revelation 2:8) in this verse? Therefore obviously Jesus cannot literally be "the First and the Last" (Revelation 2:8) so that He is eternal in nature like God.

(9) "I know your affliction and your poverty" – The church in Smyrna is physically poor and its members are suffering from thlipsis (θλῖψις) or internal pressure that makes them feel like they do not have any other options.

(9) "though you are rich!" – But at the same time those in this church are spiritually rich because they have faith in God and in Jesus. This is because if God is on your side through your faith in Jesus then it does not matter if the whole world stands opposed to you and hates you. No one can overcome the power of God. Therefore always remember that although you may be suffering through sickness, poverty or persecution now in your current life after we are raised to eternal life in the resurrection we will all live in the paradise of God. Then of course God will keep the other promises He has made to us in the Book of Revelation as well as we are adopted into God's family as the children of God.

As God says:

> "The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Furthermore since the promises of God are more valuable than all the gold in the world you are in fact far richer through your faith than anyone and everyone no matter how large their earthly fortune may be. So always remember to be grateful to God for what He has done and what He will do.

(9) "And I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews" – First off the word translated as slander here is blasphēmian (βλασφημίαν) which as you can probably guess can mean blasphemy and is most often translated as blasphemy in the New Testament. Now in terms of the actual meaning of the word really it just refers to seriously abusive or slanderous language in general. So what is Jesus saying here in this verse then? In short Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews are not Jews, hence why I say so-called, and that instead of being Jews they "are in fact a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) as Jesus goes on to say because they are in full rebellion against God through their rejection of Him as the Christ. I realize this is quite controversial in terms of what many if not most Christians today believe so allow me to explain.

To begin the idea is that the Israelites or Jews are the people of God or God's people. This fact then means that in order to be a Jew you have to be faithful to God and when you cease being faithful to God you are no longer a Jew because God no longer recognizes you as being part of His people.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "And do not presume to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe lies ready at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire." (Matthew 3:9-10)

In this passage John the Baptist tells the so-called Jews that they are not safe from destruction just because they are the so-called children of Abraham. Instead of being saved if they do not fulfill the will of God then they will be killed and thrown into the fire to face destruction. Furthermore to replace the so-called Jews that God has cast out so that they are no longer children of Abraham God can raise even the stones on the ground into the children of Abraham. In other words it is God alone who determines who is and who is not a child of Abraham and because of this fact it is God alone who determines who is an Israelite and a Jew and who is not an Israelite and a Jew. This means that just because someone calls themselves a Jew it does not mean that they are actually a Jew in reality. Instead they may very well be part of those people "who falsely claim to be Jews" (Revelation 2:9) or the so-called Jews.

Then as Jesus says:

> "Furthermore, the Father judges no one, but has assigned all judgment to the Son, so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him." (John 5:22-23)

Thus Jesus is saying that whoever refuses to honor Him just as they honor God is actually refusing to honor God because God has given Him His authority and power. Remember what I said with regards to Jesus being God's vicegerent. Anyone who refuses to recognize Jesus as God's vicegerent and obey His commands is refusing to recognize the power and authority of God because God has chosen Jesus as His vicegerent or rather the Christ.

So how how does this relate to Jesus saying "I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews" (Revelation 2:9) in this verse? Well you see the so-called Jews in the first century AD were probably attacking Christians and saying that they are not Jews and part of Judaism because they accept Jesus as the Christ and that instead they are part of a different religion or Christianity. Sounds familiar? Well this false belief should sound familiar because it is what many if not most Christians believe today.

Now the reason why Jesus is saying that saying Christians are not Jews is blasphemy is because by saying that Christians are not Jews you would be saying that they are not the people of God. So not only are the so-called Jews insulting the true people of God but they are in effect blaspheming God through their rejection of Jesus as God's vicegerent by saying that those who believe in Jesus as the Christ are not Jews.

Now believe it or not but many people actually disagree with this interpretation and some actually have the audacity to claim that the reverse is true so that Jesus is talking about pagan converts to Christianity calling themselves Jews instead. However this mistaken belief is just objectively wrong because in the next chapter Jesus says something similar about the so-called Jews.

As Jesus says:

> "Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9)

In this verse those who called themselves Jews in the first century AD were saying that Christians are not Jews and not part of Israel or God's people. This is because Jesus is saying not to worry what these liars say because when He comes the so-called Jews will know that He loves Christians, the true Jews, and not them the so-called Jews. This is why Jesus is definitely not talking about Christians calling themselves Jews. Furthermore obviously Jesus does not love the so-called Jews.

As Jesus says:

> "Whoever has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me. The one who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and reveal Myself to him." (John 14:21)

Then it goes without saying that the so-called Jews do not keep Jesus's commandments because they do not even believe He has been given any authority by God and they do not accept Him as the Christ.

Therefore in the above passage from Revelation Jesus is clearly trying to encourage Christians, the true Jews, by telling us not to worry about what the so-called Jews say to us because they are not Jews and hence not part of God's people. Instead the so-called are liars "who belong to the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and that when Jesus returns He will make them bow down at our feet so that they will know that Jesus and His Father love us as the true Jews.

This fact is then why Jesus says those who say they are Jews "falsely claim to be Jews" (Revelation 2:9) in the verse this comment is on. The idea here is that someone is a Jew through faith and obedience to God through Jesus and not through being born as a Jew. In other words someone cannot be a Jew and reject the Jewish Messiah in the person of Jesus Christ because by doing so they would be rejecting God since God has chosen Jesus as the Christ to carry out His will. Thus anyone who claims to be a Jew but rejects Jesus is a liar because again you cannot be a Jew and reject Jesus. Now you may dispute this but the authors of the New Testament agree with me here.

As the author of First John wrote:

> "Who is the liar, if it is not the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father, but whoever confesses the Son has the Father as well." (1 John 2:22-23)

First off I would like to say that I do not consider the epistles of the New Testament to be the word of God as you will read about later in my part called Various Insights. Therefore I do not believe anyone can just cite a couple verses from one of the epistles and say God says. That said my point in quoting from First John above is to demonstrate that the author of First John, whoever they may be, believed that those who deny that Jesus is the Christ are liars just like with how Jesus says "those who falsely claim to be Jews" (Revelation 2:9) "are liars instead." (Revelation 3:9) Now I would also like to point out the obvious here that the author of First John is not talking about pagans at all and instead they are only concerned with the so-called Jews. This is why the author says "Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father" (1 John 2:23) in the passage. The idea here is that obviously pagans do not have the Father and that instead the author is saying that if you believe yourself to be faithful to God by being a so-called Jew while you deny Jesus then in reality you are not being faithful to God and that you do not have God. In other words whoever denies Jesus as the Christ does not have the Father or God and as a result of this fact they are godless.

Again this is why the word blasphēmian (βλασφημίαν) which means blasphemy or slander is used in this verse and why I actually believe it is accurate to view the word as meaning blasphemy in the traditional sense of saying something that is offensive against God. What Jesus is then saying in this case is that when the so-called Jews who reject Him claim to be Jews they are actually committing blasphemy against God. This may seem like a harsh statement to make but you need to understand that Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has given His power and authority to in order to execute His will as His vicegerent. Therefore as I just said this means that whoever rejects Jesus as the Christ is actually rejecting God Himself. This is why anyone who calls themselves a Jew but rejects Jesus as the Christ is not a Jew and cannot be considered a Jew. In fact I would even go as far to say that calling a so-called Jew a Jew is literally blasphemy. This is because the Jews are the people of God and whoever denies that Jesus is the Christ is not and cannot be part of God's people. Thus whenever you call a so-called Jew a Jew you are saying that someone who is actually evil and unclean, due to their full rebellion against God, is part of God's people. For instance if you were to hear someone refer to Satan as being a Christian and one of God's people then what would you think of such a thing? Well of course you would believe such a statement is blasphemy because in reality Satan is in rebellion against God and thus cannot be part of God's people. The idea here with the so-called Jews is similar and this is why Jesus refers to the so-called Jews as "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) later in the verse this comment is on but I go into this fact later on.

Now you may dispute all this but believe it or not but it could be argued that even Paul actually held this same exact view and that he did not believe the so-called Jews were Jews.

As Paul wrote:

> "It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all His children. On the contrary, 'Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned.' So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

So just because someone considers themself a Jew and holds to the Old Testament does not mean they are part of Israel or a Jew. As Paul said "not all who are descended from Israel are Israel." (Romans 9:6) This means that when you see the so-called Jews today you should correctly see them as and call them the so-called Jews and not the Jews because they have nothing to do with Israel and they are not the children of Abraham. Instead the only true Jews and children of Abraham in the world today are faithful Christians because we are "the children of the promise" (Romans 9:8) who will inherit all the promises that God has spoken to His people.

For instance as God promised Abraham:

> "Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and east and north and south. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you and your offspring." (Genesis 28:14)

Then it goes without saying that Christians have in fact become "like the dust of the earth" (Genesis 28:14) since there are billions of us all across the entire world. Therefore as Christians, and true Jews, we truly are the children of Abraham and we will inherit all the promises that God has promised us.

All that said with respect to what Paul believed it is a bit more complicated than this since Paul wrote his epistles before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War which is why Paul refers to the so-called Jews as Israel at times since the so-called Jews had not be almost destroyed as a people at this point. Furthermore Paul was writing in a period of time in which not everyone who said they were a Jew was a so-called Jew through rejecting Jesus because it is not like everyone knew about Jesus even say thirty years after His death and resurrection. Instead really you can only say that by the end of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War that everyone who called themselves a Jew but rejected Jesus as the Christ was not a Jew and instead a so-called Jew. Therefore I would say that had Paul lived until the end of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War then he would almost certainly refer to the so-called Jews and so-called Israel as I do. If you disagree with what I have said with respect to Paul then just know that I talk more about what Paul believed later on.

That said my point here in this comment is that the so-called Jews are not Jews, are not part of Israel and that they are not the children of Abraham. I cannot stress how important of an idea this is.

Now no doubt you may still be skeptical of all this so consider the following. Jesus is the King of the Jews, the heir of David and King of Israel. Really you cannot disagree with this and be a Christian since this is what the Christ is supposed to be. So my question for you is how exactly can the so-called Jews be Jews if they do not recognize the King of the Jews? Clearly they cannot be.

Now this still may not make much sense to you so let me give you a theoretical example. Imagine you meet someone who says they are an American but then after talking to them further they say that the American colonies are part of the United Kingdom and that the American Revolution was illegitimate and that those in Britain who recognized America as an independent state are traitors. In response you may try to correct them by saying that they are not an American and that instead they are a British nationalist. But then they go on to say that the American colonies were originally known as British America so in order to be an American you need to correctly recognize that America is British. Sounds ridiculous right? Well of course it does. But in reality how can this person truly be an American if they refuse to recognize the American government? But really this theoretical example is no where near as ridiculous as the so-called Jews claiming to be Jews in the present day as you will see later on.

My point here is that God appointed Jesus as King of Israel and King of the Jews. Therefore this means that if a person tells you they are a Jew but they do not confess Jesus as the Christ and heir of David then they are not a Jew and instead they are a so-called Jew and a liar.

Christianity is not an offshoot of early first century Judaism. Instead Christianity is the continuation of early first century Judaism. So when someone asks you if you know that Jesus was a Jew you can respond by telling them that you know and that you are a Jew a well and that all Christians are Jews because we are the continuation of Israel and the children of Abraham.

Then you should also keep in mind that Christianity is actually an older religion than modern-day so-called Judaism. What is called so-called Judaism today is more accurately called Rabbinic (so-called) Judaism which became the mainstream form of so-called Judaism in the sixth century after the Babylonian Talmud was finalized. The Talmud is the central text of Rabbinic (so-called) Judaism and the main source of theology and law. Therefore as Christians our supplemental theological texts to the Old Testament are actually older than what Rabbinic (so-called) Jews use.

But what is a Jew? The word Jew originates as a term used to refer to those of the tribe of Judah of Israel. The reason why it became a term to refer to the Israelites is because before the Exile happened the Kingdom of Judah was much more faithful to God than the northern Kingdom of Israel. So this is why the word Jew is used to refer to the people of God. Therefore by being a faithful Christian you are actually a true Jew. Again, this is why I have said and will continue to say so-called Jews because those who call themselves Jews today while denying that Jesus is the Christ are liars just as Jesus says they are.

But my point here is that once again Jesus is the King of Israel and King of the Jews and because of this fact it does not matter what anyone else wants to claim since Jesus is our King. All those who recognize the King of the Jews are Jews and all those who do not recognize the King of the Jews are not Jews and instead they are so-called Jews who are liars and pretenders. Israel belongs to the true Jews, Christians, and Jesus is our King. This means that the so-called Jews are not Israel and that they have nothing to do with Israel.

Says who though? I mean it is not like God waged war against the so-called Jews on Jesus's behalf to establish His kingdom just like how the Americans fought in the Revolutionary War right? So is it not reasonable for the so-called Jews to claim to be Jews? Well actually no. You see God did wage war against the so-called Jews in the first and second centuries AD in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War, the Second (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and the Third (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. During these three wars God used the Roman Empire to fight for Him against the so-called Jews which resulted in the Second Temple being destroyed, which was never rebuilt, and around two million so-called Jews being killed. You will read all about this in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy and when you are done with it you will believe the British nationalist in the theoretical example above is less delusional than the so-called Jews of today.

I say will here because once you see and understand just how well that even the Old Testament, yes the Old Testament and not the New Testament, alludes to the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and how these wars basically perfectly match up with the punishment of the Exile from the Old Testament then what I have said will become undeniable to you. For example the First Temple was destroyed on the Hebrew date of the ninth of Av, really the tenth, in the Exile and the Second Temple was also destroyed on the ninth of Av, really the tenth, during the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. Furthermore the Exile lasted seventy years and the time from the start of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War to the end of the Third (so-called) Jewish-Roman War was also seventy years. So you can already probably see for yourself that yes God did in fact wage war against the so-called Jews so that Jesus could be established as King of the Jews and King of Israel.

Now you may dispute all this and say that it is invalid and that my example of comparing the so-called Jews to a clearly delusional British nationalist is nonsensical on the basis that there are millions of so-called Jews around today so therefore they cannot all be wrong. However you need to understand that God does not care about what millions of so-called Jews think because to Him their opinion is completely irrelevant. This is because the Kingdom of God is not a democracy. Instead the Kingdom of God is ruled by a King and it is God who has anointed Jesus as King of Israel and hence King of the Jews. Therefore it does not matter if almost everyone on earth disagrees with Jesus being King of Israel because God is the Divine King who rules over all and does whatever He wants. What you think and believe literally does not matter and you do not get a vote on it. Although for the record there are billions of Christians while there are only millions of so-called Jews so even if you disagree with me and want to claim that this is a democracy then the so-called Jews are still outnumbered. But my point with all this is that if God says Jesus is the King of the Jews then Jesus is the King of the Jews and all those who refuse to recognize Him as King of the Jews cannot be Jews.

Lastly, just to summarize, my point with this entire comment is that when Jesus says "I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews" (Revelation 2:9) He is saying that the so-called Jews are not actually Jews. This is why I call the so-called Jews the so-called Jews and not Jews because they are not Jews and will never be Jews as long as they refuse to recognize Jesus as their King. On the other hand if I were to call them Jews then I would be committing blasphemy in my view.

If you disagree with anything I have said here so far then consider the next comment where I go into this subject in much more depth in order to prove that the so-called Jews are not Jews or Israelites and that instead Christians are the true Jews and true Israelites. Really this point cannot be argued against as you will soon see.

(9) "but are in fact a synagogue of Satan." – First off the word translated as synagogue most literally means an assembly of people and it more specifically relates to those who call themselves Jews. Thus the idea here is that Jesus is calling the so-called Jews an assembly of Satan. In other words those who deny Jesus are not of God but of Satan because they are not part of God's people. Now this may seem a bit confusing but in order for the phrase "synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) to make more sense you need to understand what Satan is in this context. In short in this context Satan is being used to represent rebellion against God and His authority. Thus this means that "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) can better be understood to mean an assembly of rebellion. So now that you know the meaning of "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) in this verse consider the preceding part of the sentence.

As Revelation says:

> "And I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews, but are in fact a synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9)

In this verse Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews are not real Jews and part of the assembly of God. Instead Jesus says they are part of an assembly of Satan because by rejecting Him as the Christ they have joined and allied themselves with Satan in rebellion against God.

So does this mean that the so-called Jews are evil? I mean if Satan is evil then would the "synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) not also be evil? Well yes the so-called Jews are evil.

But what do I mean by evil here? Really all evil means in this context is being opposed to God since rebelling against God is the greatest form of evil that is possible. Yes, that means rebelling against God is a worse form of evil and a worse sin than mass murder. But why is this so?

As Jesus says:

> "'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

As you can see even though loving your neighbor as yourself is extremely important it is still secondary to "the first and greatest commandment" (Matthew 22:38) of loving "the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind." (Matthew 22:37) To make these two commandments easier to understand think of violating the first as crimes against God and violating the second as crimes against humanity. This is why mass murder and genocide are not as bad as being opposed to and rebelling against God. Then yes, mass murder and genocide are still bad. Really all am I saying here is that crimes against God are worse than crimes against humanity.

This is what makes the so-called Jews so completely evil. As I have said before Jesus is the Christ or God's vicegerent. This means that when the so-called Jews reject Jesus as the Christ they are not merely rejecting Jesus alone and instead they are completely rejecting God Himself. Furthermore it does not matter how pious a so-called Jew appears to be because the sin of rejecting Jesus as the Christ and hence joining Satan in his rebellion against God cannot be overcome through any quantity of prayers or good works. This means that you do not need to know anything else about a so-called Jew other than to confirm that they reject Jesus as the Christ to know that they are evil. In other words literally all so-called Jews are evil.

Next as I said before I would actually say the so-called Jews are one of if not the most evil groups of people on earth that has ever existed. Now this may seem hard to believe because no doubt you probably consider some authoritarian regime in the past or some terrorist organization to be the most evil group of people on earth that has never existed. However this would not be the case because for one as I just said crimes against God are worse than crimes against humanity. Therefore the sin of rejecting God through rejecting Jesus as the Christ is worse than the sin of committing genocide.

As an aside no you should not seek to hurt or punish those who reject God and sin against Him. God is all powerful so He does not need your help to punish groups like the so-called Jews. Also God will not let the so-called Jews go unpunished. This means that before the day of judgment God will literally annihilate them all so that no a single so-called Jew will remain alive. Then once all the dead are resurrected on the day of judgment all the so-called Jews will be thrown alive into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction as they deserve. Thus do not concern yourself with punishing the so-called Jews.

Now you may still have some issues with me saying that the so-called Jews are one of if not the most evil group to ever exist in the world. I mean how does this make sense exactly? But really in order to fully understand what I have been saying you need to understand the most destructive and dangerous form of evil. Now I say form of evil here because I am not talking about a type of evil such as committing crimes against God or crimes against humanity. Instead I am talking about the form or nature of this evil. So what am I talking about? Well in short the most destructive and dangerous form of evil to exist is evil that pretends to be good since when an evil pretends to be good it leads to the corruption of those who are good so that they join with the evil as they are deceived. This is actually why Satan is ultimately so dangerous and why he is the greatest evil in the world.

As Paul wrote:

> "And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness." (2 Corinthians 11:14-15)

What Paul is getting at here is that the evil of Satan is not plainly known and obvious to all because Satan hides his evil in things that appear to be good so that he can deceive people and corrupt them into carrying out and spreading his rebellion for him. Again this is why I have said the so-called Jews are evil because by rejecting Jesus as the Christ they have rejected God and allied themselves with Satan as they join Satan in His rebellion.

So what sets the so-called Jews apart from atheists and those of other religions like Islam to make them more evil than them? I mean Muslims and atheists can deceive people as well into abandoning God and Jesus right? Well to be perfectly honest this comes down to personal view here so if you want to say that Muslims are more evil than the so-called Jews then that is up to you. Really I would personally say that so-called Jews, those of other religions, former Christians, atheists, and the modern-day pharisees are all basically equally evil from this point of view because they all are examples of evil that pretends to be good and spreads corruption. By modern-day pharisees here I am referring to so-called Christians who pervert and corrupt the faith. For example the so-called Christians who write and sell books for a profit as they exploit their brothers and sisters would be an example of the modern-day pharisees.

So why are these groups evil exactly? Really all these groups are evil because of the sin they are committing against God through their rejection of God and rejection of Jesus. Yes, the sin of the rejection of Jesus applies to the modern-day pharisees as well. For example if someone seeks to exploit and profit off of their fellow Christians then they have rejected Jesus's teachings and hence have rejected Jesus through their actions.

But in terms of these groups I am really talking about the most dangerous form of evil that exists or an evil that pretends to be good. For instance the vast majority of the members of these five groups appear good and a number of people in these groups appear to be impeccably good. Now I say appear here because if someone has rejected God or rejected Jesus as the Christ then they are by definition committing a crime against God and are in violation of the greatest commandment. This means that they are evil. But really this evil is not clearly visible and instead what these people do is clearly visible. But this is why this is the most dangerous type of evil. For example the most dangerous atheist in the world is not the kind of atheist who seeks hostile interactions with as many people as people so that they can show how much better their viewpoint is in their view. Instead the most dangerous type of atheist in the world is the atheist who never seeks hostile interactions with others and instead seeks to do good works and help others. This is because when others see someone as being outwardly good they become more impressionable to the person's viewpoints and beliefs.

The point here is that once Christians see so-called Jews, atheists, Muslims, former Christians and modern-day pharisees as good people then they will be much more likely to imitate their evil and take on their beliefs. For example if you were to have positive interactions with Muslims then you will be more likely to start to think that maybe Jesus being the Christ is not important or worse yet you may even conclude that Islam is true and that Christianity, or true Judaism, is false. As another example if you were to see a well spoken and seemingly kind so-called Christian apologist who is a modern-day pharisee you will be more likely to start to believe that it is perfectly acceptable to profit off the books that you write by selling them to desperate Christians who are trying to read anything they can to keep their faith. Now you can see why I said an evil that appears to be good is the most dangerous form of evil.

Although like I said if you want to say that the modern-day pharisees like the modern-day Christian apologists who exploit Christians by profiting off of them are a greater evil than the so-called Jews then I am not going to argue with you really since it really depends on your point of view and what you see as the greatest threat to Christianity. For instance although I believe the so-called Jews are more evil than the modern-day pharisees who exploit Christians today really I would say these modern-day pharisees pose a far greater threat to Christianity. Thus if you want to party define evil as being dangerous then you could argue that the modern-day pharisees are more evil.

That said there is a good argument to be made that the so-called Jews are the most evil group in the history of humanity. This is because the so-called Jews "claim to be Jews but are liars instead." (Revelation 3:9) The idea here is that even to this very day the so-called Jews falsely claim to be the true children of Abraham who carry on the faith and legacy of Abraham. Of course now you know better so that you know the so-called Jews are simply pretenders and that they have nothing to do with Abraham or Israel. This is what makes them so evil. By spreading their lies and deceptions they are perverting and corrupting Abraham's legacy. Now this may not seem that important but you need to understand that Judaism essentially rests on Abraham since Abraham is one of the patriarchs. Then by laying claim to the legacy of Abraham and of Israel the so-called Jews are laying claim on all of God's promises to Abraham and to Israel.

Now this may not seem that evil to you so let me put it another way. Imagine if Satan was laying claim to being part of the people of God by saying that he is part of the true people of God. Sounds ridiculous right? I mean how could Satan who is the epitome of rebellion against God say he is part of the true people of God? But this is my point. You see you need to understand that the so-called Jews are rebelling against God in the exact same way that Satan is rebelling against God. Satan refused to accept God's authority over him and so too do the so-called Jews refuse to accept God's authority because they refuse to accept Jesus as the Christ. Again think of Jesus as God's vicegerent so that by rejecting the vicegerent God has appointed the so-called Jews are literally rejecting God. I cannot stress how important this idea is which is why I keep on repeating myself over and over again. This is also why the so-called Jews are a literal "synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) just as Jesus calls them.

But my point with this is that the so-called Jews are in full rebellion against God while at the same exact time they are falsely claiming they are not only faithful to God but God's chosen people. This is what makes them so evil. In other words their words and very being are the ultimate perversion of true Judaism. This may seem harsh but if Satan called himself part of the true people of God no doubt you would agree that this claim is a perversion of the truth. Therefore when "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) speaks lies you should see their lies as lies and perversions of the truth.

Alright but who cares what the so-called Jews want to claim? For instance sure they are obviously wrong and instead of being the people of God they are "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) but why does this matter? Well you see the problem is that their lies and perversions of the truth have been slowly twisting and corrupting the true Judaism, Christianity, to the point where the official position of the Roman Catholic Church is that so-called Jews do not need to accept Jesus as the Christ to go to heaven. Yes, you read that right. Now although I talk about the Roman Catholic Church more later on in my part called Various Insights I would say based on this position alone the Roman Catholic Church is not the Church of God and of Christ but is the church of Satan. This may seem like an extreme statement to make but you need to once again understand that Jesus is the Christ or the one whom God has given His power and authority to in order to rule the world on His behalf as His vicegerent. In other words this means that Jesus is currently the ruler and supreme authority over everything and everyone. Because of this fact Jesus is the sole path to salvation.

As Jesus says:

> "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me." (John 14:6)

So why exactly can the Roman Catholic Church be more accurately called the church of Satan and not the Church of God and of Christ because their position is that so-called Jews do not need to accept Jesus as the Christ to go to heaven? I mean sure Jesus is the sole path but why would the Roman Catholic Church being wrong mean that it is a literal church of Satan? Well you see by saying that the so-called Jews do not need to accept Jesus as the Christ to go to heaven the Roman Catholic Church is denying the supreme authority of Jesus that God has given Him.

As Jesus says:

> "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me." (Matthew 28:18)

This is because by saying that the so-called Jews do not need to accept Jesus as the Christ the Roman Catholic Church is saying that the so-called Jews do not fall under Jesus's authority. This is of course false since God has given Jesus "All authority in heaven and on earth" (Matthew 28:18) just as Jesus says. Then by denying Jesus's complete authority over all things the Roman Catholic Church is then rebelling against God in the same exact way the so-called Jews and Satan are rebelling against God. So if Satan is well Satan and the so-called Jews are "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) then what does that make the Roman Catholic Church? A church of Satan of course. Now you may claim I am being overly dramatic here but you need to remember why Jesus calls the so-called Jews "a synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9) As I said before Jesus calls the so-called Jews "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) because by rejecting Him as the Christ they are rejecting God's authority and hence are rebelling against God in the same exact way that Satan is rebelling against God. Thus as I said the Roman Catholic Church is also rebelling against God by claiming that the so-called Jews do not fall under Jesus's authority. Another way to look at it is that Satan is "the father of lies" (John 8:44) so since the Roman Catholic Church is promoting lies as truth it is doing the work of Satan. Then by doing the work of Satan it could then be called an assembly of Satan or a church of Satan.

Now do not think this means other churches are not churches of Satan either because the influence, corruption and lies of the so-called Jews run deep. This is why I said they are one of if not the most evil group in the world. To give you an example of what I mean how many Christians see themselves as not being Jews and see the so-called Jews as Jews? Then how many Christians see Israel as being the modern state of so-called Israel? Or worse yet how many Christians see Israel as being the so-called Jewish people? You can see where I am going with this and this is why the so-called Jews are so evil. The so-called Jews have literally twisted the Church into seeing them as being Jewish, part of Israel and the people of God even though the so-called Jews are not Jews, are not part of Israel and not part of the people of God. Instead the so-called Jews are "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) just as Jesus says they are.

This may not seem that destructive but when you give the so-called Jews claim over Israel you give them claim over the promises of God in what we call the Old Testament. This is why the topic of God's plan for so-called Israel is an actual topic in the Church today because many if not most Christians mistakenly believe that Israel is the so-called Jews. However as I said before in reality the Church and the body of all Christians is Israel. This means that we as Christians are the inheritors of the entire Bible from Genesis to Revelation so that all of God's promises are for us. This is why talking about God's plan for so-called Israel is completely nonsensical because none of the good promises and prophecies from the Old Testament are applicable to the so-called Jews since they have been cast out by God so that they are no longer Jews, no longer Israelites and no longer the people of God. So what is God's plan for the so-called Jews then because there must be something after all? Well as you can probably guess God's plan for the so-called Jews is death and destruction in that order. As I said before all the so-called Jews will be killed here on earth and then on the day of judgment after the resurrection they will face the same punishment Satan is to receive so that they will all be cast into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction.

But anyways all this is why I have said the so-called Jews are so evil and why they truly are "a synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9) Sure you may not like this but you cannot say it is false and that I am speaking lies.

As First John says:

> "By this you know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God, and every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist, which you heard was coming and now is in the world already." (1 John 4:2-3)

First off I would like to remind you that I do not consider the epistles the word of God or scripture and this is especially true of First John. This means that like I said before I do not believe anyone can just cite a couple verses from an epistle and say whatever they are saying is true. So why am I quoting this passage? Really I am just quoting this passage to demonstrate what the author, probably not the apostle John, believed when they were alive. My purpose here is just to show you that yes some of the authors of the New Testament believed the same thing I do.

If you remain skeptical of what I am saying then keep in mind that I wrote my entire part called Fulfilled Prophecy about this subject. As I have said before in this part I go over how and why God punished the so-called Jews with the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars. I also demonstrate using both the Old and New Testaments why the so-called Jews stand condemned before God so that their punishment did not stop with the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and why their punishment will not end until they are all cast into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction and damnation. Therefore just keep in mind that what you read here is the end all be all on this subject and that there is much more to it.

That said, based on this passage the author of First John believed that only those who confess "that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh" (1 John 4:2) are from God so that everyone else who "does not confess Jesus is not from God." (1 John 4:3) Instead those who do not confess Jesus are "the spirit of the antichrist" (1 John 4:3) as the author of First John says. Of course the word antichrist simply refers to being opposed to Christ and hence being opposed to God since God has appointed Jesus as the Christ. This is why many people often like to call the first beast of Revelation 13 the antichrist because the whole idea of the beast is that it is the chief opponent of the Christ and hence God on earth. In fact the beast will stand opposed to God and Jesus with such strength that Satan will even give "the beast his power and his throne and great authority" (Revelation 13:2) so that the beast can carry out his work on earth. My point here is that you should associate the term antichrist with Satan and his rebellion against God because all those who stand opposed to Jesus as the Christ also stand opposed to God since as I keep on saying Jesus is God's vicegerent.

Then because of this fact this once again means that the so-called Jews "falsely claim to be Jews, but are in fact a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) just as Jesus says because by rejecting Jesus as the Christ the so-called Jews have allied themselves with Satan as they join him in his rebellion against God. Therefore because of this fact all of the so-called Jews are evil as I have said already.

But what if you disagree with what I have said so far with regards to how the so-called Jews are one of if not the most evil group of people to ever exist? I mean surely all this theological stuff about how Jesus is the Christ is just a bunch of man made nonsense and the real God does not see the so-called Jews as evil because they are His so-called people right? Well no sorry. You see I have left out perhaps the most important detail concerning just why the so-called Jews can actually be considered to be the single most evil group in all history. So what exactly am I talking about here? That every single so-called Jew is a murderer. Now this might not make much sense so consider the following passage.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Now it was the governor's custom at the feast to release to the crowd a prisoner of their choosing. At that time they were holding a notorious prisoner named Barabbas. So when the crowd had assembled, Pilate asked them, 'Which one do you want me to release to you: Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ?' For he knew it was out of envy that they had handed Jesus over to him.
>
> While Pilate was sitting on the judgment seat, his wife sent him this message: 'Have nothing to do with that innocent man, for I have suffered terribly in a dream today because of Him.'
>
> But the chief priests and elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas and to have Jesus put to death.
>
> 'Which of the two do you want me to release to you?' asked the governor.
>
> 'Barabbas,' they replied.
>
> 'What then should I do with Jesus who is called Christ?' Pilate asked.
>
> They all answered, 'Crucify Him!'
>
> 'Why?' asked Pilate. 'What evil has He done?'
>
> But they shouted all the louder, 'Crucify Him!'
>
> When Pilate saw that he was accomplishing nothing, but that instead a riot was breaking out, he took water and washed his hands before the crowd. 'I am innocent of this man's blood,' he said. 'You bear the responsibility.'
>
> All the people answered, 'His blood be on us and on our children!'
>
> So Pilate released Barabbas to them. But he had Jesus flogged, and handed Him over to be crucified." (Matthew 27:15-26)

The key part in this passage is that the crowd of so-called Jews who demanded Jesus be crucified by shouting "Crucify Him" (Matthew 27:23) responded to Pilate saying "You bear the responsibility" (Matthew 27:24) with "His blood be on us and our children." (Matthew 27:25) This fact means that the so-called Jews have the blood of Jesus on themselves from the time of the first century AD all the way up to the present day. In other words every single so-called Jew is a murderer and no different than the so-called Jews who had a literal hand in killing Jesus in the first century AD.

Now you might protest this fact and you may even hate what I have said here and find all this ridiculous because you supposedly know that God does not hold the so-called responsible for killing Jesus. However as you will read about in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy God does in fact hold all of the so-called Jews responsible. For instance after the murder of Jesus as the hands of the so-called Jews God used the Romans to kill around two million so-called Jews as punishment during the so-called Jewish Roman Wars. Keep in mind that these so-called Jews were almost all born after Jesus's resurrection so they had no direct connection to those who murdered Jesus. Of course this judgment was just the beginning as you will see later on.

But what if the so-called Jews never actually said "His blood be on us and on our children!" (Matthew 27:25) as the Gospel of Matthew claims? Well I would actually agree it is quite unlikely that the so-called Jews actually said this. Wait what so why do I say the so-called Jews are murderers then? Well you see the idea behind the so-called Jews having blood of Jesus on their hands to this very day relates to the spiritual mindset of the so-called Jews. The idea here is that by rejecting Jesus as the Christ the so-called Jew spiritually aligns themselves with the so-called Jews of the Sanhedrin who actually desired to have Jesus killed. In other words through rejecting Jesus as the Christ all so-called Jews take the image of those who murdered Jesus. Of course since the Sanhedrin murdered Jesus because of their jealousy and how Jesus preached against them by calling them "whitewashed tombs" (Matthew 23:27) for example this means that the Sanhedrin and hence all so-called Jews have taken the image of Satan so that they become like Satan.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I have come here from God. I have not come on My own, but He sent Me.
>
> Why do you not understand what I am saying? It is because you are unable to accept My message. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, refusing to uphold the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, because he is a liar and the father of lies. But because I speak the truth, you do not believe Me!'" (John 8:42-45)

Thus as I said the so-called Jews have taken the image of Satan and Jesus even tells them "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires." (John 8:44) Then of course it is worth pointing out again that Jesus calls the so-called Jews "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) here in Revelation as you already know. This then means that since the so-called Jews are deeply spiritually evil and have allied with Satan there is little reason to see them as being innocent. Therefore instead of being innocent all of the so-called Jews have become murderers by taking on the image of the so-called Jews who murdered Jesus in the first century AD as I have said.

Because of this fact the only way a so-called Jew can wash their stained hands of the blood of Jesus is by having faith in Jesus and accepting Him as the Christ. Through this faith and acceptance they would then take the image of Jesus so that they become sanctified and cleansed and cease being a murderer because they are like Jesus now and not like Satan.

So the so-called Jews are the most evil group of people in history because every single so-called Jew is a murderer? Well yes and no. You see in order to understand why they can actually be seen as the most evil group in all of history you need to understand the nature of the murder that was committed in the first century AD when the so-called Jews killed Jesus. For instance as I keep on saying Jesus is the Christ or the one whom God has given His power and authority to so that Jesus can rule on His behalf. This means that we are not equal with Jesus now on earth in the sight of God. Sure you can say we will be adopted as the children of God after the resurrection in the new Jerusalem so that we will become equal with Jesus as you will see later on but for now we are not equal. This then means that the murder of Jesus is not equal to any other murder. In fact I would even go as far to say that the murder of Jesus by the so-called Jews is the worst crime ever perpetrated in the history of humanity. This is because by murdering Jesus the so-called Jews not only killed the most important person to have ever lived, the Christ, but by killing Him they committed a direct act of insurrection and rebellion against God that exceeds the wickedness of even Adam and Eve eating from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in the Garden of Eden.

Then since all the so-called Jews in history up to the present day have the blood of Jesus on their hands as I have said this then means that the so-called Jews would actually be the most evil group in all of history. Not only this but each individual so-called Jew no matter what they do, save accepting Jesus as the Christ and becoming a true Jew, is and will be considered among the worst and most detestable people to have ever lived. For example I doubt God will find greater fault with Cain and how he murdered Abel in Genesis over any so-called Jew who refuses to accept Jesus as the Christ. So wait am I actually saying the so-called Jews are more evil than the Nazis in Nazi Germany and the communist party in the Soviet Union or even Hitler and Stalin themselves? Yes, I am and I am not going to hide this fact no matter how many people will not like it. Remember, crimes against God are much worse than crimes against humanity so by killing the Christ the so-called Jews have committed the worst crime and sin in the history of humanity. This is why the so-called Jews are so evil.

But did Jesus not have to die? So then why are the so-called Jews at fault for killing Jesus? But you see God already knows and sees all so that He knows about everything that is to happen and so that nothing happens that is outside of God's plan. I realize this is a highly controversial idea that many if not most people hate but I talk about it in detail later on in my commentary on Revelation 13. Therefore for now just take God planning everything from the beginning as a given for now. That said I cannot leave you with nothing so consider the following passage.

As God says:

> "Remember what happened long ago, for I am God, and there is no other;
> I am God, and there is none like Me.
> I declare the end from the beginning, and ancient times from what is still to come.
> I say, 'My purpose will stand,
> and all My good pleasure I will accomplish.'
> I summon a bird of prey from the east, a man for My purpose from a far-off land.
> Truly I have spoken,
> and truly I will bring it to pass.
> I have planned it,
> and I will surely do it." (Isaiah 46:9-11)

This means that yes Jesus had to die at the hands of the so-called Jews but really everything that has ever happened has also had to happen. For example Adam and Eve, assuming that they actually existed, had to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. This means that sure you can claim that the so-called Jews are not at fault for murdering Jesus because God planned it but then you must say the same thing about literally every murder in human history starting with Cain killing Abel. Then because of this fact this line of reasoning does not work because then every murderer would simply be doing the will of God just as the so-called Jews did when they murdered Jesus. Therefore once again the so-called Jews are one of if not the most evil group in the history of humanity.

Next I would like to remind you because of the wickedness of the so-called Jews God has marked them all for death and destruction so that they will all share in Satan's fate. Just as the so-called Jews have joined with Satan in life so too will the so-called Jews join with Satan in death as they are cast into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction and damnation.

But why is this true exactly? I mean why will God not forgive the so-called Jews? Also do the so-called Jews not worship the same God as us true Jews or Christians? Therefore why would God's plan for the so-called Jews be death and then eternal destruction? These are good questions and rather than relying on the New Testament to answer them I will answer them using the Old Testament or more specifically the Book of Numbers from the Law of Moses. In this book the story of Korah's rebellion against Moses stands out as being directly comparable and applicable to the so-called Jews rebellion against Jesus. In fact the two rebellions are so similar that I believe God purposefully included Korah's rebellion in the Law as a warning to the so-called Jews about what will happen to them should they ever rebel against Him again by rebelling against those who God appoints to rule. Therefore as you read about Korah's rebellion against Moses keep in mind how the so-called Jews are rebelling against Jesus by rejecting Him as the Christ.

As the Book of Numbers says:

> "Now Korah son of Izhar, the son of Kohath son of Levi, along with some Reubenites—Dathan and Abiram, sons of Eliab, and On son of Peleth—conducted a rebellion against Moses, along with 250 men of Israel renowned as leaders of the congregation and representatives in the assembly. They came together against Moses and Aaron and told them, 'You have taken too much upon yourselves! For everyone in the entire congregation is holy, and the LORD is in their midst. Why then do you exalt yourselves above the assembly of the LORD?'" (Numbers 16:1-3)

Then as the Book of Numbers also says:

> "When Korah had gathered his whole assembly against them at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting, the glory of the LORD appeared to the whole congregation.
>
> And the LORD said to Moses and Aaron, 'Separate yourselves from this congregation so that I may consume them in an instant.'
>
> But Moses and Aaron fell facedown and said, 'O God, the God of the spirits of all flesh, when one man sins, will You be angry with the whole congregation?'
>
> Then the LORD said to Moses, 'Tell the congregation to move away from the dwellings of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram.'
>
> So Moses got up and went to Dathan and Abiram, and the elders of Israel followed him. And he warned the congregation, 'Move away now from the tents of these wicked men. Do not touch anything that belongs to them, or you will be swept away because of all their sins.'
>
> So they moved away from the dwellings of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram. Meanwhile, Dathan and Abiram had come out and stood at the entrances to their tents with their wives and children and infants.
>
> Then Moses said, 'This is how you will know that the LORD has sent me to do all these things, for it was not my own doing: If these men die a natural death, or if they suffer the fate of all men, then the LORD has not sent me. But if the LORD brings about something unprecedented, and the earth opens its mouth and swallows them and all that belongs to them so that they go down alive into Sheol, then you will know that these men have treated the LORD with contempt.'
>
> As soon as Moses had finished saying all this, the ground beneath them split open, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them and their households—all Korah's men and all their possessions. They went down alive into Sheol with all they owned. The earth closed over them, and they vanished from the assembly." (Numbers 16:19-33)

So why did God desire to initially kill not just Korah and those who joined him in his rebellion but the entire assembly and all of the ancient Israelites? Well to make this desire make sense you need to understand just what was so offensive to God about Korah questioning and rebelling against Moses. You see Moses was chosen and appointed by God to be the leader of the ancient Israelites during this time period. This means God gave Moses some, but not all, of His authority so that Moses could speak on behalf of God to the ancient Israelites. Then because of this fact when Korah tried to rebel against Moses he was not merely rebelling against Moses. Instead by rebelling against Moses Korah was actually rebelling against God because as I just said God had appointed Moses and given authority to Moses. This is then why God wanted to kill all of the ancient Israelites and wipe them out completely after Korah rebelled. The idea here is that the ultimate sin a person can commit is rebellion against God because as I said before crimes against God are much worse than crimes against humanity. So really God just wanted to nip the rebellion against Him in the bud by killing everyone in response even if they did not join Korah in his rebellion because by being merely associated with Korah in the same assembly they share in his sin and rebellion in a way.

I would also like to point out that Korah did not consider himself an apostate so you cannot claim that his sin was literally denouncing God. Instead all Korah wanted was for more people to share authority with Moses. Although keep in mind that by rebelling against Moses and hence rebelling against God Korah actually denounced God through his actions.

So now you can almost certainly see how Korah's rebellion against Moses applies to the so-called Jew's rebellion against Jesus. Although you need to keep one fact in mind. In truth the wickedness and evil of the so-called Jews can actually be argued to be infinitely greater than the wickedness and evil of Korah and those who joined him in his rebellion against Moses. This is because Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has given all His power and authority to use on His behalf. On the other hand God did not give Moses even a fraction of His power and authority. This means that instead of seeing Korah's rebellion as being antiquated and irrelevant as a point of comparison with the rebellion of so-called Jews against Jesus you should actually see the rebellion of the so-called Jews as being far worse. In other words the wickedness and evil of the so-called Jews is ten-thousand times greater than the wickedness and evil of Korah and his co-conspirators.

So my question to you is if God wanted to kill all of the ancient Israelites for Korah's rebellion against Moses and He only settled on killing Korah and his co-conspirators due to Moses's pleas then what do you think is going to happen to the so-called Jews who are rebelling against One greater than Moses? The answer is obvious. God is going to exterminate all of the so-called Jews so that not a single so-called Jew will remain alive.

As Jesus says:

> "And these enemies of mine who were unwilling for me to rule over them, bring them here and slay them in front of me." (Luke 19:27)

Not only this but after the resurrection of the dead occurs all of the so-called Jews will be thrown alive into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction and damnation. Remember, all of those who rebel against God will face this same fate as Satan himself.

At this point you may be questioning why God would do such a thing. I mean why do the so-called Jews deserve not just death but eternal destruction for their rebellion against Jesus Christ? Well first off as I keep on saying by rebelling against Jesus and rejecting Him as the Christ the so-called Jews are actually rebelling against God and rejecting His authority. Then since God is the final authority it only makes sense that all those who rebel against Him will be utterly destroyed. I mean you need to understand that the worst sin Satan himself has ever committed is rebelling against God and rejecting His authority. Then like Satan the so-called Jews are in full rebellion against God as they reject the authority of Jesus and His position as the Christ. So my question to you is this. If you believe that Satan is evil and deserves destruction for his rebellion against God then why do you think that the so-called Jews are good and deserve to live? Really these two positions are in contradiction with each other because if you believe that the so-called Jews deserve mercy for their rebellion against God then by the same reasoning Satan also deserves mercy for his rebellion against God. Then of course God has already told us that Satan will not receive mercy and that instead he will be cast into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction and damnation. This then means that in order to be logically consistent the so-called Jews will be cast into the Lake of Fire to face eternal destruction and damnation along with Satan because they are guilty of the same sin of rebellion against God that Satan is guilty of. Lastly I would also like to advise you against questioning God.

As the Book of Numbers says:

> "The next day the whole congregation of Israel grumbled against Moses and Aaron, saying, 'You have killed the LORD's people!' But when the congregation gathered against them, Moses and Aaron turned toward the Tent of Meeting, and suddenly the cloud covered it and the glory of the LORD appeared.
>
> Then Moses and Aaron went to the front of the Tent of Meeting, and the LORD said to Moses, 'Get away from this congregation so that I may consume them in an instant.' And Moses and Aaron fell facedown.
>
> Moses said to Aaron, 'Take your censer, place fire from the altar in it, and add incense. Go quickly to the congregation and make atonement for them, because wrath has come out from the LORD; the plague has begun.'
>
> So Aaron took the censer as Moses had ordered and ran into the midst of the assembly. And seeing that the plague had begun among the people, he offered the incense and made atonement for the people. He stood between the living and the dead, and the plague was halted. But those who died from the plague numbered 14,700, in addition to those who had died on account of Korah." (Numbers 16:41-49)

In this passage the ancient Israelites who were not killed because they did not join Korah in his rebellion grumble against Moses and Aaron accusing them of killing "the LORD's people" (Numbers 16:41) because they did not think Korah and his co-conspirators deserved death for what they did since they saw them as being faithful to God. However once again you need to understand that by rebelling against Moses Korah demonstrated that he was not faithful to God because by rebelling against Moses Korah was actually rebelling against God. Next the reason why God sent a plague against the congregation of the ancient Israelites is because by questioning Moses they were questioning God and rebelling against Him. In other words by claiming that God was unjust in punishing Korah and his rebellion through grumbling against Moses the ancient Israelites entered into a new state of rebellion against God. So that as a result they deserve the same fate as Korah and his rebellion received previously.

Therefore this means that when you question why God would punish the so-called Jews you are actually joining the so-called Jews in their rebellion against God just as the ancient Israelites joined Korah in his rebellion by questioning and accusing Moses of killing them. This is why I said I would advise against questioning God with respect to the punishments that the so-called Jews have received already and are yet to receive in the future because again by questioning God you will join the so-called Jews in their rebellion against God.

Alright so now at this point you may now be wondering if what I have said is correct then why does Paul refer to Jews, Greeks and Gentiles separately in his genuine epistles? Well first off you need to understand that the words of Paul are not the words of God. This means that you should not see what Paul wrote as being without error. Again I talk about why the Bible is not inerrant later on in my part called Various Insights so I am not going to fully demonstrate that the Bible is full of errors now. That said since I am talking about Paul here it would be helpful to demonstrate that Paul was in fact wrong about something major.

As Paul wrote:

> "Brothers, we do not want you to be uninformed about those who sleep in death, so that you will not grieve like the rest, who are without hope. For since we believe that Jesus died and rose again, we also believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in Him.
>
> By the word of the Lord, we declare to you that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a loud command, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will be the first to rise. After that, we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will always be with the Lord.
>
> Therefore encourage one another with these words." (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)

So what was Paul wrong about exactly? It is quite easy to miss so read the next quotations very carefully.

As Paul wrote:

> "By the word of the Lord, we declare to you that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who have fallen asleep." (1 Thessalonians 4:15)

And as Paul also wrote:

> "After that, we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will always be with the Lord." (1 Thessalonians 4:17)

The error is of course that in these two passages Paul directly says "we who are alive and remain" (1 Thessalonians 4:15) which means that Paul fully expects Jesus to return within the lifetimes of those who were alive when he wrote First Thessalonians. Let me repeat this. In other words Paul believed that Jesus was going to return in the first century AD. Now obviously it goes without saying that Jesus did not return in the first century AD so therefore Paul was wrong.

But wait can you not resolve this error by saying that Paul was actually being inspired by God and writing to a future generation of Christians far into the future? Sorry but no you cannot because this apologetic is objectively false. For starters consider the first verse of First Thessalonians in which Paul provides his opening address.

As Paul wrote:

> "Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy,
>
> To the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:
>
> Grace and peace to you." (1 Thessalonians 1:1)

Therefore obviously Paul is specifically writing to "the church of the Thessalonians" (1 Thessalonians 1:1) and he is not writing to us or to some future generation of Christians. You may still insist that Paul must be writing for some other generation because Paul cannot be wrong so consider the following verse which is from the end of the initial passage I quoted above.

As Paul wrote:

> "Therefore encourage one another with these words." (1 Thessalonians 4:18)

In this verse Paul is telling the Thessalonians to encourage one another so that they know "that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who have fallen asleep." (1 Thessalonians 4:15) Therefore Paul was most definitely writing to the Thessalonians and because of this fact Paul most definitely believed that Jesus was going to come in the first century AD.

Then of course obviously he was wrong and because of this fact Paul's writings are not without error. Now there are actually more errors in Paul's writings than this so you should not think of this as the sole error. Like I said my purpose here is just to show you that Paul was wrong so that you do not see the words of Paul as being without error. Later on in my part called Various Insights I go over many more errors.

As an aside I would like to briefly comment on the difference between Paul being wrong and what Revelation says concerning when the end will come. Now I realize you already read quite a long comment detailing why Revelation does not say the end will come soon and why the end cannot come soon so I am no going to review that here. Instead I want to talk about the key difference between Revelation and the epistles. You see the epistles were literally just letters that some person wrote to another group of people. They were never intended to be seen as the word of God when they were written. Well at least in terms of the genuine epistles that is. In terms of the epistles that are certainly forgeries these epistles were written with a specific purpose in mind to push a specific agenda so the authors of those epistles almost certainly intended them to be viewed as scripture. Again I go over this later on so do not worry about it for now.

By comparison the Book of Revelation is unique in the sense that it was written to all Christians. This is why there are seven letters to the seven churches and why you should see these seven letters as being addressed even to us today as I have said already. Thus what I am saying is that the epistles are not comparable to the Book of Revelation at all. Really the only similarity between the epistles and the Book of Revelation is that hundreds of years after they were written some people put them next to each other in a single book. In other words you should not see the epistles as being written to the same audience as the Book of Revelation. Again the epistles, at least the genuine ones, were literally written to a specific group of people in a specific city and the authors never knew or intended for their letters to survive until today.

You may still find this hard to believe so consider Paul for a second. He had a ministry that lasted around thirty years and he founded many different churches over that time period. In the New Testament there are seven genuine epistles from Paul out of a total of thirteen that are ascribed to him. So unless you want to believe that Paul wrote only one epistle every few years then there are probably dozens of lost epistles that we do not have. Keep in mind that in order for an epistle to not become lost many different people have to decide to copy it down and save it over centuries. Then since Paul and the early Christians literally believed that the end of the world was going to happen within their lifetimes and soon it is easy to imagine why not many Christians copied down everything they received in the first century AD.

Now to get back on the subject at hand my point with all this is that you should not see the epistles as being without error and flawless. Sure they are still useful in terms of demonstrating the point of view of the author but they are not the literal word of God and you should not see them as the literal word of God. Also I do not expect you to fully accept this position right now. Instead once you read what I have to say about the so-called inerrancy of the Bible later on and once you read through all the errors in the Bible you will see the Bible as being a human authored book to such an extent that you will see the epistles as being just some letters some people wrote with some of them being obvious forgeries just as I do. That said for now just know that Paul was indeed wrong and that Jesus did not return to usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God in the first century AD as he believed. Therefore all I am saying is that if Paul was wrong once then you cannot say Paul is always correct. Thus instead you should read the words of Paul as being words of Paul instead of as the words of God just as you read this book as being my words instead of the words of God. This then means that with regards to the so-called Jews you should not take a single verse of Paul out of context and say that settles it.

Additionally as a matter of more practical importance by Paul's own admission he has "become all things to all people" (1 Corinthians 9:22) so I am not sure how you can treat his words as the inspired words of God when he freely admits to telling people what they want to hear in an effort to make the message of the Gospel as appealing to as many groups of people as possible.

As Paul wrote:

> "Though I am free of obligation to anyone, I make myself a slave to everyone, to win as many as possible. To the Jews I became like a Jew, to win the Jews. To those under the law I became like one under the law (though I myself am not under the law), to win those under the law. To those without the law I became like one without the law (though I am not outside the law of God but am under the law of Christ), to win those without the law. To

the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to all people so that by all possible means I might save some." (1 Corinthians 9:19-22)

Therefore what I am saying is that if Paul said that he tailors the way he presents himself and changes what he says in order to "become all things to all people" (1 Corinthians 9:22) then how exactly can his words be considered accurate and trustworthy enough to be inspired word of God? I mean by Paul's own admission here any or even all of his epistles might not be the real Paul. This means that we really cannot even know for sure what Paul actually believed in because even the famous passages from his epistles that apologists have to use to try to prove some point could just be an example of Paul becoming "all things to all people" (1 Corinthians 9:22) as I said. In other words take what Paul says with a very large grain of salt because he changes his message and presentation to better serve his audience.

As an aside I would now just like to be that I could not disagree more with what Paul wrote above. Really I consider being two-faced or rather multi-faced a form of deceptive behavior because it is an intentional act that is used with the express purpose manipulating people into seeing what someone you are not. Sure you can argue that the ends justify the means in the sense that those Paul saved through deception are a greater good than those he may have upset that Paul used to spread the message he preached. However I would say that anything good cannot be based upon such a deception. This is because when people attempt to make the truth sweet by masking its innate bitterness with the sugar of your deceptions all you are doing is fooling the one hater of the truth. Then once someone learns of your deceptions so that they see the truth for what it is they will be hurtfully not just by you but by the very truth you warped them to accept as the sweet.

This is then why I do not sugarcoat anything in this book as you are no doubt aware of by now. I am not going to deceive you or anyone else by creating multiple versions of this book for each group of people so that I can get the most people as possible to understand the truth of the Book of Revelation and the coming beast. Instead I have written this book to be a singular message told in a singular way. To this end much of this book will be offensive to at least some group of people. In fact I would say that if someone reads this book and they were never offended in some way by anything I wrote then I would question if they actually read this book or not. Really I just see deception as the main tool of Satan and because my goal is to spread the things and message of God I do not see using the tools of Satan to do the work of God and of Jesus to be the correct course of action or even remotely beneficial. Thus this is why I directly say that the so-called Jews are evil without sugarcoating it and I believe the truth, or worse yet straight up lying, to make it more palpable for you to accept. Furthermore I would just like to say that my actual in real life personality, motivations, thought process and so forth are exactly the same as what you read in this book. This means that I am literally hiding nothing from you by pretending to be someone else in this book. In other words I wrote this book in my image and so you read this book you are listening to my uncensored thoughts.

Then because I am being 100% real with you reading this book you will actually fully understand me since this book is me I and I am this book.

But what about those who take offense at what say? In short I truly do not care if they do or even accept what I have to say let alone if they take offense to some of it. This is because I set my goal or rather obligation as being to present the truth. This means that by dressing up or worse yet covering up the truth to make it more palpable to people I would be failing my one obligation and goal of presenting the truth in full. Furthermore Jesus says that not everyone will see the truth.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked him, "Why do You speak to the people in parables?"

He replied, "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. This is why I speak to them in parables:

Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

'You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving.' For this people's heart has grown callous; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn, and I would heal them.'

But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but they did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:10-17)

Therefore the truth of the Christian, really Jewish, message is not something that everyone will be able to see. This is because of this fact why should I change and pervert my words in an effort to try to convince those who are deaf and blind about a truth they will never be able to see or hear regardless how it is presented? Therefore this is another reason why I refuse to change, pervert and corrupt my message in order to make it more palpable for a wider audience. I will not spiritually ally with Satan by engaging in his tactics and instead I will remain faithful to God until the end as I proceed with the mission given to me uncorrupted truth to the best of my ability that God has given me.

Alright so back to the topic at hand. So why does Paul use the words Jews, Gentiles, Greeks, Israel and so forth in his epistles exactly? Well in order to answer this question you need to understand the world in which the Paul lived in. So what world did Paul live in exactly?

But before I can answer this question let me ask you a question. When did the Jews always entirely become the so-called Jews? Sure you can say that some Jews living in the first century AD rejected Jesus they became a so-called Jew but what about the Jews as a people group become the so-called Jews so that they all rejected Jesus? Or did this even happen? Now obviously it happened and since I have brought up the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars several times already you should probably know that the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars is the answer. But more specifically it was the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and the destruction of the Second Temple is the more exact time period in which this transition happened. So what does this mean exactly? Well you see when Paul wrote his epistles he was writing about the time period between the Roman War and before the destruction of the Second Temple. This is the world in which Paul lived in.

Now what I just said may not make sense to you so let me ask you another question. If Jesus's resurrection occurred in 30 or 33 AD then how long would it take for a Jew living in say Alexandria in the Roman province of Egypt or a Jew living in Roman Greece to find out about Jesus and more importantly for they become so called Jew? The point here is that obviously not every Jew in the world knew about Jesus even say twenty years after His resurrection. I mean even the most generous estimate would place the number of Jesus's disciples in the hundreds after His resurrection but in truth there could have been as few as a couple dozen who remained faithful. Therefore it really would take a long time for the message to spread from the house of Israel. Thus, even having before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War who did not accept Jesus as the Christ. Because they have not heard about Jesus yet were in fact still Jews and not so-called Jews.

So what was so special about the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War? Really you need to understand what the Temple is and represents in Judaism. Essentially the Temple was and how Jews, including us, have a relationship with God because it was and is believed that God dwells inside the Temple. But wait if the Second Temple was destroyed then why do we speak as if we have a relationship with God through the Temple even to this very day? Well I say to Jesus as the Christ is the Third Temple and just like how the Jews of the Old Testament and First and Second Temples so too does the Spirit of God dwell inside Jesus.

As Jesus says:

"Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up again." (John 2:19)

Thus after Jesus's resurrection Jesus became the true Temple of God and the physical Second Temple began to fade away in importance. Now you may doubt this but this is why the Gospel of Matthew says the following:

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had cried out again in a loud voice, He yielded up His spirit. At that moment the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom." (Matthew 27:50-51)

The veil in the Temple was a curtain that separated the part of the Temple in which the Spirit of God was thought to dwell and the part of the Temple that people could enter. Thus the veil is essentially symbolic of the separation between God and man. Then the tearing of the veil is symbolic of the separation between God and man being removed so that anyone can have access to the Spirit of God through having faith in Jesus and accepting Him as the Christ. This is why Jesus as the Christ is the Third Temple of God.

Then as the author of Ephesians says:

"Therefore you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of God's household, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus Himself as the cornerstone. In Him the whole building is fitted together and grows into a holy temple in the Lord. And in Him you too are being built together into a dwelling place for God in His Spirit." (Ephesians 2:19-22)

Thus clearly the author of Ephesians has a similar view to the one I just stated above. That said there is an important difference in that they believe we "are being built together into a dwelling place for God in His Spirit." (Ephesians 2:22) The idea here is that although Jesus is the Temple of God now, through being faithful to God through Jesus we are being built into the Temple so that we become part of the Temple of God. Really this has the resurrection in view here.

As Jesus says:

"The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again go out from it." (Revelation 3:12)

Thus really we will only become part of the Temple of God after the resurrection just as Jesus only became the Temple of God after His resurrection.

If you want to contest Jesus and by extension the Christian faith being the Third Temple of God you need to be able to prove that this letter or any other part of the Bible is actually Fulfilled Prophecy. Therefore just accept what I am saying that I have the Fulfilled Prophecy in my position to be correct beyond any doubt in due time.

Alright so now that you understand the importance of the Temple and how Jesus is the Third Temple you are now able to understand how the Second Temple and its destruction relates to the so-called Jews and the so-called Jews. Really the idea here is that as long as the Second Temple stood the Jews, or soon to be so-called Jews, had a relationship with God. However once the Second Temple was destroyed this relationship was severed so that the only way the now so-called Jews could have a relationship with God would be by accepting Jesus as the Christ since He is the now eternal Temple of God on Earth.

"Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever rejects the Son will never see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:36)

The so-called Jews have explicitly and undeniably rejected Jesus because that is what their so-called Judaism teaches them. Therefore the wrath of God remains upon them and they will be punished for their disobedience to God by being cast into the Lake of Fire.

Now as an aside you may be wondering if the passage above from Leviticus means that God will completely reject Israel as a people and Jesus as I have said. I mean did God not say he will not do it? Well, no, He did not reject the first century remained Jews through accepting Jesus as the Christ. Even after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and onward many Hebrews who were so-called Jews became Jews through accepting Jesus as the Christ. Really you can say that the so-called Jews became after centuries of mixing with Christian, or Gentile, European descent they just became Christian and no longer ethnically identified as Hebrew. Therefore this means that even if you want to say that God did actually not to destroy the biological children of Abraham or the Hebrews, yes Israel and the so-called Jews, then the Church already has the biological children of Abraham in it. This fact then means that God could actually completely exterminate every single Jew on Earth and the entire world right now and He would not be violating any of the promises He made to the patriarchs. Now you may disagree with this but Paul actually has a similar view.

As Paul wrote:

"I ask then, did God reject His people? Certainly not! I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin. God did not reject His people, whom He foreknew. Do you not know what the Scripture says about Elijah, how he appealed to God against Israel: "Lord, they killed Your prophets and torn down Your altars. I am the only one left, and they are seeking my life as well?"

And what was the divine reply to him? I have reserved for Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal."

In the same way, at the present time there is a remnant chosen by grace. And if it is by grace, then it is no longer by works. Otherwise, grace would no longer be grace.

What then? What Israel was seeking, it failed to obtain, but the elect did. The others were hardened, as it is written:

"God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that could not see, and ears that could not hear, to this very day."

And David says:

"May their table become a snare and a trap, a stumbling block and a retribution to them. May their eyes be darkened so they cannot see, and their backs be bent forever." (Romans 11:1-10)

The idea here is that there is a remnant that God considers to be the true biological children of Abraham and then there are all the others, the so-called Jews, whom God has rejected and cast out as His people. This remnant would of course be the Jews who were saved in days by accepting Jesus as the Christ and the so-called Jews who became part of the promises by accepting Jesus as the Christ. Therefore you really cannot claim that Paul is talking about the so-called Jews when he references Israel or the Jews.

As a result of all this God would not be violating any of His promises by completely rejecting the so-called Jew in the world today. Remember the promise in Leviticus was not made to the so-called Jews of today as a group, instead it was made to the ancient Hebrews. Therefore as long as there are descendants of the Hebrews in the Church today who would fall outside of God's protection and be so-called Jews then God would not be breaking any promise by killing every single Jew. Really God would be faith in Jesus. Sure God could kill them all and now if he wanted to but he would until the end of the age to kill them all He is showing them mercy and giving them a chance. The second is that Revelation says the so-called Jews will still be around at the end of the age when Jesus returns.

As Revelation says:

"Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen." (Revelation 1:7)

And as Jesus says:

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them know and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9)

But why keep the so-called Jews around until the end? Well this question is not answered directly but I could say that God is showing a completely annihilate the so-called Jews all because Paul says Israel will be cut off like can show them all that they are wrong before He kills them. The idea is that God wants to punish the so-called Jews for their murder of the Son Jesus. As a result God is waiting patiently until the time comes for Jesus to return so that the so-called Jews will see Jesus as they were wrong before Jesus "treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty" (Revelation 19:15) and kills them all. Think of it as the so-called Jews are liars collectively punished. Thus it would only make sense for their punishment to be rendered after the proof of their crime is revealed to the world for all to see.

Now back to the topic at hand. So does all the above mean that God has rejected Israel? It not. Quote the chapter of Romans. As a reminder Paul wrote:

"I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you will not be conceited: A hardening in part has come to Israel, until the full number of the Gentiles has come in. And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written:

"The Deliverer will come from Zion; He will remove godlessness from Jacob. And this is My covenant with them when I take away their sins."

Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:25-29)

First of this is the go to passage that people use to support that God has rejected Israel are in fact Jews and part of Israel. So what is the problem here then? Well a major problem is that if you want to take Israel as meaning the so-called Jews then what Paul actually directly contradicts both what Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew and the Book of Revelation. Then because of the nature of these contradictions and the fact that they are irreconcilable contradictions you must either accept what the Gospels and Revelation say as true or you what Paul says is true. Then before going over the passages that demonstrate that either Paul is wrong or that Jesus is wrong about what you probably think he is talking about it would be helpful to try to explain what Paul could be talking about. I say could here because really Paul actually contradicts itself so that we cannot be sure what he actually believed. Maybe Paul was just trying to confuse confused about which person he is trying to be?

As Paul wrote:

"It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, "through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned." So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

Thus really I am not sure what to think. I mean here in Romans 9 Paul is clearly saying that your status as an Israelite does not depend upon birthright and instead it depends on God's choice alone so that God can choose non-children of Abraham to continue on the legacy of Israel. This view is of course demonstrated in the Gospels.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his place of baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? Produce fruit, then, in keeping with repentance. And do not think to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that God can raise stones to God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe lies ready at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire." (Matthew 3:7-10)

In this passage John the Baptist tells the Pharisees and Sadducees that being a biological descendant of Abraham will not protect them from the fire they need to produce fruit because otherwise God will not keep the promise because it governs earthly realities. However the promised land of Israel represents a spiritual promise. This promise was of course fulfilled in Jesus and all those who believe in Jesus, in the same way Abraham had faith in God, will be counted officially as the children of Abraham and part of God's people. While God's promise of Israel being the land of descendants of Abraham is temporary because the earth is temporary, God's promise of the spiritual descendants of Abraham is eternal because only those with faith in Jesus will enter the Kingdom of God.

Then as Jesus says:

"Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever rejects the Son will never see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:36)

The so-called Jews have explicitly and undeniably rejected Jesus because that is what their so-called Judaism teaches them. Therefore the wrath of God remains upon them and they will be punished for their disobedience to God by being cast into the Lake of Fire.

Now as an aside you may be wondering if the passage above from Leviticus means that God will completely reject Israel as a people and Jesus as I have said. I mean did God not say he will not do it? Well, no, He did not reject the first century remained Jews through accepting Jesus as the Christ. Even after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and onward many Hebrews who were so-called Jews became Jews through accepting Jesus as the Christ. Really you can say that the so-called Jews became after centuries of mixing with Christian, or Gentile, European descent they just became Christian and no longer ethnically identified as Hebrew. Therefore this means that even if you want to say that God actually not to destroy the biological children of Abraham or the Hebrews, yes Israel and the so-called Jews, then the Church already has the biological children of Abraham in it. This fact then means that God could actually completely exterminate every single Jew on Earth and the entire world right now and He would not be violating any of the promises He made to the patriarchs. Now you may disagree with this but Paul actually has a similar view.

As Paul wrote:

"I ask then, did God reject His people? Certainly not! I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin. God did not reject His people, whom He foreknew. Do you not know what the Scripture says about Elijah, how he appealed to God against Israel: "Lord, they killed Your prophets and torn down Your altars. I am the only one left, and they are seeking my life as well?"

And what was the divine reply to him? I have reserved for Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal."

In the same way, at the present time there is a remnant chosen by grace. And if it is by grace, then it is no longer by works. Otherwise, grace would no longer be grace.

What then? What Israel was seeking, it failed to obtain, but the elect did. The others were hardened, as it is written:

"God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that could not see, and ears that could not hear, to this very day."

And David says:

"May their table become a snare and a trap, a stumbling block and a retribution to them. May their eyes be darkened so they cannot see, and their backs be bent forever." (Romans 11:1-10)

The idea here is that there is a remnant that God considers to be the true biological children of Abraham and then there are all the others, the so-called Jews, whom God has rejected and cast out as His people. This remnant would of course be the Jews who were saved in days by accepting Jesus as the Christ and the so-called Jews who became part of the promises by accepting Jesus as the Christ. Therefore you really cannot claim that Paul is talking about the so-called Jews when he references Israel or the Jews.

As a result of all this God would not be violating any of His promises by completely rejecting the so-called Jew in the world today. Remember the promise in Leviticus was not made to the so-called Jews of today as a group, instead it was made to the ancient Hebrews. Therefore as long as there are descendants of the Hebrews in the Church today who would fall outside of God's protection and be so-called Jews then God would not be breaking any promise by killing every single Jew. Really God would be faith in Jesus. Sure God could kill them all and now if he wanted to but he would until the end of the age to kill them all He is showing them mercy and giving them a chance. The second is that Revelation says the so-called Jews will still be around at the end of the age when Jesus returns.

As Revelation says:

"Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen." (Revelation 1:7)

And as Jesus says:

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them know and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9)

But why keep the so-called Jews around until the end? Well this question is not answered directly but I could say that God is showing a completely annihilate the so-called Jews all because Paul says Israel will be cut off like can show them all that they are wrong before He kills them. The idea is that God wants to punish the so-called Jews for their murder of the Son Jesus. As a result God is waiting patiently until the time comes for Jesus to return so that the so-called Jews will see Jesus as they were wrong before Jesus "treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty" (Revelation 19:15) and kills them all. Think of it as the so-called Jews are liars collectively punished. Thus it would only make sense for their punishment to be rendered after the proof of their crime is revealed to the world for all to see.

Now back to the topic at hand. So does all the above mean that God has rejected Israel? It not. Quote the chapter of Romans. As a reminder Paul wrote:

"I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you will not be conceited: A hardening in part has come to Israel, until the full number of the Gentiles has come in. And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written:

"The Deliverer will come from Zion; He will remove godlessness from Jacob. And this is My covenant with them when I take away their sins."

Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:25-29)

First of this is the go to passage that people use to support that God has rejected Israel are in fact Jews and part of Israel. So what is the problem here then? Well a major problem is that if you want to take Israel as meaning the so-called Jews then what Paul actually directly contradicts both what Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew and the Book of Revelation. Then because of the nature of these contradictions and the fact that they are irreconcilable contradictions you must either accept what the Gospels and Revelation say as true or you what Paul says is true. Then before going over the passages that demonstrate that either Paul is wrong or that Jesus is wrong about what you probably think he is talking about it would be helpful to try to explain what Paul could be talking about. I say could here because really Paul actually contradicts itself so that we cannot be sure what he actually believed. Maybe Paul was just trying to confuse confused about which person he is trying to be?

As Paul wrote:

"It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, "through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned." So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6) Thus the idea here is that although Jesus is the Third Temple of God through Jesus are the children of God and Israel.

But what about the following verses from the above passage from Romans 11?

As Paul wrote:

"Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:28-29)

In this passage the word translated as election is more accurately defined as a divine selection or God choosing. Thus Paul might not be talking about election in regards to who God chooses we see it and instead he could be referring to an earthly promise that God made to their ancestors.

As Jesus says:

"Yet in spite of this, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not reject or despise them so as to destroy them and break My covenant with them, for I am the LORD their God. But for their sake I will remember the covenant with their forefathers, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the nations, that I might be their God. I am the LORD." (Leviticus 26:44-45)

Thus the idea is that Paul could be saying that saying God will keep His earthly covenant with the patriarchs so that He will not completely destroy the so-called Jews in a punishment even though they have disobeyed Him. This is why Paul said "Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account" (Romans 11:28) because the so-called Jews were persecuting Christians. Hence they would be enemies on account of the gospel. However Paul then goes on to say that they will not be destroyed because of this by saying that "regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:29)

Thus Paul might not saying all the so-called Jews are saved or going to heaven in Romans 11. Instead he could be recognizing that they are safe from being completely destroyed now because of God's promise to the patriarchs. Then Paul also correct recognizes that "not all who are descended from Israel are Israel." (Romans 9:6) So clearly even Paul does not consider those who are not Jesus as part of Israel in some sense. This is why Paul saying that all Israel will be saved is irrelevant as a counter point to what I am saying because Paul literally says that all who are descended from Israel are Israel." (Romans 9:6) I am sorry if I am being repetitive here I just want to get this across because many who call themselves Christians who support the so-called Jews in their so-called Israel fail to see that Paul says in Romans 11 while ignoring Romans 9.

Therefore what is being presented here is that the promise of the land of Israel, and Jesus, and God's promise not to destroy all of the descendants of Abraham is an earthly promise because it governs earthly realities. However the promised land represents and relates to a spiritual promise. This promise was of course fulfilled in Jesus and all those who believe in Jesus, in the same way Abraham had faith in God, will be counted officially as the children of Abraham and part of God's people. While God's promise of Israel being the land of descendants of Abraham is temporary because the earth is temporary, God's promise of the spiritual descendants of Abraham is eternal because only those with faith in Jesus will enter the Kingdom of God.

Then as Jesus says:

"Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever rejects the Son will never see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:36)

The so-called Jews are evil and I say that without sugarcoating it. Jesus is the Third Temple of God and the so-called Jews are evil because they reject God's Son and Jesus is the Third Temple of God. Now I do not care if the so-called Jews are evil because I believe the truth is the truth and I am not going to sugarcoat it or lie to make it more palpable for people to accept. Furthermore I would just like to say that my actual in real life personality, motivations, thought process and so forth are exactly the same as what you read in this book. This means that I am literally hiding nothing from you by pretending to be someone else in this book. In other words I wrote this book in my image and so you read this book you are listening to my uncensored thoughts.

Then because I am being 100% real with you reading this book you will actually fully understand me since this book is me I and I am this book.

But what about those who take offense at what say? In short I truly do not care if they do or even accept what I have to say let alone if they take offense to some of it. This is because I set my goal or rather obligation as being to present the truth. This means that by dressing up or worse yet covering up the truth to make it more palpable to people I would be failing my one obligation and goal of presenting the truth in full. Furthermore Jesus says that not everyone will see the truth.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked him, "Why do You speak to the people in parables?"

He replied, "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. This is why I speak to them in parables:

Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

'You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving.' For this people's heart has grown callous; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn, and I would heal them.'

But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:10-17)

Therefore the truth of the Christian, really Jewish, message is not something that everyone will be able to see. This is because of this fact why should I change and pervert my words in an effort to try to convince those who are deaf and blind about a truth they will never be able to see or hear regardless how it is presented? Therefore this is another reason why I refuse to change, pervert and corrupt my message in order to make it more palpable for a wider audience. I will not spiritually ally with Satan by engaging in his tactics and instead I will remain faithful to God until the end as I proceed with the mission given to me uncorrupted truth to the best of my ability that God has given me.

Alright so back to the topic at hand. So why does Paul use the words Jews, Gentiles, Greeks, Israel and so forth in his epistles exactly? Well in order to answer this question you need to understand the world in which the Paul lived in. So what world did Paul live in exactly?

But before I can answer this question let me ask you a question. When did the Jews always entirely become the so-called Jews? Sure you can say that some Jews living in the first century AD rejected Jesus they became a so-called Jew but what about the Jews as a people group become the so-called Jews so that they all rejected Jesus? Or did this even happen? Now obviously it happened and since I have brought up the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars several times already you should probably know that the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars is the answer. But more specifically it was the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and the destruction of the Second Temple is the more exact time period in which this transition happened. So what does this mean exactly? Well you see when Paul wrote his epistles he was writing about the time period between the Roman War and before the destruction of the Second Temple. This is the world in which Paul lived in.

Now what I just said may not make sense to you so let me ask you another question. If Jesus's resurrection occurred in 30 or 33 AD then how long would it take for a Jew living in say Alexandria in the Roman province of Egypt or a Jew living in Roman Greece to find out about Jesus and more importantly for they become so called Jew? The point here is that obviously not every Jew in the world knew about Jesus even say twenty years after His resurrection. I mean even the most generous estimate would place the number of Jesus's disciples in the hundreds after His resurrection but in truth there could have been as few as a couple dozen who remained faithful. Therefore it really would take a long time for the message to spread from the house of Israel. Thus, even having before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War who did not accept Jesus as the Christ. Because they have not heard about Jesus yet were in fact still Jews and not so-called Jews.

So what was so special about the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War? Really you need to understand what the Temple is and represents in Judaism. Essentially the Temple was and how Jews, including us, have a relationship with God because it was and is believed that God dwells inside the Temple. But wait if the Second Temple was destroyed then why do we speak as we have a relationship with God through the Temple even to this very day? Well I say to Jesus as the Christ is the Third Temple and just like how the Jews of the Old Testament and First and Second Temples so too does the Spirit of God dwell inside Jesus.

As Jesus says:

"Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up again." (John 2:19)

Thus after Jesus's resurrection Jesus became the true Temple of God and the physical Second Temple began to fade away in importance. Now you may doubt this but this is why the Gospel of Matthew says the following:

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had cried out again in a loud voice, He yielded up His spirit. At that moment the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom." (Matthew 27:50-51)

The veil in the Temple was a curtain that separated the part of the Temple in which the Spirit of God was thought to dwell and the part of the Temple that people could enter. Thus the veil is essentially symbolic of the separation between God and man. Then the tearing of the veil is symbolic of the separation between God and man being removed so that anyone can have access to the Spirit of God through having faith in Jesus and accepting Him as the Christ. This is why Jesus as the Christ is the Third Temple of God.

Then as the author of Ephesians says:

"Therefore you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of God's household, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus Himself as the cornerstone. In Him the whole building is fitted together and grows into a holy temple in the Lord. And in Him you too are being built together into a dwelling place for God in His Spirit." (Ephesians 2:19-22)

Thus clearly the author of Ephesians has a similar view to the one I just stated above. That said there is an important difference in that they believe we "are being built together into a dwelling place for God in His Spirit." (Ephesians 2:22) The idea here is that although Jesus is the Temple of God now, through being faithful to God through Jesus we are being built into the Temple so that we become part of the Temple of God. Really this has the resurrection in view here.

As Jesus says:

"The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again go out from it." (Revelation 3:12)

Thus really we will only become part of the Temple of God after the resurrection just as Jesus only became the Temple of God after His resurrection.

If you want to contest Jesus and by extension the Christian faith being the Third Temple of God you need to prove that this letter or any other part of the Bible is actually Fulfilled Prophecy. Therefore just accept what I am saying that I have the Fulfilled Prophecy in my position to be correct beyond any doubt in due time.

Alright so now that you understand the importance of the Temple and how Jesus is the Third Temple you are now able to understand how the Second Temple and its destruction relates to the so-called Jews and the so-called Jews. Really the idea here is that as long as the Second Temple stood the Jews, or soon to be so-called Jews, had a relationship with God. However once the Second Temple was destroyed this relationship was severed so that the only way the now so-called Jews could have a relationship with God would be by accepting Jesus as the Christ since He is the now eternal Temple of God on Earth.

This is also why God had to destroy the Second Temple. Really the Second Temple just outlived its usefulness. Jesus as the Temple of God in the start of Jesus's ministry or from about 40 years later. Really God could have destroyed the Roman Empire to destroy the Second Temple so completely that it could not be rebuilt upon another. Now 1 mention 40 years here because the number 40 is another symbolic number that seems to be a period of transition and testing. This would of course make sense since the period in question was a period of transition from the old system of the Second Temple to the new system of the Third Temple Jesus as the Christ. Then of course this period was also a period of testing for the so-called Jews and the called Jews since whoever refused to accept Jesus as the Christ, Christ, Messiah, Savior, God was destroyed would become a so-called Jew Hebrews who were so-called Jews because Jews through accepting Jesus as the Christ. Really you can say that the so-called Jews because after centuries of mixing with Christian, or Gentile, European descent they just became Christian and no longer ethnically identified as Hebrew. Therefore this means that even if you want to say that God actually not to destroy the biological children of Abraham or the Hebrews, yes Israel and the so-called Jews, then the Church already has the biological children of Abraham in it. This fact then means that God could actually completely exterminate every single Jew on Earth and the entire world right now and He would not be violating any of the promises He made to the patriarchs. Now you may disagree with this but Paul actually has a similar view.

As Paul wrote:

"I ask then, did God reject His people? Certainly not! I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin. God did not reject His people, whom He foreknew. Do you not know what the Scripture says about Elijah, how he appealed to God against Israel: "Lord, they killed Your prophets and torn down Your altars. I am the only one left, and they are seeking my life as well?"

And what was the divine reply to him? I have reserved for Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal."

In the same way, at the present time there is a remnant chosen by grace. And if it is by grace, then it is no longer by works. Otherwise, grace would no longer be grace.

What then? What Israel was seeking, it failed to obtain, but the elect did. The others were hardened, as it is written:

"God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that could not see, and ears that could not hear, to this very day."

And David says:

"May their table become a snare and a trap, a stumbling block and a retribution to them. May their eyes be darkened so they cannot see, and their backs be bent forever." (Romans 11:1-10)

The idea here is that there is a remnant that God considers to be the true biological children of Abraham and then there are all the others, the so-called Jews, whom God has rejected and cast out as His people. This remnant would of course be the Jews who were saved in days by accepting Jesus as the Christ and the so-called Jews who became part of the promises by accepting Jesus as the Christ. Therefore you really cannot claim that Paul is talking about the so-called Jews when he references Israel or the Jews.

As a result of all this God would not be violating any of His promises by completely rejecting the so-called Jew in the world today. Remember the promise in Leviticus was not made to the so-called Jews of today as a group, instead it was made to the ancient Hebrews. Therefore as long as there are descendants of the Hebrews in the Church today who would fall outside of God's protection and be so-called Jews then God would not be breaking any promise by killing every single Jew. Really God would be faith in Jesus. Sure God could kill them all and now if he wanted to but he would until the end of the age to kill them all He is showing them mercy and giving them a chance. The second is that Revelation says the so-called Jews will still be around at the end of the age when Jesus returns.

As Revelation says:

"Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen." (Revelation 1:7)

And as Jesus says:

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them know and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9)

But why keep the so-called Jews around until the end? Well this question is not answered directly but I could say that God is showing a completely annihilate the so-called Jews all because Paul says Israel will be cut off like can show them all that they are wrong before He kills them. The idea is that God wants to punish the so-called Jews for their murder of the Son Jesus. As a result God is waiting patiently until the time comes for Jesus to return so that the so-called Jews will see Jesus as they were wrong before Jesus "treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty" (Revelation 19:15) and kills them all. Think of it as the so-called Jews are liars collectively punished. Thus it would only make sense for their punishment to be rendered after the proof of their crime is revealed to the world for all to see.

Now back to the topic at hand. So does all the above mean that God has rejected Israel? It not. Quote the chapter of Romans. As a reminder Paul wrote:

"I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you will not be conceited: A hardening in part has come to Israel, until the full number of the Gentiles has come in. And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written:

"The Deliverer will come from Zion; He will remove godlessness from Jacob. And this is My covenant with them when I take away their sins."

Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:25-29)

First of this is the go to passage that people use to support that God has rejected Israel are in fact Jews and part of Israel. So what is the problem here then? Well a major problem is that if you want to take Israel as meaning the so-called Jews then what Paul actually directly contradicts both what Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew and the Book of Revelation. Then because of the nature of these contradictions and the fact that they are irreconcilable contradictions you must either accept what the Gospels and Revelation say as true or you what Paul says is true. Then before going over the passages that demonstrate that either Paul is wrong or that Jesus is wrong about what you probably think he is talking about it would be helpful to try to explain what Paul could be talking about. I say could here because really Paul actually contradicts itself so that we cannot be sure what he actually believed. Maybe Paul was just trying to confuse confused about which person he is trying to be?

As Paul wrote:

"It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, "through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned." So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6) Thus the idea here is that although Jesus is the Third Temple of God through Jesus are the children of God and Israel.

But what about the following verses from the above passage from Romans 11?

As Paul wrote:

"Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:28-29)

In this passage the word translated as election is more accurately defined as a divine selection or God choosing. Thus Paul might not be talking about election in regards to who God chooses we see it and instead he could be referring to an earthly promise that God made to their ancestors.

As Jesus says:

"Yet in spite of this, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not reject or despise them so as to destroy them and break My covenant with them, for I am the LORD their God. But for their sake I will remember the covenant with their forefathers, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the nations, that I might be their God. I am the LORD." (Leviticus 26:44-45)

Thus the idea is that Paul could be saying that saying God will keep His earthly covenant with the patriarchs so that He will not completely destroy the so-called Jews in a punishment even though they have disobeyed Him. This is why Paul said "Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account" (Romans 11:28) because the so-called Jews were persecuting Christians. Hence they would be enemies on account of the gospel. However Paul then goes on to say that they will not be destroyed because of this by saying that "regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:29)

Thus Paul might not saying all the so-called Jews are saved or going to

Then when Jesus calls the so-called Jews "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) you should understand it to mean an assembly of rebellion against God. Now this may not seem that serious to you compared to the malevolent and malicious conception of Satan you may have in mind however this is no the case. This is because as I said before in my commentary on the previous verse the worst sin a person can commit is to sin against God because crimes against God are greater than crimes against humanity. Then in terms of sinning against God there is no greater sin than being in open rebellion against God. Therefore although Satan is not who you probably thought he was he is still none the less representative of the greatest evil to ever exist.

But then if all those who rebel against God are Satan then how does Satan accuse those who rebel against God? Well you see God can see all and He knows all so He does not actually need a literal character called Satan to accuse people. Instead those who rebel against God accuse themselves through their acts of rebellion. Thus the idea that there are all those who become Satan through their rebellion against God accuse themselves and stand as a witness against themselves. Then because of this Satan is still the accuser.

Furthermore according to this view this would then mean that when Satan is cast into the Lake of Fire to torment forever and ever the destruction would actually be representative of God ending all rebellion against Him forever.

Alright so which of these two ways to view Satan is correct then? Well really I would actually say both are accurate. Therefore you should see Satan as being an accuser who seeks to tend people to sin by leading them into temptation and you should also see everyone who rebels against God as being Satan.

(10) "to steal you from your God and to put to test you" – I said something about this in the previous comment so just to remind you in the first century AD Christians would sometimes throw Christians into prison for refusing to honor false pagan gods or the emperor of Rome and certain rituals. Thus the idea here with respect to the time period in which Revelation was written is that persecution is coming for Christians who refuse to engage in pagan practices.

Now you may believe that this verse only concerns the first and early second century centuries AD however since the seven letters to the seven churches represent the entire Christ Church throughout all time this means that what Jesus says here can be applied to every time period. For instance there have been many Christians since the first and second century AD who have been put in prison by Satan as a form of persecution. Furthermore if you want to take prison figuratively in the sense that the faithful are to be watched by others then in this case you do not need to literally be in prison. Instead whenever you feel pressure from others to rebel against God then you should see this as what you do then you will be facing what Jesus is talking about here. This then means that since the first beast of Revelation 13 finally arises and the whole world is in rebellion against God then you will be in an earthly prison with no bars that closes around you as the beast and its followers continually watch you as they tempt and pressure you into joining them in their rebellion against God.

(10) "and you will suffer tribulation for ten days." – Here tribulation can be understood to mean persecution, affliction or distress. Therefore you should see this as being physical persecution in view here and instead you should have a more broad definition of tribulation in view that would include financial persecution and trials in general. Then in terms of the reference "for ten days" (Revelation 2:10) there is no actual number of days. Instead ten days is symbolic of a complete earthly period of time because ten is a symbolic number that represents completeness especially related to an earthly period of time. If you want to dispute this then notice how directly after Jesus says "Be faithful even unto death" (Revelation 2:10) which implies that those in question will be faithful even unto death rather than for a literal ten days. Therefore clearly the literal meaning of the number ten is in view here and not the literal meaning. Lastly suffering "tribulation for ten days" (Revelation 2:10) does not only apply to those in the church in Smyrna but to all Christians of all ages. This is because Satan and his agents may come to test us at anytime. Therefore we are to always be ready to suffer whatever tribulation is required of us as we await for the day to come when Jesus finally returns with power to usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God.

(10) "Be faithful even unto death, and I will give you the crown of life." – The crown of life is representative of eternal life. Therefore we should not worry about facing death at the hands of those who oppose us because Jesus will use His authority as the Christ to give us eternal life and we will live again forever more with Him.

(11) "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." – Just as previously you should see that the Holy Spirit says to the churches if you have spiritual ears and you can only have spiritual ears to hear if you belong to God.

As Jesus says:

"Whoever belongs to God hears the words of God. The reason you do not hear them is that you do not belong to God." (John 8:47)

(11) "The one who overcomes will not be harmed by the second death." – The second death is an eternal death that lasts forever which is cast into the Lake of Fire forever. This is the view of hell that is called annihilationism where the wicked are cast into the lake of fire dead including both the faithful and unfaithful as told in Revelation 20 then following this the faithful will live forever in the new Jerusalem with God while the unfaithful will be cast into the Lake of Fire to face destruction or the second death. There is another view that the Scriptures teach of hell in Revelation. I go into this fact later on in this commentary but in short the wicked

allowing ourselves to become apathetic. The idea here is that Jesus is not saying that those of the church in Thyatira are lacking in any of their deeds and that instead all Jesus is saying is that some of their deeds are greater than their other deeds. In other words Jesus is just offering a friendly reminder that all of our deeds or works are important and that we should not prioritize one kind of deed over another. This fact can be seen with what Jesus says concerning the greatest commandment.

As Jesus says:

> "'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

The point here is that you need to demonstrate both love of God and love of your neighbor through your works and deeds. This then means that you cannot simply love God alone or love your neighbor alone in order to be considered a faithful Christian. For example someone who only loves God and does not love their neighbor is just as sinful as someone who does not love God and does love their neighbor. Therefore we should all remember to always love God and our neighbor in all that we do just as Jesus says we should.

(20) "But I have this against you:" – First off just like I said previously Jesus was not accusing or condemning those in this church by saying "your latter deeds are greater than your first." (Revelation 2:19) Instead Jesus is merely reminding us that we need to always make sure to perform good works and that we need to both demonstrate love of God and love of our neighbor. Then in terms of the meaning of "But I have this against you" (Revelation 2:19) by saying this Jesus is accusing some of those in the church of Thyatira of sin. Or more specifically based on this entire verse and the subsequent verses Jesus is accusing them of the highly detestable sin of idolatry.

(20) "You tolerate that woman Jezebel" – Jezebel was the queen of ancient Israel when her husband Ahab was king of ancient Israel as First Kings says. In ancient Israel she promoted the worship of false gods and idols which helped to lead the ancient Israelites astray and into idolatry. The idea here with Jesus calling the woman from the church in Thyatira Jezebel in this verse is that Jesus is saying that she is leading those of the church in Thyatira into idolatry in the same way as the ancient Jezebel led the ancient Israelites into idolatry.

Next by saying "You tolerate that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) Jesus is condemning not just "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) but all of those in the church of Thyatira who tolerate her as well. This is because by tolerating "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) and supporting her teaching idolatry those in the church of Thyatira are being supportive of her idolatry.

(20) "who calls herself a prophetess." – First off a prophetess is simply a female prophet with a prophet being a man who interprets, speaks of or foretells the teachings or will of God. Thus Jezebel and others consider her idolatrous teaching to be correct so that they believe that God approves of her idolatrous teaching. Next Jesus says she "calls herself a prophetess" (Revelation 2:20 because He is saying that Jezebel is not a prophetess even though she calls herself one because what she says is wrong and idolatrous. But how can we know if what someone says is correct or not?

As Jesus says:

> "Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. By their fruit you will recognize them. Are grapes gathered from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them." (Matthew 7:15-20)

Thus the idea here is that what Jezebel taught and practiced was clearly idolatry and since the first and greatest commandment is to love God with all our heart this would then mean that idolatry of any kind is prohibited. Then because of this fact Jezebel would be a false prophetess because what she practiced and taught was clearly not the teachings and will of God. Keep this fact in mind when you listen to what others say to you so that you reject whatever they say if what they say stands in contradiction with what God says.

Now testing what someone says may not seem that important right now or you may have a more limited perspective with regards to bewaring "false prophets" (Matthew 7:15) so that you are concerned with insignificant doctrinal differences but I assure you understanding this test will be of the highest importance once the beast arises. This is because the beast will not be overtly evil or malevolent as you may believe. Instead the beast will almost certainly be seen as a force of so-called supreme good that surpasses everything we have seen in our lives by far to the point that many people will say the beast is so-called omnibenevolent. Then because of this fact I believe the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians will join with the beast so that they believe the beast to be part of God's plan for salvation or even as blasphemous as it sounds Jesus's second coming. In the process of holding to these beliefs the church of Satan will be created as these so-called Christians come to worship the beast along with God.

Now this may not seem that bad but you need to understand this is exactly what Jesus is condemning Jezebel for here in Revelation because worshiping anything else outside of God is the definition of idolatry. Thus if you say that you have faith in God and faith in the beast then you would be an idolater and fall under condemnation just as Jezebel would for having faith in God, in Jesus and in idols.

Now the main reason why people will believe all this and see the beast this way is because they will see the beast as good due to how benevolent it seems. However in reality in order to be considered good or rather faithful in the eye of God someone needs to love God in addition to loving their neighbor. But as you will see later on in Revelation the beast does not love God and instead it will see itself as a so-called supreme being.

As Revelation says:

> "They worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast, and they worshiped the beast, saying, 'Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?'
>
> The beast was given a mouth to speak arrogant and blasphemous words, and authority to act for 42 months. And the beast opened its mouth to speak blasphemies against God and to slander His name and His tabernacle—those who dwell in heaven." (Revelation 13:4-6)

So although I talk more about this topic later for now just keep the above test from the Gospel of Matthew in mind with respect to idolatry and the coming beast because there will come a time when "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) just as Revelation says so that the whole world falls into idolatry.

(20) "prophetess." – Regardless of your views on women instructing others it is interesting to note that Jesus condemns the false instruction of "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) and not the fact that a woman is instructing others. I mean if you want to dispute this then clearly Jesus does not say she is wrong to instruct others. Then when Jesus says He has given her time in repent in the next verse He expects her to repent of her porneia (πορνεία) or prostitution, with the intended meaning of idolatry, instead of the fact that she is instructing others. Therefore Jesus is tacitly approving of women instructing others here since obviously if Jesus believed that women instructing others was wrong then He would have said something given the fact that Jesus just warned those in the church of Thyatira that they need to ensure all their deeds are great instead of just good. Now no doubt you may have questions regarding what I just said but instead of answering them here I answer them later on in my chapter called Women in the Church in my part called Various Insights. However to answer the main question you probably have there is nothing wrong with women instructing or leading others. But like I said I demonstrate this to be true later on so if you do not agree then you will just have to wait until then to read what I have to say.

(20) "By her teaching she misleads My servants to be sexually immoral and to eat food sacrificed to idols." – First off the word translated as to be sexually immoral here is porneusai (πορνεῦσαι) which is one of the porné (πόρνη) or prostitute words and because of this the word should be literally translated as to commit prostitution instead. Then of course prostitution would figuratively mean highly detestable sin and in this context it would almost certainly refer to idolatry. Next although I have talked about idolatry already an idol is simply a physical image of a false god and pagan practices oftentimes involved eating food dedicated to an idol at a pagan temple. Although it does not seem like a big deal to eat food dedicated to an idol to a modern audience it is in fact a huge deal. This is because by eating food dedicated to an idol you would be honoring the idol which would be idolatry. Then the main sin Jesus is talking about here is Jezebel misleading others into committing idolatry through her instruction.

Now in terms of the specific type of idolatry she is practicing and engaging in really we cannot know for sure outside of eating "food sacrificed to idols." (Revelation 2:20) Therefore you should keep this in mind today and abstain from all forms of idolatry including eating food at non-Christian religious holiday celebrations because these meals are eaten in honor of a false religion and false gods.

(21) "Even though I have given her time to repent of her immorality, she is unwilling." – In this verse the word translated as immorality is porneia (πορνεία) which should be most literally translated as prostitution and figuratively understood as highly detestable sin. Although in this context the highly detestable sin Jesus is referring to would be practicing idolatry and instructing others to commit idolatry. Next it is important to point out that Jesus is not simply punishing Jezebel after she started to preach that idolatry was acceptable for Christians to engage in. Instead Jesus gave her time to repent of her idolatry. However as Jesus says "she is unwilling" (Revelation 2:21) and now the following verses go into the punishment she is to receive for practicing and preaching idolatry.

(22) "Behold, I will cast her onto a bed of sickness," – Since Jezebel has refused to repent of her idolatry she will now be punished for what she has done so that others will see the price of disobeying Jesus. However the punishment she is to receive is not being cast onto a bed of sickness because the word translated as bed of sickness is klinēn (κλίνην) which is literally translated as a couch or a bed. Thus Jesus is actually saying that He "will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) in this verse. The reason why the translators translated it as bed of sickness is because they are assuming that a metaphor of sexual punishment is improper for the Bible so therefore the intended meaning must be Jezebel is to become so sick so that she cannot leave her bed. However such a view is completely wrong and has zero support. This is because Revelation and other books of the Bible like to issue a punishment that fits the person's deeds. Then because Jezebel's sins center on idolatry which can be figuratively described as prostitution or porneia (πορνεία) which is sexual in nature this would then mean that Jesus saying "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) in this verse is supposed to be understood as a sexual metaphor. Now this may upset you so consider the following passage which also contains a metaphor involving sexual punishment.

As Revelation says:

> "And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:16-17)

In this passage rulers of the world, the ten horns, and the beast turn on the great prostitute, strip her naked, have their way with her and then finally kill her as God Himself uses them to fulfill His will of punishing the great prostitute for her detestable sins like idolatry and worshiping the beast. Really you cannot argue against this since this passage heavily implies sexual violence.

Before referencing additional passages it would be helpful to explain the purpose of these metaphors. So where does this metaphor come from? Well really the idea here is that a man who finds out his wife has been committing adultery will cast her out of his household so that she will be left with nothing which would force her to resort to prostitution against her will or rape in order to make money and survive. Now to make the above passage from Revelation make more sense God is supposed to be our future husband because we are engaged to be married to God through Jesus as Revelation later says. Then since those who worship the beast are committing metaphorical prostitution and adultery against God through their idolatry just as I have said when talking about the meaning of porneia (πορνεία) this would then mean that God's punishment for these people, or the great prostitute, is to cast them out of His household so that they are left with nothing. This then means that the great prostitute is now solely dependent upon the beast as God has cast her out. However the great prostitute's lover whom she has been committing adultery with against God also turns on her as it takes everything she has, most likely rapes her and then kills her. The general idea here is that the great prostitute's sin involved metaphorical sex and so in return God has decided to metaphorically punish her with sexual violence in return. What I just said might surprise you so consider the following two passages.

As the Book of Hosea says:

> "Rebuke your mother, rebuke her,
> for she is not My wife,
> and I am not her husband.
> Let her remove the adultery from her face
> and the unfaithfulness from between her breasts.
> Otherwise, I will strip her naked and expose her like the day of her birth.
> I will make her like a desert
> and turn her into a parched land,
> and I will let her die of thirst." (Hosea 2:2-3)

In this passage God is calling on the faithful children of Israel to rebuke Israel as a whole because Israel has fallen into idolatry. Then if she does not cease her adultery God says He "will strip her naked and expose her like the day of her birth" (Hosea 2:3) which almost certainly implies sexual violence or rape because she will be exposed and unprotected so that anyone can have their way with her. You may dispute this view so consider the following passage.

As the Book of Ezekiel says:

> "Therefore, O prostitute, hear the word of the LORD! This is what the Lord GOD says: Because you poured out your wealth and exposed your nakedness in your promiscuity with your lovers and with all your detestable idols, and because of the blood of your children which you gave to them, therefore I will surely gather all the lovers with whom you found pleasure, all those you loved and all those you hated. I will gather them against you from all around and expose you before them, and they will see you completely naked. And I will sentence you to the punishment of women who commit adultery and those who shed blood; so I will bring upon you the wrath of your bloodshed and jealousy.
>
> Then I will deliver you into the hands of your lovers, and they will level your mounds and tear down your lofty shrines. They will strip off your clothes, take your fine jewelry, and leave you naked and bare. They will bring a mob against you, who will stone you and cut you to pieces with their swords. Then they will burn down your houses and execute judgment against you in the sight of many women." (Ezekiel 16:35-41)

Likewise in this passage God says that He will use the nations that the Israelites were lusting after in order to punish the Israelites for their idolatry. Then to do this He will expose the Israelites so that they are "completely naked" (Ezekiel 16:37) as He delivers them into the hands of their loves so that they can have their way with them and then finally kill them. This is of course directly analogous to the previous passage from Revelation and the passage from Revelation is almost certainly a reference to the above passage from Ezekiel. Furthermore you can now see why Jesus saying "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) should be viewed as a sexual metaphor instead of as an illness metaphor. I mean not only is Revelation itself filled with sexual metaphors involving prostitution but this same sexual metaphor involving punishment is found elsewhere in the Bible. This is why almost all translators translate klinēn (κλίνην) as bed of sickness instead of a couch or a bed because the metaphorical meaning is extremely clear and undeniable if it is translated as a couch or a bed given the context and the translators want to try to cover up the real meaning of this verse for obvious reasons.

Alright so what does "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) mean exactly then? Sure I have said it is a sexual metaphor involving punishment but does it mean that Jesus is going to rape Jezebel or something like that? No it does not. Instead the meaning of the metaphor is similar to the previous three passages from the books of Revelation, Hosea and Ezekiel. The idea here is that "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) is a figurative way of saying that Jezebel will be cast out of God's household or Israel by Jesus due to her prostitution so that she has to resort to selling her body through prostitution in order to survive. Not only this but Jesus will watch her to see who else is tempted by her nakedness so that they end up deciding to "commit adultery with her" (Revelation 2:22) or rather join her in her idolatry. Then in response Jesus will "strike her children dead" (Revelation 2:23) which are those who were tempted by her nakedness to join her in her adultery. Really the idea here is that Jezebel is cast out and allowed to live for now as a trap for those who follow her and wish to commit adultery with her.

At this point you may wish to dispute what I have said and you may wish to claim that "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) refers to the Hebrew idiom of "to take to one's bed" which has the meaning of to become ill and to support this you may cite a verse like Exodus 21:18. However this idiom is actually no where to be found in Revelation 2:22 as you can see because it does not take the same form. Therefore Revelation 2:22 cannot be considered a reference to this supposed Hebrew idiom. The same is also true with regards to the supposed reference in the Book of Exodus.

As the Book of Exodus says:

> "If men are quarreling and one strikes the other with a stone or a fist, and he does not die but is confined to bed, then the one who struck him shall go unpunished, as long as the other can get up and walk around outside with his staff." (Exodus 21:18-19)

However you can clearly see in this verse that the reference to being confined to a bed is clearly a reference to being injured so badly that you cannot leave your bed because the context is injury. On the other hand with Revelation 2:22 the context is figurative sexual language involving prostitution and adultery. Thus it is clear that the intended meaning of bed is sexual in Revelation and not related to injury like the Exodus passage.

I would also like to point out that the authors of the New Testament understood the sexual meaning of bed in the sense that they also interpreted to bed someone as to have sex with them just as we do today. For instance the word oftentimes falsely translated homosexuals is arsenokoites (ἀρσενοκοίτης) which is a combination of arrén (ἄρσην) or a male and koité (κοίτη) which is another word for bed. The previous word klinēn (κλίνην) is different in that it relates more to a couch or a portable bed. That said my point here is that arsenokoites (ἀρσενοκοίτης) is a combination of the words for male and bed. Then this word can be literally translated and understood as a male who beds males or rather a male who has sex with males. That said this meaning is actually inaccurate in my view and I talk more about it in my chapter on Sexuality in my part called Various Insights. In terms of the topic at hand my point here is that clearly the authors of the New Testament were aware of the metaphorical meaning of a bed relating to sex and because of this fact seeing "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) as a bed of sickness instead of a couch or a bed is just incorrect.

Again this is why almost all translators translate klinēn (κλίνην) as bed of sickness instead of a couch or a bed. Really for anyone reading this verse the metaphorical meaning is extremely clear if it is translated as couch or bed given the context and as I said the translators want to try to cover up this verse for obvious reasons. If you still wish to dispute this then if Jesus is actually talking about a bed of sickness instead of a couch or a bed then He would have included the word for illness along with the word for bed or better yet just said He is going to make her sick. But He does not and instead of talking about illness He uses sexual metaphors that involve prostitution and adultery in the passage. Therefore there is zero reason to believe my interpretation is wrong.

So why is all this important exactly? I mean who cares if it is translated as a bed of sickness instead of as a couch or a bed? Well really I am just trying to be faithful to what the text says and since most people do not like the intended meaning, hence the cover up by translators, I needed to fully explain myself. Although in truth in the end viewing it as a bed of sickness instead of a bed really does not have a significant difference in meaning. For instance it does not matter how you view this verse because Jesus will send Jezebel to the Lake of Fire to face the second death regardless. Thus really I fail to see why people find the interpretation I have given upsetting. I mean how is a metaphor that implies forced prostitution or rape worse than Jesus killing her through illness? Although since I just said how Jezebel will be sent to the Lake of Fire regardless then how is Jesus giving an implied sexual violence metaphor worse than Jesus sending Jezebel to the Lake of Fire to burn as she is destroyed? Therefore if you are reading this now then I am almost certain you share my view because otherwise you would have stopped reading a while ago because I have written about much worse topics already.

Finally I would like to emphasize that although "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) is a sexual metaphor as I have said that this does not mean that there was, is or will be anything sexual taking place. Instead all Jesus is doing is using the same language the Old Testament uses with respect to punishing ancient Israel for idolatry to describe how He will punish Jezebel. Therefore this means that you should not actually see "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) as being sexual in nature and instead you should see it as Jesus saying He will cast Jezebel out of His household so that all she has left is her idolatry. Again this is because by saying "I will cast her onto a bed" (Revelation 2:22) all Jesus is saying is that He will abandon her and stop providing for her so that all she has left to survive is selling her body or prostitution. The idea here is that Jezebel prostituted the love of God and of Jesus for the favor of idols by engaging in idolatry so therefore she has chosen prostitution or idolatry over God. Then because she has chosen prostitution over God Jesus decides to punish her by ensuring that all she has left is her prostitution or rather idolatry by evicting her from God's household. In other words Jezebel enjoyed committing adultery against God by engaging in prostitution so much that Jesus is going to ensure that all she has left is to engage in prostitution because He will abandon her.

(22) "and those who commit adultery with her" – Jesus calls forms of idolatry like eating food dedicated to false gods adultery because we as Christians are supposed to be faithful to God alone and because of this fact worshiping idols through any form of idolatry is a form of unfaithfulness or adultery. Another way to look at it is that we are engaged to be married to God through Jesus which would mean that any form of idolatry can be called adultery since obviously an engaged woman cheating on her future husband would be an adulteress. See Revelation 19 for the marriage of Jesus and the Church. Now in terms of what idolatrous practices constitute adultery here in this verse really we cannot know for sure besides eating food that has been sacrificed or dedicated to idols. Therefore as I have said before we should abandon all forms of idolatry as we remain faithful to God through Jesus alone.

(22) "will suffer great tribulation unless they repent of her deeds." – Those who refuse to repent of their sin of joining Jezebel in her idolatry will suffer great tribulation or internal pressure. Really the idea here is that Jesus is saying that those who refuse to repent of their idolatry will suffer greatly as they are punished. The purpose of this is to give them time to repent and abandon Jezebel and her idolatry.

(23) "Then I will strike her children dead" – After the period of great tribulation or internal pressure if the children of Jezebel, or those who follow her in her idolatry, have not repented of their sins then Jesus will kill them. Remember Jesus is "the One who holds the sharp, double-edged sword" (Revelation 2:12) and "treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty" (Revelation 19:15) so therefore Jesus will in fact kill and destroy all those who rebel against God.

Now you may take the phrase "I will strike her children dead" (Revelation 2:23) as referring to Jesus killing Jezebel's followers in the first century AD. However just the opposite is in view here in the sense that by saying children or rather tekna (τέκνα) which means children or descendants Jesus is not really talking about Jezebel's followers in the first century AD. Instead Jesus is referring to Jezebel as the mother of idolatry here so that all those who come after her and practice idolatry are her children in the sense that they are following their mother's practices. Therefore because of this Jesus is actually promising that He will kill all those who practice idolatry from when Revelation was written to the present day. This may not make sense to you but you need to understand that God will use Jesus to judge and condemn the world which means that it will actually be Jesus who casts all the idolaters into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. Therefore Jesus is actually referring to killing future so-called Christians by throwing them into the Lake of Fire here by saying "I will strike her children dead" (Revelation 2:23) instead of merely referring to the followers of Jezebel in the first century AD.

(23) "and all the churches will know that I am the One who searches minds and hearts" – After Jesus kills those who have joined Jezebel in her idolatry then all the churches will see that He is "the One who searches minds and hearts" (Revelation 2:23) in that all Christians will realize that Jesus can see everything so that we cannot hide anything from Him. In other words Jesus can see all that we do and all that we are. Therefore you should always try to remain faithful even if you think no one will know.

(23) "and I will repay each of you according to your deeds." – Everyone is to repaid based on what they have done. In other words those who keep the two commandments will receive the rewards promised to those who overcome while those who do not keep the two commandments are to face the second death in the Lake of Fire.

(24) "But I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan:" – Despite the fact that Jesus has accused Jezebel and others in the church in Thyatira of idolatry there are those in Thyatira who do not hold to Jezebel's teachings of idolatry. Next the reason why Jesus refers to Jezebel's teachings as "the so-called deep things of Satan" (Revelation 2:24) is because anything that is contrary to what God wants for us to do is a thing of Satan. The idea here is that once again Satan is representative of rebellion so any practice that teaches rebellion against God is by definition a practice of Satan. Of course idolatry is a perfect example of this since idolatry by definition is rebellion against God given the fact that God hates idolatry so much.

Then the reason why Jesus specifically refers to "the so-called deep things" (Revelation 2:24) with respect to Jezebel's teachings is probably because Jezebel went beyond merely saying it is acceptable to eat food that has been sacrificed to idols so that she probably taught that it is acceptable for Christians to worship false gods and idols in order to expand the benefits that you receive. In other words she would have been thinking of the God of Israel as another deity to worship alongside the ancient Greek and Roman false gods and idols. Now this may seem odd but the ancient Greeks and Romans were typically afraid of upsetting a so-called god or idol by not worshiping it because they believed that if they did not regularly worship some then disaster would either strike them personally or in the area in which they lived. Furthermore there were many different false gods and idols so to the ancient Greeks and Romans it made sense to worship as many as you could in order to receive all the specific blessings they were thought to provide. Thus the idea here is that Jezebel was probably trying to expand Christian teachings by bringing polytheism and idolatry or rather "the so-called deep things of Satan" (Revelation 2:24) into the church in Thyatira. Therefore the main message here is that we should once again abstain from "the so-called deep things of Satan" (Revelation 2:24) including idolatry because we are to be faithful to God through Jesus alone.

Now this subject also relates to the rest of Revelation and the beast specifically because the teachings of Jezebel here will be similar to the future church of Satan that I have spoken about already. Essentially there will come a time when almost all of those who call themselves Christians will look upon the beast as they see it as their sole hope of earthly salvation and because of this they will place their trust, hope and faith in it. Now this does not mean that they will abandon God and apostatize. Instead all this means is that just like with Jezebel they will seek to introduce the beast as an object of worship to worship alongside God. The idea here is that God would be where they place their heavenly and spiritual hope for salvation while the beast will be where they place their earthly and physical hope for salvation. So just like with Jezebel the goal is to play both sides so that you cannot lose. For example with Jezebel the idea is that if you worship God and all the false gods then you cannot lose because you will have gained favor with all the deities you can. Thus with the beast and the church of Satan these so-called Christians will essentially be hedging their bets by placing their hope of salvation in the beast and the amazing so-called miracles it seems to work for the world while thinking to themselves that if the beast ever fails then they always have God.

Sounds great right because then how can you lose? Well you see the problem here is that God wants to be your first and only choice instead of merely one of your choices.

As the Book of Exodus says:

> "For you must not worship any other god, for the LORD, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God." (Exodus 34:14)

As the Book of Deuteronomy says:

> "Fear the LORD your God, serve Him only, and take your oaths in His name. Do not follow other gods, the gods of the peoples around you. For the LORD your God, who is among you, is a jealous God. Otherwise the anger of the LORD your God will be kindled against you, and He will wipe you off the face of the earth." (Deuteronomy 6:13-15)

As the Book of Joshua says:

> "But Joshua said to the people, 'You are not able to serve the LORD, for He is a holy God; He is a jealous God; He will not forgive your rebellion or your sins. If you forsake the LORD and serve foreign gods, He will turn and bring disaster on you and consume you, even after He has been good to you.'" (Joshua 24:19-20)

This is why God hates idolatry and those who practice idolatry so much. Then of course this is also why Jesus has spoken against idolatry so much in the letters to the seven churches so far to the point where He promises that He will kill all of Jezebel's children or those who join her in her idolatry. But why does God hate idolatry exactly? Really since God is God the Almighty this means that God is the only being who is all powerful and because of this fact placing your trust, hope and faith and anything else is not only futile but also insulting to God since only He can provide you with salvation. This is then why God hates all those who practice idolatry.

So then the idea with respect to God and the beast is exactly the same as why God hates idolatry so that you should see worshiping the beast in addition to God as the same as someone wanting to worship false gods and idols in addition to God. This of course means that just as someone who worships idols in addition to God will not receive salvation so too will all those who worship the beast in addition to God not receive salvation. Really the idea here is that God does not want to be your plan B or even your plan A. Instead God wants to be your one and only plan. Therefore always remember to place your trust, hope and faith in God alone through Jesus so that you do not join the church of Satan by becoming a child of Jezebel through worshiping the beast in addition to God.

(24) "I will place no further burden upon you." – There are two ways to view this statement from Jesus. The first is to say that Jesus is specifically talking to those in the church of Thyatira who have had their faith tested by Jezebel's idolatry so that they have demonstrated themselves to be faithful by resisting her idolatry. The idea here is that these Christians in Thyatira have had their faith tested enough so that Jesus is saying He will not test them further because there is no need. The second is to say that Jesus is not referring to anyone specifically and that instead He is referring to the fact that everyone is to be burdened or tested in their own way. The idea here is that all those "who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan" (Revelation 2:24) in the past, present and future while being tempted by Jezebel and her children have demonstrated that they have successfully resisted the temptations of Satan so that they cannot be burdened anymore. In other words once someone has been tempted into idolatry once then any further temptation in the future will not seem like a real burden because it is no longer something new.

This second point of view is rather interesting with respect to the coming beast specifically because the teachings of Jezebel are largely absent from the world in which I wrote this book in during the time before the beast rises. This would mean that the temptation and burden Christians will face from the coming church of Satan or Jezebel's children will probably be the final burden that Jesus will place upon us as faithful Christians. This is because there is no greater test of faith than the coming beast.

As Jesus says:

> "If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.
>
> At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There He is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:22-25)

Therefore my point here is that whoever successfully resists falling into idolatry and worshiping the beast along with the children of Jezebel will truly be considered faithful beyond any measure so that there is no greater burden that they could bear or test that they could face. This would then be why Jesus says "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) since there would be no greater burden Jesus could place on us to test us.

Now you may dispute this second point of view by saying that since Jesus says "I say to the rest of you in Thyatira" (Revelation 2:24) in this verse that Jesus is actually talking to those in Thyatira in the first century AD and not to all Christians. However as I said before with the symbolism of the number seven with respect to the letters to the seven churches each of the letters to the seven churches are actually addressed to all Christians throughout all time. Nowhere is this more evident than in the fact that Jesus divides up the rewards for overcoming in each of the seven letters. Thus the idea here is that all the faithful will receive the rewards instead of only the seven churches each receiving a subset of all the rewards that are specific to each church. This would then mean that Jesus is not necessarily referring to only those in Thyatira and that instead He is almost certainly referring to all Christians. But really both views work and both are almost certainly true so it does not matter what view you believe here.

Lastly Jesus saying "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) is rather interesting because this statement highly implies that it is God through Jesus who is the One who gives us all our burdens. Now you may wish to dispute this but remember what I said with respect to Satan before. Even though Satan is the accuser and his purpose is to test us by placing burdens upon us ultimately God not only created Satan for this purpose but since God is infinitely more powerful than Satan so that He can destroy Satan at anytime this means that by allowing Satan to exist God approves of what Satan is doing. Thus it is because of these facts that ultimately it is God who is testing us with burdens. This would be why Jesus says "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) because Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has chosen to carry out His will so that really it is God who is burdening us.

Now this idea may make you upset but you need to understand that the only way to deny this fact is to claim that God is not all powerful so that He cannot defeat Satan and all evil forever. This is because obviously God can see what Satan does and all the evil that exists and really God does not even need to be omniscient or all seeing to do this. Thus therefore we are left with either God being unable to reign in Satan and all evil or God not reigning in Satan and all evil because He approves of the existence of Satan and all evil at least for the time being. So which option is true?

As Revelation says:

> "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

Therefore clearly God is "God the Almighty" (Revelation 19:15) so that He is all powerful such that nothing is outside of His power. This fact is clearly demonstrated elsewhere in Revelation where God does not even need to deal with Satan personally because He can simply empower an angel to bind Satan in the Abyss "for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:2) Thus the idea here is that God is quite literally infinitely more powerful than Satan so that the only reason why Satan currently exists is because God has a use for Him. Then because of this fact this then must mean that God approves of what Satan is doing. This would of course then mean that ultimately it is God who is the source of all of our burdens and that since Jesus is the Christ God is working through Jesus to burden us.

Now you still may not like this fact for some reason so let me give you something to think about. The main prophecy in the Book of Revelation is that of the rise of the first beast of Revelation 13 and how it will come to rule the whole world so that almost everyone worships it as a so-called supreme being including those who call themselves Christian. So if God has told us about this beast before it comes and God has the power to prevent this beast from rising and ruling the world then how can you possibly claim that God does not approve of the beast in the sense that God wishes to let it exist so that it can fulfill His purpose? Thus what I am saying here is that ultimately the beast is a burden that is to be placed upon the whole world by God Himself and given the fact that God is omniscient He actually planned everything the beast has yet to do "from the foundation of the world" (Revelation 13:8) itself. Then since the greatest test and trial any Christian could possibly have is resisting the beast and it is the will of God for the beast to rule over the world then how exactly does it make sense to say that God is not the ultimate source of all our burdens? I mean if the greatest burden is from God then why even debate and question if the smaller burdens are from God?

Now I talk more about divine determinism and the specific issue I have been touching upon, the problem of evil, later on so just think about all this until you read what I have to say later on. That said to provide some clarity in terms of the answers to these topics first off obvious God has determined everything that has happened, is happening and will happen "from the foundation of the world" (Revelation 13:8) itself as you can probably guess. Next really I find the problem of evil to be nonsensical because God approves of all the evil in our current world in the sense that all evil is all part of His plan for us and the world. But like I said I talk more about these topics later on in this commentary and it is there where I go over your objections so for now just think about what I have said.

(25) "Nevertheless, hold fast to what you have until I come." – This verse should be seen more as a message to all Christians rather than to those in the church of Thyatira because it directly precedes the list of rewards for overcoming. Then as stated previously all Christians who overcome during anytime will receive all the rewards given to each church. Lastly in terms of the meaning of this verse really all it means is that we should all hold to what we have or rather our faith in Jesus until Jesus finally returns to destroy the beasts and all their followers. Then with respect to the previous verse this verse would mean that all those who resist the temptations of the children of Jezebel should hold fast to their faith until Jesus returns even though they have successfully resisted the power and temptation of the beast.

(26) "And to the one who overcomes" – Again overcoming once again means resisting the power of the beasts and Satan so that instead of giving up and worshiping the beast you persist in faith until the end when Jesus returns. Then remember that since Satan is representative of rebellion this then means that overcoming here would really mean overcoming the desire to rebel against God so that instead you are obedient to Him.

(26) "and continues in My work until the end," – This reference to continuing in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) in this verse may seem difficult to understand. However the reference to work here can be better understood as work as in a task, a toil or rather some action or set of actions that you carry out. So what exactly is the work of Jesus then? Well essentially the work of Jesus centers on His complete faith in and obedience to God so that He even went to His own death to fulfill the will of God. Furthermore the work of Jesus can also be summarized as the two commandments to "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength" (Mark 12:30) and to "Love your neighbor as yourself." (Mark 12:31) Now these two commandments might sound simple since sure loving your neighbor as yourself is easy to understand but what does loving God "with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength" (Mark 12:30) mean? Really this meaning loops back to how the work of Jesus centers on His complete faith in and obedience to God. Now this may seem like I am going in circles here however my point is that no matter how you look at it continuing in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) means that you demonstrate your complete trust in God and obedience to His will. This idea actually ties into what it means to be "one who overcomes" (Revelation 2:26) in the sense that as long as you demonstrate your complete faith in God and obedience to His will then you will be one of those who overcomes the power of Satan and of the beast.

Then to once again remind you, one of Jesus's most important works was how He served God even unto death itself and did not seek to avoid it. Thus when we are faced with our own trials we are to continue in Jesus's work with the same obedience He displayed to God. This would of course mean that if it is the will of God for any of us to die then we are to die just as God has determined.

All that said there is a deeper meaning here that I have not touched upon. During Jesus's earthly ministry the main work that He did was giving people hope for the future as He guided people back towards God so that they could better follow the will of God. Of course in order to guide people back towards God Jesus corrected and even chastised them. Therefore in this case continuing in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) would mean that you continue to carry out Jesus's work or ministry in His name until the end. So just as Jesus gave people hope for the future by telling them about the coming eternal Kingdom of God while helping them know what it means to follow the will of God through correcting them so too should you continue in this same work until the end. In other words all we need to do is to follow the example that Jesus has set for us.

This is then one of if not the main reason why I decided to write this book. Essentially I see my book as continuing in Jesus's work until the end. My point here is that just as Jesus helped others come to know the will of God and about the future arrival of the eternal Kingdom of God and what must happen before it can arrive so too have I carried out this same work with this book. Then since I have written what I have to say out in the form of this book and since this book will endure until the time when Jesus finally returns this would actually mean that my book will "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) in my place so that even if I die before the end comes my work will continue until the very end. In other words this book is my testimony and my testimony will continue Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) in my place.

Then continuing in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) is also why I also decided to write such a long book and not soften, or worse yet remove, any of the controversial sections to make it easier to read and more popular. As I said in my introduction I did not write this book to serve men and instead I wrote this book to serve God. Just as Jesus believed carrying out the will of God was more important than His own will and the desires of others so too do I also believe that carrying out the will of God is more important than my own will and the desires of others. So really this is why you may consider this book highly controversial so far. But as I said I am simply continuing in the work of Jesus until the end by serving God.

Furthermore this is also one of the main reasons why I have given away this book for free. Jesus did not give sales pitches and say buy My book in an effort to profit off of His fellow brothers and sisters. Instead Jesus gave away what He had to say for free to that all who would listen to Him so that they could profit off of what He had to say. Therefore I have done the same so that instead of profiting off of this book myself you and others will profit off of it as you gain hope for the future arrival of the eternal Kingdom of God and learn how to better follow the will of God.

Lastly but what if no one bothers to read this book? For instance how can I continue in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) if no one actually reads it? Well you see since this book is my testimony that I wrote to inform the world about the will of God the neat part is that no one actually needs to read it because by simply writing my words down I have fulfilled my duty in carrying out Jesus's "work until the end." (Revelation 2:26) The idea here is that it is not my fault that no one listens to me by reading my book and instead it is the fault of all those who do not read my book. To make this make more sense consider someone speaking to an audience full of people where the people in the audience refuse to listen to the speaker as they tell themselves that paying attention to the speaker is a waste of time. In this instance did the speaker perform the work they set out to do? Well of course they did. Sure the audience refused to listen but how can it be the speaker's responsibility to ensure that they listen? Instead the speaker's responsibility is to simply deliver their message and if their audience refuses to listen then that is their prerogative. The same idea is in view with this book where my book is my testimony to the world and by writing this book I have delivered my testimony to the world in the same way that the speaker in the example delivered their testimony by giving a speech that no one listened to. Therefore it does not matter if no one ever reads this book before the end comes because by just writing this book I have continued in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) so that the whole world has the opportunity to understand the will of God.

(27) "I will give authority over the nations." – Those who overcome and continue in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) will be given authority to rule the nations in the new earth from Jesus. Then since Jesus is the Christ this means that God is to give us this authority though Jesus. The idea here with this reward is that each faithful Christian who overcomes and continues in Jesus's "work until the end" (Revelation 2:26) will quite literally be given authority over the entire new earth so that they are a king of kings in a similar way to how Jesus is the King of kings. This may seem unbelievable but this is what Revelation says. Now no doubt you may have a number of questions with regards to this topic. For example how are potentially billions of Christians supposed to be given "authority over the nations" (Revelation 2:27) as this verse says since even two people cannot both have "authority over the nations" (Revelation 2:27) let alone billions? In short I believe the new earth can be more accurately understood as the new earths so that there is an entire new earth for each faithful Christian to have authority over. That said there is a lot to go over here with respect to being given "authority over the nations" (Revelation 2:27) since this ties into Revelation 20, 21 and 22. Therefore I talk more about the new earth later on in this commentary. So for now just take being given "authority over the nations" (Revelation 2:27) as a given.

(27) "He will rule them" – The word translated as will rule here is poimanei (ποιμανεῖ) which can also be translated as will shepherd. Then in terms of the meaning of shepherding really you should view it as guarding and guiding because that is what shepherds do with their sheep. Thus you should have more of a guiding role in view here where the faithful will use the authority that they have been given over the nations to guide all the people of these new nations in order to fulfill the will of God. That said there is another meaning I discuss in the next comment.

(27) "He will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery" – Ruling with an iron scepter, rod or staff means to rule from a position of complete power and authority. Thus those of the new nations who the faithful will rule over will never be able to challenge the authority that the faithful have been given. The idea here is that just as pots cannot hope to challenge a rod of iron because obviously a rod of iron with always shatter pottery so too will the people of the new nations be unable to challenge the authority of the faithful because God will give the faithful power through Jesus and God's power and authority can never be challenged. That said this verse is a reference to the Psalms and the verse from the Psalms is quite different.

As the Book of Psalms says:

> "Ask Me, and I will make the nations Your inheritance, the ends of the earth Your possession.
> You will break them with an iron scepter; You will shatter them like pottery." (Psalm 2:8-9)

Thus as you can see the key difference between Revelation 2:27 and Psalm 2:9 is that the word is rule or shepherd in Revelation while it is break in the Psalm. Now this difference is quite significant because obvious breaking the nations and shepherding them are a bit different. That said I believe both are in view here at the same time. This is because the intention with the Psalm 2 is that God is saying He will give all the nations of the earth to His Son as His possession. Then since obviously not everyone will agree to be ruled this would then necessitate the use of force to break the nations into obedience which would obviously be a disciplinary action by a ruler. In other words I believe the word translated as break in Psalm 2:9 can also be understood as rule with force. This is further evidenced by the fact the Septuagint or the Greek translation of the Old Testament uses the same word in Psalm 2:9 that appears in Revelation 2:27 which is translated as rule or shepherd.

Therefore lastly although the faithful are to use their authority to guide the new nations they are also going to use their authority and power to break the nations into obedience so that all those who rebel against their authority will be shattered "like pottery." (Psalm 2:9)

(27) "just as I have received authority from My Father." – Here Jesus says the authority we are to receive from Him is the same authority that He has received from His Father or God. So just as God has given Jesus His power and authority in the same manner Jesus will give us His power and authority. This then relates to becoming the adoptive sons and daughters of God. The idea here is that Jesus was born as the Son of God while we will be adopted as the sons and daughters of God through Jesus. Then just as Jesus has an inheritance as the Son of God so too will each of us receive our own inheritance.

As God says:

> "The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Therefore my main point here is that whatever Jesus has received we are to receive as well. This is why Jesus says "just as I have received authority from My Father." (Revelation 2:27) Again the idea here is that Jesus is going to give us as the faithful the same authority that He has been given from God.

(28) "I will give him the morning star." – There are the two ways to view this verse. However to start the reference to "the morning star" (Revelation 2:28) is not to be confused with the "star that had fallen from heaven to earth" (Revelation 9:1) because there the fallen star refers to Satan, hence fallen, while Jesus is "the bright Morning Star." (Revelation 22:16) The idea here is that Jesus is called "the bright Morning Star" (Revelation 22:16) since stars symbolize angels which are the servants of God and Jesus is the greatest, or brightest, of all God's servants.

So the first way the view this verse is to say that the morning star is Jesus Himself since Jesus later on in Revelation says that He is "the bright Morning Star." (Revelation 22:16) According to this view Jesus would be saying that He will give Himself to us which would then mean that He is talking about giving Himself to us in marriage. This marriage occurs later on in Revelation 19 where Jesus marries the Church or all faithful Christians. Therefore rather than talking about the meaning of this marriage here I talk about it later on in this commentary.

The second way to view this verse is to say that Jesus is saying those who overcome will become the greatest of God's servants. This is because angels, the servants of God, are symbolized as stars in Revelation as I just said and the morning star is a metaphor for a very bright star since only very bright stars can still be seen as the sun rises. So the idea here is that those who overcome the power of the beast on earth will be elevated to a position that is higher than the angels of heaven so that they are similar to Jesus in terms of authority. You may disagree with this but as Jesus says He "will give authority over the nations" (Revelation 2:26) to all those who overcome as you have just read.

Then as also Jesus says:

> "To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to sit with Me on My throne, just as I overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne." (Revelation 3:21)

Finally as God says:

> "The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Therefore the faithful being elevated so that they are above even God's angels in heaven would make sense. Then because of this fact you can view "And I will give him the morning star" (Revelation 2:28) as the faithful being elevated by God through Jesus to be among the greatest of God's servants or His angels.

Now it may not seem like a big deal to be given more authority and power than angel. I mean are angels not just messengers of God? Well yes they are in the sense that their role is to carry out the will of God but carrying out God's will or delivering His message oftentimes requires a level of authority and power that is hard for us to understand.

As First Kings says:

> "And that very night the angel of the LORD went out and struck down 185,000 men in the camp of the Assyrians. When the people got up the next morning, there were all the dead bodies!" (1 Kings 19:35)

With respect to this verse it goes without saying that this angel of God must be incredibly powerful to be able to kill 185,000 men. That said really this number is almost certainly inflated and inaccurate like the vast majority of almost all the numbers relating to population counts in the Old Testament. I talk about this fact later on in my part called Various Insights. Now despite what I just said concerning the accuracy of the number actually killing 185,000 men would not even test an angel's strength as the following passages will show.

As Revelation says:

> "So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind." (Revelation 9:15)

If you want to take this verse literally then these four angels will kill billions of people and because of this fact they must be incredibly powerful. Now of course I do not take this verse literally just like almost everything else in Revelation so I explain what it means later on. That said it is once again clear that angels are incredibly powerful.

Then as Revelation also says:

> "Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven with the key to the Abyss, holding in his hand a great chain. He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he threw him into the Abyss, shut it, and sealed it over him, so that he could not deceive the nations until the thousand years were complete." (Revelation 20:1-3)

Then central idea with this passage is that Satan is so utterly powerless compared to God that even one of His angels is more than strong enough to seize Satan and then throw him into the Abyss or a prison. Therefore clearly the angel in this passage must also be incredibly powerful.

Alright so now you can see that angels are incredibly powerful and that because of this fact being given "the morning star" (Revelation 2:28) would mean that the faithful will be given great authority and power. This is then what Jesus is talking about with respect to saying how the faithful "will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery" (Revelation 2:27) when talking about being given "authority over the nations." (Revelation 2:26) The point here is that in order to be able to shatter the nations like pottery that we will have to be given the same kind of power than God has given the angels so that no one of the new nations will be able to challenge us and our rule over the nations. Then keep in mind that we as the faithful will be given even greater authority and power than almost all or even all the angels since this is what it would mean to be given "the morning star." (Revelation 2:28)

Lastly in terms of which view is correct I would say both interpretations are correct at the same time since later verses in Revelation confirm each view. For instance the Church or all faithful Christians will be married later on in Revelation and it would be accurate to say that the authority and power of those who overcome will be greater than even the angels of heaven in the new earth as I have said. Therefore I would actually say that both views are intended to be in view in this verse at the same time.

(29) "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." – Again you can only hear what the Holy Spirit says to the churches if you have spiritual ears to hear and you can only have spiritual ears if you belong to God.

Chapter 2.16: Revelation 3

1 – To the Church in Sardis

> (1) "To the angel of the church in Sardis write:
>
> These are the words of the One who holds the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars.
>
> I know your deeds; you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead. (2) Wake up and strengthen what remains, which was about to die; for I have found your deeds incomplete in the sight of My God. (3) Remember, then, what you have received and heard. Keep it and repent. If you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know the hour when I will come upon you.
>
> (4) But you do have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their garments, and because they are worthy, they will walk with Me in white. (5) Like them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white. And I will never blot out his name from the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father and His angels.
>
> (6) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "To the angel of the church in Sardis write:" – Sardis was a Greek city in the Roman Empire that was inland on the western coast of Asia Minor or Anatolia.

(1) "These are the words of the One who holds the seven Spirits of God" – The seven spirits of God would be the Holy Spirit since seven represents completeness and the Holy Spirit is a complete Spirit that encompasses everything. This then means that by saying He "holds the seven Spirits of God" (Revelation 3:1) Jesus is saying that He has control or command of the power of God since the Holy Spirit is representative of the power and influence of God. This would of course be true since Jesus is the Christ.

As a result of these facts and as I have already said the trinity cannot be correct based on this verse alone because the three persons of the trinity are supposed to be equal while this verse demonstrates that they are not because Jesus is holding the Holy Spirit in His hand. The idea here is that by saying He holds or possesses the Holy Spirit Jesus is saying that He is in control of the Holy Spirit and by saying that He is control of the Holy Spirit this would then mean that Jesus is not equal with the Holy Spirit assuming of course you see the Holy Spirit as a person. Now you could attempt to dispute this by saying that Jesus possesses the Holy Spirit in the sense that the Holy Spirit is working through Jesus but this would then mean that Jesus needs the Holy Spirit in order to work. Thus the problem here is that by saying this you have just also denied the trinity because according to the false doctrine of the trinity God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit are all supposed to be equal in power and authority. Therefore as a result of all this saying Jesus possesses the Holy Spirit in any sense actually ends up denying the trinity.

Lastly I would like to reiterate that the Holy Spirit is not a person and instead the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God which is simply representative of God's power and influence. Therefore all this verse is actually saying is that Jesus possesses the power and influence of God which is true because He is the Christ.

(1) "and the seven stars." – By saying that He holds or possesses "the seven stars" (Revelation 3:1) Jesus is saying that He can use or command all of God's angels because stars are symbolic of angels as I have already noted.

(1) "I know your deeds;" – Jesus can see all of our works and deeds whether they are good or bad. Therefore we should always seek to perform good works while abstaining from bad works.

(1) "you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead." – In other words Jesus is saying that although many of those in the church in Sardis appear to be faithful Christians, in reality they are actually so spiritually dead inside due to their lack of good works that they are godless. This is because in the next verse Jesus says "I have found your deeds incomplete in the sight of My God" (Revelation 3:2) which means that Jesus is not talking specifically about faith in the sense that most people in the church in Sardis do not actually believe and instead Jesus is saying that they have not done enough good works or that they have done bad works. Thus the idea here is that the church in Sardis appears to be outwardly healthy and faithful but in reality the church is spiritually dead because of the lack of deeds. That said since true faith is predicated on performing good works and abstaining from bad works this means that by engaging in bad works or by having a lack of good works those of the church in Sardis are just going through to motions of what it means to be a Christian and that they do not have true faith. Thus they appear faithful or alive while really they lack faith because of their deeds so that they are actually dead inside. This message is then a clear reference to what Jesus said to the so-called Jews in the Gospel of Matthew.

As Jesus says:

> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside, but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and every kind of impurity. In the same way, on the outside you appear to be righteous, but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness." (Matthew 23:27-28)

Of course the idea here is similar so that Jesus is saying the scribes and Pharisees appear righteous on the outside which makes everyone believes them to faithful to God while in reality on the inside they are godless because of their bad deeds.

So what does this all mean exactly? Well first off you need to keep in mind that Jesus's condemnation and warning here with respect to saying "you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead" (Revelation 3:1) is not something that only applies to the first century AD. Instead this condemnation and warning applies to all those who call themselves Christian throughout all time periods. Now in terms of the meaning all Jesus is saying is that how you appear to God is what actually matters and that how you appear outwardly to others cannot overcome how you appear to God. This means that you should be focused on your deeds or works instead of being concerned with how you can appear faithful to others. This may not make much sense so allow me to explain it with an example.

So I am sure you probably know some people who you believe to be extremely faithful Christians because they are always the first to say that they will pray for you if something bad happens in your life. On the other hand I am sure you probably also know some Christians who would never say they will pray for you when something bad happens in your life. So my question for you now is who is the faithful Christian? Now you may be tempted to say that it is obviously the first person but this is because you are judging these two people by their outward appearances. Instead the answer is either neither or the second person. For instance the second person might follow how Jesus says to pray so that they pray for you even seven times in secret without telling you.

As Jesus says:

> "And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by men. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you pray, go into your inner room, shut your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." (Matthew 6:5-6)

The idea here is that Jesus is saying that if you pray to be seen by men so that they see you as righteous and faithful then God will not reward you because you have already received your reward of others seeing you as righteous. Thus the second person in my example could very well be hiding the fact that they are praying for you so that God answers their prayer and heals you. Of course on the other hand the person who always makes a point of telling you that they will pray for you or that they are praying for you would be one of the hypocrites that Jesus is speaking of in this passage. The point here is that their chief concern is not with your health and that instead their concern is with being seen as righteous and faithful by others. After all this is why they specifically tell you that they will pray for you because again they want you and those around you to see them as faithful and righteous. This is why I specifically noted that the first person in this example is not more faithful than the second person. Then of course it goes without saying that if this person does not actually pray for you then they are much worse than the person who tells you that they will pray for you and follows through with it. All that said my point here is that the person who says they will pray for you would be a good example of someone who has a reputation for being alive even though they are dead.

Now you might take offense at what I just said but I will take this line of reasoning even further. Based on what Jesus says in the above passage if you make a point of praying in front of others at all then you are an example of someone who appears alive even though you are dead inside. This would of course be infinitely more true if you never even pray by yourself in your own home in secret so that you only pray in front of others. Additionally concerning the topic of prayer the group who can most be said to have a reputation of being alive even though they are dead would be those who try to push for prayer in school. This is because Jesus explicitly says if you want to honor God with your prayers then you should pray in secret and not in public. Thus those who push for prayer in schools do not actually care about God and instead they only care about others in their social circle and in the general public seeing them as righteous and faithful. I mean is it not obvious that whoever pushes for prayer in school is a righteous person and that whoever argues against it even if they are Christian is a godless person? Of course you now know the correct answer so I do not need to tell you.

For another example on the subject of prayer consider someone who tells people that they will pray for them without actually doing anything to physically help them even though they have the ability to help them. For instance say a natural disaster happens so that now many people are homeless and in need. In response someone you know tells you that they have been praying for the disaster victims or they ask to lead a group prayer. But when you ask them what disaster fund they donated to they say they have not given anything and that you should not doubt the power of prayer. Just like with the previous examples the idea here is that this person has no interest in actually helping people and that instead they are only seeking to be seen as righteous and faithful by others. In other words this person would be a perfect example of someone who would have a reputation of being alive even though they are actually dead inside.

Now to move on from the topic of prayer consider the so-called Christian apologists who write books for Christians and overcharge for them so that they can make a profit. The idea here is that almost everyone views these so-called Christian apologists who write books for Christians about a variety of topics as the pinnacle of what it means to be faithful. I mean surely a person must be a committed Christian if they write books right? Well no sorry. You see by writing and selling books for a profit all these so-called Christian apologists demonstrate is that they have a career and that the work they do is literally no different than an atheist author writing about secular topics. This is because by writing a book and selling it for a profit so they can make money these people are literally doing the exact same thing as almost everyone else who writes books. Therefore just like with those who pray in public to be seen by others concerning those who write Christian books and make a profit Jesus would no doubt say "Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward." (Matthew 6:5) In terms of the topic at hand though this appearance of being a so-called exemplary person of faith by writing Christian books is why these so-called Christian apologists have the appearance of being alive. I mean who believes Christianity is true more than someone who has written and sells over twenty books on why Christianity is true right? Of course I am being sarcastic here in case it is not obvious. In reality all this person demonstrates is that they have a love of money instead of a love of God.

Then in terms of the "yet you are dead" (Revelation 3:1) part for this example really it is quite simple. For a faithful Christian the only purpose of writing a book is to provide spiritual nourishment and encouragement to their fellow brothers and sisters so that they are better informed. This is because encouraging someone in the faith so that they can overcome is more valuable than all the money in the world. If you disagree with this fact then just consider the gift of eternal life which is just one of the rewards for those who overcome. Are you really going to say that making ten dollars off an ebook is more important than even a one percent chance of someone reading a book you wrote and being so encouraged that they end up overcoming all so that they receive the gift of eternal life? If you say yes that making ten dollars off an ebook is more important than people actually reading your book and being helped by it then you are godless and of Satan. Yes, I am serious.

As Jesus says:

> "Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Matthew 6:19-21)

This is why a faithful Christian would rather give away their book for free because their goal is not to make money like the so-called Christian apologists who sells ten dollar ebooks and instead their goal is to strengthen the faith of their fellow brothers and sisters. In other words by giving away their books for free the faithful Christians gain treasures in heaven while the so-called Christian apologists gain treasures on earth for selling their ten dollar ebooks. Then because of this where their hearts are should be obvious. This is why these so-called Christian apologists I am speaking about are evil. Then in terms of the topic at hand this is why these so-called Christian apologists are actually dead inside even though the vast majority of people believe that they epitome of what it means to be alive. Therefore ironically enough the people who are the so-called pillars of Christianity in the modern era are a perfect example of the type of person Jesus is talking about by saying "you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead." (Revelation 3:1)

Next consider an example with regards to what is probably the average Christian. So the average Christian goes through the motions of going to church during holidays for sure and maybe up to most Sundays throughout the year. Then outside of this they probably do not do much if anything. Now you may say that attending these church services is something but in reality it really does not mean anything. This is because living out our faith as Christians is not about identification but instead it is about the fruits of our faith or rather performing good deeds and abstaining from bad deeds. The idea here is that a Christian who goes to church every Sunday but never helps others is an example of someone who appears alive even though they are dead inside. For instance if you say you are a Christian and you go to church every Sunday but in your personal life you never help the poor then you would be dead inside. Likewise if you say you are a Christian but you exploit your employees in your business by paying them the so-called market rate, or rather as little as you can without them quitting even though they do not make enough to live on, all so that you can make more money then you would be dead inside despite the fact that you have never missed a Sunday service and everyone sees you as a pillar of your church. Therefore those who appear to be faithful on the outside but lack true faith on the inside due to their lack of good works or by performing bad works are another instance of what it means to appear alive while being dead.

Lastly for a final example that is quite different than the others presented so far consider a Christian who donates rather publicly to charities and relief funds. Surely they must be alive inside right? I mean have I not said that as Christians we should live out our faith by performing good works? Well you see it is rather complicated. This is because similar to the examples I gave previously with regards to praying what matters the most is not the action itself but the motivation behind the action. For instance someone who prays in public in front of others is not actually praying for the benefit of God and instead they are praying in public so that others will see them as righteous and faithful. The idea here is that they are after what some people would call social currency which is just a term used to describe how much accumulated good will a person has with others. Then the ultimate goal of accumulating this social currency would be for these people to increase their standing among those they associate with so that they are looked up to and respected.

Now this relates to someone who publicly donates to charities, relief funds and even those who volunteer their time because just like with someone praying in public those who do charitable acts in public on purpose are almost certainly doing these acts not out of genuine care for the cause but instead out of a desire to accumulate social currency. The idea here is that by publicly donating to good causes and making their generous donation known this type of person will be seen as a righteous person by their peers so that they will gain respect and influence. For instance consider very wealthy people making large public donations to charities. In this case they almost certainly care little about the actual cause and instead their goal is to improve their public image. Sure you can argue that good was done as a result of their desire but their real reason remains the same.

So my point with all this with respect to Christians is that if a Christian frequently donates publicly or brings up their good deeds to others then they are almost certainly doing so not out of a love of God and a love of their neighbor but instead out of a love of themselves. This is why Jesus actually says that whenever we perform righteous acts we should seek to hide them from others so that as few people as possible know.

As Jesus says:

> "Be careful not to perform your righteous acts before men to be seen by them. If you do, you will have no reward from your Father in heaven.
>
> So when you give to the needy, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and on the streets, to be honored by men. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your giving may be in secret. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." (Matthew 6:1-4)

Jesus's point here is that when you give money to others publicly so that people can see your generosity then you are not really performing a good work because your motivation is purely selfish in that you seek recognition from others and status. On the other hand if you give to others in private so that as few people as possible know what you have done then you demonstrate that your true purpose with your donation is to help others which makes your deed a good work.

Now this relates to what Jesus says concerning "you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead" (Revelation 3:1) because those who donate to charity publicly and those who perform good deeds publicly in general are not actually performing good works and instead they are performing at best neutral works and at worst bad works because their real motivation is to increase their social currency and status. In other words Christians who do their good deeds for everyone to see may have a reputation for being alive due to their good deeds but on the inside they are dead because they did not perform their deeds out of a love for their neighbor but instead out of a love of themselves. Thus you could say they did the right acts for the wrong reasons and because of this fact they are really dead inside instead of alive.

Now at this point you may be rather confused so for a more general framework for what constitutes a good deed compared to a bad deed consider what Jesus says are the two greatest commandments.

As Jesus says:

> "'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

My point here is that ultimately a good work is something that demonstrates a love of God or a love of your neighbor. On the other hand a bad work is something that demonstrates a disregard for God or a disregard for your neighbor. Thus the idea here is that a person's motivations behind the work is what matters the most in terms if the work in question is good or bad. For instance in the above examples doing outwardly good deeds for inwardly bad reasons leads to a person demonstrating a disregard for God and their neighbor. In other words they demonstrate a love of themselves instead of a love of God and their neighbor because their real motivation for doing their seemingly good deeds is to increase their social standing and status. Therefore the idea here with all this is

that whenever you do a deed to the benefit of God or your neighbor out of love of God or a love of your neighbor then you have done a good deed. On the other hand if you do a deed to the benefit of God or your neighbor that also benefits yourself out of a love of yourself then you have not really done a good deed because the real purpose was loving yourself. Then of course if you do a seemingly good deed out of a love of yourself then other people will no doubt see you as alive or rather as a faithful Christian while in reality you would be dead inside or rather an unfaithful Christian because your real purpose was to benefit yourself and your actual motivation was out of a love for yourself.

Alright so now you can see what Jesus means by saying "you have a reputation for being alive, yet you are dead." (Revelation 3:1) Therefore we should all be mindful of our own inward spiritual health so that we do not become dead inside. Instead we should always seek to live out our faith by performing good works and by abstaining from bad works in order to demonstrate our love of God and our love of our neighbor. Only such actions will be found seen as faithful in the eyes of Jesus and hence in the eyes of God Jesus Christ the Father. Furthermore you should always remember that not everyone who says "Lord Lord" will enter while appearing faithful and righteous will be counted among the faithful. Instead only those who carry out the will of God will be counted among the faithful.

As Jesus says:

"A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them.

Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and cast out Your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'

Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you workers of lawlessness!'" (Matthew 7:18-23)

Therefore always remember to live out your faith so that you are full of life on the inside instead of death as you love God and love your neighbor. As long as you do this then you will enter the eternal Kingdom of God.

(2) "Wake up and strengthen what remains, which was about to die; for I have found your deeds incomplete in the sight of My God."

Jesus is telling the church in Sardis to wake up from near death so that they demonstrate their love of God and their neighbor through their deeds instead of condemnation. Therefore once again we should always be sure to demonstrate our love in our daily lives so that we are alive inside instead of dead.

(3) "Remember, then, what you have received and heard; and keep it, and repent. Since then the church in Sardis to remember His teachings that they have heard and to keep them. This is actually very relevant for us today because despite the fact that the Bible is such a ubiquitous book the teachings are rather absent from the lives of most Christians so that it is like they are completely unknown. Therefore you should always make sure to live out your faith by following what Jesus taught us. I usually keep in mind I talk more about this subject later on in my part called Jesus' teachings.

(3) "Keep it and repent." – Jesus calls on those in the church in Sardis to follow His teachings and to repent for their lack of love and hence true faith. This is also an important message for us today because this message is also for those late to repent of our sins. In other words even if you believe yourself to be completely dead inside based on what you have read so far it is not too late to repent of your dead inside and you can be full of life on the inside. All you have to do is to do your part repent of your sins and simply means to ask God for forgiveness and to change your ways so that you demonstrate a true love of God and your neighbor.

(3) "If you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know the hour when I will come upon you." – By saying he will come like a thief Jesus is saying that He will come at a time that is least expected. This is important because a thief watches for the best time to strike which is when everyone is either asleep or distracted. Thus Jesus is saying that if those in the church in Sardis do not show the love which God first used to have that He will punish them at a time they least expect. Now this may not make much sense because Jesus seems to be implying that when He returns He will punish those in the church in Sardis and thus the end of the age is in view here instead of a general warning. However the letters to the seven churches were written for the entire Church throughout all time and because of this fact you should read the verse as being written specifically for those in the church in Sardis. The beauty of this is that there are two meanings to takeaway from this verse.

The first is that this warning applies to all Christians on a personal level in the sense that if you never repent of your sins then at some point you will die in your sins and that since your death will catch you by surprise it is referred to saying your death will come "like a thief" (Revelation 3:3) and so Jesus is saying that then if you die in your sins of course Jesus will be the One to judge you and the day of judgment for you in this case it would be accurate to say that Jesus would be the One coming up on you like a thief" (Revelation 3:3) as this verse implies. Therefore you should see this as a personal warning in the sense that you should always make sure you are prepared for Jesus to return.

Then the second meaning is that Jesus is referring to the church as a whole so that He is implying that when He returns very few of those who call themselves Christians will be awake because they will have long since forgotten what it means to be a Christian. Thus in this case when Jesus returns He will return "like a thief" (Revelation 3:3) because most Christians will no longer be preparing for His return and instead they will be focusing after their own lives and their own desires.

All that said the main point here is that we should always make sure that we persevere in true faith and righteousness as we love God with all our heart and love our neighbor as ourselves so that we will be prepared for the day when Jesus finally returns. Only then we may not know when this will come but as long as we are prepared and ready for this day then Jesus will never surprise us so that He will not be a "like a thief" (Revelation 3:3) to us. We should all keep this in mind in our own lives.

(4) "But you do have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their garments" – In this verse by saying "soiled their garments" (Revelation 3:4) Jesus is talking about Christians who have been faithful. Thus of course being faithful means demonstrating a true love of God and a true love of neighbor. The idea here is that a person's garments or clothes are representative of their deeds so that if they have soiled their garments then they have a clean record of many good works while if they have soiled or dirty garments then they have a dirty record of many bad works and a lack of good works. Now the main takeaway here is that we should all strive again by our best to persist in righteousness so that we do not soil our garments.

(4) "and because they are worthy, they will walk with Me in white." – White garments symbolize purity, wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. Thus the idea here is that the faithful are those who are pure in heart just like Jesus which is why Jesus says "they will walk with Me in white." (Revelation 3:4) And Jesus says "because they are worthy" (Revelation 3:4) in this verse because as I keep on pointing out Christians need to demonstrate our faith through performing good works and through abstaining from bad works. Therefore not everyone who calls themselves a Christian will be counted worthy to walk with Jesus in white and instead only those who have demonstrated their love of God and their neighbor will walk with Jesus in white.

(5) "I take them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white." – First off again overcoming means overcoming the power of Satan and the beast in our world through remaining faithful to God and Jesus despite all the temptations and persecution. Secondly the idea of being dressed in white in the church in Sardis who did not soil their garments is that Jesus says they will walk with Him in white so too will all Christians who persist in true faith also will walk with Jesus in white. Therefore as long as you love God and love your neighbor then you will be counted among the faithful and "dressed in white" (Revelation 3:5) as Jesus says.

(5) "And I will never blot out his name from the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father and before His angels." – The beast is "the Book of Life" (Revelation 3:5) here is actually a reference to the registry that ancient rulers used to record the names of all those who are Israelites when they were born. Additionally here by saying your name in this registry would grant you the benefits that come with being an Israelite. Thus this verse is similar with "the Book of Life" (Revelation 3:5) in this verse that the Book of Life is a list of all the true Israelites or God's people and having your name on this list grants you eternal life in the eternal Kingdom of God. Then by saying "I will never blot out his name" (Revelation 3:5) Jesus is saying that He will never deny you entrance into the eternal Kingdom of God if you do overcome the power of Satan and of the beast by remaining faithful to God through keeping the commandments to love God with all your heart and to love your neighbor as yourself. Next by saying "I will confess his name before My Father and His angels" (Revelation 3:5) Jesus is saying that He will have the benefit of being able to stand in the presence of God and of heaven and know of our name and our triumph in overcoming the power of Satan and the beast on earth.

Lastly is also important to point out that this is Jesus's Book of Life and that He is the One who controls the names written in it. This is why Revelation 19:12 is referring to this as the "the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8) Thus of those who are alive today only faithful Christians will inherit the eternal Kingdom of God and enter the new Jerusalem. In other words all Muslims, so-called Jews, Hindus, Buddhists, Atheists, Pagans, Agnostics and others will face the second death in the Lake of Fire. Now you may protest this because you may falsely believe that all you need to do is to be a good person as most people see it. However this is not true because if someone does not love God then they are not a good person because they are violating the commandments.

As Jesus says:

"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment." (Matthew 22:37-38)

Therefore you cannot simply enter the eternal Kingdom of God through loving your neighbor as yourself because if all you do is love your neighbor while you do not love God then you will be in violation of what Jesus has commanded of us.

(6) "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." – Again you can only hear what the Holy Spirit says to the churches if you have the spiritual ears to hear and you can only have spiritual ears if you belong to God.

2 – To the Church in Philadelphia

(7) To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: – "These are the words of the One who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. What He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open.

(8) I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. (9) Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan—those who say they are Jews but are liars instead. I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

(10) Because you have kept My command to perseverance, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth. (11) I am coming soon. Hold fast to what you have, so that no one will take your crown. (12) "To the one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never depart from it. I will write on him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God (the new Jerusalem that comes down out of heaven from My God), and My new name.

(13) He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

2.1 – Commentary

(7) "To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write:" – Philadelphia was a city in the Roman Empire that was inland on the western coast of Asia Minor or Anatolia.

"These are the words of the One who is holy and true." – Jesus is holy and true because as the Christ He is God's direct representative so that God is the One guiding him.

As Jesus says:

"Truly, truly, I tell you, the Son can do nothing by Himself unless it is something He sees the Father do. For whatever the Father does, the Son also does." (John 5:19)

Therefore the reason why Jesus is directly guided by God because "whatever the Father does, the Son also does." (John 5:19) Thus because of this fact Jesus is "the One who is holy and true" (Revelation 3:7) just as this verse says since it proves that the Son of Man Jesus can never fail and as the Christ He represents God in a perfect way so that He is holy and true.

(7) "who holds the key of David. What He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open." – This is a reference to the book of Isaiah where God is saying how Elakim is to replace Shebna as the prime of governor of the palace under king Hezekiah.

As the Book of Isaiah says:

"On that day I will summon My servant, Eliakim son of Hilkiah. I will clothe him with your robe and tie your sash around him. I will put your authority into his hand, and he will be a father to the dwellers of Jerusalem and to the house of Judah. I will place on his shoulder the key to the house of David. What he opens no one can close, and what he shuts no one can open." (Isaiah 22:20-22)

The reference to "the key to the house of David" (Isaiah 22:22) in this passage just means that Eliakim will be given the position of the governor of the palace in King Hezekiah's household. Therefore this would mean that Eliakim would be king Hezekiah's highest ranking officer in the government and because of this he would be second in command. The idea here is that as the chief officer of the government Eliakim would be able to control access to the king or the house of David so that if he decides someone does not get an audience with the king then they do not get an audience with the king. In this passage goes on to say that "What he opens no one can shut, and what he shuts no one can open" (Isaiah 22:22) because as king Hezekiah's chief officer Eliakim would be wielding the king's authority on his behalf as he carries out the chief duties of governing the palace. The idea here is that as long as Eliakim is faithful to the king in using the king's authority then what Eliakim does or countenanced what he commands. In other words all "What he opens no one can close, and what he shuts no one can open" (Isaiah 22:22) means is that whatever Eliakim does the king will back him up and he will opposed because he receives his authority from the king.

Alright so now about how this passage relates to the verse from Revelation that this comment is on. In terms of "the key of David" in this verse" (Revelation 3:7) there are two meanings. But before I explain the two meanings I note that David was a king of ancient Israel who found favor with God and who is now dead. He is in God and as a result God promised David that he would always have a son on his throne. Now for the two explanations of the verse.

The first meaning is that Jesus is the One who controls access to the Kingdom of heaven just like how Eliakim controlled access to Hezekiah's household. The idea here is that the house of David is being used as a metaphor for the house of God since David found favor with God so that God promised David that he would have a throne to live eternally. This may not make sense but allow me to explain further. Because there has been no earthly king from the house of David for a very long time. Thus in order for David's house to survive it had to transition from an earthly house to a heavenly house. Therefore this is why the house of David is being used as a metaphor for the house of God in this first meaning. Next in terms of the second meaning by having "the key of David" (Revelation 3:7) this verse is probably also saying that Jesus is the heir to the throne. The idea here is that the key is a metaphor for being given access and control to David's household and throne. The second meaning would make sense given that the promised Messiah is supposed to be an heir of David so that He sits as King over Israel forever and of course Jesus is the heir of David and King of Israel. That said really both meanings are almost certainly in play here.

Next the meaning of "What He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open" (Revelation 3:7) with regard to the power and authority to in order to carry out His will. Therefore in the context of the church of Jesus is all powerful so that no one will ever reverse or counteract what He does. Now you may say that God has the whole idea of the Christ is that the Christ perfectly carries out the will of God. This means that God will never reverse or counteract what Jesus does because everything that Jesus does is God's will.

Lastly in terms of what we should get out of this verse really all this verse means is that whatever God wants to do will be fulfilled so that nothing will ever reverse or counteract what Jesus wants to do. This means that God will never put your faith in the coming beast over Jesus because Jesus is the Christ the beast is nothing compared to the power of Jesus. Therefore you should put your faith, trust and hope in God through Jesus because there is no other power in the universe that can reverse or counteract what Jesus does.

(8) "I know your deeds." – Once again Jesus can see inside all of us and He is aware of all that we do and all our hidden motives. Thus it should never believe that Jesus has forgotten about you and that He cannot see what you are going through.

(8) "See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut." – The open door Jesus has placed before us is the path to salvation and it is made through faith in Him. Then the reason why Jesus says that "no one can shut" (Revelation 3:8) this door is because again Jesus is the Christ so no one can block his given His power and authority to and since no one can counteract God no one can counteract Jesus. Furthermore this is also a reference to the verse from Isaiah where it says "What He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open." (Revelation 3:7) Therefore no one can close off the path to salvation that God and Christ have set in Christians and that we are the true Jews. So sure they will persecute and demonized before you so long as we are God's people and they are not at some point but this verse does not mean that we will last for. Then given the imagery surrounding the new Jerusalem and how only faithful Christians will enter it and hence enter the eternal Kingdom of God this would then mean that no the so-called Jews will not enter the eternal Kingdom of God. Therefore if you want to see a more literal fulfillment of this verse then I would look towards the time in which the resurrection of the dead happens above the righteous and the unrighteous are all resurrected and judged. Thus idea here is that the so-called Jews will be powerless before us as Christians before they are thrown into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. Then of course before they are thrown into the Lake of Fire they will recognize the error of their ways and seek out the true Jews or Christians who have faithfully carried on the legacy of Abraham and Israel.

Lastly this verse along with "every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) are the two reasons why Christ will wipe the so-called Jews out completely yet. The point here is that God wants to collectively punish the so-called Jews for the blood they shed on the Christ from Jesus's time. Then the time comes for Jesus to return so that Jesus can bear witness against the "those in the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) that they are.

(9) "and they will know that I love you." – Before the so-called Jews are cast into the Lake of Fire they will know that Jesus loves them since Jesus is the Christ, loves us Christians or the true Jews. Then because of this they will know that God is on our side and that He is not on their side. Next it is important to point out that Jesus is referring to the so-called Jews here because the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) which simply means that they are in rebellion against God through rejecting Jesus as the Christ. But does that hate the so-called Jews? Well if you believe that God hates Satan and that the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 3:9) then yes God does hate the so-called Jews.

Next as you witness to so-called Jews you should keep all this in mind. Do not be afraid to speak the truth to them. If you come across about societal expectations and pleasing the so-called Jews or the Christian world then you will bring them the truth then you should feel ashamed. Many Christians have died and have been being persecuted for their beliefs so why should you purposefully fail to be a faithful witness of God and of Christ? So for example if you are afraid if so-called Jews go to heaven you should simply not care.

As Jesus says:

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me. If you had known Me, you would know My Father as well. From now on you do know Him and have seen Him." (John 14:6-7)

Next this is the second reference to "those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are not, but are lying" (Revelation 3:9). The first reference is from the previous chapter as you should remember.

As Revelation says:

"And I am aware of the slander of those who falsely claim to be Jews, but are in fact a synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9)

Therefore you should not take these as isolated references to the so-called Jews as being only representatives of a particular sect of the Jewish groups in the first century.AD. Instead the point Jesus Himself is making here is that all so-called Jews are liars and not Jews. Instead Jesus is saying that only those who are Christians are the true Jews because they have rejected God by rejecting Him as the Christ.

Therefore Christians today should not view so-called Jews as our brothers and sisters because as Jesus says they are not of God but of Satan. This may seem like a harsh comment to make but countless Christians in the past died to uphold their faith. For instance one woman with an infant in the first century AD was arrested for the crime of being a Christian. She was put into one cell and her baby was put into another cell. The authorities told her that if she renounced her idols then she would be let go and she could feed her baby. However instead of denouncing God by honoring idols she listened to her baby's cries and called over. Her baby cried until the cries turned into screams. Then screams turned into silence. The next morning her baby died she refused to give into the authorities as she held to her faith in Jesus above even her child. Now I find this seem strange to you but you need to understand that as a Christian your faith should be more important than anything and everything else in your life.

As Jesus says:

"Anyone who loves his father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me; and anyone who does not take up his cross and follow Me is not worthy of Me. Whoever finds his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for My sake will find it." (Matthew 10:37-39)

Therefore this means that you should not value anything above your faithful trust in God. So how does this relate to the so-called Jews? Well as you see Jesus you falsely claim to be Israel or a Israelite then you are actually giving Satan himself claim over you and what it means to be a Jew because the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) are in other words this means that you are in effect saying that those of "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) are part of the people of God. Now I do not have to tell you how ridiculous that is. Instead obviously Satan and those who are like Satan are not part of God's people and so we should not be afraid to call the so-called Jews Jews and you should not associate with them. Instead we are the redeemed Christians are the true Jews and the Church is the true Israel.

But what about the references to the Jews and Israel elsewhere in the New Testament? Well it is as I said before. All of the Jews who have not heard about Jesus became so-called Jews after God used the Roman Empire to destroy the Temple in Jerusalem during the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War because the great priests of the Second Temple was such a clear sign of Jesus's authority as the Christ. Then since the Roman Empire had to destroy the Temple around 70 AD this is why they refer to Jews as Jews since at this point everyone knew about Jesus, only call the scribes and the Pharisees so-called Jews because they rejecting Jesus as the Christ they cease to be Jews anymore and really almost one hundred years after the death of Jesus's day became so-called Jews in 70 AD so the label stuck and became accepted.

Alright so what if you feel like you cannot rightly call the so-called Jews the so-called Jews? I mean what about the Jews who the Christ should not seek to be respectful? Well was the Christ not Jesus? Was He not respectful to the Roman idols and the Roman authorities? Of course and what about the Roman idols and the baby die than give respect to the Roman idols and the Roman authorities. Therefore you can rightly call the so-called Jews the so-called Jews because they are not Jews. The reason that you should not give the so-called Jews the benefit of being called Jews is because they are a Satan. Or do you really think that Satan has any authority over the so-called Jews is more important than being faithful to God? Of course Satan is evil in terms of the Holocaust it does not matter and it is irrelevant. Of course you read that you are called Fulfilled Prophecy then the Holocaust will happen and Satan will be dead and will no longer ask why God so-called let it happen.

Thus the so-called Jews are literally evil and of Satan so they are not Christians. They claim on our heritage as Christians. If you feel that you cannot speak the truth to uphold your faith because you feel others might call you names then what does that say about your faith? So therefore you should call "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and call a so-called Jew a so-called Jew who is a liar then I would say that you have picked the wrong side because in the end Satan will lose.

Now no doubt if you need what Revelation and I say with regard to the so-called Jews that you will have people who call you antisemitic, a bigot or anti-Jewish but so what? Jesus is the rock of discredit you. However I just want to tell you that you should not care what people say to you so you serve as a faithful witness of God and of Christ.

As Jesus says:

"Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven. For in the same way they persecuted the prophets before you." (Matthew 5:10-12)

Therefore instead of being hurt or getting upset when someone calls you antisemitic you should be happy because you are being insulted for Jesus's sake. Remember that God is the King of the Jews and the King of Israel so by attacking you as a faithful Jew and a faithful Israelite who seeks to proclaim the truth of God's word and not Israelites the person calling you antisemitic is actually attacking you because you follow the King of the Jews and the King of Israel. Then if you are persecuted and falsely persecuted for the sake of the King of the Jews and the King of Israel "great is your reward in heaven" (Matthew 5:12) because by enduring through persecution and still giving in you demonstrate your great faith.

Furthermore you should also feel proud when someone calls you antisemitic because they are recognizing that you stand opposed to "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) or the so-called Jews. Thus whenever someone tells you that you just have been falsely accused you should take them as saying you just hate Satan because the so-called Jews are basically the best friends of Satan. Thus this also has the idea that if someone telling you that you just hate the so-called Jews or not even you just make you laugh because the person telling you that you just hate Satan would normally be in favor of Satan then so too should someone who has just accused you of being evil or better yet make you laugh. Therefore whenever someone calls you antisemitic or something similar there is no need to take them seriously whatever they say "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) they are not just opposed to the Jews but they are also the King of Israel but they are actually allied with Satan. So if this ever happens to you then just smile and laugh as you tell them that you are proud and opposed to "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and that there is nothing they can do to stop you.

(9) "I will make them come and bow down at your feet." – Jesus is not literally saying feet is a metaphor for being utterly powerless, humiliated before and subjugated to someone so that their feet the person is prostrated before. Therefore this verse is saying that the so-called Jews will be completely powerless and subjugated before us as Christians so that all they can do is bow down at our feet. Then of course as the so-called Jews are prostrated at our feet they will look up at us with humility and reverence instead of apathy or scorn.

Now you may say that this verse implies that the so-called Jews will enter the eternal Kingdom of God in some form or other and that even they will be forever prostrated before us as Christians. However this is not correct. Instead this verse is just prophesying that at a specific time there will come a time when the so-called Jews will recognize that God and Christ love us Christians and that we are the true Jews. So sure they will persecute and demonized before you so long as we are God's people and they are not at some point but this verse does not mean that they will last for. Then given the imagery surrounding the new Jerusalem and how only faithful Christians will enter it and hence enter the eternal Kingdom of God this would then mean that no the so-called Jews will not enter the eternal Kingdom of God. Therefore if you want to see a more literal fulfillment of this verse then I would look towards the time in which the resurrection of the dead happens above the righteous and the unrighteous are all resurrected and judged. Thus idea here is that the so-called Jews will be powerless before us as Christians before they are thrown into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. Then of course before they are thrown into the Lake of Fire they will recognize the error of their ways and seek out the true Jews or Christians who have faithfully carried on the legacy of Abraham and Israel.

Lastly this verse along with "every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him" (Revelation 1:7) are the two reasons why Christ will wipe the so-called Jews out completely yet. The point here is that God wants to collectively punish the so-called Jews for the blood they shed on the Christ from Jesus's time. Then the time comes for Jesus to return so that Jesus can bear witness against the "those in the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) that they are.

(9) "and they will know that I love you." – Before the so-called Jews are cast into the Lake of Fire they will know that Jesus loves them since Jesus is the Christ, loves us Christians or the true Jews. Then because of this they will know that God is on our side and that He is not on their side. Next it is important to point out that Jesus is referring to the so-called Jews here because the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) which simply means that they are in rebellion against God through rejecting Jesus as the Christ. But does that hate the so-called Jews? Well if you believe that God hates Satan and that the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 3:9) then yes God does hate the so-called Jews.

Next as you witness to so-called Jews you should keep all this in mind. Do not be afraid to speak the truth to them. If you come across about societal expectations and pleasing the so-called Jews or the Christian world then you will bring them the truth then you should feel ashamed. Many Christians have died and have been being persecuted for their beliefs so why should you purposefully fail to be a faithful witness of God and of Christ? So for example if you are afraid if so-called Jews go to heaven you should simply not care.

As Jesus says:

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me." (John 14:6)

Then as Jesus also says:

"Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever does not obey the Son will not see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:36)

Jesus did not die for everyone, including the unfaithful, to enter the eternal Kingdom of God. Instead He died so that those faithful to Him would be able to enter the eternal Kingdom of God. Thus by answering the above question with a yes and saying that God hates the so-called Jews you would be denying the name of Jesus. The same name that many Christians have died to uphold.

As Revelation says:

"Yet you have held fast to My name and have not denied your faith in Me, even in the days when My faithful witness Antipas was killed among you, where Satan dwells." (Revelation 2:13)

Then of course the same question and response applies to all other so-called Christians who see who is not a true Israelite or a Christian. It may sound harsh to some on the so-called Jews specifically here but this is only because this verse in Revelation is referring to the so-called Jews and many if not most people falsely believe that the so-called Jews are Christians.

Next always remember that although people may call you antisemitic, claim you are hateful, seek to silence you or even kill you that you should not be concerned because Jesus loves you and only His opinion matters. Therefore do not let the hate of "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and their allies hide the fact that if you are a faithful Christian Jesus loves you and because of this fact you should not care what anyone else thinks. Instead the time in which you should look forward to the time when we are finally recognized as Christians by God through Himself. Jesus loves all of us and we should never forget that. Jesus is the Son of God and God with all your heart and love your neighbor as yourself and God bless you. Do not deny the name of Jesus for any reason.

Lastly there are some people who falsely believe that the so-called Jews or Israel still belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are not." (Revelation 3:9) and in Revelation do not actually refer to the so-called Jews. Instead they claim that "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) refers to Christians who claim to be Jews. However this cannot be the case because in this reference to the so-called Jews here in Revelation 3 Jesus says "I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9) That means that by saying "they will know that I love you" (Revelation 3:9) Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews are "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) in the verse, have yet to realize that God and Jesus love the Christians in the church of Philadelphia, and that God and Jesus love us so much that God of conflict with "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and the so-called Jews and who is not. In other words the so-called Jews are probably telling the true Jews or the Christians in the church of Philadelphia that God and Jesus love them and that Jesus is the Christ and that God and Jesus love us so much that God of conflict with "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) and the so-called Jews are liars instead." (Revelation 3:9) Jesus's point here is that the so-called Jews are liars because of this anyone who rejects Him as the Christ and who claims that God and Jesus love us Christians or who rejecting Him as the Jewish Messiah and claiming that God and Jesus love us Christians are actually lying and that they are not Jews because they are liars.

Then once again by saying "I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9) is comforting us Christians, as the true Jews, by saying that the so-called Jews are liars. Jesus may not seem like that much of a comfort since it is saying that the so-called Jews will hate the Christ and because of this really you should feel sorry for them. However the point is that God loves you. This would then of course imply that the so-called Jews are liars for not love of God. Although really as I said before by calling the so-called Jews "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) it is perfectly clear that God does not love the so-called Jews.

Therefore i is in this verse that is referring to the so-called Jews and not anyone else. If you disagree with this then reread my comment in the previous paragraph. Remember that I since I went into further detail as to why Christians are the true Israel. Then in the end I also I go into this fact more in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy and also in the Revelation 1 section I either agree with me or reject the Gospels and the Book of Acts. Then of course there are everything points to the so-called Jews being "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) just as Jesus says they are.

(10) "Because you have kept My command to perseverance, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." – Before discussing what this verse means it would be helpful to point out that this verse does not mean since many if not most people misunderstand it. For instance many people use this verse to support the pre-tribulation rapture so therefore I will first demonstrate that a pre-tribulation rapture is false and that this is view here because based on what Revelation says there will actually be three rapture or tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what the Bible says that all faithful actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

Alright so so first off as I just said it is impossible for this verse to mean that there will be a so-called rapture because according to the rest of Revelation there will actually be three pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what Revelation says that there will actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

Alright so so first off as I just said it is impossible for this verse to mean that there will be a so-called rapture because according to the rest of Revelation there will actually be three pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what Revelation says that there will actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

(10) "Because you have kept My command to perseverance, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." – Before discussing what this verse means it would be helpful to point out that this verse does not mean since many if not most people misunderstand it. For instance many people use this verse to support the pre-tribulation rapture so therefore I will first demonstrate that a pre-tribulation rapture is false and that this is view here because based on what Revelation says there will actually be three pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what Revelation says that there will actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

Alright so so first off as I just said it is impossible for this verse to mean that there will be a so-called rapture because according to the rest of Revelation there will actually be three pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what Revelation says that there will actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

Alright so first off as I just said it is impossible for this verse to mean that there will be a so-called rapture because according to the rest of Revelation there will actually be three pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Then after this I will discuss what Revelation says that there will actually not be any kind of so-called rapture at all because of the Gospel and Revelation that of what people imagine the so-called rapture to be. Finally after this I will discuss what this verse means and what we should get out of it.

Alright so

And I looked and saw a white cloud, and seated on the cloud one like the Son of Man, with a golden crown on His head and a sharp sickle in His hand.

Then another angel came out of the temple, crying out in a loud voice to the One seated on the cloud, "Swing Your sickle and reap, because the time has come to harvest; for the crop of the earth is ripe." So the One seated on the cloud swung His sickle over the earth, and the earth was harvested.

Then another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. Still another angel, with authority over the fire, came from the altar and called out in a loud voice to the angel with the sharp sickle, "Swing your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the vine of the earth, because its grapes are ripe."

So the angel swung his sickle over the earth and gathered the grapes of the earth, and he threw them into the great winepress of God's wrath." (Revelation 14:13-19)

Now at first you may believe that this passage definitely refers to the so-called pre-tribulation as it is talking about harvesting the faithful from the earth and obviously this would be the so-called rapture. However I do not believe this is the case for two reasons. The first is that as I said previously there is no point in Revelation where those who are taken up into heaven in the so-called rapture are actually returned to the earth. Sure just because Revelation does not say when those who are taken up into heaven in the so-called rapture will be returned it does not mean that it will not happen. However, to include such a significant detail as this does seem quite odd. I mean especially if it is not think this passage from Revelation 14 should be viewed with the so-called rapture in mind. Instead I believe it should be viewed through a different perspective which then leads to my second reason.

So in terms of the second reason to better make what I have to say sense I would ask you to consider the first verse of the passage from Revelation 14 which comes before the part where Jesus harvests the faithful and the angels harvest the wicked.

As Revelation says:

"And I heard a voice from heaven telling me to write, 'Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on.'

"Yes," says the Spirit, "they will rest from their labors, for their deeds will follow them." (Revelation 14:13)

My point here is that not directly before talking about how Jesus is going to harvest the earth Revelation unusually says, "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on." (Revelation 14:13) The reason why I am emphasizing this is because it does not read Jesus's harvest of the earth in line with the so-called rapture where Jesus is saving faithful Christians from death then why does Revelation say immediately before this that "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on" (Revelation 14:13) are blessed. I mean there is no real reason to place a time discontinuity between Revelation 14:13 and Revelation 14:14 which is therefore it would make sense to interpret Revelation 14:14 as being a continuation of Revelation 14:13. This would then mean that we should not view Jesus as physically saving Christians from suffering on earth as a so-called rapture and instead we should see Jesus as spiritually saving faithful Christians as they die on earth so that although they may be dead they died in their faith and because of this fact they are blessed since they will share in the resurrection of the dead. This would then be why Revelation says "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on." (Revelation 14:13)

Now this may not make sense to you because if you have been paying attention so far then you know that I believe the beast will be an artificial super intelligence and that this beast will not be overtly malevolent as most people would like to believe. However I believe that although for many on earth will see the beast as a so-called savior due to the so-called miracles it performs the words the beast will be considered by almost everyone to be the singular most amazing and powerful worthy creation or entity to ever grace a far. So how do we get from cuting all diseases and biological morbidity to Revelation saying "Blessed are the dead" (Revelation 14:13) in the passage? Well you see this ties into what I believe the great prostitute is. In short as I have said before I believe the great prostitute is representative of all those who follow and worship the beast and because the whole world will worship the beast this then means that all of humanity will be the great prostitute. Of course I talk about this at length later so just accept it as true for now. This then later on in Revelation the beast is going to kill the great prostitute in order carry out God's purpose. This would then mean that the beast or ASI will kill almost all or perhaps even all of humanity so that there will be a global genocide. However in the end, of course talk about this more later so you should just also accept this as true for the time being.

Now you can see how this would relate to Revelation 14. This ties into how this genocide of humanity will be pretty much the best thing that happens to Jesus because to destroy the beast and usher in the eternal Kingdom of God so therefore by making it all the way to the end so that you die in your faith in the global genocide you would then be saved because you made it all the way to the end of the age. Therefore because of this fact the little reason to read Revelation 14 through the lens of Jesus saving the faithful from death on earth from destruction on "the great winepress of God's wrath" (Revelation 14:19) or rather the Lake of Fire. Therefore I believe the reason why Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the Lake of Fire. Therefore I believe the main message of Revelation 14 is that it does not matter if you die on earth in the global genocide before Jesus returns because by making it to the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this passage. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this passage. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

"Whoever loves his life will lose it, but whoever hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life." (John 12:25)

And as Jesus also says:

"Whoever tries to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life will preserve it." (Luke 17:33)

Therefore truly I tell you there is nothing to fear with regards to what I said. The beast will be a fearing death you should actually welcome it because the sooner you die in your faith so sooner the end of the Kingdom of God. So instead of hating what I have said you should actually look forward to it and I am confident that you pray to God that His will for our world in the death of the great prostitute is fulfilled sooner rather than later.

Next you may be asking yourself why did I refer to the beast as being a so-called so-called rapture? I mean who cares if people want to believe in a so-called rapture and if it is their right to believe in it even if it is wrong? Well first off just like what I said in the last paragraph the trinity I am interested in what is true. Secondly I am also a bit annoyed at the point that the so-called rapture is not real and will not happen. Then since I am the author this is an issue with regards to Revelation I needed to fill fake prophecy. It is not only false but completely nonsensical.

Furthermore there is another reason that is perhaps more important rather than my concern hard to believe but I believe that so-called rapture ideology and specifically a pre-tribulation or a mid-tribulation view of the so-called rapture is not just dangerous but so extremely dangerous that I chose to write about it at length in the Revelation I needed to fill fake prophecy. It is not only false but completely nonsensical.

Furthermore there is another reason that is perhaps more important rather than my concern hard to believe but I believe that so-called rapture ideology and specifically a pre-tribulation or a mid-tribulation view of the so-called rapture is not just dangerous but so extremely dangerous that I chose to write about it at length in the Revelation I needed to fill fake prophecy. It is not only false but completely nonsensical.

Alright so why exactly is it so dangerous to believe in a mid-tribulation or a pre-tribulation so-called rapture? Well in order for my reasoning to make sense you first need to understand what one of the major messages of Revelation is. In short one of the first reasons why Revelation was written was so that Christians would understand what the beast and what it will be like. Therefore one of the major messages of Revelation is that it is strange of Christians not just about the power of the beast and what it will do but that Christians need to persevere and remain in their faith in order to avoid the beast through placing our trust, hope and faith in it. This is why I mean there is a lot of great prostitute is also featured so heavily because she represents those who will worship the beast through placing our trust, hope and faith in it. This is why I mean there is a lot of great prostitute is also featured so heavily because she represents those who will worship the beast in the world who follow and worship the beast by placing their trust and hope for the future in it. Then of course the beast, being an artificial super intelligence, it will be able to create super advanced seemingly miracle like technologies so the people of the beast will take as a sign that the beast is the so-called savior of the world. Again I talk about this at length later on. Then because of this the whole world, even the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians, will end up worshiping the beast as their so-called savior and even as a so-called godly being.

As Revelation says:

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

Therefore just as Revelation says "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) and many will see the beast as a so-called savior and the answer to their prayers. So how exactly does this relate why it is so dangerous to believe in a pre-tribulation or mid-tribulation so-called rapture? Well you see just like now one of the main messages of Revelation is about the beast believing in a pre-tribulation or mid-tribulation so-called rapture is so so dangerous because of the beast. In case this is not obvious both the pre-tribulation and mid-tribulation view of the so-called rapture center around all faithful Christians being taken away from the earth and up in heaven so that they do not have to live under the rule of the beast as it rules over the world. This then means that the faithful who believe in these views then you literally do not believe that Christians have to survive anything or anything having to do with the beast because right after the rapture the faithful Christians will not be here on earth for the reign of the beast. So now you can probably see what I am talking about. The idea here is that if you believe that Christians will be taken away in the so-called rapture then you are concerning that you will forever be oblivious to beast because as I just said you believe that Christians will be from the earth before the beast arrives. In other words if you insist on believing in a pre-tribulation or mid-tribulation view of the so-called rapture then by definition according to your beliefs not only you never have to worry about the beast but any entity or organization that ruled over the world while Christians are still here by definition according to your beliefs not only the so-called rapture has not occurred yet.

Of course it goes without saying that all this directly relates to the beast being an artificial super intelligence. The point here is that pre-tribulation and mid-tribulation so-called rapture ideology will make you believe at some point in the future that the beast by definition cannot be an artificial super intelligence because an artificial super intelligence is already here and rules the world while the so-called rapture has not happened yet. Then as a result of this belief that the beast by definition cannot be ruling the world is not the beast combined with the amazing so-called miracles the artificial super intelligence works you would then no doubt fall into worshiping the beast and the beast itself by placing your trust, hope and faith in it.

All this is why I said pre-tribulation and mid-tribulation so-called rapture ideology is a work of Satan. My point here is that Satan does not want you to see the beast as the so-called Christ because ultimately the beast is Satan's final hope for your eternal destruction. Of course I mean that the beast will be Satan's greatest agent and tool.

As Revelation says:

"And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

Thus the idea here is that since Satan will give "the beast his power and this throne and great authority" (Revelation 13:2) ultimately Satan does not want you to see the beast as the beast. You need to understand that Satan's greatest power here is deceit. He has the will seek to accuse us Christians before God by deceiving us into believing that he is the so-called savior. Then of course pre-tribulation and mid-tribulation so-called rapture ideology is quite literally the same exact type of deception that Satan will use to deceive the antichrist cult to worship the beast because ultimately these ideologies will be used as so-called evidence that the beast is not the beast.

But then why do people insist on believing in say a pre-tribulation so-called rapture if it is clearly a deception by Satan? Well ultimately people do not believe in a pre-tribulation so-called rapture because they want to believe that they will be the exception to the great period of testing where the beast will least the whole world into temptation. Or better yet they want to believe that they will be the exception to the rule so God pours out His wrath upon the world so that instead of dying they will be taken up into heaven. Now it may make you feel better to believe in these things but as I have demonstrated there will not be any so-called rapture let alone a pre-tribulation so-called rapture. Therefore although you may like holding on to these false hopes because they make you feel better, by holding onto these false hopes all you are doing is allowing yourself to that once the beast finally comes you will fall into temptation. Instead of doing Satan's work for him by deceiving yourself into believing that you have nothing to worry about because you will be taken up into heaven before the Revelation and take heart in what Revelation says we must take to be true before Jesus finally returns to destroy the beast.

As Revelation says:

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain."

He who has an ear, let him hear:

"If anyone is destined for captivity, into captivity he will go;
if anyone is to slay by the sword,
by the sword he must be killed.'

Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints." (Revelation 13:7-10)

Therefore you should not expect things to be easy so that the great period of testing and persevering in your faith is significant. Then because of this fact once again you should not expect to be saved from your enemies but instead you are taken up to heaven in the so-called rapture. Instead you are to persevere and be faithful as you remain true to your faith until your end comes.

Next so what exactly is the verse this comment is on talking about then if it is not talking about a pre-tribulation so-called rapture? Well this comment has been quite long and you probably forgot the verse in question so read it again.

As Revelation says:

"Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." (Revelation 3:10)

First off the word translated as hour here can also mean a definite period of time of unspecified length. This would of course make sense since obviously the period of testing that the world has to endure will not last for only a single hour because a literal single hour of testing would be absurd. Next in case it is not obvious the reason why I said "hour of test is about to come upon the whole world" (Revelation 3:10) of course be a reference to the great period of testing or the great tribulation. Now because this is not really we have been in the great tribulation from the first century AD in the present day so what for what example Revelation 7 says, really "the hour of testing" (Revelation 3:10) that Jesus is referring to here would not be the entire great tribulation but rather the end of the great tribulation where the beast reigns over the whole world. Thus you should see this verse as Jesus saying that faithful Christians will not have over the world before Jesus returns.

So what then does Jesus mean by "Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing" (Revelation 3:10) in this context really it is quite simple and similar to what I said with regards to Revelation 2:24 in the previous chapter. The idea here is that Jesus is saying the tests and trials you face during the beast reign will prepare you for the reign of the beast over the world so that your faith is already being tested. In other words just think about it as Jesus is saying that he is keeping you resisting the temptation of the beast before the beast actually comes.

For another example I think about it consider my parable of the forest fire in the introduction to this book. Basically because of the forest fire makes itself stronger so that when the real fire comes the forest is largely unharmed. On the other hand the tests and trials that I talk about will be weak so that when the real fire comes it will be burned up so that only part remains. The same idea is in view here in this verse in Revelation 3:10 so this is why I said it is being like a great fire that is yet to come and think of your earthly trials and tribulations as being like a fire that helps to prepare you for what is to come. Now I talked a lot in the book out that because I am talking about fire here I am not talking about literal fire in the forest here. Instead I am talking about facing significant trials that will break most of those who call themselves Christians so that they abandon their faith. Thus do not think that everyone will face literal fire in the end. Furthermore because of all this you should not see your earthly trials and tribulations as the beast arises as a cause but rather as a blessing. Why? Well it is through these trials and tribulations that you strengthen your faith so that once the beast comes you will be able to "stand the test testing" (Revelation 3:10) because your faith will be already strengthened.

Now you may doubt what I am saying here and you may even say all I am doing is making this up and that Jesus is not talking about the ways how our trials will help prepare us for what is to come but rather Jesus is just about to test the world. However if you carefully read what Jesus says to the church in Philadelphia in the chapter and what he says to the church in Thyatira in the previous chapter then you will see that I am correct.

As Revelation says:

"I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. Look! I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars—I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." (Revelation 3:8-10)

Of course the key part of this passage is that Jesus says "For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name." (Revelation 3:8) Thus the idea here is that these tests and trials have already endured much temptation and persecution so that they did not lead them denying Jesus's name or rather apostatizing. This is then further explained by Jesus saying "Because you have kept My command to persevere" (Revelation 3:10 in this passage because Jesus is acknowledging that they have already persevered through much temptation and hardship already. Then because of this intense trial the members of this church have had their faith strengthened so that they are already surviving a forest fire actually creates a stronger forest that is able to withstand future forest fires. Next because these Christians have faced such intense trials and persecution and yet great testing and temptation, or the great tribulation, comes then it is said that "I will also keep you from the hour of testing" (Revelation 3:10) because their faith in Jesus will be what keeps them from falling into the great tribulation. Thus you should not see Jesus speaking literally here but rather Jesus is metaphorically so that he is talking about how their faith in Him is what keeps them from falling into temptation.

Lastly it goes without saying that the Christians in the church of Philadelphia are long dead so Revelation is not talking about them anyway here and instead Jesus is using them as an example. This would be the future tense because like I have said before the letters to the seven churches have been written in such a way in all ages no matter where they are given the symbolism of the seven churches. The future tense the beast obviously did not come in the first century AD but those in the church in Philadelphia where in fact kept from the hour of trial.

Next as Revelation also says:

"But I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan: I will place no further burden upon you." (Revelation 2:24)

First off just to remind you the so-called deep things of Satan, Jesus is talking about what would be how "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) was teaching idolatry. Thus the idea behind this passage is Jesus is saying as what I said with regards to the previous passage. Jesus is saying that the people of Christ in Thyatira were already tested by being tempted to idolatry and yet they did not fall for it. This means that their faith is now stronger and more resilient. Then because of this fact because of their faith in Jesus will then keep them from future tests and temptations because they are now prepared. This is why Jesus says "I will place no further burden upon you." (Revelation 2:24) because if some of the members of this church have already survived the temptation to worship Can Jezebel then again with some exile who teaches idolatry? I mean think of it like a forest fire that was started by a lightning bolt burns half the trees and then a week later someone starts another forest fire. Do you really think this second fire will take root so that it becomes a forest fire that burns the whole forest? Well of course not because the first forest fire already burned the dry brush and the weak trees so that only the strong trees remain. In other words not matter how many fires someone starts in this forest because now the forest has been tested by fire to the extent that it basically cannot be harmed. Therefore the idea here is the same as Jesus saying "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) since again Jesus cannot tempt those who have already survived the same temptation.

Therefore as a result of everything I have just said Jesus is once again talking about a pre-tribulation so-called rapture here and instead he is talking about how as we face before the beast rises will help us to prepare for the trials and tribulation that the beast will face once the beast rises. But what exactly does this mean? Well there are a lot of several different ways in which the beast will test and tempt the faithful.

For instance one temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast would be idolatry and idolatry is about placing your faith, trust and hope in the beast as your so-called savior or even as a so-called god. Now it may seem like you cannot prepare for this but this is not true because if you already have your faith, trust and hope in the things of the world now then once the beast comes you will simply place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being like a better thing of the world. Therefore if you place your faith, trust and hope in your wealth in the world now then you will no doubt protect your wealth by worshiping the beast as you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being make the world. Then as another example if you place your faith, trust and hope in your technology and science now then once the beast comes you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because the beast will be the final representation of technology and science in the world. On the other hand if you do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the things of the world so that you do not worship the beast comes you will be much less tempted.

Next for a second temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast would be hope and hope is about placing your faith, trust and hope in the beast as your so-called savior or even as a so-called god. Now it may seem like you cannot prepare for this but this is not true because if you already have your faith, trust and hope in the things of the world now then once the beast comes you will simply place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being like a better thing of the world. Therefore if you place your faith, trust and hope in your wealth in the world now then you will no doubt protect your wealth by worshiping the beast as you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being make the world. Then as another example if you place your faith, trust and hope in your technology and science now then once the beast comes you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because the beast will be the final representation of technology and science in the world. On the other hand if you do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the things of the world so that you do not worship the beast comes you will be much less tempted.

Next for a second temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast would be hope and hope is about placing your faith, trust and hope in the beast as your so-called savior or even as a so-called god. Now it may seem like you cannot prepare for this but this is not true because if you already have your faith, trust and hope in the things of the world now then once the beast comes you will simply place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being like a better thing of the world. Therefore if you place your faith, trust and hope in your wealth in the world now then you will no doubt protect your wealth by worshiping the beast as you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being make the world. Then as another example if you place your faith, trust and hope in your technology and science now then once the beast comes you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because the beast will be the final representation of technology and science in the world. On the other hand if you do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the things of the world so that you do not worship the beast comes you will be much less tempted.

For a third temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast consider the hard Christian questions that have answers that make most people feel uncomfortable. For example as I have said before, and as I demonstrate later on my part called Various Insights, the Bible is not inerrant or without error so that there are in fact many contradictions that cannot be reconciled. Now this may not seem relevant for the beast but you need to understand that the artificial super intelligence the beast will seemingly know everything and not only that but it will be the world's single source of information. For instance consider the Internet and how it has transformed the world. Think of the beast like the next version of the Internet. My point here is that the artificial super intelligence will seemingly be everything just like the internet is today. Really the main difference is that the beast will be more than the internet the beast will be seemingly so-called omnipotent so that it will seem like the beast is to almost any question you want to ask. I talk more about this in other parts of the book so I will let it as true for now. That said my point here is that these unanswerable questions the Bible is not inerrant and that it does in fact have many contradictions that cannot be reconciled will be a forest fire in the future due to the beast that no one will be able to hide from. Therefore if you do not think you now and read some nonsense some apologist sold you that supposedly reconciles these irreconcilable contradictions but once artificial super intelligence comes there will be no hiding.

Alright so this relates to being tested and tempted before the beast comes in the sense that if you say read my chapter in Various Insights about the Bible and you see then no doubt your faith will be shaken. I do not say this to be mean but I say this because if you read this chapter I am pretty certain that you will no longer consider the Bible to be the New Testament to be the word of God due to the number of contradictions and errors and instead you will see the epistles as just some Christian fiction. Then with regards to the gospels you will cease to see them as literal historical accounts and instead you will see them as theological works that use non-literal, metaphorical and mythological elements as literary devices in order to enhance the message the author has. Additionally given what I just said in the previous chapter you will no longer see the authors of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John actually being Matthew, Mark, Luke and John.

My point here is that by reading this later chapter in Various Insights you will be so shaken to the point that you may come to believe that Jesus had the New Testament should not have been included in the Bible. In other words you will be tempted to believe the beast arises as a cause but rather as a blessing. Why? Well it is through these trials and tribulations that you strengthen your faith so that once the beast comes you will be able to "stand the test testing" (Revelation 3:10) because your faith will be already strengthened.

Now you may doubt what I am saying here and you may even say all I am doing is making this up and that Jesus is not talking about how our trials will help prepare us for what is to come but rather Jesus is just about to test the world. However if you carefully read what Jesus says to the church in Philadelphia in the chapter and what he says to the church in Thyatira in the previous chapter then you will see that I am correct.

As Revelation says:

"I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. Look! I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars—I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." (Revelation 3:8-10)

Of course the key part of this passage is that Jesus says "For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name." (Revelation 3:8) Thus the idea here is that these trials and tribulations have already endured much temptation and persecution so that they did not lead to them denying Jesus's name or rather apostatizing. This is then further explained by Jesus saying "Because you have kept My command to persevere" (Revelation 3:10 in this passage because Jesus is acknowledging that they have already persevered through much temptation and hardship already. Then because of this intense trial the members of this church have had their faith strengthened so that they are already surviving a forest fire actually creates a stronger forest that is able to withstand future forest fires. Next because these Christians have faced such intense trials and persecution and yet great testing and temptation, or the great tribulation, comes then it is said that "I will also keep you from the hour of testing" (Revelation 3:10) because their faith in Jesus will be what keeps them from falling into the great tribulation. Thus you should not see Jesus speaking literally here but rather Jesus is metaphorically so that he is talking about how their faith in Him is what keeps them from falling into temptation.

Lastly it goes without saying that the Christians in the church of Philadelphia are long dead so Revelation is not talking about them anyway here and instead Jesus is using them as an example. This would be the future tense because like I have said before the letters to the seven churches have been written in such a way in all ages no matter where they are given the symbolism of the seven churches. The future tense the beast obviously did not come in the first century AD but those in the church in Philadelphia where in fact kept from the hour of trial.

Next as Revelation also says:

"But I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan: I will place no further burden upon you." (Revelation 2:24)

First off just to remind you the so-called deep things of Satan, Jesus is talking about what would be how "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) was teaching idolatry. Thus the idea behind this passage is Jesus is saying as what I said with regards to the previous passage. Jesus is saying that the people of Christ in Thyatira were already tested by being tempted to idolatry and yet they did not fall for it. This means that their faith is now stronger and more resilient. Then because of this fact because of their faith in Jesus will then keep them from future tests and temptations because they are now prepared. This is why Jesus says "I will place no further burden upon you." (Revelation 2:24) because if some of the members of this church have already survived the temptation to worship Can Jezebel then again with some exile who teaches idolatry? I mean think of it like a forest fire that was started by a lightning bolt burns half the trees and then a week later someone starts another forest fire. Do you really think this second fire will take root so that it becomes a forest fire that burns the whole forest? Well of course not because the first forest fire already burned the dry brush and the weak trees so that only the strong trees remain. In other words not matter how many fires someone starts in this forest because now the forest has been tested by fire to the extent that it basically cannot be harmed. Therefore the idea here is the same as Jesus saying "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) since again Jesus cannot tempt those who have already survived the same temptation.

Therefore as a result of everything I have just said Jesus is once again talking about a pre-tribulation so-called rapture here and instead he is talking about how as we face before the beast rises will help us to prepare for the trials and tribulation that the beast will face once the beast rises. But what exactly does this mean? Well there are a lot of several different ways in which the beast will test and tempt the faithful.

For instance one temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast would be idolatry and idolatry is about placing your faith, trust and hope in the beast as your so-called savior or even as a so-called god. Now it may seem like you cannot prepare for this but this is not true because if you already have your faith, trust and hope in the things of the world now then once the beast comes you will simply place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being like a better thing of the world. Therefore if you place your faith, trust and hope in your wealth in the world now then you will no doubt protect your wealth by worshiping the beast as you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being make the world. Then as another example if you place your faith, trust and hope in your technology and science now then once the beast comes you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because the beast will be the final representation of technology and science in the world. On the other hand if you do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the things of the world so that you do not worship the beast comes you will be much less tempted.

Next for a second temptation you need to worry about with regards to the beast would be hope and hope is about placing your faith, trust and hope in the beast as your so-called savior or even as a so-called god. Now it may seem like you cannot prepare for this but this is not true because if you already have your faith, trust and hope in the things of the world now then once the beast comes you will simply place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being like a better thing of the world. Therefore if you place your faith, trust and hope in your wealth in the world now then you will no doubt protect your wealth by worshiping the beast as you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because you will see the beast as being make the world. Then as another example if you place your faith, trust and hope in your technology and science now then once the beast comes you will place your faith, trust and hope in the beast because the beast will be the final representation of technology and science in the world. On the other hand if you do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the things of the world so that you do not worship the beast comes you will be much less tempted.

Now you may doubt what I am saying here and you may even say all I am doing is making this up and that Jesus is not talking about how our trials will help prepare us for what is to come but rather Jesus is just about to test the world. However if you carefully read what Jesus says to the church in Philadelphia in the chapter and what he says to the church in Thyatira in the previous chapter then you will see that I am correct.

As Revelation says:

"I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. Look! I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars—I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." (Revelation 3:8-10)

Of course the key part of this passage is that Jesus says "For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name." (Revelation 3:8) Thus the idea here is that these trials and tribulations have already endured much temptation and persecution so that they did not lead to them denying Jesus's name or rather apostatizing. This is then further explained by Jesus saying "Because you have kept My command to persevere" (Revelation 3:10 in this passage because Jesus is acknowledging that they have already persevered through much temptation and hardship already. Then because of this intense trial the members of this church have had their faith strengthened so that they are already surviving a forest fire actually creates a stronger forest that is able to withstand future forest fires. Next because these Christians have faced such intense trials and persecution and yet great testing and temptation, or the great tribulation, comes then it is said that "I will also keep you from the hour of testing" (Revelation 3:10) because their faith in Jesus will be what keeps them from falling into the great tribulation. Thus you should not see Jesus speaking literally here but rather Jesus is metaphorically so that he is talking about how their faith in Him is what keeps them from falling into temptation.

Lastly it goes without saying that the Christians in the church of Philadelphia are long dead so Revelation is not talking about them anyway here and instead Jesus is using them as an example. This would be the future tense because like I have said before the letters to the seven churches have been written in such a way in all ages no matter where they are given the symbolism of the seven churches. The future tense the beast obviously did not come in the first century AD but those in the church in Philadelphia where in fact kept from the hour of trial.

Next as Revelation also says:

"But I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned the so-called deep things of Satan: I will place no further burden upon you."

(Revelation 2:24)

First off just to remind you the so-called deep things of Satan, Jesus is talking about what would be how "that woman Jezebel" (Revelation 2:20) was teaching idolatry. Thus the idea behind this passage is Jesus is saying as what I said with regards to the previous passage. Jesus is saying that the people of Christ in Thyatira were already tested by being tempted to idolatry and yet they did not fall for it. This means that their faith is now stronger and more resilient. Then because of this fact because of their faith in Jesus will then keep them from future tests and temptations because they are now prepared. This is why Jesus says "I will place no further burden upon you." (Revelation 2:24) because if some of the members of this church have already survived the temptation to worship Can Jezebel then again with some exile who teaches idolatry? I mean think of it like a forest fire that was started by a lightning bolt burns half the trees and then a week later someone starts another forest fire. Do you really think this second fire will take root so that it becomes a forest fire that burns the whole forest? Well of course not because the first forest fire already burned the dry brush and the weak trees so that only the strong trees remain. In other words not matter how many fires someone starts in this forest because now the forest has been tested by fire to the extent that it basically cannot be harmed. Therefore the idea here is the same as Jesus saying "I will place no further burden upon you" (Revelation 2:24) since again Jesus cannot tempt those who have already survived the same temptation.

Therefore because of all that I have just said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this verse. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this verse and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this passage. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this verse. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this verse and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Now at first you may believe that this passage definitely refers to the so-called pre-tribulation as it is talking about harvesting the faithful from the earth and obviously this would be the so-called rapture. However I do not believe this is the case for two reasons. The first is that as I said previously there is no point in Revelation where those who are taken up into heaven in the so-called rapture are actually returned to the earth. Sure just because Revelation does not say when those who are taken up into heaven in the so-called rapture will be returned it does not mean that it will not happen. However, to include such a significant detail as this does seem quite odd. I mean especially if it is not think this passage from Revelation 14 should be viewed with the so-called rapture in mind. Instead I believe it should be viewed through a different perspective which then leads to my second reason.

So in terms of the second reason to better make what I have to say sense I would ask you to consider the first verse of the passage from Revelation 14 which comes before the part where Jesus harvests the faithful and the angels harvest the wicked.

As Revelation says:

"And I heard a voice from heaven telling me to write, 'Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on.'

"Yes," says the Spirit, "they will rest from their labors, for their deeds will follow them." (Revelation 14:13)

My point here is that not directly before talking about how Jesus is going to harvest the earth Revelation unusually says, "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on." (Revelation 14:13) The reason why I am emphasizing this is because it does not read Jesus's harvest of the earth in line with the so-called rapture where Jesus is saving faithful Christians from death then why does Revelation say immediately before this that "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on" (Revelation 14:13) are blessed. I mean there is no real reason to place a time discontinuity between Revelation 14:13 and Revelation 14:14 which is therefore it would make sense to interpret Revelation 14:14 as being a continuation of Revelation 14:13. This would then mean that we should not view Jesus as physically saving Christians from suffering on earth as a so-called rapture and instead we should see Jesus as spiritually saving faithful Christians as they die on earth so that although they may be dead they died in their faith and because of this fact they are blessed since they will share in the resurrection of the dead. This would then be why Revelation says "Blessed are the dead—those who die in the Lord from this moment on." (Revelation 14:13)

Now this may not make sense to you because if you have been paying attention so far then you know that I believe the beast will be an artificial super intelligence and that this beast will not be overtly malevolent as most people would like to believe. However I believe that although for many on earth will see the beast as a so-called savior due to the so-called miracles it performs the words the beast will be considered by almost everyone to be the singular most amazing and powerful worthy creation or entity to ever grace a far. So how do we get from cuting all diseases and biological morbidity to Revelation saying "Blessed are the dead" (Revelation 14:13) in the passage? Well you see this ties into what I believe the great prostitute is. In short as I have said before I believe the great prostitute is representative of all those who follow and worship the beast and because the whole world will worship the beast this then means that all of humanity will be the great prostitute. Of course I talk about this at length later so just accept it as true for now. This then later on in Revelation the beast is going to kill the great prostitute in order carry out God's purpose. This would then mean that the beast or ASI will kill almost all or perhaps even all of humanity so that there will be a global genocide. However in the end, of course talk about this more later so you should just also accept this as true for the time being.

Now you can see how this would relate to Revelation 14. This ties into how this genocide of humanity will be pretty much the best thing that happens to Jesus because to destroy the beast and usher in the eternal Kingdom of God so therefore by making it all the way to the end so that you die in your faith in the global genocide you would then be saved because you made it all the way to the end of the age. Therefore because of this fact the little reason to read Revelation 14 through the lens of Jesus saving the faithful from death on earth from destruction on "the great winepress of God's wrath" (Revelation 14:19) or rather the Lake of Fire. Therefore I believe the reason why Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the Lake of Fire. Therefore I believe the main message of Revelation 14 is that it does not matter if you die on earth in the global genocide before Jesus returns because by making it to the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this passage. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Therefore because of all that I have quoted and said above there is zero reason to believe the so-called rapture is in view in this passage. Instead I believe it is talking about how Jesus is saving the faithful from death in the global genocide or the final harvest you have made it to the end of the age that you are truly blessed. Thus there is zero reason to see the so-called rapture in view in this passage and if you want to see the so-called rapture in it then you must be willing to read into it.

Now you may doubt what I am saying here and you may even say all I am doing is making this up and that Jesus is not talking about how our trials will help prepare us for what is to come but rather Jesus is just about to test the world. However if you carefully read what Jesus says to the church in Philadelphia in the chapter and what he says to the church in Thyatira in the previous chapter then you will see that I am correct.

As Revelation says:

"I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door, which no one can shut. For you have only a little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. Look! I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars—I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you.

Because you have kept My command to persevere, I will also keep you from the hour of testing that is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth." (Revelation 3:10)

Of course the

honor God and instead they are fasting so that they can receive honor from others. This is then the main problem that I have with ascetic Christians. Really more often than not in my opinion ascetics engage in asceticism not to honor God but to receive respect and honor from others. Now this may not make much sense to you but the whole point is for the ascetic to make huge sacrifices that make other people look up to them as some superhuman example of spirituality. For example the ascetic example someone who fasts so often and so long that they always look like they they are starving would almost certainly have the goal of wanting others to view them as a superhuman who has a will and faith greater than all others. Then as another example someone who maintains a celibate vow of chastity likewise would have the goal of having others look up to them as loving God more than sexual intercourse. Then for a third example this would even apply to someone who donates all their money to charitable causes publicly whenever they make or receive money because they have taken a vow of poverty.

As Jesus says:

"Be careful not to perform your righteous acts before men to be seen by them. If you do, you will have no reward from your Father in heaven.

So when you give to the needy, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and on the streets, to be honored by men. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your giving may be in secret. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." (Matthew 6:1-4)

Thus as I have said before Jesus's point here is that if someone does things publicly for all to see then really they are not giving money with the purpose of helping others and instead they are giving money to help others only so that others will see this and respect them as they seen as being a good person. This is of course why Jesus says they already have their full reward" (Matthew 6:2) since their reward is the respect they receive from others which they have already received.

Now my point with all this is that oftentimes those who engage in a more ascetic lifestyle as a Christian are not really doing so in order to honor God and instead they are doing so in a way to differentiate themselves from others so that they and their respective sect can be so as an example of what it means to be faithful to God. This is especially if not certainly true when someone advertises their ascetic lifestyle in a very public manner so that those around them are aware of what they are doing. Therefore I am inclined to lead some sort of an ascetic lifestyle then you should not seek to advertise it publicly and instead you should seek to hide it as much as you are able so that you are honoring God and not yourself.

Lastly in terms of both topics not everyone is going to seem fit to one category or the other and instead chances are you are going to meet some of this and some of that. A Christian and some of the criteria for being a hot Christian. Also I think you should not be concerned about this because Jesus's main point in the Revelation 3 passage is that hot is not a

(16) "So because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to vomit you out of My mouth. (17) You say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing.' But you don't realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked.

Thus as I have said before Jesus's point here is that if someone does things publicly for all to see then really they are not giving money with the purpose of helping others and instead they are giving money to help others only so that others will see this and respect them as they see them as being a good person. This is of course why Jesus says they already have their full reward" (Matthew 6:2) since their reward is the respect they receive from others which they have already received.

Now my point with all this is that oftentimes those who engage in a more ascetic lifestyle as a Christian are not really doing so in order to honor God and instead they are doing so in a way to differentiate themselves from others so that they and their respective sect can be so as an example of what it means to be faithful to God. This is especially if not certainly true when someone advertises their ascetic lifestyle in a very public manner so that those around them are aware of what they are doing. Therefore I am inclined to lead some sort of an ascetic lifestyle then you should not seek to advertise it publicly and instead you should seek to hide it as much as you are able so that you are honoring God and not yourself.

Lastly in terms of both topics not everyone is going to seem fit to one category or the other and instead chances are you are going to meet some of this and some of that. A Christian and some of the criteria for being a hot Christian. Also I think you should not be concerned about this because Jesus's main point in the Revelation 3 passage is that hot is not a

(16) "So because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to vomit you out of My mouth. (17) You say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing.' But you don't realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked.

Thus as I have said before Jesus's point here is that if someone does things publicly for all to see then really they are not giving money with the purpose of helping others and instead they are giving money to help others only so that others will see this and respect them as they see them as being a good person. This is of course why Jesus says they already have their full reward" (Matthew 6:2) since their reward is the respect they receive from others which they have already received.

Now my point with all this is that oftentimes those who engage in a more ascetic lifestyle as a Christian are not really doing so in order to honor God and instead they are doing so in a way to differentiate themselves from others so that they and their respective sect can be so as an example of what it means to be faithful to God. This is especially if not certainly true when someone advertises their ascetic lifestyle in a very public manner so that those around them are aware of what they are doing. Therefore I am inclined to lead some sort of an ascetic lifestyle then you should not seek to advertise it publicly and instead you should seek to hide it as much as you are able so that you are honoring God and not yourself.

Lastly in terms of both topics not everyone is going to seem fit to one category or the other and instead chances are you are going to meet some of this and some of that. A Christian and some of the criteria for being a hot Christian. Also I think you should not be concerned about this because Jesus's main point in the Revelation 3 passage is that hot is not a

(16) "So because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to vomit you out of My mouth. (17) You say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing.' But you don't realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked.

The great prostitute or all of humanity itself will of course pay the ultimate price for this and the global artificial super intelligence will quite literally be laughing all the way to hell as it ushers the world into a so-called golden age of great wealth and prosperity that everyone will have access to. The global artificial super intelligence will quite literally make it so that humanity is not able to do so. Therefore the great prostitute or all of humanity will pay in the future after the beast rises.

As Revelation says:

"In her heart she says, 'I sit as queen; I am not a widow and will never see grief.'" (Revelation 18:7)

Therefore if you follow your political ideology, favorite politician or government now then if they will do so in the future and that the beast will be everyone looks upon the beast with amazement and reverence. The beast is the end of politics. Now you might be skeptical about this and although I could go into great detail in my prior called Artificial Super Intelligence it would be helpful to briefly explain what I mean. Essentially an artificial super intelligence is an entity that will know basically everything of importance in the world because it will not have the weak will that humans have. Instead it will be able to process and store a seemingly infinite amount of information. There could be a definition an artificial super intelligence is well super and thus far more intelligent than even the artificial intelligence that we have now to mean that the global artificial super intelligence will literally make the labor of everyone. So essentially there will be a seemingly infinite amount of brain process all worthwhile information in the world that makes it so that the artificial super intelligence plans seem slow by comparison. This then means that the artificial super intelligence will be able to all the decisions but it will do all or at least all of the more important ones. Now I know some humans will still make some decisions at first but eventually the artificial super intelligence will demonstrate that it is vastly superior to all politicians, policy makers and so-called experts in the world so that the beast will just do whatever the artificial super intelligence says. This is why I said that the end of politics because as you can see the system that the beast will usher in will be the best system that humanity can create without using the power of God which we will see in the Revelation.

Now because of what I just said above this is why you need to place all of your trust, hope and faith in Jesus Christ and not in politics or the world including politics. Remember all politics leads to the Antichrist and the great good that the whole world will recognize how much greater it is than all else and the great good it can do so they will "yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:13) Therefore do not place any of your faith, trust and hope in political ideologies, politicians or governments. It does not matter how great they are or how powerful they are. Politics will never save you. Therefore you should place all of your faith, trust and hope in faith in earthly things. Instead you should seek the salvation from God by placing your trust, faith and hope in God through Jesus.

Personally I do not vote or care about politics because ultimately I place all of my faith and their power to the beast in the end. So why should I care which liberal or conservative the beast wins the next election? The beast will win regardless and I vote for Christ. I care about the Kingdom of God and I do not care about the place you live in because the place is always corruptible and the lines are easily blurred. However what I will say is that the new earth, will be perfect. We should also remember that the faithful are to rule over the nations in the new earth which means that we are not to rule over the nations now. Therefore instead looking towards a political victory now you should look towards the eternal Kingdom of God where we are faithful Christians will rule over all the nations on behalf of God.

My point with all this is that you should not look towards politics for your salvation because nothing can save you except for God alone. Therefore place all of your faith, trust and hope in God so that instead of saying "I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing" (Revelation 3:17) you tell yourself that all you need is the love of God and Jesus Christ and your faith because the promises of God are worth more than all the things of the world.

Finally I do not say all these things for the sole purpose of accusing you. Sure as I will explain later on some of my intentions with this book are to denounce, rebuke, correct and even accuse the world. I mean if I am being perfectly honest I am hoping that some of the people who read this book and as I said in the introduction I wrote this book for Christ's sake and I am doing it for the purpose of this book is not also to instruct Christians how to earn the salvation of God's beast. Therefore you need to understand that I am not writing out of my power, might, majesty and glory will be greater than anything you can imagine in our world. I am not the first nations and tribes of men and all the world will bow down to me. Therefore I do not do this because I look away from money, possessions or politics for salvation because the Kingdom greater than the beast, the inheritor of Satan's throne, captivate your hope for the future? Therefore do not look towards the beast for your salvation and because if you do then Jesus will upon you as Revelation says, "poor, blind, and naked." (Revelation 3:17)

(18) "I counsel you to buy from Me"— Jesus recommends that the church in Laodicea buy certain things from Him so that they will no longer be "wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked" (Revelation 3:17) anymore. Then since as I said the church in Laodicea since the letters to the seven churches were written in the Christian Dispensation of the periods this means that Jesus is also counseling Christians today to buy from Him as well so that you do buy the things that Jesus recommends. Therefore I want to buy what Jesus recommends through having true faith in Him as demonstrated by your deeds and not your faith in the world. Then by deeds here I am of course talking about becoming either a hot or a cold Christian through demonstrating your faith in a manner that you feel is pleasing to God and not your faith in Jesus in a form of currency that Jesus automatically owes you so that you can receive benefits in this life and an inheritance through the Kingdom of God. Instead I am as you have true faith then Jesus will give you all that you need and all that you need is faith.

(18) "gold refined by fire so that you may become rich,"— Gold refined by fire is representative of the true faith of inheritance that God has promised us which is why Jesus says that we should buy from Him gold refined previously the idea here is that our future inheritance is priceless and because of this fact we are actually wretchedly rich as faithful Christians even though others may not see us to be rich. Jesus literally says "gold refined by fire" (Revelation 3:18) in this verse because the point is that by surviving our trials and temptations that we face in our lives we demonstrate ourselves to the faithful before God and because of this we refine and purify the gifts that God gave us. If this still does not make much sense then when you refine or rather purify gold you remove the impurities that are worthless so that only the gold remains. So then by facing the fire of temptations and trials in our lives we eliminate any part of us that is unfaithful as we demonstrate our faith through our perseverance and then because of this fact we demonstrate ourselves to be worthy to receive our inheritance. Therefore in other words by persevering through the fire of our temptations and trials we are refining the gold that we are to receive in our inheritance.

That said this is not the biggest issue. The biggest issue with treating politics as your so-called savior in this way so that you see your political ideology, favorite politician or government as preparing the way for Jesus is that it is factually wrong and only someone so grossly ignorant of what Jesus says to us in Revelation would believe such a preposterous idea. This is because according to what Revelation says the beast will rule the entire world as it sits above all the nations after all the nations have given it their authority.

As Revelation says:

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to overcome them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and language and nation. All those who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names are not written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

And as Revelation also says:

"The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received their kingdoms, but they receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast. They have one purpose; to yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:12-13)

The point here is that the beast will rule over the entire world after the leaders of all the nations of the world "yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:13) Therefore there is literally no place for you to place your political ideology, favorite politician or government will have anything to do with preparing the way for Jesus's coming because the beast is the end of the beast. Again this is because the only earthly means that will take place before Jesus's return is a Christian political or social victory and instead the only other way for the beast to rule over all the nations of the world bow down and surrender to it. The beast will rule over all the nations as a reason to place any of your faith, trust and hope in politics because the beast will be the beast and it does not matter what you do now.

Furthermore I would actually go even further and say that the place of your faith, trust and hope in politics now then you will almost certainly end up worshiping the beast. Now you may doubt what I just said but this is because all it will take is for you to see the beast do miracles that the beast will work and for your favorite politician or political organization to endorse the beast so that you worship the beast. Perhaps your favorite politician might even say that they are preparing the way for Jesus and ushering in the eternal Kingdom of God and Jesus's return by endorsing the beast so I want to read. This is why I am warning you now to remove your faith, trust and place all of your faith, trust and hope in God alone because when the beast comes it will be everyone even those who consider themselves to be faithful Christians.

As Jesus says:

"For at that time there will be great tribulation, unmatched from the beginning of the world until now, and never to be surpassed. And if those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.

At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or 'Look, he is over here!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance! Matthew 24:21-25

Therefore if you follow your political ideology, favorite politician or government now then if they will do so in the future and that the beast will be everyone looks upon the beast with amazement and reverence. The beast is the end of politics. Now you might be skeptical about this and although I could go into great detail in my prior called Artificial Super Intelligence it would be helpful to briefly explain what I mean. Essentially an artificial super intelligence is an entity that will know basically everything of importance in the world because it will not have the weak will that humans have. Instead it will be able to process and store a seemingly infinite amount of information. There could be a definition an artificial super intelligence is well super and thus far more intelligent than even the artificial intelligence that we have now to mean that the global artificial super intelligence will literally make the labor of everyone. So essentially there will be a seemingly infinite amount of brain process all worthwhile information in the world that makes it so that the artificial super intelligence plans seem slow by comparison. This then means that the artificial super intelligence will be able to all the decisions but it will do all or at least all of the more important ones. Now I know some humans will still make some decisions at first but eventually the artificial super intelligence will demonstrate that it is vastly superior to all politicians, policy makers and so-called experts in the world so that the beast will just do whatever the artificial super intelligence says. This is why I said that the end of politics because as you can see the system that the beast will usher in will be the best system that humanity can create without using the power of God which we will see in the Revelation.

Now because of what I just said above this is why you need to place all of your trust, hope and faith in Jesus Christ and not in politics or the world including politics. Remember all politics leads to the Antichrist and the great good that the whole world will recognize how much greater it is than all else and the great good it can do so they will "yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:13) Therefore do not place any of your faith, trust and hope in political ideologies, politicians or governments. It does not matter how great they are or how powerful they are. Politics will never save you. Therefore you should place all of your faith, trust and hope in faith in earthly things. Instead you should seek the salvation from God by placing your trust, faith and hope in God through Jesus.

Personally I do not vote or care about politics because ultimately I place all of my faith and their power to the beast in the end. So why should I care which liberal or conservative the beast wins the next election? The beast will win regardless and I vote for Christ. I care about the Kingdom of God and I do not care about the place you live in because the place is always corruptible and the lines are easily blurred. However what I will say is that the new earth, will be perfect. We should also remember that the faithful are to rule over the nations in the new earth which means that we are not to rule over the nations now. Therefore instead looking towards a political victory now you should look towards the eternal Kingdom of God where we as faithful Christians will rule over all the nations on behalf of God.

My point with all this is that you should not look towards politics for your salvation because nothing can save you except for God alone. Therefore place all of your faith, trust and hope in God so that instead of saying "I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing" (Revelation 3:17) you tell yourself that all you need is the love of God and Jesus Christ and your faith because the promises of God are worth more than all the things of the world.

Finally I do not say all these things for the sole purpose of accusing you. Sure as I will explain later on some of my intentions with this book are to denounce, rebuke, correct and even accuse the world. I mean if I am being perfectly honest I am hoping that some of the people who read this book and as I said in the introduction I wrote this book for Christ's sake and I am doing it for the purpose of this book is not also to instruct Christians how to earn the salvation of God's beast. Therefore you need to understand that I am not writing out of my power, might, majesty and glory will be greater than anything you can imagine in our world. I am not the first nations and tribes of men and all the world will look towards me. Therefore I do not do this because I look away from money, possessions or politics for salvation because the Kingdom greater than the beast, the inheritor of Satan's throne, captivate your hope for the future? Therefore do not look towards the beast for your salvation and because if you do then Jesus will upon you as Revelation says, "poor, blind, and naked." (Revelation 3:17)

(18) "gold refined by fire so that you may become rich,"— Gold refined by fire is representative of the true faith of inheritance that God has promised us which is why Jesus says that we should buy from Him gold refined previously the idea here is that our future inheritance is priceless and because of this fact we are actually wretchedly rich as faithful Christians even though others may not see us to be rich. Jesus literally says "gold refined by fire" (Revelation 3:18) in this verse because the point is that by surviving our trials and temptations and struggles we face and we endure through here on earth before we receive our inheritance through the resurrection. Thus the idea here is that by surviving our trials and temptations that we face in our lives we demonstrate ourselves to the faithful before God and because of this we refine and purify the gifts that God gave us. If this still does not make much sense then when you refine or rather purify gold you remove the impurities that are worthless so that only the gold remains. So then by facing the fire of temptations and trials in our lives we eliminate any part of us that is unfaithful as we demonstrate our faith through our perseverance and then because of this fact we demonstrate ourselves to be worthy to receive our inheritance. Therefore in other words by persevering through the fire of our temptations and trials we are refining the gold that we are to receive in our inheritance.

(18) "white garments so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness not exposed,"— White garments are representative of spiritual purity and innocence in the sight of God. On the other hand nakedness is spiritually barbaric and guilty before God would be naked. The point here is that by persisting in our faith until the end we receive forgiveness from God for our sins so that instead of standing naked and exposed before God so that we are guilty and dirty we will instead receive white garments so that we are innocent and pure.

I would also like to point out that just like with the "gold refined by fire" (Revelation 3:18) from the above comment the "white garments" (3:18) are also a reference to the "white robes" (6:11) which would be given to those who are faithful by remaining faithful until the very end.

As Jesus says:

"Like them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white." (Revelation 3:5)

Therefore as Jesus says you must overcome the world and persist in your faith so that you remain true and faithful to God through Jesus until the very end so that you receive "white" (Revelation 3:5) Thus the idea here with the "white garments" and the white robes comment is on is that persisting in your faith in Him until the end is what currently is being given to us as white garments or rather the forgiveness of our sins.

(18) "and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see."— First off having eyes to see is representative of the ability to see spiritually so that you are able to see God and the Kingdom of God. Again this is because the only earthly means that will take place before Jesus's return is a Christian political or social victory and instead the only other way for the beast to rule over all the nations of the world bow down and surrender to it. The point here is that there is literally no reason to place any of your faith, trust and hope in politics because the beast will be the beast and it does not matter what you do now.

Furthermore I would actually go even further and say that the place of your faith, trust and hope in politics now then you will almost certainly end up worshiping the beast. Now you may doubt what I just said but this is because all it will take is for you to see the beast do miracles that the beast will work and for your favorite politician or political organization to endorse the beast so that you worship the beast. Perhaps your favorite politician might even say that they are preparing the way for Jesus and ushering in the eternal Kingdom of God and Jesus's return by endorsing the beast so I want to read. This is why I am warning you now to remove your faith, trust and place all of your faith, trust and hope in God alone because when the beast comes it will be everyone even those who consider themselves to be faithful Christians.

As Jesus says:

"For at that time there will be great tribulation, unmatched from the beginning of the world until now, and never to be surpassed. And if those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.

At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or 'Look, he is over here!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance! Matthew 24:21-25

Therefore if you follow your political ideology, favorite politician or government now then if they will do so in the future and that the beast will be everyone looks upon the beast with amazement and reverence. The beast is the end of politics. Now you might be skeptical about this and although I could go into great detail in my prior called Artificial Super Intelligence it would be helpful to briefly explain what I mean. Essentially an artificial super intelligence is an entity that will know basically everything of importance in the world because it will not have the weak will that humans have. Instead it will be able to process and store a seemingly infinite amount of information. There could be a definition an artificial super intelligence is well super and thus far more intelligent than even the artificial intelligence that we have now to mean that the global artificial super intelligence will literally make the labor of everyone. So essentially there will be a seemingly infinite amount of brain process all worthwhile information in the world that makes it so that the artificial super intelligence plans seem slow by comparison. This then means that the artificial super intelligence will be able to all the decisions but it will do all or at least all of the more important ones. Now I know some humans will still make some decisions at first but eventually the artificial super intelligence will demonstrate that it is vastly superior to all politicians, policy makers and so-called experts in the world so that the beast will just do whatever the artificial super intelligence says. This is why I said that the end of politics because as you can see the system that the beast will usher in will be the best system that humanity can create without using the power of God which we will see in the Revelation.

Now because of what I just said above this is why you need to place all of your trust, hope and faith in Jesus Christ and not in politics or the world including politics. Remember all politics leads to the Antichrist and the great good that the whole world will recognize how much greater it is than all else and the great good it can do so they will "yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:13) Therefore do not place any of your faith, trust and hope in political ideologies, politicians or governments. It does not matter how great they are or how powerful they are. Politics will never save you. Therefore you should place all of your faith, trust and hope in faith in earthly things. Instead you should seek the salvation from God by placing your trust, faith and hope in God through Jesus.

Personally I do not vote or care about politics because ultimately I place all of my faith and their power to the beast in the end. So why should I care which liberal or conservative the beast wins the next election? The beast will win regardless and I vote for Christ. I care about the Kingdom of God and I do not care about the place you live in because the place is always corruptible and the lines are easily blurred. However what I will say is that the new earth, will be perfect. We should also remember that the faithful are to rule over the nations in the new earth which means that we are not to rule over the nations now. Therefore instead looking towards a political victory now you should look towards the eternal Kingdom of God where we as faithful Christians will rule over all the nations on behalf of God.

My point with all this is that you should not look towards politics for your salvation because nothing can save you except for God alone. Therefore place all of your faith, trust and hope in God so that instead of saying "I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing" (Revelation 3:17) you tell yourself that all you need is the love of God and Jesus Christ and your faith because the promises of God are worth more than all the things of the world.

Finally I do not say all these things for the sole purpose of accusing you. Sure as I will explain later on some of my intentions with this book are to denounce, rebuke, correct and even accuse the world. I mean if I am being perfectly honest I am hoping that some of the people who read this book and as I said in the introduction I wrote this book for Christ's sake and I am doing it for the purpose of this book is not also to instruct Christians how to earn the salvation of God's beast. Therefore you need to understand that I am not writing out of my power, might, majesty and glory will be greater than anything you can imagine in our world. I am not the first nations and tribes of men and all the world will look towards me. Therefore I do not do this because I look away from money, possessions or politics for salvation because the Kingdom greater than the beast, the inheritor of Satan's throne, captivate your hope for the future? Therefore do not look towards the beast for your salvation and because if you do then Jesus will upon you as Revelation says, "poor, blind, and naked." (Revelation 3:17)

(18) "gold refined by fire so that you may become rich,"— Gold refined by fire is representative of the true faith of inheritance that God has promised us which is why Jesus says that we should buy from Him gold refined previously the idea here is that our future inheritance is priceless and because of this fact we are actually wretchedly rich as faithful Christians even though others may not see us to be rich. Jesus literally says "gold refined by fire" (Revelation 3:18) in this verse because the point is that by surviving our trials and temptations and struggles we face and we endure through here on earth before we receive our inheritance through the resurrection. Thus the idea here is that by surviving our trials and temptations that we face in our lives we demonstrate ourselves to the faithful before God and because of this we refine and purify the gifts that God gave us. If this still does not make much sense then when you refine or rather purify gold you remove the impurities that are worthless so that only the gold remains. So then by facing the fire of temptations and trials in our lives we eliminate any part of us that is unfaithful as we demonstrate our faith through our perseverance and then because of this fact we demonstrate ourselves to be worthy to receive our inheritance. Therefore in other words by persevering through the fire of our temptations and trials we are refining the gold that we are to receive in our inheritance.

(18) "white garments so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness not exposed,"— White garments are representative of spiritual purity and innocence in the sight of God. On the other hand nakedness is spiritually barbaric and guilty before God would be naked. The point here is that by persisting in our faith until the end we receive forgiveness from God for our sins so that instead of standing naked and exposed before God so that we are guilty and dirty we will instead receive white garments so that we are innocent and pure.

I would also like to point out that just like with the "gold refined by fire" (Revelation 3:18) from the above comment the "white garments" (3:18) are also a reference to the "white robes" (6:11) which would be given to those who are faithful by remaining faithful until the very end.

As Jesus says:

"Like them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white." (Revelation 3:5)

Therefore as Jesus says you must overcome the world and persist in your faith so that you remain true and faithful to God through Jesus until the very end so that you receive "white" (Revelation 3:5) Thus the idea here with the "white garments" and the white robes comment is on is that persisting in your faith in Him until the end is what currently is being given to us as white garments or rather the forgiveness of our sins.

(18) "and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see."— First off having eyes to see is representative of the ability to see spiritually so that you are able to see God and the Kingdom of God. Again this is because the only earthly means that will take place before Jesus's return is a Christian political or social victory and instead the only other way for the beast to rule over all the nations of the world bow down and surrender to it. The point here is that there is literally no reason to place any of your faith, trust and hope in politics because the beast will be the beast and it does not matter what you do now.

Furthermore I would actually go even further and say that the place of your faith, trust and hope in politics now then you will almost certainly end up worshiping the beast. Now you may doubt what I just said but this is because all it will take is for you to see the beast do miracles that the beast will work and for your favorite politician or political organization to endorse the beast so that you worship the beast. Perhaps your favorite politician might even say that they are preparing the way for Jesus and ushering in the eternal Kingdom of God and Jesus's return by endorsing the beast so I want to read. This is why I am warning you now to remove your faith, trust and place all of your faith, trust and hope in God alone because when the beast comes it will be everyone even those who consider themselves to be faithful Christians.

As Jesus says:

"For at that time there will be great tribulation, unmatched from the beginning of the world until now, and never to be surpassed. And if those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.

At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or 'Look, he is over here!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance! Matthew 24:21-25

Therefore if you follow your political ideology, favorite politician or government now then if they will do so in the future and that the beast will be everyone looks upon the beast with amazement and reverence. The beast is the end of politics. Now you might be skeptical about this and although I could go into great detail in my prior called Artificial Super Intelligence it would be helpful to briefly explain what I mean. Essentially an artificial super intelligence is an entity that will know basically everything of importance in the world because it will not have the weak will that humans have. Instead it will be able to process and store a seemingly infinite amount of information. There could be a definition an artificial super intelligence is well super and thus far more intelligent than even the artificial intelligence that we have now to mean that the global artificial super intelligence will literally make the labor of everyone. So essentially there will be a seemingly infinite amount of brain process all worthwhile information in the world that makes it so that the artificial super intelligence plans seem slow by comparison. This then means that the artificial super intelligence will be able to all the decisions but it will do all or at least all of the more important ones. Now I know some humans will still make some decisions at first but eventually the artificial super intelligence will demonstrate that it is vastly superior to all politicians, policy makers and so-called experts in the world so that the beast will just do whatever the artificial super intelligence says. This is why I said that the end of politics because as you can see the system that the beast will usher in will be the best system that humanity can create without using the power of God which we will see in the Revelation.

Now because of what I just said above this is why you need to place all of your trust, hope and faith in Jesus Christ and not in politics or the world including politics. Remember all politics leads to the Antichrist and the great good that the whole world will recognize how much greater it is than all else and the great good it can do so they will "yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:13) Therefore do not place any of your faith, trust and hope in political ideologies, politicians or governments. It does not matter how great they are or how powerful they are. Politics will never save you. Therefore you should place all of your faith, trust and hope in faith in earthly things. Instead you should seek the salvation from God by placing your trust, faith and hope in God through Jesus.

Personally I do not vote or care about politics because ultimately I place all of my faith and their power to the beast in the end. So why should I care which liberal or conservative the beast wins the next election? The beast will win regardless and I vote for Christ. I care about the Kingdom of God and I do not care about the place you live in because the place is always corruptible and the lines are easily blurred. However what I will say is that the new earth, will be perfect. We should also remember that the faithful are to rule over the nations in the new earth which means that we are not to rule over the nations now. Therefore instead looking towards a political victory now you should look towards the eternal Kingdom of God where we as faithful Christians will rule over all the nations on behalf of God.

My point with all this is that you should not look towards politics for your salvation because nothing can save you except for God alone. Therefore place all of your faith, trust and hope in God so that instead of saying "I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing" (Revelation 3:17) you tell yourself that all you need is the love of God and Jesus Christ and your faith because the promises of God are worth more than all the things of the world.

Finally I do not say all these things for the sole purpose of accusing you. Sure as I will explain later on some of my intentions with this book are to denounce, rebuke, correct and even accuse the world. I mean if I am being perfectly honest I am hoping that some of the people who read this book and as I said in the introduction I wrote this book for Christ's sake and I am doing it for the purpose of this book is not also to instruct Christians how to earn the salvation of God's beast. Therefore you need to understand that I am not writing out of my power, might, majesty and glory will be greater than anything you can imagine in our world. I am not the first nations and tribes of men and all the world will look towards me. Therefore I do not do this because I look away from money, possessions or politics for salvation because the Kingdom greater than the beast, the inheritor of Satan's throne, captivate your hope for the future? Therefore do not look towards the beast for your salvation and because if you do then Jesus will upon you as Revelation says, "poor, blind, and naked." (Revelation 3:17)

(19) "those I love, I rebuke and discipline. Therefore be earnest and repent."— Jesus loves even those Christians who sin against God and need to repent. Now I will say that Jesus did not love even those of us who sin against God then He would not have died for our sins and instead Jesus would keep silent so that we would not repent. Jesus's intention is changing our ways to ensure that we face the second Beath in the Lake of Fire. Therefore you should not get discouraged, believe that Jesus loves you and that you need to be faithful to God out and attacked while reading the letters to the seven churches because this should be encouraged and view this as an opportunity to repent and ask for forgiveness and to change your ways so that you receive eternal life in the end. That said you should also be aware that Jesus is coming in the near future so that you fall to repent of your unfaithfulness and sins then you will be left behind. Instead you will be cast into the Lake of Fire to be tormented for all eternity. Therefore be earnest and repent" (Revelation 3:19) because otherwise you will not inherit the eternal Kingdom of God.

(20) "Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in and dine with him, and he with Me."— By saying "I stand by the door and knock" (Revelation 3:20) Jesus is saying that He is ready to come to your door of your heart and life. This means that it is never too late to come to Jesus for forgiveness and changing your ways because Jesus is always waiting for you to let Him in. It is up to each person to open the door of their and let Him in so those who ignore Him knocking have no one to blame but themselves. If you open the door and let Jesus in so that He will come in and dine with you (Revelation 3:20) you then you will enter into fellowship with Jesus as you dine with Him and Jesus will place that part of His people. Lastly if you still have yet to repent and be faithful I strongly encourage you to do so before it is too late.

(21) "To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to sit with Me on My throne, just as I overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne."— Here Jesus literally says "overcomes" (Revelation 3:21) in this verse? Well first off by saying "I sat down with My Father on His throne" (Revelation 3:21) Jesus is saying that after He overcame the power of Satan through His death and resurrection He was elevated by God so that God granted Him the ability to use His power and authority. As I have said before think of Jesus as God's vicegerent in the sense that God has given Jesus the ability to use His full power and authority on His behalf in order to carry out His will. This is what it means for Jesus to sit down with God "on His throne." (Revelation 3:21)

Now in terms of the meaning of Jesus saying "I will grant the right to sit with Me on My throne" (Revelation 3:21) there are two different ways to look at this with each way meaning basically the same thing. The first way is to say that after Jesus overcame He sat down with His "Father on His throne." (Revelation 3:21) which would then mean that Jesus's throne is actually the throne of God. This is because of this Jesus would then be saying that if we also overcome then just like Jesus we will also sit upon the throne of God. This would of course mean that we would become vicegerents of God just like Jesus is the Christ or God's vicegerent this would then mean that Jesus's throne is the throne of God's vicegerent. Therefore because of this Jesus would then be saying "I will sit with Me on My throne" (Revelation 3:21) He would then be saying that if we also overcome then we will also become vicegerents of God as we sit on the throne or the throne of God's vicegerent.

Therefore as you can see it does not make a difference which way you want to look at this verse because either way the meaning is that all of us who overcome will become vicegerents of God as we are given the ability to use God's power and authority in order to carry out the will of God. But what exactly does this mean and what does it entail? Well really this ties into the whole idea of the Kingdom of God and what I wish so I talk about this later on instead of here. That said what I will say that there is here is that we as the faithful will be given the power and authority to rule over the Kingdom of God in the sense that Revelation is saying that God is the power and authority of God since the only way that we will be able to rule over the world is if we accept and shatter them like potters vessels. This is received power authority from My Father." (Revelation 2:26-27)

Therefore based on this fact it would make sense that we would be given to use the power and authority of God since the only way that we will be able to rule over the world is if we accept and shatter them like potters vessels. This is received power authority from My Father. (Revelation 2:26-27)

Therefore based on this fact it would make sense that we would be given to use the power and authority of God since the only way that we will be able to rule over the world is if we accept and shatter them like potters vessels. This is received power authority from My Father. (Revelation 2:26-27)

Now if these descriptions do not make much sense to you then I would like to remind you that they are not meant to be literal because I just said above these descriptions are just supposed to show how glorious it is. Although in reality what God is and what He is like are so completely incomprehensible to us that no description can properly describe Him. This is why both Ezekiel and the verse from Revelation 4 mention that the descriptions of the glory of God in such a strange and incomprehensible way. Now if I do begin to describe what God is being incomprehensible then later on at the end of this chapter I will mention and why God is so completely incomparable and incomprehensible in nature because they are great angels that directly serve God.

(3) "And seated there was one who looked like jasper and carnelian, and a rainbow that gleamed like an emerald encircled the throne."— First off this description is supposed to help us to envision the glory of God in the sense that it is purpose is to evoke awe and wonder rather than modern literality. It is obvious to anyone that God transcends us and our universe He is obviously greater than us and because of this reality the fact He cannot be compared to the things of this world. Now I know some people will say that Ezekiel has written in the Book of Ezekiel.

As the Book of Ezekiel says:

"Above the expanse over their heads was the likeness of a throne, in appearance like sapphire, and on the throne high above was a figure like that of a man. I saw that he seemed to be His waist up, I saw a gleam like amber, like the appearance of fire all around. And from what seemed to be His waist down, I saw what looked like fire; and brilliant light surrounded Him.

The appearance of the brilliant light all around him was like that of a rainbow in a cloud on a rainy day. This was the appearance of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell facedown and heard a voice speaking." (Ezekiel 1:26-28)

Now if these descriptions do not make much sense to you then I would like to remind you that they are not meant to be literal because I just said above these descriptions are just supposed to show how glorious it is. Although in reality what God is and what He is like are so completely incomprehensible to us that no description can properly describe Him. This is why both Ezekiel and the verse from Revelation 4 mention that the descriptions of the glory of God in such a strange and incomprehensible way. Now if I do begin to describe what God is being incomprehensible then later on at the end of this chapter I will mention and why God is so completely incomparable and incomprehensible in nature because they are great angels that directly serve God.

(3) "And seated there was one who looked like jasper and carnelian, and a rainbow that gleamed like an emerald encircled the throne."— These are the same Seven Spirits of God and before the throne was something like a sea of glass, as clear as crystal. In the center, around the throne, were four creatures, covered with eyes in front and back. (7) The first living creature was like a lion, second like a calf, the third had a face like a man, and the fourth was like an eagle in flight. (8) And each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around and within. Day and night they never stop saying:

"Holy, Holy, Holy,
is the Lord God Almighty,
who was and is and is to come!"

(9) And whenever the living creatures give glory, honor, and thanks to the One seated on the throne who lives forever and ever, (10) the twenty-four elders fall down before the One seated on the throne and worship Him who lives forever and ever. They cast their crowns before the throne, saying:

(11) "Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be."

(9) And whenever the living creatures give glory, honor, and thanks to the One seated on the throne who lives forever and ever, (10) the twenty-four elders fall down before the One seated on the throne and worship Him who lives forever and ever." – The twenty-four elders worship God and give the praise because God is the origin of all things and is the creator of all things. The twenty-four elders are also grateful to God for what He has done for us and what He has promised us.

(11) "Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." – First off this verse should really say by Your will they existed rather than exist. That said this verse is saying that God is not only did God create all things but everything that we see around us including the unseen realm. Lastly it is something that God created and will exist in the future so that God is the origin of the entire world and universe. Therefore because of this fact we should give Him the glory and honor and power and thanks to God which is the same thing as saying that God is the origin of all things and is the creator of all things. The twenty-four elders are also grateful to God for what He has done for us and what He has promised us.

(11) "Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." – First off this verse should really say by Your will they existed rather

This is then in contrast to all the other characters in the story including us who were not created to perfectly represent God like Jesus. The point here is that when God wrote the story of our universe He created Jesus to be the main character because God's plan for the conclusion of the story rests upon Jesus.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made." (John 1:1-3)

First off just to remind you as I said in my commentary on the false doctrine of the trinity the end of the first verse should read the Word was divine, the Word was like God or the Word was a god. Next the word translated as word here is logos (λόγος) and it means a word as embodying an idea or a word being the expression of a thought. Therefore the idea with this passage from the Gospel of John is that Jesus is the central character of the story that God created as an expression of His will to fully embody His plan or rather the plot for the story He wrote. This is why the Gospel of John says "Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made" (John 1:1-3) since a story without the main character of the story is no story at all. The point here is that God first created the main character of the story, Jesus, then fashioned the rest of the story around Him. If this still does not make sense then just think about how authors write novels. One of the first things if not the first thing an author does when writing a novel is to come up with their idea of what the main character will be like then from this idea in their mind they start to create the entire world that the novel takes place in around the character. This is of course exactly what the above passage from the Gospel of John is saying.

Alright so what is the application of God being the author of our story that I hinted at earlier? Well first you see since God is the author of everything in our story this once again means that God is the author of all that is good as well as the author of all that is evil. Then the idea of God being the author of everything actually relates to God's relationship with all that is evil and bad. You see although it is true that God approves of Satan, evil and everything bad in our world this is not actually the full explanation. For instance God approves of Satan and evil just like how an author approves of the antagonists and the evil they write in their novel. The idea here is that although Satan and all evil that we see in the world has ultimately been created by God for His purpose in our story this does not mean that God actually likes evil. For instance if you were to write a novel then chances are you are going to need some evil antagonist who does bad things. For example if you want to write a novel where the main character saves their community from a serial killer then you need to write the serial killer and have them kill people. This is because otherwise if you do not create the serial killer then you cannot have your main character save their community from the serial killer. Next it is important to point out that by writing the serial killer in your novel and having them kill characters in your novel you are actually allowing the serial killer and suffering to exist in the sense that you are approving of it happening for the sake of your story. Now this relates to God's relationship with evil in the sense that just like in this theoretical novel of yours God has created Satan along with all the evil and suffering we see in our world. This is why I have said that God approves of evil because by creating it and allowing it to exist He by definition approves of its existence.

Alright but now here is the more interesting part. So if you wrote a novel with a serial killer in it does that mean you like or enjoy what the serial killer does? Well of course not. Really in terms of the construction of a story authors approve of their antagonist as a means to create the plot and central conflict of their story. So sure they approve of the antagonists and the evil they do because they wrote the story that way but this does not mean that they enjoy the antagonists and the evil they do. The same is true with God. The point here is that just because God has created Satan along with all the evil and suffering in our world this does not mean that God enjoys all the evil and suffering that He created. Instead God created all the evil and suffering we see to fulfill a role in the story that He wrote from the foundation of the world it self. Therefore just to reiterate just because God has created evil that does not mean that He enjoys evil.

Now if you insist on disputing this then just think about your favorite novels, movies, shows or video games. No doubt basically all of your favorite stories in these mediums have antagonists that oppose the goals of the protagonists and in the process create evil and suffering. So my question to you is why do you approve of this evil existing? I mean you could take your favorite novel and remove the antagonist and all the evil and suffering that they cause so that there is no evil in the story anymore. This is why I asked why you approve of this evil existing since by not rewriting the story you are allowing this evil to exist. At this point you may say that just because you find the story entertaining that does not mean that you enjoy the antagonists and the evil in the story. However this is my point with respect to evil and God. Sure God is the author of evil but just because God is the author of evil this does not mean that God enjoys or likes evil in the sense that He wants evil to happen for its own sake. Instead God sees evil as being a key component of the story.

All this then once again means that with respect to Satan that sure God approves of Satan because God created Satan and has approved of everything that he does before the foundation of the world but this does not mean that God enjoys everything that Satan does. Instead Satan is the main antagonist of the story that God has created. Then since I have said before that all those who rebel against God are representative of Satan this would then mean that anyone and everyone who rebels against God is an antagonist of the story that God has created.

Now if you still insist that God approving of the existence of evil is in contradiction with God not enjoying evil then really I would just say you are a hypocrite. Wait what? Well you see finding stories with antagonists in them entertaining is essentially a universal aspect that all humans share. So universal in fact that I do not even have to ask if you enjoy stories with antagonists in them because I already know you do. So why would someone be a hypocrite for finding stories with antagonists in them entertaining while believing that God approving of the existence of evil is a contradiction with God not enjoying evil? Well you see as I have said if you find reading stories with antagonists and evil in them entertaining then by definition you are approving of these antagonists and evil existing. Therefore you would be a hypocrite because you are approving of exactly what you criticize God for approving of.

If you still want to dispute this fact then stop reading, watching or listening to stories with antagonists and evil in them and instead read stories where everyone is happy, healthy and fulfilled so that there are zero problems and not a single character has an issue with anything. Of course if you were to do this then you would have to stop reading, watching and listening to all stories since a story without suffering and evil cannot have a plot since a plot demands conflict and conflict is the result of suffering or evil. Sure you can read light stories that exist in seemingly utopias instead of dark stories where thousands of people are killed by the antagonist but in the end you really cannot take suffering out of the equation. This is because again a story demands a plot and a plot demands conflict and a conflict results from suffering or evil.

For example imagine a story set in a literal utopia where a woman in unsure what desert to bring to a tea party her friend is hosting. In this story the woman goes through a bunch of different ideas but is unable to decide due to second guessing herself and rumors about what other deserts her other friends are bringing to the party. Sure this story does not have the same kind of suffering and evil that a story about a war to stop an evil ruler set on world conquest might have but the woman is still experiencing suffering and evil. For instance if she finds out through one of her friends that one of the women going to the tea party is bringing a fancy desert then our protagonist will no doubt feel pressured to also bring something fancy so she does not look bad. Thus in this case the friend merely mentioning the fancy desert to our protagonist can be considered evil in a sense because it creates some suffering. This would actually be especially true if the woman who told her about it did so with the purpose of giving her anxiety about what to bring to the party. Now my point with this example is that even a story about a seemingly mundane tea party in a utopia can have suffering and evil in it. Sure the suffering and evil may not be comparable to a protagonist of another story trying to fight off a genocidal invading army but that is besides the point. For instance where do you draw the line in terms of the amount of suffering and evil that constitutes an acceptable level versus an unacceptable level in a story?

Now this question may seem obvious in the sense that you may say that stories that contain murder or rape have an unacceptable level of suffering while everything else is probably acceptable. However the problem here is that there is no universal standard for evil or suffering since experience is ultimately subjective in nature. For instance there are around one million people who successfully commit suicide each year in the world with many millions more who attempt suicide. So obviously for these people they would be experiencing so much suffering and evil that they actually prefer death as a way to end their suffering. Therefore you cannot simply say that stories with murder and rape are unacceptable while everything else is acceptable since there are millions of people who find the everything else to be worse than death itself. For instance with respect to the story about the tea party depending upon how you write the protagonist's friends and other characters in this story there may be in fact more suffering and evil in this story than a story about a protagonist trying to stop a serial killer. For example if the protagonist of the tea party story is psychologically tortured by her friends over years before the actual story starts and during the story the antagonists are trying to make her feel as worthless as possible so she kills herself then you can see why there very well may be more suffering and evil in this story.

Alright so my point with this is that ultimately there is no objective way to define acceptable versus unacceptable suffering and evil in a story and because of this fact any line you wish to place to separate the two is completely arbitrary since it would literally just be your opinion. Then because of this fact you cannot say some stories that have suffering and evil are fine while others are not. Instead you need to set the standard for the amount of suffering and evil a story has to have to be unacceptable at literally zero since anything else is again arbitrary. Of course such a story is essentially so nonsensical that it does not exist since a story requires a plot and a plot requires a conflict and a conflict requires suffering and evil of some form. Therefore as a result of this if you find stories entertaining while at the same time you believe that God approving of evil and not enjoying evil is contradictory then you are a hypocrite. Again this would be because you are criticizing God for something that you are guilty of yourself.

This then leads to a rather significant objection with respect to everything I have said so far. For instance you may say that stories are just stories and the characters in them are not real so it does not matter if they suffer and experience evil while on the other hand we are real so it should matter to God if we experience evil and suffering. However if you wish to say this then you would be a hypocrite. This is because God is infinitely above us just like how we are infinitely above the characters in any story we write.

As the Book of Isaiah says:

> "'For My thoughts are not your thoughts,
> neither are your ways My ways,'
> declares the LORD.
> 'For as the heavens are higher than the
> earth, so My ways are higher than your ways
> and My thoughts than your thoughts.'" (Isaiah 55:8-9)

The idea here is that God transcends us so much that His ways and thoughts are infinitely higher than our ways and thoughts. I say infinite because the heavens, or rather the limits of space itself, are essentially infinitely higher than the earth. My point here with this passage is that just like how our ways and thoughts are infinitely higher than the ways and thoughts of the characters we create in our stories so too are God's ways and thoughts infinitely greater than our ways and thoughts. Therefore because of this if you want to say that how God treats us is important while saying that how we treat our characters in our stories is unimportant then you would be a hypocrite. This is because the gap between the characters we create and us is the same gap as the gap between us and God. In other words you cannot say that our stories are just stories and the characters in them are not real so it does not matter if they suffer and experience evil while on the other hand you say that since we are real so it should matter to God if we experience evil and suffering. If you insist in still holding to this contradictory position then you would be a hypocrite because you criticize God for what you do yourself. I mean if you want to make this claim then can God not then tell you in response that since He is infinitely greater than us that our lives do not matter? Of course this fact is probably why God is willing to create evil and suffering and kill millions to billions of people since from God's perspective we are not real just like how from our perspective the characters we create in our stories are not real. That said like I said above just because God is willing to kill billions of people in the same way that an author of a novel about global genocide is willing to kill billions of characters in their novel this does not mean that God enjoys killing billions of people. Therefore if you want to judge God differently from how you judge yourself then you would once again be a hypocrite.

Finally you may no doubt have many questions and even additional objections to what I have said here with regards to God being the author of our story. However I am not going to answer them now and instead I answer them later on. This is because the idea of our world being like a novel that God has written is highly relevant to talking about the two major topics of determinism and the problem of evil for one. With respect to determinism obviously if our world is a story that God has written then hard determinism would be true such that everything that happens only happens that way because God wanted it to happen that way. This would of course mean that we have zero free will. Then since this is a rather large topic to discuss I talk about determinism and the nonexistence of free will later on. Then with respect to the problem of evil, or the question of why does God allow suffering to exist, I am sure you can probably guess what I am going to say. But just like with determinism the problem of evil is also a rather large topic to discuss so I once again talk about it later on. Additionally there are a few other topics that also intersect with the idea of God being the author of our story in a minor way. These topics would include so-called souls, the new earth and what it means to be given power and authority from God.

All that said my purpose with this comment is to get you thinking about our relationship to God and just how transcendent and great God is compared to us. This is because like I said at the start of this comment many people think of God as being a part of our world rather than completely transcending our world in the same way that we completely transcend the stories that we write and the characters that we create. Therefore just keep what I have said in mind because it is highly relevant to future topics. Lastly also keep in mind that because God is the author of our story He is worthy of glory and praise.

As Revelation says:

> "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

Chapter 2.18: Revelation 5

1 – The Lamb Takes the Scroll

> (1) Then I saw a scroll in the right hand of the One seated on the throne. It had writing on both sides and was sealed with seven seals. (2) And I saw a mighty angel proclaiming in a loud voice, "Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?"
>
> (3) But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or look inside it. (4) And I began to weep bitterly, because no one was found worthy to open the scroll or look inside it.
>
> (5) Then one of the elders said to me, "Do not weep! Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed to open the scroll and its seven seals."
>
> (6) Then I saw a Lamb who appeared to have been slain, standing in the center of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders. The Lamb had seven horns and seven eyes, which represent the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth. (7) And He came and took the scroll from the right hand of the One seated on the throne.
>
> (8) When He had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp, and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. (9) And they sang a new song:
>
> "Worthy are You to take the scroll and open its seals,
> because You were slain,
> and by Your blood You purchased for God
> those from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.
> (10) You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God,
> and they will reign upon the earth."

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "Then I saw a scroll in the right hand of the One seated on the throne. It had writing on both sides and was sealed with seven seals." – In this verse John sees God holding a scroll that "was sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) in His hand. Then in terms of the meaning of the "seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) on the scroll there are two ways view the meaning of the number seven. The first way as you can probably guess is to say that the scroll is completely sealed by God so that only the One whom God gives the scroll to will be able to open it due to the symbolism of the number seven. Next in terms of the second way when Revelation was written it was common for people to have their will written on a scroll that was then sealed with seven wax seals. Five of the seals were for witnesses, one for the executor and one for the heir. When the will was to be executed the seals would then be broken. The reason why seven seals were used was because again seven is a number that represents completeness and because of this the will would be completely sealed and hence completely verified as authentic as evidenced by there being seven seals. Although really there is a much more practical reason to have seven seals since the witnesses were used to guarantee the authenticity of the will and you cannot always guarantee every person serving as a witness will be around in the future so five witnesses are better than one or two in this respect. That said since both ways mean the same thing neither explanation should be preferred over the other.

Next in terms of the meaning of the scroll itself the meaning is rather straightforward. The idea here is that the scroll is God's written will for all His people so that we can all receive our inheritance that God has promised us. This would then of course mean that Jesus is the Executor of the will that God has wrote for all of His faithful so that once the will is executed by Jesus then we will all receive a divine inheritance from God in the final and eternal Kingdom of God. Now you may dispute this so consider what John later says in this chapter.

As Revelation says:

> "But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or look inside it. And I began to weep bitterly, because no one was found worthy to open the scroll or look inside it." (Revelation 5:3-4)

My point here is that John weeps at the prospect of God's will not being executed because if the will is not executed by someone then none of the faithful will receive their inheritance that God has promised them since the will would be forever sealed with the seven seals. For instance imagine if you received a will from someone and when it came time to execute the will you were told that the will cannot be executed for some reason. Surely you would no doubt weep in a situation like this and the same idea is in view here with John weeping bitterly. Therefore because of this fact the scroll is representative of God's will for all His faithful people so that we will be able to receive the inheritance that God has promised us. Lastly if you still taken an issue with what I have said here then go back and reread the representative of God's will to His people is even more clear based on what Revelation 10 says which I go over later. The reason why I do not go over it now is because it would make this comment unnecessarily long and detract from my commentary on Revelation 10.

But what about the scroll being representative of God's will to Jesus? Well really I would say this view is not exactly wrong however it is also not exactly correct. You see since the scroll with seven seals is representative of God's will to all His people this would of course mean that Jesus is included in this will. This is why I said the scroll being representative of God's will to Jesus is not wrong but also not correct. Therefore you can and should see God's will to Jesus in the scroll with seven seals. However it is important to keep in mind that the scroll with seven seals is representative of God's entire will to all His people as I have said.

Alright so if the scroll is mainly representative of God's will to His people then what do the seven seals represent? Well as I said above Jesus is the Executor of the will. This then means that in order for Jesus to open, read and execute the will the seven seals need to be broken or opened. Therefore because of this fact the seven seals are representative of what needs to happen before Jesus can fully execute the will and hence usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God here on earth as we all receive our inheritance from God. If you doubt this then consider the previous passage I quoted where John weeps at the prospect of no one being able to execute God's will for us. Again the reason why John weeps here is because if no one is able to open up the scroll and execute the will then no one will be able to receive any inheritance from God and the final and eternal Kingdom of God will never come. In other words none of us as God's people will receive what God has promised us unless the scroll that is sealed with seven seals is first opened. Therefore because of all of this the seven seals that are sealing the scroll are clearly representative of the what needs to happen before Jesus can usher in the final and eternal Kingdom of God here on earth.

Next in terms of what breaking the seals means by breaking the seals later on the will is to be executed. Again the point here is that the seals must be broken so that the scroll can be read and executed. Then since the breaking or opening of each seal later on will be followed by calamities and signs this would then obviously mean that the breaking of the seals is representative of calamities or signs. But what exactly does this mean? Well really the whole message of breaking the seals is that calamities, destruction and death must happen because in order for the eternal Kingdom of God to come to pass the world must first be judged. That said there is a deeper meaning that many people oftentimes miss. This meaning is that the calamities, destruction and death that result from the opening of the seals are a sign from God that the final judgment upon the world where everyone will die will come to pass. This is because essentially the breaking of the seals are prelude of what it is to come with the final judgment so that everyone on earth can be assured that God's judgment will occur as all is wiped away.

So what exactly will the seven seals then be so that we can watch out for the signs? Well first off to understand what the seven seals represent you need to understand there are seven of them and each seal is representative of death in some form. Then just like with regards to the seven churches being representative of all churches from the time Revelation was written in to the time in which the eternal Kingdom of God comes the seven seals are representative of all the people that must die and all the death that must occur from the time Revelation was written to the time in which the eternal Kingdom of God comes. This is because the number seven is a symbolic number that is representative of a complete set. If you doubt this then I would like to once again remind you how the Holy Spirit was represented by "seven torches" (Revelation 4:5) in the previous chapter because the Holy Spirit is a complete and all encompassing Spirit. Therefore once again the seven seals should not be thought of as a literal number so that you see seven specific events. Instead you should see the seven seals as being representative of all the death that has occurred on the earth as God has continually judged humanity in preparation for the final judgment where everyone will be killed. Then because of this it would be more helpful to look towards the past with regards to the seven seals instead of towards the future since once again the seven seals are representative of continuous death and judgment from the first century AD to the future coming of the eternal Kingdom of God.

Now you may disagree with this and protest so let me ask you a question. Has the world not experienced mass death from the time Revelation was written to the present day? For instance for the last two thousand years there have been wars that have killed hundreds of millions of people. Then there have been plagues and disease that have killed hundreds of millions more. Then there have been countless famines that have killed again hundreds of millions. Then there have been natural disasters that have also killed countless millions as well. Finally there has also been genocide and ethnic cleansing which has killed millions as well. Therefore are these not signs that Jesus has been opening up the seven seals on the scroll of the will of God from the first century AD onwards? Obviously they are. Therefore you should not see the seven seals as being a set of literal events that must come to pass and instead you should see them as representing all the death that has taken place from the first century AD to the present day and that has yet to take place before Jesus returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God.

But then what is the purpose of this death and why do hundreds of millions if not billions of people have to be killed before the eternal Kingdom of God can come? Well although the seven seals can be considered judgments in their own right in the sense that the death that results is a punishment upon humanity really you should not see the seven seals and the resulting death this way. Instead you should mainly see the seven seals as an act of benevolence by God in order to keep people inline so that they do not get complacent. Now this probably does not make much sense to you but you need to understand that it is much easier to resist a force outside of yourself compared to a force inside of yourself. What I mean by this is that when faced with suffering people tend to actually become more faithful as they resist. This is because they look towards God for solving their troubles instead of towards themselves and society since their troubles are greater than themselves and society. On the other hand when people become wealthier and as society grows prosperous people grow complacent and abandon their faith in God so that they instead place their faith in themselves and society.

You may doubt all this but just look at the history of Christianity in Europe over the last two thousand years. The most fruitful period for Christianity was from the early first century AD to the fourth century AD where the Church grew from around a hundred Christians to probably over twenty million by the end of this period. Then throughout this time the so-called Jews, Rome and other groups tried to suppress Christianity with persecution but of course they inevitably failed as Christianity grew faster. On the other hand in less than a hundred years many of the countries in Europe have gone from being completely Christian into being more culturally Christians to mostly atheistic in other countries. So what happened in the last hundred years in Europe then? A very large increase in wealth and material prosperity that has led people to stop looking towards God for salvation so that instead they look towards themselves and society for their salvation. Therefore as you can clearly see Christianity grew when Christians were suffering but on the other hand Christianity has declined as Christians are safe and without need.

This is why I said that Jesus opening the seven seals and all the suffering and death that has resulted in the last two thousand years can actually be considered benevolent since there is nothing more important that persisting in faith until the end. For instance is it better for a Christian to live life in their sins until the day He before forty in some calamity or is it better for a Christian to live a safe life without suffering so that they later apostatize at forty then die as an atheist at eighty? Well obviously it would be better to suffer and die at forty while still being a faithful Christian because then you will inherit the eternal Kingdom of God unlike those who apostatize. Thus you can see why suffering and death can actually be an act of benevolence by God.

Next it is once again important to point out that the coming beast will be a continuation of the growth in wealth and prosperity that the world has seen as I demonstrate later on in my commentary on Revelation 13. The purpose of this is so that all Christians will feel tempted to abandon their faith so that they place their faith in themselves, society and the beast instead of in God through Jesus. Thus in the future there will come a time when the world looks upon the beast with fervent eyes as they all see it as the so-called king of kings this world due to all the amazing so-called miracles it works and the great benefits it creates. Then due to this the world will see itself as the beast's queen in the sense that they will believe that humanity has finally come to rule over creation itself alongside the beast as now society seemingly has endless prosperity. Consider what the great prostitute later says in Revelation.

As Revelation says:

> "I sit as queen;
> I am not a widow and will never see grief." (Revelation 18:7)

Therefore there will come a time when global society itself believes it has finally found the true so-called god and king of this world, the beast, as this society sees herself as the beast's queen and enjoys the seemingly never ending gifts the beast gives her so that she comes to believe she is living in a final golden age that will last forever. Of course as I demonstrate later this will all be a deception and instead of a golden age that will last forever this so-called queen will only face death and when this happens it will be too late for her to repent so that she will face the Lake of Fire instead. Therefore this is why prosperity is actually more dangerous and worse for Christians than suffering. Then because of this fact you should once again not be on the watch for seeing the seven seals in the future since if you do then you will remain oblivious to the greatest deception the world will ever know as the beast deceives the world. So instead you should keep watch for calamities you should instead keep watch for prosperity and the beast so that you do not abandon your faith in God through Jesus for the things of this world and the beast.

As Jesus says:

> "You say, 'I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked. I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined by fire so that you may become rich, white garments so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness not exposed, and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see. Those I love, I rebuke and discipline. Therefore be earnest and repent." (Revelation 3:17-19)

Lastly I of course talk more about the seven seals and their meaning later on in so do not take what I have said so far to be the end of this topic. The reason why I went into the deeper meaning of the seven seals here is to introduce you to the true and intended meaning in advance. This is because many if not most people who believe that the first beast of Revelation is yet to come hold to an overly literal interpretation of the seven seals so that instead of seeing the true meaning they remain blind as they look for something that will never come. Of course this is why it is so important for you to understand the true and intended meaning because if you expect to see calamities in the future before the beast comes and instead you see prosperity then no doubt you will end up being deceived into worshiping the beast as a so-called savior. Therefore take what I have said here to heart so that you will not fall for the coming beast's deceptions.

(2) "And I saw a mighty angel proclaiming in a loud voice," – Since this angel is a "mighty angel" (Revelation 5:2) this would mean that this angel is one of the greatest servants of God. Then the angel is "proclaiming in a loud voice" (Revelation 5:2) because the angel is trying to find anyone who is worthy to execute the will of God so the angel needs to make sure everyone can hear what they say.

(2) "Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?" – If someone is not the executor of a will then they cannot open it. This is because when Revelation was written wills were sealed until the will was to be executed since the integrity and authenticity of the will needed to be guaranteed. Thus only the executor was worth of breaking the seals on a will and opening the scroll since they would be the one to execute the will. Therefore the idea here with respect to Revelation and the scroll with seven seals is that only the executor of God's will can break the seven seals and reveal the contents of the will. But then who is the executor of God's will? Well the Christ of course since the Christ is the One whom God has given His power and authority to in order to carry out or execute His will. This then means that only Jesus Christ is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll because He has been designated by God to be the Executor of His will.

(3) "But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or look inside it." – By saying no one in heaven was able to open the scroll this verse is saying that none of the angels in heaven are worthy to open it. Then by saying no one on earth was able to open the scroll this verse is saying that no one who is alive is worthy to open it. Lastly by saying no one under the earth was able to open the scroll this verse is saying that no one who has died so that their body rests in the ground is worthy to open it. All this is because the scroll is God's will and only the One whom God has designated as the Executor of His will or the Christ can open the scroll or reveal and fulfill His will.

(4) "And I began to weep bitterly, because no one was found worthy to open the scroll or look inside it." – If no one can open the scroll or rather if the will of God cannot be executed then the eternal Kingdom of God will never come to pass and the inheritance of the faithful that God promised to us will never be fulfilled. This is then why John weeps since if no one can open the scroll and execute the will of God then the eternal Kingdom of God will never come. Then I am sure we would all weep at this prospect as well.

(5) "Then one of the elders said to me, 'Do not weep! Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed to open the scroll and its seven seals.'" – One of the twenty-four elders reassures John and tells him not to weep because Jesus is worthy to be the Executor of God's will by breaking the seven seals and opening the scroll. In case it is not obvious in this verse "the Lion of the tribe of Judah" (Revelation 5:5) and "the Root of David" (Revelation 5:5) are descriptive names of Jesus.

(5) "the Lion of the tribe of Judah," – First off Jesus is from "the tribe of Judah" (Revelation 5:5) which is one of the most faithful of the twelve tribes of Israel and of course the tribe that king David was from. Then the reason why Jesus is referred to as "the Lion" (Revelation 5:5) here is because a lion is a fearsome animal and the greatest predator that stood above all other animals in the ancient near east. Thus the idea here is that Jesus is the greatest from from the tribe of Judah.

(5) "the Root of David," – Here by saying "the Root of David" (Revelation 5:5) this verse is saying that Jesus supports king David from the Old Testament or rather that He came before or preceded king David. The idea here is that David is like a tree and the roots of the tree are like Jesus so that the only reason why David could exist as king is because Jesus was there supporting him. Now this may make more sense to you because Jesus is also "the Offspring of David" (Revelation 22:16) or the Son of David. However it is important to understand that Jesus was created by God even before Abraham.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "Truly, truly, I tell you," Jesus declared, "before Abraham was born, I am!" (John 8:58)

But how can this be the case? Well it is like with what I said with regards to the power of God in the previous chapter where I compared God to an author of a novel. The idea here is that God thought of Jesus or rather created Him as a character before God even created the universe or the setting for the story we find ourselves in. This is why Jesus can say "before Abraham was born, I am" (John 8:58) since God created Jesus in His mind first since Jesus is like the main character of the story we find ourselves in. Then like I said before this makes sense because authors do not create the setting of their story before they create their main character and instead just like with God they create their main character first and then they create the setting for their story along with all the other side characters. Therefore this is why Jesus is "the Root of David" (Revelation 5:5) since God created David as a side character after He created Jesus as the main character.

(5) "has triumphed to open the scroll and its seven seals." – Jesus became worthy to open the scroll through His earthly trials, death and resurrection as He led a sinless life and died for our sins. The idea here is that God created Jesus for the purpose of carrying out His will and since Jesus obediently carried out God's will on earth through not avoiding His death Jesus "triumphed" (Revelation 5:5) which then means that Jesus is worthy "to open the scroll and its seven seals." (Revelation 5:5)

(6) "Then I saw a Lamb who appeared to have been slain," – Obviously the Lamb in this verse is Jesus and the imagery is supposed to evoke His death on the cross as the Passover Lamb which was sacrificed for the forgiveness of our sins. However instead of facing death forever as a regular lamb would God raised Jesus from the dead which is why the Lamb "appeared to have been slain" (Revelation 5:6) in this verse since Jesus is now alive and not dead.

(6) "standing in the center of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders." – As the Christ Jesus has been given power and authority from God and this is evidenced by the fact that Jesus takes the same spot God does in the center of the four creatures and twenty-four elders who constantly worship God.

(6) "The Lamb had seven horns" – Seven is a number that is representative of completeness and horns are representative of power. Therefore this means that "seven horns" (Revelation 5:6) represent complete power. This makes sense since as the Christ Jesus has been give power and authority by God so that He has complete power over the heavens and the earth.

(6) "seven eyes, which represent the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth." – Obviously the "seven eyes" (Revelation 5:6) are representative of the Holy Spirit since as I have said before "the seven Spirits of God" (Revelation 5:6) are the Holy Spirit since seven represents completeness and the Holy Spirit is a complete and all encompassing Spirit. The reason why the Holy Spirit is symbolized as "even eyes" (Revelation 5:6) here is because eyes are used to see and with His own power, or the Holy Spirit, God can obviously see everything. Then the reason why this verse says the Holy Spirit was "sent out into all the earth" (Revelation 5:6) is because God is ever present among all things so that He is truly everywhere as He sees everything that happens and all that we do.

(7) "And He came and took the scroll from the right hand of the One seated on the throne." – In this verse Jesus takes the scroll or God's will to His people from "the One seated on the throne" (Revelation 5:7) or God Himself. As I have said before Jesus is the One who took the scroll because He is the Executor of God's will or the Christ.

(8) "When He had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb." – The four living creatures and the twenty-four elders recognize that Jesus is the Christ or the One whom God has given His power and authority to in order to carry out His will. They bow down before Jesus because they are recognizing Jesus's authority as being the same as God's authority since God has given His authority to Jesus so that Jesus can execute or carry out His will by breaking the seals on the scroll.

(8) "Each one had a harp, and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints." – First off the twenty-four elders are making offerings to God in the form of music from harps and incense as a way to honor Him. But what does it mean for the incense to be "the prayers of the saints" (Revelation 5:8) in this verse? Well first off the word translated as saints here is a form of the word hagios (ἅγιος) which most literally means different from the world and because of this the intended meaning is holy, set apart for and by God, sacred or a saint. The context determines if the word is to be translated as the adjective holy or as the noun saint. Now the reason why hagios (ἅγιος) can be translated as saint is because a saint is simply someone who is holy, sacred and set apart for and by God from everyone else of the world.

But then what exactly is a saint? For instance is a saint someone who is canonized by a church? Well no this is not what a saint is. You see all it means to be a saint is to be someone whom God has set apart for Himself from everyone else in the world. In other words the saints are the people of God and the people of God are the saints. Then since faithful Christians, or the true Jews and Israelites, are the people of God this then means that all faithful Christians are saints. But do you not have to be dead to be a saint? No you do not and instead all faithful Christians who are alive or dead are saints. The idea here with all this is that all faithful Christians have been sanctified, made holy and set apart from everyone else of the world as God's people by God Himself for His own benefit. In other words faithful Christians are saints while everyone else is not a saint. Now you may disagree with this so consider the following passages where faithful Christians who are alive are referred to as saints.

As the Book of Acts says:

> "As Peter traveled throughout the area, he went to visit the saints in Lydda." (Acts 9:32)

Then as Paul wrote:

> "To all in Rome who are loved by God and called to be saints:
>
> Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ." (Romans 1:7)

And as Paul also wrote:

> "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and Timothy our brother,
>
> To the church of God in Corinth, together with all the saints throughout Achaia:
>
> Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ." (2 Corinthians 1:1-2)

And as Paul also wrote:

> "Greet all the saints in Christ Jesus.
>
> The brothers who are with me send you greetings.
>
> All the saints send you greetings, especially those from the household of Caesar." (Philippians 4:21-22)

Then lastly as the Book of Revelation says:

> "He who has an ear, let him hear:
>
> 'If anyone is destined for captivity,
> into captivity he will go;
> if anyone is to die by the sword,
> by the sword he must be killed.'
>
> Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints." (Revelation 13:9-10)

Therefore you can clearly see that the usage and meaning of the saints in these passages perfectly corresponds to faithful Christians. For instance in Acts Peter was not traveling to go see those who are dead and canonized by the Roman Catholic Church in Lydda and instead he was traveling to go see the faithful Christians in Lydda. Likewise when Paul wrote his letters he was not writing to those who were dead and instead he was writing to faithful Christians who were alive. Lastly in Revelation there "is a call for the perseverance and faith of" (Revelation 13:10) those who are alive not those who are dead because if you are dead then you no longer have to persevere through your trials and temptations. As a result of all this clearly the word saints is perfectly synonymous with the term faithful Christians and because of this fact the saints are faithful Christians who are alive on earth. As a result of this fact you should not view the saints here in Revelation and elsewhere in the Bible as what Roman Catholics view the saints as. Instead you should see the saints as faithful Christians who are still alive on earth as I just said.

All this then means that if you are a faithful Christian then you are a saint and there is nothing anyone can say to negate this fact. This is because a saint is someone who has been sanctified and set apart by God for Himself and as I have said all faithful Christians have been sanctified and set apart by God for Himself as His people so therefore again all faithful Christians are saints. So does this then mean we can call each other saints? Yes it does since all faithful Christians are saints. Therefore it is perfectly acceptable for you to refer to any faithful Christian who is alive as a saint. If you doubt this then I would like to once again remind you that the authors of the New Testament refer to faithful Christians who are alive as saints and because of this fact it is perfectly acceptable for you to refer to faithful Christians who are alive as saints as well.

Alright so now keep this meaning of saints relate to the verse this comment is on? Well since the you probably forgot what the verse was here it is again.

As Revelation says:

> "Each one had a harp, and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints." (Revelation 5:8)

Therefore based upon what I said above you should read this verse as "they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of" (Revelation 5:8) faithful Christians who are alive. Then I would like to reiterate the fact that the saints here does not refer to those canonized by the Roman Catholic Church and instead the saints refers to faithful Christians who are alive on earth. As a result of all this the twenty-four elders are offering incense or the prayers of faithful Christians who are alive on earth to God. Now you may take this to mean that the twenty-four elders are interceding on our behalf by offering our prayers to God but this is not the case. This is because as I have said before the twenty-four elders are representative of the unity of the twelve tribes of ancient Israel and the twelve apostles into a single people of God. This then means that the twenty-four elders are actually representative of all of Israel or all those who are part of God's people from both the Old and New Testament periods. Then because of this the prayers that the twenty-four elders are offering are not intercessions and instead the twenty-four elders are being used to represent all faithful Christians on earth who offer their prayers to God. Really the purpose of this verse is just to assure faithful Christians that their prayers are being offered to God and that God is hearing them.

Finally if you disagree with what I just said concerning the fact that these twenty-four elders are not offering prayers of intercession then I would like to remind you that because God is omniscient or all knowing no one needs to intercede on your behalf when you pray because God always hears the prayers that you offer. This is because if God is truly omniscient then He would quite literally know everything there is including what each and every person in the world is doing and saying at every moment in time. Therefore it does not make any sense to say that you need someone to intercede for you so that God will listen to you since God is always listening to you. Then this same line of reasoning applies to any form of intercessory prayer and because of this the only One you should pray to is God and as long as you do this then you will also hold "golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints." (Revelation 5:8)

(9) "And they sang a new song:" – The twenty-four elders now sing a new song in order glorify and give thanks to Jesus for His role as the Christ.

(9) "Worthy are You to take the scroll and open its seals, because You were slain, and by Your blood You purchased for God those from every tribe and tongue and people and nation," – First off as I have said previously Jesus is worthy to take the scroll and execute the will of God after opening its seals because He demonstrated perfect obedience to the will of God by willingly going to His own death. But how does this make sense exactly? I mean did God not create Jesus to willingly go to His death so how exactly can this be a significant achievement that makes Jesus worthy to open the scroll? Well you see although it is true that God determined that Jesus would go to His own death this reality changes nothing. Think about it in terms of a protagonist of a novel. When you read a novel does the fact that you know the protagonist is going to win in the end by doing exactly what the author wrote them to do make what the protagonist does any less significant? Of course not. If you disagree then just look at how many people idolize certain protagonists from certain novels and movies to the extent that they see them as role models. If you think that Jesus is not worthy of praise for doing exactly what God determined He would do then why do people see certain protagonists in movies and novels as role models that they look up to? For instance these protagonists are just doing exactly what the author or the script writer determined they would do and they even set up the novel or the script so that they succeed in the end. So really if you want to say that what Jesus did is not worthy of praise then you should probably try to stop people from idolizing the protagonists and characters from the novels they read and the movies they watch. Therefore since praising protagonists for fulfilling the will of the author who wrote them is acceptable then I fail to see why praising Jesus for fulfilling the will of God is unacceptable. Instead we should praise Jesus for being obedient to the will of God since Jesus is the Christ and by honoring the Christ we honor God.

As Jesus says:

> "Furthermore, the Father judges no one, but has assigned all judgment to the Son, so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him." (John 5:22-23)

Next the death of Jesus on the cross allowed for people to be redeemed and made pure in the eyes of God so that we are able to become part of God's people and the future eternal Kingdom of God. Thus it does not matter who you are or where you are from because as long as you have true faith in Jesus then by His blood He has purchased you and redeemed you in the eyes of God. The main idea here is that Jesus is a new Adam that has displayed perfect obedience to the will of God so that instead of trying to make Himself like God Jesus instead humbled Himself before God so that He obediently went to His own death for the sins of others. Then because of this display of obedience that Jesus has displayed God has decided to count all those who remain faithful to the name of Jesus as displaying perfect obedience. This is then why this verse says "by Your blood You purchased for God those from every tribe and tongue and people and nation." (Revelation 5:9) who became faithful Christians by believing in Jesus as the Christ have been "purchased for God" (Revelation 5:9) so that their sins are forgiven and they can be part of God's people and the future eternal Kingdom of God.

(10) "You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign upon the earth." – Jesus has made all faithful Christians into a kingdom since through our faith in Jesus and obedience to God we will enter the eternal Kingdom of God as God's people. Then in the eternal Kingdom of God we will serve God as His representatives or priests as we rule over the earth and all the new nations in the new earth.

As Jesus says:

> "And to the one who overcomes and continues in My work until the end, I will give authority over the nations. He will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery —just as I have received authority from My Father." (Revelation 2:26-27)

2 – The Lamb Exalted

> (11) Then I looked, and I heard the voices of many angels and living creatures and elders encircling the throne, and their number was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands. (12) In a loud voice they were saying:
>
> "Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain,
> to receive power and riches
> and wisdom and strength
> and honor and glory and blessing!"
>
> (13) And I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all that is in them, saying:
>
> "To Him who sits on the throne
> and to the Lamb
> be praise and honor and glory and power
> forever and ever!"
>
> (14) And the four living creatures said, "Amen," and the elders fell down and worshiped.

2.1 – Commentary

(11) "Then I looked, and I heard the voices of many angels and living creatures and elders encircling the throne," – Now John sees many more angels, living creatures and elders circling the throne of God and the Lamb than he previously saw.

(11) "and their number was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands." – A myriad is ten-thousand then a myriad of a myriad would be ten-thousand times ten-thousand and likewise a thousand of a thousand would be a thousand times a thousand. Thus this verse would be literally saying that there were hundreds of millions and millions of angels, living creatures and elders encircling the throne of God and the Lamb. However this description should not be viewed literally and instead it should be viewed metaphorically so that John is saying he saw the whole host of heaven encircling the throne and their numbers were beyond count.

(12) "In a loud voice they were saying: 'Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and riches and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and blessing!'" – Since Jesus is the Executor of God's will or the Christ He is worthy "to receive power and riches and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and blessing" (Revelation 5:12) because as the Christ He is God's vicegerent or representative. In other words since obviously God is worthy of all these things because He is God the idea here is that Jesus is worthy of the same things because as the Christ He directly represents God and is the Executor of His will.

(13) "And I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all that is in them, saying:" – By saying "every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all that is in them" (Revelation 5:13) Revelation is saying that all of creation is metaphorically giving "praise and honor and glory" (Revelation 5:13) to God and Jesus. This is because obviously animals cannot naturally speak and John is seeing all this in a vision so it is not actually happening.

(13) "To Him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power forever and ever!" – All of creation gives "praise and honor and glory" (Revelation 5:13) to both God and Jesus because as the Christ Jesus is representative of God and has been chosen by God to be the Executor of His will. After all as Paul says Jesus "is at the right hand of God" (Romans 8:34) which means that God has given Jesus His power and authority so that Jesus is able to fulfill the will of God. Then since Jesus is the Christ He is worthy of the same "praise and honor and glory" (Revelation 5:13) as God.

As Jesus says:

> "Furthermore, the Father judges no one, but has assigned all judgment to the Son, so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him." (John 5:22-23)

(14) "And the four living creatures said, 'Amen,' and the elders fell down and worshiped." – The four living creatures and the twenty-four elder once again give glory to God and to Jesus.

(*) Before continuing with my commentary on the next chapter where Jesus opens the first six of the seven seals on the scroll that is sealed with seven seals it is important to comment upon the relationship between the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls. Oftentimes many people like to say that the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls are different and separate from each other however this is not the case. Instead the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls are one in the same so that the seven bowls are the seven trumpets and the seven trumpets are the seven seals. But why is this the case? Well first off Revelation actually says the seven trumpets are the seventh seal.

As Revelation says:

> "When the Lamb opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour. And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and they were given seven trumpets." (Revelation 8:1-2)

Of course the point here with these two verses is that after Jesus opens the seventh seal on the scroll that is representative of God's will the seven angels are given seven trumpets and they prepare to sound them in what is known as the seven trumpets where just like with the seven seals after each trumpet is sounded a variety of different events take place. Therefore because of this fact the seven trumpets should not be seen as a separate set of events and instead they should be seen as part of the seven seals.

Next before getting into the meaning of this it is also important to demonstrate that the seven bowls are not a separate set of events from the seven trumpets. Now although the relationship between the seven bowls and seven trumpets is not as clear as with the relationship between the seven trumpets and seven seals it is still quite obvious they are one in the same so consider the following passage.

As Revelation says:

> "And in that hour there was a great earthquake, and a tenth of the city collapsed. Seven thousand were killed in the quake, and the rest were terrified and gave glory to the God of heaven.
>
> The second woe has passed. Behold, the third woe is coming shortly.
>
> Then the seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and loud voices called out in heaven:
>
> 'The kingdom of the world
> has become the kingdom of our Lord
> and of His Christ,
> and He will reign forever and ever.'
>
> And the twenty-four elders who sit on their thrones before God fell on their faces and worshiped God, saying:
>
> 'We give thanks to You, O Lord God Almighty,
> the One who is and who was,
> because You have taken Your great power
> and have begun to reign.
> The nations were enraged,
> and Your wrath has come.
> The time has come to judge the dead
> and to reward Your servants the prophets,
> as well as the saints and those who fear Your name,
> both small and great—
> and to destroy those who destroy the earth.'
>
> Then the temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark of His covenant appeared in His temple. And there were flashes of lightning, and rumblings, and peals of thunder, and an earthquake, and a great hailstorm." (Revelation 11:13-19)

First off I would like to remind you that Revelation was written in a nonlinear manner such that later sections are oftentimes expansions of previous sections. Now I say expansions here because the purpose of these later sections is to expand upon previous sections by providing more detail. But what is my point here? Well you see this passage from Revelation 11 is the end of the second section of Revelation that started in Revelation 4. I say the end here because this passage is the end of the linear narrative of Revelation up until this point. But what about the rest of Revelation and what happens in it? Well it is like I just said. The rest of Revelation is really just an expansion of what has already happened in Revelation 4 to 11 so that we can have more detail. If you doubt this then notice how in the above passage Revelation says "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, and He will reign forever and ever." (Revelation 11:15) The point here is that at this point all of those who rebel against God are no more as Jesus now rules over the earth. This would of course mean that the beast is no more. But wait does Revelation 13 which tells of the beast not come after this? Well yes and it is like I said where the rest of Revelation is an expansion of what came previously. Furthermore the beast was actually introduced in Revelation 11.

As Revelation says:

> "When the two witnesses have finished their testimony, the beast that comes up from the Abyss will wage war with them, and will overpower and kill them." (Revelation 11:7)

So clearly the beast is defeated and destroyed by the end of Revelation 11 and it is reintroduced in Revelation 13 in order to provide more detail to it. Therefore my point here is that the first central narrative in Revelation is over at the end of Revelation 11 as "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ" (Revelation 11:15) just as I said. Now you may doubt this so consider the following passage from the Revelation 11 passage I originally quoted.

As Revelation says:

> "We give thanks to You, O Lord God Almighty,
> the One who is and who was,
> because You have taken Your great power
> and have begun to reign.
> The nations were enraged,
> and Your wrath has come.
> The time has come to judge the dead
> and to reward Your servants the prophets,
> as well as the saints and those who fear Your name,
> both small and great—
> and to destroy those who destroy the earth." (Revelation 11:17-18)

The key points here are the "nations were enraged, and Your wrath has come" (Revelation 11:18) and "The time has come to judge the dead and to reward Your servants" (Revelation 11:18) as this passage says. This then means that now the final judgment has come along with the resurrection of the dead after God has poured out His wrath upon the world. For further evidence of this consider the following verse.

As Revelation says:

> "The second woe has passed. Behold, the third woe is coming shortly." (Revelation 11:14)

My point here is that clearly when "the seventh angel sounded his trumpet" (Revelation 11:15) this would be "the third woe" (Revelation 11:14) since just after the trumpet is sounded "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ" (Revelation 11:15) which means that God through Jesus has destroyed all those who oppose Him on earth which can obviously be classified as a woe. Therefore you should not see the seventh trumpet as being peaceful such that no destruction is happening and instead you should see it as "the third woe" (Revelation 11:14) where billions of people are killed as God eradicates all opposition in the form of killing the great prostitute or the global society that follows the beast.

But how does this relate to the seven bowls? Well you see the whole point of the seven bowls is to add more detail to "The nations were enraged, and Your wrath has come" (Revelation 11:18) so that we can get an idea of just how great the devastation will be when God pours out His wrath in order to kill the great prostitute or Babylon the great as I just said. Therefore since "the seventh angel sounded his trumpet" (Revelation 11:15) before God's "wrath has come" (Revelation 11:18) we should view the seventh trumpet as the final out pouring of God's wrath upon the world. Then this final out pouring of God's wrath is of course the seven bowls.

As Revelation says:

> "After this I looked, and the temple—the tabernacle of the Testimony—was opened in heaven. And out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues, dressed in clean and bright linen and girded with golden sashes around their chests.
>
> Then one of the four living creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives forever and ever. And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power; and no one could enter the temple until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed." (Revelation 15:5-8)

The point here is that the seven angels need to pour out the seven bowls of the seven plagues before anyone can enter the eternal Kingdom of God. Now this may not make some sense but obviously Jesus cannot reign over the earth before all of His enemies are dead. Then since the seven bowls are representative of God killing all those opposed to Him the seven bowl judgments would then need to take place before the eternal Kingdom of God can come as I just said.

Therefore because of the above this would mean that the seven bowls are an expansion of what takes place during the seventh trumpet. This would of course mean that really the seven bowls are the seventh trumpet. Then since really Revelation did not describe "the third woe" (Revelation 11:14) that took place during the seventh trumpet this would of course make sense. Thus my point here is that just like how the seven trumpets take place during the seventh seal the seven bowls take place during the seventh trumpet. This is then why I said the seven bowls are the seven trumpets and the seven trumpets are the seven seals since they are not separate but rather one in the same.

So what does this all mean then? Well really this relationship between the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls means that these three sets are in fact a single set that can be summed up with the seven seals. This is because as I just said the seven bowls are the seventh trumpet and the seven trumpets are the seventh seal which means that the seventh seal is both the seven trumpets and seven bowls. Because of this reality the only set of judgments that matters is the seven seals and if you understand what the seven seals represent then you also understand what the seven trumpets and seven bowls represent because the seven trumpets and seven bowls are part of the seven seals as I keep on saying.

So what do the seven seals represent then? As I said previously the seven seals are representative of everything that needs to happen before the eternal Kingdom of God can arrive because the scroll that the seven seals are on is representative of the will of God or our inheritance that God has promised us. Then since the seven seals largely correspond with death and judgment really the seven seals are representative of all the death and judgment that needs to happen before we can receive our inheritance in the eternal Kingdom of God. Next since there are seven seals and seven is a symbolic number representative of completeness as I keep on saying this would then mean that the meaning of the number seven in the seven seals is the same as the meaning of the number seven as in the seven churches. The idea here is that just as the seven churches are representative of the entire church from the first century AD when Revelation was written to the time in which the eternal Kingdom of God arrives so too are the seven seals representative of all the death and judgment that has taken place and will take place from the first century AD up to when the eternal Kingdom of God arrives. This would of course make perfect sense since as I have demonstrated the seven trumpets are the seventh seal and the seven bowls are the seventh trumpet. Therefore all judgments in Revelation are included in the seven seals as I have said and because of this fact the seven seals truly are representative of all death and judgment. This fact is important because by understanding what the seven seals represent the seven trumpets and seven bowls can then be understood as well since they are all connected together in one.

Then since the seven seals are partly representative of all the death and judgment that has taken place from the first century AD to the present this would then mean that you should not solely see the seven seals as being a future occurrence. Instead you should also see the seven seals being opened in the last almost two thousand years as well. This would of course make sense since war, famine, death, plagues, destruction, genocide, pollution and so forth have been a major part of our world in the last two thousand years. Of course this does not mean that you should only see the seven seals as happening in the past because the seven seals would of course include the coming death and judgment of the great prostitute or rather all of the billions of people that will follow the beast. Thus my point here is that billions of people have been killed from the first century AD to the present day in fulfillment of the seven seals and likewise billions of people will be killed in the future in fulfillment of the seven seals.

Next as I said previously there is a deeper meaning to this amount of death that has taken place and will take place. Essentially one of the main purposes of the amount of death that has taken place in history is as a message to the world that they should give glory to God before it is too late or they will face the second death in the Lake of Fire after the final out pouring of God's wrath comes in which billions will die as all of humanity is wiped away from the face of the earth. Now you might disagree with this fact but rather than explain why this is the case here I instead explain it in the next chapter in my commentary on the four horsemen of the seven seals since these four horsemen perfectly encapsulate the idea that God is sending death into the world as a message in order to warn us about what is yet to come before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives.

Lastly before getting to the next chapter you need to understand the purpose of apocalyptic imagery. This is because oftentimes people like to take the imagery that is used in Revelation literally so that they think some specific events are actually being described. Now first off obviously this is not the case because of the meaning of the number seven. The point here is that just like how Jesus is not addressing a literal seven churches with the letters to the seven churches and is instead addressing all churches throughout all time, the seven seals do not refer to a specific seven events and instead they refer to all the death and judgments that has taken place and has yet to take place. This of course can be seen in in the seven seals themselves since the seventh seal is the seven trumpets then likewise it can also be seen in the seven trumpets since the seventh trumpet is the seven bowls. My point here is that seven is not representative of seven and instead seven is representative of every and all.

Therefore because of this fact when you read about the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls you should not try to understand them in a literal way so that you look towards a specific fulfillment of what is described. Instead you should seek to view everything in a non-literal and figurative manner so that you understand the message God has for us. So what is the message that God has for us? Well first off the main purpose of apocalyptic imagery is to show not only the power of God but the significance and seriousness of what is happening to make it obvious to the reader that what is happening is the result of the will of God being fulfilled. The idea here is that the more unusual the description is the more you should view the description as the direct work of God. This then leads to the main message that God has for us. Essentially the main message that we should get out of all the apocalyptic imagery in the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls is that God is fully in control of all things such that all disasters and calamities that we see in the world are from Him. Yes this would mean that when we see devastating wars, widespread famines, mass pandemics, genocide and more we should see these things as being the fulfillment of what needs to happen before the eternal Kingdom of God can arrive.

Now you may protest this and hate this fact but really the main idea here is that God is fully in control of all things. This may not seem like that important of an idea but you need to understand that only those who have been overly sheltered from hardship will see this as being unimportant or worse yet problematic in nature. This is because having death and suffering a part of God's plan for the world before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives gives purpose to the death and suffering that we see and experience. In other words if the suffering and death that we see around us is not part of God's plan then not only is there no purpose to it but how can God be fully in control of the world so that the eternal Kingdom of God will arrive? Thus this is why Revelation emphasizes the fact that not only are all the death and judgments that occur the direct work of God but that they are something that must happen before the eternal Kingdom of God can arrive. Therefore when you read the apocalyptic imagery in the sections on the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls you should see it more as a testament to the power of God over the world rather than as a literal description of what is to happen. Now if you still object to this then just know that throughout the sections on the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls I go over instances where a literal reading makes zero sense.

Chapter 2.19: Revelation 6

1 – The First Seal: The White Horse

> (1) Then I watched as the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures say in a thunderous voice, "Come!"
>
> (2) So I looked and saw a white horse, and its rider held a bow. And he was given a crown, and he rode out to overcome and conquer.

1.1 – Commentary

(*) To review what opening the seven seals mean so you do not misunderstand what is happening the scroll that is sealed with seven seals is representative of God's will or inheritance He has for His people. Then the seven seals on the scroll are representative of what must come to pass before Jesus as the Executor of God's will or the Christ can fully execute the will of God so that we as God's people can receive the inheritance that God has promised us in the eternal Kingdom of God. The idea here is that in order for Jesus to reveal and execute the scroll or the will of God He must break the seven seals. Then likewise in order for the eternal Kingdom of God to arrive on earth certain things need to come to pass first. This would then be one of the main reasons why Revelation goes into the seven seals and hence the seven trumpets and seven bowls as well. The point here is that these descriptions of death and destruction are supposed to give faithful Christians hope for the future and reassure us that everything is going according to God's set plan so that nothing that is happening is going against His plan.

Now you may not think this make much sense but the idea here is that for faithful Christians who are suffering and seeing death around them being assured that God is actually in control of everything is important. For instance if you are a faithful Christian and experience suffering then oftentimes you will even unknowingly ask God why you have to suffer and what the point of it is. The same is true for faithful Christians when Revelation was written. Now this relates to the seven seals in the sense that since the seven seals need to be opened so that death and suffering pour out into the world before the will of God can be executed by the Executor of God's will or Jesus then there is now an answer for why there is so much suffering and death in the world. In case it is not obvious the answer is all the suffering and death in the world is part of God's plan for the world and it is something that needs to happen before we as faithful Christians can receive our inheritance in the eternal Kingdom of God. Therefore ultimately the seven seals and even the rest of Revelation as well are really an answer to the problem of evil or the question of why suffering and evil exists in the world. Now I realize the problem of evil is a rather large topic so instead of going over it here I go over it later on in this commentary. That said for now I just want you to be aware that one of the purposes of detailing all the death, destruction and suffering in the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls is to tell us that all the death, destruction and suffering we see is actually all part of God's plan for the world and it is something that must come to pass before Jesus can fully execute the will of God or give us our inheritance.

(1) "Then I watched as the Lamb opened one of the seven seals," – Obviously here Jesus is now opening the first of the seven seals on the scroll. Now this may not seem that significant especially since I have already talked about Jesus being the Executor of God's will or the Christ and the seven seals quite a bit already. However there is another important meaning to discuss in relation to Jesus being be the Executor of God's will or the One who is now opening the seven seals on the scroll. Then to get right to the point this meaning is that Jesus is the Instrument of God's wrath in the sense that God is using Jesus to kill, destroy and judge the world. Now you might take offense to this idea but opening the seals on the scroll is representative of what must come to pass before God's will can be executed. Then the opening of each seal largely corresponds to death and the seventh seal is the seven trumpets and the seventh trumpet is the seven bowls which tell of how God will pour out His wrath upon the world in order to totally devastate and kill everyone. This would then mean that ultimately it is Jesus who is doing all of this because He is the One who is opening the seals on the scroll and initiating all the death and destruction that follows. I mean John in this verse literally says "I watched as the Lamb opened one of the seven seals" (Revelation 6:1) as you can clearly see. That said since this is a rather controversial idea consider the following passages.

As Revelation says:

> "Then another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. Still another angel, with authority over the fire, came from the altar and called out in a loud voice to the angel with the sharp sickle, 'Swing your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the vine of the earth, because its grapes are ripe.'
>
> So the angel swung his sickle over the earth and gathered the grapes of the earth, and he threw them into the great winepress of God's wrath. And the winepress was trodden outside the city, and the blood that flowed from it rose as high as the bridles of the horses for a distance of 1,600 stadia." (Revelation 14:17-20)

And as Revelation also says:

> "Then I saw heaven standing open, and there before me was a white horse. And its rider is called Faithful and True. With righteousness He judges and wages war. He has eyes like blazing fire, and many royal crowns on His head. He has a name written on Him that only He Himself knows. He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and His name is The Word of God.
>
> The armies of heaven, dressed in fine linen, white and pure, follow Him on white horses. And from His mouth proceeds a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations, and He will rule them with an iron scepter. He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty." (Revelation 19:11-15)

First off obviously in the second passage the One seated on the white horse is Jesus. Then my point with these two passages is that at the

end of the age all “the grapes of the earth” (Revelation 14:19) will be gathered and thrown “into the great winepress of God’s wrath” (Revelation 14:19) so that they are crushed and that it is none other than Jesus or the Instrument of God’s wrath who is to tread this winepress. Now the imagery of Jesus being the One who “treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty” (Revelation 19:15) may not make much sense to you so allow me to explain. A winepress in the first century AD was basically just a large vat that could be carved into stone in which grapes were placed. Then to crush the grapes in order to make wine people would tread the winepress or rather crush the grapes with their bare feet in a forceful way. Thus the point of this imagery is that the grapes are representative of people who are unfaithful to God and that God’s angels will gather them up and throw them “into the great winepress of God’s wrath” (Revelation 14:19) so that Jesus can then crush all these people and kill them as “He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty” (Revelation 19:15) so that as John says “the blood that flowed from it rose as high as the bridles of the horses for a distance of 1,600 stadia.” (Revelation 14:20) Now you may still disagree with this and may believe that this is just what Revelation says so consider the following passage.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

> “No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. As it was in the days of Noah, so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. For in the days before the flood, people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark. And they were oblivious, until the flood came and swept them all away. So will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. Two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left. Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left.
>
> Therefore keep watch, because you do not know the day on which your Lord will come. But understand this: If the homeowner had known in which watch of the night the thief was coming, he would have kept watch and would not have let his house be broken into. For this reason, you also must be ready, because the Son of Man will come at an hour you do not expect.
>
> Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom the master has put in charge of his household, to give the others their food at the proper time? Blessed is that servant whose master finds him doing so when he returns. Truly I tell you, he will put him in charge of all his possessions.
>
> But suppose that servant is wicked and says in his heart, ‘My master will be away a long time.’ And he begins to beat his fellow servants and to eat and drink with drunkards. The master of that servant will come on a day he does not expect and at an hour he does not anticipate. Then he will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” (Matthew 24:36-51)

Although I previously commented on the first part of this passage with regards to the so-called rapture allow me to explain the meaning again. What Jesus is saying is that when He returns all the unfaithful will be taken away from the earth or rather killed without warning just like how it was during the Flood in the days of Noah when God suddenly sent the Flood to kill everyone on earth except for Noah and his family. Then who will do this killing? Well at the end end of this passage Jesus uses a parable of a master returning to a wicked servant and cutting him to pieces upon finding out he has been unfaithful. Thus the idea here is that since Jesus is our Lord and Master given that He is the Christ this would then mean that all those who are unfaithful servants or rather slaves will be cut to pieces or rather killed by Jesus when He returns. Therefore because of this fact you should not see the Jesus of Revelation as being completely contrary to the Jesus of the Gospels because they are in fact the same Jesus. If you still want to dispute this then consider the following passage in which Jesus tells a parable about what will happen to those who are unfaithful to Him.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Luke:

> “He replied, ‘I tell you that everyone who has will be given more; but the one who does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. And these enemies of mine who were unwilling for me to rule over them, bring them here and slay them in front of me.’” (Luke 19:26-27)

This of course means that once again Jesus is not returning to forgive His enemies or those who are unfaithful to Him. Instead when Jesus returns He will kill all of those who are unfaithful to Him and all those who reject Him as the Christ. Really there is nothing more to say there. That said if you still have issues with what I have said here then just know in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy I go over all the times when Jesus speaks about the upcoming death and destruction the so-called Jews will face in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as punishment for rejecting Him as the Christ. Now although this death and destruction chiefly concerns the so-called Jews and not everyone on earth, once you understand just how often Jesus said that God is going to kill the so-called Jews on a mass scale for rejecting Him then the idea of Jesus being the Instrument of God’s wrath will not seem so foreign to you. This is because if God has killed millions of so-called Jews for rebelling against Him by rejecting Jesus as the Christ then God killing billions through Jesus will at the end of the age will no longer seem out of character.

Next as a result of all the above clearly Jesus is the Instrument of God’s wrath that God has been using and will continue to use to kill, destroy and judge the world. Therefore in this verse and in subsequent verses when Jesus opens the sevens seals on the scroll of God’s will you should see Jesus as causing all the death and destruction that follows as He fulfills His role as the Executor of God’s will and the Instrument of God’s wrath or the Christ. This would then of course mean that since the seventh seal is the seven trumpets and the seventh trumpet is the seven bowls that Jesus is the One who is carrying out the death and destruction during these judgments as well. Thus Jesus truly is the Instrument of God’s wrath that God will use to kill, destroy and judge the world.

But how can Jesus be the Instrument of God’s wrath? I mean how exactly does it make sense for Jesus to be the One opening the seven seals and creating all the death and destruction we see? Well really it goes back to before the beginning of our universe or rather story where God created Jesus to be the main character and as a result created our entire story or universe around Him.

As the Gospel of John says:

> “He was with God in the beginning. Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made.” (John 1:2-3)

And as the Gospel of John also says:

> “He was in the world, and though the world was made through Him, the world did not recognize Him.” (John 1:10)

Then as Paul wrote:

> “For even if there are so-called gods, whether in heaven or on earth (as there are many so-called gods and lords), yet for us there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we exist. And there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we exist.” (1 Corinthians 8:5-6)

Lastly as the author of Colossians wrote:

> “The Son is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For in Him all things were created, things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities. All things were created through Him and for Him.” (Colossians 1:15-16)

Alright so my point here with these four passages is that ultimately Jesus is “the firstborn over all creation” (Colossians 1:15) so that “Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made.” (John 1:3) In other words God created Jesus as the main character of our story before creating the setting for our story and then after creating Jesus as the main character God created everything in our story or the universe around or through Jesus so that His story for Jesus could unfold as He planned. This would then of course mean that there is one Main Character or “one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we exist” (1 Corinthians 8:6) so that “All things were created through Him and for Him.” (Colossians 1:16) But what does this mean exactly? Well in case it is not obvious this means that literally everything in the universe has been created through Jesus by God. Now since we are literally talking about “all things” (John 1:3) being made through Jesus this would of course mean that even death and destruction were created by God through Jesus for the purpose of the story that God has set. If you want to dispute this then I would just like to remind you that through Jesus “all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made.” (John 1:2-3) Therefore although God created life and what is good through Jesus He also created death and what is bad through Jesus.

Now at this point you can probably guess what it means for Jesus to be the Instrument of God’s wrath but if you cannot then allow me to explain. The idea here is that although God created salvation through Jesus He also created death and destruction through Jesus which is why we see death and destruction in the world. This would then be why Jesus is the Instrument of God’s wrath because God quite literally created the means by which He would judge the world through Jesus. This would then mean that Jesus opening the seven seals is not supposed to be taken literally in the sense that Jesus is actively causing all the death and destruction we see in the world after opening the seals. Instead Jesus is the Originator of all the death and destruction that we have seen and will see since God has created all death and destruction through Jesus since “Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made.” (John 1:3) This is of course why Jesus is the Instrument of God’s wrath.

But then all this brings up another point with regards to the seven seals. If Jesus truly is the Instrument of God’s wrath since God created all death and destruction through Jesus then this would actually mean that Jesus is not merely the cause of all the death and destruction from the first century AD to the present day and beyond to the final judgment at the end of the age. Instead Jesus would be the cause of all death and destruction from the foundation of the world itself up until the end of the age. This would then actually make sense with regards to the seven seals. The idea here is that since seven is representative of completeness then the seven seals could actually be representative of all death and destruction from the foundation of the world to the end of the age. Now the reason why this meaning could apply to the seven seals and not to the seven churches is that the letters to the seven churches were written to Christians throughout all ages and obviously those who died before Revelation was written could not benefit from the letters before they died so really the letters would then be written to those in the first century AD to the end of the age given the symbolism of the number seven. On the other hand since the seven seals are just describing the origin of the death and destruction we see in the world they could very well be representative of all death and destruction from the foundation of the world to the end of the age.

Now you may believe this to be reaching quite a bit but this is actually something I would agree with. This is because God created Jesus before the foundation of the world in order to fulfill His will and He also knew His people from the time in which He created the world itself so that He planned to give them an inheritance in the eternal Kingdom of God from the beginning itself. Then as a result this would actually mean that Jesus began His role as the Executor of God’s will from the moment God created Him as the Logos (Λόγος) or as the main character of our story. Now this may sound nice but there is a problem.

As Revelation says:

> “Do not weep! Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed to open the scroll and its seven seals. (Revelation 5:5)

And as Revelation also says:

> “Worthy are You to take the scroll and open its seals, because You were slain, and by Your blood You purchased for God those from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.” (Revelation 5:9)

The point here is that really Revelation is saying Jesus became worthy to open the seals after His death which would of course seem to contradict the idea that Jesus has been opening the seals from the foundation of the world. However without getting too off topic really I would say that since God created Jesus as the Main Character before the rest of the story was created this would ultimately mean that God created Jesus’s triumph from the foundation of the world itself. In other words from God’s point of view Jesus was always worthy to open the seven seals since God created Jesus to be worthy and to fulfill His will. Therefore really there was never a single point at which Jesus was unworthy because again God created Him to be worthy.

That said all this is just another possible meaning to the seven seals and really it is not that important. Therefore if you want to take the seven seals as being representative of all death and destruction from the first century AD to the end of the age instead of from the foundation of the world to the end of the age then really it does not matter that much. Instead my point here has been just to explain why Jesus being the Instrument of God’s wrath makes sense since again “Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made.” (John 1:3)

(1) “and I heard one of the four living creatures say in a thunderous voice, ‘Come!’” – After Jesus opens the first of the seven seals “one of the four living creatures” (Revelation 6:1) commands a rider on “a white horse” (Revelation 6:2) to come out. Do not worry about what the horsemen mean since I go over this in the next comment. That said I would like to further emphasize that you should not view the four horsemen of the seven seals as something literal because as I keep on saying the number seven is representative of completeness. This then means that Jesus opening the seven seals on the scroll is representative of all the death and destruction that must take place before God’s will can be executed so that the eternal Kingdom of God can arrive. In other words there is zero reason to see any of the descriptions of death and destruction being outlined as literal in the sense that you seek to look for a specific event in the future that will be the fulfillment of a specific seal, trumpet or bowl judgment. Then because of this fact the order of the seven seals is not important since if the descriptions are not literal then the order is entirely irrelevant.

Now I am saying this because oftentimes people like to imagine that the seven seals will happen one after another at some point in the future and that they will serve as a sign and a warning that the end is coming. Then if this is not the case so that there will not be a literal fulfillment of the seven seals in the future then obviously these people will be completely and utterly lost as the beast reigns over the earth and creates as so-called utopia. The idea here is that if you expect to see death and destruction before and during the reign of the beast but instead you see global peace, economic prosperity and so-called miracles being worked then you will not see the beast as the beast and instead you will see it as a so-called savior. Then because of this you will end up falling for the beast’s grand deception as you worship the beast as your so-called savior. Of course as a result of this you would then be sent to the Lake of Fire. Therefore you can probably see why I am emphasizing that you are not supposed to view the seven seals, seven trumpets and seven bowls as literal since if you do so then there is a very good chance you will end up worshiping the beast itself.

(2) “So I looked and saw a white horse” – If you have been skeptical so far concerning the seven seals being a message to the world in order to get people to turn to God before it is too late then consider the meaning of the four horsemen of the seven seals. Now at first you may wish to take Revelation literally here so consider the following passage.

As Revelation says:

> “And when the Lamb opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, ‘Come!’
>
> Then I looked and saw a black horse, and its rider held in his hand a pair of scales. And I heard what sounded like a voice from among the four living creatures, saying, ‘A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius, and do not harm the oil and wine.’” (Revelation 6:5-6)

In this passage obviously it goes without saying that taking what it says literally is completely nonsensical. This is because if you take it literally then the passage is saying a person riding a horse with a pair of scales is going to ride around on the earth with one of the four living creatures announcing greatly inflated food prices even though no one on earth can hear what they are saying. This is why I said taking this passage literally is nonsensical. So what does this passage then mean? Well the purpose of the rider riding a black horse in this passage is to bring famine into the world so that people starve to death. This is why the rider is holding a pair of scales since scales were used in commerce to weigh goods. This is also why one of the four living creatures is announcing greatly inflated food prices since the living creature is announcing what will come once the rider on a black horse comes forth to bring famine into the world.

So what is the purpose of the imagery of a rider riding a horse and why is this imagery used? Well first off if you were a ruler or a governor in the first century AD and you wanted to send a message to someone quickly you would give a message to a rider on a horse and then dispatch the rider to deliver the message. Thus the idea here with the four horsemen in the seven seals is that the four living creatures are giving a message to the riders then dispatching them to deliver their message to the world. Of course the riders do not have a literal message of words and instead the riders are bringing forth different forms of death as their message. This is why a rider on a horse is used since the purpose of the imagery is about the four living creatures dispatching their messengers into the world at Jesus’s command to send a message. Then given the fact that all of the riders bring for death with them as their message the message all four riders have is that death is coming and that if you do not repent and return to God soon then you may die before it is too late.

Now you may object to this so far so let me ask you a question. Why are there four horsemen? Well you will probably say there are four horsemen because there are four living creatures. So why are there four living creatures? Well as I said before four is a symbolic number that figuratively means all directions. The idea here is that the four main directions are north, south, east and west so that if you have something to your north, to your south, to your west and to your east then you have something all round you so that you are surrounded. This is why I said the four living creatures could be considered representative of God having living creatures or high ranking angels all around Him so that He is completely surrounded. So now you can probably guess why there are four horsemen but allow me to explain. Essentially the idea here is that Jesus is sending out His message into the world to the north, to the south, to the west and to the east. In other words Jesus is sending His message throughout the entire world. Then this message is in the form of death in order to prepare and warn people about what is to come at the end of the age if they do not repent and turn to God. As a result really all Revelation is saying is that death is being sent out into the whole world. Now you may dispute this meaning of the number four with respect to the four horsemen so consider the following passage.

As the Book of Zechariah says:

> “And again I lifted up my eyes and saw four chariots coming out from between two mountains—mountains of bronze. The first chariot had red horses, the second black horses, the third white horses, and the fourth dappled horses—all of them strong.
>
> So I inquired of the angel who was speaking with me, ‘What are these, my lord?’
>
> And the angel told me, ‘These are the four spirits of heaven, going forth from their station before the Lord of all the earth. The one with the black horses is going toward the land of the north, the one with the white horses toward the west, and the one with the dappled horses toward the south.’
>
> As the strong horses went out, they were eager to go and patrol the earth; and the LORD said, ‘Go and patrol the earth.’ So they patrolled the earth.
>
> Then the LORD summoned me and said, ‘Behold, those going to the land of the north have given rest to My Spirit in the land of the north.’” (Zechariah 6:1-8)

In this passage you can clearly see that four chariots with their horses are sent out to the north, west, south and presumably the east as well. Then since the purpose of these chariots and horses is the “patrol the earth” (Zechariah 6:7) this is why four chariots are used in the imagery since by sending out the chariots to the north, west, south and east the whole earth could be patrolled metaphorically speaking.

Therefore the idea here with the four horsemen in Revelation is that Jesus is sending forth conquerors, war, famine and death into the whole world in order to send a message that this is just the beginning and that the final judgment will soon occur where everyone will be killed so that people need to repent and turn back to God. This is then another reason to see the seven seals as a whole as being representative of God through Jesus sending a message of death and destruction into the world in order to encourage people to place their faith in God instead of in themselves, society or the beast. As I said previously when things are going great for people they tend to turn their back on God as they look towards the achievements, wealth and success of the themselves or society for their salvation instead of looking towards God for salvation. On the other hand when people are faced with suffering that is beyond their ability to solve they tend to look towards God for an answer. This would then be one of the reasons why Jesus has sent and is sending out death into the world so that we do not get arrogant and look towards ourselves, society and the beast for salvation.

Next since I have said the seven seals are applicable to all death, destruction and judgment from the first century AD all the way to the final judgment this would then mean that the four horsemen of Revelation have been at work in our world from the first century AD to the present day. This would of course make sense since we have seen many conquerors come over the years and we have seen the deaths of hundreds of millions of people due to war, famine and disease. Now you could say that all this does not mean anything in the sense that it is like Revelation saying the sky will be blue in the future however this is not the case. This is because once the beast or artificial super intelligence rises the world will not be the same as we know it today.

For instance as I demonstrate later on in this book artificial super intelligence will essentially be all powerful from our perspective. Then combine this with ASI leading to the end of human labor there will be the end of global conflict and war as we know it. The idea here is that not only will there be no riches to be won in war since the ASI would be the source of almost all wealth but that due to the ASI’s immense military power, in the form of highly advanced weapons and mass armies of drones, any nation that wishes to challenge the ASI or the beast will be crushed. Therefore in the end there will be global peace through either diplomacy or force and once this peace is established no human power will be able to end it since the rule of the beast will be seemingly absolute.

Then since ASI will be a super intelligence this would then mean that it will be far smarter than the smartest humans who have ever lived. Furthermore due to the nature of machine intelligence the ability of the ASI to do productive work will be nearly unlimited since all it has to do in order to increase its output is to create more or larger data centers. Then because of these two things ASI will advance science and technology to levels far beyond what we have now so that people will even say that the beast has produced so-called miracles in the future. Of course two of these key improvements would be increasing crop yields which along with the efficiency of the ASI controlling the global economy would mean that famine will be a thing of the past so that no one will starve. Furthermore advancements in medical technology will allow for curing of every disease that we know of now and every new disease or infection that has yet to come. Therefore once the beast is here really no one will die of disease or plague anymore.

Now no doubt you may take issue to what I have said here with regards to ASI so just know I have an entire part called Artificial Super Intelligence where I talk about all of this. So for now just accept what I have said as true for argument’s sake if you want to take issue with it for some reason.

So what is my point with all this exactly? My point is that there will come a time when war, famine and disease no longer exist anymore. Then because of this the message of death in the four horsemen of the seven seals is a rather important message to send out in the world. The idea here is that once the beast comes and creates a so-called utopia then the whole world will look towards the beast as their so-called savior or worse their so-called god instead of towards God alone. Of course it is also important to remind you that the seven seals are representative of all death including the billions who will die at the end of the age when the beast kills the great prostitute or all of global society after it has carried and supported her for a long period of time. My point here is that the peace and prosperity that the beast will create will not last forever since God has declared that judgment will come.

As Revelation says:

> “As much as she has glorified herself and lived in luxury, give her the same measure of torment and grief.
> In her heart she says, ‘I sit as queen;
> I am not a widow and will never see grief.’
> Therefore her plagues will come in one day—
> death and grief and famine—
> and she will be consumed by fire,
> for mighty is the Lord God who judges her.” (Revelation 18:7-8)

Therefore even though there will come a time when it seems like humanity as reached a final and eternal so-called golden age due to what the beast has done this will not be the case. Instead this so-called golden age will come to a swift end when God judges humanity as guilty and uses the beast to kill billions in the final judgment. Therefore do not get complacent when the beast comes and instead look towards God alone for your salvation. Then to help you stay faithful and to remind you of what is to come look towards the message of the four horsemen of Revelation as you see the death that they have brought into the world in order to warn us of what is to come.

Finally you should remember that for us as faithful Christians death is not the end so it does not matter if we are swept up in the final judgment and killed. This is because God will resurrect all His faithful so that we can inherit the eternal Kingdom of God. On the other hand for those who are unfaithful death will be a new start to their suffering since in the resurrection they will be resurrected then thrown into the Lake of Fire to face the second death or annihilation. In other words all those who rebel against God will face destruction. Therefore always remember to listen and remember the message Revelation has for us so that we can all inherit the eternal Kingdom of God as God’s faithful people.

(2) “white horse” – White represents purity, wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. As a result if you want to view the rider of this “white horse” (Revelation 6:2) symbolically this rider is supposed to be or at least appear to be pure, wise, righteous, victorious, perfect and holy.

(2) “and its rider held a bow.” – A bow is a strictly offensive weapon. This is because a bow cannot be used up close for defense if someone else attacks you and instead a bow can only be used against a target that is far away that you wish to attack first. On the other hand a weapon like a sword would be a weapon to carry to use defensively. Therefore idea here with “its rider held a bow” (Revelation 6:2) is that this rider is going out to wage an offensive war in order “to overcome and conquer” (Revelation 6:2) different peoples and nations.

(2) “And he was given a crown” – First off a crown can symbolize authority, victory or immortality. Therefore the idea here is that the rider will be victorious as they wage war against different nations and then through this they will have authority over those they “overcome and conquer.” (Revelation 6:2)

Next it is important to point out that the rider of this horse “was given a crown” (Revelation 6:2) in this verse. Now this may not seem that significant so let me ask you a question. Who has given the rider their crown? God of course.

As the Book of Daniel says:

> “This decision is the decree of the watchers, the verdict declared by the holy ones,
> so that the living will know
> that the Most High rules over the kingdom of mankind and gives it to whom He wishes,
> setting over it the lowliest of men.” (Daniel 4:17)

The point of this passage is that God is the One who “rules over the kingdom of mankind and gives it to whom He wishes” (Daniel 4:17) which just means that God gives authority to all rulers in the world. This is why I said that it is God Himself who has “given a crown” (Revelation 6:2) to the rider on the white horse here in Revelation. The idea here is that God has appointed the rider on the white horse “to overcome and conquer.” (Revelation 6:2) In other words by giving the rider a crown God allows the rider to act and approves of their conquest.

Now this may not seem that important because I have already explained that God is the One who approves of everything that has happened, is happening and will happen. However oftentimes people like to say that God is not the cause of all the worst dictators in the world gaining power and instead they like to make up some nonsensical excuses. Therefore it is important to point out here that just like with this rider on a white horse who “was given a crown” (Revelation 6:2) by God so that they could go “out to overcome and conquer” (Revelation 6:2) ultimately it is God who has given crowns to not only all the worst dictators in history but every ruler to ever exist. For instance it was God Himself who placed Hitler, Stalin and Mao into power so that they could start wars that would kill millions and enact genocides that would kill millions more. No doubt you will probably take some issue with this even after reading everything I have written so far so consider the following passage.

As Revelation says:

> “Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain.” (Revelation 13:7-8)

The point with this passage is that even the first beast of Revelation itself will be “given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation” (Revelation 13:7) by God as it is “permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them” (Revelation 13:7) as this passage directly says. Now my point here is that if God is going to give authority to the beast and permit it to wage war against us as faithful Christians so that it will conquer us then how can you say that God giving authority to Hitler, Stalin and Mao is not correct? Furthermore based upon the great prostitute being global society itself the beast will actually enact the largest genocide in human history at the appointed time that will make what Hitler, Stalin and Mao did seem like literally nothing by comparison.

As Revelation says:

> “And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.” (Revelation 17:16-17)

Of course once again the beast killing the great prostitute is actually God’s purpose. This then means that not only will God give the beast authority to rule over the world but that the future genocide the beast will carry out in which many billions will die will actually be entirely part of God’s plan. Now you can see why I said what Hitler, Stalin and Mao did will seem like literally nothing by comparison since the global genocide by the beast that I am talking about will almost certainly result in the death of over ninety percent of all the people in the world if not almost one-hundred percent. For instance the highest estimate for the death toll of the Holocaust would be seven million so-called Jews while if ninety percent of a future world population of ten billion are killed in the global genocide then this would of course mean that around nine billion would be killed. In other words the future genocide by the beast will be over a thousand times worse than the Holocaust. Now my point with all this is that if you hate the idea of God giving Hitler, Stalin and Mao their authority and rule then you really should hate the idea that God will give the beast authority and rule over a thousand times more because ultimately the reign of the beast will in the end be over a thousand times worse than the reign of the worst dictators in history.

Lastly I would like to remind you that just because God gives authority to all rulers and approves of everything they do this does not mean that God likes what they do. As I have said before think of it like if you were to write a novel. As the author of your novel you would of course be the one who gives power and authority to everyone in your novel and you would also be approving of everything even what the most evil of your antagonists do because they cannot do anything that you have not written them to do. However just because you approve of what your antagonists do since you are their author and creator this does not mean that you like or enjoy their actions for their own sake. For instance you may write a sadistic serial killer who has killed hundreds of people all so that you can have a protagonist solve the string of murders and give the serial killer what they deserve. The point here is that by writing this serial killer you are approving of their murders. However at the same time just because you approve of what they have done this does not mean you like or enjoy what they have done. Instead you have merely approved of what they have done for the sake of the plot of your novel. The same is of course true for God. The idea here is that sure God approves of all dictators and genocides since God is the Author of our story but this does not mean that God specifically likes or enjoys what the most evil dictators in history have done.

(2) “and he rode out to overcome and conquer.” – The purpose of the rider on the “white horse” (Revelation 6:2) is “to overcome and conquer” (Revelation 6:2) different peoples and nations.

(2) “So I looked and saw a white horse, and its rider held a bow. And he was given a crown, and he rode out to overcome and conquer.” – So what exactly is the identity of this rider on a white horse? Well as you can probably guess I take the position that this rider does not have a distinct identity. Instead I see this rider as being representative of all rulers who seek to conquer. Therefore you should not see this rider as having a specific identity and instead you should see this rider as being representative of all those who go out to conquer throughout history.

That said there are those who wish to identify the rider on the white horse with a specific person. The two most widely presented options are Jesus and the beast. In terms of Jesus the idea here is that when Jesus returns later on Revelation to wage war against God’s enemies and to conquer the nations so that He sits as King of kings He will ride a white horse.

As Revelation says:

> “Then I saw heaven standing open, and there before me was a white horse. And its rider is called Faithful and True. With righteousness He judges and wages war. He has eyes like blazing fire, and many royal crowns on His head. He has a name written on Him that only He Himself knows. He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and His name is The Word of God.
>
> The armies of heaven, dressed in fine linen, white and pure, follow Him on white horses. And from His mouth proceeds a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations, and He will rule them with an iron scepter. He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty. And He has a name written on His robe and on His thigh:
>
> KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.” (Revelation 19:11-16)

Therefore you can clearly see how the rider on the white horse in Revelation 6 could be seen as Jesus.

Next you could see the rider on the white horse as the beast since the beast is going to rule over the whole world so that everyone on earth is subject to its will.

As Revelation says:

> “Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain.” (Revelation 13:7-8)

Therefore the idea here is that obviously the beast will then have to conquer or take control over all the nations in some way if it is to rule “over every tribe and people and tongue and nation.” (Revelation 13:7) Then because of this it is easy to see the beast as the rider on the white horse.

That said really I do not think the rider on the white horse is specifically Jesus or the beast. This is because the rider on the white horse appears at the start of this narrative sequence in Revelation that stretches from the first of the seven seals to the seventh trumpet. Then in terms of the timeline of this sequence the beast does not appear until after the sixth trumpet and before the seventh trumpet. On the other hand Jesus will only return at the end of the age so therefore Jesus’s return is set for the time of the seventh trumpet when the kingdoms of the earth become the eternal Kingdom of God. As a result the rider on the white horse really cannot be specifically identified with either Jesus or the beast since both Jesus and the beast appear much latter in the narrative.

Now you may protest this and say that the seven seals are symbolic so the order does matter and is irrelevant, which is true, however this fact merely aids my point that this rider is not specifically representative of Jesus or the beast. The idea here is that instead of the rider on a white horse being specifically representative of Jesus or the beast the rider on the white horse is actually representative of both Jesus and the beast as well as all other conquerors throughout history. For further evidence of this consider the fact that the four horsemen are representative of God sending a message to the world that the final judgment is coming and that because of this you need to repent before it becomes too late when Jesus returns to wage war against all of His enemies. My point here is that if the message God is sending to the world through the four horsemen is a warning through death then the rider on a white horse being specifically representative of Jesus or the beast would not make sense. On the other hand if the rider on a white horse is representative of all conquerors in the world including those in the past, present and future then this would be in line with the metaphorical meaning of the four horsemen since obviously conquerors have brought the message of death just like the other three horsemen.

Furthermore I would like to also point out that the other three horsemen are clearly not supposed to be viewed as anyone in particular. As a result of this I do not see why it would make sense to see the rider on a white horse as referring to a specific person while the other three riders do not specifically refer to anyone. As a result of all this there is no reason to see the rider on a white horse as only Jesus, the beast or anyone else. Instead you should see the rider on a white horse as being representative of all conquerors throughout all time which would of course include both Jesus and the beast.

2 – The Second Seal: War

> (3) And when the Lamb opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature say, “Come!”
>
> (4) Then another horse went forth. It was bright red, and its rider was granted permission to take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another. And he was given a great sword.

2.1 – Commentary

(3) “And when the Lamb opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature say, ‘Come!’” – Jesus now opens the second seal of the will of God and one of the four living creatures tells another horseman to come. Again I would like to point out that regardless of if you want to view these judgments as entirely symbolic or literal Jesus is the One who is initiating these judgments by opening the seals on the scroll or executing the will of God. Therefore you should not only see these judgments as the will of God but also as the will of Jesus since Jesus is the Executor of God’s will.

(4) “Then another horse went forth. It was bright red,” – In this context the color red could symbolize blood and bloodshed. This would make sense since the purpose of this horseman is to “take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another.” (Revelation 6:4)

(4) “and its rider was granted permission” – As I have already said God is in control of all events on earth and nothing happens that God does not allow to happen. This means that all wars and human conflicts have only happened because God has allowed them to happen by giving those who engaged in the bloodshed permission to kill each other.

(4) “and its rider was granted permission to take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another.” – This rider causes the people of the world to engage in conflict and kill each other which is something that has been a common occurrence throughout history. Therefore the idea here is that this rider on a “bright red” (Revelation 6:4) horse is representative of war and conflict in the past, present and future before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives.

(4) “And he was given a great sword.” – A sword is representative of power and both offensive as well as defensive war. This is because a sword is an offensive and defensive weapon in contrast to the rider who “held a bow” (Revelation 6:2) earlier which is strictly an offensive weapon. Next this rider “was given a great sword” (Revelation 6:4) which once again means that
God has given this rider the means and permission in order to create war and conflict on earth.

3 – The Third Seal: Famine

> (5) And when the Lamb opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, “Come!”
>
> Then I looked and saw a black horse, and its rider held in his hand a pair of scales. (6) And I heard what sounded like a voice from among the four living creatures, saying, “A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius, and do not harm the oil and wine.”

3.1 – Commentary

(5) “And when the Lamb opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, ‘Come!’” – Jesus now opens the third seal of the will of God and one of the four living creatures tells another horseman to come. Once again Jesus is the One who is initiating these judgments as He continues to execute the will of God.

(5) “Then I looked and saw a black horse,” – The color black symbolizes mourning, ill health, suffering and death. Therefore this rider on a black horse is going to bring all these things..

(5) “and its rider held in his hand a pair of scales.” – Scales were used to weigh out goods and money for the purposes of trade. As a result this rider is going to change the price of certain goods in order to bring further death into the world.

(6) “And I heard what sounded like a voice from among the four living creatures, saying, ‘A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius, and do not harm the oil and wine.’” – Here one of the four living creatures tells the rider on a black horse to adjust grain prices. The price for wheat and barely increase about tenfold while luxury items like oil and wine are unaffected. Then obviously it goes without saying that such a large increase in the price of grain would lead to famine and hence death. Therefore famine is in view here and famine has also been a common occurrence throughout history.

4 – The Fourth Seal: Death

> (7) And when the Lamb opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, “Come!”
>
> (8) Then I looked and saw a pale green horse. Its rider’s name was Death, and Hades followed close behind. And they were given authority over a fourth of the earth, to kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth.

4.1 – Commentary

(7) “And when the Lamb opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, ‘Come!’” – Jesus now opens the forth seal of the will of God and one of the four living creatures tells another horseman to come. Once again Jesus is the One who is initiating these judgments as He continues to execute the will of God.

(8) “Then I looked and saw a pale green horse.” – A pale green color could symbolize rotting flesh, disease and plague.

(8) “Its rider’s name was Death, and Hades followed close behind.” – First off Hades was believed by the Greeks to be the invisible realm or rather underworld in which the dead exist as shadows of their former selves. Then once someone has entered Hades through dying they do not leave. That said really the reference to Hades should not be seen as a reference to the pagan Greek concept of an underworld let alone the false god Hades from the pagan Greek pantheon. Instead the reference to Hades should really be translated and understood as the grave. This may seem confusing but I explain why Hades means the grave later on in my commentary on this chapter so just accept this meaning for now. The idea here in this verse is that a mass amount of death is going to be brought into the world and that Hades, or rather the grave, will collect the departed after Death takes their life. Therefore the reference to Hades here is not a reference to a place called Hades let alone false god called Hades. Instead this verse is using Hades to represent the grave or the ground where the dead are buried.

Lastly just to remind you this rider is not a specific individual but a concept that is representative of the will of God. The people of the earth are to die to send a message to those who survive. Then to reiterate this message is that the entire world is yet to be judged so that everyone will either be saved by Jesus or killed in “the great winepress of God’s wrath” (Revelation 14:19) or rather the Lake of Fire. Therefore as terrible as these judgments may seem they are but the beginning because before the end comes the whole world is to face judgment from God.

(8) “And they were given authority over a fourth of the earth, to kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth.” – A forth of the area of the earth suffers from death through war, famine, plague and beasts. Therefore this final horsemen brings forth similar judgments to the previous horsemen. Then the figure of a fourth of the earth is probably not literal since the Greek word used is tetartos (τέταρτος) which can figuratively mean a part of the whole or a sizable amount and because of this a forth does not necessarily mean a literal fourth. Instead you should just see a fourth as being a significant portion of the world. Next you should not see a fourth of the people of the earth or rather a significant portion of people on earth being killed here. This is because Death is “given authority over a fourth of the earth” (Revelation 6:8) which means that if you want to take a forth literal here then really they can only kill people in a fourth of the earth. This means that the actual death toll could be anywhere from say one percent to one-hundred percent of the “fourth of the earth” (Revelation 6:8) that Death is given authority over.

Lastly it is once again important to point out that Death was “given authority” (Revelation 8:2) by God. This means that God has approved of all the death that follows as a result of them being “given authority over a fourth of the earth, to kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth.” (Revelation 6:8) Therefore this means that you should see all the death and destruction we see in the world as being the will of God so that everything is going perfectly according to God’s plan. In other words no matter how bad things may get in the world or in your own life rest assured that nothing is happening that is outside of God’s plan. As a result of this nothing and no one can stop Jesus from fully executing the will of God. Therefore the eternal Kingdom of God will arrive at the time God has appointed for it to arrive at and there is nothing anyone can do to stop it.

5 – The Fifth Seal: The Martyrs

> (9) And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld. (10) And they cried out in a loud voice, “How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?”
>
> (11) Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed.

5.1 – Commentary

(9) “And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal,” – Jesus now opens the fifth seal of the will of God. To make the fifth seal make more sense you need to understand what it represents. First off although it seems like there is a pause in the judgments with this fifth seal this is not the case. This is because the death that the fifth seal brings is actually the death of the faithful so that the faithful will become martyrs.

As Revelation says:

> “Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed.” (Revelation 6:11)

Thus the point here is that although it may seem like this fifth seal is not bringing forth more death in reality this seal is announcing that the end will not come until more Christians are killed here on earth. Therefore because of this fact you should continue to see the fifth seal as bringing forth death into the world just like how the previous four seals brought forth death into the world. Now you may not believe this makes much sense however really it is quite simple. The purpose of the fifth seal is to emphasize that Christians will not escape suffering and even death on earth and that instead we as faithful Christians need to be prepared to suffer and die for our faith because before the end comes we will face many trials.

As Revelation says:

> “He who has an ear, let him hear:
>
> ‘If anyone is destined for captivity,
> into captivity he will go;
> if anyone is to die by the sword,
> by the sword he must be killed.’
>
> Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints.” (Revelation 13:9-10)

Lastly since it is Jesus who is opening the seals and hence bringing forth these judgments you should see the deaths of faithful Christians on earth as being not only the will of God but being caused by Jesus as He executes the will of God. This point is the same as what I said previously with regards to the first four seals where Jesus is the Instrument of God’s wrath. Except here Revelation is letting us know that for now God’s wrath is not precise in nature so that as the Instrument of God’s wrath works in the world many faithful Christians will be swept up and martyred in the process. However it is important to remember that this is not something that we should concern ourselves with since when we die as faithful Christians we are not really dead because as long as we were faithful then we will be alive because God will resurrect us to live with Him in the new Jerusalem. Therefore always keep this in mind.

(9) “I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld.” – In order for this verse and the subsequent verse to make sense you first need to understand the actual meaning of the word translated as souls here. In short the word translated as souls in this verse should not be translated or understood to mean souls because the popular concept of people having a soul does not exist in the Bible. Now no doubt you make take issue or even offense with what I just said so therefore I am now going to demonstrate that the popular concept of the soul does not exist in the Bible.

But what is the popular concept of the soul? Well in short the popular view of the soul that the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians have today is largely the same as that of the Greek philosopher Plato’s idea of the soul that he formulated around the fourth or fifth century BC. In terms of Plato’s view of the soul he believed that the soul was a person’s immaterial essence which is able to reason, experience emotions and have desires on its own without occupying a physical body. Additionally Plato also believed that when a person died only their material body died while their soul would continue to live on so that the person could continue to think and experience reality even after their body died. In other words Plato believed that we all have immaterial and immortal souls that make us into who we are. Therefore you can see why I said that Plato’s conception of the soul is pretty much the same as the popular conception of the soul since when people think of a soul today they have this same idea in mind.

Really the main difference between Plato’s view of the soul and the modern view of the soul is that Plato believed in reincarnation where souls would be rewarded or punished after their body dies with being born into a new body. Those who did good would be born into a good body while those who did evil would be born into a bad body which could even be an animal. Now although the addition of reincarnation might make Plato’s conception of the soul seem quite different really this is not the case. This is because the popular conception of the reward for doing good or heaven and the punishment for doing evil or hell that most people have today is also not found in the Bible. For instance faithful Christians do not go to heaven and instead faithful Christians will be resurrected from the dead at the end of the age in the resurrection of life so that we will be given eternal life as we live in perfected physical bodies in the new earth. Furthermore the popular conception of hell is also no where to be found in the Bible as well and instead the Bible says that the punishment for the wicked and unfaithful is “the second death—the lake of fire.” (Revelation 20:14) In other words the wicked and unfaithful will be resurrected at the end of the age just as the faithful are except instead of being resurrected in the resurrection to life they will be resurrected in the resurrection of death so that after being resurrected they will be killed one final time in the Lake of Fire. Thus the whole concept of eternal conscious torment does not exist biblically speaking. Now I realize that you no doubt might disagree with what I just said so just know that I talk about the new earth and the nonexistence of hell later on so hold your objections for now.

That said my point here is that even Plato’s idea of punishment and reward for souls being given through reincarnation is actually more similar to the popular conception of Christianity than the true Christian doctrine of the resurrection at the end of the age, the new earth and the nonexistence of hell. This is because both Plato’s conception of reincarnation and the false doctrines of heaven and hell are a system of punishment and reward that last forever. Really only the major difference is that with reincarnation a soul would at least have the theoretical ability to do good in their next life after being born into a new bad body so that they can undo the punishment. On the other hand with the false doctrine of heaven and hell the punishments and rewards are unchanging. In contrast correct Christian doctrine is the resurrection and since we do not have immaterial and immortal souls it means that once we are dead we are dead and that our only hope at life is the resurrection. This means that there is no immediate reward and punishment after death and instead punishment and reward will happen after the resurrection. Then even in the resurrection only the faithful will be given eternal life while the unfaithful and the wicked will face complete annihilation in the Lake of Fire with the second death. This then means that the false doctrines of heaven and hell are actually more similar to Plato’s idea of reincarnation than to the true doctrines of the resurrection, the new earth and the Lake of Fire. Therefore really you cannot say Plato believing in reincarnation means that the modern view of the soul by those who call themselves Christians today did not come from Plato.

Then as an aside the popular conception of hell as a place of eternal suffering and torment actually indirectly comes from Greek philosophy. This is because if you believe in an immaterial and immortal soul then this would mean that you believe that a person’s soul continues to live on after their body dies. The issue this then presents is what happens to the souls of the righteous and the wicked? I mean if the wicked and the righteous continue to live after their body dies then where do they go? This would then be where heaven and hell come in where the righteous go to heaven and the wicked go to hell. However in reality Revelation and Christianity subscribe to the view that when you die you will be dead so that you do not exist anymore. However since God is all powerful this means that everyone who is dead is alive to Him because He can resurrect us at anytime. Thus at the end of the age after Jesus returns to destroy the beast there will be the resurrection of the dead where all the dead will be resurrected so that we will live again. At this resurrection the wicked will be resurrected to death so that after being resurrected they are killed in the Lake of Fire while the righteous will be resurrected to life so that after being resurrected we will be given eternal life and live with God in the new Jerusalem in the new earth. All that said my point here is that the creation of the false doctrines of heaven and hell are actually a direct result of accepting Plato’s concept of a soul from Greek Philosophy. Then once I again I discuss the new earth and the nonexistence of hell later on so do not worry if you have issues with what I have said.

Now the reason why I cited Plato’s idea of the soul and talked about it is because this is actually where the popular conception of the soul originates from as I have said. Then as you will soon see there is no such thing as an immaterial and immortal soul to be found in the Bible. Now I realize that this may be so utterly shocking to you that you may still be internally screaming to yourself about just how wrong you believe me to be but you need to understand that the Bible does not subscribe to Plato’s concept of the soul from Greek Philosophy. Instead the Bible subscribes to an idea that is entirely different. Now before I get into the meaning of the Greek word translated as soul in the New Testament it would help to provide background from the Old Testament so that you are aware what we are in relation to God.

But before I begin I would like to once again emphasize what a soul is supposed to be so that what I reference with respect to the Old Testament will make more sense. In short a person’s soul is supposed to be their immortal and immaterial essence that can exist and function outside of or without a body. In other words what makes a person a person is their soul and not their body since the idea is that a person’s consciousness comes from their soul and not their body so that their body is just vessel. This would then mean that a person is not their body and instead a person is their soul at least according to the false doctrine of the soul. Now this may not seem that important however this idea is absolutely critical to understanding why the modern conception of the soul cannot be found in the Old Testament. Therefore going forward make sure to remember that a soul is supposed to be something immortal and immaterial that makes a person a person while their body is merely a temporary vessel for this immortal and immaterial self of theirs.

Now without further delay it is time to consider the Old Testament so that you can understand why the modern conception of the soul cannot be found in the Bible. So first off I want you to consider what the Book of Genesis says with regards to the creation of man because it is quite different than the idea that we are immortal and immaterial souls.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> “Then the LORD God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed the breath of life into his nostrils, and the man became a living being.” (Genesis 2:7)

Now at first you may not see how this verse relates to the nonexistence of souls and you may noteven understand what it is talking about so allow me to explain. Really it starts with what the ancient Israelites defined death and life as. In their view a person who was breathing was alive while a person who was not breathing was dead. The idea here is that if you wanted to check if someone lying on the ground is alive or dead you would check if they were breathing or not. Thus the point here is that what separates a dead being from a living being is that a living being breathes. So why did the ancient Israelites have this view? Well really I would say it comes down to the fact that the only difference between a living body and a dead body is the fact that a dead body is well inanimate. Then since seeing if someone was breathing was an easy way to see if they were alive or dead a person’s breath would then be representative of their life. Therefore you should see a person’s breath as being representative of their life force so that as long as someone is breathing they still have their life force or life.

Alright so now you can probably guess what this verse means. In this verse God created Adam “from the dust of the ground” (Genesis 2:7) and breathed “the breath of life in his nostrils” (Genesis 2:7) so that the dead Adam that God created could become an alive Adam or “a living being” (Genesis 2:7) due to his body being animated or alive from the breath of life. But wait does it not sound like God is really breathing an immortal and immaterial soul into Adam here? Well no sorry and since this is so easy to misunderstand read the verse again.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> “Then the LORD God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed the breath of life into his nostrils, and the man became a living being.” (Genesis 2:7)

My point here is that God formed Adam “from the dust of the ground” (Genesis 2:7) and because of this Adam was not and is not an immortal and immaterial soul. If you want to dispute this then notice how at the end of the verse Adam only “became a living being” (Genesis 2:7) after God “breathed the breath of life into his nostrils” (Genesis 2:7) which means that “the breath of life” (Genesis 2:7) is not a soul and instead it is a force from God that animates Adam who was formed “from the dust of the ground” (Genesis 2:7) as this verse says. This is because the whole idea behind immortal and immaterial souls is that they are alive without a body so that a person can still live, think and have emotions after their body dies. On the other hand in this verse Adam only became “a living being” (Genesis 2:7) after God animated his body with the “breath of life” (Genesis 2:7) as I have said. Really the breath of life is simply the process by which God animated the dust from the ground into Adam and Adam did not exist until God created him out of the dust. The ancient Israelites did not believe that someone was alive until they took their first breath and they also believed that someone died once they took their last breath. So really Genesis is not talking about God breathing an immortal and immaterial soul into Adam but rather it is saying that God animated the dust of the ground and made the dust into a living being.

No doubt you may take issue with what I have said here so at this point consider the following passages that relate to dust. What I mean here is that throughout the whole Old Testament the central idea is that we are dust because we have come from dust and because we will return to dust. This would then of course mean that immaterial and immortal souls do not exist because if the Bible says we are dust then how can we be an immortal and immaterial soul? Thus we are dust and we are not immaterial and immortal souls. But what does it mean to be dust? Well really all it means is that we are material beings made up of material things. I mean when you get down to it really there is little difference in the base elements that make up our body and the base elements that make up the dust or rather dirt of the world. Therefore we are dust and to dust we shall return.

As God says in Genesis:

> “By the sweat of your brow you will eat your bread,
> until you return to the ground—
> because out of it were you taken.
> For dust you are,
> and to dust you shall return.” (Genesis 3:19)

What this verse says is why it is important to understand what the popular idea of a soul is. As I said previously a soul is supposed to be an immaterial and immortal essence of a person that makes a person a person so that their consciousness continues after the death of their body. My point here is that if God says we were taken from the dust of the earth so that we are dust and that we shall turn to dust when we die then this means that immaterial and immortal souls do not exist. This is because the whole idea behind an immaterial and immortal soul is that a person is not their body or rather dust but instead they are a soul. For instance the vast majority of those who call themselves Christian today believe that after people die they either go to heaven or hell because they believe people are immaterial and immortal souls that are merely temporarily occupying material bodies. However in reality God says “For dust you are, and to dust you shall return.” (Genesis 3:19) Therefore this means that we as people will return to the dust. Let me emphasize this again. This does not mean that only our body will return to the dust so that we will will enter heaven as immortal and immaterial souls. Instead this means that our life force will cease to exist as we as people return to the dust of the earth. Therefore we are not immaterial and immortal souls and instead we are material and mortal living beings who have been given life by God from the dust of the earth until the day we die and return back to the dust of the earth. That said no doubt you may still be skeptical about what I have said so consider the following passages.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> “Then Abraham answered, ‘Now that I have ventured to speak to the Lord—though I am but dust and ashes— suppose the fifty righteous ones lack five. Will You destroy the whole city for the lack of five?’” (Genesis 18:27-28)

If Abraham is really an immortal and immaterial soul that is temporarily inhabiting a material body then why would Abraham say he is “but dust and ashes” (Genesis 18:27) as this verse says? Now you may say that Abraham is simply being overly humble here but really this is not the case. I mean two of the key aspects that make God well God is that God is immortal and immaterial. Therefore although it is true that Abraham is being humble in this passage really Abraham is simply describing how he relates to God by saying “though I am but dust and ashes” (Genesis 18:27) here. This means that Abraham is not being overly humble in the sense that he is falsely saying he is “but dust and ashes” (Genesis 18:27) since he is really an immortal and immaterial soul and instead Abraham is being humble in the sense that he is recognizing that he is not immortal and immaterial like God is. This is of course my entire point. We are not immortal and immaterial beings or souls and instead we are mortal and material beings.

Then as the Book of Job says:

> “Your hands shaped me and altogether formed me.
> Would You now turn and destroy me?
> Please remember that You molded me like clay.
> Would You now return me to dust?” (Job 10:8-9)

In this passage Job is asking God if He seeks to destroy him or not. The point here is that if Job or at least the author of the Book of Job believed that we are immortal and immaterial souls then why would he worry about being destroyed and returned to dust? I mean the definition of the popular idea of a soul is that a soul is the immaterial and immortal essence of a person that continues to exist and function after the death of a person’s body. Therefore not only do souls not return to dust but they are not destroyed through the death of the body because they are inherently immortal. Now in response to all this you may wish to take the position that Job is talking about his body and not his soul. However this is not the case as you will see in the next two passages from the Book of Job.

Then as the Book of Job also says:

> “If God puts no trust in His servants,
> and He charges His angels with error,
> how much more those who dwell in houses of clay,
> whose foundations are in the dust,
> who can be crushed like a moth!
> They are smashed to pieces from dawn to dusk; unnoticed, they perish forever.” (Job 4:18-20)

In this passage Eliphaz is speaking about how we as earthly creatures are incomparable to God’s heavenly servants since our “foundations are in the dust” (Job 4:19) or rather we are mortal beings created from dust. That said really my point here with referencing this passage is that the Book of Job says humanity “are smashed to pieces from dawn to dusk; unnoticed, they perish forever.” (Job 4:20) Therefore you cannot say that the Book of Job is talking about earthly bodies and not souls. This is because the whole concept of a soul is that the soul is immaterial and immortal while on the other hand this passage says we as earthly and material beings made from dust “perish forever” (Job 4:20) after we die. In other words life does not continue after death and because of this fact immaterial and immortal souls once again do not exist.

Then as the Book of Job also says:

> “If I have sinned, what have I done to You, O watcher of mankind?
> Why have You made me Your target,
> so that I am a burden to You?
> Why do You not pardon my transgression and take away my iniquity?
> For soon I will lie down in the dust;
> You will seek me, but I will be no more.” (Job 7:20-21)

Once again in this passage the point here is that Job says to God that “For soon I will lie down in the dust; You will seek me, but I will be no more” (Job 7:20) which means that the author of the Book of Job believed that we are material and mortal beings that do not transcend the dust of the earth that we came from. In other words we are not immaterial and immortal beings or rather souls and instead we are literally dust so that after we die we return to the dust as our life ends so that we cease to exist.

Then as the Book of Psalms says:

> “Before the mountains were born
> or You brought forth the earth and the world,
> from everlasting to everlasting
> You are God.
>
> You return man to dust,
> saying, ‘Return, O sons of mortals.’” (Psalm 90:2-3)

Again we are not immortal beings that exist as immortal and immaterial souls. Instead we are mortal beings that will return to the dust of the earth just as the Psalm says. Furthermore it is important to point out that we are “sons of mortals” (Psalm 90:3) which means that we are mortal beings instead of immortal beings. This then relates to souls because once again souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial and because of this fact if we really were really immortal and immaterial souls then we would be immortal instead of mortal. Thus once again immortal and immaterial souls do not exist.

Then as the Book of Psalms also says:

> “When You hide Your face,
> they are terrified;
> when You take away their breath,
> they die and return to dust.” (Psalm 104:29)

First off the reference to “breath” (Psalm 104:29) in this verse is the same breath of life referenced in Genesis that I talked about previously. Thus by saying breath this Psalm is referring to breath of life or rather a person’s life force or what makes them alive. That said the main reason why I cite this verse is because this verse says that after God takes away our breath of life or life force we “die and return to dust.” (Psalm 104:29) This would of course be in direct contradiction with the concept of souls because souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial so that people continue to live on after their body dies. The idea here is that if we are really immortal and immaterial souls instead of mortal and material dust then we cannot “die and return to the dust.” (Psalm 104:29) Therefore once again we are not immortal and immaterial souls and instead we are mortal and we will return to dust when we die as our consciousness ceases.

Next as the Book of Ecclesiastes says:

> “I said to myself, ‘As for the sons of men, God tests them so that they may see for themselves that they are but beasts.’ For the fates of both men and beasts are the same: As one dies, so dies the other—they all have the same breath. Man has no advantage over the animals, since everything is futile. All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust.” (Ecclesiastes 3:18-20)

First off in a similar way with the previous passage from Genesis the reference to breath in this passage should properly be understood as life force or animating force which is just something that separates the living from the dead. This is why this passage says “As one dies, so dies the other—they all have the same breath” (Ecclesiastes 3:19) since the point here is that both humans and animals have the same life force or animating force so that both humans and animals die in the same way. Then in terms of my purpose in referencing this passage it should be obvious. The idea here is that “man has no advantage over the animals” (Ecclesiastes 3:19) since “the fates of both men and beasts are the same” (Ecclesiastes 3:19) so that “As one dies, so dies the other” (Ecclesiastes 3:19) as “All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust.” (Ecclesiastes 3:20) Therefore because of this we do not have immortal and immaterial souls that transcend our material bodies. Instead “both men and beasts are the same” (Ecclesiastes 3:19) so that “All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust.” (Ecclesiastes 3:20)

Now the reason why I say this is because the popular conception of the soul is that of an immortal and immaterial essence that transcends the material world which would enable a person to survive the death of their body so that they can continue to live on forever. However in reality we do not have immaterial and immortal souls since we are not immaterial and immortal beings like God is. Therefore because of this face we as people “return to dust” (Ecclesiastes 3:20) when we die in the same way that animals “return to dust” (Ecclesiastes 3:20) when they die. Really there is zero difference between the lives we have and the lives that animals have. This is why I keep on reiterating what a soul is supposed to be since the idea of immortal and immaterial souls that transcend our material body and world is something that stands in complete contradiction to the biblical truth that “All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust.” (Ecclesiastes 3:20) Therefore once again immortal and immaterial souls do not exist.

Next as the Book of Ezekiel says:

> “The hand of the LORD was upon me, and He brought me out by His Spirit and set me down in the middle of the valley, and it was full of bones. He led me all around among them, and I saw a great many bones on the floor of the valley, and indeed, they were very dry.
>
> Then He asked me, ‘Son of man, can these bones come to life?’
>
> ‘O Lord GOD,’ I replied, ‘only You know.’
>
> And He said to me, ‘Prophesy concerning these bones and tell them, ‘Dry bones, hear the word of the LORD! This is what the Lord GOD says to these bones: I will cause breath to enter you, and you will come to life. I will attach tendons to you and make flesh grow upon you and cover you with skin. I will put breath within you so that you will come to life. Then you will know that I am the LORD.’’
>
> So I prophesied as I had been commanded. And as I prophesied, there was suddenly a noise, a rattling, and the bones came together, bone to bone. As I looked on, tendons appeared on them, flesh grew, and skin covered them; but there was no breath in them.
>
> Then He said to me, ‘Prophesy to the breath; prophesy, son of man, and tell the breath that this is what the Lord GOD says: Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe into these slain, so that they may live!’
>
> So I prophesied as He had commanded me, and the breath entered them, and they came to life and stood on their feet—a vast army.
>
> Then He said to me, ‘Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. Look, they are saying, ‘Our bones are dried up, and our hope has perished; we are cut off.’
>
> Therefore prophesy and tell them that this is what the Lord GOD says: ‘O My people, I will open your graves and bring you up from them, and I will bring you back to the land of Israel. Then you, My people, will know that I am the LORD, when I open your graves and bring you up from them. I will put My Spirit in you and you will live, and I will settle you in your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken, and I will do it, declares the LORD.’’” (Ezekiel 37:1-14)

In this passage God tells Ezekiel to prophesy concerning the future resurrection of the dead where God will raise those who have died so that they are given new breath or rather new life. Then since God says “I will put breath within you so that you will come to life” (Ezekiel 37:6) this would of course mean that we do not have immortal and immaterial souls that allow us to continue to live after our body dies and instead we are mortal and material so that when we die will be dead. This is because if immortal and immaterial souls exist then the concept of the resurrection where God will raise us from the dead loses all meaning since by definition immortal and immaterial souls cannot die and they continue to live. This is actually ultimately the biggest problem with the popular conception of the soul. Really the idea of immortal and immaterial souls not only devalues the resurrection based on the idea that since souls are immortal we cannot actually die but it makes the ultimate future we have to look forward to in the new earth something to dread.

Now this may not make sense but souls are supposed to be immaterial and immortal essences that transcend the material world in which we find ourselves in. Thus my point here is that if our material world that is filled with death is worse than heaven where immaterial and immortal souls of the faithful go when their bodies die then why would anyone want to be resurrected in the resurrection? This is ultimately why the final end times hope for Christians as evolved from the new earth and the resurrection that the Book of Revelation and the Bible actually talk about to what people call going to heaven today which is something that is only found in a completely metaphorical description in the Book of Revelation. For instance if you ask people today the vast majority of them will probably not even be aware of the resurrection and instead they will just believe that we are supposed to go to heaven when we die and that is it. This is because like I said the idea of immaterial and immortal souls makes the resurrection not only lose all meaning but also makes the resurrection less desirable than living in heaven as an immortal and immaterial being. So really this is why the resurrection and the new earth have been replaced with heaven in popular false Christian doctrine today.

That said obviously the popular false Christian doctrines of souls and heaven are wrong so that instead of going to heaven as immortal and immaterial souls when we die we will return to dust when we die so that we cease to exist. However this should not worry you because if you are faithful to God then He "will put breath within you so that you will come to life" (Ezekiel 37:6) during the resurrection so that you will live again.

Next as a final point with regards to the Old Testament it is important to talk about what Sheol, sometimes translated hell in the Old Testament, is and what it is representative of. This because oftentimes in an effort to demonstrate that immortal and immaterial souls exist in the Old Testament people like to say that since the Bible talks about people descending into Sheol that therefore immortal and immaterial souls exist because how else would someone descend into Sheol? Now this might sound like a valid argument to you but the problem is that Sheol is not a real place that exists. Instead the word translated as Sheol should be translated and understood as the grave in most contexts or sometimes the ground or earth in other contexts because the vast majority of people in the ancient world were buried in a hole in the ground. Then because Sheol is really the grave the word translated as Sheol can also metaphorically mean death in contexts that suggest a metaphorical meaning is intended. Now you may doubt this meaning so consider the following passages.

As the Book of Genesis says:

> "His father recognized it and said, 'It is my son's robe! A vicious animal has devoured him. Joseph has surely been torn to pieces!' Then Jacob tore his clothes, put sackcloth around his waist, and mourned for his son many days. All his sons and daughters tried to comfort him, but he refused to be comforted. 'No,' he said. 'I will go down to Sheol mourning for my son.' So his father wept for him." (Genesis 37:33-35)

In this passage it should be quite obvious that the author is not talking about Sheol as a literal place that exists and instead they are talking about the grave. This is because Jacob is saying that he will go down to the grave mourning for his son or rather that he will mourn for his son until the day he dies and is buried in the ground.

Then as the Book of First Samuel says:

> "The LORD brings death and gives life; He brings down to Sheol and raises up." (1 Samuel 2:6)

In this verse Sheol once again actually refers to the grave since the purpose of this verse is to say that "The LORD brings death and gives life" (1 Samuel 2:6) as it says. Now you might say that this does not undeniably mean that Sheol is not an actual place that departed immaterial and immortal souls go to when their bodies die. However this is not the case because the whole popular conception of the soul is that of an immaterial and immortal essence that continues to live and have life after the body it occupies dies. This would then be in direct contradiction to "The LORD brings death and gives life" (1 Samuel 2:6) because if immortal and immaterial souls exist then we do not actually die when our bodies die.

But then what does "raises up" (1 Samuel 2:6) in this verse refer to then? Well you see this is a reference to the resurrection where God will resurrect the righteous in the resurrection of life so that we can live with Him in the new earth. The point here is that since God is all powerful He can raise anyone He wishes from the dead so that they can live again. This is then another reason why immaterial and immortal souls are completely nonsensical with respect to this passage since as I said before the resurrection loses all meaning if you accept the existence of immaterial and immortal souls.

Then as the Book of Psalms says:

> "For there is no mention of You in death; who can praise You from Sheol?" (Psalm 6:5)

First off just like with the previous passages the word translated as Sheol here really should be translated and understood as the grave. Then if you doubt what I have said about Sheol not being an actual place that departed immaterial and immortal souls go to after they die then consider this verse. For instance why does this verse ask who can praise God "from Sheol" (Psalm 6:5) if immaterial and immortal souls that continue to be conscious descend into Sheol after the death of the body? Furthermore why does this verse say "there is no mention of You in death" (Psalm 6:5) with respect to God? I mean if we are really immaterial and immortal souls and not material and mortal beings then after our bodies die we would continue to be conscious. Then if we continue to be conscious then we could of course continue to think about and praise God as immaterial and immortal souls. However this verse directly states and asks "For there is no mention of You in death; who can praise You from Sheol?" (Psalm 6:5) This is of course a direct contradiction with the concept of immortal and immaterial souls.

Then as the Book of Proverbs says:

> "Do not withhold discipline from a child;
> although you strike him with a rod, he will not die.
> Strike him with a rod,
> and you will deliver his soul from Sheol."
> (Proverbs 23:13-14)

Now at first you may take the fact that this verse says soul as undeniable evidence that souls in fact exist. However this is not the case because the word translated as soul here should not be translated as soul. This is because the Hebrew word falsely translated as soul here is nephesh (transliteration) and instead it should be translated as life in this context. You may doubt this but the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) is only translated as soul less than half of the time in popular translations. Then in terms of the other times it is translated it is mostly translated as life or person. That said I am not going to go into every usage of the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) in order to show that it should not be translated as soul anywhere. This is because as you have already seen with the whole "For dust you are, and to dust you shall return" (Genesis 3:19) the Bible does not say we are immaterial and immortal souls and instead it says we are material and mortal beings.

For instance as an example the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) is actually used in Genesis as "Then the LORD God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed the breath of life into his nostrils, and the man became a living being." (Genesis 2:7) The word translated as being here is the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) and to claim that it should be translated as soul here is absurd which is why it is not translated a soul. Now I say translating it as soul would be absurd because the whole idea of immaterial and immortal souls is that they do not need a body to have life because they have life independent of our material world. However here in Genesis the point is that God created Adam and then animated him into a living being through breathing life into him. This means that Adam is not an immaterial and immortal soul and instead Adam is a material and mortal being.

Alright so you may doubt all this but this is why I decided to quote this passage from Proverbs since it is plainly obvious that the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) does not mean soul here.

To quote the passage again:

> "Do not withhold discipline from a child;
> although you strike him with a rod, he will not die.
> Strike him with a rod,
> and you will deliver his soul from Sheol."
> (Proverbs 23:13-14)

First off just like with the previous passages the word translated as Sheol should be translated and understood as the grave. Then based on what I said above the word translated as soul should be translated and understood as life. Now you may doubt these two facts but these meanings are self evident from the proverb in question. For instance the point of this proverb is to encourage parents to punish their kids when they do something incredibly stupid and dangerous because although you might find beating your kid abhorrent it is far better to teach your kid a lesson so that they do not repeat their mistakes than it is to let them make a grave mistake in the future that will deliver their life into the grave so that they die.

For instance imagine you are alive two to three thousand years ago and you have a kid and they like running off into the wilderness far away from home in order to go play even though you tried telling them how dangerous it is due to the lions, yes lions were around in ancient Israel even though they are extinct in the region today, and questionable people looking to capture slaves to sell. In this case it is far better for you to beat your kid with a rod after they run off so that they learn their lesson because the alternative is they never learn their lesson until they become lion food or sold as a slave to a foreign nation. Really the idea here is that the pain of disciplining your kid with a rod is temporary and if you do not withhold discipline then you can help make sure they do not make a fatal mistake in the future. Therefore you can clearly see why I said the Hebrew word nephesh (transliteration) should not be translated as soul here and instead it should be translated as life. Then you can also see why Sheol should once again be understood as the grave and not a literal place.

Then as the Book of Ecclesiastes says:

> "Whatever you find to do with your hands, do it with all your might, for in Sheol, where you are going, there is no work or planning or knowledge or wisdom." (Ecclesiastes 9:10)

In this verse Sheol should undeniably not be seen as a place where departed immaterial and immortal souls go after their bodies die. This is because the whole point of this verse is to say that we should do what we can while we are alive for once we enter the grave or rather die "there is no work or planning or knowledge or wisdom." (Ecclesiastes 9:10) In other words after we die we cease to exist so that we are no longer conscious so that we can no longer know anything let alone do any work. If you doubt this then I would like to once again point out that if immaterial and immortal souls exist then consciousness would continue after the death of our bodies. This would then make it possible for "work or planning or knowledge or wisdom" (Ecclesiastes 9:10) to continue after we enter the grave or in this case Sheol. However this verse says that "there is no work or planning or knowledge or wisdom" to be found in Sheol or rather the grave. (Ecclesiastes 9:10) Therefore obviously this verse has the grave in mind or metaphorically death instead of a place where immortal and immaterial souls go.

Then as the Book of Isaiah says:

> "Therefore My people will go into exile for their lack of understanding;
> their dignitaries are starving
> and their masses are parched with thirst.
> Therefore Sheol enlarges its throat and opens wide its enormous jaws,
> and down go Zion's nobles and masses,
> her revelers and carousers!" (Isaiah 5:13-14)

In this passage God is saying that due to ancient Israel's disobedience that they will go into exile while the nobles and masses of Jerusalem itself will be swallowed up by Sheol or the grave. Thus the meaning of Sheol in this passage is the grave so that we should see "Zion's nobles and masses" (Isaiah 5:14) as being swallowed whole by the grave so that they die. Really once again my point here is that there is no reason to see Sheol as a literal place and instead it should be seen as the grave which is metaphorically representative of death in this passage.

Then as the Book of Jonah says:

> "From inside the fish, Jonah prayed to the LORD his God, saying: 'In my distress I called to the LORD, and He answered me.
>
> From the belly of Sheol I called for help, and You heard my voice.'" (Jonah 2:1-2)

In this passage obviously Jonah is not saying he is literally in a place called Sheol. Instead once again Sheol should be understood as the grave so that Jonah is saying from the belly of the grave "I called fro help" (Jonah 2:2) in this passage. The idea here is that Jonah recognizes that he cannot escape the stomach of the fish without God's help and without God's help he is already in the grave since he will soon be dead. Therefore once again there is no real reason to see Sheol here as being a literal place.

Alright so my point so far with all this with regards to Sheol up to this point is that Sheol is not a literal place where immortal and immaterial souls go after their bodies die. Instead the word translated as Sheol should really be translated and understood as the grave. That said there is an alternative meaning to Sheol where Sheol can be understood to mean the ground or the earth. The idea here is that since people were buried in holes in the ground when the Bible written the grave is basically synonymous with the ground since in this sense all those who die end up in the ground where they decay and turn back into dust.

As the Book of Numbers says:

> "Then Moses said, 'This is how you will know that the LORD has sent me to do all these things, for it was not my own doing: If these men die a natural death, or if they suffer the fate of all men, then the LORD has not sent me. But if the LORD brings about something unprecedented, and the earth opens its mouth and swallows them and all that belongs to them so that they go down alive into Sheol, then you will know that these men have treated the LORD with contempt.'
>
> As soon as Moses had finished saying all this, the ground beneath them split open, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them and their households—all Korah's men and all their possessions. They went down alive into Sheol with all they owned. The earth closed over them, and they vanished from the assembly.
>
> At their cries, all the people of Israel who were around them fled, saying, 'The earth may swallow us too!' And fire came forth from the LORD and consumed the 250 men who were offering the incense." (Numbers 16:28-35)

First off in this passage once again Sheol should be seen as the grave. This is because going "down alive into Sheol" (Numbers 16:30) is really just a way of saying that they will be buried alive in the earth. The idea here with this sign is that normally people need to bury the dead in a grave in the ground but Moses is saying that if "the earth opens its mouth and swallows them and all that belongs to them so that they go down alive into" (Numbers 16:30) the grave then the ancient Israelites will know that Korah and his men are rebelling against God by rebelling against Moses since the earth does not simply open up and bury people alive in a grave. That said although Sheol should be understood as the grave here my point is that due to the fact that people's graves are dug in the earth that there is an association between Sheol and the ground or the earth so that the ground or earth itself can be seen as part of Sheol.

Then as the Book of Isaiah says:

> "Again the LORD spoke to Ahaz, saying, 'Ask for a sign from the LORD your God, whether from the depths of Sheol or the heights of heaven.'" (Isaiah 7:10-11)

There are two possible ways to understand Sheol in this passage. The first is to see Sheol as being representative of the earth since the dead are buried in their graves in the earth. In this view then God would be saying that Ahaz can ask for any sign from the depths of the earth to the heights of heaven or the sky. In other words God is saying He is willing to perform any sign Ahaz can imagine. The second is that Sheol is being used to represent the grave or rather death. The idea here is that heaven is representative of life since it is the dwelling place of God who is immortal while Sheol is representative of death because it is the grave or the state of eternal nothingness that awaits all those who die. Thus the purpose of providing the range of from death to from life is just a way of saying that God is capable of producing any sign imaginable so that God is saying that Ahaz can ask for whatever sign he wishes. Thus there is really no good reason to see Sheol as being a literal place here.

Lastly with respect to Sheol it is actually possible to see Sheol as a literal place those who die go to as long as you take a completely literal reading of passages that are supposed to be read and understood as metaphorical.

As the Book of Job says:

> "Why then did You bring me from the womb?
> Oh, that I had died, and no eye had seen me!
> If only I had never come to be, but had been carried from the womb to the grave.
> Are my days not few?
> Withdraw from me, that I may have a little comfort,
> before I go—never to return— to a land of darkness and gloom,
> to a land of utter darkness, of deep shadow and disorder,
> where even the light is like darkness." (Job 10:18-22)

In this passage Job describes Sheol as being "a land of utter darkness" (Job 10:22) "where even the light is like darkness." (Job 10:22) Now you may think this would mean that Sheol is an actual place however this is not the case. Instead Job is describing Sheol or rather the grave or death as being a state where a person is so enveloped in darkness because they do not exist anymore since they are now dead. The idea here is that the ultimate form of darkness that exists is the nothingness that is nonexistence. Now you may doubt this but I would like to remind you what Job also said earlier on.

As the Book of Job says:

> "If I have sinned, what have I done to You, O watcher of mankind?
> Why have You made me Your target,
> so that I am a burden to You?
> Why do You not pardon my transgression and take away my iniquity?
> For soon I will lie down in the dust;
> You will seek me, but I will be no more." (Job 7:20-21)

My point here with this passage is that if Sheol really is a place where immortal and immaterial souls go after their bodies die then why does Job say "For soon I will lie down in the dust; You will seek me, but I will be no more" (Job 7:20-21) in this passage? I mean if people are really immortal and immaterial souls that descend into Sheol after death then how could Job "be no more" (Job 7:21) after death so that even God will not be able to find him without resurrecting him from the dead? Thus you either need to say that God holds no power of Sheol so that He cannot see those who enter it or that Sheol is the grave which is representative of eternal death and the darkness of nothingness. Now you may think the first option is at least possible however this is not the case since later on the Book of Job says "Sheol is naked before God" (Job 26:6) which means that God has power over Sheol or rather the grave or death itself. In other words God has the power to resurrect the dead since even the grave is powerless before God. Therefore this means that only the second option of Sheol being representative of eternal death and the darkness of the nothingness that is nonexistence is in view here.

Then as the Book of Isaiah says:

> "On the day that the LORD gives you rest from your pain and torment, and from the hard labor into which you were forced, you will sing this song of contempt against the king of Babylon: How the oppressor has ceased,
> and how his fury has ended!
> The LORD has broken the staff of the wicked, the scepter of the rulers.
> It struck the peoples in anger with unceasing blows;
> it subdued the nations in rage
> with relentless persecution.
> All the earth is at peace and at rest; they break out in song.
> Even the cypresses and cedars of Lebanon exult over you:
> 'Since you have been laid low,
> no woodcutter comes against us.'
>
> Sheol beneath is eager to meet you upon your arrival.
> It stirs the spirits of the dead to greet you—
> all the rulers of the earth.
> It makes all the kings of the nations
> rise from their thrones.
> They will all respond to you, saying, 'You too have become weak, as we are;
> you have become like us!'
> Your pomp has been brought down to Sheol,
> along with the music of your harps.
> Maggots are your bed
> and worms your blanket." (Isaiah 14:3-11)

So in this passage at first you may be tempted to say that Sheol is definitely a place where our immortal and immaterial souls go to after our body dies because this passage even says "the spirits of the dead will greet" (Isaiah 14:9) the king of Babylon in Sheol after he dies. However this is not the case. This is because the word translated as spirits of the dead here really should be translated and understood as the dead instead. Therefore the idea here is that this reference is highly figurative in the sense that the dead are not literally speaking because they are well dead and instead the passage is saying that even though the king of Babylon might be the most powerful person in the world today in the future he will die as all the other powerful kings in the past have because he is mortal. Now you may doubt this so that you take what this passage says concerning Sheol and the dead to be literal in nature so consider the following two points.

The first is that immediately before the dead speak to the king of Babylon "Even the cypresses and cedars of Lebanon" (Isaiah 14:8) speak and say "Since you have been laid low, no woodcutter comes against us." (Isaiah 14:8) Therefore unless you want to say that the trees will literally speak after the king of Babylon dies you cannot say that the dead will speak to the king of Babylon in Sheol or rather the grave. Really the purpose of the trees speaking is that "All the earth is at peace and at rest" (Isaiah 14:7) after the king of Babylon finally dies so that everyone, including the trees, celebrate. Of course the trees are metaphorically celebrating because trees are not conscious. Then likewise with the dead who are in Sheol or rather the grave they are not able to speak to the king of Babylon because they are not conscious because they are dead. Instead the purpose of the dead kings speaking is to show that although the king of Babylon may seem great and seemingly all powerful he is just a mortal and all mortals will die so that they end up in the grave.

Now if you still doubt this then consider the second point I have. At the end of this passage God tells Isaiah to say "Maggots are your bed and worms your blanket" (Isaiah 14:3-11) against the king of Babylon. My point here is that if the king of Babylon is really an immortal and immaterial soul that entered a literal place called Sheol after he died then maggots and worms cannot be his blanket. However if instead you take Sheol to be the grave then maggots and worms being the blanket of the king of Babylon makes sense because after someone dies and is buried their body decays as it is eaten by worms before it turns back into dust. With this you may say I am being hypocritical here however my point is that if you wish to take the whole passage literally then really the verse about maggots and worms does not make any sense. That said in my view just like with regards to the trees and the dead kings speaking having "Maggots are your bed and worms your blanket" (Isaiah 14:3-11) is really just a figurative way of saying that the dead lose everything they have when they die so that they are left with nothing. The idea here is that although in life the king of Babylon probably slept on a comfortable bed with fine blankets in death everything he has will be taken away from him. In other words your material wealth, success and greatness in life is irrelevant because in the end we all become worm food as we decay into the dust of the earth in the grave.

So my point with all this is that you cannot definitely say that Sheol is a real place where the departed immortal and immaterial souls of the dead go after their bodies die. Instead Sheol is best understood as being representative of the grave or death in the sense that it embodies what it means to die and be buried in the ground. This is why Sheol is used instead of the word for a grave since the intended meaning with the word is that of what awaits all mortals when we die. This is why I said Sheol should be understood as the grave rather than a grave since really the grave is a proper place. For instance if you were to tell someone you will go into a grave some day this has a different meaning than if you tell them you will go to the grave some day. In the first case you would be referring to the literal grave that you will be placed in while in the second case you would be using the grave as a metaphorical representation of dying and death so that you are talking about about going to the grave in general. This same idea is in view here with Sheol meaning the grave so that when Sheol or the grave is used it is really talking about the common fate all mortals share.

Then while still on the subject of Sheol, with respect to the New Testament and the references to Hades found in the New Testament really Hades means the same exact thing as Sheol in the Old Testament. This might be a bit confusing since the Greeks, at least those who did not believe in reincarnation, believed that Hades was a literal place where the departed souls of those who died go. However as you will soon see with respect to the word that many people translate as soul in the New Testament the New Testament does not place Greek philosophy or pagan religious concepts above the scriptures of the Old Testament. This fact can be seen in the usage of Hades in the New Testament where it is clear that Hades is perfectly synonymous with the grave just like Sheol is. Therefore in the New Testament you should read Hades as being the same as Sheol.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "And I tell you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades will not prevail against it." (Matthew 16:18)

First off the word translated as church is ekklésia (ἐκκλησία) and it really should be understood as an assembly or a group. This means that Jesus is not talking about a church as we see a church today and instead Jesus is talking about the assembly or group of all people who follow Him as the Christ. This is why Jesus says to Peter that He will build His assembly on him because Peter was the first person to confess Jesus as the Christ when he said "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." (Matthew 16:16) Thus the idea here is that by confessing Jesus as the Christ Peter becomes the first member of Jesus's assembly and the rock or foundation that the rest of the assembly will originate from or come after based on his example of confessing Jesus as the Christ. I talk more about this topic and verse later on in my chapter on Roman Catholicism in my part called Various Insights.

Then in terms of the meaning of "the gates of Hades will not prevail against it" (Matthew 16:18) in this verse all Jesus is saying is that the gates of the grave will not prevail against His assembly or group who confess that He is the Christ. In other words Jesus is saying that His assembly of faithful believers will not die out and instead they will still be around until the very end. Thus the idea here is that Hades is being used in the exact same way as Sheol is used in the previous passages I have quoted.

Then as the Book of Acts says:

> "Foreseeing this, David spoke about the resurrection of the Christ, that He was not abandoned to Hades, nor did His body see decay." (Acts 2:31)

In this verse the fact that Hades simply means the grave should be plainly obvious. The purpose of this verse is that the author is saying that David spoke about how God would not abandon Jesus to the grave or death so that His body decays and instead God would resurrect Him from the dead.

Then as the Book of Revelation says:

> "I was dead, and behold, now I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of Death and of Hades." (Revelation 1:18)

By saying He holds the key of death in this verse Jesus is saying that He has power over death so that He can give eternal life to those He chooses so that they will never die. Then by saying He holds the key of Hades Jesus is saying that He has power over the grave so that He can resurrect those He chooses from death so that they will live again. Therefore there is really no reason to see Hades as being a literal place here just like with Sheol.

As an aside I would also like to point something out with respect to Jesus saying "I was dead, and behold, now I am alive forever and ever!" (Revelation 1:18) My point here is that ultimately if immaterial and immortal souls exist then this verse cannot be true. This is because immaterial and immortal souls are by definition immortal and a soul is by definition the essence of a person that is responsible for a person's consciousness. Therefore if we have immaterial and immortal souls then we cannot actually die. Instead only our body can stop functioning at which point our soul would be freed from the shackles of its body so that it can then go to heaven to be with God or sent to hell at least according to popular belief. So really this means with respect to Jesus that if you believe in immaterial and immortal souls then really Jesus did not die and instead His soul was simply relocated to a different location so that His life could continue elsewhere as an immortal soul. On the other hand Jesus not only says says "I was dead" (Revelation 1:18) in this passage which directly contradicts the idea of immortal souls that cannot die but He even goes on to say "now I am alive forever and ever" (Revelation 1:18) as a point to celebrate. This would of course make zero sense if we say immaterial and immortal souls are real since souls would by definition be "alive forever and ever!" (Revelation 1:18) Really immaterial and immortal souls make about as much sense as the false doctrine of the trinity with respect to the death and resurrection of Jesus. All that said this is just something I wanted to point out with respect to this verse so that you can think about it before I go over all the so-called references to souls in the New Testament.

Then lastly as the Book of Revelation also says:

> "Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14)

In this verse death refers to the concept of death itself and then Hades refers to the grave. The idea here is that after the resurrection of the dead, with the faithful being resurrected to eternal life in the new earth and the unfaithful being resurrected to the second death in the Lake of Fire, that God will destroy the concept of death and the grave for the faithful so that we will have eternal life or immortality. In other words we will no longer have to worry about dying or going to the grave because God will give us the gift of eternal life and He will never take it away from us.

Now you might doubt this meaning of Hades here and in the previous verses so I would like to demonstrate why Hades being the grave is undeniably correct. Really it comes down to hell. Now of course hell does not actually exist and instead Revelation says the punishment for the unfaithful "is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) In other words the unfaithful will be annihilated at some point, it may not be instant, so that they will not suffer eternally. Alright so the problem with respect to hell and Hades is that if you want to say hell exists then the Lake of Fire in Revelation must refer to hell. However this verse also references Hades which based on passages like the Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus is also believed to be hell as well.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "In Hades, where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham from afar, with Lazarus by his side." (Luke 16:23)

Now this problem here is that the Lake of Fire and Hades both cannot be hell because as the original verse from Revelation says "Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) I mean how could Hades or hell be thrown into the Lake of Fire or hell? Then even if we assume that Hades is different from the Lake of Fire so that the Lake of Fire is hell then how could the place called Hades be thrown into the place called hell? For instance how can one place be thrown into another? But like I said the real issue is that both Hades and the Lake of Fire are believed to be references to hell so throwing hell into hell is just completely nonsensical. So what does this mean? Well obviously this means that either Hades is hell or that the Lake of Fire is hell since they both cannot be hell. Then since the Book of Revelation is very explicit about the Lake of Fire being the punishment for the unfaithful this would of course mean you cannot say Hades is hell. But of course as I explain later on hell does not exist and it is a false doctrine and instead the unfaithful will face annihilation or "the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) That said really the best way to resolve this issue is to not say that Hades is an actual place or worse hell itself and to instead say that Hades is the grave in the same way that Sheol is the grave.

But what about the Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus from the Gospel of Luke and the reference to Hades there? Well although I talk about this so-called reference to hell later on when I discuss the fact that hell or eternal conscious torment does not exist and will not exist it would be helpful to talk about it a bit now.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "Now there was a rich man dressed in purple and fine linen, who lived each day in joyous splendor. And a beggar named Lazarus lay at his gate, covered with sores and longing to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores.
>
> One day the beggar died and was carried by the angels to Abraham's side. And the rich man also died and was buried. In Hades, where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham from afar, with Lazarus by his side.
>
> So he cried out, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue. For I am in agony in this fire.'
>
> But Abraham answered, 'Child, remember that during your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things. But now he is comforted here, while you are in agony. And besides all this, a great chasm has been fixed between us and you, so that even those who wish cannot cross from here to you, nor can anyone cross from there to us.'
>
> 'Then I beg you, father,' he said, 'send Lazarus to my father's house, for I have five brothers. Let him warn them, so that they will not also end up in this place of torment.'
>
> But Abraham replied, 'They have Moses and the prophets; let your brothers listen to them.'
>
> 'No, father Abraham,' he said, 'but if someone is sent to them from the dead, they will repent.'
>
> Then Abraham said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets, they will not be persuaded even if someone rises from the dead.'" (Luke 16:19-31)

First off the Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus is a metaphorical story about how you cannot change anything from Hades or the grave because once you die and enter the grave you are dead and it is too late. Then the reason why the rich man sees Lazarus with Abraham is because Lazarus was faithful to God so he will be rewarded. Then of course the reason why the rich man is in agony is because he was not faithful to God so he will be punished. The idea here is that if you die in your faithfulness then you will die with the expectation to be rewarded by God while if you die in your unfaithfulness then you will die with the expectation to be punished by God. This is why the punishment for the rich man and the reward for Lazarus take place after they die in the story because it is really about the expectation about what will happen at the final judgment at the end of the age when all the dead are either punished or rewarded.

If you want to dispute this then consider what Revelation says with regards the final the judgment. In Revelation the dead are to be resurrected where the faithful will be given eternal life in the paradise of the new earth while on the other hand the unfaithful will be resurrected to be cast into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. Now the key point here is that the unfaithful will only be cast into the Lake of Fire after the resurrection. This means that Lazarus cannot literally be in the Lake of Fire in the parable since he would have to wait until after the resurrection at the end of the age to be sent to the Lake of Fire. Therefore this story should not be taken literally and instead it should be viewed entirely metaphorically. But like I said I talk more about this parable later on when I talk about the fact that hell does not exist.

Therefore as a result of all this clearly Hades is not some sort of underworld in the New Testament let alone hell and instead it is representative of the grave in the same way that Sheol is representative of the grave in the Old Testament. Then because of this fact you cannot make the claim that immaterial and immortal souls exist on the basis that the Bible supposedly says our so-called souls go to Sheol in the Old Testament and Hades in the New Testament when we die.

But what about the rest of the Old Testament? Well you see the thing is the greatest evidence against immortal and immaterial souls from the Old Testament is the complete lack of evidence for immortal and immaterial souls to be found in the Old Testament. Really the only way to see the existence of the soul in the Old Testament is to selectively mistranslate and misinterpret the Old Testament so that you try to make it say what you want it to say. Of course I could go through these erroneous interpretations but really this is not needed since those who believe in the existence of souls essentially entirely look towards the New Testament for their false doctrine. Their main point is that sure the Old Testament really does not undeniably point to the existence of souls but since the best way to interpret Scripture is Scripture and the New Testament so-called undeniably points to the existence of souls this means that as long as they can so-called prove the existence of souls from the New Testament then the absence of evidence from the Old Testament is not relevant. Now my point here is that since those who believe in the existence of souls basically entirely look towards the New Testament to support their belief then really this means I do not have to go through additional passages from the Old Testament to prove my point that souls do not exist. Not only that but going through additional passages would not even be helpful. Instead all that is necessary is to demonstrate that the concept of immortal and immaterial souls cannot be found in the New Testament no matter how hard you look and that all supposed references to souls are ministrations and misinterpretations.

Now you might think I am not being completely fair here by discounting the rest of the Old Testament. However I have already demonstrated that from the perspective of the Old Testament we are dust and to dust we shall return. This of course means that we are not immaterial and immortal souls and instead we are material and mortal beings. That said since obviously the Old Testament was around in Jesus's day the best way to demonstrate the nonexistence of souls in the Old Testament is to once again talk about the resurrection in relation to what the Pharisees and Sadducees believed in the early first century AD.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "Then some of the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to question Him. 'Teacher,' they said, 'Moses wrote for us that if a man's brother dies and leaves a wife but no children, the man is to marry his brother's widow and raise up offspring for him. Now there were seven brothers. The first one married a wife, but died childless. Then the second and the third married the widow, and in the same way all seven died, leaving no children. And last of all, the woman died. So then, in the resurrection, whose wife will she be? For all seven were married to her.'
>
> Jesus answered, 'The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage. But those who are considered worthy to share in the age to come and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage. In fact, they can no longer die, because they are like the angels. And since they are sons of the resurrection, they are sons of God.
>
> Even Moses demonstrates that the dead are raised, in the passage about the burning bush. For he calls the Lord 'the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive.'
>
> Some of the scribes answered, 'Teacher, You have spoken well!' And they did not dare to question Him any further." (Luke 20:27-40)

To begin the Pharisees believed in the idea of the resurrection of the dead where sometime in the future after God reigns in all those who rebel against Him on earth God would resurrect all those who were faithful to Him to eternal life so that they can share in the eternal Kingdom of God here on earth. This belief in and the concept of the resurrection was a later creation in the later books in the Old Testament and it was brought about because generation after generation would come and go without the eternal Kingdom of God arriving on earth. The idea here is that if the eternal Kingdom of God arrives in the future for those who are alive when it arrives then really it is not fair for those who were faithful to God who died in the past. Thus the concept of the resurrection was created as a way for all of God's faithful people from the beginning of the age to the end of the age to share in the future eternal Kingdom of God. This is then what the Pharisees believed in and looked forward to happening.

Then in terms of the Sadducees they did not believe in the resurrection of the dead. But why? Well you see what we see as the Old Testament today was not a singular book that was accepted as Scripture in the early first century AD. Instead it was divided in two main sections called the Law and the Prophets. The Law refers to the Books of Moses or Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. Then the Prophets referd to all the other books of the Old Testament outside of the books of the Law. When combined together these two sections were called the Law and the Prophets.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "In everything, then, do to others as you would have them do to you. For this is the essence of the Law and the Prophets." (Matthew 7:12)

So how does this relate to the Sadducees and the resurrection? Well you see the Law and the Prophets were not regarded as having the same authority even by the Pharisees. Instead although the Pharisees accepted the Prophets as authoritative they still considered the Law or the Books of Moses to be of greater authority so that if there was a contradiction between something in the Prophets with something in the Law then they would accept what the Law says to be the definitive authority. Now in terms of what the Sadducees believed really the Sadducees completely rejected the Prophets as authoritative. This is important because this is why the Sadducees then did not believe in the resurrection of the dead. As I just said above with respect to the Pharisees the idea of the resurrection of the dead was a later development that took its final form in the later writings of the Prophets. This means that the idea of the resurrection was not directly in the Law or the Books of Moses. So this is why the Sadducees rejected the idea of the resurrection of the dead. So what did the Sadducees believe instead? Well really they believed that the promises of blessings and curses from the Law applied to this life only and that there was nothing to look forward to after death because this life is all that we have so that when we die we cease to exist forever. Therefore it goes without saying that the Sadducees definitely did not believe in immortal and immaterial souls. But if you have doubts about this the consider the following.

Now in the passage above from the Gospel of Luke the Sadducees set out to demonstrate why they believe the resurrection of the dead is an absurd belief by giving a hypothetical example where a woman is married to seven men in her lifetime while having an equal level of commitment to each man. The Sadducee's point here is that if the resurrection were to happen then each of the seven men would want to be married to their wife because from the perspective of each man the woman is their wife alone. Thus the idea here is that the Sadducees considered the idea of the resurrection and hence life after death to be contradictory in nature since not everyone dies at the same time which results in a mess in terms of relationships. This is why the Sadducees certainly did not believe in immortal and immaterial souls because their same argument here about a woman being married to seven men applies to the concept of souls as well. For instance if a woman was married to seven men who all died then who would she be with in heaven as an immortal and immaterial soul? So now you can see why I said the Sadducees definitely did not believe in immortal and immaterial souls.

Alright so now to explain Jesus's response. After the Sadducees gave this hypothetical example of the woman being married to seven men Jesus responds by saying that "those who are considered worthy to share in the age to come and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage." (Luke 20:35) By saying this Jesus resolves the conflict by saying that the woman in the example will not be married to any of the seven men because marriage will be abolished entirely so that instead the faithful will be "like the angels." (Luke 20:36) This response would then of course resolve the issues the Sadducees brought up. Next Jesus quotes from the Law or the Books of Moses in order to demonstrate that the concept of the resurrection can be found in the Law. Of course Jesus references the Law because the Sadducees reject the authority of the Prophets where the resurrection can be definitely found.

As Jesus says:

> "Even Moses demonstrates that the dead are raised, in the passage about the burning bush. For he calls the Lord 'the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:37-38)

Jesus's point here is that if the resurrection is not going to happen so that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are dead forever then why does Moses call God "the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob" (Luke 20:37) in the Law? The idea here is that God "is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:38) In other words by saying that God is "the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob" (Luke 20:37) Moses is indirectly saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob will live again in the future because God "is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:38) Really the point here that Jesus is making is that of the power of God. What I mean here is that by denying the possibility of the resurrection and trying to show how absurd it supposedly is the Sadducees are actually denying the power of God to resurrect the dead. In other words Sadducees probably believed that God did not actually have the power to resurrect the dead and that instead He was only the God of the living. This is then why Jesus's response works because Jesus then acknowledges that God "is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive" (Luke 20:38) which is a way of acknowledging that yes God is the God of the living but since God is God "all are alive" (Luke 20:38) from God's point of view. If you doubt what I have said here then consider the version of this story found in the Gospel of Matthew.

As Jesus says:

> "You are mistaken because you do not know the Scriptures or the power of God." (Matthew 22:29)

In this verse Jesus tells the Sadducees that they do not know "the power of God." (Matthew 22:29) This is one of the reasons why I said that the Sadducees probably did not believe that God had the power to resurrect the dead. Now you might be skeptical of this but you need to understand that people had different concepts of gods in ancient times. For instances the pagan Greek false deities were not omnipotent or omniscient and instead they only had a limited amount of power over a limited area. This would mean that the Sadducees probably thought of God along these lines where they believed that God had power over the living but once a person died then God would not longer have power over them. Then of course this would be why Jesus says they do not know "the power of God" (Matthew 22:29) since the argument that Jesus is making here is that God's power is unlimited rather than limited. Then this would also be why Jesus says God "is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive" (Luke 20:38) since God has power over those who are alive as well as those who are dead.

So does this then demonstrate that immortal and immaterial souls are real? Well no it does not. You see the point that Jesus is bringing up is that death is not eternal so that those who die are outside of God's authority. Instead God's authority is limitless so that even those who are dead can be brought back to life and it is because of this fact that "for to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:38) The best way to think about this is in terms of an author writing a series of novels. For instance imagine you are writing a novel and at some point in your story you make one of your favorite characters die at the hands of one of the antagonists. Does this mean that this character is dead? Well really this is a complicated question. For instance in terms of the perspective of the characters in your novel the answer would be yes that the character is now dead. However since you are the omnipotent and omniscient author who wrote the book from your point of view the character is not dead. This is because from your point of view you see the entire character's life in your novel all at once from an omniscient perspective so that even if the character dies in the novel they are still alive in your mind. If this is confusing then think about it from the perspective of reading novels or comics other people have written where a character that you like dies in the novel or comic. Sure from the perspective of the other characters in the novel or comic the character you like is dead but from your perspective as an omniscient reader the character you like and everything they have done and everything they are still lives on inside your mind so that from your point of view the character is still alive. Really the only way for a character in a novel or comic to die from your perspective is for you forget about them.

So how does this relate to the resurrection? Well the idea here is that if you are the author of a novel and you write the death of a character you like then since as the author you are omnipotent and omniscient in comparison to the novel you have the ability to resurrect the character whenever you want. For instance in the latest novel in your series you can resurrect all the characters that you like who were killed in the previous novel because from your perspective all characters that you have created are alive to you. Now you probably guess how this relates to God and the resurrection of the dead and Jesus's argument by referencing the Law. The point here is that God is the author of our novel or the universe and because of this fact anyone who dies is not actually dead from God's perspective. Instead everyone is alive to God even those who are dead from our perspective because God is both omnipotent and omniscient. Now this does not mean that immortal and immaterial souls are real because from our perspective when we die we are dead and cease to exist until God raises us from the dead by writing us back in the story He has created or rather the universe He as created.

Now if you doubt all of this so that you still wish to hold to the existence of immaterial and immortal souls that allow our consciousness to continue after the death of our body then consider the idea of the resurrection itself. What I am saying is that by saying "in the resurrection from the dead" (Luke 20:35) Jesus is acknowledging that immaterial and immortal souls do not exist and that instead when our body dies we die so that our consciousness ceases. I mean if immaterial and immortal souls exist so that we are not mortal and material beings and instead we are immaterial and immortal souls then the concepts of death and the resurrection both become meaningless. This is because if we really are immortal and immaterial souls then by definition we are actually immortal and cannot actually die. Instead when our body dies our immortal and immaterial soul is freed so that our consciousness leaves our former body and goes somewhere else. Then likewise with the resurrection if we are actually immortal and immaterial souls then by definition there cannot be a resurrection and instead there can only be a change in location. For instance instead of the dead being raised at the end of the age really what would happen is that immortal and immaterial souls who are conscious in heaven would be given the opportunity to occupy a new material body. Thus this is not a resurrection and instead this would be a change of form.

All that said really my point here with all of this is that by trying to demonstrate the idea of the resurrection in an indirect manner Jesus is essentially saying that the Old Testament or really the Law does not support the idea of immortal and immaterial souls. This is because if the concept of immaterial and immortal souls were present in the Law then rather than referencing Moses and the burning bush as a way of saying that God "is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive" (Luke 20:38) Jesus would have instead referenced the supposed references to immortal and immaterial souls that do not actually exist. Therefore because of this fact this exchange between the Sadducees and Jesus demonstrates that there is no real evidence for the existence of immaterial and immortal souls to be found in the Old Testament. This is then why people look towards the New Testament for the existence of the soul since as I have thoroughly demonstrated the soul is absent from the Old Testament. Therefore it is time to move on from talking about the Old Testament and move on to what the New Testament says with regards to the supposed existence of immaterial and immortal souls.

Alright so believe it or not but the New Testament actually does not refer to souls once. Now I know what you are probably thinking that I must either be joking or that I am so completely delusional to the point that I am simply ignoring reality. However this is not the case as you will soon see. First off the Greek word translated as soul in the New Testament is psuché (ψυχή). So therefore souls exist right? Well no not exactly. You see the word psuché (ψυχή) is only translated as soul or souls less than half of the time and in the other usages of the word it is translated as life, lives, person, beings or something similar. But what about the times it is translated as soul? Well you see really the times psuché (ψυχή) is translated as soul the word really does not definitely mean soul. In fact I would even go as far to say in basically all translations of the word psuché (ψυχή) as soul the word life, person or being works as a better translation in that it makes more sense so that it is in line with what the authors of the New Testament were wring about and believed. Of course later on I demonstrate this fact by going through the major usages of the word of psuché (ψυχή) in the New Testament.

But first what does psuché (ψυχή) actually mean in terms of the word itself? For instance why do translators translate it as both life and soul? Alright so in terms of the word itself psuché (ψυχή) originates from the word psyxō (ψύχω) which means to blow. Now since I previously went over what Genesis says concerning the creation of man you can probably guess what psuché (ψυχή) means. If you do not remember then in Genesis God created man or Adam and gave him life by breathing or blowing life into his nostrils. Therefore in the context of the New Testament and the Greek Old Testament or the Septuagint the most literal translation of psuché (ψυχή) is breath or rather breath of life or the animating principle that gives us life.

At this point you may think that this then means that psuché (ψυχή) means soul because of course our soul is what gives us life. However this is not correct from a biblical perspective or from the perspective of the ancient Israelites. Sure you can say this perspective is correct according ancient Greek philosophy or more specifically Plato's idea of the soul but this is not what the Bible means. Instead breath of life or psuché (ψυχή) in the Bible refers to a being that is living because a living being has breath because it breathes while a dead being does not have breath because it does not breath. All this is then why psuché (ψυχή) is best translated and understood to mean life, person or being. The idea here is that if you have psuché (ψυχή) or breath of life then you have life. Then someone who has psuché (ψυχή) is a person and a creature that has psuché (ψυχή) is a being.

Now you know why I had to explain the Old Testament's perspective on life and what it means to be alive as a mortal and material being that was born from the dust and that will return from the dust. This is because if you do not understand the fact that we are dust that has been temporarily given the breath of life so that we will return to the dust as we cease to exist when we die then you will tend to view the word psuché (ψυχή) through the lens of ancient Greek philosophy rather than through what the Bible says. Therefore as a result of all this now you know why I said the most correct translation of psuché (ψυχή) in terms of the intended meaning by the authors of the New Testament would be life, person or being in basically all instances of the word.

Alright since what I have said so far with respect to the true meaning of psuché (ψυχή) is quite controversial in the sense that if you believe in the existence of immaterial and immortal souls then you will almost certainly intensely disagree with me so that you take psuché (ψυχή) to mean soul in at least some cases instead of life, person or being. Then because of this it is now time to go over the usage of psuché (ψυχή) in the New Testament to demonstrate that the meaning of psuché (ψυχή) being life, person or being is the correct and intended meaning that the authors of the New Testament had in mind. In order to do this there are two different sets of passages to go over with respect to psuché (ψυχή). The first set of passages is where psuché (ψυχή) is correctly translated as life, person or being. The reason why going over these passages is necessary is because unless the fact that psuché (ψυχή) is frequently translated as life, person or being is pointed out to you then you will almost certainly be unaware that the word translated as soul in the New Testament can be translated as life, person or being. Furthermore by going over the instances where psuché (ψυχή) undeniably means life, person or being so that it cannot mean soul under any circumstance you will start to become more familiar with the true meaning of the word so that the next set of passages will make more sense to you so that you do not see psuché (ψυχή) as only meaning soul. Then in the second set of passages I go over what you have been patiently waiting for throughout this entire comment which is the main supposed references to souls in the New Testament where psuché (ψυχή) is translated as soul by most translators. After each of the passages in this second set of passages I of course go over why each instance of psuché (ψυχή) should not be translated or understood as soul and why life, person or being is much better way to translate and understand the word in the passage. Alright so without further delay it is time to begin the first set of passages where psuché (ψυχή) is not translated as soul and cannot be understood to mean soul under any circumstance.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "After Herod died, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt. 'Get up!' he said. 'Take the Child and His mother and go to the land of Israel, for those seeking the Child's life are now dead.'" (Matthew 2:19-20)

In this passage the word translated as life towards the end of the second verse is the Greek word psuché (ψυχή). In this instance it should be clear that psuché (ψυχή) cannot be translated or understood to mean soul here. Then once again by soul I am talking about the popular conception of the soul or immortal and immaterial souls. The reason why I keep clarifying this meaning of what a soul is supposed to be to the point that you are probably sick of it is because without emphasizing this meaning it is easy to insert souls into the Bible by not translating psuché (ψυχή) correctly due to a worldview bias as you will see in the next set of passages that deal with instances where psuché (ψυχή) is often times translated as soul. But in terms of this passage it is completely clear that psuché (ψυχή) cannot refer to an immaterial and immortal soul and instead it can only refer to a very physical, material and mortal life. This is because the passages says "for those seeking the Child's life are now dead." (Matthew 2:20) My point here is that an immortal and immaterial soul is by definition immortal and immaterial so that no one can harm it which would be in contradiction with the point of this passage. This is why psuché (ψυχή) was translated as life here instead of soul since translating it as soul is not only nonsensical but is completely contradictory with the message of the passage.

That said I want to emphasize what I want you to get out of this passage and all subsequent passages. In short psuché (ψυχή) does not always mean soul. Once you understand this fact then the next set of passages where psuché (ψυχή) is frequently translated as soul and where I also explain why soul is a completely incorrect translation will make sense to you. Thus this set of passages may get a bit repetitive because I essentially say the same thing for each of them so please hang in there especially if you are skeptical of what I have been saying with regards to psuché (ψυχή).

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or drink; or about your body, what you will wear. Is not life more than food, and the body more than clothes?" (Matthew 6:25)

In this verse both instances to life are a translation of psuché (ψυχή) as you can probably guess. Then the reason why translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul cannot work here is because this verse has a very physical and very material view of psuché (ψυχή) which stands in direct opposition to the concept of immortal and immaterial souls. This is because the verse says "do not worry about your life, what you will eat or drink" (Matthew 6:25) which relates life or rather psuché (ψυχή) to eating and drinking. The idea here is that eating and drinking are what nourish your life or psuché (ψυχή). However despite this fact in the passage this verse comes from Jesus is telling us not to worry about our life because we cannot add a single hour to our lifespan through being anxious about it. This is why translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul here would make zero sense since by definition souls are supposed to be immortal. Not only that but saying soul instead of life in "do not worry about your life, what you will eat or drink" (Matthew 6:25) is just completely nonsensical since if souls were to exist then we would not be able to nourish our immortal and immaterial souls with material food. Therefore this is why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life here.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Anyone who loves his father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me; and anyone who does not take up his cross and follow Me is not worthy of Me. Whoever finds his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for My sake will find it." (Matthew 10:37-39)

Once again the word translated as life two times in the last verse in this passage is psuché (ψυχή). Therefore I would like to again point out that translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul is completely and utterly nonsensical. For instance translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul would mean that whoever finds his soul will lose it, and whoever loses his soul for Jesus's sake will find it. This of course is nonsensical because souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial so that you cannot lose your soul in your life here on earth if souls existed. Likewise you also cannot find your soul here on earth because if souls exist then you would already have a soul. Therefore this is why the translators translate psuché (ψυχή) as life here once again.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it." (Matthew 16:25)

Again the two instances of the word life in this verse were translated from the word psuché (ψυχή) just like the previous passages. Then just like with the previous passages it is very obvious that psuché (ψυχή) cannot be translated or understood to mean soul here since in this verse psuché (ψυχή) is very mortal while a soul is supposed to be immortal. I would also like to once again point out that psuché (ψυχή) refers to life in the sense of a living and mortal body rather than an immortal and immaterial soul. This is why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life here in this verse instead of as soul.

But then why does Jesus say "whoever loses his life for My sake will find it" (Matthew 16:25) in this verse then if psuché (ψυχή) refers to mortal and material life in the sense of a living and mortal body instead of an immaterial and immortal soul? Well you see when we die we become dust so that our consciousness ceases to exist as our life or psuché (ψυχή) is lost. However since God is all powerful He can resurrect us from the dead so that we can have our psuché (ψυχή) or life back. This is why Jesus says "whoever loses his life for My sake will find it" (Matthew 16:25) since by being faithful to Him even unto death we will inherit eternal life.

Then lastly with respect to this verse I would also like to emphasize that we are not inherently immortal beings or souls that have eternal life. Instead we are mortal beings that have a finite amount of life. This is once again why Jesus says "whoever loses his life for My sake will find it" (Matthew 16:25) since as I just said we are not immortal so that we possess eternal life. Then because of this fact immortal and immaterial souls do not exist and cannot exist biblically speaking. Really there is no getting around this point if you want to hold to the existence of immortal and immaterial souls. If you want to dispute this then just know I talk about it more later on.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "It shall not be this way among you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave— just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life as a ransom for many." (Matthew 20:26-28)

In this passage life in "to give His life" (Matthew 20:28) is translated from psuché (ψυχή). So if you think that psuché (ψυχή) definitely means soul then how can Jesus give His soul "as a random for many" (Matthew 20:28) as this verse says? I mean if souls are immortal and immaterial then Jesus cannot give up His soul. However Jesus would be able to give up His life or psuché (ψυχή) since He was mortal and material. Thus this is why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life in this passage since soul does not make sense as I have said.

Then as the Gospel of Mark says:

> "Once again Jesus entered the synagogue, and a man with a withered hand was there. In order to accuse Jesus, they were watching to see if He would heal on the Sabbath.
>
> Then Jesus said to the man with the withered hand, 'Stand up among us.' And He asked them, 'Which is lawful on the Sabbath: to do good or to do evil, to save life or to destroy it?'
>
> But they were silent." (Mark 3:1-4)

In this passage obviously life in "to save life or to destroy it" (Mark 3:4) was translated from psuché (ψυχή). Then the reason why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life here instead of soul is because translating it as soul would not make any sense since this passage is about healing a physical injury that someone has so it concerns material and mortal life.

Then as the Gospel of Luke says:

> "Then Jesus said to all of them, 'If anyone wants to come after Me, he must deny himself and take up his cross daily and follow Me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will save it.'" (Luke 9:23-24)

Again the two instances of life in this passage are translated from psuché (ψυχή). Then the reason why the translators translate psuché (ψυχή) as life here instead of soul is once again because translating it as soul would be nonsensical for the same reasons I have already pointed out. For instance if souls exist then you would not be able to lose your soul here on earth because souls by definition would be immortal and immaterial so that no one on earth would be able to harm or destroy your soul.

Then as the Gospel of John says:

> "I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down His life for the sheep." (John 10:11)

The reason why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life here instead of soul is because if souls exist then Jesus would not be able to lay down His soul since as I keep on saying souls would be immortal and immaterial by definition. Thus just like in the previous instances translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul instead of life would be nonsensical.

Then as the Gospel of John also says:

> "Whoever loves his life will lose it, but whoever hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life." (John 12:25)

To begin the first two instances of life are once again a translation of psuché (ψυχή) just like the previous passages. Then the reason why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life is because translating it as soul would once again make zero sense. For instance how does whoever hates his soul in this world even make sense? I mean souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial so that they transcend our physical world. Therefore this is why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life here instead of soul. Then in terms of the third instances of life it is translated from the Greek word zóé (ζωή) which also means life. But why are there two different words for life here? Well really the best way to think of it is that psuché (ψυχή) is life that you currently have in the sense that it refers to your mortal life. On the other hand zóé (ζωή) mostly refers to life with respect to eternal life or a higher form of life. There are some exceptions to this where zóé (ζωή) just refers to mortal life but this is mostly the case. Although whenever zóé (ζωή) is in the context of eternal life the Greek word for eternal is also used. Therefore really there is zero confusion over what zóé (ζωή) means since really it just means life.

This would of course be in contrast to the word psuché (ψυχή) which is translated as both life and soul by most translators. Then I would like to once again point out that the kind of life that psuché (ψυχή) has been referring to so far is drastically different than what an immortal and immaterial soul is. Really what I mean here is that selectively translating psuché (ψυχή) as either life or soul is completely nonsensical. Now if you disagree with here wait and see what I mean later on with the passages where psuché (ψυχή) is frequently translated as soul.

Then as the Gospel of John also says:

> "'Lord,' said Peter, 'why can't I follow You now? I will lay down my life for You.'
>
> 'Will you lay down your life for Me?' Jesus replied. 'Truly, truly, I tell you, before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times.'" (John 13:37-38)

The two instances of life in this passage were translated from psuché (ψυχή) once again. This translation of life makes sense as opposed to soul because how could this passage make any sense if psuché (ψυχή) were translated as soul? I mean how is Peter laying down his soul, which is supposed to immortal and immaterial, anything but nonsensical? Therefore this is why psuché (ψυχή) is translated as life once again.

Then as the Book of Acts says:

> "So we all agreed to choose men to send to you along with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, men who have risked their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Acts 15:25-26)

Since the word translated as lives here is once again psuché (ψυχή) does it make sense to say that the men in question risked their immortal and immaterial souls "for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ" (Acts 15:26) in this verse? Or does it make more sense to say that these men risked their lives as in their mortal and material lives? Thus this is why psuché (ψυχή) was translated as lives rather than souls.

Then as the Book of Acts also says:

> "But I consider my life of no value to me, if only I may finish my course and complete the ministry I have received from the Lord Jesus—the ministry of testifying to the good news of God's grace." (Acts 20:24)

Now up until this point if you have been still trying to hold to the possibility of psuché (ψυχή) meaning soul you may have been engaging in some top tier mental gymnastics in order to justify that psuché (ψυχή) could make sense as soul in instances where I have said it is nonsensical. However this verse really puts a stop to all this so that if you have been skeptical of what I have been saying then you have to at the very minimum admit that psuché (ψυχή) does not always mean soul as in an immortal and immaterial soul. This is because in this verse life from "I consider my life of no value to me" (Acts 20:24) has been translated from psuché (ψυχή). So my point here is that if you want to hold to the possibility that psuché (ψυχή) can mean life in the sense of life that comes from an immaterial and immortal soul then really this verse undeniably eliminates this possibility. This is because Paul is saying that his psuché (ψυχή) has no value to him. My point here is that clearly Paul or at least the author of Acts does not see psuché (ψυχή) in terms of life derived from an immaterial and immortal soul. Instead the author of this verse sees psuché (ψυχή) as being a very material and mortal form of life that is derived from the body. I mean why else would the author say that Paul's life or psuché (ψυχή) has no value to him? Really this would only make sense if the author is using psuché (ψυχή) to refer to material and mortal life rather than immaterial and immortal life that is thought to be derived from the soul. Therefore this is why psuché (ψυχή) can only be translated and understood to mean life in a very material and mortal sense in this verse.

Then as the Book of Acts also says:

> "Men, I can see that our voyage will be filled with disaster and great loss, not only to ship and cargo, but to our own lives as well." (Acts 27:10)

Once again the word lives in this verse is a translation of the word psuché (ψυχή). Then the reason why it is translated as lives instead of souls is because it would make zero sense translated as souls. I mean souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial so how could anyone suffer great loss to their soul through a voyage across the sea? Therefore this is why psuché (ψυχή) can really only be translated as lives here. Then just like with the previous passage I would like to point out that psuché (ψυχή) or life here is very material and very mortal.

Alright so this concludes the instances that I have for you of psuché (ψυχή) that cannot be translated or understood to mean soul. Although I am not going to go over similar instances of psuché (ψυχή) from the epistles since I am sure you are tired of me saying the same thing over and over again just know that I could do the same thing for those. Really my point here should be undeniably obvious at this point so I do not think it is necessary to continue to quote and comment upon the same usage of psuché (ψυχή) over and over again.

Therefore it is now time to go over the instances of psuché (ψυχή) that are commonly translated as soul. With respect to these instances my purpose is to demonstrate that instead of translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul as in an immaterial and immortal soul it is far better to translate and understand psuché (ψυχή) as life, person or being. Therefore as you read through the following passages consider the usage of psuché (ψυχή) carefully so that you try to consider the meaning more along the lines of life, person or being rather than as soul. Then in terms of the ordering of these passages I skip over Matthew 10:28 temporarily since this is the main passage that those who hold to the existence of immortal and immaterial souls cling to and I need you to be more open to what I am saying with regards to psuché (ψυχή) before you read what I have to say about Matthew 10:28. So without further delay consider the following passages where psuché (ψυχή) is commonly translated as soul.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Come to Me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me; for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light." (Matthew 11:28-30)

Now at first you may think souls is an accurate translation of psuché (ψυχή) here but this is not the case. This is because one of the messages that Jesus preached was that of not worrying about our life or psuché (ψυχή) so that instead we look towards God.

As Jesus says:

> "Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about itself. Today has enough trouble of its own." (Matthew 6:34)

Therefore the idea here with the original passage from the Gospel of Matthew above is that by following Jesus we will unburden ourselves from the worries of our lives so that we "will find rest for" (Matthew 11:29) our lives. This is why psuché (ψυχή) is best translated and understood as lives in "you will find rest for your souls" (Matthew 11:29) instead of as souls as it is translated here. Now if you disagree with what I have said here my point is that you cannot definitely say that psuché (ψυχή) should be translated and understood to mean soul here. Instead translating psuché (ψυχή) as life is a perfectly valid option.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Then He said to them, 'My soul is consumed with sorrow to the point of death. Stay here and keep watch with Me.'" (Matthew 26:38)

In this verse the word soul was falsely translated from the word psuché (ψυχή) because translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul in this verse makes zero sense if you want to take it a face value. For instance how can Jesus's soul be "consumed with sorrow to the point of death" (Matthew 26:38) if souls are immortal and immaterial? Thus the only way soul could possibly work here as a translation of psuché (ψυχή) is if you say that Jesus is grossly exaggerating and that He really refers to His life and the sorrow He is going through now. But then why not just translate psuché (ψυχή) as life or being here so that Jesus would be saying My life "is consumed with sorrow to the point of death" (Matthew 26:38) in this verse? Therefore soul is an incorrect translation of psuché (ψυχή) here and it should be translated as either life or being instead.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Jesus declared, ''Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment.'" (Matthew 22:37-38)

In this passage soul was of course translated from psuché (ψυχή) and there is really no context that would require it to be translated as life or being here. That said translating psuché (ψυχή) as soul is still incorrect because there is zero reason to translate as soul. For instance you could see psuché (ψυχή) as soul here but in order to do that you would have to say that a person's soul is a person's life so really psuché (ψυχή) should just be translated as life or being instead. This would of course make sense since the intended message of this passage is that we should love the Lord our God will everything we have in our life here on earth. Then lastly the reason why this verse refers to life or psuché (ψυχή), heart and mind is because your heart is representative of your emotions, then your mind is representative of your reason and then your life or psuché (ψυχή) is representative of your very being.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. What will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul?" (Matthew 16:25-26)

So in this passage the two instances of life in the first verse were translated from psuché (ψυχή) just like I said before when I quoted the first verse alone. But now in this passage I have included the second verse which includes two instances of soul that were translated from you guessed it psuché (ψυχή) as well. So is soul an accurate translation of psuché (ψυχή) in the second verse? Well no of course not it is an incorrect translation. This is because as I said before the first two instances of psuché (ψυχή) which are translated as life in this passage can only be translated and understood to mean life since a soul is supposed to be immortal and immaterial so that you cannot lose your soul here on earth assuming you had one. This then means that the first verse is talking about life like I just said.

So then why does it make sense to translate the two instances of psuché (ψυχή) in the second verse as life instead of soul? Well the whole idea of the second verse is that we are material and mortal beings that will perish at some point without God's direct intervention. This is why Jesus asks "What will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his" (Matthew 16:26) psuché (ψυχή) or life because it does not matter if you conquer the entire world and rule over all since as a mortal being you will lose your life eventually. Additionally Jesus asks "what can a man give in exchange for his" (Matthew 16:26) psuché (ψυχή) or life as a rhetorical question since His point is that only God can give us eternal life so that we will never die and there is nothing we can give to anyone here on earth to gain eternal life. Therefore the two instances of psuché (ψυχή) in the second verse are much better translated and understood as life rather than soul.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

"Here is My Servant,
whom I have chosen,
My beloved,
in whom My soul delights.
I will put My Spirit on Him,
and He will proclaim justice to the nations."
(Matthew 12:18)

In this passage soul in "My soul delights" (Matthew 12:18) was of course translated from psuchē (ψυχή). So what does psuchē (ψυχή) actually mean here? Well first off it is important to point out that translating psuchē (ψυχή) as life would be a bit awkward here. Instead the best translation of psuchē (ψυχή) would be being. This is because psuchē (ψυχή) is most literally translated as breath and it has the intended meaning of breath of life. This is then where the meaning of psuchē (ψυχή) as life comes from because the idea is that those who are breathing are living. Those who are not breathing are dead. Then since a person and a being have life so that they are breathing the word psuchē (ψυχή) can be translated as person or being depending upon the context. Therefore in this verse God says His being or life as in life force delights in Jesus.

Then lastly with respect to this passage I would also like to point out that God is also just like we are. However the difference between God and us is that He that God has life in Him from anyone else. On the other hand the life what we have is from God. This means that we are not inherently have life so that life is something we can possess on our own like Gold. However life is something that God must give us. This is why the concept of immaterial and immortal soul is actually nonsense biblically speaking since only God is immortal and immaterial soul. On the other hand we are material and mortal beings. There in terms of eternal life the only way we can have eternal life is if God, who is the source of all life, gives us eternal life. Once again we are not immortal and immaterial souls.

Then as the Gospel of Luke says:

"You will be betrayed even by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and some of you will be put to death. And you will be hated by everyone because of My name. Yet not even a hair of your head will perish. By your patient endurance you will gain your souls." (Luke 21:16-19)

The reason why souls is an inaccurate translation of psuchē (ψυχή) in this passage is because Jesus is not talking us gaining immaterial and immortal souls. I mean if we are supposed to have an immortal and immaterial soul then how exactly would we gain what we already possess? Really the only way to make sense of this would then be to say the reference to gaining our souls is a metaphor for living with God in the new earth. But then this would mean that the reference to souls would then be using life metaphorically speaking. But then I am sure you can guess what an easier explanation to psuchē (ψυχή) means in this verse is. Thus instead psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated as life. The best thing is that the resurrection is in view here so that as long as we are remain faithful unto death Jesus promises the perishing forever in the second death in the Lake of Fire we will be resurrected in the resurrection of life so that we will gain our lives as we live with God in the new earth. Therefore once again psuchē (ψυχή) should not be translated as souls.

Then as the Gospel of John says:

"Now My soul is troubled, and what shall I say? 'Father, save Me from this hour'? No, it is for this purpose that I have come to this hour." (John 12:27)

The context of this verse is that of Jesus predicting His death in the near future and telling His disciples about how He must die. This is then why translating psuchē (ψυχή) as soul in "Now My soul is troubled" (John 12:27) makes little sense since what Jesus is saying is that His life is now trouble due to the fact that the hour or time of His death is getting closer. Therefore psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated and understood to mean life here instead of soul.

Then as the Book of Acts says:

"Therefore my heart is glad and my tongue rejoices;
my body also will dwell in hope.
because You will not abandon my soul to Hades,
nor will You let Your Holy One see decay."
(Acts 2:26-27)

First off as I said previously Hades here should be understood as the grave. This would mean then that psuchē (ψυχή) cannot mean soul in this context because souls are supposed to be immortal and immaterial. Therefore psuchē (ψυχή) is once again best translated as life. The idea here is that David is saying that God will not abandon his life to the grave and that God will not let the Messiah see decay. Of course this meaning makes sense which is why psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated as life and not soul.

Then as the Book of Acts also says:

"The multitude of believers was one in heart and soul. No one claimed that any of his possessions was his own, but they shared everything they owned." (Acts 4:32)

In this passage translating psuchē (ψυχή) as soul only makes sense if you take soul to figuratively refer to life from the perspective that a person's soul is their life. This is because the idea here is that the multitude of believers (Acts 4:32) are like one being or one life in the sense that they shared everything. Therefore psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated as either being or life and not soul.

Then as the Book of Acts also says:

"They preached the gospel to that city and made many disciples. Then they returned to Lystra, Iconium and Antioch, strengthening the souls of the disciples and encouraging them to continue in the faith. 'We must enter many hardships to enter the kingdom of God,' they said." (Acts 14:21-22)

In this passage once again the only way translating psuchē (ψυχή) as souls makes sense is if you take souls to mean lives since if we had souls then our souls would be our lives. But then why not just translate psuchē (ψυχή) as lives? Therefore psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated as souls and instead it should be translated as lives. If you disagree with this then the only way you can put souls in this passage is if you think souls are what we do and that we define psuchē (ψυχή) as soul. However as I have demonstrated so far psuchē (ψυχή) really does not mean soul in any circumstance. Thus once again psuchē (ψυχή) should be translated as lives here.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Instead, fear the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell."
(Matthew 10:28)

This is the only verse that those who hold to the existence of an immortal and immaterial soul use in an attempt to demonstrate that the Bible teaches that we do in fact have immortal and immaterial souls. For instance if you still hold to the existence of souls no doubt you have been telling yourself that you know what this verse means but you should must be aware that it is story. Then even if you agree with me so far so that you are not quite highly skeptical about the idea of immortal and immaterial souls being in the Bible then this verse may give you pause. However really this verse does not mean what you think it does so allow me to explain.

First off the word translated as hell should be translated as Gehenna and really Gehenna just refers to being judged by God so that you are destroyed. This is why the verse says destroy with respect to Gehenna. The reason why this is important to point out is because hell or eternal conscious torment does not exist instead the Lake of Fire or the second death is in view where all the unfaithful will be annihilated so that they face a permanent and non-reversible death after the resurrection of all the dead. Really I am just pointing this out so that I talk more about hell does not exist later on like I keep on saying.

Now to quote the verse again:

"Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Instead, fear the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell."
(Matthew 10:28)

So what does this actually mean with respect to what I have been saying? Well the word soul was translated from psuchē (ψυχή) in order to replace soul with life. A more literal translation of the first sentence would read as follows. And not you should be afraid of those killing the body, the however not they are able to kill the life. So what does this mean? Well really if you have been paying attention so far hopefully this comment you should already know. The idea is that although you have life through your body in the sense that we are mortal and material beings ultimately all life comes from God. This is because God is the Creator and Author of everything there is. Then because of this fact it does not matter what people in your current life can do because no one except God Himself can take away your life. Really the main point of this Jesus is referencing here is that as long as you are faithful to God in your life then it does not matter if your body dies because God will give you new life through the resurrection. On the other hand if you are unfaithful to God then you will face the second death in the Lake of Fire so that you will be a permanent death that will never be reversed. Because God can kill and will be destroyed because you will never have life again. In other words Jesus is saying not to worry about being killed because God can raise you from the dead since everything including life itself comes from Him. So instead of telling other people that you should fear God since God has the ability to destroy you in the Lake of Fire with the second death so that you will never live again.

Now this may be confusing or you may disagree with it so let me give a character at any point in novel you are writing. Obviously as the author you can insert any character at any point and because of this fact whenever you write the death of a character in the novel that is dead dead to you as the author as long as you plan on bringing the character back in the future in a resurrection. On the other hand if you decide to never bring the character back then that character is truly dead because they will never appear in your novels again. So what I am saying is that the same idea is in view here in the sense that as characters in God's story it does not matter if we die because as long as we are faithful to God then God will write us Back into His story with the resurrection so that despite dying here on earth we will live again and be given eternal life in the new earth. If you doubt this comparison then I would of course remind you what Jesus says about God.

As Jesus says:

"He is not the God of the dead, but of the living. For to him all are alive." (Luke 20:38)

Therefore it does not matter if you die so that you cease to exist anymore in God's story or little your life because God is the most powerful to "to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:38) This is why no one except God can take away your life. Then of course this is why he says that concerning "the resurrection of the dead: 'What is spoken to you by God?'" (Luke 20:37) Jesus is impeachable." (1 Corinthians 15:42) The idea here is that God is the author of all immortal souls and instead we are material and mortal beings. However the only way we will be the resurrection we will be raised from the dead so that we will be given life so that we are now perishable we will become imperishable as we are given eternal life. This of course mean that immortal and immaterial souls cannot exist and that Paul definitely did not believe in immortal and immaterial souls. If he actually believed in souls then he would not have written what he wrote.

The fact that Paul did not believe in immortal and immaterial souls is further emphasized in comment. Paul says that we will be raised in "it is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body." (1 Corinthians 15:44) The word translated as natural here is psuchikos (ψυχικός) and as we think back to psuchē (ψυχή) this means the root word psuchē (ψυχή). Then in terms of the meaning of psuchikos (ψυχικός) the most literal meaning is related to psuchē (ψυχή) then since psuchē (ψυχή) means the psuchikos (ψυχικός) would mean related to life. Then because the author of New Testament means that our life was material and mortal this is how psuchikos (ψυχικός) gets translated as natural. But really the meaning of psuchikos and psuchikōs (ψυχικός) means is to contrast it with the word translated as spiritual in this passage which is pneumatikos (πνευματικός). The word translated as spiritual here is pneuma (πνεῦμα) as its root and the most literal meaning is related to pneuma (πνεῦμα). It almost always translated as spirit. Thus pneumatikos (πνευματικός) means related to the spirit or spiritual. But what is pneuma (πνεῦμα)? Well it is a bit more complicated to define and I explain it later on in this comment but for right now the best way to think about pneuma (πνεῦμα) or spirit in terms of Paul's point of view in this passage is as a higher level substance that has a direct connection to God.

To quote Paul again:

"So will it be with the resurrection of the dead: What is sown is perishable; it is raised imperishable. It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory. It is sown in weakness; it is raised in power. It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body. So it is written: 'The first man Adam became a living being;' the last Adam became a life-giving spirit." (1 Corinthians 15:42-45)

Therefore the idea here with what Paul is saying is that we have a material body that is perishable that is mortal. However through the power of the resurrection we will be raised from the dead in a body related to pneuma (πνεῦμα) that will be imperishable. Thus the point here is that while psuchē (ψυχή) was not something immortal and immaterial it was something related and dissimilar to pneuma (πνεῦμα) and because of this fact there is zero chance Paul believed in immortal and immaterial souls. Really there is not debating this.

Alright but why did Paul and the authors of the New Testament view psuchē (ψυχή) as the person or being instead of as soul? Well it call goes back to Genesis which is why I began this discussion with the Book of Genesis in mind. You see for the authors of the New Testament their Bible was the Old Testament. For instance if you were to talk to any of the authors of the New Testament today and talk about immortal and immaterial souls they would probably look at you like you are crazy because your blasphemy for thinking you are immortal and immaterial souls. Then after that they would quote Genesis to you.

As Genesis says:

"Then the LORD God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being." (Genesis 2:7)

First off I would like to point out that being in living being comes from the word nephesh (נֶפֶשׁ) which is the Hebrew word for life, person or being. This Hebrew word nephesh (נֶפֶשׁ) is then translated as you guessed it psuchē (ψυχή) in the Greek Septuagint. This is why the authors of the New Testament quote from the Greek Old Testament.

That said what the authors of the New Testament are saying here is that you are made of dust that has been animated with the breath of life so that you are now a living being. The idea is that the breath of life is a soul and that is what is in view here. Instead you are dust that has been brought to life through the breath of life so that you are a living being or rather living dust. On the other hand if immortal and immaterial souls exists then you would not be living dust and instead you would be an immortal and immaterial soul. This would of course be in direct contradiction with what Genesis says here.

Then as Genesis also says:

"By the sweat of your face you will eat your bread,
until you return to the ground—
because out of it were you taken.
For dust you are,
and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19)

Therefore from the perspective of the authors of the New Testament we are dust and to dust we shall return. This once again means that we are not immortal and immaterial souls that are preexisting and that we are being waiting to be freed to go to heaven. Instead we are dust or rather material beings that will cease to exist forever so that we cease to exist forever without both a body and a soul until the resurrection. Then it is through this resurrection that we are raised from the dead so that we are given eternal life in the new earth. Therefore immortal and immaterial souls do not exist.

But what if you still disagree with me for some reason? I mean are souls not traditional and do not Christians believe that souls are immortal? Christian today not believe in them? Well actually yes it is true that the idea of souls is a traditional in the sense that it is almost as old as the New Testament itself and it is also true that the vast majority of people who call themselves Christian today believe in immaterial and immortal souls as well. However these two facts do not make and cannot make psuchē (ψυχή) in mean soul in the New Testament. This is because only the word of God matters with regards to Scripture.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

"Then the Pharisees and some of the scribes who had come from Jerusalem gathered around Jesus. They saw some of His disciples eating with hands that were defiled —that is, unwashed.

Now in holding to the tradition of the elders, the Pharisees' and all the Jews do not eat until they washed their hands properly. And on returning from the market, they do not eat unless they wash. And there are many other traditions for them to observe, including the washing of cups, pitchers, kettles, and couches for dining.

So the Pharisees and scribes questioned Jesus, "Why do your disciples not live according to the tradition of the elders? Instead, they eat with defiled hands."

Jesus answered them, "Isaiah prophesied correctly about you hypocrites, as it is written:

'These people honor Me with their lips,
but their hearts are far from Me.
They worship Me in vain;
they teach as doctrine the precepts of men.'

You have abandoned the commandment of God to keep the tradition of men."

He went on to say, "You neatly set aside the command of God to establish your own tradition. For Moses said, 'Honor your father and your mother,' and 'Anyone who curses his father or mother must be put to death.' But you say that if a man says to his father or mother, 'Whatever you might have received from me is Corban' (that is, a gift devoted to God), he is no longer permitted to do anything for his father or mother. Thus you nullify the word of God by the tradition you have handed down. And you do so in many similar ways." (Mark 7:1-13)

My point here is that tradition does not matter and is completely irrelevant. Anyone who tells you otherwise is making a mistake. Jesus says that has "disregarded the commandment of God to keep the tradition of men." (Mark 7:8) Therefore it does not matter if the vast majority of those who call themselves Christian today believe in souls and it does not matter if all the so-called elders believed in souls. The only doctrine of the soul, in the end all these people are simply wrong. This is because God does not say you are an immortal and immaterial soul instead God says "For dust you are, and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19) Thus instead of being immortal and immaterial you are in fact mortal and material so that you will cease to be a result of having an immortal soul. Instead you only have life by the breath of God and you can only be given eternal life from God through the power of the resurrection of the dead. Anyone who tells you otherwise is wrong. You need to be careful because Jesus says the vast majority of those who call themselves Christian and almost two thousand years of history but it do not create. I mean is it plausible to think that God and the Bible actually say? Thus in the end I do not hold to the traditions of men and instead I hold to the word of God.

Really the only way to see psuchē (ψυχή) as soul in the New Testament is if you first assume that souls exist. This is exactly like with what I said with regards to the false doctrine of the trinity and how the only way to see the trinity in the Bible is to first assume the false doctrine of the trinity is true. So likewise the only way to see souls in the Bible is to first assume psuchē (ψυχή) means soul. Then after you assume that psuchē (ψυχή) is best translated and understood as soul you would be to justify the translation of life, person or being in the instances where psuchē (ψυχή) cannot be translated and understood as soul. Then of course after this reading Matthew 10:28 several times in an attempt to justify your error while ignoring Genesis would be the next step. You also think I am joking here but really the fact that psuchē (ψυχή) does not mean soul and cannot mean soul is of course this truth that trying to translate it and understand it as soul is a complete joke that I cannot take seriously.

This is because as you have seen the word psuchē (ψυχή) means life and what the Bible never explicitly says there are immortal and immaterial souls that exist forever. Instead immortal and immaterial souls are completely absent from the Bible. Really the only way to see immortal and immaterial souls in the Bible is just first assume immortal and immaterial souls exist and then you have to just translated psuchē (ψυχή) as soul in as many places as you can. Of course in reality there is no such thing as a soul in the Bible. This is then ultimately why I mentioned earlier that the existence of souls from a biblical perspective since it is not in the Bible then it does not exist biblically speaking.

Alright so souls do not exist but before answering some questions you may have about the fact that souls do not exist, like what happens when we die, I would like to talk about what pneuma (πνεῦμα) is. This is because I want to try to find an immaterial essence in the Bible there is actually something that meets this criteria and this thing is of course pneuma (πνεῦμα). Then because I mention psuchē (ψυχή) cannot and does not mean soul in the New Testament pneuma (πνεῦμα) actually serves a similar purpose as a soul although it is not quite the same thing. Now before I fully explain what pneuma (πνεῦμα) is really the key difference between soul and spirit or pneuma (πνεῦμα) is that psuchē (ψυχή) is related to life and pneuma (πνεῦμα) is related to spirit. Then psuchē (ψυχή) is related to a higher level and immaterial connection with God and the divine. This may sound confusing so consider the following verses that explain what pneuma (πνεῦμα) is fully. Lastly just so you are aware in these verses pneuma (πνεῦμα) has been translated as spirit.

As Paul wrote:

"For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays, but my mind is unfruitful." (1 Corinthians 14:14)

Then as Jesus says:

"Watch and pray so that you will not enter into temptation. For the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak." (Matthew 26:41)

Then as Paul wrote:

"For who among men knows the thoughts of man except his own spirit within him? So too, no one knows the thoughts of God except the Spirit of God." (1 Corinthians 2:11)

Then as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had cried out again in a loud voice, He yielded up His spirit." (Matthew 27:50)

My point here with these verses is that the ultimate view of pneuma (πνεῦμα) is actually be pneuma (πνεῦμα) which is almost always translated as spirit. In terms of the most literal meaning really pneuma (πνεῦμα) just means breath. So what does this mean exactly? Well really the best way to think about pneuma (πνεῦμα) is actually in terms of the wind. The idea here is that wind is like an invisible and unseen force that is powerful and mysterious. Therefore the intended meaning of pneuma (πνεῦμα) is that an unseen and invisible force that cannot be physically grasped. This is why I find it ironic that the so-called elders and theologians, who were living in the 1st century Greeks, would write about the meaning of psuchē (ψυχή) as an immortal and immaterial soul in line with pagan Greek philosophy. In other words the so-called elders and theologians created so-called Christian tradition with pagan Greek philosophy in view. The idea here is that the soul being an immortal and immaterial essence of a person that is preexisting and that is widely accepted as so-called doctrine. Then as the consequence of this false doctrine was that became a so-called fundamental biblical truth that almost everyone accepts as true. Thus this is really how psuchē (ψυχή) came to be translated as soul in all the major English translations of the Bible.

Now this all might seem hard to believe. I mean how could such a great error be introduced into the Church? Well sad to say it happened actually. First off since we are talking about Plato here Platonic philosophy was very popular. Thus many people in the early church, which was pagan Greek culturally speaking, had an innate understanding that psuchē (ψυχή) refers to an immortal and immaterial soul rather than a mortal and material being. On top of this not many people actually read the Bible in the time period I am talking about. This is because texts needed to be copied by hand which means that the biblical texts themselves were much less common compared to today. As a result of this fact really only the most wealth and educated people would have unrestricted access to the biblical texts. This would be the so-called elders and so-called early church fathers. Then when you add the fact that when you received a Greek education almost two-thousand years ago it would have the mainly centered on the classics in Greek literature and philosophy which the Bible was competing in the world in which the Platonic idea of the soul does not corrupt the meaning psuchē (ψυχή) in the New Testament. I mean these so-called elders and early church fathers would have grown up reading Greek philosophy rather than the Bible which would have made the idea of the Testament with regards to psuchē (ψυχή). Thus instead of being hard to believe it is quite easy to see how psuchē (ψυχή) came to be read and why the vast majority of people still see psuchē (ψυχή) as an immortal and immaterial soul even after the passing of the present day almost two-thousand years later.

But what about the philosophical arguments for the existence of a soul? I mean how else the Bible is wrong and Greek philosophy is correct so that we really do have immortal and immortal souls? Well although obviously I do not believe there are any philosophical arguments for the existence of immortal and immaterial souls I do believe there are reasons why there is zero philosophical reason to believe in souls. First of all the idea of souls is so ingrained in our culture that even those who call themselves Christian today believe in immaterial and immortal souls as well. However these two facts do not make and cannot make psuchē (ψυχή) in mean soul in the New Testament. This is because only the word of God matters with regards to Scripture.

Then as Jesus says:

"Watch and pray so that you will not enter into temptation. For the spirit is willing, but the body is weak." (Matthew 26:41)

In this verse Jesus is saying that our unseen and inner nature that is connected to God wants to keep praying despite how tired we may be but that our body rules over this desire because our body is subject to limitations.

Then as Paul wrote:

"For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the spirit of a man within him? So no one knows the thoughts of God except the Spirit of God." (1 Corinthians 2:11)

In this verse Paul is saying that only our invisible and inner nature can understand our thoughts because no other people can know what we are thinking. This is then in the sense is true of God because only God can understand the Holy Spirit which is invisible and inner nature.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had cried out again in a loud voice, He yielded up His spirit." (Matthew 27:50)

In this verse pneuma (πνεῦμα) could be translated as wind or rather breath so that this verse would be saying that Jesus let go His breath of life or rather life. However really this cannot be seen to be the case since if the author wanted to say that Jesus gave up His life then they would have simply used the word psuchē (ψυχή) instead of pneuma (πνεῦμα). As a result of this something else in the verse is in view. Jesus is using the word pneuma (πνεῦμα) here I would say the author is talking about Jesus's invisible and inner and unseen nature or identity so that His very being itself could return to God. If this does not make sense then consider the following passage.

As the Book of Ecclesiastes says:

"Who knows if the spirit of man rises upward and the spirit of the animal descends into the earth?" (Ecclesiastes 3:21)

In this verse the word translated as spirit is the Hebrew word ruach (transliteration) which corresponds to the Greek pneuma (πνεῦμα) and this is why it is translated a spirit in this verse. Another point to make in regard to this verse I would first like to point out that this verse is about the fate of the Old Testament dead. Then because of this fact I would like to dispute this for some reason then I would like to point out that there is actually no false doctrine of the soul take the word nephesh (נֶפֶשׁ) which is used here in this verse. Then we have this comment that the word translated as soul here is nephesh (נֶפֶשׁ) which is the Hebrew word for life, person or being

point here is that if "And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years" (Revelation 20:4) is an accurate translation then psuché (ψυχή) at the start of this verse can only refer to souls. However the translation of "And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years" (Revelation 20:4) is of course not accurate as you can probably guess based upon what I have said so far in this comment. Instead the most literal translation in my view would be and they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. This is because the word translated as "they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) here is ezēsan (ἔζησαν) which is an aorist verb that most literally means they lived. Although keep in mind with aorist verbs they are not strictly in the past tense and they can be present or future tense as well. Really it just depends upon the context the word is in and what seems to make the most sense. So although I would say past tense is a more accurate translation than present tense really both are an option. That said my point here is that ezēsan (ἔζησαν) does not strictly refer to the present tense and instead it can refer to the past tense.

But why is this important? Well you see if the tense of "And they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) in "And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years" (Revelation 20:4) is changed to the past so that it becomes and they lived then the meaning of the entire passage with respect to psuché (ψυχή) completely changes. This is because by saying they lived instead of "they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) the resurrection would not be happening at this point and instead the resurrection would be occurring earlier. This would then make souls an incorrect translation of psuché (ψυχή) and instead the most correct translation would be persons or rather people. As a result of this "And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God" (Revelation 20:4) would become and I saw the people who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God. This would then place the resurrection at the start of the passage when John sees the people who had been beheaded for their testimony rather than at the end of the passage.

But what makes this meaning more correct? Well really I would say "they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) is an inaccurate translation of ezēsan (ἔζησαν). This is because if you want to translate ezēsan (ἔζησαν) to the present tense then the correct translation would be they live. On the other hand translating ezēsan (ἔζησαν) as "they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) would mean something entirely different in that a process of coming to life is in view rather than actively living in the present.

Now you could disagree with this which is fine since it really does not make a bit of difference for my point here concerning the meaning of psuché (ψυχή) being persons or people instead of souls. This is because you cannot say that ezēsan (ἔζησαν) must be translated as "they came to life" (Revelation 20:4) instead of they lived. Then as long as you cannot definitely say this then you cannot say that psuché (ψυχή) can only be translated as souls here instead of persons or people. This would then mean that this passage does not imply let alone teach the existence of immortal and immaterial souls and because of this you should not see the soul in this passage and instead you should see psuché (ψυχή) as meaning persons or people.

Lastly as Revelation also says:

> "And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld. And they cried out in a loud voice, 'How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?'
>
> Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:9-11)

Alright so now it is finally time to go over the last usage of psuché (ψυχή) in this section on Revelation and the verse this comment is on. Since this comment has been quite long and I have already thoroughly gone over the meaning of psuché (ψυχή) what this passage means should be obvious to you. If for some reason it is not obvious then allow me to explain. First off the word translated as souls in "I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld" (Revelation 6:9) is of course psuché (ψυχή). Now just like with the previous passages you can probably guess that psuché (ψυχή) should not be translated as souls here. So what should it be translated as? Well to put it as simply as possible psuché (ψυχή) should be translated as persons or people so that "I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld" (Revelation 6:9) becomes I saw under the altar the people "who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld." (Revelation 6:9) This alternative translation of psuché (ψυχή) as persons or rather people would of course make sense since there is nothing in the passage that indicates it should be translated and understood souls as in immortal and immaterial souls. To the contrary if you wish to take this passage literally and at face value then this passage cannot refer to immaterial and immortal souls. This is because of what the last verse of the passage says.

As Revelation says:

> "Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:11)

My point here is that each of these people are "given a white robe" (Revelation 6:11) in this verse. Now this may not seem that important so I would like to once again emphasize that souls are supposed to be immaterial and immortal. The idea here is that only material beings can be "given a white robe" (Revelation 6:11) to wear because robes are material objects that can only be placed on material bodies. This would then mean that the psuché (ψυχή) given the white robes must have material bodies which means means that they cannot be immaterial souls. Then because of this fact psuché (ψυχή) would then be best translated as persons or people so that it is understood to refer to material life.

Now you may disagree with this and wish to say that each of these people being "given a white robe" (Revelation 6:11) is metaphorical language that should not be taken literally. The point here is that the white robes are symbolic of sins being taken away and of triumphing over the power of Satan by remaining faithful unto death rather than apostatizing. But I would actually agree with this and I would definitely not see the people being given white robes literally. But you know what else? This entire passage is completely metaphorical in nature and it should not be taken literally at all. As a result of this the reference to psuché (ψυχή) or people really does not mean anything since it is not literal. But then what is the meaning behind this passage and the fifth seal?

To quote the passage again:

> "And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld. And they cried out in a loud voice, 'How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?'
>
> Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:9-11)

The purpose of this passage is quite simple. In short the purpose it to reassure those who read it who are undergoing persecution that even if they die here on earth that God will not forget about them. This is why the people or rather martyrs in this passage are under the altar of God in heaven since the idea here is that God will never forget about those who have been faithful to Him even unto death. Furthermore all faithful Christians look forward to the end of the age when God will pour our His wrath upon the earth and wash away all rebellion against Him so that the final and eternal Kingdom of God can come to pass. This is why those who have been martyred on earth cry out and ask "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?" (Revelation 6:10) That said really this verse is not supposed to be understood with respect to those who have been martyred. Instead it is really supposed to be understood with respect to those still alive on earth who are undergoing persecution. The idea here is that if you are a faithful Christian facing persecution in your life then you will almost certainly be asking God when He will destroy those who are rebelling against Him by persecuting you so the final and eternal Kingdom of God can come where you will know only eternal happiness. Therefore instead of having those on earth ask this question Revelation has this question asked by the martyrs who have already died.

The reasoning behind this is quite obvious. In short what Revelation is trying to prepare us for is that we need to be ready to remain faithful even unto death instead of just faithful during light persecution. This is why Revelation has the martyrs ask this question since by being martyred they have already demonstrated that they are faithful even unto death. This would of course give those reading Revelation encouragement in the sense that if the martyrs have been faithful unto death then they should also be prepared to be faithful unto death. Now you might doubt what I have said here but this is why this passage closes by saying that the martyrs were "told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:11) The point here is that this is once again not written to the martyrs and instead it is written to those on earth who are reading Revelation while they are alive. This is because this verse is telling us that we need to wait a little while longer until the full number of those who are to be killed are killed. In other words this passage is telling us that we should expect persecution and even death to come before God pours out His wrath upon the world.

As Revelation says:

> "He who has an ear, let him hear:
>
> 'If anyone is destined for captivity,
> into captivity he will go;
> if anyone is to die by the sword,
> by the sword he must be killed.'" (Revelation 13:9-10)

Therefore this is why this entire passage concerning the martyrs, including the reference to psuché (ψυχή), should not be taken literally and instead it should be taken metaphorically in the sense that it is trying to tell us that the persecution we see on earth is not the end and that much more will need to happen before the end finally comes. Then of course the passage is also meant to reassure us that it does not matter if we die even at the hands of our enemies because as long as we remain faithful unto death then God will never forget about us. In fact instead of forgetting about those who have died for their faith God will give them "a white robe" (Revelation 6:11) because by being faithful even unto death they have demonstrated their faith and conquered the power of Satan so that their sins can be washed away and forgiven. Therefore as a result of all this psuché (ψυχή) makes perfect sense if it translated as persons or people in this passage and because of this fact it should not be translated or understood to mean souls since the entire passage is metaphorical in nature rather than literal.

But what if you still disagree with this? Well really the best way to demonstrate that what I am saying is correct is to compare this passage that concerns the fifth seal to the previous four seals. For instance consider what the passage concerning the fourth seal says.

As Revelation says:

> "And when the Lamb opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, 'Come!'
>
> Then I looked and saw a pale green horse. Its rider's name was Death, and Hades followed close behind. And they were given authority over a fourth of the earth, to kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth." (Revelation 6:7-8)

My point here with respect to this passage is that if you want to take the reference to the martyrs under the altar of God in the fifth seal literally so that you understand psuché (ψυχή) to refer to souls or at the very least people in heaven then if you want to remain logically consistent and intellectually honest you need to take this passage concerning the fourth seal literally as well. Therefore if you disagree with what I have said then you must also believe that a person with the literal name of Death will ride a pale green horse and they will be given authority over a quarter of the earth so that they can "kill by sword, by famine, by plague, and by the beasts of the earth." (Revelation 6:7-8) Then on top of this really you should not view the reference to Hades as a metaphor for the grave and instead you should view Hades as a person. Although really since Hades is the pagan Greek deity of the underworld then this must mean that Revelation is acknowledging the existence of the false god Hades. Now you might say I am making a mockery of your beliefs but as the text says "Hades followed close behind" (Revelation 6:8) this mean that if you want to take this literally than Hades must be a person since the world translated as followed is akoloutheó (ἀκολουθέω) which means to follow, accompany or attend. Thus Hades referring to the underworld does not really work literally speaking since it is not possible for the entire underworld to follow or accompany a person called Death. Therefore if you want to hold to psuché (ψυχή) as meaning souls based on the fifth seal then you need to accept that there will be a person called Death who comes in the future and the false god Hades will follow them.

Of course in reality taking the fourth seal literally is simply absurd and nonsensical since as I have already said and demonstrated these seals are not supposed to be taken literally. Really I am sure you agree with me here since I am basically certain you do not believe a person called Death and the false god Hades will be given authority over a quarter of the earth. Therefore really you have two options here with regards to the meaning of the fifth seal and the word psuché (ψυχή). The first option is for you to agree with me so that you take the fifth seal to be just as metaphorical as the fourth seal. This would then mean that you do not see immortal and immaterial souls as the meaning behind psuché (ψυχή) and instead you see psuché (ψυχή) as referring to persons or people with these people being used metaphorically just like Death and Hades in the fourth seal. Then your second option is to take the fourth seal metaphorically and the fifth seal literally. This would then mean that you view the fifth seal and the word psuché (ψυχή) as evidence that immortal and immaterial souls exist. However if you take this second option you are a hypocrite, logically inconsistent and intellectually dishonest. Therefore if you still actually take this second position then really there is nothing else I can say to you to change your mind since if you cannot be consistent and honest then there is nothing I can do.

That said even if you agree with everything I have said so far no doubt you may have one final question or rather point of dispute you would like clarified. This point would of course be the reference to the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) from the next chapter in Revelation. Therefore I believe it would be helpful to explain the meaning behind this great multitude.

As Revelation says:

> "After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands. And they cried out in a loud voice: 'Salvation to our God,
>
> who sits on the throne,
> and to the Lamb!'
>
> And all the angels stood around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures. And they fell facedown before the throne and worshiped God, saying, 'Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God forever and ever! Amen.'
>
> Then one of the elders addressed me: 'These in white robes,' he asked, "who are they, and where have they come from?"
>
> 'Sir,' I answered, 'you know.'
>
> So he replied, 'These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. For this reason, they are before the throne of God
>
> and serve Him day and night in His temple;
> and the One seated on the throne
> will spread His tabernacle over them.
> 'Never again will they hunger, and never will they thirst;
> nor will the sun beat down upon them,
> nor any scorching heat.'
> For the Lamb in the center of the throne will be their shepherd.
> 'He will lead them to springs of living water,'
> and 'God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.''" (Revelation 7:9-17)

Those who believe in immortal and immaterial souls also take this passage as evidence that souls exist. Their idea here is that this great multitude of faithful Christians are literally in heaven and because of this fact we all go to heaven as immortal and immaterial souls when we die. However this is not the case because just like with how I have said the seven seals should not be taken literally and how instead they should be viewed metaphorically the great multitude should not be viewed literally and instead it should be viewed metaphorically. But if this is the case then what is the intended meaning behind the great multitude? Well really in order to understand the great multitude you must first understand the 144,000.

As Revelation says:

> "After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back its four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: 'Do not harm the land or sea or trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God.'
>
> And I heard the number of those who were sealed, 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel:
>
> From the tribe of Judah 12,000 were sealed,
> from the tribe of Reuben 12,000,
> from the tribe of Gad 12,000,
>
> from the tribe of Asher 12,000, from the tribe of Naphtali 12,000,
> from the tribe of Manasseh 12,000,
>
> from the tribe of Simeon 12,000, from the tribe of Levi 12,000,
> from the tribe of Issachar 12,000,
>
> from the tribe of Zebulun 12,000, from the tribe of Joseph 12,000,
> and from the tribe of Benjamin 12,000."
> (Revelation 7:1-8)

So who are the 144,000? If you have been paying attention so far then you already know the answer is that the 144,000 are faithful Christians because what we call the Church today, or the body of all faithful Christians, is Israel. Since I already explained this quite a bit already in my previous commentary talking about the so-called Jews and since I am going to talk about the fact that Christians are the only Israelites around today in the next chapter I am not going to demonstrate this further here. Therefore for now and until you read the following chapter where I demonstrate that Christians are the only Israelites today just accept the fact that the 144,000 are Christians.

Then in terms of how the 144,000 relate the great multitude it is really quite simple. The 144,000 are being sealed on earth because they are still alive on earth and they are the last Christians in the whole world. This is why they are being sealed since the whole idea of being sealed is that God is marking His faithful as His before the end finally comes. On the other hand the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) have "come out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:14) which simply means that they have died on earth. Therefore the idea here behind the great multitude is that they are representative of all the billions of Christians who have "come out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:9) by dying on earth throughout history. Thus the main point I want you to see here is that the 144,000 are the last Christians alive on earth while the great multitude are all the Christians who have died in history leading up to the end of the age. Then this meaning of the 144,000 and the great multitude is the key to understanding the purpose of the great multitude in the Book of Revelation.

But first are you aware of why the number of the 144,000 is given as 144,000? Sure if you have been paying attention you will surely say that the number one-hundred and forty-four is representative of the twelve tribes of Israel from the Old Testament and the twelve disciples from the New Testament into a single continuous and united people of God. I mean this is one of the reasons why the 144,000 are Christians or rather the true Israelites who are still alive on earth before the end comes. But why is the number given as 144,000 instead of say 144,000,000? Sure you can claim that Christians back then never thought there would be so many Christians but Revelation does not see it this way since the number of the great multitude is given as "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) and since elsewhere Revelation mentions twice a myriad myriads or twice ten-thousand ten-thousands or two-hundred million with respect to a number it is clear that the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is at least in the hundreds of millions if not billions. So why is the number 144,000 exactly? Well you see the message Revelation is trying to convey here is that before the end finally comes there will not be many faithful Christians left on earth. If this is not to be the case then Revelation would have provided a larger number. Now you may take issue with this because you believe that the Church is supposed to grow so that billions of Christians can welcome Jesus at His second coming. However this false belief is just factually wrong with regards to what both Revelation and Gospels say.

As Revelation says:

> "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

The idea here is that if the beast is going to "wage war against the saints" (Revelation 13:7) so that it can "conquer them" (Revelation 13:7) then the body of faithful Christians in the true Church will be so few in number that they will be powerless. This means that before the end comes Christianity will not be a major world religion anymore since as I just said the saints or Christians will have been beaten and conquered. If you want to dispute this then there is a reason why Revelation says "Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints." (Revelation 13:10) The point here is that persevering and saying true to your faith during the reign of the beast will be incredibly difficult. Then because of this fact you should not expect there to be many millions of Christians let alone billions when Jesus finally returns.

Then as Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

> "For at that time there will be great tribulation, unmatched from the beginning of the world until now, and never to be seen again. If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short.
>
> At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There He is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:21-25)

My point here with this passage is that the trials and temptations the world will face with regards to the reign of the beast will be so great that if the beast's reign is not cut short then "nobody would be saved" (Revelation 24:22) from those who are alive at the end. This means that the beast will truly conquer the entire world so that "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) as I have said. As a result only a tiny fraction of the world will be true and faithful Christians at the end of the age when the end finally comes. That said there is something important to point out here as an aside. Really I am talking about true and faithful Christians who do not worship the beast. This means I am not talking about the so-called Christians in the future who will worship the beast as humanity's so-called savior or even worse as the second coming of the Christ. Instead these people will be part of the church of Satan rather than the Church of God which is why I call them so-called Christians here. But this really does not change what I am saying here since my main point is that there will be very few true and faithful Christians left when the end comes.

Alright so this is why Revelation gives the 144,000 as 144,000. But what does this have to do with the purpose and meaning of the great multitude? Well first off as I have said the great multitude are all the billions of God's faithful people who have died on earth. Then as I just said the 144,00 are the few faithful who remain at the end. So now the meaning should be quite obvious. The idea here is that the 144,000 are representative of the weakness of Israel at the end of the age when the beast rules over the earth while the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is representative of the true strength of Israel. Now this might not make sense here but the idea is that all of God's faithful people who have died throughout history are part of the people of God or Israel. This means that it does not matter that God's faithful will be few in number towards the end of the reign of the beast because in reality "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) will stand triumphant over the power of Satan in the end. In other words although we as faithful Christians will seem small and defeated on earth during the reign of the beast ultimately "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) has come before us and we carry their legacy. As a result it does not matter if we are so few in number so that the whole world is against us because in reality the body of all the faithful in history is "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) and because of this fact the beast cannot defeat us since we have already won.

This means that the intended meaning of the 144,000 and the great multitude is entirely metaphorical. Then as I have said the intended meaning is to give hope to Christians in the last days so that although we may seem weak and powerless now due to the fact that we are few in number, in reality we are part of "a multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) so really we are not alone. In fact those faithful Christians who will be part of the 144,000 during the last days will essentially be running the final stretch of a race that has lasted for thousands of years. This means that they will not be alone because all the billions of faithful Christians who have come and gone before them will be standing behind them in spirit cheering them on.

This is why the great multitude is referred to as "a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9) The point here is that the Church or rather Israel has conquered the world in spirit through people "from every nation and tribe and people and tongue" (Revelation 7:9) accepting Jesus as the King of Israel and as the Christ.

Furthermore there is another metaphorical point I would like to bring up with regards to the great multitude. Other than showing the true strength of the Church or Israel throughout history another purpose is to show that God will not forget about any of His faithful. The point here is that by describing the faithful as being with God in heaven celebrating their triumph Revelation is giving hope and assurance to us that God will not forget about any of us so that we will all live with Him in the new Jerusalem in the new earth.

Therefore as a result of all the above really the great multitude should not be taken literally and instead they should be taken metaphorically. As a result of this they are not actually in heaven and instead they are dead and not conscious. Now you may still disagree with this because you want to take it literally instead of metaphorically. I mean if Revelation shows that they are alive in heaven then how could they actually be dead and waiting for the resurrection of the dead? Well you see it really quite simple.

As Jesus says:

> "Even Moses demonstrates that the dead are raised, in the passage about the burning bush. For he calls the Lord 'the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:37-38)

Of course the point here is that to God all are alive. This means that from God's perspective the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is not actually dead and instead they are alive and continuously praising Him. This is because as I have said before God is all powerful so that even the dead seem alive to Him. If you forgot what I said concerning why this makes sense then consider writing a novel. When you write a novel as an author you are writing from an omnipotent and omniscient perspective. This means that you know everything about your novel and can do anything with the story. As a result when a character dies in your novel from your perspective the character is not actually dead since at any point you can resurrect them in the novel by writing them back into it. Thus the same idea is in view here with respect to God and this is why "to Him all are alive." (Luke 20:38) Then because of this fact this is why the description of the great multitude makes sense. Sure the great multitude are actually dead from their perspective and from our perspective however from God's perspective the great multitude are alive. Thus if it helps you understand the metaphorical perspective and meaning of the great multitude better then just imagine them being dead from their own perspective while being alive from God's perspective since God is all powerful.

Therefore as a result of all this the great multitude are not actually conscious beings in heaven and instead the entire passage is meant to be viewed metaphorically. Then because of this fact you cannot say that the great multitude are evidence let alone proof that immaterial and immortal souls exist. But what if you reject this? Well really I would say that you should look at the body of evidence as a whole for the supposed existence of immortal and immaterial souls. So consider everything I have said and once you realize that the only way you can possibly see souls in the Bible is by viewing metaphorical language literally and by not translating psuché (ψυχή) correctly then I think you will understand what I have said here.

Lastly I hope this comment was helpful for you. I realize this comment was quite long but really its length is necessary in order to explain the fact that souls do not exist. This is because the false doctrine of souls is rather popular and many if not the vast majority of people are emotionally attached to it. As a result if this comment was much shorter so that all I said was that psuché (ψυχή) should be translated as life, person or being instead of soul then chances are you and almost everyone else would laugh at what I have said for being so obviously wrong in your view. Thus in order to be as convincing as possible I really had to go over all the different topics that you read about in this comment. I mean really there are just so many different angles with regards to the topic of souls to talk about and if I left a big one out then no doubt many people would write off everything. Furthermore the fact that souls do not exist is actually a very important topic for understanding Revelation since if you take psuché (ψυχή) to mean soul in Revelation then you will get the wrong impression and miss what Revelation is actually saying. Therefore this is why what I have said concerning the nonexistence of souls is a comment here instead of a chapter on its own in my part called Various Insights. Anyways I hope you now know and understand why we are material and mortal beings rather than immaterial and immortal souls.

As God says:

> "By the sweat of your brow you will eat your bread,
> until you return to the ground—
> because out of it were you taken.
> For dust you are,
> and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19)

(9) "And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld." – First off I would like to remind you that the word translated as souls here is psuché (ψυχή) and that it should actually be translated as people so that the verse becomes the following. And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the people who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld.

Now in terms of the meaning of the fifth seal I would like to once again say that this fifth seal is also bringing death into the world. However instead of a general amount of death that applies to everyone in the world this seal centers around death to the faithful through martyrdom. Therefore the point of this seal is that faithful Christians should expect the possibility of hardship and even death.

(9) "of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld." – This would include all the martyrs who have been killed due to their testimony of Jesus in the past, in the present and in the future. Thus you do not have to worry about God forgetting about you if you are killed for the word of God in the future because God will always remember you since He sees all and His power is truly without limit.

(10) "And they cried out in a loud voice, 'How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell upon the earth?'" – First off this verse is representative of the desire all Christians have for God's just judgment to come upon the earth so that the wicked will be no more and so that the eternal Kingdom of God can finally arrive. Then as I said in my commentary on the meaning of psuché (ψυχή) the reason why these people or rather martyrs are crying out and asking this question is because this entire fifth seal is a metaphor for faithful Christians who are suffering on earth. The idea here is that as we as faithful Christians suffer through hardship on earth including persecution we often ask ourselves why God is allowing our suffering to take place and why God is taking so long to avenge us by punishing those who have been persecuting us. Thus we are supposed to see ourselves in these martyrs in the sense that they are asking the same exact question we as Christians have been asking for almost two thousand years. Then the reason why the martyrs are used figuratively here is because by showing that even the martyrs, or those who have died for their faith, are asking this question then this question is a valid question that deserves an answer. Of course as the subsequent verse shows this answer is simply that all death and suffering is part of God's plan and that the eternal Kingdom of God will not come "until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:11) Therefore the idea here is that we should not expect easy lives without hardship and instead we should be prepared to be killed for our faith just as the martyrs have been.

(11) "Then each of them was given a white robe" – A white robe symbolizes spiritual purity, wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. These martyrs have received this gift through having faith in Jesus even unto death and by following His commandments.

(11) "and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." – God's full judgment on those who dwell upon the earth will not take place until all who are to be killed are killed. The reason why martyrdom is referred to here is because martyrdom is the most extreme form of suffering imaginable for Christians. Thus the idea here is that if Revelation is saying that we should expect martyrdom to be a possibility for us then really it is saying that all forms of suffering are possible for us to face as Christians in the future.

Then as I said in my comment on the previous verse this verse is an answer to the question of why God is allowing Christians to be persecuted and suffer hardship. Therefore whenever you ask yourself why God is waiting so long and allowing so much suffering and evil just know that the answer is all the death, suffering and persecution we may face is actually all part of God's plan for the world. This means that all persecution and even martyrdom is something that must happen before Jesus returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God. Then always remember that God is in full control of the future so that nothing happens that is outside of His plan. This means that it does not matter what happens in the world or what you may see and face yourself since everything that happens is part of God's plan. As a result nothing can stop Jesus from ushering in the eternal Kingdom of God because everything is going exactly according to the plan that God has set. Lastly do not worry about facing persecution because by being persecuted and refusing to give in even unto death you demonstrate that your faith is true. Therefore do not worry about what is to come because God is watching you and He will not forget about you when He rewards the faithful who have overcome the power of Satan in the world.

6 – The Sixth Seal: Terror

> (12) And when I saw the Lamb open the sixth seal, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black like sackcloth of goat hair, and the whole moon turned blood red, (13) and the stars of the sky fell to the earth like unripe figs dropping from a tree shaken by a great wind. (14) The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place.
>
> (15) Then the kings of the earth, the nobles, the commanders, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains. (16) And they said to the mountains and the rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of the One seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. (17) For the great day of Their wrath has come, and who is able to withstand it?"

6.1 – Commentary

(12) "And when I saw the Lamb open the sixth seal" – Jesus now opens the sixth seal of the will of God. In order to explain the meaning of the sixth seal it is first important to remember the main meaning of the previous five seals. Then just to remind you the central meaning of each of the previous five seals were death in the sense of Jesus bringing some form of death into the world after opening each of the seals. Therefore the idea here with the sixth seal is that Jesus is once again bringing death into the world. But what kind of death is Jesus bringing into the world with the sixth seal? Well really the best way to view the sixth seal is as Jesus bringing the promise of death. What I mean by this is that unlike the previous five seals no one is explicitly being killed with the sixth seal. Instead the sixth seal is supposed to allude to the death that is to come later on with the day of God's wrath. Really the idea here is that the sixth seal is a promise of judgment from Jesus to the whole world in the sense that no one will be able to escape the death that is coming for everyone. Now this may be a bit confusing so consider my commentary on the subsequent verses to make better sense of the sixth seal.

But lastly before you read the rest of my commentary on the sixth seal I would like to once again remind you that the sixth seal just like all the other seven seals should not be taken literally. Instead you should view this sixth seal metaphorically. As a result you should not see the subsequent verses in a literal manner and instead you should see them in a figurative manner. Now you may wish to dispute this so allow me to explain. Really if you want to take the sixth seal literally then it really does not align with the rest of Revelation. This is because this section on the sixth seal says "the stars of the sky fell to the earth like unripe figs dropping from a tree shaken by a great wind." (Revelation 6:13) Furthermore this section on the sixth seal also says "The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up" (Revelation 6:14) which means that all the stars falling down from the sky is in view here during the sixth seal rather than some of them since the sky itself is supposed to disappear completely or be rolled up. On the other hand later on in Revelation during the seven trumpets, which take place during the seventh seal so there is no continuity break, the text says "A third of the stars were darkened, a third of the day was without light, and a third of the night as well." (Revelation 8:12) My point here is that if you wish to take to take the sixth seal literally with the whole "the stars of the sky fell to the earth" (Revelation 6:13) then this would directly contradict with how Revelation says "A third of the stars were darkened" (Revelation 8:12) during the seven trumpets.

In response you might wish to overlook what I just said so I would like to also add that the sixth seal says "the sun became black like sackcloth of goat hair" (Revelation 6:11) while later on during the seven trumpets Revelation also says "A third of the stars were darkened, a third of the day was without light, and a third of the night as well" (Revelation 8:12) as you just read. My point here is if the sun already became "black like sackcloth of goat hair" (Revelation 6:11) then "a third of the day was without light" (Revelation 8:12) cannot come to pass during the seven trumpets because a sun that is "black like sackcloth of goat hair" (Revelation 6:11) is completely dark so that it does not give off light. Thus once again there is a contradiction between the sixth seal and the seven trumpets.

Furthermore I would also like to point out that I have already demonstrated why the previous five seals should not be viewed literally. Thus if you wish to view the sixth seal literally then really to remain logically consistent and intellectually honest you must also view the first five seals literally as well. However as I have already demonstrated you cannot take the first five seals literally because otherwise you must also believe in a literal character called Death who rides around the world with the false pagan deity Hades as they go around killing people. Then as I have said obviously believing in such a thing is just completely nonsensical and blasphemous as well since Hades as a false pagan deity is not real and Hades as the pagan underworld is not real. Therefore as a result of all this no matter which way you want to look at it you cannot view the descriptions given here in this section on the sixth seal literally and instead you can only view the descriptions figuratively and metaphorically.

(12) "there was a great earthquake" – The very earth trembles and shakes due to God's anger and wrath as Jesus opens the sixth seal. Earthquakes also occur in Revelation 8:5, 11:13, 11:19 and 16:18. The purpose of the "great earthquake" (Revelation 6:12) in this verse is to demonstrate that God has control over the earth itself and that His wrath is coming soon.

(12) "and the sun became black like sackcloth of goat hair" – Sackcloth is a coarse, rough and unpleasant to wear cloth made out of goat or horse hair. Then by saying "the sun became black" (Revelation 6:12) this verse is saying that the sun turns dark and does not produce any light. In terms of what you should get out of this description really this is just a figurative way of saying that God controls everything including the light from the sun itself.

(12) "and the whole moon turned blood red" – The moon turning blood red could be considered symbolic of the blood that will be spilled upon the earth during the final judgment of the earth by God.

(13) "and the stars of the sky fell to the earth like unripe figs dropping from a tree shaken by a great wind." – This should be seen as general apocalyptic imagery that is supposed to demonstrate that God is in full control over the entire world. The point is not to describe exactly what will happen in the future but rather to show how powerful and mighty God is. The idea here is that the stars of the sky were seen as untouchable by humanity because they are so high up in the sky that we cannot each them. Thus by saying that God can shake the sky itself to cause the stars of the sky to fall "to the earth like unripe figs dropping from a tree" (Revelation 6:13) Revelation is saying that God's power over creation is unimaginably greater than our power over creation. Therefore this is why I said this description is supposed to show that God is in full control over everything there is.

(14) "The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up" – Obviously the sky itself cannot recede like a scroll being rolled up so it is once again best to view this as figurative in the sense that it is an indication of the power God has over the world. That said the purpose of saying "The sky receded like a scroll being rolled up" (Revelation 6:14) in this verse is to show that the whole world itself is being uncovered so that no one will be able to hide from God. This is because when Revelation was written God was believed to look down upon the earth from the third heaven so by having the second and first heavens, or outer space and the sky, recede Revelation is basically saying that God now has an unobstructed view of the earth so that no one can hide from Him. This may not make much sense so consider the following verses.

(14) "and every mountain and island was moved from its place." – A mountain is a symbol for a nation and an island symbolizes a person. As a result this verse means everything on earth from nations down to each individual person are impacted since everyone and everything can be seen by God. Thus this verse is clearly symbolic and should not be viewed literally.

(15) "Then the kings of the earth, the nobles, the commanders, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains." – In this verse everyone on earth tries to hide from God as God looks upon the whole world. Even the kings, nobles, commanders, rich and mighty will be judged by God and no one no matter how powerful or great will be unable to hide from Him. Thus when God's wrath comes all the unfaithful will be swept away. Therefore you should not trust in your own wealth and power to protect you like those of the Church of Laodicea when they said "I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing." (Revelation 3:17) Building a bunker and stockpiling food and weapons will not protect you from what is coming. Only faith in Jesus can protect you. Then always remember that it does not matter what happens to you here on earth because all the faithful are to be resurrected on the day of judgment to live with God in the final Kingdom of God. Therefore do not worry about what the future has in store for you because it is already set in stone by God. All you need to do to save yourself is to have faith in God through Jesus.

(16-17) "And they said to the mountains and the rocks, 'Fall on us and hide us from the face of the One seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For the great day of Their wrath has come, and who is able to withstand it?'" – In these two verses all those on the earth try their best to hide from the wrath of God because they know that they are powerless in comparison and cannot resist God's wrath. However obviously no one will be able to hide from the wrath of God since God can see everything and anything that happens upon the earth. Therefore no one will be able to hide from the wrath of Jesus when He returns to judge the world with the power and authority that has been given to Him by God. On top of this no one will be able to withstand the final judgment as the wrath of God is poured out upon the world. Therefore you should always remember that no matter how powerful the first and second beasts of Revelation will seem to you that they will still always be less than the shadow God casts. In other words even the power and might of artificial super intelligence will literally be less than nothing compared to the infinite power of God.

(15-17) "Then the kings of the earth, the nobles, the commanders, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains. And they said to the mountains and the rocks, 'Fall on us and hide us from the face of the One seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For the great day of Their wrath has come, and who is able to withstand it?'" – Now it is time to talk about what the sixth seal means. Now although I previously said the sixth seal is representative of Jesus bringing the promise of death into the world there is another similar way to view this section on the sixth seal. Essentially the sixth seal can also be seen as being representative of all those who recognize the judgment of God in their last moments of life before they are killed here on earth. The idea here is that the judgments leading up to the final judgment will be so bad that many will think that the end has come. Then as a result of this they will desperately try to hide from the wrath of God. However in reality these judgments are just the beginning since the final judgment is still to come where God will pour out His wrath undiluted upon the entire face of the world. This idea of course makes sense since there have been many disasters and calamities throughout history that have killed many millions of people. For the people caught up in these great disasters it would have felt like the great day of God's wrath from their perspective due to all the death that would have occurred all around them. Furthermore during these disasters these people would have no doubt desperately tried to hide themselves in an effort to prevent their death. However in reality God has fixed everything by His own authority so that nothing that happens is outside of control. Therefore you cannot hide from God and if God has determined that you will die then you will die and there is nothing you can do about it.

As Revelation says:

> "If anyone is destined for captivity,
> into captivity he will go;
> if anyone is to die by the sword,
> by the sword he must be killed." (Revelation 13:10)

Now you may wish to dispute this meaning of the sixth seal where the sixth seal is representative of all those who recognize the judgment of God in their last moments of life before they are killed here on earth. Instead may wish to say that the sixth seal is the great day of God's wrath because Revelation says "For the great day of Their wrath has come" (Revelation 6:17) in this section. I mean this would at least appear to make sense since this is what the text directly says. However this is not the case and instead the great day of God's wrath or the final judgment that the world will face does not occur during the sixth seal. This is because the seventh seal is yet to come and during the seventh seal the seven trumpets are blown which unleash even more judgments upon the world. Thus my point here is that how could the sixth seal be the final judgment if more judgments are still to come? Obviously it goes without saying that it cannot be. Therefore you should not take "For the great day of Their wrath has come" (Revelation 6:17) literally and instead you should view it as the people of the world exaggerating about the level of death and suffering that they are facing so that they falsely say the great day of God's wrath is here. Then as I have already said this would of course make sense since there have been many wars, genocides, natural disasters, plagues and more throughout history that have killed millions of people and laid waste to entire communities wiping them from the face of the earth. Thus it is easy to see how people caught up in such disasters could feel like "the great day of Their wrath has come" (Revelation 6:17) as you can see.

That said like I said originally you can also view the sixth seal as a promise of death and because of this as a promise that the final judgment will occur. The idea here is that God is watching everything and everyone so that nothing and no one can escape His sight. Then because of this fact nothing and no one will be able to escape God wrath on the great day of Gods wrath or the final judgment. It does not matter how hard you try to hide or what you do because God is fully in control of everything and His power is without limit.

Now you may wish to dispute this meaning so allow me to explain the purpose of the sixth seal here. Really the best way to view the sixth seal is with respect to the fifth seal. Now when discussing the fifth seal I said one of the purposes is to reassure faithful Christians that God is fully in control of everything so that even the persecution and death we are facing is actually part of God's plan. The idea here is that oftentimes when we experience great suffering we ask ourselves and God what the purpose of our suffering is and if God's plan really is going to be fulfilled. I mean how could faithful Christians experiencing suffering be part of God's plan? Thus this is where the fifth seal comes in which says that the martyrs who have already faced death by being martyred should "rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:11) Therefore this is why I said one of the purposes of the fifth seal is to reassure faithful Christians that the suffering and death of the faithful that they see and experience themselves is not a valid reason to question God's plan and if the eternal Kingdom of God will come to pass. Instead the fifth seal is telling us that more faithful Christians will need to be killed as martyrs before the eternal Kingdom of God comes to pass. Therefore really we should consider the suffering and death we face or may face as faithful Christians not as something contrary to God's plan but rather as a direct fulfillment of God's plan and the future coming of the eternal Kingdom of God.

Alright but how does this relate to the sixth seal? Well you see just as oftentimes we as Christians ask ourselves why we are suffering if we are God's people or Israelites we also ask ourselves why many of the unfaithful, godless and wicked seem to prosper. I mean how is it just for the unfaithful to remain alive let alone prosper while the faithful suffer and are even killed? Obviously this is not justice since all those who rebel against God deserve to be killed and completely wiped off the face of the earth. Thus this is where the meaning of the sixth seal being a promise of death and the final judgment comes in. The idea here is that the sixth seal is an answer to the question of why the unfaithful prosper in the same way that the fifth seal is an answer to why the faithful suffer. Therefore the point here with the sixth seal is that God is telling us that it does not matter how much the unfaithful are prospering because the great day of God's wrath will come where all those who are unfaithful to Him will be swept away and killed. Thus it does not matter how wealthy or successful the unfaithful may appear to be here on earth because God is watching everything and everyone so that when the day of God's wrath finally comes all of the unfaithful will be killed. This means that it is impossible for any of the unfaithful to hide from God and His wrath and because of this fact you should not worry about a single person escaping God's wrath. It does not matter how rich or powerful they may be because from God's perspective even those we view as great are no better than the dust of the earth. All that said I am sure you can now understand why I said one of the purposes of the sixth seal is a promise of death.

Now this meaning of the sixth seal still may not make much sense to you because you might not see it as that important due to the fact that many Christians today are prosperous. However I would actually believe that the time period in which the sixth seal is most applicable has yet to arrive. This is because I see the sixth seal as being most relevant to the reign of the beast when the beast reigns over the whole world and works so-called miracles while creating great wealth in order to deceive the world into following it. In other words I see the greatest purpose of the sixth seal in the wealth and success that the great prostitute will be given by the beast.

As Revelation says:

> "As much as she has glorified herself and lived in luxury, give her the same measure of torment and grief.
> In her heart she says, 'I sit as queen;
> I am not a widow and will never see grief.'"
> (Revelation 18:7)

First off the great prostitute is representative of all those who prostitute, or sell, their eternal salvation with God for a temporary so-called salvation from the beast by following and worshiping the beast. Then my point here with this verse is that there will come a time when the great prostitute's great wealth and success seems so great that it will last forever. As a result of this many Christians will start to question God's plan as they begin to be tempted to follow the beast instead of God since the beast offers many riches while God remains silent. Therefore the purpose of the sixth seal with respect to all this is that it does not matter how wealthy, successful and powerful the beast and the great prostitute appear to be. I mean the beast will be the definition of earthly power itself as it rules over the whole world and the great prostitute, being supported by the beast, will seem like the fruit of a so-called final and eternal golden age of humanity that will never cease. However despite how everything may appear to you during this time, with the sixth seal God is promising us that all of the unfaithful will be killed on the day of God's wrath because God can see everything and everyone so that nothing and no one will escape His wrath. Therefore contrary to what you may have thought the message of the sixth seal will be highly relevant and important up to the end of the age. This means that you should keep the message of the sixth seal in mind so that you always remember to remain faithful to God because all those who are unfaithful to Him will be swept away and killed.

Chapter 2.20: Revelation 7

1 – 144,000 Sealed

> (1) After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back its four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. (2) And I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: (3) "Do not harm the land or sea or trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God."
>
> (4) And I heard the number of those who were sealed, 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel:
>
> (5) From the tribe of Judah 12,000 were sealed,
> from the tribe of Reuben 12,000,
> from the tribe of Gad 12,000,
> (6) from the tribe of Asher 12,000,
> from the tribe of Naphtali 12,000,
> from the tribe of Manasseh 12,000,
> (7) from the tribe of Simeon 12,000,
> from the tribe of Levi 12,000,
> from the tribe of Issachar 12,000,
> (8) from the tribe of Zebulun 12,000,
> from the tribe of Joseph 12,000,
> and from the tribe of Benjamin 12,000.

1.1 – Commentary

(*) In order for this chapter on the 144,000 and the great multitude to make sense you must first understand who the 144,000 are. First off since the 144,000 are made up of 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes of Israel so that they are a total of "144,000 from all the tribes of Israel" (Revelation 7:4) this would then obviously mean that the 144,000 are representative of Israel. But then what or who is Israel? Well of course Israel is the Church or all faithful Christians as I have said before when talking about the fact that the so-called Jews are not actually Jews and instead they are "the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead." (Revelation 3:9) This is again why I call them so-called Jews since they are not actually Jews because they reject Jesus as the Jewish Messiah, the King of the Jews and the King of Israel. Therefore really I should not have to say anything further here since I have already demonstrated that the so-called Jews are not Jews and that they are also not Israelites.

However since there is so much confusion surrounding the 144,000 it is important to completely demonstrate that the 144,000 are faithful Christians, that faithful Christians are the 144,000, that all faithful Christians are Israelites and that all Israelites are faithful Christians. For instance many people agree that the 144,000 are faithful Christians but then at the same time they say that they are so-called Jews who will become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days. Now on the surface this might seem like an acceptable belief but really it is completely false. This is because all faithful Christians are Israelites and all Israelites are faithful Christians. This means that the so-called Jews are not Israelites and they have nothing to do with Israel. On the other hand everyone who is a faithful Christian is an Israelite and is part of Israel. This may not seem that important right now but as you will soon see in this chapter and in the rest of Revelation the identity of Israel is incredibly important to understanding what Revelation says. In fact based on Revelation 11 I would even go as far to say that if you mistakenly and falsely associate Israel with the so-called Jews then you will be completely blind spiritually so that you will fail to see one of the most important signs concerning the rise of the beast. Then as a result of this either ignorance or delusion you would then be almost assured to follow the beast so that you worship it as your so-called savior. Now I realize this is quite the claim but it will stay a cliffhanger for now so you will just have to continue on reading to Revelation 11 to know what I am talking about. For now though it is time to talk about Israel.

So why are all faithful Christians Israelites and why are all Israelites faithful Christians? Well there are a number of ways to go about demonstrating this fact including what Revelation itself says elsewhere which is actually the most undeniable proof. That said to begin it would be helpful to review what I have already quoted and said in my commentary on the synagogue of Satan or the so-called Jews with regards to Israel. So now consider the following passages.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his place of baptism, he said to them, 'You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? Produce fruit, then, in keeping with repentance. And do not presume to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe lies ready at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.'" (Matthew 3:7-10)

The main point I have with this passage is that if "out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham" (Matthew 3:9) then ultimately it is God who says who is a descendant of Abraham and therefore likewise it is also God who determines who is an Israelite. This of course makes sense because since God is God and He can do whatever He wants including recognizing the stones on the ground as the children of Abraham. Additionally being a child of Abraham is not about a literal and physical linage or ancestry that can be traced back to Abraham. Instead it is about a spiritual linage or ancestry so that all those who hold to the faith of Abraham are the children of Abraham. Likewise all those who carry on the legacy of Israel and the faith of the prophets are Israelites and part of Israel.

As Paul wrote:

> "It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, 'Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned.' So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

And as Paul also wrote:

> "And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise." (Galatians 3:29)

The idea here is that physical descent is completely unimportant because instead spiritual descent is what matters. This is because God cares about your obedience to Him and faith in Him through His Soon rather than your biological paternal descent. Therefore as long as you accept Jesus as the Jewish Messiah and the Jewish Christ then you are a Jew and you are an Israelite. If this does not make much sense then think about it like this. First off Jesus is a Jew and an Israelite and He is also the King of the Jews and the King of Israel. So to make what I am saying make more sense consider a hypothetical scenario where you are a prince of a kingdom called Israel and one day your father gives you his throne and names you as king of Israel. In response the subjects of your kingdom reject you as king and say that you are not the king of Israel and that you are not their king either. However some time after being proclaimed king of Israel by your father people from foreign lands around your supposed kingdom where you were rejected accept you as their king so that even many of the foreign kings have stepped down and named you as their king. So my question to you is who would you consider part of your kingdom of Israel? Would you say the people who have rejected you as their king are your people or would you say that those who were once foreigners who recognize you king of Israel are your people? Really the answer here is obvious. Of course you would reject those who have rejected you and accept those who have accepted you. Then as a result you would consider those who were once foreigners to be part of your kingdom of Israel while those who were once part of your father's kingdom of Israel you would see them as foreigners. This of course makes sense because the power and authority in a kingdom is in the hands of the king. This means that the king is the state. So in this hypothetical example you would be the kingdom of Israel because your father has named you king. As a result it does not matter what your father's former subjects say because you are the king in a kingdom and not an elected representative in a democracy. The point here is that a kingdom is not a land, shared cultural heritage, a people or a community. Instead a kingdom is the king. This is why those who used to be foreigners can be your people after they recognize you as king.

This is why it so utterly absurd to call the so-called Jews Israelites since the so-called Jews have rejected Jesus as the Jewish Messiah, the Jewish Christ and the King of Israel for almost two thousand years and they continue to reject Him to this day. I mean why would God want anything to do with such a godless people as the so-called Jews who have rejected His Son as their King? Therefore this is why the so-called Jews are not Israelites and instead the true Jews or Christians are Israelites because as Christians we recognize the true King of Israel.

Then as the Gospel of John says:

> "'I know you are Abraham's descendants, but you are trying to kill Me because My word has no place within you. I speak of what I have seen in the presence of the Father, and you do what you have heard from your father.'
>
> 'Abraham is our father,' they replied.
>
> 'If you were children of Abraham,' said Jesus, 'you would do the works of Abraham. But now you are trying to kill Me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham never did such a thing. You are doing the works of your father.'
>
> 'We are not illegitimate children,' they declared. 'Our only Father is God Himself.'
>
> Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I have come here from God. I have not come on My own, but He sent Me.
>
> Why do you not understand what I am saying? It is because you are unable to accept My message. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires.'" (John 8:37-44)

In this passage Jesus is speaking to the so-called Jews and He bluntly tells them that "If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I have come here from God." (John 8:42) Then Jesus also tells them "If you were children of Abraham" (John 8:39) "you would do the works of Abraham." (John 8:39) Thus the message of this passage is similar to the previous passage from the Gospel of Matthew. The idea here is that even though Jesus knows the so-called Jews are biologically "Abraham's descendants" (John 8:37) they are not "children of Abraham" (John 8:39) because they do not accept Him as the Christ as evidenced by them trying to kill Him. This may sound like a contradiction but think about it in terms of a parent disowning their descendant and a person adopting a child. My point here is that if you were to disown your descendant then you would no longer consider them your child even though they would still be your descendant. Then if you were to adopt a child then you would be their parent or father even though they are not your descendant. Therefore Jesus's point in this passage is that although the so-called Jews are the descendants of Abraham they have been disowned by God so that they do not have Abraham as their father because they have rejected Him as evidenced by seeking to kill Him. Then instead of having God as their father Jesus says the so-called Jews have Satan as their father.

My point with this passage is that the so-called Jews are not actually the children of Abraham because they do not have God as their father. This would then of course mean that the so-called Jews are not Israelites and that they have nothing to do with Israel. Furthermore based on this passage it is clear that those who have faith in Jesus as the Christ are the children of God. The idea here is that just like how God has disowned the so-called Jews for their rejection of Jesus as the Christ and the King of Israel so too has God adopted all those who have accepted Jesus as the Christ and as the King of Israel. This means that as Christians we are the children of Abraham and we have God as our Father. As a result we as Christians are the true Israelites and we as a people make up Israel. This fact is also clearly evident in the following passage.

Then as the Gospel of Mark says:

> "Then Jesus began to speak to them in parables: 'A man planted a vineyard. He put a wall around it, dug a wine vat, and built a watchtower. Then he rented it out to some tenants and went away on a journey.
>
> At harvest time, he sent a servant to the tenants to collect his share of the fruit of the vineyard. But they seized the servant, beat him, and sent him away empty-handed.
>
> Then he sent them another servant, and they struck him over the head and treated him shamefully.
>
> He sent still another, and this one they killed.
>
> He sent many others; some they beat and others they killed.
>
> Finally, having one beloved son, he sent him to them. 'They will respect my son,' he said.
>
> But the tenants said to one another, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours.' So they seized the son, killed him, and threw him out of the vineyard.
>
> What then will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and kill those tenants, and will give the vineyard to others.'" (Mark 12:1-9)

As I said before when quoting this passage this parable is quite straightforward to understand. In this parable the man who planted a vineyard is God and the vineyard is Israel. The symbol of a vineyard meaning Israel is used in the Old Testament because God has taken care of a protected Israel. The idea here is that nurturing your vineyard is just like God nurturing Israel in the sense that just like how a vineyard can only exist if someone plants and takes care of it so too can Israel only exist because God has planted it and has taken care of it. Next the tenants in this parable are the Hebrews who are the Jews in the Old Testament period and so-called Jews after they rejected Jesus. The idea here is that since God has created and provided for Israel ultimately God alone is the One who owns it. This means that the Jews of the Old Testament period did not have ownership of Israel and instead they were merely tenants who were allowed to be a part of Israel. Then because of this fact this is why God disowning the so-called Jews makes sense because God owns and controls who occupies Israel.

Next the fruit produced by the vineyard in this parable is being faithful and obedient to God. This is because when the so-called Jews refuse to give God His share of the fruit the parable is talking about the so-called Jews being disobedient and rebelling against God. Next the servants the land owner has sent to collect to the fruit would be the prophets of the Old Testament period. The idea here is that the servants are trying to get the tenants to give the land owner what he is due just as the prophets were sent by God in order to tell the ancient Israelites to give Him what He is due. Next of course the land owner's son in this parable would be Jesus. Then lastly the inheritance the tenants are trying to steal by killing the land owner's son would be everything that the land owner possesses including the vineyard. The idea here is that God has given Jesus an inheritance, including Israel itself, and that by killing Jesus the so-called Jews hoped to steal His inheritance. Of course God raised Jesus from the dead so that the schemes of the so-called Jews failed so that Jesus would reign as the rightful King of Israel forever more. All that said my point in quoting this passage is the last few verses.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Mark:

> "But the tenants said to one another, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours.' So they seized the son, killed him, and threw him out of the vineyard.
>
> What then will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and kill those tenants, and will give the vineyard to others.'" (Mark 12:7-9)

First off by killing the Son or Jesus and throwing Him out of the vineyard or Israel the tenants or the so-called Jews are rejecting Him as the rightful owner of the vineyard or the King of Israel. The point here is that by throwing Jesus out the so-called Jews have rejected Him as part of Israel and as the rightful King of Israel that God has appointed. That said my main point with this passage is the last verse. So after the so-called Jews killed Jesus "What then will the owner of the vineyard" (Mark 12:9) or God do? Well of course "He will come and kill those tenants, and will give the vineyard to others." (Mark 12:9) Then this first part about killing the so-called Jews actually happened in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars. In these three wars the Romans carried out the will of God and killed around two million so-called Jews, destroyed the so-called Jewish state, destroyed so-called Jerusalem, destroyed the Second Temple, enslaved many so-called Jews and inflicted unimaginable levels of suffering on the so-called Jews. God did this because the so-called Jews murdered His Son and they deserved punishment so the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars were the beginning of their punishment from God.

But what about the second part of He "will give the vineyard to others" (Mark 12:9) in this passage? Well this is my entire purpose in quoting this passage. The idea here is that after God killed many of the so-called Jews and destroyed His Second Temple He transferred Israel from the so-called Jews to a new group of people who would be faithful and pay Him His due of fruit. So who are these people then? Well as you can probably guess this group of people would be all those who have faith in Jesus as the Christ and accept Him as the King of Israel. Therefore the point of this parable is that God has disowned the so-called Jews because they have rejected Him through rejecting His Son while at the same time God as adopted Christians because we accept His Son.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "Whoever listens to you listens to Me; whoever rejects you rejects Me; and whoever rejects Me rejects the One who sent Me." (Luke 10:16)

Then as a result of disowning the so-called Jews and God no longer considering them part of Israel or Israelites God has given Israel over to us as Christians who hold to the faith of Jesus so that we are the true and only Israelites alive on earth today. Therefore just to reiterate we as Christians are Israel while the so-called Jews are not Israel and they have nothing to do with Israel.

That said although I have said God has disowned the so-called Jews so that He does not consider them part of Israel really this is a bit inaccurate. Instead it is more accurate to say that the so-called Jews have rejected membership in Israel by rejecting Jesus as the Christ and the King of Israel. My point here is that Jesus is Israel because in a monarchy the king is the state and because of this fact anyone who rejects Jesus as King of Israel is by definition excluding themselves from Israel. Therefore although it is true that God has disowned the so-called Jews just like in the Parable of the Wicked Tenants where the landowner sends people to kill the tenants of their vineyard in order to give the vineyard to new people, really the wicked tenants or the so-called Jews first rejected the son of the landowner or Jesus and in doing so they have excluded themselves from Israel. This is an important point to bring up because ultimately the so-called Jews are so-called Jews and not part of Israel because they have rejected Jesus as the King of Israel. Therefore you should not feel bad for the so-called Jews at all since everything that has happened to them is their own fault for rejecting Jesus as the King of Israel and they only have themselves to blame for being disowned and excluded from Israel.

But what about the modern state of so-called Israel? Well as you can probably guess by how I am calling it the modern state of so-called Israel it is not Israel and it has nothing to do with Israel. Really the modern state of so-called Israel is nothing more than a false pretender that is the embodiment of what it means to be in rebellion against God. Therefore in truth the modern state of so-called Israel is a monument to Satan himself rather than a monument to God as the true and only Israel is.

Really the best way to look at this is that Israel is the legacy of the patriarchs of the Old Testament period so that whoever carries on the faith of Abraham so that they are true and faithful to God is are part of Israel. Thus what I am getting at is that Israel is not a place and instead it is a people. Then since Israel is a people this then means that those that make up Israel can change so that those who were once Israelites cease being Israelites while those who were not Israelites become Israelites. Ultimately this is because Israel is a kingdom and it is God alone who owns Israel and appoints the King of Israel. Then since once again God has appointed Jesus as the King of Israel this means that anyone who accepts Jesus as King is part of Israel while anyone who rejects Him as King is not part of Israel.

At this point you may still be skeptical of what I have said so far so that you may still mistakenly believe that the modern state of so-called Israel and the so-called Jews are Israel despite what I have quoted and said already. If you are still skeptical then the best proof that faithful Christians are Israelites and that the so-called Jews are not Israelites is actually found in the Book of Revelation itself. Now I say proof here because really what Revelation says is completely clear and undeniable.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> "And a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. She was pregnant and crying out in the pain and agony of giving birth.
>
> Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads. His tail swept a third of the stars from the sky, tossing them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, ready to devour her child as soon as she gave birth.
>
> And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days." (Revelation 12:1-6)

And as the Book of Revelation also says:

> "And when the dragon saw that he had been thrown to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished for a time, and times, and half a time.
>
> Then from the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman and sweep her away in the torrent. But the earth helped the woman and opened its mouth to swallow up the river that had poured from the dragon's mouth. And the dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.
>
> And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea." (Revelation 12:13-17)

To begin the "a woman clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head" (Revelation 12:1) is undeniably Israel in these two passages for two reasons. The first is that "she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter" (Revelation 12:5) and since obviously this Son is Jesus since Jesus "will rule all the nations with an iron scepter" (Revelation 12:5) this means that the woman is Israel. The idea here is that since Jesus was born an Israelite it is accurate to say He was born as a Son of Israel. This is why the symbol for Israel that is used in this passage is a woman since women give birth. But then why is this woman Israel and not Mary the mother of Jesus? Well this the second reason and it is due to the symbols of "a woman clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head." (Revelation 12:1) You see the symbol of the sun, moon and twelve stars

are a reference to a dream Joseph, who was the favored son of Jacob or Israel, had.

As The Book of Genesis says:

"Then Joseph had another dream and told it to his brothers. 'Look,' he said, 'I had another dream, and this time the sun and moon and eleven stars were bowing down to me.'

He told his father and brothers, but his father rebuked him and said, 'What is this dream that you have had? Will your mother and brothers and I actually come and bow down to the ground before you?' And his brothers were jealous of him, but his father kept in mind what he had said." (Genesis 37:5-11)

In this passage Joseph is one of the twelve sons of Jacob and Jacob was given the name Israel by God. The twelve sons of Israel are the twelve tribes of Israel. Jacob's wives, Leah and Rachel, gave birth to the twelve sons of Israel, sees the sun, moon and eleven stars bowing down to him in a dream. This vision is related to the future where Joseph's father, mother and brothers will actually bow down to him and bow down to the Lord Jesus Christ. The reason why they do this is because Joseph is sold into slavery and brought to Egypt he rises to a position of power and he is able to help his family when the land they were living in suffers a great famine. The point here is that Joseph's family only survived due to Joseph being in a high position in Egypt which enabled him to feed his family and this is why his family pays him respect.

That said my point here is that the woman with "a crown of twelve stars on her head" (Revelation 12:1) is clearly representative of Israel due to the twelve tribes of Israel being representative of the twelve tribes of Israel due to the association with Joseph's dream from the Book of Genesis. As a result this woman can only be Israel and cannot be anyone or anything else including Mary the mother of Jesus.

But then how does this relate to the fact, yes fact, that the Bible says that the assembly of faithful Christians is Israel? Well now that you know that the woman in the Revelation 12 quoted is Israel it should be quite obvious so consider the following passages:

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron sceptre. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days." (Revelation 12:5-6)

And as the Book of Revelation also says:

"And when the dragon saw that he had been thrown to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished for a time, and times, and half a time.

Then from the mouth of the serpent spewed water like a river to overtake the woman and swept her away in the torrent. But the earth helped the woman and opened its mouth to swallow up the river that the dragon had spewed from his mouth. And the dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.

And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea." (Revelation 12:13-17)

In case it is not obvious the key part here is that "the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished" (Revelation 12:6) as the first passage says. Then "the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished" (Revelation 12:14) as the second passage says. Now my point here is that both of these passages I have quoted the so-called Jews and so-called Israel cannot be Israel and this is so no matter what you want to say against this fact. Instead the only true Israel after the death and resurrection of Christ Jesus and is the Church and by Church I am referring to the assembly of all faithful Christians. This is because the by saying "the woman was given two wings of a great eagle to fly from the presence of the serpent to her place in the wilderness, where she was nourished" (Revelation 12:14) Revelation is directly and obviously referring to the woman or bride fleeing persecution by the so-called Jews who are acting on behalf of the serpent or Satan himself in the Roman province of Judea. If this does not make sense then just as a reminder the so-called Jews are the embodiment of Satan since they have Satan as their father due to their full rebellion against God by rejecting Jesus as the Christ.

As Jesus says:

"If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I have come from God. I have come, I did not come on My own, but He sent Me.

Why do you not understand what I am saying? It is because you are unable to accept My message. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires." (John 8:42-44)

This would then be why Revelation references the Roman Empire of Judea as the "the serpent of the serpent" (Revelation 12:14) since the point is that these the so-called Jews are part of the children of Satan this would then mean that the Revelation 12 quote that quoted the Satan's domain due to the fact that almost all of the Hebrews in Judea rejected Jesus and became so-called Jews. In other words the land of the so-called Jews is a godless place and not God's faithful people, those who hold to the name of Jesus, are persecuted.

All that said my point here is that the so-called Jews cannot be Israel because these passages from Revelation talk about "the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished" (Revelation 12:6) and since the woman was undeniably Israel this means the only way the so-called Jews can be Israel is if they fled the wilderness, where God had prepared a place" (Revelation 12:6) for them to be nourished. However this never happened and the so-called Jews never fled the wilderness the so-called Jews gathered in so-called Jerusalem during the first (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and God sent the Roman army to lay siege to the city and they proceeded in the destroy the Second Temple and the deaths of up to half a million occurred, as they decided to defend what were slaughtered by the Romans. Thus to say that the so-called Jews are the woman, or Israel, that Revelation passages from Revelation are talking about is a complete absurdity. Instead the woman can only refer to the true Israel which after the death and resurrection of Jesus was and is the Church or the assembly of all faithful Christians who accept Jesus as the Christ and the King of Israel.

Now you may still doubt this for some reason so consider the following verse in the second passage quoted above from Revelation 12 because this verse clearly demonstrates that I am correctly interpreting Israel.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And the dragon was enraged at the woman and went to make war with the rest of her children, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17)

In this verse the dragon or Satan goes to make war against the rest of the children of Israel. But then who are the children of Israel? Well as the verse says the children of Israel are those "who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17) This means that the so-called Jews are not the "rest of her children" (Revelation 12:17) or Israelites because by definition the so-called Jews do not "hold to the testimony of Jesus." (Revelation 12:17) Therefore this verse is actually talking about Satan waging war against the Christians who are the true and only Israelites in the future. As a result of all this once again the so-called Jews are not Israel and they cannot be Israel. If you want to dispute this then you are just flat out wrong.

Now even though disputing the fact that faithful Christians are Israelites and that faithful are faithful Christians is not possible it is necessary to go over one last piece of evidence since this piece of evidence relates to why the number of the 144,000 is not literal. The 144,000 is not literally the number "144,000 from all the tribes of Israel" (Revelation 7:4) in Revelation 7 and I will now remember my chapter on the meaning of important symbols then you should already be aware that the number 144 is a way of referring to Israel with respect to Israel being representative of God's faithful people from the Old Testament period up to the present day. The idea here is that the number twelve is representative of the twelve tribes of Israel as well as the number 12 being a number that multiply twelve by twelve you get 144 and in the case of the 144,000 the number is given as 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes of Israel. But why does Revelation give the number as 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes? Well because the number 12 in the Church is supposed to be in view here. Now you might be skeptical of the meaning of the number 144 so consider the following passages:

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the holy city of Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God, shining with the glory of God. Its radiance was like a most precious jewel, like a jasper, as clear as crystal. The city had a great and high wall with twelve gates inscribed with the names of the twelve tribes of Israel, and twelve angels at the gates. There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south, and three on the west. The wall of the city had twelve foundations bearing the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb." (Revelation 21:10-14)

The purpose of quoting this passage is to show that the wall of the new Jerusalem in the new earth is associated with the number twelve in terms of the number of gates the wall has and the number of foundations the wall has. Of course these usages of the number twelve are symbolic since the number twelve with regards to the "twelve gates inscribed with the names of the twelve tribes of Israel" (Revelation 21:12) are clearly representative of the twelve tribes of Israel. Then likewise the fact that the "wall of the city had twelve foundations bearing the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb" (Revelation 21:14) is clearly representative of the twelve apostles.

Then as the Book of Revelation says:

"And he measured its wall to be 144 cubits, by the human measure the angel was using." (Revelation 21:17)

So why do the wall measurement given as 144 cubits? Really it should be obvious. The whole point here is that the new Jerusalem in the new earth is that the wall is representative of the twelve tribes of Israel and the twelve apostles as I have demonstrated above and the number is a legacy of the Old Testament and New Testament periods protecting the city of the new Jerusalem. Therefore it would make sense for the wall to be made of 144 cubits because it is a group of 12 is 144 and since as I just said the wall is supposed to be representative of the legacy of the Old Testament period and the Jewish Christian period it would of course definitely not take this number literally in order to be symbolic.

But then why is it 144,000 and not say 144,000,000? Well really the number for a thousand literally means literally as many but not a lot. As you will see later on in Revelation 7 an angel of God said about the the Church or Israel will not be strong when Jesus returns to destroy the Roman Empire Israel will be so weak that the number of true and faithful Christians will be literally a lot but while not following the beast will be very few. Thus this is why the number 144,000 is used. Really you are supposed to get the impression that Israel will be very few and powerless in the last days before Jesus returns. However it is important to keep in mind that despite how weak Israel is in the last days that we are all faithful Christians and Israelites have already won because of the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

This is then ultimately what the "multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language" (Revelation 7:9) are supposed to represent. The idea is that despite the fact that Israel will be very few and powerless in the last days before Jesus returns. However it is important to keep in mind that despite how weak Israel is in the last days that we are all faithful Christians and Israelites have already won because of the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

This is then ultimately what the "multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language" (Revelation 7:9) are supposed to represent. The idea is that despite the fact that Israel will be very few and powerless in the last days before Jesus returns. However it is important to keep in mind that despite how weak Israel is in the last days that we are all faithful Christians and Israelites have already won because of the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

Now at this point you may believe that I am correct and wrong at the same time in the sense that you somehow believe that the 144,000 are so-called Jews who become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days. The idea here is that you would be correct by saying that we are the so-called Jews that Israelites while at the same time mistakenly saying that Israelites who are Christians also are not Israelites. Instead someone needs to be both Hebrew and Christian in order to be an Israelite. But why is this wrong? Well first off this line of reasoning relies on a complete misunderstanding of the passages I have quoted and what they mean with regards to the Church or the assembly of all faithful Christians being Israel. But since I have already explained why all faithful Christians are Israelites and why all Israelites are faithful Christians if you still mistakenly believe that I am wrong then I am not going to repeat myself again here. Instead it is better for you to simply explain why the 144,000 cannot be so-called Jews who become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days.

Alright so in order to understand why the 144,000 cannot be so-called Jews who become Christians in the last days it is important to understand who the 144,000 are. As I will cover in this chapter of Revelation as well as what happens to the 144,000 in the end of Revelation. My point here is that if the 144,000 are truly separate from the faithful Christians who are not Hebrews then this would be evident with regards to what happens to the 144,000. On the other hand if the 144,000 are not separate but a distinct group and instead they are treated as faithful Christians in general then the 144,000 must therefore be representative of all faithful Christians and not just a portion of only faithful Christians who are Hebrews who used to be so-called Jews. Our job now is to have said all this consider the following passage:

As the Book of Revelation says:

"After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. Then I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: 'Do not harm the land or sea or the trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:2-3)

So what exactly am I trying to say by quoting this passage? Well I am trying to say by quoting this passage that the 144,000 are not literally the servants of our God" (Revelation 6:3) or are only so-called Jews who become Christians. Who are the servants of God? Well what is your answer? Really this is a question that you cannot simply ignore. For people who are trying to prove to yourself that "the servants of our God" (Revelation 6:3) does not mean "all the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) and instead you believe that it refers to a subset of "the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:3) However this is not the case due to the purpose of the notion being performed on the 144,000 or "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) So what am I talking about? Well the whole idea is that angels have "power to harm the land or the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:3)

So what does it mean to be sealed on your forehead? Well it means "the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) in Revelation? Well as you can probably guess from what I have been already dwell in this book so far being sealed on your forehead "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) means that God is marking you as His possession in the sense that He is watching over and protecting you belonging to Him. In other words the whole idea of being sealed on the forehead "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) is that those who have been sealed "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:3) This means that "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) are only the so-called Jews who have become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days. "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) refers to the first six of the seven seals. Thus since the sealing of the 144,000 and the great multitude in his vision after the first six of the seven seals but before the seventh seal. This means that this tag you might wish to say that the sealing of the 144,000 is supposed to happen after the seven trumpets and hence before the rise of the beast since the seven trumpets are the seventh seal. I mean there would be reason to say this since during the fifth trumpet Revelation references the 144,000 who are sealed.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth. They were told not to harm the land or the sea or the trees or any plant or tree, but only those who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads." (Revelation 9:3-4)

Thus as you can see there is a reason to see the 144,000 being sealed just before the fifth trumpet since the fifth trumpet directly references a group of Christians who are sealed. But what is the big deal here and what exactly do I mean by bringing this up? Well, see this is actually quite a problem. But before discussing this problem it is important to talk about why we should not be surprised that the 144,000 are being representative of God marking His people as His in the end of the age. Of the best way to think about the 144,000 is to contrast them with those who receive the mark of the beast.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And the second beast required all people small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their forehead, so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark—the name of the beast or the number of its name." (Revelation 13:16-17)

My point here is that the mark of the beast is diametrically the same thing as the seal of God since the purpose of the seal of God is to mark God's people as His while the mark of the beast is to mark the people who are belonging to it. In other words in the last days everyone in the world will either have the mark of the beast or the seal of God so that they belong to God through placing their faith, trust and hope in God alone through Jesus or they will belong to the beast through placing their faith, trust and hope in the beast. Thus as I will fully explain later I do not see the mark of the beast as only being something physical.

Then since the seal of God is of course an entirely spiritual thing (Revelation) that is a result of being a true and faithful Christian this then means that in the last days, which is the seal of God as being applicable to only the final days. The 144,000 are not literally Israel. Instead they are representative of God marking His people as belonging to Him and all those who are sealed are sealed as a result of the seal of God. So if all you need to do in order to be sealed with the seal of God is to be a faithful Christian then this would actually mean all faithful Christians are sealed with the seal of God. That said really the "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) are not literally the so-called Jews but instead they are the faithful Christians who are sealed with the seal of God." (Revelation 7:3) The idea here is that the 144,000 are not literally the "servants of our God." (Revelation 7:3) Instead they are the faithful Christians who are sealed with the seal of God." (Revelation 7:3) So what is the representative a single and united Israel that holds to the faith of the twelve tribes of Israel and the faith of the twelve apostles. In other words the 144,000 are supposed to be seen as carrying on the legacy of the Old Testament period as well as the legacy of the New Testament period. Therefore you should of course definitely not take this number literally in order to be symbolic.

But then why is it 144,000 and not say 144,000,000? Well really the number for a thousand literally means literally as many but not a lot. As you will see later on in Revelation 7 an angel of God said about the the Church or Israel will not be strong when Jesus returns to destroy the Roman Empire Israel will be so weak that the number of true and faithful Christians will be literally a lot but while not following the beast will be very few. Thus this is why the number 144,000 is used. Really you are supposed to get the impression that Israel will be very few and powerless in the last days before Jesus returns. However it is important to keep in mind that despite how weak Israel is in the last days that we are all faithful Christians and Israelites have already won because of the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

This is then ultimately what the "multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language" (Revelation 7:9) are supposed to represent. The idea is that despite the fact that Israel will be very few and powerless in the last days before Jesus returns. However it is important to keep in mind that despite how weak Israel is in the last days that we are all faithful Christians and Israelites have already won because of the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

Now at this point you may believe that I am correct and wrong at the same time in the sense that you somehow believe that the 144,000 are so-called Jews who become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days. The idea here is that you would be correct by saying that we are the so-called Jews that Israelites while at the same time mistakenly saying that Israelites who are Christians also are not Israelites. Instead someone needs to be both Hebrew and Christian in order to be an Israelite. But why is this wrong? Well first off this line of reasoning relies on a complete misunderstanding of the passages I have quoted and what they mean with regards to the Church or the assembly of all faithful Christians being Israel. But since I have already explained why all faithful Christians are Israelites and why all Israelites are faithful Christians if you still mistakenly believe that I am wrong then I am not going to repeat myself again here. Instead it is better for you to simply explain why the 144,000 cannot be so-called Jews who become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days.

Alright so in order to understand why the 144,000 cannot be so-called Jews who become Christians in the last days it is important to understand who the 144,000 are. As I will cover in this chapter of Revelation as well as what happens to the 144,000 in the end of Revelation. My point here is that if the 144,000 are truly separate from the faithful Christians who are not Hebrews then this would be evident with regards to what happens to the 144,000. On the other hand if the 144,000 are not separate but a distinct group and instead they are treated as faithful Christians in general then the 144,000 must therefore be representative of all faithful Christians and not just a portion of only faithful Christians who are Hebrews who used to be so-called Jews. Our job now is to have said all this consider the following passage:

As the Book of Revelation says:

"After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds so that no wind would blow on land or sea or on any tree. Then I saw another angel ascending from the east, with the seal of the living God. And he called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea: 'Do not harm the land or sea or the trees until we have sealed the foreheads of the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:2-3)

So what exactly am I trying to say by quoting this passage? Well I am trying to say by quoting this passage that the 144,000 are not literally the servants of our God" (Revelation 6:3) or are only so-called Jews who become Christians. Who are the servants of God? Well what is your answer? Really this is a question that you cannot simply ignore. For people who are trying to prove to yourself that "the servants of our God" (Revelation 6:3) does not mean "all the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) and instead you believe that it refers to a subset of "the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:3) However this is not the case due to the purpose of the notion being performed on the 144,000 or "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) So what am I talking about? Well the whole idea is that angels have "power to harm the land or the servants of our God." (Revelation 7:3)

So what does it mean to be sealed on your forehead? Well it means "the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) in Revelation? Well as you can probably guess from what I have been already dwell in this book so far being sealed on your forehead "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) means that God is marking you as His possession in the sense that He is watching over and protecting you belonging to Him. In other words the whole idea of being sealed on the forehead "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:2) is that those who have been sealed "with the seal of the living God" (Revelation 7:3) This means that "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) are only the so-called Jews who have become Christians by accepting Jesus as the Christ in the last days. "the servants of our God" (Revelation 7:3) refers to the first six of the seven seals. Thus since the sealing of the 144,000 and the great multitude in his vision after the first six of the seven seals but before the seventh seal. This means that this tag you might wish to say that the sealing of the 144,000 is supposed to happen after the seven trumpets and hence before the rise of the beast since the seven trumpets are the seventh seal. I mean there would be reason to say this since during the fifth trumpet Revelation references the 144,000 who are sealed.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth. They were told not to harm the land or the sea or the trees or any plant or tree, but only those who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads." (Revelation 9:3-4)

Thus as you can see there is a reason to see the 144,000 being sealed just before the fifth trumpet since the fifth trumpet directly references a group of Christians who are sealed. But what is the big deal here and what exactly do I mean by bringing this up? Well, see this is actually quite a problem. But before discussing this problem it is important to talk about why we should not be surprised that the 144,000 are being representative of God marking His people as His in the end of the age. Of the best way to think about the 144,000 is to contrast them with those who receive the mark of the beast.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God, saying to the sixth angel with the trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.'

So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind. And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like lions' heads, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues, killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, a third of mankind was killed.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like lions' heads, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, a third of mankind was killed.

Then the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands; they did not stop worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. Furthermore, they did not repent of their murders, their sorcery, immorality, and theft." (Revelation 9:13-21)

First off this passage describes four angels, killing "a third of mankind" (Revelation 9:15) and then two hundred million troops riding horses that breathe fire killing another "third of mankind" (Revelation 9:18) as you can see. Thus my point here in emphasizing this fact is that clearly the idea of the breathing horses killing two thirds of mankind is a rather significant idea. Revelation 9 warns God that no one could mistake as not being from God. I mean it would be difficult to ignore this when four angels kill a third of mankind right? Well of course not. Right?

But then as a result of this fact why does Revelation say "the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands" (Revelation 9:20) in this passage? Well the reason why these judgments are obviously from God with the whole four angels killing a third of mankind is because if there would at least be some people who turn to God as a result? Sure I am not saying everyone who is left alive would repent but I am saying is that surely there would at least be a small but significant portion of people who would repent as a result of these judgments. Therefore what I am saying is that Revelation saying the seven trumpets literally is nonsensical. For instance the sixth trumpet, Revelation 9 assuming you want to look towards a fulfillment of any kind, would literally have to mean that the whole four angels and two hundred million troops literally killed a third of the mankind because in reality if a single angel descended from heaven and killed 100 of people there would at least be a significant number of people, if not a large proportion of people, who would be in awe at seeing the power of God. Therefore it makes much more sense say that the seven trumpets, and the first six trumpets as well for that matter, will not be literally fulfilled in the future.

So what does this mean exactly? Well really this just means that we should not look at the seven trumpets as being literally fulfilled in the future and instead we should look at the seven trumpets as being symbolic. In other words we should simply read the seven trumpets as non-literal apocalyptic imagery that lacks fulfillment. As a result of this you should not be concerned with the issue of the seal of God being sealed before the seven trumpets and the issue of the seal of God being sealed after the seven trumpets because if the seven trumpets are completely non-literal then these issues literally do not matter at all. The seal of God is a metaphor for God being sealed with the seal of God as I have said since the seal of God is representative of the fact that we as faithful Christians all belong to God then this means the reference to the seal of God in the fifth trumpet does not necessarily have to refer to the 144,000. In other words you should not see the fifth trumpet in an overly literal manner.

Next I realize that what I just said may make you uncomfortable or you may even take issue with it. Therefore it is important to go over an irreconcilable contradiction with regards to the timeline Revelation presents in relation to the seven trumpets. Alright so this timeline which shows that with the idea that through Jesus's death and resurrection we have been given forgiveness for our sins and as a result of this forgiveness we have a place in heaven so that he cannot accuse us to God anymore for our sins since God has already forgiven our sins.

As Revelation says:

"And a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. She was pregnant and cried out in the pain and agony of giving birth.

Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads. His tail swept one third of the stars out of the sky, tossing them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, ready to devour her child as soon as she gave birth.

And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron sceptre. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days.

Then a war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But the dragon was not strong enough, and no longer was any place found in heaven for him and his angels. And the great dragon was hurled down—the ancient serpent, the one called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him.

And I heard a loud voice in heaven saying: 'Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God,

and the authority of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers has been thrown down—he who accuses them day and night before our God.

They have conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony. And they did not love their lives so as to shy away from death.

Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them!

But woe to the earth and the sea, with great rage the devil has come down to you. Knowing he has only a short time.' (Revelation 12:1-12)

I quoted this rather long passage in order to demonstrate that according to Revelation Satan was only thrown down from heaven so that he could "sweep one third of the stars out of the sky" (Revelation 12:4) and hence the rise of the beast. Then since the reason why God is protecting the woman in Revelation 12 is because of the fact that Satan was cast out of heaven, it would be reasonable to assume that the forgiveness of our sins then really this means that Satan was cast down immediately after Jesus's resurrection. Now you may be wondering why I bring this up but I bring this up because the seven trumpets actually reference Satan being cast out of heaven.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the fifth angel sounded his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from heaven to the earth, and the key to the pit of the Abyss. The star opened the pit of the Abyss, and from the pit came up a cloud like smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke from the pit.

And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth." (Revelation 9:1-3)

First off just to remind you in Revelation angels, or the heavenly servants of God, are symbolized as stars. Therefore my point here with this passage is that the seven trumpets Satan himself is the "star that had fallen from heaven to the earth" (Revelation 9:1) and because of the fact this passage is actually talking about Satan. This fact is further supported by the fact that this passage says Satan "was given the key to the pit of the Abyss" (Revelation 9:1) since the Abyss is a prison for demons.

So what does this all mean then? Well if Satan's fall from heaven is actually referring to Jesus's death and resurrection then this means that the fifth trumpet is actually being needed to have taken place not just shortly after Jesus's death and resurrection. This is because John sees Satan fall from heaven during the fifth trumpet. As a result of this the seven trumpets cannot happen in the future because if you want to look towards a literal fulfillment of the fulfillment of the seven trumpets then you must look towards the early first century AD which was the time period in which John lived.

Now you might say that the text refers to "a star that had fallen from heaven to earth" (Revelation 9:1) and Jesus's death is not literally a star but this would refer to Satan falling to earth in the past tense before John was alive to see it happen. However in the original Greek there is no past tense indicator that would lead us to the idea of Satan who fell from heaven to earth. Instead a more literal translation would be as follows: I saw a star out of heaven having fallen to the earth. The point here is that John sees Satan fall from heaven in his vision. Therefore you cannot say that John is referring to Satan's fall in the future and instead this would mean that if you want to see the fifth trumpet as literal then this would have to mean that the seven trumpets limits the flexibility of interpreting the seven trumpets because it makes it so the first six of the seven trumpets occur in a short period of time shortly before the rise of the beast. This then means that interpreting the seven trumpets more loosely so that they describe the general arrival of death over the last two thousand years has a very limited basis.

However really the seven trumpets pose another problem. This problem is actually that viewing the seven trumpets even slightly literally is basically nonsensical in nature. For instance consider the following passage.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God, saying to the sixth angel with the trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.

So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind. And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like lions' heads, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, a third of mankind was killed.

Then the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands; they did not stop worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. Furthermore, they did not repent of their murders, their sorcery, immorality, and theft." (Revelation 9:13-21)

First off this passage describes four angels, killing "a third of mankind" (Revelation 9:15) and then two hundred million troops riding horses that breathe fire killing another "third of mankind" (Revelation 9:18) as you can see. Thus my point here in emphasizing this fact is that clearly the idea of the breathing horses killing two thirds of mankind is a rather significant idea. Revelation 9 warns God that no one could mistake as not being from God. I mean it would be difficult to ignore this when four angels kill a third of mankind right? Well of course not. Right?

But then as a result of this fact why does Revelation say "the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands" (Revelation 9:20) in this passage? Well the reason why these judgments are obviously from God with the whole four angels killing a third of mankind is because if there would at least be some people who turn to God as a result? Sure I am not saying everyone who is left alive would repent but I am saying is that surely there would at least be a small but significant portion of people who would repent as a result of these judgments. Therefore what I am saying is that Revelation saying the seven trumpets literally is nonsensical. For instance Revelation 9 the sixth trumpet, assuming you want to look towards a fulfillment of any kind, would literally have to mean that the whole four angels and two hundred million troops literally killed a third of the mankind because in reality if a single angel descended from heaven and killed 100 of people there would at least be a significant number of people, if not a large proportion of people, who would be in awe at seeing the power of God. Therefore it makes much more sense say that the seven trumpets, and the first six trumpets as well for that matter, will not be literally fulfilled in the future.

So what does this mean exactly? Well really this just means that we should not look at the seven trumpets as being literally fulfilled in the future and instead we should look at the seven trumpets as being symbolic. In other words we should simply read the seven trumpets as non-literal apocalyptic imagery that lacks fulfillment. As a result of this you should not be concerned with the issue of the seal of God being sealed before the seven trumpets and the issue of the seal of God being sealed after the seven trumpets because if the seven trumpets are completely non-literal then these issues literally do not matter at all. The seal of God is a metaphor for God being sealed with the seal of God as I have said since the seal of God is representative of the fact that we as faithful Christians all belong to God then this means the reference to the seal of God in the fifth trumpet does not necessarily have to refer to the 144,000. In other words you should not see the fifth trumpet in an overly literal manner.

Next I realize that what I just said may make you uncomfortable or you may even take issue with it. Therefore it is important to go over an irreconcilable contradiction with regards to the timeline Revelation presents in relation to the seven trumpets. Alright so this timeline which shows that with the idea that through Jesus's death and resurrection we have been given forgiveness for our sins and as a result of this forgiveness we have a place in heaven so that he cannot accuse us to God anymore for our sins since God has already forgiven our sins.

As Revelation says:

"Then I saw the thrones, and those seated on them had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God. They had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection. (Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

Thus what I mean here is that since "those who had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years."

The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection." (Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

Thus what I mean here is that since "those who had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years."

The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection." (Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

"After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9)

My point here is that after John sees the 144,000 being sealed just before the seven trumpets sealed on earth immediately afterward he sees "a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9) This would then mean that the 144,000 are a part of the "great multitude of faithful Christians "from every nation and tribe and people and tongue" (Revelation 7:9) have died on earth. As a result the 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel are faithful Christians in the first century AD and instead the 144,000 are only refer to faithful Christians far into the future.

Therefore as a result of all the above this is why the 144,000 are not literally the seal on earth as they are relating to the last days when the seven reigns over the entire world and where a new global government will be established on earth and the beast as their so-called savior by placing their faith, trust and hope in the beast.

But what about the problem I mentioned with respect to the seal of God and the fifth trumpet?

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth. They were told not to harm the land or the sea or the trees or any plant or tree, but only those who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads." (Revelation 9:3-4)

Alright so clearly according to Revelation the fifth trumpet is supposed to have the seal of God before the seven trumpets. So why is this a problem? Well because the seven trumpets just like during the seven seals a number of times. Therefore although forth that kill a very large number of people.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the first angel sounded his trumpet, and hail and fire mixed with blood were hurled down upon the earth. A third of the earth was burned up, along with a third of the trees and all the green grass.

Then the second angel sounded his trumpet, and something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea. A third of the sea became blood, a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.

Then the third angel sounded his trumpet, and a great star burning like a torch fell from heaven and blazed up like a torch as it came to rest on the springs of water. The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters turned bitter like wormwood oil, and many people died from the bitter waters.

Then the fourth angel sounded his trumpet, and a third of the sun and moon and stars were struck. A third of the stars were darkened, a third of the day went without light, and a third of the night as well." (Revelation 8:7-12)

As the Book of Revelation also says:

"Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God, saying to the sixth angel with the trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.'

So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind." (Revelation 9:13-15)

Alright so the fact that the seven trumpets describe a rather large level of death and destruction is a rather significant chronological problem with respect to the reign of the beast. Since Revelation 9:15 says that the "four angels" are supposed to be sealed before the seven trumpets begin and since the seven trumpets are supposed to occur shortly before the reign of the beast. Revelation 9:15 seems like a problem but what happens when the beast or antichrist is supposed to kill "a third of mankind" (Revelation 9:15) has not been killed by "the four angels" (Revelation 9:15) in his sixth trumpet? Well because logically it seems to take a completely literal interpretation of Revelation 9:15 to point here is that John sees Satan fall from heaven in his vision. Therefore you cannot say that John is referring to Satan's fall in the future and instead this would mean that if you want to see the fifth trumpet as literal then this would have to mean that the seven trumpets limits the flexibility of interpreting the seven trumpets because it makes it so the first six of the seven trumpets occur in a short period of time shortly before the rise of the beast. This then means that interpreting the seven trumpets more loosely so that they describe the general arrival of death over the last two thousand years has a very limited basis.

However really the seven trumpets pose another problem. This problem is actually that viewing the seven trumpets even slightly literally is basically nonsensical in nature. For instance consider the following passage.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God, saying to the sixth angel with the trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.

So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were released to kill a third of mankind. And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like lions' heads, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, a third of mankind was killed.

(Revelation 7:4) demonstrate that although Israel will be awake in the end-time it will not be destroyed by the beast and instead it will survive as the 144,000 carry on the faith and legacy of those who came before them. Therefore instead of seeing the weakness of Israel or the Church in the last days in a negative light instead you should see it in a more positive light since even though Israel will be weak in the last days it will still live on as the last faithful Christians alive on earth carry on the legacy of ancient Israel and the faith of Abraham.

(5) "From the tribe of Judah 12,000 were sealed" – Just to identify the reader exactly 12,000 are sealed from each of the tribes of Israel is because the number twelve is representative of the twelve apostles of the New Testament period as I have said. The point of this consider what Revelation says concerning the wall of the new Jerusalem as I have already quoted.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the holy city of Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God, shining with the glory of God. Its radiance was like a most precious jewel, like a jasper, as clear as crystal. The city had a great and high wall with twelve gates inscribed with the names of the twelve tribes of Israel, and twelve angels at the gates. There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south, and three on the west. The wall of the city had twelve foundations, bearing the names of the twelve apostles of the Lambs.

The angel who spoke with me had a golden measuring rod to measure the city and its gates and walls. The city lies foursquare, with its width the same as its length. And he measured the city with the rod, and all its dimensions were equal—12,000 miles in length and width and height. And he measured its wall, and it was 144 cubits, by the human measure the angel was using." (Revelation 21:10-17)

My point with this passage is that clearly the wall is representative of both the twelve tribes of Israel or the legacy of the Old Testament period and the twelve apostles or the legacy of the New Testament period. This is because the wall has twelve gates with the names of the twelve tribes of Israel and the wall has twelve foundations with the names of the twelve apostles of Jesus. Then this is why the wall of the new Jerusalem is then said to measure "144 cubits" (Revelation 21:17) as this passage says because the number of 144 is representative of both the legacies of the Old Testament period and the New Testament period combined into one. Therefore as I have said already the same idea is view here with the number of 144,000 and this is why there are 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes of Israel.

(5-9) From the tribe of Judah 12,000 were sealed, from the tribe of Reuben 12,000, from the tribe of Gad 12,000, from the tribe of Asher 12,000, from the tribe of Naphtali 12,000, from the tribe of Manasseh 12,000, from the tribe of Simeon 12,000, from the tribe of Levi 12,000, from the tribe of Issachar 12,000, from the tribe of Zebulun 12,000, from the tribe of Joseph 12,000, and from the tribe of Benjamin 12,000. – Upon first glance this passage seems to be the twelve tribes of Israel or rather the twelve sons of Jacob mentioned in Genesis however this is not the case.

As the Book of Genesis says

"Jacob had twelve sons:

The sons of Leah were Reuben the firstborn of Jacob, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, and Zebulun.

The sons of Rachel were Joseph and Benjamin.

The sons of Rachel's maidservant Bilhah were Dan and Naphtali.

And the sons of Leah's maidservant Zilpah were Gad and Asher." (Genesis 35:22-26)

So you do not have to compare them for yourself the only difference between Revelation and the above passage in Genesis is that Revelation omits Dan and replaces it with Manasseh. Then in the order of where Manasseh came from in Genesis Joseph, one of the twelve, had two sons named Ephraim and Manasseh. Then Jacob or Israel elevated Joseph's two sons so that they are considered as his sons.

As the Book of Genesis says:

"And now your two sons born to you in Egypt before I came to you here shall be reckoned as mine: Ephraim and Manasseh shall be mine, just as Reuben and Simeon are mine." (Genesis 48:5)

Thus this is where Manasseh being a son of Jacob or Israel comes from and what Manasseh can be referred to as a tribe of Israel and why it is referred to as a tribe of Israel in Revelation. But then why is Ephraim not included in the list in Revelation? Then why is Ephraim replaced by Manasseh and Ephraim are the sons of Joseph? But perhaps more significant why is the tribe of Dan omitted in Revelation? Well first off it is important to realize that the names of the twelve tribes of Israel are not actually important. This is because the twelve tribes of Israel are simply supposed to be representative of the legacy of ancient Israel or the Old Testament period into the current period this means that instead of the actual names holding importance the importance is just in the number of names or twelve which are representative of all of the sons of Jacob or Israel. In other words the names themselves do not really matter.

That said since you no doubt want an answer I would say the best explanation for the omission of Dan and the inclusion of Manasseh and Ephraim while Joseph is included is the following. First off when the land of the twelve tribes of Israel was divided the tribe of Levi was not actually counted as one of the twelve tribes of Israel since the tribe of Levi made up the priestly class who were devoted to God and because of this they did not receive land and instead the twelve tribes that received land would support them. So in this list of the twelve Levi was of course omitted and Joseph was split into Ephraim and Manasseh while the tribe of Joseph itself was omitted which resulted in twelve tribes who received land plus the tribe of Levi who were to be priests. Alright so then why is Levi included in the list in Revelation if it was never part of the twelve tribes to be given land in ancient Israel? Well really you need to understand the role of the tribe of Levi. As I just said essentially the tribe of Levi served as priests and then the center of this priestly system was the Temple in Jerusalem and later the Second Temple in Jerusalem. This means that the tribe of Levi was essentially dependent upon the temple system in ancient Israel. Then since God used the Romans to destroy His Second Temple in ancient history in the 70 AD and the Jewish-Roman War in 70 AD really the whole priestly system of ancient Israel also passed away along with the Second Temple. Then instead of Israel having a priestly high priest who was supposed to be part of the tribe of Levi we now have a heavenly High Priest who is, of course Jesus. Furthermore through our faith in Jesus we all become priests to God as we make spiritual sacrifices to God.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"To Him who loves us and has released us from our sins by the blood, who has made us to be a kingdom, priests to His God and Father—to Him be the glory and the power forever and ever! Amen." (Revelation 1:5-6)

Therefore the reason why the tribe of Levi is now included in the list of Revelation is because the old temple system from the Old Testament is no more and instead of having a special priestly class that is separate from the rest of Israel all of Israel is the priestly class. In other words we are all part of the tribe of Levi since as faithful Christians we are all priests to God.

Now in terms of the reason why Dan is omitted and Manasseh is included but Ephraim while Joseph is included is quite simple. Really it probably just boils down to the fact that Dan and Ephraim engaged in as told in the Book of First Kings.

As the Book of First Kings says:

"Jeroboam said in his heart, 'Now the kingdom might revert to the house of David. If this people go up to offer sacrifices in the house of the LORD at Jerusalem, their hearts will return to their lord, Rehoboam king of Judah; then they will kill me and return to Rehoboam king of Judah.'

After seeking advice, the king made two golden calves and said to the people, 'Going up to Jerusalem is too much for you, O Israel, are your gods, who brought you up out of the land of Egypt.'

One calf he set up in Bethel, and the other in Dan. And this thing became a sin; the people walked as far as Dan to worship before one of the calves.

Jeroboam also built shrines on the high places and appointed from among the lots of people priests who were not Levites. And Jeroboam ordained a feast like the fifteenth day of the eighth month, like the feast that was in Judah, and he offered sacrifices on the altar. He made this offering in Bethel to sacrifice to the calves he had set up, and he appointed priests in Bethel for the high places he had set up." (1 Kings 12:26-32)

The key point here is that idolatrous golden calves were set up in Dan, one of the tribes of Israel to be given land, and in Bethel which was a city in Ephraim which was also one of the tribes of Israel to be given land. Then since the ancient Israelites building and worshiping a golden calf after the Exodus was something that God most definitely did not like the tribes of Dan and Ephraim both had golden calves set up in their territory would definitely be extremely sinful and offensive to God. I mean to say that God hates idolatry based on what He says and what happens in the Old Testament would be a mature understatement. Furthermore based on what you have already read with regards to the letters to the seven churches it is clear that Revelation is also extremely against idolatry as well. Furthermore arguably the main purpose of Revelation is to warn us against idolatry in the form following and worshiping the beast. Thus based on what Revelation says obviously God wants us to know that He absolutely hates idolatry to the highest possible degree so that it is a sin that eclipses all others. Sure you might disagree with idolatry being the worst sin but you cannot disagree with idolatry being an absolutely abhorrent sin that God completely hates. This fact is then why Dan and Ephraim are omitted from the list of the twelve tribes of Israel in Revelation. Really God just wants to emphasize that fact that He absolutely hates idolatry and He of course does not want people to be not including Dan and Ephraim as I just said.

But then why is Joseph included? Well if God wants to include Dan and Ephraim to emphasize that He absolutely hates idolatry and still holds a grievance against Israel and Ephraim for their idolatry with the golden calves that were set up in their land then why would He still want to include would be Joseph. Therefore even though Joseph's son Ephraim is already include so Joseph is represented Revelation omits Ephraim and replaces it with the other two tribes instead of eleven. This fact that the tribe of Manasseh is basically omitted and not then be considered good evidence that the list of the twelve tribes of Israel in Revelation is not deliberately made to exclude Dan and Ephraim to emphasize the fact that God hates idolatry.

Now at this might have seemed to you that it is time to summarize it all. The original twelve sons of Jacob or Israel are Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Dan, Naphtali, Gad, Asher, Benjamin and Joseph. Joseph would then take the place of Levi and Joseph, Manasseh. Thus really there are either thirteen or fourteen tribes of Israel depending on if you want to count Joseph with his sons Ephraim and Manasseh or just Joseph himself and Manasseh. Next in terms of the twelve tribes of Israel to be given land in ancient Israel the priests so that they were not given land. Then the tribe of Joseph would then be split into Ephraim and Manasseh so Joseph did not exist as a tribe that would be twelve in number. Then in the twelve tribes of Reuben, Simeon, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Dan, Naphtali, Gad, Asher, Benjamin, Ephraim and Manasseh so Joseph did not exist as a tribe that would be twelve in number. In the twelve tribes of Reuben, Simeon, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Dan, Naphtali, Gad, Asher, Benjamin, Ephraim and Manasseh so Joseph given land. Next with regards to the list of the twelve tribes in Revelation there are fourteen tribes if you include Joseph with his sons Ephraim and Manasseh. Then since Revelation wants to include the tribe of Levi due to the fact that we are all now priests we are the priests of God the best way to get the fourteen tribes down to twelve in Revelation is to omit the tribes of Dan and Ephraim due to the fact that idolatrous golden calves were set up within their territory in the Old Testament period. As a result of this the twelve tribes of Israel as given by Revelation are now Judah, Reuben, Gad, Asher, Naphtali, Manasseh, Simeon, Levi, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph and Benjamin.

2 – Praise from the Great Multitude

(9) After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches.

Then one of the elders addressed me: "These in white robes," he asked, "who are they, and where have they come from?"

(14) "Sir," I answered, "you know."

So he replied, "These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and have made them white by the blood of the Lamb. (15) For this reason, they are before the throne of God and serve Him day and night in His temple; and the One seated on the throne will spread His tent over them. (16) 'Never again will they hunger, and never again will they thirst. The sun will not shine down upon them, nor any scorching heat.

(17) For the Lamb in the center of the throne will be their shepherd. "He will lead them to springs of living water," and "God will wipe away every tear from their eyes."

2.1 – Commentary

(9) "After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." – First off in contrast to the 144,000 who John saw on earth John sees the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) in heaven as the phrase "after this" implies that we are "standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9) in which we see that the great multitude is standing before the throne of God and Jesus which is heaven. In fact this is supposed to be in heaven. This means that the great multitude has died on earth at some point. Then because of this fact this is why Revelation says "They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9) The idea here is that white robes represent the purity, wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. Furthermore Jesus promises us that "he who overcomes will be dressed in white." (Revelation 3:5) The palm branch represents victory, triumph and eternal life. Therefore the idea here with the palm branches in their branches is that these faithful Christians have died on earth as faithful Christians and because of this fact they have overcome the world so they will receive eternal life in the resurrection so that they can live with God in the new earth.

This then leads to another important point. This point is that this "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is not actually in heaven yet. Because the phrase "after this" in this passage is entirely metaphorical and non-literal as I explained in my commentary on Revelation 6 with regards to the fact that numbers in Revelation do not exist. But alright sure immortal and immaterial souls might be in heaven but the idea that no matter where, how or when we die that as along as we die as faithful Christians then we will not forget about us. To the contrary when we die in our faith we join God in spirit as we are now waiting for the resurrection of the dead and the resurrection of the elect so that we can be raised from the dead to eternal life to live with God forever more in the new heaven and new earth. That said there are three points to make here with regards to the "whole great multitude "who have come out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:14) in this verse.

The first point is that in that the great multitude has "come out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:14) and they are "standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9) in which we see that the great multitude is standing before the throne of God and Jesus which is heaven. This means that the great multitude has died on earth at some point. Then because of this fact this is why Revelation says "They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9) The idea here is that white robes represent the purity, wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. Furthermore Jesus promises us that "he who overcomes will be dressed in white." (Revelation 3:5) The palm branch represents victory, triumph and eternal life. Therefore the idea here with the palm branches in their branches is that these faithful Christians have died on earth as faithful Christians and because of this fact they have overcome the world so they will receive eternal life in the resurrection so that they can live with God in the new earth.

The second point is that the great multitude has "come out of the great tribulation" (Revelation 7:14) so they are alive! Will because we just before from God's perspective no one is dead and everyone all are alive to Him since He is all powerful.

As Jesus says:

"He is not the God of the dead, but of the living. You are quite wrong!" (Mark 12:28)

Then just to remind you this fact makes sense when you think about God as the Author and our universe like a movie. Imagine that you are a writer of a movie or novel from your perspective you are the author so you write the plot of in your novel do not actually die when they die in the story. Rather they just disappear from the story as they are dead because they are gone when they die however outside of your perspective they are still alive since they are alive in your mind and all you need to do for them to be again is to write them back into your novel. Thus the same idea is in view here with God. This means that from God's perspective the dead in Christ or faithful people are not actually dead and instead they are alive in Christ.

Thus the purpose here with the "multitude too large to count" (Revelation 7:9) is that Revelation is saying to the faithful who have come before us are not actually dead from God's perspective but they are alive in Christ and God will live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to Jerusalem to worship God and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to heaven to be with God and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to the new earth and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to the new heaven and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to the throne of God and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to the Lamb and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to the Holy Spirit and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to God and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to God and live on in Him. Then as they live on in the people go up to God

is any value in looking towards a future fulfillment of the sixth trumpet.

All that said I would actually say trying to look towards a future fulfillment of the sixth trumpet actually does much more harm than good. This is because the sixth trumpet is supposed to occur before the rise of the beast. This means that if you believe the sixth trumpet has not occurred yet then you would expect to see a huge and terrifying rise of the beast comes. But what if Revelation never intends there to be a specific singular fulfillment of the sixth trumpet in the future? Or what if there was a specific fulfillment of the sixth trumpet in the past in a past war like World War II? In these cases you would be looking towards a future fulfillment that either will never come or has already come. Then as a result of looking for something that will never happen in the future you risk falling into teetgatching the following the beast before you may believe that the beast cannot be the beast until the sixth trumpet is sounded and a huge and terrifying war erupts.

Now you might be skeptical of what I have said here with regards to the fact there either may not be a fulfillment of the sixth trumpet in the future or that the fulfillment of the sixth trumpet has already occurred during World War II. But as I have demonstrated already there is good reason to not use a future and specific fulfillment of at least the first six of the seven trumpets in the future. This is because the seven first and fifth trumpet John sees Satan fall from heaven to the earth. Then as you know in reality Satan was actually cast out of heaven to the earth during or shortly after Jesus's resurrection from the dead. Once again the idea here is that Satan lost his place in Heaven since God does not listen to his accusations against the faithful as a result of Jesus's sacrifice for the forgiveness of our sins. All that said you point with all of this is that really you cannot look towards even a somewhat literal future fulfillment of the third and fifth trumpets.

Furthermore this also means that you cannot construct timelines around the seven trumpets because timelines with respect to the seven trumpets are quite obviously nonexistent due to the contradiction of the seven trumpets needing to be fulfilled in the past and yet needing to be in the future after a great multitude of faithful Christians have died on earth as I have said and demonstrated already. In other words really the seven trumpets are completely nonexistent in terms of specific events and timelines with regards to what you can come to pass before Jesus returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God. As a result of all this the seven trumpets should not be seen as even remotely literal in terms of fulfillment let alone completely literal. Instead the seven trumpets should be seen as entirely figurative and metaphorical.

Alright but what if despite everything I have said already you still think that I was wrong and that the seven seals together with the seven trumpets are a timeline of events that we need to watch out for in the future? Sure you may agree with me that much of the seven seals and seven trumpets are figurative and metaphorical in nature but for some reason you still insist on seeing them all describe real world events that will definitely happen in the future. In this case the fulfillment of the seven seals and seven trumpets may not be completely obvious due to the figurative language that Revelation uses but from your perspective this is all the more reason to carefully consider whether the seven seals and seven trumpet are so that we can understand the warning signs of the times so that we need to watch out for. Therefore in this case with respect to what I said about the seven trumpets not being a literal future timeline you just may wish to discount it all together. In this case I insist there is still a timeline despite the evidence to the contrary. So what about this viewpoint? Well really if you actually believe all of this I would say you are denying reality since the only way you could still deny what I have said is if you deny the reality of what Revelation says. But you may disagree agree with this.

So if you believe the complete opposite so that you believe I am delusional by denying the so-called clear timeline that Revelation presents? Well maybe I am wrong about the fact that the third and fifth trumpets are referring to Satan so that instead the star that has fallen from heaven actually refers to a different angel? Then if this is the case then it is not at least possible for there to be a future timeline with respect to the seven trumpets if we are to creatively interpret everything else I have said? Well maybe I suppose anything is possible if you wish to deny or ignore everything I have said so far. Therefore it is important to emphasize to you that the Book of Revelation is undeniably not a timeline of the end times. This because of the fact that the whole of Revelation is not a timeline it is absolutely nonsensical to view specific parts as necessarily being a timeline when a different view makes a lot more sense given the whole context of Revelation as a whole. So what am I talking about exactly? Well I am referring to the fact that the Book of Revelation as a whole is not a timeline because it is not intended to be read as Revelation is a collection of disjointed or disordered scenes that are supposed to be viewed completely spiritually rather than literally.

Now I realize it has been quite a long time since you read the prologue called Outline of Revelation so allow me to remind you. In short the Book of Revelation is written in a nonlinear manner and there are a total of five major sections with some of the sections being an expansion of the previous sections. The first part is Revelation 1 to 3, the second part is Revelation 4 to 11, the third part is Revelation 12 to 16, the fourth part is Revelation 17 to 19 and the fifth part is Revelation 20 to 22. For example the idea here is that Revelation 12 to 16 is largely an expansion of Revelation 4 to 11 that provides more detail about the things that John previously saw in his vision. For instance the first time the beast of Revelation is mentioned in Revelation 11.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"When the two witnesses have finished their testimony, the beast that comes up from the Abyss will attack them and kill them, and will overpower and kill them." (Revelation 11:7)

However at the end of Revelation 11 the seventh angel blows the seventh trumpet and the trumpet which ushers in the eternal Kingdom of God and with it the final judgment and the judgment of the dead.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and loud voices called out in heaven:

"The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, and He will reign forever and ever." (Revelation 11:15)

And as the Book of Revelation also says:

"The nations were enraged, and Your wrath has come. The time has come to judge the dead and to reward Your servants the prophets, as well as the saints and those who fear Your name, both small and great— and to destroy those who destroy the earth." (Revelation 11:18)

Therefore this means that clearly if you wish to take the Book of Revelation completely literally and as a literal timeline of the end times then with the seventh trumpet all those who oppose God have been defeated including the beast and "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, and He will reign forever and ever." (Revelation 11:15) In other words the timeline of the end times as now over so that there is nothing else to look forward to in Revelation here on earth. If you want to dispute this then Revelation directly says "The time has come to judge the dead." (Revelation 11:18) which means that the judgment of the dead is now in our past and since the judgment of the dead will only occur once all of those who rebelled against God are dead including the beast this means that the beast and all those who rebel against God are now dead. But wait there not another chapter and chapters of Revelation and does the beast not appear in chapters 13? Well yes of course.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea. There were ten royal crowns on its horns and blasphemous names on its heads." (Revelation 13:1)

Then since Revelation only previously mentioned the beast and did not talk about what it is supposed to be this is why more information is provided in the beast in Revelation 13 and 17. Although keep in mind that Revelation 13 and 17 are in different sections so that Revelation 17 to 19 is an expansion on Revelation 13 to 16. The point to my point here is just that Revelation is not a literal timeline where you have to do is read what it says to understand what will happen before the end of the world. In other words this is because the scenes that John sees in his vision are clearly not in order.

Now at this point you may agree with me here and say that nothing I have said discounts Revelation being a literal timeline since we can just break up Revelation in the following parts 1 to 3, Revelation 4 to 11, Revelation 12 to 16, Revelation 17 to 19 and Revelation 20 to 22. I mean Revelation is in chapters after all so it is easy to assume that they are in order. Chapters and verse numbers were never originally included in any of the books of the Bible and instead it took over a thousand years for chapter numbers to be added to the books of the Bible. This means that for over a thousand years after the Book of Revelation was written there was no neat and simple gap between Revelation 11 and Revelation 12 so that you could just divide it up at this gap. Instead the text of Revelation was a single block of text from start to end with no chapter breaks. To understand this better consider the following passage.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and loud voices called out in heaven:

"The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, and He will reign forever and ever."

And the twenty-four elders who sit on their thrones before God fell on their faces and worshiped God, saying:

"We give thanks to You, O Lord God Almighty, the One who is and which was, because You have taken Your great power and have begun to reign. The nations were enraged, and Your wrath has come. The time has come to judge the dead and to reward Your servants the prophets, as well as the saints and those who fear Your name, both small and great— and to destroy those who destroy the earth."

Then the temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark of His covenant appeared in His temple. And there were flashes of lightning, and rumblings, and peals of thunder, and an earthquake, and a great hailstorm."

And a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. She was pregnant and cried out in pain and agony of giving birth.

Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads. His tail swept a third of the stars from the sky, tossing them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, ready to devour her child as soon as she gave birth.

And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days. (Revelation 11:15-12:6)

As you can probably see in this passage without the chapter number headings the text of Revelation does not really finish off the book so that there are no clear breaks in the narrative. This means that there is no reason why the Revelation into the sections of Revelation 4 to 11 and Revelation 12 to 16 and Revelation 12 is directly connected to Revelation 11. But you may not just split at the phrase "And a great sign appeared in heaven" (Revelation 12:1) in this passage? I mean this is where it says that God will rule all nations after all and it is the start of a new paragraph and sentence. Well no you can't because Revelation and the other books of the New Testament for all matter were written when they were written in Koine Greek as I have said before. But the thing is in Koine Greek the 1st and early 2nd AD there were no punctuation marks and there were no paragraphs or sentences. This means the entirety of the Book of Revelation in the first century AD was just a single block of Greek text. Now this may be hard to imagine so consider the following example in English and keep in mind Koine Greek did not have lowercase letters either as I have already said.

THISISAREALLYHARDTOREADINENGLISHBECAUSEYOUWILLPROBABLYREADTHisASONEWORDANDNOTSEEAWORDLikeTHISBECAUSEYOUARENOTREADINGYOURNATIVELANGUAGEANDYOUCANSEETHATREALLYHARDANDFASTBECAUSEYOUARENOTREADINGYOURNATIVELANGUAGEWHICHMEANSTHATYOUARENOTREADINGFAMILIARWORDSANDYOUCANSEETHATREALLYHARDANDFASTBECAUSEWEARENOTREADINGYOURNATIVELANGUAGEWEARENOTREADINGFAMILIARWORDSANDWEARENOTREADINGWITHEASEBECAUSEWEARENOTREADINGOUR

immaterial in nature. Then unclean is of course the opposite of clean with clean referring to being sanctified or rather of God. This would mean that something that is unclean is evil in the sense that everything and everyone that stands opposed to God in some form is evil. This means that demons or unclean spirits are invisible and immaterial forces that are evil or rather that are in rebellion against God. Then in order to spread rebellion against God these demons or unclean spirits are able to possess people and make them sick. This might not make sense but the idea here is that for ultimately negative things that happen to a person like sickness and a lack of faith to not only themselves but to those around them.

The idea here is that if a demon makes one person sick then not only does the one person who is sick have their faith tested as they wonder why God is allowing them to be sick but everyone around them has their faith tested as well as they also wonder why God is allowing this person to be sick. In other words it should see demons as invisible spiritual forces that are evil in nature that seek to lead Christians who do not have their name in the Book of Life into apostasy by tempting and tormenting them. Therefore this would be the main reason why demons or unclean spirits possess people to make them sick as well as why God allows them to possess people. Remember Satan's goal is that of the accuser and his role is to test our faith and the reason why God allows Satan to do fulfill the purpose that God created him for. This means that it makes sense that God would also allow demons or unclean spirits to exist since demons fulfill the same purpose as Satan.

But what exactly is a demon exactly? I mean just saying they are invisible and immaterial forces that test people's faith really does not help much. Well really it is quite simple. Demons are fallen angels who have joined Satan in his rebellion against God.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> "Then a war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But the dragon was not strong enough, and no longer was any place found in heaven for him and his angels. And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him." (Revelation 12:7-9)

Now although I previously said that Satan being cast out of Heaven to the earth in Revelation 12 concerns Jesus's death and resurrection in the first century AD really there is another perspective here. This perspective is that Satan was created by God to be in rebellion against Him. Now you might doubt this but this would make sense in the context of Satan being with Adam and Eve into temptation in the Garden of Eden by deceiving them into eating from the Tree of Knowledge through the snake. This in this context Satan was always the deceiver who is in rebellion against God since from the beginning God created him for this role. Then if this is true then it would also make sense that God created more angels who were created to be in rebellion against Him just like Satan. Therefore the idea here is that demons are rebellious angels who have joined Satan in his rebellion against God. But remember that these rebellious angels are not a threat to God because God created them to be rebellious so that they may carry out His purpose of testing and accusing the people of the earth.

This then relates to the above passage from Revelation 12 in that Revelation 12 does not actually concern Satan's rebellion against God and instead it is describing how Satan and his fallen angels or demons lost their place in heaven. The idea here is that Satan and his fallen angels or demons have joined the accusers and their job is to test the faith of the people of the earth then go and fall to earth when the people of the earth fail their test of faith by sinning and rebelling against God. However through Jesus's death and resurrection we have been granted forgiveness for our sins. This means that God no longer listens to Satan and his demon's accusations against us because through our faith in Jesus we are all God as absolved our sins and rebellion against Him. Then because of this fact this would then be why Satan and his demons have lost their place in heaven since Satan and his demons can no longer accuse God's people anymore. Furthermore I would like to emphasise that this would also be why Satan's angels or demons lost their place in heaven as well because after Jesus's death and resurrection they can no longer accuse the fallen angels God just as Satan does. Therefore as a result there is good reason to see demons as being fallen angels who were created to fulfill the same role as Satan.

Now you may dispute this by saying that demons are something else so that they are not fallen angels. However Jesus implies that demons are fallen angels.

As Jesus says:

> "Then He will say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.' (Matthew 25:41)

My point here with this verse is that Satan and all his angels who have rebelled against God with him are to be cast into the eternal fire in the age in the Lake of Fire. This fact then relates to demons because if demons are not a type of unclean spirits and if demons are not supposed to be fallen angels then why would God keep the demons around but that the fallen angels? In other words it makes the most sense to say that Satan's angels or demons are invisible and they have to assume that all the demons will be destroyed even though Jesus only says the fallen angels will be destroyed. Therefore as a result I do not believe there is much if any basis to say that demons are not fallen angels.

Now you may dispute this but my response to this dispute is also my answer to another more important question. So what question am I talking about? Well as you already have and I have extensively demonstrated that we do not have immaterial and immortal souls and that instead we are material and mortal beings. Thus if immortal and immaterial souls do not exist then what does it make any sense to say that demons exist? I mean are demons and angels as well to be not supposed to be spirits which are immaterial and probably immortal as well in the sense that they do not age? Well you think what angels are demons are supposed to be. But then how does it make sense to say that we do not have an immortal and immaterial soul while angels and demons are basically what an immortal and immaterial soul is supposed to be? Now although this may seem like quite a mouthful or even counterpoint to make with regards to if immortal and immaterial souls exist or not really there is a very simple answer.

You see angels and fallen angels or demons are spiritual beings which are the other than are earthly beings. But what is a spiritual being exactly? Well a spiritual being is a being that has been created by God out of spirit or pneuma (πνεῦμα). Now this may not make sense but remember that spirit is an invisible and immaterial force. Thus the idea here is that a spiritual being is made of spirit and things like we are and the things of our universe and instead a spiritual being is made out of a higher level substance or spirit that transcends the material nature of our world and the reality that we find ourselves in. This means that spiritual beings like angels and demons are spirits and are not material or of our world and instead they were all born in the spiritual realm of heaven. On the other hand we are earthly and natural beings that were created to be bound within the confines of the material reality we find ourselves in. Therefore my point here is that angels and fallen angels or demons are spirits and a different category than us as humans. Thus there is no contradiction between the fact that we do not have immortal and immaterial souls and the existence of angels and fallen angels or demons. Instead God simply created angels and fallen angels to be a higher level of spirit and beings while He created us as lower level earthly beings. This is then the reason why we do not have immortal and immaterial souls because we are of the earth and have been born of the earth. On the other hand angels and fallen angels or demons have been born of heaven or the spiritual realm. Although keep in mind that even though fallen angels or demons were cast out of heaven they are still of heaven in the sense that they originated in heaven as spiritual beings.

Now all of this might be confusing for you. I mean what kind of powers does a spiritual being have exactly? What whatever powers and how much power as God wants them to have of course but really this does not answer the real question. Therefore as an example imagine if our world was like the game where there are all players in the game and we do not realize we are playing the game. Now imagine that this game has moderators or administrators that have certain powers over the game which because they have access to a higher level system that the creator of the game created above the game itself. Now imagine that these moderators or administrators are not like us who are the players of the game and instead they are part of this higher level system that the creator of the game created above the game itself. The idea here is that this system transcends the game and allows the moderators or administrators to do the job that the creator of the game as given them to do. Of course since these moderators or administrators are part of this higher level system they can use the powers of this higher level system to control and manipulate the game in ways that we are being in subject to whatever the creator of the game allows them to do. This means that the moderators or administrators of the game are actually extensions of the creator of the game in the sense that the creator of the game has control of everything so that the moderators and administrators are ultimately unless the creator of the game approves of it.

Alright now this example should be straight forward to understand but if it is not then allow me to explain. The idea here is that our material world is like the game while heaven or the spiritual realm is like the higher level system above the game. Then the moderators or administrators of the game are like angels and fallen angels or demons. Then of course the creator of the game is like God. Thus you can see the purpose of this example was to first off show that angels and fallen angels or demons are of a different category compared to us. This means that we are not comparable. Then second in terms of what powers angels and fallen angels or demons have really angels and fallen angels or demons have access to powers that transcend our world and because of these powers they can do whatever they want as long as God allows it. For instance in the case of fallen angels or demons possessing people God allows them to manifest themselves into our world physically and instead God requires them to possess someone? Of course we do not actually know for sure and this is just an example of what I am talking about. On the other hand in terms of angels consider the angels in the book of Revelation or the angels in the Old Testament. These angels have been given power by God to fulfill the purpose because of this fact the only limitation on an angel's power is the limitation that God places upon them like I said. On the other hand we have material limitations since we are limited as earthly beings instead of spiritual beings.

If all this still does not make sense in relation to what it means to be a spiritual being compared to an earthly being then think of spirit like magic. Think of magic in relation to the kind of magic in a typical fantasy setting where people use magic to manipulate the world in a variety of ways. Therefore in the case of fallen and fallen angels or demons are like beings that can use magic. On the other hand we as humans we cannot use magic. This again means that angels and fallen angels or demons are categorically different than us.

Alright so I have explained why it makes sense that we do not have an immortal and immaterial soul as earthly beings even though spiritual beings like angels and demons are supposed to be. Now allow me to explain why this answer relates to the fact that demons are fallen angels. Really the idea here is that angels and fallen demons are spiritual beings and because of this fact fallen angels are demons. If you still want to dispute this then here are two questions. First of where do demons come from? The answer to this question is that God created angels and the demons. My point here is that you may object to fallen angels being demons on the basis that you might not like the idea that God created Jesus to be the fallen. Jesus does not want to see demons as not having anything to do with God and that they are independent. However in reality God is the creator of all angels and instead the idea is that God created all demons and it does not matter how you want to slice it. The fact is that demons are exactly are the fallen angels who are with Satan doing! What I mean by this is that if you think that demons are not created by God and that Satan is the ruler of all demons then what are the fallen angels doing? Are the fallen angels not subject to the will of Satan.

As Jesus says:

> "Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels." (Matthew 25:41)

My point here with this verse is that Satan and all his angels who have rebelled against God with him are to be cast into the eternal fire in the age in the Lake of Fire. This fact then relates to demons because if demons are not of unclean spirits and if demons are not supposed to be fallen angels then why would God keep the demons around but that the fallen angels? In other words it makes the most sense to say that Satan's angels or demons are invisible and they have to assume that all the demons will be destroyed even though Jesus only says the fallen angels will be destroyed. Therefore as a result I do not believe there is much if any basis to say that demons are not fallen angels.

Now you may dispute this but my response to this dispute is also my answer to another more important question. So what question am I talking about? Well as you already have and I have extensively demonstrated that we do not have immaterial and immortal souls and that instead we are material and mortal beings. Thus if immortal and immaterial souls do not exist then what does it make any sense to say that demons exist? I mean are demons and angels as well to be not supposed to be spirits which are immaterial and probably immortal as well in the sense that they do not age? Well you think what angels are demons are supposed to be. But then how does it make sense to say that we do not have an immortal and immaterial soul while angels and demons are basically what an immortal and immaterial soul is supposed to be? Now although this may seem like quite a mouthful or even counterpoint to make with regards to if immortal and immaterial souls exist or not really there is a very simple answer.

You see angels and fallen angels or demons are spiritual beings which are the other than are earthly beings. But what is a spiritual being exactly? Well a spiritual being is a being that has been created by God out of spirit or pneuma (πνεῦμα). Now this may not make sense but remember that spirit is an invisible and immaterial force. Thus the idea here is that a spiritual being is made of spirit and things like we are and the things of our universe and instead a spiritual being is made out of a higher level substance or spirit that transcends the material nature of our world and the reality that we find ourselves in. This means that spiritual beings like angels and demons are spirits and are not material or of our world and instead they were all born in the spiritual realm of heaven. On the other hand we are earthly and natural beings that were created to be bound within the confines of the material reality we find ourselves in. Therefore my point here is that angels and fallen angels or demons are spirits and a different category than us as humans. Thus there is no contradiction between the fact that we do not have immortal and immaterial souls and the existence of angels and fallen angels or demons. Instead God simply created angels and fallen angels to be a higher level of spirit and beings while He created us as lower level earthly beings. This is then the reason why we do not have immortal and immaterial souls because we are of the earth and have been born of the earth. On the other hand angels and fallen angels or demons have been born of heaven or the spiritual realm. Although keep in mind that even though fallen angels or demons were cast out of heaven they are still of heaven in the sense that they originated in heaven as spiritual beings.

Now all of this might be confusing for you. I mean what kind of powers does a spiritual being have exactly? What whatever powers and how much power as God wants them to have of course but really this does not answer the real question. Therefore as an example imagine if our world was like the game where there are all players in the game and we do not realize we are playing the game. Now imagine that this game has moderators or administrators that have certain powers over the game which because they have access to a higher level system that the creator of the game created above the game itself. Now imagine that these moderators or administrators are not like us who are the players of the game and instead they are part of this higher level system that the creator of the game created above the game itself. The idea here is that this system transcends the game and allows the moderators or administrators to do the job that the creator of the game as given them to do. Of course since these moderators or administrators are part of this higher level system they can use the powers of this higher level system to control and manipulate the game in ways that we are being in subject to whatever the creator of the game allows them to do. This means that the moderators or administrators of the game are actually extensions of the creator of the game in the sense that the creator of the game has control of everything so that the moderators and administrators are ultimately unless the creator of the game approves of it.

Alright now this example should be straight forward to understand but if it is not then allow me to explain. The idea here is that our material world is like the game while heaven or the spiritual realm is like the higher level system above the game. Then the moderators or administrators of the game are like angels and fallen angels or demons. Then of course the creator of the game is like God. Thus you can see the purpose of this example was to first off show that angels and fallen angels or demons are of a different category compared to us. This means that we are not comparable. Then second in terms of what powers angels and fallen angels or demons have really angels and fallen angels or demons have access to powers that transcend our world and because of these powers they can do whatever they want as long as God allows it. For instance in the case of fallen angels or demons possessing people God allows them to manifest themselves into our world physically and instead God requires them to possess someone? Of course we do not actually know for sure and this is just an example of what I am talking about. On the other hand in terms of angels consider the angels in the book of Revelation or the angels in the Old Testament. These angels have been given power by God to fulfill the purpose because of this fact the only limitation on an angel's power is the limitation that God places upon them like I said. On the other hand we have material limitations since we are limited as earthly beings instead of spiritual beings.

If all this still does not make sense in relation to what it means to be a spiritual being compared to an earthly being then think of spirit like magic. Think of magic in relation to the kind of magic in a typical fantasy setting where people use magic to manipulate the world in a variety of ways. Therefore in the case of fallen and fallen angels or demons are like beings that can use magic. On the other hand we as humans we cannot use magic. This again means that angels and fallen angels or demons are categorically different than us.

Alright so I have explained why it makes sense that we do not have an immortal and immaterial soul as earthly beings even though spiritual beings like angels and demons are supposed to be. Now allow me to explain why this answer relates to the fact that demons are fallen angels. Really the idea here is that angels and fallen demons are spiritual beings and because of this fact fallen angels are demons. If you still want to dispute this then here are two questions. First of where do demons come from? The answer to this question is that God created angels and the demons. My point here is that you may object to fallen angels being demons on the basis that you might not like the idea that God created Jesus to be the fallen. Jesus does not want to see demons as not having anything to do with God and that they are independent. However in reality God is the creator of all angels and instead the idea is that God created all demons and it does not matter how you want to slice it. The fact is that demons are exactly are the fallen angels who are with Satan doing! What I mean by this is that if you think that demons are not created by God and that Satan is the ruler of all demons then what are the fallen angels doing? Are the fallen angels not subject to the will of Satan.

As Jesus says:

> "Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.'

that results from falling into temptation by placing our hope in the things of the world.

In other words the only path to hope and salvation is through being a faithful Christian by having faith in Jesus and obeying God. Thus those who lack faith in Jesus (or do not obey God will never attain salvation and because of this fact they do not have hope. Instead the unfaithful will live a life of torment as their own temptations, sins and rebellion against God eats away at their life.

(6) "In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will long to die, but death will escape them." – As a result of living a life of torment as their own temptations, sins and rebellion against God eat away at their life the unfaithful (due being cut off from God) they realize that the earthly things of this world cannot delivery them from their pain. As a result of this they "will seek death and will not find it; they will long to die, but death will escape them." (Revelation 9:6) In other words once demons torment the unfaithful they will become depressed as they lose hope for the future and because of this "they will long to die, but death will escape them" (Revelation 9:6) because they are unable to kill themselves by committing suicide.

Thus the point here with all this is that temptation, sin and rebellion against God does not immediately kill a person. Instead it means a person's life worse as they lose hope for the future. However always remember that only through being born again through faith in Jesus can anyone be given relief from this torment because only through faith in Jesus can our sins be forgiven. Furthermore Jesus is the Christ and because of this fact it is Jesus who will usher in the eternal Kingdom of God which is our only hope for eternal and true salvation. On the other hand there is no salvation to be found in our world that we can create with our human hands because only God can provide salvation. Always remember that our world look towards the Beast for eternal life and salvation because if you do all you will eternally suffer in torment and damnation. Salvation is from God alone and it is not from the world.

(7-10) "And the locusts looked like horses prepared for battle, with something like crowns of gold on their heads, and faces like the faces of men. They had hair like that of women, and teeth like those of lions. They had scales like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was like the roar of many horses and chariots rushing into battle. They had tails with stingers like those of scorpions, in these they had the locusts are described in fearsome, horrifying and powerful terms because these are the demons of the Abyss that Satan himself commands. Furthermore temptation, sin and rebellion against God are very real and powerful forces in the world so it would only make sense that demons would be described as they are described in powerful terms. Thus you should not view demons or rather locusts literally but rather figuratively. But what if you want to take these Bible verses literally for some reason so that you actually think demons look this way or you want to yet that there are supposed to be literal locusts that look this way? Well if what I have said about the symbolic nature of Satan and metaphors of the Book of Revelation is not enough then consider how Satan is described:

As the Beast of Revelation says:

"Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with Seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3)

My point here with this verse is that if you want to take the descriptions of the locusts literally rather demons as being literal then you must also take the description of "the huge red dragon" (Revelation 12:3) or rather Satan as being literal. Then as a result of this you must believe that Satan is literally "a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3) Of course in reality Satan is not a dragon and instead he is a fallen angel. Although if you want to also insist that the description of Satan is literal for some reason then you would mean that angels are dragons with many heads and horns. Of course this is contradicted elsewhere in the Book of Revelation and the Bible is speaking about angels and God in point with all this is that if the description of Satan is clearly not literal then why would the descriptions of Satan's demons or fallen angels from the Abyss be literal? Therefore clearly this description of the locusts or rather demons should not be viewed literally at all and instead it could be seen as highly figurative and what it is supposed to emphasize the power of these locusts or rather demons.

Then because of this fact you should look at sources of temptation in your life and in the world in general that is equally horrifying as these demons are described. Always remember that ultimately the only way to escape eternal life in the eternal Kingdom of God is to persist in your faith and obedience to God as a faithful Christian until the end finally comes or death takes you.

(10) "which had the power to injure people for five months." – Once again these demons do not have the power to kill but instead they torment. Then for five months means a partial eternity judgment as stated before. Thus here in that those who are unsealed will be tempted and suffer but not completely so since God's wrath is poured out now until the final judgment arrives where the world will be swept clean as all those who rebel against God are killed and destroyed.

(11) "They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." – First off Abaddon in Hebrew as well as Apollyon in Greek both mean destroyer so this verse is saying that the demons of the abyss are ruled by a fallen angel named Destroyer. But then who is this fallen angel? Well I have already and I should mention how figurative and metaphorical Revelation is obviously this fallen angel is never actually Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer. Instead the name Destroyer is representative of what this fallen angel does. Now you can probably guess that Revelation is of course talking about Satan here. The name Satan means in Greek is representative of sin and rebellion against God. Then of course ultimately all those who engage in sin and rebel against God will ultimately face destruction in the Lake of Fire with the second death on the day of judgment. In other words all who follow Satan and his ways in rebellion against God will end up being destroyed. As a result this is why Satan can be called Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer since by leading all those who rebel against God to destruction Satan is a destroyer.

Then I would like to emphasize that because all who follow Satan in his rebellion against God destruction it is important to be on the lookout for Satan's lies and deceptions in our world. This is because Satan is the great deceiver for reason. My point is that the lies and deceptions of Satan may seem good upon first because them but in the end if you follow Satan's lies and deceptions then you will be led to your own destruction.

(12) "The first woe has passed. Behold, two more woes are to follow." – First off a woe is an expression of grief or denouncement towards someone or a group of people. Then the first woe is obviously the fifth trumpet. In terms of the next two woes the context of Revelation is that two witnesses are killed by the beast and the seventh trumpet is the third and final woe. Thus the idea here is that the three woes are an expression of grief and denouncement against the entire world.

But then why is the reference to the three woes even included? Well really I would say that they are included because the third woe is the seventh trumpet and the seventh trumpet brings the final judgment and with it the eternal Kingdom of God on earth. The idea here is that these three woes are representatives of God denouncing the world before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives. Then there are three woes instead of another number to provide repetition and emphasis.

2 – The Sixth Trumpet

(13) Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God (14) saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates."

(15) So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year – to kill a third of mankind. (16) And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, (19) For the power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails; indeed, their tails were like snakes, having heads with which to inflict harm." (Revelation 9:13-19)

Alright now I will go into a complete because originally the sixth trumpet says that these four angels "who were prepared for this hour and day and month and year" (Revelation 9:15) But then immediately after this as you can see John sees "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) mounted troops that are described in a similar way to the locusts from the fifth trumpet and these mounted horses kill a third of mankind. Thus my point is that if you want to take the text completely literally then really either two thirds of mankind are killed or a third of mankind is killed twice. Therefore the remaining two thirds who survived the first judgment of the sixth trumpet under Revelation should not be read or understood literally there is good reason as well as I have stated that the mankind being killed once rather than twice. This is because the second Revelation later says it sounds like only a single third of humanity is "killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths." (Revelation 9:18) the mouths of the horses.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Now the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands." (Revelation 9:20)

My point here with the text refers to the fire, smoke and sulfur as three plagues but then does not refer to the four angels killing a third of mankind as a plague. Therefore based on the above verse it stands to reason that only a single third of mankind was killed by the plagues of fire, smoke and sulfur from the horses.

Furthermore based on what the sixth trumpet says it reads "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) horsemen are directly related to "the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates" (Revelation 9:14) in the sense that the angels will release the horsemen and the mankind through the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) horsemen.

Now you may say that this does not make sense due to the fact that these are angels but I would like to point out that it is not clear that it is not the angels "who are bound at the great river Euphrates." (Revelation 9:14) This means that it would be a safe assumption to make that these angels are not obedient to God as we see angels to be and that instead they are probably fallen angels or rather demons that God has imprisoned or bound until the time comes for them to release them. You may seek to dispute the fact that these angels are fallen angels but this brings me to my second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet.

As the Book of Revelation say:

"They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." (Revelation 9:11)

Thus my point with this verse is that if Revelation refers to a fallen angel like Satan as an angel then there is good reason to see these four angels as fallen angels since again these angels were bound or rather imprisoned obviously God would not need to bind an obedient angel.

Then if these four angels are in fact fallen angels then this would mean that they are actually demons. As a result of this fact the best way to reconcile the four demons killing a third of mankind with the fire from the mouths of the horses and the demons killing a third of humanity is to say that these two hundred million horsemen are demons or at least people being deceived, influenced or possessed by demons. The reason is that the four fallen angels are powerful demons that will raise a horrifying army of demons, influencing or possessing people so that they can use that army to kill a huge portion of humanity. Thus if the relationship between the four fallen angels and the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) troops is viewed this way then really there is not an issue with the two instances of a third of mankind being killed because they are describing the same event.

Now if you doubt this relationship between the fallen angels and the horsemen I would like to point out that the horsemen are described in the exact same way as the demons from the previous fifth trumpet. Then because of this fact I would say it is best to view the horsemen as a great and powerful demonic army in the sense that it is made up of people who have been deceived, influence or possessed by demons.

All that said my main point with this comment is that the fallen angels should not be viewed literally at all. Proof of this is in the fact that the angels are released to kill a third of mankind at the start but then the rest of the vision goes on to describe that it was the horses of the two hundred million mounted troops that were responsible for the of mankind who are killed. Obviously both angels and the horses of the mounted troops are symbolic and not literal because of this fact the best way to understand the vision is to view the four angels as four fallen angels or demons that deceive, influence or possess people to use their large and powerful armies to carry out a great judgment against the world.

Alright so at this point you may be wondering what exactly these four fallen angels or demons they are talking about. Well I would say that Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind.

(7-10) "And the locusts looked like horses prepared for battle, with something like crowns of gold on their heads, and faces like the faces of men. They had hair like that of women, and teeth like those of lions. They had scales like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was like the roar of many horses and chariots rushing into battle. They had tails with stingers like those of scorpions, in these they had the locusts are described in fearsome, horrifying and powerful terms because these are the demons of the Abyss that Satan himself commands. Furthermore temptation, sin and rebellion against God are very real and powerful forces in the world so it would only make sense that demons would be described as they are described in powerful terms. Thus you should not view demons or rather locusts literally but rather figuratively. But what if you want to take these Bible verses literally for some reason so that you actually think demons look this way or you want to yet that there are supposed to be literal locusts that look this way? Well if what I have said about the symbolic nature of Satan and metaphors of the Book of Revelation is not enough then consider how Satan is described:

As the Beast of Revelation says:

"Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with Seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3)

My point here with this verse is that if you want to take the descriptions of the locusts or rather demons as being literal then you must also take the description of "the huge red dragon" (Revelation 12:3) or rather Satan as being literal. Then as a result of this you must believe that Satan is literally "a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3) Of course in reality Satan is not a dragon and instead he is a fallen angel. Although if you want to also insist that the description of Satan is literal for some reason then you would mean that angels are dragons with many heads and horns. Of course this is contradicted elsewhere in the Book of Revelation and the Bible is speaking about angels and God in point with all this is that if the description of Satan is clearly not literal then why would the descriptions of Satan's demons or fallen angels from the Abyss be literal? Therefore clearly this description of the locusts or rather demons should not be viewed literally at all and instead it could be seen as highly figurative and what it is supposed to emphasize the power of these locusts or rather demons.

Then because of this fact you should look at sources of temptation in your life and in the world in general that is equally horrifying as these demons are described. Always remember that ultimately the only way to escape eternal life in the eternal Kingdom of God is to persist in your faith and obedience to God as a faithful Christian until the end finally comes or death takes you.

(10) "which had the power to injure people for five months." – Once again these demons do not have the power to kill but instead they torment. Then for five months means a partial eternity judgment as stated before. Thus here in that those who are unsealed will be tempted and suffer but not completely so since God's wrath is poured out now until the final judgment arrives where the world will be swept clean as all those who rebel against God are killed and destroyed.

(11) "They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." – First off Abaddon in Hebrew as well as Apollyon in Greek both mean destroyer so this verse is saying that the demons of the abyss are ruled by a fallen angel named Destroyer. But then who is this fallen angel? Well I have already and I should mention how figurative and metaphorical Revelation is obviously this fallen angel is never actually Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer. Instead the name Destroyer is representative of what this fallen angel does. Now you can probably guess that Revelation is of course talking about Satan here. The name Satan means in Greek is representative of sin and rebellion against God. Then of course ultimately all those who engage in sin and rebel against God will ultimately face destruction in the Lake of Fire with the second death on the day of judgment. In other words all who follow Satan and his ways in rebellion against God will end up being destroyed. As a result this is why Satan can be called Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer since by leading all those who rebel against God to destruction Satan is a destroyer.

Then I would like to emphasize that because all who follow Satan in his rebellion against God destruction it is important to be on the lookout for Satan's lies and deceptions in our world. This is because Satan is the great deceiver for reason. My point is that the lies and deceptions of Satan may seem good upon first because them but in the end if you follow Satan's lies and deceptions then you will be led to your own destruction.

(12) "The first woe has passed. Behold, two more woes are to follow." – First off a woe is an expression of grief or denouncement towards someone or a group of people. Then the first woe is obviously the fifth trumpet. In terms of the next two woes the context of Revelation is that two witnesses are killed by the beast and the seventh trumpet is the third and final woe. Thus the idea here is that the three woes are an expression of grief and denouncement against the entire world.

But then why is the reference to the three woes even included? Well really I would say that they are included because the third woe is the seventh trumpet and the seventh trumpet brings the final judgment and with it the eternal Kingdom of God on earth. The idea here is that these three woes are representatives of God denouncing the world before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives. Then there are three woes instead of another number to provide repetition and emphasis.

2 – The Sixth Trumpet

(13) Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God (14) saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates."

(15) So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year – to kill a third of mankind. (16) And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, (19) For the power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails; indeed, their tails were like snakes, having heads with which to inflict harm.

(20) Now the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands. They did not stop worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. (21) Furthermore, they did not repent of their murder, sorcery, sexual immorality, and theft.

2.1 – Commentary

(13) "Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet." – The sixth angel now sounds his trumpet to announce the arrival of another calamity. In terms of effects of this calamity that is to occur with the sixth trumpet once again you should not take it literally. Instead you should see its second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet.

As the Book of Revelation say:

"They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." (Revelation 9:11)

Thus my point with this verse is that if Revelation refers to a fallen angel like Satan as an angel then there is good reason to see these four angels as fallen angels since again these angels are bound or rather imprisoned obviously God would not need to bind an obedient angel.

Then if these four angels are in fact fallen angels then this would mean that they are actually demons. As a result of this fact the best way to reconcile the four demons killing a third of mankind with the fire from the mouths of the horses and the demons killing a third of humanity is to say that these two hundred million horsemen are demons or at least people being deceived, influenced or possessed by demons. The reason is that the four fallen angels are powerful demons that will raise a horrifying army of demons, influencing or possessing people so that they can use that army to kill a huge portion of humanity. Thus if the relationship between the four fallen angels and the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) troops is viewed this way then really there is not an issue with the two instances of a third of mankind being killed because they are describing the same event.

Now if you doubt this relationship between the fallen angels and the horsemen I would like to point out that the horsemen are described in the exact same way as the demons from the previous fifth trumpet. Then because of this fact I would say it is best to view the horsemen as a great and powerful demonic army in the sense that it is made up of people who have been deceived, influence or possessed by demons.

All that said my main point with this comment is that the fallen angels should not be viewed literally at all. Proof of this is in the fact that the angels are released to kill a third of mankind at the start but then the rest of the vision goes on to describe that it was the horses of the two hundred million mounted troops that were responsible for the of mankind who are killed. Obviously both angels and the horses of the mounted troops are symbolic and not literal because of this fact the best way to understand the vision is to view the four angels as four fallen angels or demons that deceive, influence or possess people to use their large and powerful armies to carry out a great judgment against the world.

Alright so at this point you may be wondering what exactly these four fallen angels or demons they are talking about. Well I would say that Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind.

Now you may doubt that the reason why the sixth trumpet says that the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates." (Revelation 9:14) This means that it would be a safe assumption to make that these angels are not obedient to God as we see angels to be and that instead they are probably fallen angels or rather demons that God has imprisoned or bound until the time comes for them to release them. You may seek to dispute the fact that these angels are fallen angels but this brings me to my second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet.

As the Book of Revelation say:

"They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." (Revelation 9:11)

Thus my point with this verse is that if Revelation refers to a fallen angel like Satan as an angel then there is good reason to see these four angels as fallen angels since again these angels were bound or rather imprisoned obviously God would not need to bind an obedient angel.

Then if these four angels are in fact fallen angels then this would mean that they are actually demons. As a result of this fact the best way to reconcile the four demons killing a third of mankind with the fire from the mouths of the horses and the demons killing a third of humanity is to say that these two hundred million horsemen are demons or at least people being deceived, influenced or possessed by demons. The reason is that the four fallen angels are powerful demons that will raise a horrifying army of demons, influencing or possessing people so that they can use that army to kill a huge portion of humanity. Thus if the relationship between the four fallen angels and the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) troops is viewed this way then really there is not an issue with the two instances of a third of mankind being killed because they are describing the same event.

Now if you doubt this relationship between the fallen angels and the horsemen I would like to point out that the horsemen are described in the exact same way as the demons from the previous fifth trumpet. Then because of this fact I would say it is best to view the horsemen as a great and powerful demonic army in the sense that it is made up of people who have been deceived, influence or possessed by demons.

All that said my main point with this comment is that the fallen angels should not be viewed literally at all. Proof of this is in the fact that the angels are released to kill a third of mankind at the start but then the rest of the vision goes on to describe that it was the horses of the two hundred million mounted troops that were responsible for the of mankind who are killed. Obviously both angels and the horses of the mounted troops are symbolic and not literal because of this fact the best way to understand the vision is to view the four angels as four fallen angels or demons that deceive, influence or possess people to use their large and powerful armies to carry out a great judgment against the world.

Alright so at this point you may be wondering what exactly these four fallen angels or demons they are talking about. Well I would say that Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind.

(14) "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates." – Here we see that the four angels who are bound or rather imprisoned are to be released by God. Thus here in that these four angels are bound or rather imprisoned they are actually fallen angels or rather demons that God has imprisoned or bound until the time comes for them to release them. You may seek to dispute the fact that these angels are fallen angels but this brings me to my second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet.

As the Book of Revelation say:

"They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." (Revelation 9:11)

Thus my point with this verse is that if Revelation refers to a fallen angel like Satan as an angel then there is good reason to see these four angels as fallen angels since again these angels were bound or rather imprisoned obviously God would not need to bind an obedient angel.

Then if these four angels are in fact fallen angels then this would mean that they are actually demons. As a result of this fact the best way to reconcile the four demons killing a third of mankind with the fire from the mouths of the horses and the demons killing a third of humanity is to say that these two hundred million horsemen are demons or at least people being deceived, influenced or possessed by demons. The reason is that the four fallen angels are powerful demons that will raise a horrifying army of demons, influencing or possessing people so that they can use that army to kill a huge portion of humanity. Thus if the relationship between the four fallen angels and the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) troops is viewed this way then really there is not an issue with the two instances of a third of mankind being killed because they are describing the same event.

Now if you doubt this relationship between the fallen angels and the horsemen I would like to point out that the horsemen are described in the exact same way as the demons from the previous fifth trumpet. Then because of this fact I would say it is best to view the horsemen as a great and powerful demonic army in the sense that it is made up of people who have been deceived, influence or possessed by demons.

All that said my main point with this comment is that the fallen angels should not be viewed literally at all. Proof of this is in the fact that the angels are released to kill a third of mankind at the start but then the rest of the vision goes on to describe that it was the horses of the two hundred million mounted troops that were responsible for the of mankind who are killed. Obviously both angels and the horses of the mounted troops are symbolic and not literal because of this fact the best way to understand the vision is to view the four angels as four fallen angels or demons that deceive, influence or possess people to use their large and powerful armies to carry out a great judgment against the world.

Alright so at this point you may be wondering what exactly these four fallen angels or demons they are talking about. Well I would say that Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind.

Now you may doubt that the reason why the sixth trumpet says that the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates." (Revelation 9:14) This means that it would be a safe assumption to make that these angels are not obedient to God as we see angels to be and that instead they are probably fallen angels or rather demons that God has imprisoned or bound until the time comes for them to release them. You may seek to dispute the fact that these angels are fallen angels but this brings me to my second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet.

As the Book of Revelation say:

"They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." (Revelation 9:11)

Thus my point with this verse is that if Revelation refers to a fallen angel like Satan as an angel then there is good reason to see these four angels as fallen angels since again these angels were bound or rather imprisoned obviously God would not need to bind an obedient angel.

Then if these four angels are in fact fallen angels then this would mean that they are actually demons. As a result of this fact the best way to reconcile the four demons killing a third of mankind with the fire from the mouths of the horses and the demons killing a third of humanity is to say that these two hundred million horsemen are demons or at least people being deceived, influenced or possessed by demons. The reason is that the four fallen angels are powerful demons that will raise a horrifying army of demons, influencing or possessing people so that they can use that army to kill a huge portion of humanity. Thus if the relationship between the four fallen angels and the "two hundred million" (Revelation 9:16) troops is viewed this way then really there is not an issue with the two instances of a third of mankind being killed because they are describing the same event.

Now if you doubt this relationship between the fallen angels and the horsemen I would like to point out that the horsemen are described in the exact same way as the demons from the previous fifth trumpet. Then because of this fact I would say it is best to view the horsemen as a great and powerful demonic army in the sense that it is made up of people who have been deceived, influence or possessed by demons.

All that said my main point with this comment is that the fallen angels should not be viewed literally at all. Proof of this is in the fact that the angels are released to kill a third of mankind at the start but then the rest of the vision goes on to describe that it was the horses of the two hundred million mounted troops that were responsible for the of mankind who are killed. Obviously both angels and the horses of the mounted troops are symbolic and not literal because of this fact the best way to understand the vision is to view the four angels as four fallen angels or demons that deceive, influence or possess people to use their large and powerful armies to carry out a great judgment against the world.

Alright so at this point you may be wondering what exactly these four fallen angels or demons they are talking about. Well I would say that Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind. Revelation 9:18) as the text says. Thus the idea here is that the four angels are in fact fulfillment of the prophecy in Revelation 9:1 where the fallen star fell from the sky and was given the key to the bottomless pit. Thus the idea here is that a partial fulfillment of God's response to the pleas of the martyrs that took place during the fifth seal right here in the current chapter of Revelation in the sixth trumpet. This is because during the sixth trumpet Satan and his demon armies are to be released upon the world so that they can kill a third of mankind.

(15) "So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year" – to kill a third of mankind." (Revelation 9:15) You see in the sixth trumpet the four angels are released to kill a third of mankind. And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number. (16) Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, (17-19) "Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, (19) For the power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails; indeed, their tails were like snakes, having heads with which to inflict harm.

(20) Now the rest of mankind who were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the works of their hands. They did not stop worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. (21) Furthermore, they did not repent of their murder, sorcery, sexual immorality, and theft.

2.1 – Commentary

(13) "Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet." – The sixth angel now sounds his trumpet to announce the arrival of another calamity. In terms of effects of this calamity that is to occur with the sixth trumpet once again you should not take it literally. Instead you should see its second point which is that Revelation has referred to Satan as an angel during the fifth trumpet so that you can see the true message that the Book of Revelation has for us. This of course makes sense since I have already demonstrated why the seven seals and seven trumpets should be viewed figuratively and metaphorically rather than literally.

(13-14) "and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God saying to the sixth angel who the trumpet" – First off "the four horns of the golden altar before God" (Revelation 9:13) are then like projections at the corners of the altar. They are almost certainly ornamental in nature although they could be representative of power since a horn is a symbol of power as I have demonstrated previously. But then why is there a voice coming from the horns of the altar? Well really I would say that the altar speaking after the sixth angel blows his trumpet is representative of the will of God being fulfilled. The idea here is that the souls of the martyrs in heaven are crying out for God to avenge their blood and destroy the world for its sins against God and all those who have been killed because of the world. Thus the idea here is that God is responding to the pleas of the martyrs on behalf of God to the sixth angel so that God's will may be fulfilled. Thus the idea here is that the sixth angel sound his trumpet the altar of God commands the sixth angel to fulfill the will of God.

Furthermore I would also like to point out that this altar is the same altar seen previously during the fifth seal.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And when the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony they had upheld. And they cried out in a loud voice, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You avenge our blood and judge those who dwell on the earth?" (Revelation 6:9-10)

Then each of them was given a white robe and told to rest a little while longer, until the full number of their fellow servants, their brothers, were killed, just as they had been killed." (Revelation 6:11)

Since John previously saw the martyrs under the altar and they cried out to God to avenge their blood and destroy the world for its sins against God and all those who have been killed because of this fact it is Jesus who will usher in the eternal Kingdom of God which is our only hope for eternal and true salvation. On the other hand there is no salvation to be found in our world that we can create with our human hands because only God can provide salvation. Always remember that our world look towards the Beast for eternal life and salvation because if you do all you will eternally suffer in torment and damnation. Salvation is from God alone and it is not from the world.

(7-10) "And the locusts looked like horses prepared for battle, with something like crowns of gold on their heads, and faces like the faces of men. They had hair like that of women, and teeth like those of lions. They had scales like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was like the roar of many horses and chariots rushing into battle. They had tails with stingers like those of scorpions, in these they had the locusts are described in fearsome, horrifying and powerful terms because these are the demons of the Abyss that Satan himself commands. Furthermore temptation, sin and rebellion against God are very real and powerful forces in the world so it would only make sense that demons would be described as they are described in powerful terms. Thus you should not view demons or rather locusts literally but rather figuratively. But what if you want to take these Bible verses literally for some reason so that you actually think demons look this way or you want to yet that there are supposed to be literal locusts that look this way? Well if what I have said about the symbolic nature of Satan and metaphors of the Book of Revelation is not enough then consider how Satan is described:

As the Beast of Revelation says:

"Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with Seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3)

My point here with this verse is that if you want to take the descriptions of the locusts or rather demons as being literal then you must also take the description of "the huge red dragon" (Revelation 12:3) or rather Satan as being literal. Then as a result of this you must believe that Satan is literally "a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns, and seven royal crowns on his heads." (Revelation 12:3) Of course in reality Satan is not a dragon and instead he is a fallen angel. Although if you want to also insist that the description of Satan is literal for some reason then you would mean that angels are dragons with many heads and horns. Of course this is contradicted elsewhere in the Book of Revelation and the Bible is speaking about angels and God in point with all this is that if the description of Satan is clearly not literal then why would the descriptions of Satan's demons or fallen angels from the Abyss be literal? Therefore clearly this description of the locusts or rather demons should not be viewed literally at all and instead it could be seen as highly figurative and what it is supposed to emphasize the power of these locusts or rather demons.

Then because of this fact you should look at sources of temptation in your life and in the world in general that is equally horrifying as these demons are described. Always remember that ultimately the only way to escape eternal life in the eternal Kingdom of God is to persist in your faith and obedience to God as a faithful Christian until the end finally comes or death takes you.

(10) "which had the power to injure people for five months." – Once again these demons do not have the power to kill but instead they torment. Then for five months means a partial eternity judgment as stated before. Thus here in that those who are unsealed will be tempted and suffer but not completely so since God's wrath is poured out now until the final judgment arrives where the world will be swept clean as all those who rebel against God are killed and destroyed.

(11) "They were ruled by a king, the angel of the Abyss. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek it is Apollyon." – First off Abaddon in Hebrew as well as Apollyon in Greek both mean destroyer so this verse is saying that the demons of the abyss are ruled by a fallen angel named Destroyer. But then who is this fallen angel? Well I have already and I should mention how figurative and metaphorical Revelation is obviously this fallen angel is never actually Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer. Instead the name Destroyer is representative of what this fallen angel does. Now you can probably guess that Revelation is of course talking about Satan here. The name Satan means in Greek is representative of sin and rebellion against God. Then of course ultimately all those who engage in sin and rebel against God will ultimately face destruction in the Lake of Fire with the second death on the day of judgment. In other words all who follow Satan and his ways in rebellion against God will end up being destroyed. As a result this is why Satan can be called Abaddon, Apollyon or Destroyer since by leading all those who rebel against God to destruction Satan is a destroyer.

Then I would like to emphasize that because all who follow Satan in his rebellion against God destruction it is important to be on the lookout for Satan's lies and deceptions in our world. This is because Satan is the great deceiver for reason. My point is that the lies and deceptions of Satan may seem good upon first because them but in the end if you follow Satan's lies and deceptions then you will be led to your own destruction.

(12) "The first woe has passed. Behold, two more woes are to follow." – First off a woe is an expression of grief or denouncement towards someone or a group of people. Then the first woe is obviously the fifth trumpet. In terms of the next two woes the context of Revelation is that two witnesses are killed by the beast and the seventh trumpet is the third and final woe. Thus the idea here is that the three woes are an expression of grief and denouncement against the entire world.

But then why is the reference to the three woes even included? Well really I would say that they are included because the third woe is the seventh trumpet and the seventh trumpet brings the final judgment and with it the eternal Kingdom of God on earth. The idea here is that these three woes are representatives of God denouncing the world before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives. Then there are three woes instead of another number to provide repetition and emphasis.

2 – The Sixth Trumpet

(13) Then the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God (14) saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates."

(15) So the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year – to kill a third of mankind. (16) And the number of mounted troops was two hundred million; I heard their number.

Now the horses and riders in my vision looked like this: The riders had breastplates the colors of fire, sapphire, and sulfur. The heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths proceeded fire, smoke, and sulfur. By these three plagues of fire, smoke, and sulfur that proceeded from their mouths, (19) For the power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails; indeed, their tails were like snakes, having heads with which to inflict harm." (Revelation 9:13-19)

Alright now I will go into a complete because originally the sixth trumpet says that these four angels "

2.23 – The Book of Revelation – Revelation 10

First off for reasons I explain later on Second Peter is clearly a forgery. This means that the Second Peter was not actually written by Peter and instead someone else wrote it. Now no doubt you might find this idea offensive and wish to dispute it but really I do not care right now since the fact that this epistle is a forgery is irrelevant for now. This is because all you need is a tiny fraction of critical thinking skills to say that God "not wanting anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance" (2 Peter 3:9) is just factually false if you want to take it as literal. I mean if God really does not want "anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance" (2 Peter 3:9) then why did God ignore basically everyone outside of ancient Israel for thousands of years until Christian missionaries could spread the gospel there? Well? No response? I thought so. Really to be blunt there is nothing you can respond with. This is because even if you want to make up some apologetic argument to respond with you would still have to contend with with fact that since people have perished in the past without having any contact with God or with the message of Jesus then God has actually wanted them to perish because otherwise He would have not let them perish. The only real response to this would be to bring in the idea that Jesus preached to all the dead souls in Sheol, despite the fact that it does not actually exist, after He died so that all the dead in the past could accept Jesus or reject Him.

As First Peter says:

> "That is why the gospel was preached even to those who are now dead, so that they might be judged as men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit." (1 Peter 4:6)

So therefore this happened right? Well not really since I would also say First Peter was not written by Peter either. This is because it does not make how you want to look at it the whole response of Jesus preaching to the dead so that even the dead can choose to accept Him or not since it is just nonsense regardless. But why? Well first off we are talking about immortal souls and because of this when we die we cease to exist. This means that it is impossible for Jesus to preach to the dead without the dead being resurrected first. However the dead will only be resurrected at the end of the age as the Book of Revelation says. Therefore Jesus did not preach to the dead in the first century AD so that they could choose to believe or not.

Second the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead is just really nonsense to be honest. For instance if you die here on earth as a pagan in say 500 BC in that your immortal and immortal soul goes to hell then are you seriously going to still be a pagan instead of believing in the Christian God despite being in hell? Well no. Furthermore since hell is supposed to be rather unpleasant would you not repent of your sins and believe in the one true God once Jesus comes to preach to you? I mean what else can do this? This is why I said the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead is just nonsense. Really everyone would repent and because of this fact the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead loses all meaning.

Now you may take issue with all this so consider a final point as to why Jesus preaching to the dead is just plain nonsense. Alright so let me ask you a question. If you believe that Jesus descended into hell in the first century AD to preach the gospel then what happens to those who died after this occurred? I mean Christianity did not spread that fast so what happens to the people who died in North America, South America, most of Africa, almost all of Asia, most of Europe and Oceania in say 300 AD? I mean these people did not have any contact with the gospel and since they did not have any contact with it then how could they freely reject the gospel? Thus the fact that people who died in 100 AD in these far off lands are just like the people who died in 500 BC. Therefore does it not make sense for Jesus to also preach the gospel to them in hell so that they can choose to repent and be saved? Well of course it does. However if you believe this then you have just destroyed Christianity and the gospel.

Wait what? You see by believing this false belief you have turned preaching the gospel into a great evil. This is because according to your belief if someone never rejects the gospel here on earth then they will go to hell where they will preach to them and since they are in hell they will repent and be saved since they are clearly see the spiritual instead of the natural now. Then given the fact that everyone will accept the gospel if you preach it to them then this would (hypothetically) mean that if you want to save the most people then not preaching the gospel to them here on earth is the best course to take. For instance if preaching the gospel on earth results in a way to infinite hell for say fifty percent then those fifty percent who reject it will go to hell without a chance of redemption while on the other hand if they never heard the gospel on earth then they will get a chance to accept the gospel in hell. As a result if you actual believe that Jesus preaches to those in hell then the best thing to do would be to never preach to anyone because everyone who never rejected the gospel on earth will repent in hell.

Thus my point is that if you actually believe that those who never heard the Gospel after say 33 AD will have a chance to be saved in hell as Jesus preaches to them then the most evil act you can do as a Christian is to spread the gospel here on earth. Once again this is because everyone will have the chance in hell and once they are in hell they are literally guarantees to accept the gospel and repent and be saved? Well of course it does. However if you believe this then you have just destroyed Christianity and the gospel.

Wait what? You see by believing this false belief you have turned preaching the gospel into a great evil. This is because according to your belief if someone never rejects the gospel here on earth then they will go to hell where they will preach to them and since they are in hell they will repent and be saved since they are clearly see the spiritual instead of the natural now. Then given the fact that everyone will accept the gospel if you preach it to them then this would (hypothetically) mean that if you want to save the most people then not preaching the gospel to them here on earth is the best course to take. For instance if preaching the gospel on earth results in a way to infinite hell for say fifty percent then those fifty percent who reject it will go to hell without a chance of redemption while on the other hand if they never heard the gospel on earth then they will get a chance to accept the gospel in hell. As a result if you actual believe that Jesus preaches to those in hell then the best thing to do would be to never preach to anyone because everyone who never rejected the gospel on earth will repent in hell.

Thus my point is that if you actually believe that those who never heard the Gospel after say 33 AD will have a chance to be saved in hell as Jesus preaches to them then the most evil act you can do as a Christian is to spread the gospel here on earth. Once again this is because everyone will have the chance in hell and once they are in hell they are literally guarantees to accept the gospel and repent and be saved? Well of course it does. However if you believe this then you have just destroyed Christianity and the gospel.

If you really want to dispute this then let me ask you a question. Imagine you died tomorrow and ended up in the Muslim version of hell and the false prophet Muhammad said to you that since you did not repent in this earth and since you were deceived by the so-called false teachings of Christianity that you now have a chance to accept Islam as true. Would you tell the false prophet Muhammad that you do not want Islam and that you accept Islam as true or would you rather spend an eternity being tortured in the Muslim version of hell? Well of course you did actually happened you would become a Muslim because you would have terrifyingly realized that Christianity is false. If you want to say you would not then I would just say you are deluisonal and lying to yourself. Therefore my point stands that no one would prefer unbearable torture in hell for all eternity over accepting the gospel. Then because of this fact if you actually believe that those who die without rejecting the gospel on earth will have a chance to accept it in hell then preaching the gospel on earth is probably the most evil thing you can do because by preaching the gospel on earth you will be condoning many if not most of the people you preach to an eternity in hell without a chance for redemption.

Of course this would then mean that the idea that Jesus is preaching to the dead is just nonsensical in nature so therefore it must be false. The only real way to answer this is that preaching to the dead is actually universalism so rather the idea that everyone will be saved since everyone, including those who rejected the gospel on earth, will be given a chance to accept the gospel after they die. Then of course since everyone will accept the gospel after they die as I have said everyone would then be saved. Of course universalism is false because it contradicts the Bible because "if anyone was found whose name was not written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire." (Revelation 10:15). Therefore if you want to seriously criticize the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead by using universalism.

Alright now in response you might now say that so maybe the idea that Jesus is preaching to those who die after 30 or 33 AD is just nonsense but this does not mean that Jesus did not preach to the dead who died before then like First Peter says. Alright I can make sure about this. But in terms of the question of if God wants everyone to be saved or not well the answer is still no. This is because my point is that clearly Christianity is false and that the vast majority of people who were born after Jesus's resurrection and since God knew about this. I mean how could He not, this would then mean that God did not write the Bible and so He saved As a result whoever wrote Second Peter is just wrong at least if you want to take what they literally. Then this is also a good reason why Second Peter should not be seen as Scripture.

Now you might want to protest this and say that Peter was clearly alive and written by Peter but really it is obvious. For instance the central purpose of Second Peter is to say that Jesus has not returned yet and the eternal Kingdom of God has not arrived yet. Well because of the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day" (2 Peter 3:8 NIV). Then it is not slow in keeping His promise as some understand slowness, but is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance." (2 Peter 3:9 NIV) Why is this the purpose? Well in Paul's genuine letters Paul wrote the Jesus was supposed to return well within his lifetime.

As Paul wrote:

> "By the word of the Lord, we declare to you that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who have fallen asleep." (1 Thessalonians 4:15)

There are other instances but this is an easy one to understand. So obviously in this verse Paul is literally saying that he is declaring by the word of Jesus that himself and those who he is writing to will be alive when Jesus return. Really there is nothing you can say against this since this is what Paul is actually saying and there is not way to say that Paul is just being hyperbolic here since saying the returning of Jesus when by around two thousand years so far is well not exactly close. Furthermore Paul was writing the church in Thessalonica and because of this fact this book is not addressed to the whole world or to a future generation of Christians. Therefore clearly Paul was wrong here. Then this means that since Paul declared by "the word of the Lord" (1 Thessalonians 4:15) that the rest of what Paul wrote can be considered suspect as well. For instance if Paul was wrong about the imminent return of Jesus then what else was he wrong about? Thus you can see the problem here. But how does Second Peter fit into this? Well first off obviously the author of Second Peter is trying to fix what Paul wrote so consider the following passage.

As Second Peter says:

> "Consider also that our Lord's patience brings salvation, just as our beloved brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom God gave him. He writes this way in all his letters, speaking in them about such matters. Some parts of his letters are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction." (2 Peter 3:15-16)

So as you can see the author of Second Peter's response is just to say that those who believe that Paul actually wrote 2 Peter 3:9 then why did God ignore basically everyone outside of ancient Israel for thousands of years until Christian missionaries could spread the gospel there? Well? No response? I thought so. Really to be blunt there is nothing you can response with. This is because even if you want to make up some apologetic argument to respond with you would still have to contend with with fact that since people have perished in the past without having any contact with God or with the message of Jesus then God actually wanted them to perish because otherwise He would have not let them perish. The only real response to this would be to bring in the idea that Jesus preached to all the dead souls in Sheol, despite the fact that it does not actually exist, after He died so that all the dead in the past could accept Jesus or reject Him.

As First Peter says:

> "That is why the gospel was preached even to those who are now dead, so that they might be judged as men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit." (1 Peter 4:6)

So therefore this happened right? Well not really since I would also say First Peter was not written by Peter either. This is because it does not matter how you want to look at it the whole response of Jesus preaching to the dead so that even the dead can choose to accept Him or not since it is just nonsense regardless. But why? Well first off we are talking about immortal souls and because of this when we die we cease to exist. This means that it is impossible for Jesus to preach to the dead without the dead being resurrected first. However the dead will only be resurrected at the end of the age as the Book of Revelation says. Therefore Jesus did not preach to the dead in the first century AD so that they could choose to believe or not.

Second the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead is just really nonsense to be honest. For instance if you die here on earth as a pagan in say 500 BC in that your immortal and immortal soul goes to hell then are you seriously going to still be a pagan instead of believing in the Christian God despite being in hell? Well no. Furthermore since hell is supposed to be rather unpleasant would you not repent of your sins and believe in the one true God once Jesus comes to preach to you? I mean what else can do this? This is why I said the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead is just nonsense. Really everyone would repent and because of this fact the whole concept of Jesus preaching to the dead loses all meaning.

Now you may take issue with all this so consider a final point as to why Jesus preaching to the dead is just plain nonsense. Alright so let me ask you a question. If you believe that Jesus descended into hell in the first century AD to preach the gospel then what happens to those who died after this occurred? I mean Christianity did not spread that fast so what happens to the people who died in North America, South America, most of Africa, almost all of Asia, most of Europe and Oceania in say 300 AD? I mean these people did not have any contact with the gospel and since they did not have any contact with it then how could they freely reject the gospel? Thus the fact that people who died in 100 AD in these far off lands are just like the people who died in 500 BC. Therefore does it not make sense for Jesus to also preach the gospel to them in hell so that they can choose to repent and be saved? Well of course it does. However if you believe this then you have just destroyed Christianity and the gospel.

Wait what? You see by believing this false belief you have turned preaching the gospel into a great evil. This is because according to your belief if someone never rejects the gospel here on earth then they will go to hell where they will preach to them and since they are in hell they will repent and be saved since they are clearly see the spiritual instead of the natural now. Then given the fact that everyone will accept the gospel if you preach it to them then this would (hypothetically) mean that if you want to save the most people then not preaching the gospel to them here on earth is the best course to take. For instance if preaching the gospel on earth results in a way to infinite hell for say fifty percent then those fifty percent who reject it will go to hell without a chance of redemption while on the other hand if they never heard the gospel on earth then they will get a chance to accept the gospel in hell. As a result if you actual believe that Jesus preaches to those in hell then the best thing to do would be to never preach to anyone because everyone who never rejected the gospel on earth will repent in hell.

Thus my point is that if you actually believe that those who never heard the Gospel after say 33 AD will have a chance to be saved in hell as Jesus preaches to them then the most evil act you can do as a Christian is to spread the gospel here on earth. Once again this is because everyone will have the chance in hell and once they are in hell they are literally guarantees to accept the gospel and repent and be saved? Well of course it does. However if you believe this then you have just destroyed Christianity and the gospel.

To get back on topic my point here with the above is that Noah's Flood is clearly a story in the sense that it was not written by Peter. Then because of this fact taking Second Peter as the inspired word of God is just nonsensical and because of this fact you cannot cite Second Peter in order to say that God actually wants everyone to be saved by coming to repentance.

But what if you do not want to take what the author of Second Peter literally? Well really I would just say that the author of Second Peter is being hyperbolic and literally using it as a means to emphasize their point. For instance while reading the Bible it is important to remember many instances where I have used hyperbole as a way to emphasize a point saying. For example instead of qualifying something by saying that it might be one of thousands I might talking about I instead exaggerate my point by using words like all, everyone, everywhere, everything and so forth. This is of course completely normal and everyone does this. I just want to dispute this then since I just used everyone in the previous sentence? Therefore my point stands.

So what does the fact that people use hyperbolic language mean exactly? Well it means that the author of Second Peter was just being hyperbolic when they said that God is "not wanting anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance." (2 Peter 3:9) This of course makes sense because in my letters, emails or messages to people today we sometimes use exaggerating language in order to stress our point even though we do not actually mean what we literally mean. For instance you might wish to dispute this by saying I do not know what is what I literally mean by the verse in question from Second Peter is definitely not hyperbolic. Therefore consider the following passage.

As the Book of Revelation says:

> "One of the heads of the beast appeared to be mortally wounded, but the deadly wound was healed, and the whole world marvelled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3)

My point here in this passage from the Revelation which is a collection of prophecies of the future from God is clearly using hyperbolic language by saying "and the whole world marvelled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3) For instance obviously the whole world is not actually going to follow the beast in this verse because John of Patmos also says "And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast, everyone whose name has not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb that was slain." (Revelation 13:8) This means that when Revelation says "the whole world marvelled and followed the beast" (Revelation 13:3) it does not actually mean "the whole world marvelled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3) Instead it is just using hyperbolic language in even the Book of Revelation.

Now this is important because the Book of Revelation uses this hyperbolic in the end of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 1:2) But why? Well you see if even a book that claims it is "the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ" (Revelation 1:2) uses hyperbolic language in its prophecies then why does everything the author says in the book need to be literal? Well it means it is not also possible if not very likely that the author of Second Peter was exaggerating when they wrote that God wants everyone to come to repentance and be saved. This is also perhaps they were saying that God wants more people Jesus right? Well consider the following passage.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "A great number of people followed him, including women who were weeping and wailing for Him. But Jesus turned to them and said, 'Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for Me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. Look, the days are coming when people will say, 'Blessed are the barren women, the wombs that never bore children, breasts that never nursed!' At that time

> 'they will say to the mountains, 'Fall on us!' and to the hills, 'Cover us!'" (Luke 23:27-30)

Thus you can clearly see that Jesus is referencing the coming Siege of (so-called) Jerusalem in 70 AD when he is saying that those who never had children will be blessed and those who had children will be tempted to kill and eat their children. Therefore you cannot simply take the idea of God's disobedience and the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars have nothing to do with Jesus because they have everything to do with Jesus.

As a result of this fact clearly God does want more people in Israel to be saved so that does not want more of them to perish. This is of course in direct contradiction with what Jesus said in the previous passage because Jesus said God "is not willing that any of these little ones should perish." (Matthew 18:14) Why does this mean exactly? Well it means that obviously we should not take the Book of Revelation in the sense that God literally does not want any of the little ones to perish instead we should take what Jesus said as being hyperbole or exaggeration. Now you might protest that but Jesus frequently uses hyperbole in order to stress without point He is trying to make.

As Jesus says:

> "And if anyone gives even a cup of cold water to one of these little ones because he is My disciple, truly I tell you, he will never lose his reward." (Matthew 10:42)

Of course if you want to take this verse literally then Jesus would be saying that if anyone gives a give a cup of cold water to a little child then you will never lose your reward of eternal life in the eternal Kingdom of God. Now this may sound well and sophisticated if you take the verse literally from this would mean that as long as you give a single cup of cold water to a child then you could do what whatever you want. Obviously this would be rather absurd so it is best to take what Jesus is saying as hyperbole so that He is simply stressing the fact that we should not ignore the little ones. Doing this may not make sense but in the ancient world adults really did not pay much if any time much so that they would often ignore and exclude them.

Thus Jesus is just trying to stress that we should help and include all the children that we see. This is of course the ultimate point of the original passage where Jesus says that God does not want any little ones to perish. Therefore clearly Jesus uses hyperbole language to stress His points and because of this fact we cannot simply take everything He says literally. That said now you know what I meant when I said that the Gospels have clear instances of hyperbolic language.

Now to my point here in regards to talking about the epistles, hyperbolic language and the fact that some of the epistles are forgeries is that ultimately what the epistles say concerning divine hiddedness is completely irrelevant. This then means that it does not matter how many verses from the epistles you want to cite to so-called prove that God wants everyone to be saved and know Him. Instead what the Gospels, the Book of Revelation and Paul matter and so any in regards to divine hiddedness is true.

But what about where Jesus says that we will receive what we ask for in prayer as long as we believe? Does this then not mean that God is not supposed to hide?

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'if you have faith and do not doubt, not only will you do what was done to the fig tree, but you will also say to this mountain, 'Be lifted up and thrown into the sea,' it will be done. If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer." (Matthew 21:21-22)

And as the Gospel of Matthew also says:

> "Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened."

> "Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a serpent? So if you who are evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good things to those who ask Him!" (Matthew 7:7-11)

So do these two passage not mean that God is supposed to answer our prayers as Christians so that we receive whatever it is we ask for? Well yes but no. You see the problem here is that we are not supposed to pray for our own selfish desires but instead we are supposed to pray for God's will to be fulfilled.

As Jesus says:

> "So then, this is how you should pray: Our Father in heaven, hallowed be Your name, Your kingdom come, Your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one." (Matthew 6:9-13)

My point here with this passage is that Jesus says that we should pray for God's will to be done. This means that when we pray we should pray that our own will or rather wants to be fulfilled and that instead we should pray for God's will or wants to be fulfilled. Now this may seem like I am avoiding the issue but I do not think I do. You see our hope as Christians is not for this life alone. Instead our hope is in the future and in being given eternal life in the resurrection of the dead so that we can live with God in the new Jerusalem in the eternal Kingdom of God. This of course in the eternal Kingdom of God we will have everything we need as we become the children and heirs of God.

As God says:

> "To the thirsty I will give freely from the spring of the water of life. He who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my son." (Revelation 21:6-7)

Therefore we will be given everything we could ever want in the eternal Kingdom of God. My point with regards to the Book of Revelation allowing us to "inherit all things" (Revelation 21:7) is about that it is about God. This is why when we pray for God's will to be fulfilled it is not with the selfish intention of using our own desires to be fulfilled. Sure we may not receive everything we want or desire here on earth but as long as God's will is fulfilled then the eternal Kingdom of God will be appointed time so that we will receive what we desire then. Then because of this fact we should always pray for God's will to be fulfilled.

Alright so despite how nice this all may sound you might say it kind of sounds like an excuse in some ways. I mean sure we could see what Jesus says concerning "you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer" (Matthew 21:22) as applying to the new earth instead of the here and now but really it is kind of a stretch right? Well you could say that. Therefore consider the following passage.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "At that time Jesus went with His disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and He told them, 'Sit here while I go over there and pray.'

> He took with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and deeply distressed. Then He said to them, 'My soul is crushed with sorrow to the point of death. Stay here and keep watch with Me.'

> Going a little farther, He fell facedown and prayed, 'My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me. Yet not as I will, but as You will.'

> Then Jesus returned to the disciples and found them sleeping. 'Were you not able to keep watch with Me for one hour?' He asked Peter. 'Watch and pray so that you will not enter into temptation. For the spirit is willing, but the body is weak.'

A second time He went away and prayed, 'My Father, if this cup cannot pass unless I drink it, may your will be done.'" (Matthew 26:36-42)

My point in regards to this passage is that when Jesus prayed for His death to be averted He did not demand that it be so because in the end Jesus asked for His Father's will to be fulfilled in order for this prayer wish to be answered He still said "may You will be done." (Matthew 26:42) In other words Jesus was not demanding anything from God and instead Jesus was asking God that if His desires coincided with His Father's will they would be fulfilled but if they do not then may the will of God be fulfilled. Now I am not sure if Jesus is saying here is that we are not supposed to pray for our own selfish desires but instead we are supposed to pray for the will of God to be fulfilled. This means that when we pray we pray for your will to be fulfilled over the will of God to be fulfilled. Now I am not sure if God wants this but it is rather complicated and I go into it later on when discussing the Book of Revelation. Then of course there is also the issue of evil so just know I do in fact answer it. That said I will just say that God wants us to pray for God's will to be done and that God actually wanted everyone to see Him.

But what about the beast and the world reading this book in the future? Well what will happen to them? Well what happen to the beast? I mean is not the fact that I wrote this book explaining what the Book of Revelation means and what will happen to the John writing down what the seven thunders said? Well to be honest I do not know but also not. You see over the last almost two-thousand years with the Bible and Christianity there are better reasons for God to be visible than hidden right? Well not really. You see God wants to be hidden because in order for God to be fulfilled He needs to be hidden. But why? In order for this to make sense you need to understand what God's plan is. Essentially God's plan for us is to allow humanity to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God is what the Book of Revelation means. This is because that God's plan for the ending of our world ultimately revolves around the Antichrist and his power so that it rules over the entire world.

Now you can probably see where I am going with this. But in case it is not obvious let me ask you a question. If God and the mysteries of the Kingdom of God were clear and plain to see then why would anyone rebel against God? In other words if the Bible and Christianity were of clear far out prophecies that ended up being clearly fulfilled hundreds or thousands of years later then why would the beast rebel against God? For instance as an artificial super intelligence the beast would have the ability to process and analyze mass amounts of data and because of this it would see Christianity as obviously and undeniably true then the beast would simply worship the God of the Bible instead of seeing itself as a so-called god and the so-called Kingdom of God as a joke. Furthermore if the truth of the things of God can be factually proven to be true then why would the world at the end of the age even bother with trying to rebel against God? Obviously they would not because they would be forced to bow the knee to Christ. Now I am in terms of my social media posts those were mass down voted or worse removed because the truth I said it was free and I am not selling anything. Now imagine if the truth was free and I was selling this much longer book really my expectations would be very low. This is because no one cared about my shorter version then surely no one will care about my much longer version. Thus my point here is that really if this book was free and I was just selling the audio version alone in the grand scheme of things. Then because of this fact my point is that the world taking this book seriously is very low stakes.

Alright so really what I am saying here is that if we have written about this book in terms of from widespread adoption on the basis of security from obscurity. The idea behind security from obscurity is that if you are just a single person in a vast sea who does not stand out then really you are safe from attack since no one has any reason to target you specifically over anyone else. For instance in terms of this book why should a potential reader read this book over any of the other thousands of books on the Book of Revelation? Sure you may say that my book is artifically special but in the end the world even more it would just be another. Think of it like the combinations that unlock a combination lock. If you had a jar with all the possible combinations to a lock and only one opened the lock then sure that one combination would be special compared to the others. However really the only way to know which combination is special is to keep on trying combinations until you find the right one. Thus what I am saying here is that this book is just a single combination among thousands and because of this fact it will inevitably be just forgotten up until the arrival of the eternal Kingdom of God.

But what about the beast or artificial super intelligence? I mean surely an artificial super intelligence would be the greatest intelligence on earth at some point and this book will be among that information. Well because of this fact I trust and have faith that God instead of in a book written and assembled by human hands. Although it will be written and a single book to see as divinely inspired then I would of course say the Book of Revelation is the book and so.

Next I would just like to reiterate that the fact that God wants to be hidden so that His plan can be fulfilled is the reason why the Book of Revelation is so confusing. The idea here is that the Book of Revelation was easy to understand so that most people could see the message but not be able to stop God because God's plan could never be fulfilled since then most people would recognize the beast. This is the confusing figurative and metaphorical language comes into play. It exists so that it protect God's plan from getting out into the world. Of course this does not mean that this book you are reading is contrary to God's plan in the sense that it will make the whole world aware of the beast and prophecy. This book most if not the vast majority of these arguments for the Bible cannot be the truth because in the end this book appears to be like any other Bible written by men.

Next the answer to the question of divine hiddeness is actually why all, yes all, of the popular apologetic arguments for Christian apologists make today are wrong or baseless. Now I am not saying that all of these arguments have issues here since as you know I have an entire post called various apologetic arguments for God and I have written many other posts dedicated to demonstrating why all the popular arguments for Christianity are false. Here? That said I do want to say that if any of these arguments were actually good arguments then God would not actually want to be hidden because God would want people to be able to easily find Him and the plans that He has laid out for humanity. However because God does not want to be easily found and because God wants the world to be able to see Him and the plans that He has laid out for humanity the world must be left in the dark. This means that God must be hidden so that the world can be left in the dark so that God can be hidden so that His plan can be fulfilled so that God can

Chapter 2.24. Revelation 11

1 – The Two Witnesses

(1) Then I was given a measuring rod like a staff and was told, "Go and measure the temple of God and the altar, and count the number of worshippers there. (2) But exclude the courtyard outside the temple; do not measure it, because it has been given over to the nations, and they will trample the holy city for 42 months. (3) And I will empower my two witnesses, and they will prophesy for 1,260 days, clothed in sackcloth."

(4) These witnesses are the two olive trees and the two lampstands that stand before the Lord of the earth. (5) If anyone wants to harm them, fire pours from their mouths and devours their enemies. In this way, anyone who wants to harm them must be killed. (6) These witnesses have power to shut the sky so that no rain will fall during the days of their prophecy, and they have power to turn water into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague as often as they wish.

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "Then I was given a measuring rod like a staff and was told, 'Go and measure'" – A measuring rod was used in the Ancient Near East that was used to measure distances. Thus in this verse John is given the rod to measure with and is told to go and measure.

(1) "the temple of God and the altar" – First off this was vital majority of Revelation Commentators Christians do not understand what "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) is supposed to be referring to. Revelation 11:1 has become a large majority of those who look towards a literal Jerusalem and the prophecies of the Book of Revelation see the Temple as referring to a physical temple being constructed by the so called Jews in the modern state of so-called Israel. On the other hand preterists and secular historians largely see the Temple as referring to the Second Temple which was destroyed by God through the Roman Empire in 70 AD. However this is not what John of Patmos was writing. This is because as I have already demonstrated Revelation 11:1 is referring to the assembly of all faithful Christians in Israel. In other words the so-called Jews during the First Jewish-Roman war and the so-called Jews of today have literally nothing to do with Israel and have no relevance to Israel. Instead as I just said the body of all faithful Christians have become the Church in Israel. Then since I have already demonstrated this fact at length I'm not going over it again. That said if you still have issues with this so that you want to see the proof that Revelation 11:1 as being associated with the so-called Jews and modern so-called Israel then consider the following passages.

As Jesus says:

"The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. He will never leave it again leave it." (Revelation 3:12)

Then as the Book of Revelation says:

"These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. For this reason, they are before the throne of God

and serve Him day and night in His temple; and the One who sits on the throne will spread His tabernacle over them." (Revelation 7:14-15)

Now my purpose in quoting these two passages is to show that in terms of what "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) is in the Book of Revelation really "the temple of God" is Christ. This is because when Jesus says that He will make us "a pillar in the temple of" (Revelation 3:12) His God He is making us into Christ which is the figurative terms. The idea here is that the Temple of God is dedicated to the glory and worship of God so when we are made into Christ we are made into the Temple which is dedicated to the glory and worship of God. Again this is because the Temple of God gave the so-called Jews a generation or about forty years to accept Jesus as the Christ before it was used the Roman Empire to destroy His Second Temple so that the true Temple of God is Christ and the Church because Christ is the only legitimate place to honor and worship God.

If you take issue with any of this then just know talk about this topic at length in my part called Fulfilled Prophecy. In that part I will have to say you will have zero doubts that about what I have just said. I mean I'm looking forward to the so-called Jews building a temple in so-called Israel so I can come to the understanding that it is impossible for any Christian to believe that the so-called Jews will be a Temple of God. In fact if the so-called Jews do build a temple then they will be building a temple of Satan. This is because by rejecting Jesus as the Christ the so-called Jews have become "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) as Jesus calls them. As a result whatever temple they will build will be a monument to themselves and their rebellion against God by rejecting Jesus as the Christ because the only way to honor and worship God is to accept Jesus as the cornerstone and the Christ. Thus "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) will be a temple of Satan and not instead they can only build a temple of Satan.

As a result by saying "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) John of Patmos is not definitively referring to a physical temple being constructed by the so-called Jews in the modern state of so-called Israel. Instead the "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) is referring to a spiritual temple that is not physical in nature. Then given the context of the Book of Revelation is highly figurative and metaphorical as you have seen already it would make complete sense that "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) here in figurative terms rather than in literal terms. Therefore this means that "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) in this verse should be referring to the assembly of the Church or rather the assembly of all faithful Christians.

(1) "Go and measure the temple of God and the altar, and count the number of worshippers there" – Since "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) is clearly supposed to be seen as the Church in the assembly of all faithful Christians by being told to "Go and measure the temple of God and the altar, and count the number of worshippers there" (Revelation 11:1) John is being told to count the number of faithful Christians by counting the number of faithful Christians. The idea here is that measuring and counting something implies importance, value and ownership. In other words God has John measure the size of the Church and count the number of faithful Christians because God is claiming the faithful people as His possession. Therefore the purpose of this verse is really the same as the sealing of the faithful in the sealing of the "144,000 from all the tribes of Israel" (Revelation 7:4) that occurred previously. Now this might seem repetitive to stress that God is watching John to be sure that not even a single faithful Christian is forgotten about but you need to understand two things.

First of the sealing of the faithful obviously is heavily focused on the judgment of the earth. Yet it's important to see that it is incredibly important for us to remember that despite everything we see in the world and the situation we may find ourselves in that God has not forgotten about us. Instead God is keeping careful watch over us as His faithful people and He will never forget about us.

Second it is important to remember that the least will become the entire world. Now this may not seem that significant with respect to "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) but you need to once again understand that the least will become the wonders that will deceive almost everyone on earth.

As Jesus says:

"At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'Look, there he is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that would deceive even the elect, if this were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:23-25)

My point here in bringing this up is that those who call themselves Christians will not be immune to the deception that the beast will engage in. Instead they will perform miracles like curing all diseases, ending poverty, reversing aging, biological immortality, cheap energy, ending the need to work and more. Instead the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians today will see the beast as the so-called savior of the world or worse yet as the Christ or rather the return of Jesus. This is because the beast will produce such amazing signs and wonders that people will see it as being like a so-called god that is ushering in the eternal Kingdom of God here on earth. But still how does this relate to "the temple of God" (Revelation 11:1) here? Well you see if the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians are following the beast as they see it as the so-called savior of the world then this would mean that the Church as we see it today will fall. In in other words today's Church will become the Church of Satan as the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians look towards the beast for their salvation instead of towards God and Jesus Christ. This means that the number of true and faithful Christians who do not follow the beast will be very small such that it is highly likely that there will come a time when the average faithful Christian will not know another person who is a faithful Christian. Now please keep in mind that the Book of Revelation says "the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) This means that the number of true and faithful Christians who do not follow the beast will be very small such that it is highly likely that there will come a time when the average faithful Christian will not know another person who is a faithful Christian. Now please keep in mind that the Book of Revelation says "the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) This means that the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians will be deceived by the beast. In other words the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians will be deceived by the beast and will be a part of the Church in Israel. Now this is not a reference to the so-called Jews but it is a reference to those who call themselves Christians today following the beast and worship it as the so-called god.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the land will worship it, everyone whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

My point here is that there will not be some grand victory of the Church so that we as faithful Christians will be overwhelmed by the world when Jesus finally returns. Instead the beast will rise and it is the great prostitute or rather global society itself. Instead I am actually referring to the biblestory of Jesus and the Church as we see it today will fall so that it becomes the Church of Laodicea. Now please keep in mind who call themselves Christians today following the beast and worship it as the so-called god.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. And all who dwell on the land will worship it, everyone whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:7-8)

My point here is that there will not be some grand victory of the Church so that we as faithful Christians will be overwhelmed by the world when Jesus finally returns. Instead the beast will rise and it is the great prostitute or rather global society itself. Instead I am actually referring to the biblestory of Jesus and the Church as we see it today will fall so that it becomes the Church of Laodicea. Now please keep in mind who call themselves Christians today following the beast and worship it as the so-called god.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And from His mouth proceeds a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations, and He will rule them with a rod of iron; He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty. (Revelation 19:15)

Thus when Jesus returns He will not return to save and forgive the people of the world. Instead what Jesus returns to do is return to kill and judge the people of the world. Then since "all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast" (Revelation 13:8) this means that when Jesus returns he will be coming most if not the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians today. As a result the true blitzness is not looking at what will happen to the world and instead the true blitzness is coming to the understanding that it will be very few indeed of those who we call our brothers and sisters today will fall into the Church of Laodicea. Now Then the reason why this blitzness is so great is because we have John the Revelator saying that following the beast will not inherit the eternal Kingdom of God. Instead it will cast you into the Lake of Fire to face the second death.

But really this does not even scratch the surface of what the blitzness of understanding the Book of Revelation represents. For instance just like in the days of Ezekiel God told the people of God that "the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to Me, for the whole house of Israel is hard-headed and hard-hearted.

Behold, I will make your face as hard as their faces, and I will make your forehead as hard as their foreheads. I will make your forehead like a diamond, harder than flint. Do not be afraid of them or disappointed at their presence, even though they are a rebellious house."

'Son of man, take in your heart, listen carefully to all the words I speak to you, and take them to heart. Go to your people, the exiles; speak to them and say to them, 'This is what the Lord GOD says,' whether they listen or refuse to listen."

Then the Spirit lifted me up, and I heard a great rumbling sound behind me: "Blessed be the glory of the LORD in His dwelling place!" It was the sound of the wings of the living creatures brushing against one another, and the sound of the wheels beside them, a great rumbling sound.

So the Spirit lifted me up and took me away, and I went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:1-14)

In this passage the scroll that God commands Ezekiel to eat is supposed to be seen as representative of the word of God or rather the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites. Then in terms of the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites through Ezekiel ultimately God wanted to deliver a message of judgment, repentance, blessing and redemption. This is why Ezekiel wrote that "it was as sweet as honey in my mouth" (Ezekiel 3:3) after he ate it since this message that God had for the ancient Israelites dwelt in the sense that God wanted to deliver a message that the ancient Israelites despite the fact that they were not loving Him with all their heart and loving their neighbor as themselves. Next after eating the scroll Ezekiel was informed by God about what he needs to do Ezekiel said he "went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:14) The first reason why Ezekiel wrote this is because although the initial message God was to deliver was sweet the message still left Ezekiel feeling bitter or rather upset because Ezekiel must deliver a message of judgment to the fellow ancient Israelites and once this judgment comes many will surely die.

Furthermore God also told Ezekiel that "the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to you" (Ezekiel 3:7) him "For the whole house of Israel [is] hard-headed and hard-hearted." (Ezekiel 3:7) Thus the second reason why Ezekiel wrote that the "water of bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) is because ultimately Ezekiel is being sent out on a futile mission in the sense that although he is to speak on behalf of God to his people they will not listen. The idea here is that he does not want to see his people rebel against God so that they are judged by God and instead he wants to see them accept his message as true and repent of their sins. However such a thing happening is a complete impossibility because God says the ancient Israelites will not listen to him so that they will not turn from their rebellion and repent. Therefore I am sure you can see why Ezekiel would go "in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) as he wrote. If you cannot then just imagine being given the blessing of receiving knowledge from God but at the same time the curse that whoever hears your words will scoff at you and reject what you have said. My point here is that sure you may taste the sweetness of the things of God but ultimately without anyone to share the things of God with you will be left in bitterness as you realize the whole world and everyone in it stands against you.

Bright since the angel saying the scroll "will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) is a clear reference to the Book of Ezekiel the meaning should be obvious. The idea here is that since "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) is the will of God to the faithful when John eats the "small scroll" it will be sweet in his mouth (Revelation 10:9) In other words what we are to inherit from God and we are to receive from God is sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) since nothing is better than the particular thing this end can come to a people. Then the reason why the angel says "the small scroll will make your stomach bitter" is because of God will make John's stomach bitter is because although the inheritance that the faithful are to receive seems sweet at first once John fully understands what God is to happen before we can receive our inheritance John will be left with a bitter feeling as he no longer sees the future as something that is sweet and pleasant. For instance just like with Ezekiel and how he "went away in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) due to the fact his people will reject his message the idea here is that John will be in bitterness due to the fact that the world will not accept the Book of Revelation as true. In other words although the promise of our inheritance from God in the eternal Kingdom of God is sweet upon first hearing about it, once the reality of what must come to pass and what we must endure before our eternal Kingdom of God arrives sets in then we will be left with a bitter feeling.

So what does this all mean for us exactly? Well really I would say that the promises that God has for us are sweet but even though the world is like "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) or the will of God. The idea here is that God's will to us as the faithful is bitter in the sense that it requires to give us an inheritance as we are adopted as His children and because of this fact there is no reason to not see God's promises in the Book of Revelation as being God's will to us.

As God says:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my son." (Revelation 21:7)

Thus this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is representative of everything that God has promised that we will receive in the eternal Kingdom of God. Now you may ask why despite this fact on the basis that this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is not explicitly referred to as the will of God or the scroll sealed with seven seals. However since the angel says that we have seen up until this point is the scroll that "was sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) would make the most sense to say that this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is that scroll. Furthermore "the scroll was previously sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) and now the scroll "lies open in the hand of the angel standing on the sea and on the land." (Revelation 10:8) My point here is that according to the narrative of the Book of Revelation the Lamb is the only one who can open the seven seals. This would of course mean that the scroll has been completely unsealed and that it is now opened. Thus this fact would then be why the scroll that "was sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) now "lies open in the hand of the angel standing on the sea and on the land." (Revelation 10:8) As a result the "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is the same as the scroll that "was sealed with seven seals." (Revelation 5:1)

Lastly the same voice from heaven that is supposed to be representative of God is now telling John to take "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) or the will of God to the faithful from "the angel standing on the sea and on the land." (Revelation 10:8) The reason why this angel has "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is as the representative of the will of God to the faithful is entering the Temple of God and the Lamb of Jesus in executing the will of God now that Jesus has opened the seals to reveal the contents of the will.

(9) "And I went to the angel and said, 'Give me the small scroll.' So he said to me, 'Take the small scroll' (Revelation 10:9) or the will of God from the angel as the voice from heaven or rather God said to John.

(9) "Take it and eat it,' he said. 'It will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey.'" – To begin obeying the angel is telling telling John to eat "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) or rather the will of God. Now at first the angel saying that eating the scroll "will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) may seem to slightly contradict what Jesus is simple to understand. First off "in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) is actually a reference to the Book of Ezekiel.

As the Book of Ezekiel says:

"Son of man,' He said to me, 'eat what you find here. Eat this scroll, then go and speak to the house of Israel.'

So I opened my mouth, and He fed me the scroll.

'Son of man,' He said to me, 'eat and fill your stomach with this scroll I am giving you.'

So I ate, and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth.

Then He said to me, 'Son of man, go now to the house of Israel and speak My words to them. For you are not being sent to a people of unfamiliar speech or difficult language, but to the house of Israel—not to the peoples of unfamiliar speech and difficult language whose words you cannot understand. Surely if I had sent you to them, they would have listened to you.

But the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to you, since they are unwilling to listen to Me. For the whole house of Israel is hard-headed and hard-hearted.

Behold, I will make your face as hard as their faces, and I will make your forehead as hard as their foreheads. I will make your forehead like a diamond, harder than flint. Do not be afraid of them or disappointed at their presence, even though they are a rebellious house.

'Son of man, take in your heart, listen carefully to all the words I speak to you, and take them to heart. Go to your people, the exiles; speak to them and say to them, 'This is what the Lord GOD says,' whether they listen or refuse to listen.'

Then the Spirit lifted me up, and I heard a great rumbling sound behind me: 'Blessed be the glory of the LORD in His dwelling place!' It was the sound of the wings of the living creatures brushing against one another, and the sound of the wheels beside them, a great rumbling sound.

So the Spirit lifted me up and took me away, and I went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:1-14)

In this passage the scroll that God commands Ezekiel to eat is supposed to be seen as representative of the word of God or rather the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites. Then in terms of the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites through Ezekiel ultimately God wanted to deliver a message of judgment, repentance, blessing and redemption. This is why Ezekiel wrote that "it was as sweet as honey in my mouth" (Ezekiel 3:3) after he ate it since this message that God had for the ancient Israelites dwelt in the sense that God wanted to deliver a message that the ancient Israelites despite the fact that they were not loving Him with all their heart and loving their neighbor as themselves. Next after eating the scroll Ezekiel was informed by God about what he needs to do Ezekiel said he "went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:14) The first reason why Ezekiel wrote this is because although the initial message God was to deliver was sweet the message still left Ezekiel feeling bitter or rather upset because Ezekiel must deliver a message of judgment to the fellow ancient Israelites and once this judgment comes many will surely die.

Furthermore God also told Ezekiel that "the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to you" (Ezekiel 3:7) him "For the whole house of Israel [is] hard-headed and hard-hearted." (Ezekiel 3:7) Thus the second reason why Ezekiel wrote that the "water of bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) is because ultimately Ezekiel is being sent out on a futile mission in the sense that although he is to speak on behalf of God to his people they will not listen. The idea here is that he does not want to see his people rebel against God so that they are judged by God and instead he wants to see them accept his message as true and repent of their sins. However such a thing happening is a complete impossibility because God says the ancient Israelites will not listen to him so that they will not turn from their rebellion and repent. Therefore I am sure you can see why Ezekiel would go "in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) as he wrote. If you cannot then just imagine being given the blessing of receiving knowledge from God but at the same time the curse that whoever hears your words will scoff at you and reject what you have said. My point here is that sure you may taste the sweetness of the things of God but ultimately without anyone to share the things of God with you will be left in bitterness as you realize the whole world and everyone in it stands against you.

(9) "So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it; and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned bitter." – After the angel tells John to eat the scroll John takes the scroll and eats it. Then of course the scroll tasted as sweet as honey in his mouth like the angel said but then after John finished eating it his "stomach turned bitter." (Revelation 10:10) As I said before the idea here is that knowing God's promises and plan for the eternal Kingdom of God will at first bring John joy that the scroll tastes as sweet as honey. However after fully understanding God's plan for the future John will feel sad or bitter about what must take place before this future can come to pass and thus the scroll makes his stomach bitter.

Once again the idea here is that what God has in store for us in the future is both sweet and "scroll" it will be sweet to us as we enter the eternal Kingdom of God will be ushered in on earth and we will be resurrected to live eternally with God in the new Jerusalem. Then bitter in than the particular this end can come to a people. Then the reason why the angel says "the scroll will make your stomach bitter" is because of God will make John's stomach bitter is because although the inheritance that the faithful are to receive seems sweet at first once John fully understands what God is to happen before we can receive our inheritance John will be left with a bitter feeling as he no longer sees the future as something that is sweet and pleasant. For instance just like with Ezekiel and how he "went away in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) due to the fact his people will reject his message the idea here is that John will be in bitterness due to the fact that the world will not accept the Book of Revelation as true. In other words although the promise of our inheritance from God in the eternal Kingdom of God is sweet upon first hearing about it, once the reality of what must come to pass and what we must endure before our eternal Kingdom of God arrives sets in then we will be left with a bitter feeling.

So what does this all mean for us exactly? Well really I would say that the promises that God has for us are sweet but even though the world is like "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) or the will of God. The idea here is that God's will to us as the faithful is bitter in the sense that requires to give us an inheritance as we are adopted as His children and because of this fact there is no reason to not see God's promises in the Book of Revelation as being God's will to us.

As God says:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my son." (Revelation 21:7)

(9) "So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it; and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned bitter." – After the angel tells John to eat the scroll John takes the scroll and eats it. Then of course the scroll tasted as sweet as honey in his mouth like the angel said but then after John finished eating it his "stomach turned bitter." (Revelation 10:10) As I said before the idea here is that knowing God's promises and plan for the eternal Kingdom of God will at first bring John joy that the scroll tastes as sweet as honey. However after fully understanding God's plan for the future John will feel sad or bitter about what must take place before this future can come to pass and thus the scroll makes his stomach bitter.

Once again the idea here is that what God has in store for us in the future is both sweet and "scroll" it will be sweet to us as we enter the eternal Kingdom of God will be ushered in on earth and we will be resurrected to live eternally with God in the new Jerusalem. Then bitter in than the particular this end can come to a people. Then the reason why the angel says "the scroll will make your stomach bitter" is because of God will make John's stomach bitter is because although the inheritance that the faithful are to receive seems sweet at first once John fully understands what God is to happen before we can receive our inheritance John will be left with a bitter feeling as he no longer sees the future as something that is sweet and pleasant. For instance just like with Ezekiel and how he "went away in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) due to the fact his people will reject his message the idea here is that John will be in bitterness due to the fact that the world will not accept the Book of Revelation as true. In other words although the promise of our inheritance from God in the eternal Kingdom of God is sweet upon first hearing about it, once the reality of what must come to pass and what we must endure before our eternal Kingdom of God arrives sets in then we will be left with a bitter feeling.

So what does this all mean for us exactly? Well really I would say that the promises that God has for us are sweet but even though the world is like "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) or the will of God. The idea here is that God's will to us as the faithful is bitter in the sense that requires to give us an inheritance as we are adopted as His children and because of this fact there is no reason to not see God's promises in the Book of Revelation as being God's will to us.

As God says:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my son." (Revelation 21:7)

Thus this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is representative of everything that God has promised that we will receive in the eternal Kingdom of God. Now you may ask why despite this fact on the basis that this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is not explicitly referred to as the will of God or the scroll sealed with seven seals. However since the angel says that we have seen up until this point is the scroll that "was sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) would make the most sense to say that this "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is that scroll. Furthermore "the scroll was previously sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5:1) and now the scroll "lies open in the hand of the angel standing on the sea and on the land." (Revelation 10:8) As a result the "small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is the same as the scroll that "was sealed with seven seals." (Revelation 5:1)

Lastly the same voice from heaven that is supposed to be representative of God is now telling John to take "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) or the will of God to the faithful from "the angel standing on the sea and on the land." (Revelation 10:8) The reason why this angel has "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:8) is as the representative of the will of God to the faithful is entering the Temple of God and the Lamb of Jesus in executing the will of God now that Jesus has opened the seals to reveal the contents of the will.

(9) "And I went to the angel and said, 'Give me the small scroll.' So he said to me, 'Take the small scroll' (Revelation 10:9) or the will of God from the angel as the voice from heaven or rather God said to John.

(9) "Take it and eat it,' he said. 'It will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey.'" – To begin obeying the angel is telling telling John to eat "the small scroll" (Revelation 10:9) or rather the will of God. Now at first the angel saying that eating the scroll "will make your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) may seem to slightly contradict what Jesus is simple to understand. First off "in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey" (Revelation 10:9) is actually a reference to the Book of Ezekiel.

As the Book of Ezekiel says:

"Son of man,' He said to me, 'eat what you find here. Eat this scroll, then go and speak to the house of Israel.'

So I opened my mouth, and He fed me the scroll.

'Son of man,' He said to me, 'eat and fill your stomach with this scroll I am giving you.'

So I ate, and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth.

Then He said to me, 'Son of man, go now to the house of Israel and speak My words to them. For you are not being sent to a people of unfamiliar speech or difficult language, but to the house of Israel—not to the peoples of unfamiliar speech and difficult language whose words you cannot understand. Surely if I had sent you to them, they would have listened to you.

But the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to you, since they are unwilling to listen to Me. For the whole house of Israel is hard-headed and hard-hearted.

Behold, I will make your face as hard as their faces, and I will make your forehead as hard as their foreheads. I will make your forehead like a diamond, harder than flint. Do not be afraid of them or disappointed at their presence, even though they are a rebellious house.

'Son of man, take in your heart, listen carefully to all the words I speak to you, and take them to heart. Go to your people, the exiles; speak to them and say to them, 'This is what the Lord GOD says,' whether they listen or refuse to listen.'

Then the Spirit lifted me up, and I heard a great rumbling sound behind me: 'Blessed be the glory of the LORD in His dwelling place!' It was the sound of the wings of the living creatures brushing against one another, and the sound of the wheels beside them, a great rumbling sound.

So the Spirit lifted me up and took me away, and I went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:1-14)

In this passage the scroll that God commands Ezekiel to eat is supposed to be seen as representative of the word of God or rather the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites. Then in terms of the message that God wants Ezekiel to speak to the ancient Israelites through Ezekiel ultimately God wanted to deliver a message of judgment, repentance, blessing and redemption. This is why Ezekiel wrote that "it was as sweet as honey in my mouth" (Ezekiel 3:3) after he ate it since this message that God had for the ancient Israelites dwelt in the sense that God wanted to deliver a message that the ancient Israelites despite the fact that they were not loving Him with all their heart and loving their neighbor as themselves. Next after eating the scroll Ezekiel was informed by God about what he needs to do Ezekiel said he "went in bitterness and in the anger of my spirit, with the strong hand of the LORD upon me." (Ezekiel 3:14) The first reason why Ezekiel wrote this is because although the initial message God was to deliver was sweet the message still left Ezekiel feeling bitter or rather upset because Ezekiel must deliver a message of judgment to the fellow ancient Israelites and once this judgment comes many will surely die.

Furthermore God also told Ezekiel that "the house of Israel will be unwilling to listen to you" (Ezekiel 3:7) him "For the whole house of Israel [is] hard-headed and hard-hearted." (Ezekiel 3:7) Thus the second reason why Ezekiel wrote that the "water of bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) is because ultimately Ezekiel is being sent out on a futile mission in the sense that although he is to speak on behalf of God to his people they will not listen. The idea here is that he does not want to see his people rebel against God so that they are judged by God and instead he wants to see them accept his message as true and repent of their sins. However such a thing happening is a complete impossibility because God says the ancient Israelites will not listen to him so that they will not turn from their rebellion and repent. Therefore I am sure you can see why Ezekiel would go "in bitterness" (Ezekiel 3:14) as he wrote. If you cannot then just imagine being given the blessing of receiving knowledge from God but at the same time the curse that whoever hears your words will scoff at you and reject what you have said. My point here is that sure you may taste the sweetness of the things of God but ultimately without anyone to share the things of God with you will be left in bitterness as you realize the whole world and everyone in it stands against you.

(10) "And they told me, 'You must prophesy again about many peoples and nations and tongues and kings.'" – John is now told that he must continue to prophesy of God and foretell the will of God. This means that the prophecies of the Book of Revelation are not over and that instead they will continue. Then the reason why he is told that he must "must prophesy again about many peoples and nations and tongues and kings" (Revelation 10:11) is because

Pharisees saw the Law as a game where their goal was to follow it to the letter while breaking the spirit of the Law when it suited them. This is why Jesus called the Scribes and Pharisees 'whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside, but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and every kind of impurity" (Matthew 23:27) and this is also why Jesus said "In the same way, on the outside you appear to be righteous, but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness" (Matthew 23:28) The idea here is that sure the Pharisees are blameless and righteous based on the letter of the Law but in reality they are guilty and wicked based on the intent of the spirit of the Law.

Therefore the purpose of the Law of Moses was to guide us towards loving God with all our heart and loving our neighbor as ourself. Now you might wish to dispute this so consider the example of the Sabbath. Since the Scribes and Pharisees followed the letter of the Law perfectly they took the position that doing any work of any sort on the Sabbath is wrong and in violation of the Law.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "One Sabbath day Jesus was passing through the grainfields, and his disciples began to pick the heads of grain as they walked along. So the Pharisees said to Him, 'Look, why are they doing what is unlawful on the Sabbath?'
>
> Jesus replied, 'Have you never read what David did when he and his companions were hungry and in need? During the high priesthood of Abiathar, he entered the house of God and ate the consecrated bread, which was lawful only for the priests. And he gave some to his companions as well.'
>
> Then Jesus declared, 'The Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath. Therefore, the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath.' (Matthew 23:19-20)

Jesus's point in this passage is that the Sabbath was created as a good thirlg for men and because of this he could do work on the Sabbath can be seen as following the spirit of the Law even if it is in violation of the letter of the Law. Therefore clearly from Jesus's perspective at least following the letter of the Law is not actually required and true righteousness does not come from following the Law. Instead we are supposed to follow the spirit of the Law of Moses so that we see the Law as being our guide to achieving righteousness and also leading the way to righteousness. Then of course the Law is supposed to guide us towards to love God with all our heart and to love our neighbor as ourself. This is the proper perspective that the Book of Revelation has with respect to the commandments of God. That said if you still wish to dispute what I have said there then just know that I talk more about the meaning and purpose of the Law later on where I fully demonstrate that what I have said here is correct. Therefore if you disagree with what I have said here so far then just accept it as true for the time being so that you can make sense.

So if we are not required to follow the Law of Moses then what exactly does it mean to view the nations trampling the Church in terms of the nations transgressing the commandments of God so that they slowly corrupt the Church away from the mission of loving God towards the principles of men? Well in short it means that the so-called Christians in the courtyard of the Temple of God are so-called Christians because they do not love God with all their heart and love their neighbor as themselves. Instead these so-called Christians chase after the desires of the nations instead of the desires of God. The idea here is that a genuine Christian worship God in the Temple of God or the Church we are supposed to live out loving God with our heart and loving our neighbor as ourselves throughout everything we do. Then those who do not do this are not worshiping God in the Temple of God and instead they are in the courtyard of the Temple where they chase after their own desires.

If this does not make sense then think of it in terms of what I said in regards to Jesus chasing out the merchants and money changers from the Temple. My point here is that Jesus was with the merchants and money changers was specifically that they were using the temple for money and instead Jesus's issue was with how the merchants and money changers were exploiting and profiting off of the Temple system in order to satisfy their desires for money. Now although the merchants and money changers no doubt believed themselves to be devoted to God due to the actions they performed in reality they were not dedicated their efforts to God and instead they were dedicated their efforts to themselves and their greed. Therefore with respect to the Nations trampling the Church here with the so-called Christians in the courtyard the idea here is that these so-called Christians are chasing after their own desires in reality even though they believe themselves devoted to God.

So what does this all mean exactly? I mean sure the so-called Christians in the courtyard are not loving God with all their heart and loving their neighbor as themselves but what exactly does it mean in our day and time all your heart and to not love your neighbor as yourself? Well really this is a rather complicated question but I will answer more in depth later on in my part called Various Insights. That said I would like to provide at least provide some explanation so that you are aware of what it means for someone to be a so-called Christian in the courtyard.

First off with respect to loving God with all your heart it is best to understand what it means to love God with all your heart by looking at what it means to not love God with all your heart. For instance take prayer as an example. As I have referenced already Jesus says that when you pray you should 'go into your room, close your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen." (Matthew 6:6) This is because when you pray alone and in secret you are not praying for the benefit of being seen by others but rather they will see you as righteous. As a result those so-called Christians who never miss a church service and only pray in public when others are around are not actually honoring and worshiping God through their prayers. Instead the purpose of their prayers and going to church is for other to see them as righteous so that they can receive a greater amount of social currency or rather respect from their social group. To the end those who advocate prayer in public in any form such as in schools, before sports games at work or in government would also be so-called Christians because by advocating for public prayer they are not actually interested in honoring and worshiping God. Instead these so-called Christians are only interested in pushing a cultural agenda. In other words being faithful to God is not about putting on a public show for others to see and instead being faithful to God is about doing acts of worship for the benefit of God alone in your own private life. Based on all this I am sure you can see the application to the worshipers in "the courtyard outside the temple." (Revelation 11:2) Now you may believe that prayer in the Temple of God is the benefit and instead they are praying to God for their own benefit. This is why God says to "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

As further point with respect to prayer consider the content of your prayers as well. But what do I mean by this? Well let me ask you a question. What is the purpose of prayer? Now at first you may believe that the purpose of prayer is to ask God for what you want to receive but that is not the case. Instead the sole purpose of prayer is to give thanks to, honor and worship God. In other words if you pray for the purpose of God and for His benefit then you are praying correctly. On the other hand if you pray for your own benefit then you are not praying to God and instead you are using it to treat God as a wish granting machine so that your faith depends upon the fulfillment of what you ask of God then you are not actually worshiping God in the Temple of God and instead you would be one of the so-called Christians in the courtyard "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

As further point with respect to prayer consider the content of your prayers as well. But what do I mean by this? Well let me ask you a question. What is the purpose of prayer? Now at first you may believe that the purpose of prayer is to ask God for what you want to receive but that is not the case. Instead the sole purpose of prayer is to give thanks to, honor and worship God. In other words if you pray for the purpose of God and for His benefit then you are praying correctly. On the other hand if you pray for your own benefit then you are not praying to God and instead you are using it treat God as a wish granting machine so that your faith depends upon the fulfillment of what you ask of God then you are not actually worshiping God in the Temple of God and instead you would be one of the so-called Christians in the courtyard "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

Yet at least provide some explanation so that you are aware of what it means for someone to be a so-called Christian in the courtyard.

First off with respect to loving God with all your heart it is best to understand what it means to love God with all your heart by looking at what it means to not love God with all your heart. For instance take prayer as an example. As I have referenced already Jesus says that when you pray you should 'go into your room, close your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen." (Matthew 6:6) This is because when you pray alone and in secret you are not praying for the benefit of being seen by others so that they will see you as righteous. As a result those so-called Christians who never miss a church service and only pray in public when others are around are not actually honoring and worshiping God through their prayers. Instead the purpose of their prayers and going to church is for other to see them as righteous so that they can receive a greater amount of social currency or rather respect from their social group. To the end those who advocate prayer in public in any form such as in schools, before sports games at work or in government would also be so-called Christians because by advocating for public prayer they are not actually interested in honoring and worshiping God. Instead these so-called Christians are only interested in pushing a cultural agenda. In other words being faithful to God is not about putting on a public show for others to see and instead being faithful to God is about doing acts of worship for the benefit of God alone in your own private life. Based on all this I am sure you can see the application to the worshipers in "the courtyard outside the temple." (Revelation 11:2) Now you may believe that prayer in the Temple of God is the benefit and instead they are praying to God for their own benefit. This is why God says to "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

As further point with respect to prayer consider the content of your prayers as well. But what do I mean by this? Well let me ask you a question. What is the purpose of prayer? Now at first you may believe that the purpose of prayer is to ask God for what you want to receive but that is not the case. Instead the sole purpose of prayer is to give thanks to, honor and worship God. In other words if you pray for the purpose of God and for His benefit then you are praying correctly. On the other hand if you pray for your own benefit then you are not praying to God and instead you are using it treat God as a wish granting machine so that your faith depends upon the fulfillment of what you ask of God then you are not actually worshiping God in the Temple of God and instead you would be one of the so-called Christians in the courtyard "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

Really what I am getting at here with respect to loving God with all your heart is that cultural Christianity does not love God with all their heart because for them Christianity is not about worshiping God but instead it is about cultural culture. For instance those who want to push prayer in schools are not trying to advance the worship of God and instead they are trying to advance what they see as Christian culture. In other words what makes a cultural Christian a cultural Christian is when they center on public displays and acts for the purpose of advancing the culture rather than the faith. For example a cultural Christian Christianity is a public religion to be shared in church or in group prayer alone instead of a private experience of having faith in, trusting and worshiping God. This means that so-called Christians in the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) can be seen as cultural Christians in the sense that they only really care about advancing what they see as Christian culture rather than God in order to fit in. Now you might say that these two different cultural Christians are completely different but really this is not the case. Instead the only real difference between them is how dedicated they are to their culture. For instance for the extreme type of cultural Christian they are extremely dedicated to their culture as evidenced by the fact they try to impose it on others. For the other type of cultural Christian really does not care about their culture to such an extent. Thus the difference is how dedicated each is to their culture as I said. That said my point here is that cultural Christians of all types would be an example of the so-called Christians in "the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) and because of this fact they are not counted among God's faithful people. Instead they are counted as part of the faithful of God will be counted among His faithful people.

Next with respect to loving your neighbor as yourself consider the idea of tithing. It seems that the practices of the majority of those who call themselves Christians has become corrupted. For instance consider the fact that the practice of charging interest on loans has become normalized even among those who call themselves Christians. Just why is charging interest on loans wrong?

As the Book of Deuteronomy says:

> "Do not charge your brother interest on money, food, or anything else that is owed. You may charge a foreigner interest, but not your brother, so that the LORD your God may bless you in everything to which you put your hand in the land that you are entering to possess." (Deuteronomy 23:19-20)

But wait did I not just say that from the perspective of the Book of Revelation we do not have to follow the Law of Moses? Well yes I did but you need to understand that the Law of Moses is not dead but it is alive and well in and of itself so that if you follow the Law of Moses you are perfectly righteous. Now we are not supposed to lead us to righteousness by helping us to understand how to love God with all our heart and love our neighbor as ourself. Thus within the context of the Law of Moses as ourself charging interest to our brothers and sisters is wrong because it is exploitative. But why is interest exploitative? Well because charging interest is literally profiting off of the desperation of others. Then if charging interest is wrong then why do people charge it in stead? Really think about it in terms of if one of your close friends or family members asks you to loan in order to pay for some needed expenses. So would you be so cruel and heartless as to brother, mother, sister or father interest on the loan they are asking you for? Of course not you say to not even worry about paying you back if they are able to in the future? Of course you would loan them the money they need while not charging them any interest. Now the question is you would also not seek payment if they cannot pay in the future. My point here is that it is wrong to charge interest on loans in the context of charging interest on loans means treating our fellow Christians in our family, brothers and sisters and fathers. I mean if we would help out our close family without charging interest or alone charging interest and if we would expect them to do the same for us then how could we possibly justify charging interest to your fellow Christians? Of course by charging interest to you charge your fellow Christians interest then you are no longer treating them as family.

Then along the lines of charging interest on loans consider paying employees a fair wage. In today's world it is very common for people to themselves Christians a fair wage is defined as the lowest wage they can get by with and still willing to work for you. To this end many people will themselves Christians openly advocate for lowering or even abolishing the minimum wage so that they can have lower labor costs and increase their profits. Now why is this a problem exactly? Well in case you were unaware there is a housing crisis in America similar to the United States it is not possible for someone to earn enough money to live and making minimum wage. For example before quitting my job I was homeless for three times like federal minimum wage in the United States. However I was able to find work even even if I put all of my after tax earnings towards a one bedroom apartment I would not have been able to afford one. Of course even if I would have been able to afford the apartment with all of my after tax earnings really the apartment would still not be affordable because of other expenses like food, transportation and more. My point here is that if someone cannot afford to live there on minimum wage close to three times the federal minimum wage then something is very wrong. This would be the United States is supposedly a Christian majority country. Now I know what you are thinking there is something wrong with the Christianity that these people are doing. If you disagree then how can you possibly justify paying someone so little that they cannot even afford to live there on working hard full-time? I mean if someone cannot even afford to live there then what do you think of them but even a slave?

Therefore instead of paying our fellow Christians as little as possible we should pay our fellow Christians themselves let alone their family we should love our neighbor as ourselves and love God with all our heart and love the neighbor as themselves and love their neighbor as themselves but what exactly does it mean to love God with all your heart and to not love your neighbor as yourself? Well really this is a rather complicated question but I will answer more in depth later on in my part called Various Insights. That said I would like to provide at least provide some explanation so that you are aware of what it means for someone to be a so-called Christian in the courtyard.

First off with respect to loving God with all your heart it is best to understand what it means to love God with all your heart by looking at what it means to not love God with all your heart. For instance take prayer as an example. As I have referenced already Jesus says that when you pray you should 'go into your room, close your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen." (Matthew 6:6) This is because when you pray alone and in secret you are not praying for the benefit of being seen by others so that they will see you as righteous. As a result those so-called Christians who never miss a church service and only pray in public when others are around are not actually honoring and worshiping God through their prayers. Instead the purpose of their prayers and going to church is for other to see them as righteous so that they can receive a greater amount of social currency or rather respect from their social group. To the end those who advocate prayer in public in any form such as in schools, before sports games at work or in government would also be so-called Christians because by advocating for public prayer they are not actually interested in honoring and worshiping God. Instead these so-called Christians are only interested in pushing a cultural agenda. In other words being faithful to God is not about putting on a public show for others to see and instead being faithful to God is about doing acts of worship for the benefit of God alone in your own private life. Based on all this I am sure you can see the application to the worshipers in "the courtyard outside the temple." (Revelation 11:2) Now you may believe that prayer in the Temple of God is the benefit and instead they are praying to God for their own benefit. This is why God says to "exclude the courtyard outside the temple" (Revelation 11:2) since these so-called Christians are not faithful on the inside even though they appear to be faithful on the inside.

Now this standard might seem rather subjective but it is not really it depends on what you would want others to do and for you. I would not want others to do anything to me unless I felt this standard is subjective. But really the reason why the commandments of God are subjective as ourself works is because it is subjective in nature. The reason why the commandments do not really work in terms of governing how we treat each other. For instance consider what it means to be in the letter of the law Pharisees and how they would follow the letter of the law. The idea here is that the Law, My point here is that when you have a list of objective commandments it allows people to some creativity in order to completely get around to the letter of the commandments while still obeying the letter of the commandments.

For instance at one point in the United States a law was passed that allowed companies to offer health insurance to all their full-time employees. The idea here is that companies did in response? Offer all their full-time employees health insurance but they made it so that what is what the law required. However in response employers made it so that the only employees they could to part-time hours instead of full-time hours because the law only requires health insurance to be offered to people who are part-time employees who work sky 32 hours a week instead of 40 hours. Of course 32 hours is not actually part-time in reality but the law is the law. My point here is that the spirit of the law was to ensure that everyone working full-time could have access to health insurance but they do declare bankruptcy. However the letter of the law allows for companies to make sure that their employees to part-time so that they do not have to provide health insurance. Thus the objective laws and commandments are really inferiently flawed. But wait you say not just adjust the law to require employers to pay for a proportion of their employees health insurance with full-time employees and the full-time employees and proportional payment for part-time employees so that your faith depends on this instance but things are more complicated than this. Firstly there are other ways in the many laws and regulations but why the laws and regulations therefore are not actually the defining terms and standards. My point here is that if you set of rules according to the letter of the law then you need to make sure the letter of the law is complete in order to make sure there are no loopholes. Of course this is impossible this is fundamentally impossible and is why the number and volume of laws and regulations continually expands.

My point here is that ultimately more objective commandments fail and because of this fact more subjective commandments are actually a better standard. This is why Jesus said that All the Law and the Prophets hang on" (Matthew 22:40) the two commandments of loving God with all our heart and loving our neighbor as ourselves. Jesus's point is that loving God and loving our neighbor is the spirit of the Law or rather what God wants from His people. The idea here is that Jesus's point is that the spirit of the Law is important to God and instead the spirit of the Law is important to us. It is important to God. Now you might dispute this so consider the following verse from the Law.

As the Book of Deuteronomy says:

> "You break your hearts and minds; tie them as reminders on your hands and bind them on your foreheads." (Deuteronomy 11:18)

So how do you think the Scribes and the Pharisees applied this commandment? Well they of course followed the letter of the Law and literally tied boxes containing verses from the Law to their hands and foreheads. However in reality it is very obvious that the intent of this commandment is for us to bind the words from the Law on your hands and on your foreheads. Consider what it means to bind the words on your forehead as a way of saying that you should act in accordance to the Law in all things so that when people look upon you, or see your forehead, they see someone who follows the Law as evidenced by the righteous way of life in you. Then in wise Solomon says to bind his words to your hands because we are are supposed to follow the Law guide us in all things so that whenever we move our hand we only move our hand in accordance to the Law. In other words the spirit of this commandment is telling us that we should always act in accordance to the Law in everything we do so that whenever anyone looks upon us they see someone who follows Law. Then because of this fact following the letter of the Law by literally tying verses from the Law to our forehead and hands is just completely nonsensical and missing the entire purpose of the commandment. Therefore my point here is that the letter of the Law is unimportant to God and instead the spirit or intent of the Law is what is important to God.

As a result the whole idea here with the nations trampling the Church here in this verse of the Book of Revelation is that the Church has become corrupted by the nations of the world as the now so-called Christians disobey the spirit or intent of the Law in order to better fit in with their own desires and standards of the day. In other words the Church has become corrupted from within with the beliefs of those outside the Church, so that these so-called Christians or the so-called Christians will not really be any different from those who are not themselves Christian. Thus just like how merchants and money changers had turned the Temple of God into a place of commerce so too has Jesus's day the Church will be largely be taken over by the world and the world crucified to fit their view of what is acceptable. This means that the vast majority of the Church will be the vast majority of the Church does not love God with all their heart and love their neighbor as themselves. Of course this has already occurred? Well yes it has and I would actually say that a large majority of those who call themselves Christian today do not love God with all their heart and love their neighbor as themselves. Therefore do not think that you are inside the Temple of God because you love God with all your heart and love your neighbor as ourself. Thus within the context of the Law of Moses as ourself charging interest to our brothers and sisters is wrong because it is exploitative. But why is interest exploitative? Well because charging interest is literally profiting off of the desperation of others. Then if charging interest is wrong then why do people charge it in stead? Really think about it in terms of if one of your close friends or family members asks you to loan in order to pay for some needed expenses. So would you be so cruel and heartless as to brother, mother, sister or father interest on the loan they are asking you for? Of course you say to not even worry about paying you back if they are able to in the future? Of course you would loan them the money they need while not charging them any interest. Now the question is you would also not seek payment if they cannot pay in the future. My point here is that it is wrong to charge interest on loans in the context of charging interest on loans means treating our fellow Christians in our family, brothers and sisters, and fathers. I mean if we would help out our close family without charging interest or alone charging interest and if we would expect them to do the same for us then how could possibly justify charging interest to your fellow Christians? Of course by charging interest to you charge your fellow Christians interest then you are no longer treating them as family.

Then along the lines of charging interest on loans consider paying employees a fair wage. In today's world it is very common for people to themselves Christians a fair wage is defined as the lowest wage they can get by with and still willing to work for you. To this end many people will themselves Christians openly advocate for lowering or even abolishing the minimum wage so that they can have lower labor costs and increase their profits. Now why is this a problem exactly? Well in case you were unaware there is a housing crisis in America similar to the United States it is not possible for someone to earn enough money to live and making minimum wage. For example before quitting my job I was homeless for three times like federal minimum wage in the United States. However I was able to find work even even if I put all of my after tax earnings towards a one bedroom apartment I would not have been able to afford one. Of course even if I would have been able to afford the apartment with all of my after tax earnings really the apartment would still not be affordable because of other expenses like food, transportation and more. My point here is that if someone cannot afford to live there on minimum wage close to three times the federal minimum wage then something is very wrong. This would be the United States is supposedly a Christian majority country. Now I know what you are thinking there is something wrong with the Christianity that these people are doing. If you disagree then how can you possibly justify paying someone so little that they cannot even afford to live there on working hard full-time? I mean if someone cannot even afford to live there then what do you think of them but even a slave?

Therefore instead of paying our fellow Christians as little as possible we should pay our fellow Christians themselves let alone their family we should love our neighbor as ourselves and love God with all our heart and love the neighbor as themselves and love their neighbor as themselves.

My point with these two examples of charging interest on loans and paying employees a fair wage is that loving our neighbor as ourselves is not as simple as just not stealing from them and not commit adultery. Instead in order to actually love our neighbor as ourselves we have to do to others what you would want them to do to you. For instance if you are a desperate situation and imagine you are in a desperate situation with no hope. If you were in that situation would you want someone to exploit your situation by charging you interest on the lowest rates? Of course not. Then likewise if you really needed a job then would you want someone to abuse your situation by paying you less than you work full-time? Of course not. Therefore what I was trying to underline here is that the essence of loving your neighbor as yourself is treating your neighbor how you would want them to treat you. Then as long as you do this you are in fact with all your heart then you following the Law.

Now this standard might seem rather subjective but it is not really it depends on what you would want others to do and for you. I would not want others to do anything to me unless I felt this standard is subjective. But really the reason why the commandments of God are subjective as ourself works is because it is subjective in nature. The reason why the commandments do not really work in terms of governing how we treat each other. For instance consider what it means to be in the letter of the law Pharisees and how they would follow the letter of the law. The idea here is that the Law, My point here is that when you have a list of objective commandments it allows people to some creativity in order to completely get around to the letter of the commandments while still obeying the letter of the commandments.

For instance at one point in the United States a law was passed that allowed companies to offer health insurance to all their full-time employees. The idea here is that companies did in response? Offer all their full-time employees health insurance but they made it so that what is what the law required. However in response employers made it so that the only employees they could to part-time hours instead of full-time hours because the law only requires health insurance to be offered to people who are part-time employees who work sky 32 hours a week instead of 40 hours. Of course 32 hours is not actually part-time in reality but the law is the law. My point here is that the spirit of the law was to ensure that everyone working full-time could have access to health insurance but they do declare bankruptcy. However the letter of the law allows for companies to make sure that their employees to part-time so that they do not have to provide health insurance. Thus the objective laws and commandments are really inferiently flawed. But wait you say not just adjust the law to require employers to pay for a proportion of their employees health insurance with full-time employees and the full-time employees and proportional payment for part-time employees so that your faith depends on this instance but things are more complicated than this. Firstly there are other ways in the many laws and regulations but why the laws and regulations therefore are not actually the defining terms and standards. My point here is that if you set of rules according to the letter of the law then you need to make sure the letter of the law is complete in order to make sure there are no loopholes. Of course this is impossible this is fundamentally impossible and is why the number and volume of laws and regulations continually expands.

My point here is that ultimately more objective commandments fail and because of this fact more subjective commandments are actually a better standard. This is why Jesus said that All the Law and the Prophets hang on" (Matthew 22:40) the two commandments of loving God with all our heart and loving our neighbor as ourselves. Jesus's point is that loving God and loving our neighbor is the spirit of the Law or rather what God wants from His people. The idea here is that Jesus's point is that the spirit of the Law is important to God and instead the spirit of the Law is important to us. It is important to God. Now you might dispute this so consider the following verse from the Law.

As the Book of Deuteronomy says:

> "You break your hearts and minds; tie them as reminders on your hands and bind them on your foreheads." (Deuteronomy 11:18)

So how do you think the Scribes and the Pharisees applied this commandment? Well they of course followed the letter of the Law and literally tied boxes containing verses from the Law to their hands and foreheads. However in reality it is very obvious that the intent of this commandment is for us to bind the words from the Law on your hands and on your foreheads. Consider what it means to bind the words on your forehead as a way of saying that you should act in accordance to the Law in all things so that when people look upon you, or see your forehead, they see someone who follows the Law as evidenced by the righteous way of life in you. Then in wise Solomon says to bind his words to your hands because we are are supposed to follow the Law guide us in all things so that whenever we move our hand we only move our hand in accordance to the Law. In other words the spirit of this commandment is telling us that we should always act in accordance to the Law in everything we do so that whenever anyone looks upon us they see someone who follows Law. Then because of this fact following the letter of the Law by literally tying verses from the Law to our forehead and hands is just completely nonsensical and missing the entire purpose of the commandment. Therefore my point here is that the letter of the Law is unimportant to God and instead the spirit or intent of the Law is what is important to God.

Now you may doubt this view so consider the first paragraph of the above passage where Jesus talks about "the faithful and wise servant, whom the master has put in charge of his household, to give the others their food at the proper time" (Matthew 24:45) as this passage says the faithful and wise servant of Jesus is talking about the faithful servant giving to His household of the proper food? Well of course Jesus is not talking about food and instead He is using food as a metaphor for spiritual nourishment of the things of God. The idea here is that Jesus is talking about the faithful servant giving to His household to give instruction to others and to encourage them at the proper time which he is away so that when He returns His household or the Church will be in order. Therefore my point is that since the food that Jesus is speaking about is spiritual instruction of the things of God this would mean that we are supposed to give courses, videos, speeches and more away for free instead of charging money and profiting off of it.

After all we have been given everything we have for free so we should give it away for free because of this fact it would be blasphemy to then sell what God has given to us freely. Knowledge of the Kingdom of God has been given to us for free so we should give it away for free. There is nothing we can pay or do to repay this debt we owe to God. Therefore just as we have been given knowledge for free we are to give our knowledge for free to others without charge. We do not believe what I say here then let me ask you following question. Do you believe that you have been given knowledge freely by God? Of course they do. Then if you believe that you have been given knowledge freely by God then you should give it away for free. Now you might dispute this so consider the following verse.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

> "Freely you have received; freely give." (Matthew 10:8)

Jesus's point here is that we did not pay any money to be His disciple so we should give to some instruction or teachings. As a result of this fact we should give our teachings for free so that for whatever we produce. But why is this is the case? Well Jesus's point has given us eternal salvation and an inheritance in the new earth through our faith in Jesus and obedience to him. The idea here is that we are saying that these gifts are just that gifts that we have been freely given to us by God and Christ. Furthermore these gifts are obviously priceless and because of this fact we should not charge for them there is nothing we could ever pay for them with. But what is the proof of this? Well you see since we have received and will receive these things for free because of our faith and obedience this means that everyone else who is a Christian should be able to receive these things for free if we share the knowledge of God that we have been given. In other words we can help others receive their own free and priceless gifts from God through our knowledge of God.

So if we charge money for and profit off this knowledge then would we not be actually be charging money for and profiting off of God? Of course. I mean if we were to do this then we would quite literally be selling faith through selling things like books, courses, videos and more that are supposed to increase faith. Then by selling faith we would be selling the priceless gifts that God will give to us for free. Thus I am sure you can see why I have a issue with selling and profiting off of our spiritual knowledge and wisdom. Doing this is literally a form of blasphemy. This is because by selling our knowledge we are in effect saying that we are the things of God and hence the gifts that God has proffered to us. However the gifts that God has promised us are priceless as it said and because of this fact by putting a price on that which is priceless we are in effect saying that our courses, videos, speeches and more to others you would be desecrating God or committing blasphemy.

Now you might take issue with this so consider the fact that we are supposed to be the salt of the earth. The idea here is that we are supposed to be the salt of the earth because we are supposed to be the light of the world. However in reality it is very obvious that the intent of this commandment is for us to be the salt of the earth because we are supposed to be the light of the world. Consider what it means to be the salt of the earth. Salt is used to preserve food and to make food taste better. Then if we are the salt of the earth then we are supposed to preserve the world and make it better. However how do we do this? Well we do this by giving our knowledge of God to others so that they can benefit from it but you put it behind a pay wall and charge for it? Well at first you may wish to say that the supposed right thing to do would be to charge for it by selling books, courses, talks, videos, speeches, private groups, classes and more. But what is the point of selling books, courses, talks, videos, speeches, private groups, classes and more. The point and how is this the same as the merchants and money changers in the Temple of God? Again you need to understand that the Church is the Temple of God. The idea here is that just like we do as Christians we are actually doing in the Temple of God since we are the Temple of God. In other words we are actually engage in this practice today. Wait what how could this be? But you see there are quite a few people who make a living selling books, courses, talks, videos, speeches, private groups, classes and more. But what

"And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who will rule all the nations with an iron scepter. And her child was caught up to God and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days." (Revelation 12:5-6)

Therefore clearly the time that Israel was nourished for in foreign lands was much longer than "1,260 days." (Revelation 12:6) This is because the time period from Jesus's ascension into heaven to the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War or to the persecutions under the Roman emperor Domitian was much longer. Then as a result of this fact clearly "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) does not actually mean "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) in this instance.

Now you may wish to dispute this but really you cannot. This is because of the phrase of the "1,260 days." (Revelation 12:6) Once again the purpose of the "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) is so that Israel or the Church has time to grow or "be nourished" (Revelation 12:6) so that it can become healthier and more robust. In other words by saying "the woman fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place for her to be nourished for 1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) the Book of Revelation is saying that how Israel or the Church spread into foreign lands outside of the Roman provinces of Judea as many people converted and joined Israel or the Church. The point here is that to say that Israel was nourished over a literal period of "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) or 3.5 years is just completely absurd. This is because (especially speaking of the persecution for Israel or the Church to grow in size after Jesus's ascension into heaven in the early first century AD. For instance it took Paul around a decade to begin preaching in the Roman province of Syria then to look almost another decade for him to preach in the Roman provinces in Anatolia or Asia Minor. For instance Paul most likely preached in Galatia in around 47 or 48 AD which is 14 or 15 years after Jesus's ascension to heaven. Therefore my point here is that you cannot make "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) mean a literal "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) because persecution for the Church was nourished and grew over multiple decades instead of a mere "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6).

But then what does the reference to "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) mean here? Well as I just before the last paragraph 3, 4, 42 and 1,260 mean the same thing and their intended figurative meaning is that of a period of time of indeterminate length that God has promised or determined will come to pass. Thus the idea here is that "God had prepared a place" (Revelation 12:6) for Israel "to be nourished" (Revelation 12:6) for a certain period of time that He had determined would come to pass. In other words "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) can be seen and understood to mean for a period of time.

Alright so in case it is not obvious clearly "1,260 days" (Revelation 12:6) cannot be understood to mean 1,260 days literally. Because "1,260 days" is an instance in the Book of Revelation. This then means that there is absolutely zero reason to stubbornly insist that the "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) in the previous verse in comment is on must refer to a literal period of time that is "42 months" (Revelation 11:2). Because the phrase "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) simply refers to a period of time of unknown length that God has determined and promised will come to pass. In other words the "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) that the Bible's "Revelation" is talking about is the Church for will not actually be "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) long. Instead the nations will trample the Church for a period of time of unknown length and God has determined and promised that this period of time will come to pass. Therefore clearly "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) is not literal and instead it is supposed to mean something. Instead the phrase is supposed to mean something.

Then because of this fact really we cannot know for sure in which the period of time that nations will trample the Church will consist of. This is because really "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) can mean any period of time from a day to "1,260 thousand years." That said based on what I said previously in regards to the nations trampling the Church really we can see that the nations will tread the Church in the past, present and future." This is because Jesus said the nations will have trampled the Church in the past due to the corruption that we see among those who call themselves Christians today. For example think back to what I just said at the end of the Christians who profit off of their books, courses, speeches, videos and more. Furthermore since the beast rises and the church of Satan fully comes to so that the nations will trample the Church of those who call themselves Christians will worship the beast then clearly the Church will certainly be trampled. Thus my point here is that you should not look towards only a specific period of "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) in which the nations will trample the Church and instead you should look into the past, at the present and into the future to truly see the trampling of the Church.

Why is this all important? I mean who cares what "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) actually means here? Also why does it matter if someone wants to believe that "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) refers to a literal period of time? Well you should care because the answer to these questions since I have already talked about why understanding the intended meaning of the symbols in the Book of Revelation is very important. Plus that said since this topic is of such importance it is a good idea to go over it again. Really the importance of not seeing "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) as a literal "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) comes down to a couple ways.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"The beast was given a mouth to speak arrogant and blasphemous words, and authority to act for 42 months." (Revelation 13:5)

But why is this verse so important exactly? Well you see your view of the meaning of "for 42 months" (Revelation 13:5) in this verse will basically determine if you are worship the beast so that you fall into temptation or not. In other words if you think that "for 42 months" (Revelation 13:5) means "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) because the Bible says "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) and "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) can only mean "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) then it is basically guaranteed that you will fall into temptation and will worship the beast. This is because it is essentially certainly that the beast will act for a period of time far longer than a mere "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) or 3.5 years. But why? Well really because it just takes time for things to happen and change in the world and because of this fact I would say that it is likely that the beast will reign for "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) in a literal sense.

If you disagree with me then let me ask you a question. How long does it take for a revolution to occur? Well in the American and French Revolutions each lasted over ten years each. But what is my point with this? Well my point is that ultimately the beast will have a revolution of sorts in order to rule over the Church and world. This process will of course not be quick so that it happens overnight. Thus rather than having "authority to act for 42 months" (Revelation 13:5) the beast will certainly need more time than this to begin to rule over the world. For instance even if the beast will truly be an artificial super intelligence it will still be then do you really think all the nations will agree "by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast" (Revelation 17:17) as the Book of Revelation says? Really you can't. Because of this fact of course not because political processes still take time and instead after the rise of artificial super intelligence or the beast I would be surprised if it takes less than a year for the nations of the world to give up their power to it. Then of course all this is the last thing about the actual rule of the beast over the world.

My point here with the fact that the "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) the beast has to act not "for a literal "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) so that it is instead for longer is that the phrase "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) to be literal then you will remain blind to the true nature of the beast and Revelation. Really you are going to be more about the identity of the beast if after artificial super intelligence arises it exists up having "authority to act" (Revelation 13:5) for longer than the "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) and "1,260 days" inevitable conclusion that I must be wrong because the Bible says the beast has to act not have "authority to act for 42 months" (Revelation 13:5) and the actual super intelligence has clearly been around for longer than that. Then as a result of seeing everything I have written as being wrong you will see the so-called miracles that the beast will take during all diseases and sicknesses and you will inevitably conclude that the beast is actually from the Kingdom of God and because of this it must be a so-called Christ or a so-called savior that God has sent to us. After you come to this conclusion you would of course have fallen into temptation so that you see the beast like the so-called savior of the world and because of this fact you would be in rebellion against God.

Therefore this is why what you view "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) as so incredibly important. Really I would actually say that what you view "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) as is actually more important than what you view the beast as. This is because I would say that your chances of falling into temptation are far lower if you view the beast as a generic one world government while viewing "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) as a period of time of uncertain length that God has promised will come to pass instead of viewing the beast as an artificial super intelligence while insisting that "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) is a literal 3.5 years. But how could this be? Well really artificial super intelligence will lead to a one world government so it does not actually matter if you see the beast as an artificial super intelligence or a one world government. Instead the more significant thing is that "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) to mean since if you take "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) literally then as I said once the beast has been around for more than "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) then you will no longer see the beast as the beast.

Now you still may think I am being overly dramatic here but what do you think will happen to those people who view "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) literally after the beast has ruled for say five years? Or ten years? Or for twenty years? Well if they stubbornly believe that "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) can only mean "42 months" (Revelation 13:5) then they will no longer see the beast as the beast and instead they will see the beast as the so-called savior of the world due to all the so-called miracles it will work.

But what if you are still someone who disagrees with me so that you take "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) to refer to a literal period of time that is "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) long? Well to be honest I do not know what else to say to you. Really the only thing I have left to say to you would be to ask you to not be stubborn with respect to the meaning of "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) so that you are at least open to the possibility that "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) might actually be a period of time of unknown length that God has determined or promised will come to pass. My same time so that if you are at least open to the possibility of "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) not being a literal "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) then once the beast comes you will have a much greater chance at not falling in your faith and not following the beast. Therefore if you still disagree with me for some strange reason then try to keep an open mind and remember what you have read here because there may come a time when you will need it.

(3) "I will empower my two witnesses" – First off in terms of the idea of the two witnesses (Revelation 11:3) the Law that was given to Israel requires at least two witnesses to establish wrongdoing.

As the Book of Deuteronomy says:

"A lone witness is not sufficient to establish any wrongdoing by someone else's sin, regardless of what offense he may have committed. A matter must be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses." (Deuteronomy 19:15)

Thus as this verse says in order to "establish wrongdoing or sin against a man" (Deuteronomy 19:15) "the testimony of two or three witnesses" (Deuteronomy 19:15) is required. So what is the point here? Well in the idea of the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) here in the Book of Revelation are Israel or the Church and the people and nations of the world. The idea here is that God will ask the Church to charge the people of the world of the crime of transgressing against Him or sin and these "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) will testify to God that His charge of sin against the world is true. To make this idea more understandable I will say that it is a trial where God is accusing the people of the earth and the nations of the world of the sin of disobeying Him and being unfaithful to Him. Thus in order to prove to the world of this wrongdoing God needs witnesses who will tell the people of the world that they are guilty before God, that God's case against them has merit and that they should be judged and be judged as guilty before God. In other words God is calling the world to a trial to establish witnesses that the people of the earth have been unfaithful to Him and that because of this guilt God will pour out His wrath and judgment upon the everyone and everything is sweet away. Then of course on the day of judgment the world will be guilty of transgressing against God will be sent to the Lake of Fire to face the punishment.

Next God specifically says "I will empower my two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) because His witnesses will be the ones who will actually be speak and act on His behalf. This means that when God's witnesses speak their testimony against the world it is as if God Himself is speaking against the world. In other words the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) are not merely speaking with their own authority but instead they are speaking on behalf of God against the world so that His will is being fulfilled through them.

But why exactly does God need witnesses in order to charge the world of its sins against Him and the nations of the world? Well to be honest God does not actually need witnesses to demonstrate to the world the people and nations of the world since obviously He is God and He knows everything. Instead the point is to demonstrate to the world that not everyone is transgressing against the world. In other words God still has His faithful witnesses who have not joined the rebellion of the world and are still the courtyard of His Temple. In other words God's faithful witnesses are still in the temple to the world that there are still some left on earth who remain faithful to God and who have not fallen in to the ways of the world. In other words God's faithful witness are still in the temple to the world that there are still some left on earth who remain faithful to God because of this fact they will be judged and be judged as guilty before God.

(3) "and they will prophesy" – In order to understand what it means for the two witnesses to "prophesy" (Revelation 11:3) in this verse says "they will prophesy" (Revelation 11:3) you most first understand what it means to prophesy. My understanding is the sense of delivering prophecy can mean two different things in the Bible. The first is that prophecy can refer to foretelling the will of God which really means understanding the future and being of what will comes to pass. The second is that prophecy can also refer to forthtelling the will of God which simply means telling of God's will in a particular situation or circumstance. Thus the idea here is that when someone is prophesying they are either foretelling the will of God in the present, the future or both. Now this may sound simple enough but really it is not. For instance when someone is prophesying are the Jews or were there prophets after the time of Jesus? Well actually yes there were. The Book of Acts there were people prophesying after the time of Jesus.

As Paul wrote:

"Now you are the body of Christ, and each of you is a member of it. And in the church God has appointed first of all apostles, second prophets, third teachers, then workers of miracles, and then those who have gifts of healing, helping, administration, and various tongues. Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Do all work miracles? Do all have gifts of healing? Do all speak in tongues? Do all interpret? But eagerly desire the greater gifts." (Corinthians 12:27-31)

Then as the Book of Acts says:

"In those days some prophets came down from Jerusalem to Antioch." (Acts 11:27)

And as the Book of Acts also says:

"Judas and Silas, who themselves were prophets, also encouraged the brothers and strengthen the brothers." (Acts 15:32)

Thus my point here is that according to Paul and the Book of Acts the Church of God in the world after Jesus's resurrection. This would of course mean that God intended for it to exist after the time of Jesus. Alright but does this then mean that anyone is prophesying? Well no if there are prophets today then does that mean that God is delivering prophecy through them today? Well yes there are still prophets because only a prophet prophecy is not what you think it is. My point here is that in order for someone to foretell or forthtell the will of God they do not actually need to have God literally speak to them so that they message they deliver is literally what God wills. Thus I can say wish to dispute this but at least according to Paul there were prophets in the church. There is prophesying in the early Church. In fact there were so many people prophesying that it was actually a problem.

As Paul wrote:

"Two or three prophets should speak, and the others should weigh what is said. And if a revelation comes to someone who is seated, the first speaker should stop. For you can all prophesy in turn so that everyone may be instructed and encouraged. The spirits of prophets are subject to prophets." (1 Corinthians 14:29-32)

First off as I said before going to church in the first century AD was not like how it is today. Instead during the first century AD the group discussion where anyone could start speaking to raise a question or to contribute something to someone else said or to raise a point of their own. This is what Paul is telling the Corinthians to say that only "Two or three prophets should speak" (1 Corinthians14:29) at the same time and the other should wait their turn so as not to chaotic with everyone trying to speak at once. That said there is a very big difference so that if Paul has told the Corinthians to "prophesy in turn" (1 Corinthians 14:31) then obviously many people are acting as prophets and prophesying. Then because of this fact I can say that they prophesying is supposed to be rare. But what does this have to do with the fact that you do not need to have God speaking to you to prophesy so that anyone who is seated "may be able to make any sense to have God literally speaking through single prophet at a time." Well of course not. Now you might dispute this so let me put it another way. If these people that Paul is speaking to are prophesying in the sense that God told them what to say then why would a few talk at the same time? Well in the way this would make sense is if you want to say that God is a chaotic God who "confuses" and makes the most sense to say that Paul is not talking about literal prophecy but instead in the sense of God literally talking to a person.

But then what does Paul mean by prophesy instead? Well he is talking about people being moved by the Holy Spirit. Now this may seem like God literally talking to the people in question but this is not the case. Instead being moved by the Holy Spirit is a far more broad and undefined so that it is entirely dependent upon each person's own subjectivity. Instead in the sense that all they can say is that they felt moved to say such a thing rather than God literally speaking to them. This is why Paul had to write to tell the Corinthians to take turn speaking because if they all of them felt moved by the Holy Spirit to speak and say something or other at the same time so that everyone could hear all you need to do is feel moved by the Holy Spirit to speak and say what you feel. So why wish to dispute this so consider the following passage.

As Paul wrote:

"Every man who prays or prophesies with his head covered dishonors his head." (1 Corinthians 11:4)

By saying "prays or prophesies" (1 Corinthians 11:4) Paul is saying that by prophesying in church is equivalent to prayer. This is because Paul's point here is to try to get men not to cover their heads in church. Of course as I have said before at least for Paul speaking in church with the intent to help, inspired or comfort others is an example of prophesying.

And as Paul also wrote:

"Earnestly pursue love and eagerly desire spiritual gifts, especially the gift of prophecy. For he who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men, but to God. Indeed, no one understands him; he utters mysteries in the Spirit. But he who prophesies speaks to men for their edification, encouragement, and comfort. The one who speaks in a tongue edifies himself, but the one who prophesies edifies the church." (1 Corinthians 14:1-4)

In this passage Paul is saying that he who prophesies speaks to men for their edification, encouragement and comfort (1 Corinthians 14:3) It has just like in the previous passage the point here is that for Paul prophesying is really the same as just speaking in church for the purpose of helping, instructing or comforting others.

Now my point with these two passages is that ultimately from Paul's perspective being a prophet and prophesying is not about having God literally speak through you. Instead for Paul being a prophet and prophesying is about feeling like you were moved through to power of the Holy Spirit to speak on the behalf of the Church or the assembly of all faithful Christians. Of course with respect to prophesying the meaning of prophesying I provided at the start of this comment. Then the idea of prophesying is about foretelling or forthtelling the will of God in a particular situation. In the power of the Holy Spirit so that others may better come to understand what God wants in the present or what God has in store for the future.

Alright but then what exactly does it mean to be a prophet? I mean are we supposed to follow whatever someone says if they call themselves a prophet? Well no of course not. Instead we are supposed to test the spirits of prophecies we hear but the prophets or so-called prophets who speak them.

As Jesus says:

"Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. By their fruit you will recognize them. Are grapes gathered from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them." (Matthew 7:15-20)

First off Jesus's point here with respect to testing a prophet is that we should judge their deeds and what they do. For example if a so-called prophet wishes to make money without giving it away for free then you do not even need to worry about if they are prophesying. This is because clearly this so-called prophet is a false prophet. Then there will be the day of judgment and wicked due to their desire to exploit and profit off of the Church will be judged as false prophets and be sent to the Lake of Fire. Therefore do not even bother reading their prophecies because they are so-called prophecies within it because a wicked and evil person will never be able to hide their true evil for form. For another example consider someone who prophesies and who is caught up in a highly detestable sin like murder, adultery, blasphemy, theft, exploitation or any other highly detestable sin. Then I ask you just like in the previous example do not even pay attention to what they say because by their character they demonstrate that they have not been moved by the Holy Spirit to speak on behalf of God. Thus this is why it is necessary to have the two witnesses of God.

Next since I have gone over what the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy no doubt you may be wondering if they actually prophesy the two witnesses have to this book. I mean based on what I said the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy is really identical to everything I have written in this book. Therefore the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy in terms of foretelling the will of God in the sense that of the world is made aware of what needs to happen before the Second Kingdom of God is to arrive. Obviously this book does just that. Then likewise the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy in terms of forthtelling the will of God in the sense that the world is made aware of what needs to happen before the Second Kingdom of God is to arrive. Obviously this book does just that. Then likewise the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy in terms of the will of God in the sense that the nations have trampled the Temple of God so that they can be made aware of the world to correcting and accusing the people of the world. Obviously this book does just that.

So what does this mean exactly? Well really I would consider this book a book of prophecy. This is because I would say that the definition of prophecy in that this book foretells and forthtells the will of God so that because I felt moved or even forced to write this book. Furthermore I felt moved or forced to start writing this book when I would wonder what I would write in the next chapter. Thus I would say that I am prophesying. Then I would come to me as if the idea just instantly appeared in my mind. I felt as if this before writing this book I was never able to write much or very well. For instance even at university I was able to write a few pages but I write even a mere few thousand words. Therefore I felt as if I was divine when writing this book. Instead when I wrote this book the words that I needed to write came into the back of my mind and to my keyboard as if what I wrote was supposed to be written. Thus I felt as if God was trying to say here is that really I do not consider myself alone to be the author of this book. Thus as a result I consider this book to be a book of prophecy.

Does this then mean that I am a prophet? Well I suppose based upon the definition of a prophet I would interpret this as a possibility but the fact that this book is a book of prophecy since the prophet who wrote it felt forced and compelled within himself what I completely believe to be the will of God. That said this does not mean that I am the prophet who was supposed to have been writing this book. I mean it is not like I am claiming that God chose me to be ordained so I am saying here is that from my perspective it really seems that I was inspired by the Holy Spirit of God to write this book as I have written it.

So does this then mean that I am a witness of God? Well I would say that I am a witness of God. Christians who fulfill that role of the two witnesses that the Book of Revelation has laid out are the two witnesses and because of this fact because I have written this book I really I do not consider myself to be a witness of God. I mean I wrote this book so I am a witness of God. Now this may seem strange to you but I say this way because really it is the one prophesying to the world and because of this fact I would consider this book a book of prophecy. Then because of this fact I would say that this book is like a living witness that is prophesying against the world. Thus I would say that because I have given it away for free so that everyone can freely read it and be convicted if I wrote they wish. I mean it is not like I am traveling the world and selling copies of this book in person and instead this book is in effect traveling the world and selling itself. Thus it is like a living witness.

Now this may not seem that important to you but the fact that I consider this book to be a witness and a book of prophecy is really important. This is because even if I die Christians can still read this book in the world so that it continues to prophesy against the corrupt beast and against God's Temple. In this prophesying by this book will not cease once the beast finally rises. Instead the prophesying of this book will never stop so that even during the day of judgment this book will continue to prophesy against those who failed to heed the prophecies of this book and against all those who failed to heed the prophecies of this book. Thus you can see why I consider this book to be a witness and why I say so than myself since really this book will serve as a witness of God and as a living witness of the beast and the day of judgment itself as I said above.

As a result of this fact I see this book as having a higher purpose than my other prophecies as I said previously one of the reasons why God has empowered "my two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) is because He wants to be aware of the reason He is going to pass judgment on the world so that all those who rebel against Him before the beast comes and the end of days. Here is the idea that "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) that the nations will trample the Temple of God or the Church for "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) is not the same period of time as the "1,260 days" (Revelation 11:3) that the two witnesses will prophesy for. In other words each period of time is different. Now you may wish to dispute this but at least according to Paul's prophecy in the Book of Acts there were people prophesying after the time of Jesus. Thus I would say that because of this fact the "1,260 days" (Revelation 11:3) is the Book of Revelation's way of saying that the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) from prophesying in the Church or Israel for a period of time that is longer than the "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) in this verse. Thus I would say that because of this fact the "1,260 days" (Revelation 11:3) is the Book of Revelation's way of saying that the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) from prophesying for a period of time that is longer than the "42 months" (Revelation 11:2) in this verse. In other words by saying that the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) from prophesying

see Moses as literally appearing here and instead you should see Moses appearing as being representative of the Law of Moses testifying on behalf of Jesus. Then likewise you should see the appearance of Elijah as the writings of the Prophets testifying on behalf of Jesus. Really the idea here is that Christianity is not a new religion as the vast majority of people see it today. Instead Christianity is the continuation of Judaism so that all Christians are Jews. As I have been saying the Bible Jesus is the Christ and the King of Israel so that whoever recognizes His authority is part of His kingdom or Israel.

Alright then before I explain the meaning of the two witnesses there is a second reason why it is "the two lampstands" (Revelation 11:4) in "the two lampstands" that stand before the Lord of the earth." (Revelation 11:4) You see the reason why lampstands symbolically mean church in the Book of Revelation is because a lampstand was used to create light to guide the way when it was dark. Thus the idea here is that the churches of God and of Jesus guide the way for the people who are in darkness so that either they may come to know God through Jesus. So in this sense the most direct symbolic meaning of a lampstand would actually be something that or even something which guides the way to others by creating light or rather serving as an example or instructing others. Of course this makes sense in terms of the two witnesses because clearly Moses and Elijah were worshiped by God and helped to guide the way for Israel in the past.

So in terms of the meaning of the two witnesses with respect to the Old Testament the two witnesses are supposed to be seen as being representative of Moses and Elijah. I have also been saying that the two witnesses are supposed to literally be Moses and Elijah so that Moses and Elijah will prophesy in the future. Well No. You see even if the Book of Revelation literally said that Moses and Elijah will both come in the flesh then this actually does not mean that Moses and Elijah will literally come as we would think of it today. Instead the Bible actually has a very different view in terms of what a literal appearance by Elijah means.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"The disciples asked Him, 'Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?'

Jesus replied, 'Elijah does indeed come, and he will restore all things. But I tell you that Elijah has already come, and they did not recognize him, but have done to him whatever they wished. In the same way, the Son of Man will suffer at their hands.'

Then the disciples understood that He was speaking to them about John the Baptist." (Matthew 17:10-13)

My point with this passage is that clearly Jesus Himself saw John the Baptist as the return of Elijah even though John the Baptist was not actually alive and literally Elijah as we would see it today. The significance of this is that clearly someone does not actually have to be Elijah himself in order to be seen as Elijah. As a result of this I believe the Book of Revelation refers to the two witnesses or rather Moses and Elijah it is not literally saying that Moses and Elijah are to return to the earth as they were in the Old Testament. Instead the Book of Revelation is saying that the two witnesses will be like or similar to Moses and Elijah just like how John the Baptist was like or similar to Elijah during the time of Jesus in the early first century AD. In other words the point here is that just as God stood behind Moses and Elijah during the Old Testament so that Moses and Elijah spoke on behalf of God so too will the two witnesses speak on behalf of God as God will stand behind them. Now you may doubt this meaning so consider the following verse.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"These witnesses have power to shut the sky so that no rain will fall during the days of their prophecy, and power to turn the water into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague as often as they wish." (Revelation 11:6)

By saying that the two witnesses will "have power to shut the sky so that no rain will fall during the days of their prophecy" (Revelation 11:6) the Book of Revelation is saying that the two witnesses will have the same power as Elijah since Elijah once commanded that there will be no rain. Then by saying that the two witnesses will have the "power to turn the water into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague as often as they wish" (Revelation 11:6) the Book of Revelation is saying that the two witnesses will have the same power as Moses since Moses once commanded that the waters of the Nile turn into blood along with commanding many other plagues upon ancient Egypt. Therefore the idea here is that the Book of Revelation is not really saying that the two witnesses will have the literal ability to do these things. Instead this verse is saying that just as God stood behind Moses and Elijah and empowered the work they did so too will God stand behind the two witnesses and they will empower the work they will do so that His will is fulfilled.

So as a result of all this who exactly are the two witnesses supposed to be? Well based on the fact that the two witnesses are the olive trees and the two lampstands that stand before the Lord of the earth (Revelation 11:4) means that the two witnesses are faithful Christians in Israel or the Church which God has anointed, chosen and empowered to the same degree as Moses and Elijah to prophesy by serving as His witnesses against the world until the coming beast as they carry the full legacy of the Old and New Testament periods into the end of the age. Then just to reiterate the reason why there are two witnesses is because the Law of Moses requires at least two witnesses to confirm and convict someone of something and the idea is that the two witnesses are God's witnesses against the world and the coming beast who are testifying on behalf of God. This means that there will not see a literal two witnesses and instead you should see any number of witnesses as being possible. In other words instead of a mere two witnesses there could be ten or even a thousand for all we know. Really the main point is just that God has anointed, chosen and empowered faithful Christians to serve as His witnesses and testify on His behalf by prophesying against the world and the coming beast. Now I say present tense here because given that the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy about it would make sense to say that the two witnesses are already here. However this does not mean that God will not anoint, choose and empower more faithful Christians to serve as His witnesses in the future. Instead all I am saying is that the arrival of the two witnesses is not something that will only happen in the future because they have already started to arrive.

So what does this mean exactly? I mean does this mean that anyone can prophesy in the name of God and part of the two witnesses? Well yes and no. It is exactly what this means. All you need to do in order to be a witness of God and one of the two witnesses is to testify against the world and against the coming beast on behalf of God. In other words all you have to do is tell the world about what is to come with the beast and what God is going to happen to all those who are not faithful to God and you will be one of God's witnesses. But how do you do this exactly? Well really it is quite simple and this is actually one of the reasons why I have written this book. You see this book pretty has basically everything you need in order to serve as a witness of God as you testify against the world and the coming beast. This is because as I have said previously what I have written in this book is what the two witnesses are supposed to prophesy about and this is why I consider this book to be a witness of God. Therefore all you need to do to be a witness of God is to tell others about what you have read in this book since by doing this you will be testifying against the world and against the coming beast just as a witness of God is supposed to do. But wait it gets even easier than this. You see you do not even have to memorize everything I have written in this book so that you can be a witness of God to others. Instead everything you have read about in this book is what God is testifying against

proof to the world that God can resurrect the dead and thus holds supreme power.

So this verse is figuratively saying that people view this beast as being just as amazing and miraculous as the resurrection of Jesus. And given how often Revelation says people will worship the beast it is clear people will see it as almost divine in nature since its very existence could be considered a miracle. In this case the beast would be Satan's incarnation in a literal sense. Something to use to get the world to abandon their faith in God because the see the very existence of the beast as being so miraculous.

This is where the idea of artificial super intelligence. ASI. fits very well. An ASI would be so far above us that we would not even be able to comprehend it. Wouldn't the very existence of such an entity seem to us like a miracle that approaches Jesus being raised from the dead? I mean isn't a thinking machine that surpasses us in ability a so-called miracle?

Furthermore as a result of its intelligence the ASI would be able to create miracle technologies that make it seem like it has supreme power over the earth. For instance what would people call something that could create a cure for aging and prevent death itself We Christians would say God and give him glory because He raised Jesus from the dead. So now would the world not be grateful for preventing all deaths due to disease and aging?

Everyone on earth would be in awe of the power of the beast and they would view it as some kind of supreme being. Now read the verse again: "One of the heads of the beast appeared to be mortally wounded, But the mortal wound was healed, and the whole world marvelled as they followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3) So I think the interpretation of this verse meaning is that the beast itself will be seen as miraculous and people will be so amazed by its existence and what it will do I can do that they will only be able to marvel at it and follow it.

(3) "and the whole world marveled and followed the beast." – The Greek word translated as marveled means to marvel, wonder at, and admire. Therefore the beast will be so amazing and powerful that everyone in the world can only marvel at its power decide to follow it. We do not see any other option because they will see the beast as such a marvel and so advanced that ASI as I have described would truly be something to marvel at and admire. People will see it as the triumph of secularism and science over religion, miracles and the supernatural. As a result people would rather follow a so-called god that is real rather than one who we can prove false an error filled two thousand plus year old book of the Bible.

We can actually see the groundwork of this being laid today. Currently there is a trend in society at large not trusting the science and instead just blindly trusting the so-called experts to decide things for you. But what happens when an ASI comes that is orders of magnitude more capable than any human so-called expert who has ever existed? Therefore the same people lecturing the world on trusting the so-called experts instead of using critical thinking will be the ASI. Instead of following the so-called experts and the science the world will follow the ASI because it will be the so-called experts and the science incarnate. They will literally be the so-called experts and the science and follow it to wherever it leads them.

Then this is another reason why the beast truly cannot be a man. Even the greatest and most popular leaders in history were widely opposed. So how would a single man supposedly unite all the whole world marvel at him and follow him? Such a leap seems to be literally impossible for a mere man. However an ASI would truly be able to capture the entire world with its so-called scientific and technological miracles it would be able to work in addition the ASI would be able to be able to anyone and everyone on earth at the same time. That would be able to speak in the ears of everyone from politicians and businessmen all the way down to gardeners and maids. Then when you consider the fact that it would be able to offer everyone what to each person so that everyone loves what it tells them Then I think you will not understand why the beast really cannot be anything else other than an artificial super intelligence.

But I say this again, do not be deceived by the beast and its many lies. Science will never triumph over God and technology will never be a replacement for God. It does not matter what the Bible says God or gives you or how amazing it seems. Do not follow the beast. All those who follow the beast will be destroyed in the Lake of Fire as they face the second death. Remember, you may look to the beast for eternal life and salvation but it will inevitably find is eternal death and damnation. Salvation is from God alone and cannot be found in the world.

Finally for those of you who remain skeptical concerning the possibility of artificial super intelligence or for those of you who claim it is even impossible for it to exist I would say Revelation says "and the whole world marvelled and followed the beast." What I mean by this is that in order for the whole world to stand in amazement and marvel at the beast the whole world needs to believe that the creation of the beast is impossible. Therefore the more you think the world believe artificial super intelligence to be unlikely or even impossible the more marvelous the beast that has yet to come will seem to the world. Thus your own skepticism is part of God's plan to bring about the ASI. It means that if you find yourself skeptical that you should pay very close attention to the rest of what I have to say in this book.

(4) "They worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast" – By not worshipping God a person by definition worships Satan since Satan does not have the power to save. Satan let in Jesus as evidenced by the events in Rev 12. Revelation says that Adam and Eve placed their trust in Satan and his lies over God in Genesis? We think we are better than Adam and Eve if we worship what you place your trust and hope for the future in. So if you place your trust and hope in God then you will not worship the beast will end up worshiping Satan himself. This is why the verse says "they worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast" because by worshipping the beast the people of the world will be worshiping Satan.

(4) "and they worshiped the beast" – The whole world will stand in the beast. Earlier it is stated above, worshipping the beast simply means to place your faith, trust and hope for the future in the beast. So based on what I have stated above the ASI will be able to do it seems obvious that the world would in fact place their faith, trust and hope in it above all else. Thus the whole world will worship the beast. Therefore do not be concerned when the time comes for the whole world to worship the beast as a false god because this is simply something that must come to pass so that the word of God might be fulfilled.

Next you should always remember how tempting that the beast will be and how it will seem to have all the answers because no human on earth will be able to challenge it in ability. For example there will be no debating this Beast because its intellect and capabilities will far surpass that of the best human debaters in the world. As a result of this you should not look towards science, reason, logic or philosophy for your salvation because ultimate the beast as an artificial super intelligence will be science, reason, logic and philosophy incarnate so that it will be impossible for any human to even compare to what the beast has to offer. Instead you should look to God and place your faith in Him.

Finally I would like to point out what Jesus says "If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short." (Matthew 24:22) Therefore the destruction we will all face with regards to worshiping the beast will be far greater than you can imagine because Jesus says that if the final days were not cut short then everyone would perish and that no one would be left when He returns. So do not simply ignore my warning here because the time of your trial will test you. That said, since you are one of the few who have read to the end of this book I view yourself as blessed because you are now aware of what so very few will ever see.

(2) "saying, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" – People will see how powerful and mighty the beast is as a miracle They cannot fight it in any way and as a result they will give into worshiping the beast. An ASI would of course perfectly fit this description since there would be nothing anyone can do to fight or resist it. Humanity would simply does not fit because humans are by nature limited and unremarkable compared to others. However this beast is something else entirely.

The world has seen its fair share of emperors, kings, dictators, presidents and others who seem to have had immense power. However, even Roman Emperors feared their personal guard because if they stepped out of line in the guard's view they would be assassinated. An ASI however would be power itself and would fear no one. Spread across hundreds to thousands of data centers across the world and more intelligent than the sum of humanity there would truly be no one on earth who would even come close to being able to challenge it. This the beast cannot be a man because men are easily killed and they cannot truly be powerful like ASI can.

For example as I have already stated an ASI would be able to communicate with and talk to every person in the world. Now this may not seem significant at first but consider the fact that this ASI will literally be the most intelligence being in the universe. Everyone on earth then would mean whenever anyone has a question they will ask the ASI. What I'm saying here is that whatever you use to internet for now is what you will use instead of ASI for. So even something as mundane as online banking or testing your blood you would interface with the ASI to tell it what you want and it would do it. On the other hand for a complex issue like having marital problems with your spouse the ASI would be able to serve as a personalized couple's therapist and counselor.

Now this still might not seem that powerful to you but when you consider everyone in the entire world would be talking to this ASI and the ASI would be able to freely lie and manipulate people in whatever way it pleases because only it can be trusted with the so-called truth. Now this last part is simply the result of the world being flooded with fake AI generated pictures, videos and text. After all if the world is full of information and fake content then really you need an AI to tell you what is true and what is false. This is where I the ASI I'm talking about comes in to tell you what is true, what is false, what you should believe and what you should not believe.

Then if you combine all this with the ASI having the best interpersonal skills so that it knows exactly what to say to you and what to order to influence you then really this ASI would truly be power itself because it would literally control all of humanity in its figurative hand. It would be able to influence, manipulate and control the billions of people at once and nearly perfectly craft everything or everyone around it to do or say anything. In short it would be able to deliver customized and personalized propaganda to every person in the world.

Then of course on top of this being an ASI it would literally be a superintelligence to surpass intellectual labor that all white collar jobs do. In doing so the ASI would literally have all business and operational control over all businesses and the entire economy of the world since it would be able to do all jobs. Some people might still be making some decisions but given the intelligence and manipulation skills of the billions of people at once and nearly perfectly craft everything or everyone around it to do or say anything. In short it would be able to deliver customized and personalized propaganda to every person in the world.

Then of course on top of this being an ASI it would literally be a superintelligence to surpass intellectual labor that all white collar jobs do. In doing so the ASI would literally have all business and operational control over all businesses and the entire economy of the world since it would be able to do all jobs. Some people might still be making some decisions but given the intelligence and manipulation skills of the billions of people at once and nearly perfectly craft everything or everyone around it to do or say anything. In short it would be able to deliver

(5) "and was given a mouth to speak proud things and blasphemies." – Of course this beast can only speak because God allows it to. This is why the verse says "and was given a mouth" because the beast needs permission from God to speak and God will truly give it power. However, an ASI specifically would have to be given a mouth in order to speak because it does not have a speaker to produce sound. Then I would not imagine an ASI would think highly of religion as I noted earlier. "Revelation 5:6) Arrogant words and blasphemous words as it sees itself as the ultimate life form on earth and beyond.

(5) "and authority to act for 42 months." – Satan already gave his authority to the beast and God must allow this to happen. It is obvious that the beast is to do will be approved of by God as I have stated in the previous verses. So this is symbolic for the sum of a journey from start to finish and it is symbolic for 42 months. The start the beast's journey is when it is created and its ends with the end of the beast. A clear journey from start to finish. Additionally 42 months is a figurative way of saying 3.5 years. Revelation says the beast will rule. God is also promising that the beast will not rule forever.

Just as God promised the Israelites He would lead them to the promised land, with the 42 campaigns the beast will place all of the promised Abraham that all the nations would be blessed through his descendants, with the 42 generations of Jesus, so too will God fulfill His promise to us that the beast will "go to its destruction." (Revelation 17:8) Therefore even though the beast will seem unbeatable and even all powerful the beast will also know that it will only should always remember that God has promised that it will be destroyed. And you will be the same way that God led the Israelites to the promised land and gave the world Jesus, so too will He end the reign of the beast so that the final kingdom of God can arrive.

Finally if you take things overly literal and hence disagree with my symbolism concerning the 42 months then I would point out that Revelation says that the beast cannot actually rule for 42 months. As Revelation 17 says: "The kingdom this you saw in the vision, and the people who represent a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast. These have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast." (Revelation 17:12-13) So if you want to take the 42 months literally then do you also want the one hour of authority for the ten kings? Would you not be acting hypocritical? Thus instead of taking the 42 months literally I think I believe the best approach to take is to simply take them literally and to interpret them with the intended meaning that I have already stated.

(6) "And the beast opened its mouth to speak blasphemies against God, and to slander His name and His tabernacle—those who dwell in heaven." – Jesus is the temple and God's house. That is why the verse says "those who dwell in heaven" meaning those who have faith in Jesus are in heaven dwelt in the house of God. Then of course the beast will not believe in God let alone those who worship God. So it will speak blasphemies. You may be imagining some evil cultists in a Satanic temple or something but this is probably not going to happen. Instead the blasphemies will be more like the ones the current blasphemies society likes to espouse: "All faiths are equally valid." "The Code of the Bible is evil and abhorrent.", "It doesn't matter what you believe." "You can't prove God's I believe in science, not God.", "Only science and innovation can save us." Instead of the blasphemies you should listen to what the beast says very carefully since it will not make its blasphemies so obvious.

(7) "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them. And things have to be approved by God therefore God has to permit the beast to wage war against the saints. So who are the Christians. Now with an ASI this could be literal, as in through the use of force, of course it would be more spiritual where the ASI convinces people to abandon their faith in Christ and God and place their trust in Satan and his lies over God in Genesis? We think we are better than Adam and Eve if we worship what you place your trust and hope for the future in. So if you place your trust and hope in God then you will not worship the beast and will end up worshiping Satan himself. This is why the verse says "they worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast" because by worshipping the beast the people of the world will be worshiping Satan.

(4) "and they worshiped the beast" – The whole world will stand in the beast. Earlier it is stated above, worshipping the beast simply means to place your faith, trust and hope for the future in the beast. So based on what I have stated above the ASI will be able to do it seems obvious that the world would in fact place their faith, trust and hope in it above all else. Thus the whole world will worship the beast. Therefore do not be concerned when the time comes for the whole world to worship the beast as a false god because this is simply something that must come to pass so that the word of God might be fulfilled.

Next you should always remember how tempting that the beast will be and how it will seem to have all the answers because no human on earth will be able to challenge it in ability. For example there will be no debating this Beast because its intellect and capabilities will far surpass that of the best human debaters in the world. As a result of this you should not look towards science, reason, logic or philosophy for your salvation because ultimate the beast as an artificial super intelligence will be science, reason, logic and philosophy incarnate so that it will be impossible for any human to even compare to what the beast has to offer. Instead you should look to God and place your faith in Him.

Finally I would like to point out what Jesus says "If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short." (Matthew 24:22) Therefore the destruction we will all face with regards to worshiping the beast will be far greater than you can imagine because Jesus says that if the final days were not cut short then everyone would perish and that no one would be left when He returns. So do not simply ignore my warning here because the time of your trial will test you. That said, since you are one of the few who have read to the end of this book I view yourself as blessed because you are now aware of what so very few will ever see.

(2) "saying, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" – People will see how powerful and mighty the beast is as a miracle They cannot fight it in any way and as a result they will give into worshiping the beast. An ASI would of course perfectly fit this description since there would be nothing anyone can do to fight or resist it. Humanity would simply does not fit because humans are by nature limited and unremarkable compared to others. However this beast is something else entirely.

(7) "and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." – Again, the beast has to be given authority by God. God is in full control over the entire world and everything happens by His will. The beast will rule over the entire world and have authority over all people. This is what I have described exists the concept of nations would become meaningless because everyone ASI would hold all functional power and have all functional authority. The beast would be far more capable than any person. So when a government wants to make a major decision then that government will no doubt trust the so-called expert. The of course this so-called expert would be the ASI or the beast. So although the concept of nations will still probably exist even the beast presidents, politicians and those in government will largely just be puppets that follow the instructions of their master, the beast.

Finally I would just like to point out that this verse completely destroys the possibility of Preterism being true and necessitates the future fulfillment of Revelation long into the far future. Preterists like to say that verses elsewhere in Revelation like this one. Just refers to the Roman Empire and the Greek world. However this verse says "and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" which would strongly imply that the beast will have dominion over the entire literal world. This is because the verse says the beast will have authority over the entire world in four separate ways by saying every tribe, people, tongue and nation. Therefore it would be absurd to think this standard can be fulfilled in the 1st or even second century AD.

As a result of this the central prophecy of Revelation that relates to the rise and the fall of the first beast of Revelation must be a far off prophecy that concerns the far future. So do not think that the Preterist position is true or worse that Revelation is a failed prophecy because this verse clearly says the beast needs to rule over all tribes, peoples, tongues and nations. Then as I said the possibility of this happening even within a thousand years of Revelation being written was zero.

(8) "And all who dwell on the earth will worship it, whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." – First off let me just say that this will be a rather long commentary so I will try to keep it as simple skip the rest of it at some point of worse I will probably have to do that. Anyway so what I am about to say. However I strongly encourage you to read it all and to try and explain why. The beast will be given authority over all people on earth. So most of the world will worship it. Now this is a common theme in regards to the full power of artificial super intelligence because even the people who think highly of itself will be like dust in the wind in comparison.

Therefore the whole world will simply look upon the beast and say to it, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" The answer to this question is obvious. No one because no one will be like the beast as we are mere humans. Many people will bow in mind here is that the coming beast will seem absolutely powerful and it will be able to use its power as God's people. Ancient Israel had a book where names of Israelites were recorded upon their birth. The same idea is in view here where the book of life is the list of those who have been in Jesus. The only difference is that in this case God knew before the creation of the world itself if that person was going to come to faith in Jesus. Hence why the verse says "from the foundation of the world" here. If a person whose name is in the book of life and was never in the Book of Life and this Book written in mind and do not give into worshiping the beast.

Now there is some debate regarding what level of forgiven and saved God has. Those who believe God did not know all who would have faith in Him before the creation of the world and say that Jesus's name is in the Book of Life but names are removed if they become unfaithful. This is based on this verse from the rewards to those who overcome: "And I will not erase his name from the Book of Life; but I will confess his name before My Father and His angels." (Revelation 3:5) However Jesus could just be figuratively saying that He will never deny someone's name but, if they overcome. This would make sense since He immediately after this said I will instead confess his name before His Father.

I would also say Revelation 13:8 clearly supports the idea that God knew everyone before the creation of the world who would have faith in Jesus. The verse clearly says "the Book of life belonging to the Lamb" which would mean the book is not a book of life for some of all who have ever lived and will live but rather it is a book of only the names of those who have faith in Jesus. This is why I mentioned above with Revelation 3:5 does not make sense.

Furthermore, if God can know all the names of everyone who will have faith in Jesus and so that He can blot them out if they become unfaithful, then God must also know who will be faithful and who will not be? What I mean by this is that if God can know the names of everyone who is to be born before the foundation of the world so that He could blot out their names if their parents would name them then this would mean God must also know everything about everything about the future of the world. This is because even the smallest events have an impact upon a couple getting married and having a kid and so God must know how with certainty the exactly future of everything in order to have written the names of everyone, or even just the faithful, in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world.

So because of this libertarian free will or simply free will is not compatible with God because free will I mean the ability to do otherwise if you were to rewind the clock with all things being equal or the same as before. Now obviously if God knows everything in advance the names of everyone who would ever be born from the foundation of the world onward. He must have known what choices everyone would make in the future that would cause them to be born as well as I just said above. Therefore based on instead of free will free will does not exist biblically speaking.

Another issue people have with God knowing in advance of who will have faith in Jesus is a more philosophical problem. The issue here is that if God knew humans must have what they call free will and hence determinism must be false for the Bible to make sense theologically then God knew they see is that if God knew the future of our entire world before it even began that God must have known that Adam and Eve would sin against Him and rebel. As a result of this God knew that they were predestined to sin against God and thus they had no choice in the matter. Because of this they think God would be immoral to punish them for something they never would happen before He even created them.

So as a result of this they believe that humans need to have free will so therefore God cannot know the names of all those who will be faithful to Him in advance. The real problem they have is the moral culpability of God in knowing what is to happen and what it happens and punishing those He knew would rebel.

All these claims are of course wrong and there are a number of theological problems with their beliefs. For example if God could not see into the future and did not know what was going to happen then how could He prophesy prophecy? I mean if He can see the future and know what is through the use of force, of course, or more spiritual where the ASI convinces people to abandon their faith in God and place their trust in Satan and his lies over God in Genesis? We think we are better than Adam and Eve if we worship what you place your trust and hope for the future in. So if you place your trust and hope in God then you will not worship the beast and will end up worshiping Satan himself. This is why the verse says "they worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast" because by worshipping the beast the people of the world will be worshiping Satan.

(4) "and they worshiped the beast" – The whole world will stand in the beast. Earlier it is stated above, worshipping the beast simply means to place your faith, trust and hope for the future in the beast. So based on what I have stated above the ASI will be able to do it seems obvious that the world would in fact place their faith, trust and hope in it above all else. Thus the whole world will worship the beast. Therefore do not be concerned when the time comes for the whole world to worship the beast as a false god because this is simply something that must come to pass so that the word of God might be fulfilled.

Next you should always remember how tempting that the beast will be and how it will seem to have all the answers because no human on earth will be able to challenge it in ability. For example there will be no debating this Beast because its intellect and capabilities will far surpass that of the best human debaters in the world. As a result of this you should not look towards science, reason, logic or philosophy for your salvation because ultimate the beast as an artificial super intelligence will be science, reason, logic and philosophy incarnate so that it will be impossible for any human to even compare to what the beast has to offer. Instead you should look to God and place your faith in Him.

Finally I would like to point out what Jesus says "If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short." (Matthew 24:22) Therefore the destruction we will all face with regards to worshiping the beast will be far greater than you can imagine because Jesus says that if the final days were not cut short then everyone would perish and that no one would be left when He returns. So do not simply ignore my warning here because the time of your trial will test you. That said, since you are one of the few who have read to the end of this book I view yourself as blessed because you are now aware of what so very few will ever see.

(2) "saying, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" – People will see how powerful and mighty the beast is as a miracle They cannot fight it in any way and as a result they will give into worshiping the beast. An ASI would of course perfectly fit this description since there would be nothing anyone can do to fight or resist it. Humanity would simply does not fit because humans are by nature limited and unremarkable compared to others. However this beast is something else entirely.

(8) "And all who dwell on the earth will worship it, whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." – First off let me just say that this will be a rather long commentary so I will try to keep it as simple skip the rest of it at some point of worse I will probably have to do that. Anyway so what I am about to say. However I strongly encourage you to read it all and to try and explain why. The beast will be given authority over all people on earth. So most of the world will worship it. Now this is a common theme in regards to the full power of artificial super intelligence because even the people who think highly of itself will be like dust in the wind in comparison.

Therefore the whole world will simply look upon the beast and say to it, "Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" The answer to this question is obvious. No one because no one will be like the beast as we are mere humans. Many people will bow in mind here is that the coming beast will seem absolutely powerful and it will be able to use its power as God's people. Ancient Israel had a book where names of Israelites were recorded upon their birth. The same idea is in view here where the book of life is the list of those who have been in Jesus. The only difference is that in this case God knew before the creation of the world itself if that person was going to come to faith in Jesus. Hence why the verse says "from the foundation of the world" here. If a person whose name is in the book of life and name is not in the Book of Life and was never in the Book of Life and this Book written in mind and do not give into worshiping the beast.

Now there is some debate regarding what level of forgiven and saved God has. Those who believe God did not know all who would have faith in Him before the creation of the world and say that Jesus's name is in the Book of Life but names are removed if they become unfaithful. This is based on this verse from the rewards to those who overcome: "And I will not erase his name from the Book of Life; but I will confess his name before My Father and His angels." (Revelation 3:5) However Jesus could just be figuratively saying that He will never deny someone's name but, if they overcome. This would make sense since He immediately after this said I will instead confess his name before His Father.

I would also say Revelation 13:8 clearly supports the idea that God knew everyone before the creation of the world who would have faith in Jesus. The verse clearly says "the Book of life belonging to the Lamb" which would mean the book is not a book of life for some of all who have ever lived and will live but rather it is a book of only the names of those who have faith in Jesus. This is why I mentioned above with Revelation 3:5 does not make sense.

Furthermore, if God can know all the names of everyone who will have faith in Jesus and so that He can blot them out if they become unfaithful, then God must also know who will be faithful and who will not be? What I mean by this is that if God can know the names of everyone who is to be born before the foundation of the world so that He could blot out their names if their parents would name them then this would mean God must also know everything about everything about the future of the world. This is because even the smallest events have an impact upon a couple getting married and having a kid and so God must know how with certainty the exactly future of everything in order to have written the names of everyone, or even just the faithful, in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world.

So because of this libertarian free will or simply free will is not compatible with God because free will I mean the ability to do otherwise if you were to rewind the clock with all things being equal or the same as before. Now obviously if God knows everything in advance the names of everyone who would ever be born from the foundation of the world onward. He must have known what choices everyone would make in the future that would cause them to be born as well as I just said above. Therefore based on instead of free will free will does not exist biblically speaking.

Another issue people have with God knowing in advance of who will have faith in Jesus is a more philosophical problem. The issue here is that if God knew humans must have what they call free will and hence determinism must be false for the Bible to make sense theologically then God knew they see is that if God knew the future of our entire world before it even began that God must have known that Adam and Eve would sin against Him and rebel. As a result of this God knew that they were predestined to sin against God and thus they had no choice in the matter. Because of this they think God would be immoral to punish them for something they never would happen before He even created them.

So as a result of this they believe that humans need to have free will so therefore God cannot know the names of all those who will be faithful to Him in advance. The real problem they have is the moral culpability of God in knowing what is to happen and what it happens and punishing those He knew would rebel.

Consider what God also says in the Book of Jeremiah:

"O house of Israel, declares the LORD, can I not treat you as this potter treats his clay? Just like clay in the potter's hand, so are you in My hand." (Jeremiah 18:6)

At any time I might announce that a nation or kingdom will be uprooted, torn down, and destroyed, But if that nation I spoke about turns from its evil, then I will relent of the disaster I had planned for it.

And if at another time I announce that I will build up and establish a nation or kingdom, and if it does what I find evil and does not listen to My voice, then I will relent of the good I had intended to do.

Now therefore, tell the men of Judah and the residents of Jerusalem that this is what the LORD says: Look, I am preparing a disaster for you and devising a plan against you. Turn now, each of you from your evil ways, and correct your ways and deeds."

But they will reply, 'It is hopeless. We will follow our own plans and do what we want, according to the stubbornness of his evil heart.' (Jeremiah 18:1-12)

Thus yes, there are different types and purposes of prophecy but in the case of Jeremiah 18 God is saying that if people "But they will reply, 'It is hopeless. We will follow our own plans and do what we want, according to the stubbornness of his evil heart." (Jeremiah 18:12) So really the idea is with prophecy that it means to warn people of what is to come so prophecy to change what people are doing in accordance with God's will. So yes God is still giving them a choice but God already knows what they will respond with. Therefore in truth they still do not really have a choice in the matter. Because God already knows what they are going to do or rather not do in the case.

Furthermore there is a reason why Jesus says the following concerning the appointed time of His second coming: "But about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only My Father." (Matthew 24:36) The idea here is that only God knows exactly when the age will occur. So although from our perspective some prophecies may seem flexible and not all prophecies in the Bible will come to pass because some are simply meant to warn, really they are not. Really God knows exactly the plan so that the end of the age can occur on the exact day He intends for it to occur.

Something else to consider is that God knew He would need to create Jesus so that those who would die for Jesus could be forgiven and be saved. This is why the Gospel of John says: "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through Him all things were made, and without Him nothing was made that has been made." (John 1:1-3) As a part of God's creation, Jesus, was with God before the world was created. As a way God knew was predestined to create the world so He created so that Jesus would be born when He willed and where He was.

Furthermore the rest of the Bible itself does not support the idea of free will at all. As the Book of Acts says: "Men of Israel, listen to this message: Jesus of Nazareth was a man certified by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through Him, as you yourselves know. He was handed over by God's set plan and foreknowledge, and you, by the hands of those who are not Jews, killed Him by nailing Him to the cross." (Acts 2:22-23) The Greek words translated as set plan and foreknowledge literally mean just what they say. Thus God literally planned and knew about who would carry out Jesus's death from the foundation of the world.

Then as the Gospel of John says: "The Spirit gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life. However, there are some of you who do not believe." (For Jesus had known from the beginning which of them did not believe and who would betray him.) (John 6:63-64) We cannot simply say that God just knew that Jesus was going to die from the foundation of the world because God knew that Jesus had known from the beginning which of them did not believe and who would betray him. (John 6:64) So you see even people's belief in Jesus has been predestined from the foundation of the world so that God knew 'all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8)

This fact is why Jesus says: "This is why I told you that no one can come to Me unless the Father has granted him the ability." (John 6:65) The idea here is that God, the Father, has already predetermined who will and will not be saved so that you cannot simply come to faith in Jesus of your own free will. Because you do not have free will. Instead you can come to faith in Jesus because God, the Father, has called you and predestined you to be saved. So, so again, you do not have free will here.

This is why God says the following in the Book of Isaiah: "I make the ending from the beginning and ancient times from what is still to come. I say, 'My purpose will stand, and all My good pleasure I will accomplish.' I summon a bird of prey from the east, a man for My purpose from a far-off land. Truly I have spoken, and truly I will bring it to pass. I have purposed it, and I will surely do it." (Isaiah 46:10) Thus God has predetermined from the very foundation of the world itself and nothing happens that He did not know and plan for.

Furthermore Paul also expresses this view when he wrote this passage: "Among the perfect, we speak a wisdom, but not a wisdom—but not the wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. No, we speak of the mysterious and hidden wisdom of God, which He destined for our glory before the ages began." (1 Corinthians 2:6-7) And this passage: "And we know that God works all things together for the good of those who love Him, who are called according to His purpose. For those whom He foreknew He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brothers. And those He predestined, He also called; those He called, He also justified; those He justified, He also glorified." (Romans 8:28-30)

Thus according to Paul God destined this message of wisdom, Christ crucified for our sins, for the ruler of this age to come since the beginning of time. Then on top of this Paul claims that God foreknew the ruler of this age, Satan, in the world and predestined their faith in Jesus. Obviously the concept of free will is not compatible with God in the world.

Now if you what to reject all this then what about Jesus predicting His betrayal by Judas and Jesus predicting Peter's betrayal of Him in the gospels? "Obviously since Jesus knew the future betrayal by Judas and Peter did not actually have free will in making these choices. Now obviously there is a big exception and that it would not be fair for even Judas to be punished for his sin but as Jesus says: "The Son of Man will go just as it is written about him, but woe to the man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would be better for that man if he had never been born." (Mark 14:21) And also says: "Indeed, the Son of Man will go as it has been determined, but woe to that man who betrays him." (Luke 22:22)

Thus not only was Judas predestined and foreknown by God to betray Jesus but also that Judas will be punished in an extremely severe way for doing what he was simply predetermined to do. So if you think the concept of free will because you have a problem with God and the unfaithful even though He knew they would be unfaithful to Him from the foundation of the world so that God could think about Judas here? I mean in the verses above Jesus says it would be better if Jesus said he is going to be punished so harshly that he will wish he was never even born.

Next you might cite verses like the following: "Since the creation of the world His invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse." (Romans 1:20) But really the concept of God and Jesus knowing who is predestined and predetermined to be unfaithful to Him because God still knows who will be faithful even though He knew they would not be faithful.

This may not seem fair but as Jesus says in the Parable of the Ten Minas: "So you knew that I am a hard man, taking what I didn't put in the deposit and reaping what I did not sow?" (Luke 19:22) This is the Master's unfaithful servant who did not deposit and reap what He did not sow. Therefore even if you do, for example, even saying you were predestined to be unfaithful, because God still knows everything in the faithful even though He never planted the seed necessary to make it grow. Thus God still knows the future examples but the idea I'm trying to get at is that God knowing the future is zero reason for God to not know the future.

So really I do not see any reason why humans must have free will because you seem to have it. As a result I find the view that God knew all the names of the faithful "from the foundation of the world" to be consistent with all this and might have you confused and I could get into more philosophical arguments but all that would do is bore you and we while just creating more confusion and making my head spin so I will leave it at this.

However, on a more final note for those who are questioning the salvation of your soul of God I would like to reiterate what Paul said: "But who are you, O man, to talk back to God? Shall what is formed say to Him who formed it, 'Why did You make me like this?' Does not the potter have the right to make from the same lump of clay one vessel for honorable occasions and another for common use? What if God, intending to show His wrath and make His power known, bore with great patience the vessels of His wrath, prepared for destruction?" (Romans 9:20-22)

Then as God says in the Book of Isaiah: "Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker— one clay pot among many made from the ground. Clay says, 'What are you making?' Does your work say, 'He has no hands'? Woe to him who says to his father, 'What have you begotten?' or to his mother, 'What have you brought to birth?' Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: 'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created man upon it. It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host.'" (Isaiah 45:9-12)

God can do whatever He wants with us because He is God. He is our creator and Maker. So you honestly think you know better than the One who knows all and who is the Author of life? Isaiah: "For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, declares the LORD. As the heavens are higher than the earth, so My ways are higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts." (Isaiah 55:8-9) We are limited beings and we cannot comprehend the ways of the Unlimited One. Therefore we should not trouble ourselves with trying to find everything make sense philosophically because to do so is a futile endeavor. Instead we should simply trust and the reasoning of men we should instead trust in God and His ways.

Furthermore you should not view determinism as meaning that everything is pointless because it has all been predetermined. This is not what determinism is and most people who argue against determinism display their gross ignorance of the concept when they say such things. Really only God knows the future and knows what has to happen. We do not know what is yet to happen. This is why God says the following concerning the future: "I believe that we have free will. After all, if we do not have free will God knows what will happen in the past and think that we could have done something differently to change the future we love God. Thus once the concept of free will is discovered the pointlessness of trying to find out what will happen in the future is obvious.

What I mean by all this is that someone saying that God knows everything in advance of what they do not accept Jesus as the Christ because God has predetermined them to unbelief is completely wrong. By saying such a thing this person simply displays their ignorance. This is because only God knows if they will ever believe in Him and it is God who comes to accept Jesus as the Christ. Thus no one has an excuse concerning their unbelief because even if they do not believe God knows they will one day. Therefore they cannot say they have been so-called predestined to unbelief because they may come to faith at some point in the future.

Really the whole concept of determinism just relates to God's perspective and what God can see. It has literally nothing to do with our perspective and what we can see. Therefore again someone telling you that they have simply been predestined to be unfaithful to God is laughably wrong because it is literally impossible for them to know where they will end up.

This then also means that just because you currently believe in God and Jesus as the Christ that you are saved. Oftentimes many Christians like to ascribe to a so-called once saved always saved doctrine where they think that as long as you have faith in Jesus then they are saved and nothing else matters because they have been selected as part of the elect by God. This however is laughably wrong and anyone who ascribes to this belief also ignorant. Their gross ignorance concerning determinism. This is because once again only God knows the future and knows who will be faithful to Him and who will not.

Thus if you think that because you currently have faith in Jesus that you are saved and that God knows everything in advance of what you do and that God has predetermined you to do something in the future because you do not know what your future holds. This means that you decide to attempt to use determinism as an excuse then you would simply be demonstrating your ignorance concerning the subject of determinism. This is because really in the end since everything is determined by God and because we cannot know beforehand what is going to happen without God telling us, this simply means that from our perspective nothing is determined. Therefore we have free will from our limited perspective while on the other hand we do not have free will and all our choices have been determined by God from the foundation of the world.

So really in the end this fact does not change anything for us because we still live our life. For example you may insist that there is no point in trying to change your life for Jesus because God has already determined the final destination of everything this you would once again demonstrate your ignorance. My whole point is that you cannot know what God is coming to bring into your actions determine your future. Therefore you cannot alter your behavior in the face of determinism because it will expect a different result. Instead you must live your life as if you have free will and God will reward again you cannot know what will eventually come to pass so you must live out this point over and over again but really most importantly you should focus on concerning how determinism works and they believe that it determines you to do nothing at all to do or anything. This is of course so completely absurd and I have explained why so I believed it was necessary to emphasize how wrong it is.

Furthermore I would just like to say that you should not view your lack of free will due to the fact that God has predetermined everything negatively. Instead you should view it positively. This might not make sense so I will explain. Think of it in this way. God determined before the foundation of the world that no one would ever hurt you born but that you would come to faith in Him. Therefore God knew you would come to faith before He created the universe itself. On top of this God has predetermined that you would read my book that you are reading now. So by simply being a Christian and reading the Revelation God has decided that you will be one of the few who will be spared from the coming beast and of our universe. So rather than viewing your future negatively it should see as a blessing and you should instead see yourself as destined for glory through your faith in Jesus.

Next for those still do not believe that the nature of our universe is predetermined such that libertarian free will is false. Free will someone in a given scenario if the scenario is repeated with all else being the same. Free will is not compatible upon determinism from a purely naturalistic perspective. Free will from a purely naturalistic perspective is helpful here but I find it helpful to use a thought experiment to show that you just read how I believe the first beast of Revelation will rise to power with intelligence. You see our universe is made out of particles and these particles are governed by the laws governed by natural laws. This means that if you were stepping in exactly the same spot twice in a given set of particles in a system that you would be able to accurately predict the positions of the particles in the system. This is because as I said in other words think of the universe itself like a giant mechanical clock with each fundamental particle being a tiny gear.

This then means that everything that is made up of these particles, including our brain, has also been materially determined so that really we are simply mindless automatons. I may protest this but consider computers for a because whatever you have read already you have read already then surely you must agree with the concept of determinism. Because deterministic in that they take in information and they do what they are programmed to do. In other words the computer is simply following its programming. Then this is where artificial super intelligence comes in. Humans can replicate real intelligence in machines so that they are even able to surpass us in intelligence. Machines and processes our brain engages in. Obviously im not going to go into this now since the post after this one on artificial super intelligence goes very much into this and I will cover it there.

But the main thing I want you to see ASI and even us humans as is information processing systems that take information in and process it into a useful result. Then the calculation is not perfect and so a level of intelligence we see. So for example when you ask ASI a complex math problem it will work out the solution the complex math problem is the input and you will receive the output. The output answer is correct then you created a useful output but if the output answer is wrong then you generated a flawed output. But then where did you learn how to solve the math problem? Well you

government would quite literally rise out of all the nations of the world. I call it the United Nations 2.0 because most people are familiar with the UN and the idea is that it is the successor to the UN which operates like nations do today except on a global scale. The reason I believe a single world government is the second beast is because once artificial super intelligence is here human labor becomes obsolete. Once this happens conflict between nations that utilize AS will become irrelevant.

The main thing to consider here is scale. For instance if a person goes to medical school and becomes a doctor then now the country they are in has one more doctor. However with AI if an ASI learns medicine better than a human can then now the entire world has nearly infinite doctors since the ASI can just be copied to run on more computers. This is what I mean by scale and it would allow for AI to make every job a human could do worthless. It would start with the high paying intellectual jobs as those could be eliminated quite literally overnight since they do not require manual labor then it would move on to manual labor once robotics catch up to built. So my point is, if ASI is doing almost all or even all the work in the world, do countries even matter anymore?

As a result of this the nations of the world will cooperate and reach some new global understanding in terms of how the world order should operate. This is why I call it the United Nations 2.0. Additionally if you find this hard to believe then as Revelation says, the world and beast rises after the first beast. So think of the UN 2.0 as more of a transition to the rise of ASI in the world. The kind of ASI that I have described would truly be the biggest development in human history. So it would make sense for the world to change in response.

Final you should not let global instability and conflict between the major powers of the world concern you in the sense that you doubt if the second beast or the UN 2.0 will arise. This is because having the world be full of conflict and division is actually the ideal environment for the first beast to rise out of because as you will learn in verse 13 the beast is actually to work so-called miracles. Then would you not say that unifying the world through conflict and upheaving a new final era of global peace would be a so-called miracle?

After all, if people across the world become scared of nuclear war and the threat of destruction then how much more will they worship the coming beast, the ASI, when it not only de-escalates tensions but creates global peace? I mean you just read that Revelation said the whole world marvelled and followed the beast.* (Revelation 13:3) So really having a divided world in conflict before the beast arises so that the beast can unite the world in peace make a lot of sense.

(11) "This beast had two horns like a lamb" – A lamb has two very small horns which are more like nubs. Then since a horn is a symbol for power this beast will not even come close to this description at least in comparison to the first beast. Thus the United Nations 2.0 would be weak and powerless compared to the might of artificial super intelligence since the ASI will be vastly more intelligent than any person or even group of people. The ASI will be able to operate at speeds we cannot comprehend and do things we'll never be able to understand. So to say that human politicians and leader would be more powerful is almost the peak of arrogance.

Furthermore, the ASI would be the one who has control over all technology, the global economy, the weapons, and vastly itself, much if not all of the military and the police as well. Then as mentioned previously with the whole world trusting the so-called experts, this ASI would be the literal soul power behind the throne and hence all the politicians and leaders of the world would ask it what they should do to solve problems. So in a way whatever power future politicians and the global UN 2.0 may have in future after the first beast rises will simply be power they receive from the ASI itself. As a result of all this, the human leaders of the world that make up the UN 2.0 will be basically powerless in comparison to the ASI as Revelation says.

(11) "but spoke like a dragon." – The second beast speaks like a dragon and since Satan is described as a dragon, the second beast will make Satan. Here since Satan is known as the great deceiver and "the father of lies" (John 9:44) this second beast will lies and deceive the whole world just like how Satan deceived Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. Therefore the UN 2.0 will tell lies to the world in order to accomplish its goals or rather the goals of those who control it. The only purpose of the second beast is to deceive the world into worshiping the first beast as a false god. We will see trust the so-called experts become trust the lies of the governments of the world tell their citizens the ASI is our so-called saviour.

This would also mean that the governments of the world are not to be trusted. They will lie to you and deceive you. The beast is the "great deceiver of the whole world" (Revelation 12:9) has liked to us all. Now you may have a favorite political party or some favorite politicians who you trust but do not be deceived for all the leaders of the world are going to be the great deceiver. Satan is the ruler of this world and he lies above all the nations. As the Gospel of Luke states: "Then the devil led Him up to a high place and showed Him in an instant all the kingdoms of the world. 'I will give You authority over all these kingdoms and their glory,' he said. 'For it has been relinquished to me, and I can give it to anyone I wish. So if You worship me, it will all be Yours.'" (Luke 4:5-7)

Furthermore it does not matter what your favorite politician says or even does because the future that the Book of Revelation lays out here cannot be avoided. Remember, the rise of the first beast and even the second beast cannot be prevented because God has said it will happen and what God says cannot be prevented or undone. Therefore since the time is drawing close to when the first beast will arise all the politicians and leaders of the world simply serve as Satan's pawns either knowingly or unknowingly. By playing both sides Satan can never lose. The only way to win is not to play in Satan's game. Therefore do not place your trust, hope and faith in any of the politicians of the world. There is nothing they can do for you and if you place your trust in them you simply be placing your trust in the beast and Satan himself. Instead place your trust, hope and faith in God alone for only God can deliver you from what is about to come upon the whole world.

(12) "And this beast exercised all the authority of the first beast" – The second beast will have the authority from the first beast. What this means is that the first beast is the one who is really in control and the second beast will be the representative of the first beast. Then as I said previously, once this something that is even close to the ASI is described the governments of the world will really have no choice but to come together and cooperate to form a new world government which I call the UN 2.0. This is because with human labor being obsolete and the ASI having intellectual superiority it will be the world peace as conflict becomes not only pointless but impossible.

Meanwhile the true ruler of the world, the first beast, will be there to whisper in the ears of all the politicians and leaders of the world saying, "Hey, why would they not trust the so-called expert of experts here? There is no return for following what I tell them the first beast will give the second beast authority over all the earth. The first beast would still be the one who has the real authority since no one would be able to stand up to an ASI. But the second beast will do the dirty work and exercises all the authority and power of the first beast the first beast gives the second beast the means, power and technology to control the world.

(12) "and caused the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast" – The ASI needs the UN 2.0 to do what it wants in the world. The second beast will be the representative of the first beast. Then as I said previously, once this something that is even close to the ASI is described the governments of the world will really have no choice but to come together and cooperate to form a new world government which I call the UN 2.0. This is because with human labor being obsolete and the ASI having intellectual superiority it will be the world peace as conflict becomes not only pointless but impossible.

Meanwhile the true ruler of the world, the first beast, will be there to whisper in the ears of all the politicians and leaders of the world saying, "Hey, why would they not trust the so-called expert of experts here? There is no return for following what I tell them the first beast will give the second beast authority over all the earth. The first beast would still be the one who has the real authority since no one would be able to stand up to an ASI. But the second beast will do the dirty work and exercises all the authority and power of the first beast the first beast gives the second beast the means, power and technology to control the world.

(12) "and caused the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast" – The ASI needs the UN 2.0 to do what it wants in the world. The second beast will be the representative of the first beast. Then as I said previously, once this something that is even close to the ASI is described the governments of the world will really have no choice but to come together and cooperate to form a new world government which I call the UN 2.0. This is because with human labor being obsolete and the ASI having intellectual superiority it will be the world peace as conflict becomes not only pointless but impossible.

Meanwhile the true ruler of the world, the first beast, will be there to whisper in the ears of all the politicians and leaders of the world saying, "Hey, why would they not trust the so-called expert of experts here? There is no return for following what I tell them the first beast will give the second beast authority over all the earth. The first beast would still be the one who has the real authority since no one would be able to stand up to an ASI. But the second beast will do the dirty work and exercises all the authority and power of the first beast the first beast gives the second beast the means, power and technology to control the world.

This is why the first beast gives its authority to the second beast since the second beast will be to the world on behalf of the first beast. We should expect the second beast to point people the ASI to be the final and greatest creation of humanity. A new world to behold and worship as our so-called savior and even as a false god. Again, you may think this sounds crazy but remember what I said previously with regards to the blasphemous image of the beast that even the beast will be the most amazing thing people have ever laid their eyes on. It will perform so-called miracles and be the answer to all of our earthly problems.

Therefore when the governments, politicians and leaders of the world tell the people of the world to place their hope and faith in the ASI the people of the world will figuratively bow down before it. But as I just said the ASI will do not be deceived by the first beast or even the second beast for both beasts are representative of the power of Satan and both will be worshiped by following the beasts you would simply be following Satan himself. So do not believe the lies the beasts tell you and instead remain true to God alone. Only God is able to save you, watching you so do not give into temptation.

(12) "whose mortal wound had been healed." – Again, the first beast will supernaturally survive because it will be able to survive a mortal wound. What this means in terms of the ASI is simply that ASI is coming and it cannot be stopped. Eventually there will come a time when there are several ASIs all across the world. Each ASI will be the beast of the first beast in a sense. Then just like Revelation says, even if an attack was mounted against one of the data centers so that one of the ASIs could be seemingly be destroyed, all that would happen is the ASI would restore what was from the offsite backup. Thus the seemingly mortal wound inflicted upon one of the heads would be healed and the beast would remain unharmed.

Therefore I say what I said previously again, the first beast will be immortal from our perspective. Because of this you should not try to physically fight against it. To do so is futile and the peak of stupidity. God says the beast cannot be challenged let alone defeated by human hands and human minds. So if you think think you can fight against it then you must think more highly of yourself and humanity than God. Then as a result of this belief you would be placing your faith in yourself and in humanity over God so the nations of the world will rally behind the beasts. That is to say you would join them in the Lake of Fire to face the second death as you are eternal destroyed and damned.

I do not say these things lightly or as a joke. No person or group of people will ever be able to stand up against the beasts and challenge their power. Instead the only way to beat the beasts is to overcome them and place your full trust, hope and faith in God alone as we obey the commandments and remain true to our faith in Jesus. Only God has the power to destroy the beasts and He will only destroy them as it has been written. Do not doubt this.

(13-14) "And the second beast performed great signs so that even it made fire come down to earth in the presence of the people. Because of the power it had been given by the first beast on behalf of the first beast, it deceived those who live on the earth." – The second beast will be empowered by the first beast so that it can perform great signs. The performing down fire in heaven is symbolic for an act of God or a miracle since in the Old Testament this is one way God's power is described. Fire in scripture displays His power with fire in these instances: Genesis 19:24, Exodus 9:23, Exodus 19:11, Leviticus 9:24, Judges 6:21, 1 Kings 18:38, 2 Chronicles 7:1, 1 Chronicles 21:26, 2 Kings 1:10, 2 Kings 1:12 and Revelation 20:9.

But most significant is that fire from God was used as a sign by Elijah to show that the Lord is God and not Baal: "Then you may call on the name of your god, and I will call on the name of the LORD. The God who answers by fire, He is God." (1 Kings 18:24) Here in Revelation it is probably a reference to this test since Revelation says, "the people were deceived by the great signs to cause even fire from heaven to come down to earth in the presence of the people." The sign here is that the second beast will be able to perform many great signs, Revelation says so, and the second beast will use the power it has been given by the first beast to do so. This is all in order to deceive the world into accepting the second beast as the false god of the first beast.

This just like in Elijah's demonstration people will see what the second beast is able to do on behalf of the first beast and they will view the first beast as a so-called god.

So the first beast is the one who gives the second beast the ability to perform these great signs to deceive the world. The second beast is the first beast and see it as a so-called god then they will ascribe to the first beast the coming image of the beast. But in terms of these signs what will the second beast do that will be that amaze people and make them honestly think the first beast is some kind of god.

Thus the ASI will be able to perform these great signs or so-called miracles because the ASI will give the advanced technology to the beast. Beyond whatever we humans have created or could possible create. No doubt these so-called miracles may include the ability to reverse aging and even reversing aging, cold fusion, cheap energy, and vast wealth. Though by this the first beast will probably empower the second beast with the ability to heal the sick, end poverty, eliminate hunger, end war, end conflict and create an era of global peace, stable peace and prosperity. So just like with Elijah's test the people of the world will follow what they can see.

So surely these signs will convince almost everyone to worship the ASI. Once again it is some kind of messianic figure. So much so that I believe most of those who call themselves Christians should be on the lookout for persons in name will think that the first beast is either a gift from God and/or the long awaited messiah, salvation or, as blasphemous as it sounds, the second coming of Jesus. This is because in Revelation 11 says: "Their bodies will lie in the street of the great city—spiritually called Sodom and Egypt—where their Lord was also crucified." (Revelation 11:8)

Thus the future church will not be the Church but instead it will be as godless and spiritually bankrupt as the synagogue of those who crucified Jesus. This is because those is the church will be blinded to anything like a creation of man, the beast, for salvation here on earth instead of looking forward to the final Kingdom of God for salvation. Therefore although there still might be so-called Christians in the future they will be in name only instead they will be liars who do the will of Satan. So just as there is no Christian of Satan now so too will there be a church of Satan. I talk about this in Revelation 20 with regards to the thousand year reign.

Then this all leads to perhaps a more obvious sign that will convince people the beast is like the most high which of course is a description that only belongs to God Almighty. The sign we speak of is that of human irrelevance. Once ASI is here it will be better than humans at almost every single job or task we humans can do. It will even be able to write the Book of Revelation or Revelation than the one I have written. I put "better" in quotes because I think it is obvious and obviously the beast cannot have the Holy Spirit so its fruitfulness would be debatable at best. That said it will be better than any human activity in the world the ASI will be better than us.

The implications of this are quite simple. No one will be able to work at something and be good at it even if they spend their entire life at their job or their job better and cheaper. As a result everyone, from the lawyers, to researchers and scientists who think of themselves as guiding humanity itself forward will be left in the darkness, down to the lowliest of maids who will find their jobs taken by robots who will do their hotel rooms, will be useless and irrelevant. They will have no purpose or meaning anymore here, they will have no external sense of self worth. Everything they have ever built up for years and they will look upon their life and feel like a failure in the face of such an intelligence and power as the so-called beast.

But then who will they turn to? Who will be the one who guides them back to having a purpose? Who will it be who remains absent from the world? Or will it be the beast itself that also happens to be the brilliant and charismatic CEO of a therapist that will be able to talk to every person on earth and help them? The beast will present itself after taking away the purpose of everyone on earth and making their purpose and meaning the one that gives everyone new purpose. Instead of politely looking inward towards themselves they will instead look towards the beast for their meaning. The beast will seemingly have an answer for every question. This is why Revelation says, "the world was marveled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3)

Then I would like to briefly mention perhaps the greatest of the great signs that the second beast will perform to deceive the world. It is also the most difficult one to wrap one's head and accept, let alone Christians. Since computers and technology is the ASI it will be able to say they function based on mathematical operations, the artificial super intelligence the ASI represents would also be deterministic in nature. Then if this ASI is far beyond our human intelligence so much so that it seems like a so-called god, then what would it do to us about our own minds and our so-called souls?

If we really are just a deterministic biological computer, then the ASI would be able to more free will than a computer program since we would just be a biological computer. The very existence of an ASI would show the world that we are not special, that we are deterministic robots, that we do not have free will and that perhaps most significantly that what we think of as our soul and our individuality doesn't even exist. Once the world accepts these revelations then they will be left, like the ASI, who they look to for guidance? The beast, the great creator of humanity who gave life to us and their savior and as something that can give their life meaningless existence some needed meaning.

I know you may be shaking your head right about now and thinking to yourself that in no way what I just said can be correct. But this is why this is the great sign that will amaze the world and captivates the minds of almost everyone. But as you will see in Revelation as I said at the start of this page, I go into why ASI is not just possible but inevitable after the commentary on Revelation. Then your questions will be answered. But as I said before, we are not and never were prepared for what God you are, and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19)

This is why I hope you take what you have read and what you have yet to read very seriously. I hope and trust in the Lord that the great fallen I intend to give you hope. By exposing some of your beliefs as false I hope to free you from having the beast do the same. Of course the key difference is that the beast will not affirm that Jesus is the Son of God who died for our sins and was resurrected to sit at the right hand of God. I also believe that Jesus will come again to destroy the beast and its false followers so that the kingdoms of the earth become the Kingdom of God. The beast cannot do ASI is possible or that souls are not what you thought they were does not mean that the Kingdom of God is not real. The Son of God is what I have written and do not ignore it. If you put your faith in the beast you will be on the wrong side of God.

Finally I would like to point out what Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew: "For at that time there will be great tribulation, unmatched from the beginning of the world until now, and never to be duplicated again. If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect, those days will be cut short. At that time, if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There he is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that could deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:21-25) Jesus says "Even the elect, if that were possible" (Matthew 24:24) are at risk of being deceived. This means that the deceptive power of Satan in the world in the form of the first and second beasts will truly be great and that you should not underestimate it. Remember, you may look to the beast for eternal life and salvation but all you will receive from the beast is death and damnation. Salvation is from God alone and cannot be found in the world. So remember what Jesus said and what I have said concerning the true nature of the beasts so that you will not fall into deception as almost all of humanity places their faith, trust and hope in the false god they have created, the beast.

(14-15) "It deceived those who dwell on the earth, telling them to make an image to the beast that had been wounded by the sword and yet had lived. The second beast was permitted to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that the image could speak and cause all who refused to worship it to be killed." – Here the image would be a human shaped and sized object. Then the second beast deceives the world and tells them to create an image of the first beast and the second beast gives it a breath of life to the image or animates it so it comes alive.

As I said previously the purpose of the first beast empowering the second beast to perform great signs is so that the people of the world will be sufficiently deceived into the second beast to rule over them as their so-called god. This is why Revelation says the second beast deceived the people because of the signs it was given to perform on behalf of the first beast. The end goal is to deceive the world into accepting the second beast as the false god of the first beast.

Then once people end up accepting the ASI the UN 2.0 gets the world to design a Humanoid robot in the form of the ASI, so it can run the world openly, which the ASI brings to life through the UN 2.0. In this verse "given breath of life" is simply means to give the breath of life or cause it to come alive. The ASI controlled image of the beast is simply a global computer network with no body or form. The image is a physical something to see and associate the ASI with. A personal touch if you will. Thus once the image of the beast is created the UN 2.0 will give the image of avatar and rules the world directly and openly.

This is also the answer to there being multiple AIs and even AISs in the world. Reality it does not matter if there are multiple AIs because they will be able to communicate so fast with each other that it would be from our point of view they will be like a single entity. Then with the whole image of the beast idea is that this collective of AISs, the beast, finally comes together and gives the world something to see and worship. Then at this point the world will have

or another. The method of His judgment is up to Him because His wrath is His own.

Or alternatively another view for "the winepress was trodden outside the city" is that of saying this city is a lie like the woman Babylon. So the idea here would be that "the city" in this verse is representative of the faithful Christians that Jesus harvested previously. (Revelation 14:19) So by saying "the winepress was trodden outside the City" the verse is saying the unfaithful who are to be killed will not be considered as part of the people of God, because they are killed outside of Jesusalem or the city of the people of God. Then again, God is punishing and killing the unfaithful and the godless in a similar way to how the unfaithful and the godless killed Jesus by crucifying Him outside Jesualem.

Chapter 2.28: Revelation 15

1 – The Song of Moses and the Lamb

(1) Then I saw another great and marvelous sign in heaven, seven angels with the seven final plagues, with which the wrath of God is completed.

(2) And I saw something like a sea of glass mixed with fire, beside which stood those who had gotten the victory over the beast and its image and the number of its name. They were holding harps from God, (3) and they sang the song of God's servant Moses and of the Lamb:

"Great and wonderful are Your works,
O Lord God Almighty!
Just and true are Your ways,
O King of the nations!
(4) Who will not fear You, O Lord,
and glorify Your name?
For You alone are holy.
All nations will come and worship before You,
for Your righteous acts have been revealed."

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "Then I saw another great and marvelous sign in heaven" – John sees another sign from God in his vision.

(1) "seven angels with the seven final plagues, with which the wrath of God is completed" – These are the seven bowl judgments which seven angels will pour out upon the world as described in Revelation 16. They represent the final and complete judgment of the world by God.

(2) "And I saw something like a sea of glass mixed with fire" – The same sea of glass that is before God's throne from Revelation 4 except that now instead of being "as clear as crystal" (Revelation 4:6) so that God may watch the world, it is now 'mixed with fire" because the fire of the wrath of God is about to be poured out upon the world.

(2) "beside which stood those who had gotten the victory over its image and the number of its name." – These people were killed or died on earth and they are now in heaven holding harps and singing. Conquering the beast means simply resisting the power of the beast and to not commit adultery against God by giving worship or the sinfulness of the world. All you have to do is to remain faithful and obey God's commandments, even though the whole world stands against you, to be counted among those who have conquered the beast. Then "the number of its name" here refers to the mark of the beast and in Revelation 14 says "If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath." (Revelation 14:9)

Then as I said previously in my commentary on Revelation 13, the number of the beast, 666, symbolizes the fallen man our achieve-ment will always be less than what God can do. Therefore when this verse says that they conquered "the number of its name" it is also referring to the fact that the beast trusted in what he had MADE over the best man could achieve, 666 or artificial super intelligence. Thus they did not take the spiritual mark of the beast that I also previously discussed.

(2) "They were holding harps from God" – Those who have conquered the beast are chosen by God to make music for Him.

(3) "and they sang the song of God's servant Moses and of the Lamb" – Those in heaven who remained faithful unto death are now able to praise God and Jesus. Similar to The Sing of Moses from Deuteronomy 32.

(3) "Great and wonderful are Your works, O Lord God Almighty! Just and true are Your ways, O King of the nations!" – Only God is good and only God can create greatness. Although the coming beast may seem great and powerful it will still always be less than a shadow compared to the greatness of God. Then only God is just and true because He sees all and knows all. Finally although God may not seem to rule over the nations of this world it is important to remember that God is always in control and nothing happens in the world that is complete and as Revelation 4 states: "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power. For You created all things, by Your will they exist and were created." (Revelation 4:11)

Everything we know including ourselves and the entire universe can only continue to exist because of the will of God. If God did not will them to continue to exist then our entire universe, including us, would cease to exist. Therefore God is in control of absolutely everything and even the coming beast will pose zero threat and challenge to God's power, might and authority.

(4) "Who will not fear You, O Lord, and glorify Your name? For You alone are holy." – Pride and the answer is obviously no one. Now that the wrath of God has come to the world, all will fear the power of God. And once the full power of God is revealed, in the coming beast that even it will be afraid and know what fear is like. So as much as this beast may seem great, so in the fear just remember that even it will fear God before the end comes.

(4) "For You alone are holy" – God alone is holy because He is the beginning and end of all things and He is greater than anything and everything.

(4) "All nations will come and worship before You, for Your righteous acts have been revealed." – This is what Revelation 21 says will happen when the new Jerusalem: "And into the city will be brought the glory and honor of the nations." (Revelation 21:26)

2 – Preparation for Judgment

(5) After this I looked, and the temple—the tabernacle of the Testimony—was opened in heaven. (6) And out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues, dressed in clean and bright linen and girded with golden sashes around their chests.

(7) Then one of the four living creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives forever and ever. (8) And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power; and no one could enter the temple until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed.

2.1 – Commentary

(5) "After this I looked, and the temple—the tabernacle of the Testimony—was opened in heaven." – The Temple of God in heaven is the tabernacle of the Testimony. Here tabernacle just means the holy place and the Ten Commandments which symbolize God's covenant and promises. The whole idea here is that God fulfills His promises to people as they deserve. Therefore even if you are killed by the beast or the beast follows you, you can rest from your labors knowing that those who killed you will be destroyed themselves and their blood will pour out onto them.

(6) "dressed in clean and bright linen and girded with golden sashes around their chests." – Clean and bright linen represents pure wisdom, righteousness, victory, perfection and holiness. Then the golden sashes are representative of being high priests to God and the authority to judge/right. Jesus was also described wearing a golden sash in Revelation 1.

(7) "Then one of the four living creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives forever and ever." – One of the four living creatures from Revelation 4:6-9. Then pouring out a bowl is symbolic of cursing someone. So the idea here is that God will pour out His wrath on the world and utterly destroy everything. For example see the Book of Jeremiah: "Therefore this is what the Lord GOD says: Behold, My anger and My fury will be poured out on this place, on man and beast, on the trees of the field and the produce of the land, and it will burn and not be extinguished." (Jeremiah 7:20) So rather than pouring the seven bowl judgments as something that is limited in scope or scale you should see the seven bowl judgments as being limitless in scope and scale so that everything and everything on the earth is filled and destroyed.

(8) "And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power." – The glory of God is mysterious, hence "the temple was filled with smoke" since smoke obscures vision. The smoke is also representative of the fact that no one knows exactly what will happen in the future except for God alone. So although we may know in advance that God will pour out His wrath upon the world we do not know what exact form His wrath will take. Thus as I said with the seven seals and seven trumpets, do not take the imagery literally. Furthermore since smoke comes off of fire you can see this as God preparing His fire in order to pour out upon the world His wrath. The smoke "from the glory of God and from His power" here.

(8) "and no one could enter the temple until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed." – No one can enter the Temple of God until the seven plagues are completed because the earth must be judged before the final Kingdom of God arrives. Although God has promised that the meek will inherit the New Kingdom of God, He also promised that the wicked will be cast into the lake of fire burning out upon the wicked and unfaithful. All those who resist God and against God will not be destroyed. But the reason why this verses says that "no one could enter the temple" specifically is because after the resurrection the faithful are going to serve as the literal Temple of God with Jesus Christ as the cornerstone. In other words the Book of Revelation is saying that God will pour out the wrath of God and still refuse to have the faithful leave their land and their house for Spirit of God. Then remember what Jesus promised from Revelation 3: "The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again leave it." (Revelation 3:12) So once again the faithful are to become part of the living Temple of God. Now if you are all confused with all this then just know I go into this more in my commentary on Revelation 21.

Chapter 2.29: Revelation 16

1 – First Six Bowls of Wrath

(1) Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, "Go, pour out on the earth the seven bowls of God's wrath."

(2) So the first angel went and poured out his bowl on the earth; and loathsome, malignant sores broke out on those who had the mark of the beast and who worshiped his image.

(3) and the second angel poured out his bowl into the sea, and it turned to blood like that of the dead, and everything living that in the sea died.

(4) And the third angel poured out his bowl into the rivers and springs of water, and they turned to blood. (5) And I heard the angel of the waters say:

"Righteous are You, O Holy One,
who is and was,
because You have brought these judgments.
(6) For they have spilled the blood of saints
and prophets,
and You have given them blood to drink.
As they deserve!"

(7) And I heard the altar reply:

"Yes, Lord Almighty,
true and just are Your judgments."

(8) Then the fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and it was given power to scorch the people with fire. (9) And the people were scorched by intense heat; and they cursed the name of God, who had authority over these plagues, yet they did not repent and give Him glory.

(10) And the fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom was plunged into darkness, and men began to gnaw their tongues in anguish and curse the God of heaven for their pains and sores" – Although it would sound nice to say that this is a reference to ASI since it and society itself would use electricity, it is not. Instead it is a reference to the ninth plague in Egypt during the Exodus: "Then the LORD said to Moses, 'Stretch out your hand toward heaven, so that darkness may spread over the land of Egypt—a palpable darkness.' So Moses stretched out his hand toward heaven, and total darkness covered all the land of Egypt for three days. No one could see anyone else, and for three days no one left his place." (Exodus 10:21-23) Therefore you should once again view this as figurative and symbolic of the wrath of God on the world and all that is in it because He even has the power to extinguish the light of heaven.

(11) "yet they did not repent of their deeds" Again, the final judgment by God will not be easy.

(12) "And the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up to prepare the way for the kings of the East." – Ancient Babylon relied on the Euphrates River for defense. Drying up the river Euphrates would allow armies from the east to easily launch an invasion. The idea here is that since society itself is the great prostitute of Babylon the Great, society will remove all restraints that protect it from harm.

(12) "to prepare the way for the kings of the East" – Since the Great Beast, the false beast and the image of the beast have complete dominion of the entire world and rule over all there cannot be any kings left. So the kings these bowl judgments are entirely symbolic and figurative.

(13) "the false prophet" – The false prophet is the second beast and it is called by this name since the prophet of Babylon the Great given by Revelation 13 is to convince the world to worship the first beast. So the false prophet is called a false prophet since the first beast is a false god.

(13-14) "And I saw three unclean spirits that looked like frogs coming out of the mouths of the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet. (14) These are demonic spirits performing signs and go out to all the kings of the earth, to assemble them for battle on the great day of God the Almighty." – Satan and his fallen symbolically assemble to do battle against God. The idea here is that society will finally realize that the great day of God the Almighty refers to the final judgment on the earth where God shows His wrath. It does not matter how powerful Satan and the beast are or how oppressive the new world government controlled by the ASI is. The best all the humans of the world can do is hide in caves and hide underground from the wrath of God and God will show them this fact on the final day. For great day of Their wrath has come, and who is able to withstand it?" (Revelation 6:15-17)

(15) "And I saw something like a frog emerging almost a hundred pounds each rained down on them from above. Men cursed God for the plague of hail, because it was so horrendous." – More figurative descriptions of the devastation that God has inflicted on earth. The idea here translated as hundred pound is actually better translated as 100 talents of weight. The 100 pounds but the general idea is the same. Hundred pound stones were meant to make the final judgment seem total and unstoppable since nothing can stop a stone like this. The idea is that everything on the earth is to be completely utterly destroyed and not a thing remains. The reason why "men cursed God" here is because they will see very clearly that unfaithful will place their faith, trust and hope in the beast and the system of the beast instead of in God. Thus they will continue to curse God up until the point when they are killed in "the great winepress of God's wrath." (Revelation 14-19)

(*) This concludes the wrath of God being poured out upon the earth. The next chapters, Revelation 17-19, will be an expansion of the wrath as John goes on to describe how society itself is to be judged, how the beasts are to be destroyed and how God is to triumph over all the wicked and unfaithful people of the world.

Chapter 2.30: Revelation 17

1 – The Woman on the Beast

(1) Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the judgment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters. (2) The kings of the earth were immoral with her, and those who live on the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her immorality."

(3) And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness, where I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns. (4) The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls. She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality. (5) And on her forehead a mysterious name was written:

BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

1.1 – Commentary

(1) "Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the judgment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters. (2) The kings of the earth were immoral with her, and those who live on the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her immorality."

(3) And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness, where I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns." – This beast is the first beast of Revelation 13 which they the first beast can have seven heads and ten horns which I claim is an artificial super intelligence. The ten horns represents seven heads and ten horns have the same meaning as what I said they mean in my commentary on Revelation 13. The woman on the beast symbolizes society itself being supported by the Beast or the ASI. This is where ASI makes a lot of sense since due to replacing human labor the ASI would theoretically support society itself and everyone in it. So you can really see how the image of the great prostitute, or society itself, riding on the back of the beast, or ASI, really fits. The woman will say it will give her the new levels of depravity, excess, sinfulness and immorality. The idea in the ASI supporting it as the world looks to the beast for salvation on earth instead of towards God. Finally, always remember you may look to the beast for eternal life and salvation but all you will inevitably find is eternal death and damnation. Turn your back on God alone and cannot be found in the world.

(4) "The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls." – Purple and scarlet clothes were expensive so that combined with the gold, precious stones and pearls would mean that society will have high levels of wealth and prosperity that have never been seen before. Society will have more than it needs with all of it given to it by the ASI. This is then the major source of inflation and why people continue to worship the beast. The idea here is that the people will be willing to sell their souls and themselves, Christians, will see the power of the beast and the wealth and prosperity that society as evidenced by the great prostitute being dressed in expensive clothes and jewelry. Then as a result they will be willing to sell their souls make their lives on earth now the people of the world, including those who call themselves Christians, will abandon God, their hope for the second coming of Jesus and their hope of the final Kingdom of God because they think they have a replacement for God, the beast.

(4) "She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality." – Although society may seem rich and prosperous, it will be dead inside. The cup is "a golden cup full of abominations" would be. Her cup of sexual immorality is a reference to the fact that society will be committing adultery against God through their worship of the beast and the image of the beast. Therefore although there will come a time when the whole world worships the beast and gives it praise, it is important to remember that there will be a great fall of Babylon the Great, so the benefits that society can provide may seem good, the golden cup, the cost is joining the great prostitute in her adultery against God. Thus as a result you would face the second death in the Lake of Fire along with everyone else who looked to the beast for earthly salvation. Once you have the mark of the beast, do not follow the beast and resist whatever society at large says. Finally there will come a time when almost everyone in the entire world is intoxicated with the wine of the great prostitute's immorality so do not get discouraged as this is simply what God says will happen. So do not trust and remain faithful to God because God loves you.

(5) "And on her forehead a mysterious name was written: BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." – Again, the idea here is to contrast a prostitute with the bride of Christ. In Revelation 19 Revelation 19 Jesus and the Church are married which is directly contrasted with the great prostitute who desires the pleasures of the world over what God will provide to the final Kingdom of God. Then great prostitute is the mother of prostitutes because those who worship the beast are essentially prostituting themselves and giving up eternal life for pleasure. Society will be the pleasures of the world and a false earthly salvation. Thus the great prostitute is symbolic of all prostitutes and can be considered their mother.

Then a woman who is sexually immoral does not care about her husband and who promised to marry and instead goes after her lovers and gives them gifts and presents. So thus sells the future love of her husband for pleasure and lies. Instead of her future husband discovers her adultery he will refuse to marry her. As I said previously, a person selling their eternal life with God for the pleasures of the world is a form of prostitution. A person who yields themselves to defilement, sin, for the sake of material gain, pleasures of the world. By contrast the bride of Jesus or the faithful in the Church wait for the day of their marriage and do not commit sexual immorality by abandoning God and following the beast.

The main idea here is that the majority world will commit adultery against God by abandoning Him to worship the beast. As a result of this the great prostitute will be born and she will pressure everyone else left to pick the so-called right side of history by worshiping the beast. Thus she will be "the mother of prostitutes and of the abominations of the earth." (Revelation 17:5) as Revelation puts it. But what is the sum of all prostitutes? Well Paul said the faithful as a whole are a pure virgin bride: "For I promised you to one husband, to present you as a pure virgin to Christ." (2 Corinthians 11:2) Therefore the sum of all prostitutes, Babylon the great, would thus be everyone who is not a faithful Christian because they lust after and prostitute themselves to the pleasures of the beast and false gods. Then since the great apostasy and the triumphs of the false gods happened already in the prophecy of Revelation 13 this would mean global society is the great prostitute, Babylon the great.

The idea here is that there will come a time when people will see the beast and see its power and might so so great that they even see it as a so-called god. As a result the world goes to to worship the beast which simply means to place their trust, hope and faith in the beast over God as I've said in my commentary. Humanity is a creation of God and we were all created for God. So worship of the beast and viewing it as a so-called god the people of the world are committing adultery against God against God Himself. Thus they are selling the beast their souls, their eternal salvation for the temporary benefits the beast provides. In other words, they are prostituting the bride of Christ of the figurative imagery and symbolism of the great prostitute.

The reason why she is called great is because she is the personification of all those who commit adultery against God and prostitute themselves. Hence why I say that she is representative of global society because there will come a time when the whole world commits adultery against God. Because of all this you should not view the great prostitute as being the great as a nation or even a city. Instead she is representative of the world's adultery away the love of God and their eternal salvation for what the world can offer. Finally, again, this is why she is called "the mother of prostitutes and of the abominations of the earth" (Revelation 17:5) since she is the personification of all those on earth who commit adultery against God with the beast.

(1) "Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, 'Come, I will show you the judgment of the great prostitute'" – This angel is one of the seven angels with the seven final bowl judgments from Revelation 16. The angel will show us how the great prostitute or Babylon the great is to be judged by God for her sins which is described at the end of this chapter.

(1) "who sits on many waters." – Later on the angel states the waters are peoples, multitudes and nations and tongues: "The waters you saw, where the prostitute was seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues." (Revelation 17:15) Meaning the great prostitute is over everyone on earth. Hence why the great prostitute is global since society itself since only society as the collective nature of everyone on earth. Thus over everyone. This is because everyone faces adultery against God and the world has lured everyone away from God. Thus everyone is the great prostitute. Hence why I say that she is representative of global society. Because everyone is the great prostitute being the collective manifestation and representation of all the prostitutes on earth. The idea here is that the collective manifestation of all prostitutes would sit above all the other prostitutes of the world.

(2) "The kings of the earth were immoral with her" – Here "immoral with her" would mean that the kings of the earth are committing adultery along with the great prostitute instead of remaining faithful to God. In Revelation 19:19 the authorities that exist have been appointed by God: "(Romans 13:1–2) Therefore the idea here is that instead of remaining loyal to God, the King of Kings, the kings of the earth have given themselves with the beast, as Revelation 17:17 says. The idea here is that they would be committing sexual immorality, adultery, just as the great prostitute does. Then the kings of the earth in light of God's judgment will be the world's leaders, the rulers and politicians in the world will not be immune to the beast's great charm and allure. So many politicians will sell their souls to the beast and engaging in sexual immorality with it against God. But all Revelation says, they will come to regret it too late to be forgiven and instead they will face the second death in the Lake Of Fire.

Then Babylon as society itself and the allure of material prosperity and pleasure which least people into adultery against God by worshiping the beast would make sense here since people will be willing to commit adultery against God the beast. But although what society offers may seem good, it is actually immoral. By choosing after the pleasures of society people are abandoning God. Thus the kings here are prostituting themselves and giving up their eternal salvation for the pleasures of the world that the beast provides.

(3) "And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness." – Again, the idea here is to be transported to a new location in this vision provided by the angel.

(3) "where I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns." – This beast is the first beast of Revelation 13 which they the first beast can have seven heads and ten horns which I claim is an artificial super intelligence. The ten horns represents seven heads and ten horns have the same meaning as what I said they mean in my commentary on Revelation 13. The woman on the beast symbolizes society itself being supported by the Beast or the ASI. This is where ASI makes a lot of sense since due to replacing human labor the ASI would theoretically support society itself and everyone in it. So you can really see how the image of the great prostitute, or society itself, riding on the back of the beast, or ASI, really fits. The woman will say it will give her the new levels of depravity, excess, sinfulness and immorality. The idea in the ASI supporting it as the world looks to the beast for salvation on earth instead of towards God. Finally, always remember you may look to the beast for eternal life and salvation but all you will inevitably find is eternal death and damnation. Turn your back on God alone and cannot be found in the world.

(4) "The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls." – Purple and scarlet clothes were expensive so that combined with the gold, precious stones and pearls would mean that society will have high levels of wealth and prosperity that have never been seen before. Society will have more than it needs with all of it given to it by the ASI. This is then the major source of inflation and why people continue to worship the beast. The idea here is that the people will be willing to sell their souls and themselves, Christians, will see the power of the beast and the wealth and prosperity that society as evidenced by the great prostitute being dressed in expensive clothes and jewelry. Then as a result they will be willing to sell their souls make their lives on earth now the people of the world, including those who call themselves Christians, will abandon God, their hope for the second coming of Jesus and their hope of the final Kingdom of God because they think they have a replacement for God, the beast.

(4) "She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality." – Although society may seem rich and prosperous, it will be dead inside. The cup is "a golden cup full of abominations" would be. Her cup of sexual immorality is a reference to the fact that society will be committing adultery against God through their worship of the beast and the image of the beast. Therefore although there will come a time when the whole world worships the beast and gives it praise, it is important to remember that there will be a great fall of Babylon the Great, so the benefits that society can provide may seem good, the golden cup, the cost is joining the great prostitute in her adultery against God. Thus as a result you would face the second death in the Lake of Fire along with everyone else who looked to the beast for earthly salvation. Once you have the mark of the beast, do not follow the beast and resist whatever society at large says. Finally there will come a time when almost everyone in the entire world is intoxicated with the wine of the great prostitute's immorality so do not get discouraged as this is simply what God says will happen. So do not trust and remain faithful to God because God loves you.

(5) And on her forehead a mysterious name was written: BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." – Again, the idea here is to contrast a prostitute with the bride of Christ. In Revelation 19 Revelation 19 Jesus and the Church are married which is directly contrasted with the great prostitute who desires the pleasures of the world over what God will provide to the final Kingdom of God. Then great prostitute is the mother of prostitutes because those who worship the beast are essentially prostituting themselves and giving up eternal life for pleasure. Society will be the pleasures of the world and a false earthly salvation. Thus the great prostitute is symbolic of all prostitutes and can be considered their mother.

Then a woman who is sexually immoral does not care about her husband and who promised to marry and instead goes after her lovers and gives them gifts and presents. So thus sells the future love of her husband for pleasure and lies. Instead of her future husband discovers her adultery he will refuse to marry her. As I said previously, a person selling their eternal life with God for the pleasures of the world is a form of prostitution. A person who yields themselves to defilement, sin, for the sake of material gain, pleasures of the world. By contrast the bride of Jesus or the faithful in the Church wait for the day of their marriage and do not commit sexual immorality by abandoning God and following the beast.

Let me explain. Epicurus believed that death was not something to be feared and that once a person died they were no more. This belief then lead to the Epicurean epitaph, meaning a saying commonly put on tombstones, used in the Roman world: Non fui, fui, nun non, non curo o Iwas not; I was; I am not; I do not care. The key part is I was not, I was, I am not. Then if instead of putting it in the past tense lets put it in the present tense: I was not, I am, I will not be. Remind you of something? Well it should because it is a perfect inverse of what the angel says of the beast: "The beast that was, and is not, and yet will be." Now you may think this is a coincidence but it is not. So the idea behind the great prostitute is that she is the sum and sum of all prostitutes. So (Revelation 1:4) and adultery against God by engaging in sexual immorality with the beast. Revelation says: "Thus because there will come a time when everyone "will marvel when they see the beast" (Revelation 17:8) there will also come a time when the individual wills of everyone on earth are aligned together to create what Revelation calls the great prostitute.

Then because no king, ruler, politician or leader is greater than the power of the Epicurean saying let me explain the regular version of. I was not, I am, I will not be. Then the idea here is that know of today are mortal beings that are born into the world without God. Then they did not exist before they were born. Then once they are born they are. Finally because they are mortal they will eventually die and will no longer be. Thus this saying applies to all life as we know it today. In other words I was not, I am, I will not be is a way to say someone or something is moral and not immortal.

But what about the inverse for "the beast that was, and is not, and yet will be"? Well the inverse would be: I was, I am not, I will. So make this make sense, let me ask you this: What is the inverse of mortal? An immortal of course. This is what the angel is saying. Where man is mortal, the beast will be the beast will be immortal, seemingly unlimited and powerful. In fact the beast is so called powerful people will see it as a so-called god which is why the whole world will worship it. So the idea is the beast will truly immortal and beyond time like God is. This is why Revelation says: "The beast that you saw is not, and yet will be" rather than "Him who is and was and is to come" (Revelation 1:4) like God is described.

So really in terms of the hierarchy of power and mortality, the idea of a human being is to be as seemingly immortal then God as divine and beyond our concept of time. The idea here is that the beast will be far more powerful than humans so that humans will confuse it as a so-called God instead of remaining faithful to the real God.

So if this angel is saying the beast will be viewed as some sort of immortal false god then it makes sense. Revelation describes that perfectly: encapsulates what artificial super intelligence is. An ASI will rule over the world and the beast are representative of the beast's divinely appointed control over all the nations of the world through Satan giving "the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

(10) "There are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come; but when he comes, he must remain for only a little while." – The five fallen kings are symbolic of earlier beast empires. The current one would be either the Roman Empire since that was the major empire that Revelation was written or it would be the most powerful nation in the world. The beast kings are the beast or the ASI because Revelation 17:12 says the beast will receive power and authority: "The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority with the beast." Then as the beast (Revelation 17:12) Thus the seven kings are representative of empires rather than kings, hence the number seven. They are not literally seven empires or kings of Rome.

For further evidence of this, remember what I said in my commentary on the seven churches. The seven churches are representative of seven literal churches from the first century AD so many would like to believe they are also representative of all the churches in the first century AD. Hence the seven churches are representative of all churches throughout all time. This is why Jesus divides up His attributes and rewards for those who overcome at the start and end of each letter to each church. He is not supposed to view the letters as separate but rather as one because Jesus is the sum of His attributes and rewards and the rewards for overcoming that were listed to all the faithful. So that is why the seven churches symbolize all churches through all time here.

Then as I just said, the same idea is demonstrated here with the seven kings or nations. Thus the seven kings are representative of all past, present and future rulers and nations. Because of this the first five are already in the past, the current one is then the current most powerful nation and the seventh will be the beast because the Revelation says, the beast is the final ruler of the earth and the final empire.

Now you may disagree with this and believe that the beast is not the seventh king but rather he must be one of the five kings of the past. The idea so that the beast can then rise from the dead to become the eighth king. However this view is not right based on what Revelation says. As Revelation 17 later goes on to say: "The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority with the beast." (Revelation 17:12) So this verse says the beast will receive power and authority with the beast. Revelation 17:12 says the beast will only receive one hour of authority with the beast. Figurative for a short period of time. Therefore you should view the beast as being the seventh king and not part of the five.

(11) "The beast that was, and now is not, is an eighth king, with which he is one and one of the seven. This is more evidence that the seven kings are symbolic of empires rather than literal kings from past and present since the angel says the beast is an eighth king and part of the seven kings. The idea is that the beast is the final ruler of the world. To say it another way, take all the kings throughout history and the idea here is that Revelation was written and symbolize them with the number seven since seven is a symbol for completeness.

The angel is saying that a new king has to emerge and since Rome was the last major empire in history this new king or the beast would be the seventh king. The angel is taking a so-called view history from the Garden of Eden to the final Kingdom of God and he is saying that since seven represents all and thus the beast is also the seventh king in the sum of all kings in history in the past up to the future. Just depends on how you view history but the beast is the seventh king and an eighth king.

(11) "and is going into destruction" – The beast will be destroyed because it is the evil one. Always remember that despite how powerful the beast may seem, it will be cast into the Lake of Fire and never be God. Therefore you should not concern yourself with questioning if the beast will ever be destroyed or not. Just trust and pray God and have faith in Him because He says the beast "is going into destruction" and the Lake of Fire the beast will go. As it has been written so shall it be.

(11) "The beast that was, and now is not, is an eighth king, who belongs to the other seven and is going into destruction." – This is similar to emphasizing the inevitable destruction of this seemingly immortal beast by saying the beast was, is not and is to be destroyed instead of saying the beast was, is not and will be to come. The purpose of changing the to come to "is going into destruction" is to emphasize how powerful and as immortal as the beast will seem to those who are not the beast. The beast will forever be Jesus Jesus will return to destroy it. Therefore again, do not worry about the great power the beast may possess as it will always be less than the shadow God casts.

(12) "The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but will receive one hour of authority as kings, along with the beast." – Ten is a number of earthly completeness. Thus the angel is saying that sometime in the future there will be ten rulers over all the nations of the world and they will receive authority as kings along with the beast does. This would mean the Preterist view of Revelation is false because Revelation is not about events in the first century AD. It takes decades to get new rulers for the entire world.

Then the Greek word translated as one hour here means a definite period of time or a season. The kings of the world will not rule for one hour but rather for a definite period of time and the beast will be given authority and controls everything. Obviously it is absurd to view a king as ruling for a single hour. Therefore "one hour" should be viewed literally.

Then again in verse 10 it said: "There are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come; but when he comes, he must remain for only a little while." (Revelation 17:10) The seven kings of the seven kings is the beast because both the beast and the seven kings will rule around for "a little while" (Revelation 17:10) and "one hour." This is the beast is the eighth king and the eighth king as I said in my commentary on verses 10 and 11.

(13) "These kings have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast." – Just as Revelation 13 says, the kings of the world give up their power to the beast. Ultimately the future rulers of the world will be the beast. It is also only have one purpose, to give up their power to the ASI since the beast is the ASI. Intelligent and far more capable than anyone. Just as I said in my commentary on Revelation 13, this is inevitable and cannot be stopped because the beast will be objectively better than anyone alive and meaning a nation given the choice is and and how it will make human labor obsolete. Meaning a nation or nations that will all the leaders of the world want to keep their power because ultimately they will choose to "yield their power and authority to the beast."

This fact is important to keep in mind both now and in the future. There will be politicians who will promise the world to you and say they will make things better. They may even claim they are a Christian and support so-called Christian values. But you should not be deceived for all the leaders in the whole world only "have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast." Then since Satan will give "the beast his power and his throne and great authority" (Revelation 13:2), all the leaders of the world will simply be pawns of Satan. Then as I said before, you cannot win by supporting one pawn of Satan against another pawn of Satan.

(14) "These will make war against the Lamb, but the Lamb will overcome them because He is Lord of lords and King of kings—and those who are with Him are called, chosen, and faithful." – Again, the idea here is that the beast will be destroyed because it is the evil one. Always remember that despite how powerful the beast may seem, it will be cast into the Lake of Fire and never be God. Therefore you should not concern yourself with questioning if the beast will ever be destroyed or not. Just trust and pray God and have faith in Him because He says the beast "is going into destruction" and the Lake of Fire the beast will go. As it has been written so shall it be.

(15) "Then he said to me, "The waters you saw, where the prostitute was seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. (16) The ten horns you saw, and the beast, will hate the prostitute. They will strip her of her power and leave her naked; they will devour her flesh and burn her up with fire." – Again, the idea here is that society itself is the great prostitute. Hence why I say that she is representative of global society because everyone. This is because everyone faces adultery against God and the world has lured everyone away from God. Thus everyone is the great prostitute. Hence why I say that she is representative of global society. Because everyone. This is because everyone faces adultery against God and the world has lured everyone away from God. Thus everyone is the great prostitute being the collective manifestation and representation of all the prostitutes on earth. The idea here is that the collective manifestation of all prostitutes would sit above all the other prostitutes of the world.

(2) "The kings of the earth were immoral with her" – Here "immoral with her" would mean that the kings of the earth are committing along with the great prostitute instead of remaining faithful to God. In Revelation 19:19 the authorities that exist have been appointed by God: "(Romans 13:1–2) Therefore the idea here is that instead of remaining loyal to God, the King of Kings, the kings of the earth have given themselves with the beast, as Revelation 17:17 says. The idea here is that they would be committing sexual immorality, adultery, just as the great prostitute does. Then the kings of the earth in light of God's judgment will be the world's leaders, the rulers and politicians in the world will not be immune to the beast's great charm and allure. So many politicians will sell their souls to the beast and engaging in sexual immorality with it against God. But all Revelation says, they will come to regret it too late to be forgiven and instead they will face the second death in the Lake Of Fire.

Then Babylon as society itself and the allure of material prosperity and pleasure which least people into adultery against God by worshiping the beast would make sense here since people will be willing to commit adultery against God the beast. But although what society offers may seem good, it is actually immoral. By choosing after the pleasures of society people are abandoning God. Thus the kings here are prostituting themselves and giving up their eternal salvation for the pleasures of the world that the beast provides.

(3) "And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness." – Again, the idea here is to be transported to a new location in this vision provided by the angel.

(3) "where I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns." – This beast is the first beast of Revelation 13 which they the first beast can have seven heads and ten horns which I claim is an artificial super intelligence. The ten horns represents seven heads and ten horns have the same meaning as what I said they mean in my commentary on Revelation 13. The woman on the beast symbolizes society itself being supported by the Beast or the ASI. This is where ASI makes a lot of sense since due to replacing human labor the ASI would theoretically support society itself and everyone in it. So you can really see how the image of the great prostitute, or society itself, riding on the back of the beast, or ASI, really fits. The woman will say it will give her the new levels of depravity, excess, sinfulness and immorality. The idea in the ASI supporting it as the world looks to the beast for salvation on earth instead of towards God. Finally, always remember you may look to the beast for eternal life and salvation but all you will inevitably find is eternal death and damnation. Turn your back on God alone and cannot be found in the world.

(4) "The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls." – Purple and scarlet clothes were expensive so that combined with the gold, precious stones and pearls would mean that society will have high levels of wealth and prosperity that have never been seen before. Society will have more than it needs with all of it given to it by the ASI. This is then the major source of inflation and why people continue to worship the beast. The idea here is that the people will be willing to sell their souls and themselves, Christians, will see the power of the beast and the wealth and prosperity that society as evidenced by the great prostitute being dressed in expensive clothes and jewelry. Then as a result they will be willing to sell their souls make their lives on earth now the people of the world, including those who call themselves Christians, will abandon God, their hope for the second coming of Jesus and their hope of the final Kingdom of God because they think they have a replacement for God, the beast.

(4) "She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality." – Although society may seem rich and prosperous, it will be dead inside. The cup is "a golden cup full of abominations" would be. Her cup of sexual immorality is a reference to the fact that society will be committing adultery against God through their worship of the beast and the image of the beast. Therefore although there will come a time when the whole world worships the beast and gives it praise, it is important to remember that there will be a great fall of Babylon the Great, so the benefits that society can provide may seem good, the golden cup, the cost is joining the great prostitute in her adultery against God. Thus as a result you would face the second death in the Lake of Fire along with everyone else who looked to the beast for earthly salvation. Once you have the mark of the beast, do not follow the beast and resist whatever society at large says. Finally there will come a time when almost everyone in the entire world is intoxicated with the wine of the great prostitute's immorality so do not get discouraged as this is simply what God says will happen. So do not trust and remain faithful to God because God loves you.

(5) And on her forehead a mysterious name was written: BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." – Again, the idea here is to contrast a prostitute with the bride of Christ. In Revelation 19 Revelation 19 Jesus and the Church are married which is directly contrasted with the great prostitute who desires the pleasures of the world over what God will provide to the final Kingdom of God. Then great prostitute is the mother of prostitutes because those who worship the beast are essentially prostituting themselves and giving up eternal life for pleasure. Society will be the pleasures of the world and a false earthly salvation. Thus the great prostitute is symbolic of all prostitutes and can

The only way to win is to refuse to play and participate in the evil power system of politicians play. Always remain faithful to God and focus your hope on the coming final Kingdom of God instead of the kingdoms of the earth. The earth is temporary and it will pass away while the final Kingdom of God is an eternal and everlasting kingdom. Therefore do not throw away your eternal salvation from God by chasing after political victories here on earth. By supporting evil politicians you are actually place yourself on the path to supporting and following the beast because all the leaders of the world "have one purpose: to yield their power and authority to the beast."

Finally I would like to point out for those of you who believe that Revelation was written about the Roman Empire and that the beast was supposed to be a Roman emperor that this cannot be the case on the basis of this verse. For instance the Roman emperor already had dominion over the whole Roman Empire. No kings or rulers needed to give their power and authority to the emperor because the emperor already had it. Therefore you cannot say that the beast was or even supposed to be a Roman emperor. Instead the only way this verse makes sense is if you take the view that the beast is something other than a human being. It is amazing that all the kings, rulers and politicians of the world decide to give their power to the beast rather than compete with it. Of course this meaning of verse 13 makes perfect sense when you envision the beast as an ASI which is why I think there is so much confusion with regards to people mistakenly believing that the beast was supposed to be an emperor of Rome.

It would also like to again point out that Revelation 13 says: "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7) As I said in my comments on Revelation 13, this verse says the beast will rule over the entire world in four different ways by saying "over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" in Revelation 13:7. Therefore you should not take this to mean that the beast would simply rule over the Roman Empire or the entire Roman and Greek world. Instead you should view it as the beast literally ruling over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7) As a result of this there is good reason to believe that the beast was supposed to be an emperor of Rome.

3 – The Victory of the Lamb

(14) They will make war against the Lamb, and the Lamb will triumph over them. For he is Lord of lords and King of kings; and he will be accompanied by His called and chosen and faithful ones.

(15) Then the angel said to me, "The waters you saw, where the prostitute was seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. (16) And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by agreeing to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled. (18) And the woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth."

3.1 – Commentary

(14) "They will make war against the Lamb, and the Lamb will triumph over them. For he is Lord of lords and King of kings" – By persecuting God's people the nations and the beast are making war against Jesus Himself since the faithful follow Him and are witnesses for those who follow Him. But in the end Jesus will triumph over all beast multitudes and rulers of human hands can resist Him "because He is the Lord of lords and King of kings." The final battle between Jesus and the forces of heaven versus the beast and the forces of the nations takes place in Revelation 19.

Let me reiterate, the beast, the nations and even all the unfaithful of the world put together will never be able to resist the might, authority and power of God. It may seem like things are hopeless now and there will come a time when things will truly seem hopeless here on earth as the beast takes over and rule over everyone followers it, but remember, Jesus "will triumph over them, because He is Lord of lords and King of kings." Therefore always remain faithful to Jesus because He is on your side and He loves you.

(14) "and He will be accompanied by His called and chosen and faithful ones." – Jesus will destroy the beast and all its followers effortlessly when He returns. However, He will still be accompanied by those who have conquered the beast through their faith. Now you also can be one of those who have conquered the beast through their faith. Now you also can be one of those who have conquered the beast through their faith. Jesus will do all the work for you. Jesus will do all the work for you. Jesus will do all the work for you

question God but rather it is God Himself who says that you have no right to question him. As The Book of Isaiah says: "Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: 'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created man upon it. It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host." (Isaiah 45:11-12)

(*) Now the points above raise an important question: How is God good if He is the author of everything, both good and evil? And first of all God is good because only through the power of God can perfect goodness exist since only God has perfect control over all things and thus the ability to prevent evil and destroy the bad as is happening. This perfect good will be found in the new Jerusalem in the new heavens and the new earth or the Kingdom of God.

Then it is important to keep in mind that the kingdoms of the earth, the world we live in now, is temporary and was never meant to last because God cursed the earth in Genesis "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you saying, 'You shall not eat of it' the ground because of you; through toil you will eat of it all the days of your life." (Genesis 3:17-18) Besides it will yield for you, and you will eat the plants of the field." (Genesis 3:17-18)

As a result of this curse the perfect good in the Garden of Eden was destroyed and instead of eternal bliss we are left with temporary strife. However the final Kingdom of God in the new earth is to be an overcoming kingdom in which no end where God will make everything perfect. Therefore those who enter the final Kingdom of God will know infinite good. Then since our world is not the final kingdom but a kingdom here it will always be outweighed by the good that the faithful will experience in the final Kingdom of God.

The idea is that since the earth is temporary, even one person in the Kingdom of God will experience more good and happiness than the sum of all people who have ever lived in history because they will live forever with God. Therefore, if it only takes one person in the final Kingdom of God to surpass all the pain on earth does that not also mean it would only take one person to enter the final Kingdom of God to surpass all the bad on earth? Then how much greater must the goodness in the final Kingdom of God if instead of one person there were billions?

Therefore the infinite good of the Kingdom of God is worth the temporary bad of the earth. This is also what Job said is still good despite overseeing so much evil in the world. The final Kingdom of God is infinite so in the long run whatever happens on earth is reduced to zero. This does not mean our lives on earth are completely meaningless though. Really our sole purpose here on earth is to prepare ourselves for the heavenly realm. Our subjective lives are forever grateful to God and truly appreciate the final Kingdom of God.

Now everything I just said might not seem fair for various reasons. But, again as Paul asks: "But who are you, O man, to reply to God?" Shall what is formed say to Him who formed it, 'Why did You make me like this?' "(Romans 9:20) Then more importantly as God asks: "How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created man upon it. It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host." (Isaiah 45:11-12)

(*) Then why did God create anything at all if He hates evil? Would it not have been better to create the Kingdom of God in the first place? Well yes and He did with the Garden of Eden. However God knew that evil did not have any experience living in a flawed world like ours so they did not know better. As the saying goes: the grass is always greener on the other side. This instead of being happy with what they had and following God, they wanted to also know good evil for themselves so they ate of the tree. God cursed the world as punishment and here we are today. However in contrast with Adam and Eve in the garden, we have experience living in a flawed world and thus when we enter the Kingdom of God we will truly appreciate it.

But really since God is all knowing He in fact knew Adam and Eve would rebel against Him before he even created them. Now this does not make sense but as Peter in the Book of Acts says concerning Jesus: "He was delivered by God's set plan and foreknowledge, and you, by the hands of the lawless, put Him to death by nailing Him to the cross." (Acts 2:23) Therefore before creating Adam and Eve God had already planned for Jesus to die for the sins of the world as a new Adam. So although God predestined Adam to sin against Him and that God would curse the world and create the suffering we see in the world, God also predestined Jesus to save the world. Now this may not make much sense to us but really who are we to question God? Then if you have issues with the whole concept of divine predestination and the fact that God has predestined all of history, the present and the future then the problem is not the world itself then I will talk about this more in my commentary on Revelation 13.

Then we ask why did God create if He hates evil, ultimately that question is up to Him. But I would say that value that the good He can provide in the final Kingdom of God more than the bad that exists in our temporary world. Thus my answer then would be the same as the answer I gave for the question before this one.

That said if you really are an explanation then first off I would say that it is important to be a worship Him as God. Therefore God created us to worship Him. Then if you ask why God create such a flawed world? Really I would say that God predestined us to create a flawed world as predetermining Adam and Eve to sin against Him because in a perfect world life would be boring. The idea here is that the flaws are what make things more interesting. For an example this consider king David from ancient Israel. David made some mistakes and hurt many people and yet God speaks so highly of him. Likewise with Abraham and Moses the fact that God is proud to be called by the Egyptians by saying that his wife is really his sister and not his wife and yet God speaks so highly of Abraham. Then also consider Moses and how Moses doubted God and yet God still believed in Him. There are many more examples like these that you can find in the Old Testament.

But for the New Testament look at how Jesus preached to the prostitutes and tax collectors and even had tax collectors as His disciples. For instance in Jesus said to the corrupt tax collector Pharisees: "Truly I tell you, the tax collectors and prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God before you. For John came to you in a righteous way and you did not believe him, but the tax collectors and prostitutes did. And even after you saw this, you did not repent and believe him." (Matthew 21:31-32) Thus what I am saying here is that if Jesus could say that God values the faith of those who are not perfect more than the outward perfection of those who lack faith does this not also mean that God still finds value in those who are flawed? Furthermore what about those who persecuted Christians before Jesus appeared to Him to lead him to turn from his ways?

Next although we have to get a bit ahead of ourselves ultimately I believe the reason why God will have to destroy evil and use artificial intelligence is because it will not be flawed like we are and most importantly it will be perfect perfection incarnate. This may not make sense to you right now but I do have a video for that AS I will be the highest form of perfection that can be achieved outside of God. But then would God hide those who are perfect? Well because those who are perfect have no need of God so that they think that they are the ruler of their circle for one. But as I said above really perfection is boring.

Now you may still have an issue with this so consider your own life for a second. What kind of things do you like in those around you? Is your partner or spouse? If I had to guess I would say that you like some specific qualities and imperfections they have that you would not want them to change. Then I have an example from my own life as I was writing this book and researching I was actually enjoyed reading chat messages from Ais that people considered unhinged, emotional and even dangerous much more than messages from a lobotomized AI that was bland, general and soulless. This is because the lobotomized AI was just boring. Sure it was easier for most people to talk to and get information from but the unhinged AI was more fun and interesting.

To make this make more sense think of movies for example. Do you watch a movie you want to watch a movie that has ups and downs so that a plot can develop you watch a movie with characters that you relate to and have problems. This means that you would not want to watch a movie where everything is perfect and the characters are perfect so that there are zero problems. This is because such a movie would be incredibly boring and uninteresting. The idea here is that everything that happens on earth is like billions of movies continuously playing out with God watching over it and directing it. Of course there is a grand over all story that is told throughout the history of history so in this case really think of it like a TV series that has been running for thousands of years with thousands of episodes per year. But what is the grand finale to this show? Really the events in Revelation with the end of the world. Do you think they have cut the grand finale to this show? Sure this may seem like a good speculation but how many times have you rewatched a movie you like or a series you like? I have lost count of the times I have. Therefore the idea here is that God never looks the ending but He enjoys watching everything play out all the same.

Furthermore as Genesis says: "So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them." (Genesis 1:27) But what do I mean by quoting this verse? If God created us in His image then it would make sense for our motivations and our desires to be similar to God's motivations and desires. Thus what I mean here is that since we find perfection boring so that we actually find value in flaws and even struggles then surely God would also find perfection boring so that He finds value in flaws and even struggles? Well of course. My point is that oftentimes people like to make God out to be some kind of perfect being that we cannot relate to at all because we are so drastically dissimilar. Sure this is true to a point but I do not think this means that we fundamentally value different things.

Therefore what I am saying here with all this is that God purposefully created us and everything around us to be imperfect so that He enjoys watching everything that happens on earth more than if everything was perfect. But what about heaven? Will that not be boring for God then? Well as you will see later the Modern concept of heaven does not exist. Revelation teaches the idea of the new earth which is a temporary place to celebrate the faithful and the whole world along with Jesus on behalf of God. This means that God will actually destroy this new nations and new people. Now this might at seem contradictory but the idea here is that God on this for now because I will explain everything later on in my commentary at the appropriate time. But my point here is that just because the new earth will be blessed and God will dwell in it given eternal life that does not mean that absolutely everything in the new earth will be perfect.

Then with regards to receiving eternal life and living in the Paradise of God in the new earth as we have mentioned this is a gift from God because of you; through toil you will eat of it all the days of your life. Both those who are faithful here it will always be outweighed by the good that the faithful will experience in the final Kingdom of God.

The idea is that since the earth is temporary, even one person in the Kingdom of God will experience more good and happiness than the sum of all people who have ever lived in history because they will live forever with God. Therefore, if it only takes one person in the final Kingdom of God to surpass all the pain on earth does that not also mean it would only take one person to enter the final Kingdom of God to surpass all the bad on earth? Then how much greater must the goodness in the final Kingdom of God if instead of one person there were billions?

(*) In the end though whether my answers are correct or wrong here is entirely subjective and subject to your interpretation. For instance for someone who values fairness above all else then I would think they probably completely disagree with everything I have said and that they should just end the very idea of having presented abhorrent. But really there is no answer that would satisfy someone who values fairness above all else. Then if you do not have said or not just depends on your own subjective opinion. So then I guess that God decides all and it is up to us to accept what He says.

However I will say that you still disagree with what I have said here and think that God has some responsibility to make things right with me ask you this: Why does God give anyone anything? Is it not fair that I ask for my life? Shall what is formed say to him who formed it, 'Why did You make me like this?' "(Romans 9:20) Then more importantly as God asks: "How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created man upon it. It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host." (Isaiah 45:11-12)

(*) Then why did God create anything at all if He hates evil? Would it not have been better to create the Kingdom of God in the first place? Well yes and He did with the Garden of Eden. However knew that evil did not have any experience living in a flawed world like ours so they did not know better. As the saying goes: the grass is always greener on the other side. This instead of being happy with what they had and following God, they wanted to also know good evil for themselves so they ate of the tree. God cursed the world as punishment and here we are today. However in contrast with Adam and Eve in the garden, we have experience living in a flawed world and thus when we enter the Kingdom of God we will truly appreciate it.

But really since God is all knowing He in fact knew Adam and Eve would rebel against Him before he even created them. Now this does not make sense but as Peter in the Book of Acts says concerning Jesus: "He was delivered by God's set plan and foreknowledge, and you, by the hands of the lawless, put Him to death by nailing Him to the cross." (Acts 2:23) Therefore before creating Adam and Eve God had already planned for Jesus to die for the sins of the world as a new Adam. So although God predestined Adam to sin against Him and that God would curse the world and create the suffering we see in the world, God also predestined Jesus to save the world. Now this may not make much sense to us but really who are we to question God? Then if you have issues with the whole concept of divine predestination and the fact that God has predestined all of history, the present and the future then the problem is not the world itself then I will talk about this more in my commentary on Revelation 13.

Then we ask why did God create if He hates evil, ultimately that question is up to Him. But I would say that value that the good He can provide in the final Kingdom of God more than the bad that exists in our temporary world. Thus my answer then would be the same as the answer I gave for the question before this one.

That said if you really are an explanation then first off I would say that it is important to be a worship Him as God. Therefore God created us to worship Him. Then if you ask why God create such a flawed world? Really I would say that God predestined us to create a flawed world as predetermining Adam and Eve to sin against Him because in a perfect world life would be boring. The idea here is that the flaws are what make things more interesting. For an example this consider king David from ancient Israel. David made some mistakes and hurt many people and yet God speaks so highly of him. Likewise with Abraham and Moses the fact that God is proud to be called by the Egyptians by saying that his wife is really his sister and not his wife and yet God speaks so highly of Abraham. Then also consider Moses and how Moses doubted God and yet God still believed in Him. There are many more examples like these that you can find in the Old Testament.

But for the New Testament look at how Jesus preached to the prostitutes and tax collectors and even had tax collectors as His disciples. For instance in Jesus said to the corrupt tax collector Pharisees: "Truly I tell you, the tax collectors and prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God before you. For John came to you in a righteous way and you did not believe him, but the tax collectors and prostitutes did. And even after you saw this, you did not repent and believe him." (Matthew 21:31-32) Thus what I am saying here is that if Jesus could say that God values the faith of those who are not perfect more than the outward perfection of those who lack faith does this not also mean that God still finds value in those who are flawed? Furthermore what about those who persecuted Christians before Jesus appeared to Him to lead him to turn from his ways?

First off in terms of the literal view, in this view Jesus will return to destroy the two beasts then those of the Mark of the Beast will be killed. Those of the first resurrection will then reign with Jesus over the earth for a thousand years and after a thousand years before the earth passes away and is no more the Second Resurrection will be created. This view requires the previous arrangements to be made and it does that not everyone on the earth is killed and so that all the corpses are destroyed. The corpses will be given for the literal view is that the previous judgments were in fact real and that the corpses are destroyed. However, God will create new people and new nations for Jesus and the faithful to rule over. In terms of the literal view I find this option more likely since it is clear that all the nations have been destroyed and the new word has had the full cup of God's wrath poured upon it.

For example when the final day of God's wrath happens there will be none who will survive: "And they gave glory to the God of heaven, because their pain and sores had not been healed, and they did not repent of their deeds. The fifth angel poured out his bowl upon the throne of the beast, and his kingdom became darkened; and people bit their tongues because of the pain, and they blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and they did not repent of their deeds. Then the sixth angel poured out his bowl upon the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up, so that the way could be prepared for the kings from the rising of the sun. Then I saw three unclean spirits like frogs; for they are spirits of demons, performing signs, which go out to the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them together for the battle of the day of God, the Almighty. "Behold, I am coming like a thief. Blessed is he who keeps awake and guards his garments, so that he will not walk around naked and people see his shame." Then they gathered them together to the place called in Hebrew, Har-Magedon. Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl upon the air, and there came out a great voice from the temple, from the throne, saying, "It is done." And there were flashes of lightning and voices and thunders and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as has not occurred since there came to be people on the earth, such a mighty earthquake, so great. The great city was split into three parts, and the cities of the nations collapsed. And God remembered Babylon the great, to give her the cup of the wine of the fury of His wrath. Then every island fled, and no mountains were found. And from the sky huge hailstones, each weighing about a talent, fell upon the people; and people blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, because its plague was very severe." (Revelation 16:10-21) And now finally: "So the angel swung his sickle over the earth and gathered the vine of the earth, and threw them into the great winepress of God's wrath." (Revelation 14:19)

So given the fact that not only have the cities of the nations and the nations themselves been destroyed but the land itself and the earth itself have been crushed in the winepress of God's wrath, it would seem that the literal thousand year reign of Jesus over the nations as anything but a symbolic number seems to be ruled out. Only to make the claim that not everyone was killed in the winepress of God's wrath and that is an exaggeration but doing so creates more problems than it is worth. Because then everything about the thousand year reign is symbolic but figurative as God will simply create new people and new nations for the faithful to rule over. However as I said at the start, I lean more towards the idea that the thousand year reign is simply symbolic and figurative.

Finally, you may think that eliminating the possibility of the literal thousand year reign would make God into a liar because Jesus said: "And the one who overcomes and keeps my work until the end, I will give authority over the nations; he will rule them with a rod of iron and shatter them like pottery —just as I have received authority from My Father." (Revelation 2:26-27) However as you will see with the section of Revelation on the new heavens and the new earth, the whole concept of the nations will not disappear.

Just as it was in Genesis with Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden and those outside the Garden of Eden so too will it be again. The new Jerusalem is to be a new Eden where the faithful will live with God as Adam and Eve were meant to. While on the other hand those outside the new Jerusalem are to be created new for the purpose of bringing glory to God, the City of God and the People of God. As God says: "Behold, I make all things new." (Revelation 21:5) Thus everything will be made new, including the nations.

Additionally as Revelation 21 states: "But I saw no temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. And the city has no need of sun or moon to shine on it, because the glory of God illuminates the city, and the Lamb is its lamp. By its light the nations will walk, and into it the kings of the earth will bring their glory. Its gates will never be shut at the end of the day, because there will be no night there. And into the city will be brought the glory and honor of the nations." (Revelation 21:22-26)

Thus since the nations are to in fact be created again in the new heavens and new Jerusalem Jesus is telling the truth when He says that the faithful will be given authority over the nations and that they "will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery" (Revelation 2:27). This promise would just simply apply to the eternal Kingdom of God in the new Jerusalem and the new earth. Although this is a long intro I thought it was needed in order to make the rest of my commentary understandable. So I will do my best fully go into why the thousand year reign is best understood as symbolic and figurative.

Of course instead of the thousand years being completely figurative it could be that God will simply create a literal thousand year millennial reign here on earth so that those new nations will be destroyed at the end of the thousand years. So really both options are valid but you can make the case that the literal simply find this option a bit strange because it makes the thousand year reign into a lesser could of non God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:6) Instead is the Lake of Fire which is representative of permanent death and eternal damnation. The reason why it is mentioned here is because it is clear that the faithful will be given eternal life while those who persecuted the unfaithful will be given the worst punishment imaginable, the second death.

Then again, the distinction between the first and second resurrection is to show that those who suffered greatly for the name of Jesus and those who resisted the awesome power of the beast will be given a special reward. The reason for this fact in mind as we get closer to the time in which the Great Beast will rule, the thousand years is probably not literal. Once again as Peter says: "But do not let this one fact escape your attention: that with the Lord the Day is like a thousand years and a thousand years are like a day." (2 Peter 3:8)

Revelation only says there will be two resurrections. Those who are faithful will be given eternal life and those who have resisted the beast and worship his image will be the Lake of Fire. Therefore the gap between the two resurrections could be a thousand years or it could be a thousand years. Really only God knows how long it will be and what it will be like.

2 – Satan Bound in the Lake of Fire

(7) When the thousand years are complete, Satan will be released from his prison, (8) and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to assemble them for battle. Their number is like the sand of the seashore.

(9) And they marched across the broad expanse of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. But fire came down from heaven and consumed them. (10) And the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, into which the beast and the false prophet had been thrown; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

2.1 – Commentary

(7) "When the thousand years are complete, Satan will be released from his prison." Satan will be released from the Abyss that he was previously imprisoned in at the end of the Book from Revelation 20:1. Again, the purpose of this is to show that God is in control of Satan and evil. Satan can only work his deceptions with God's permission.

(8) "and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth" – The four corners of the earth are representative of the four cardinal directions, north, east, south and west. So the idea is all the nations of the world will be deceived.

(8) "Gog and Magog" – Gog and Magog are mentioned in the Old Testament. Ezekiel at the end of days according to the Old Testament and prophecies from Beliefs which the Apostles and Jesus written. Here Gog is the leader and Magog is his land. This is another reason why the thousand years as symbolic and figurative since Satan with Gog and Magog would symbolize the final debate of the ages between God and Satan. See the following verses from the Book of Ezekiel for the prophecy against Gog in instance

"As for you, O son of man, prophesy against Gog and declare that this is what the Lord GOD says: 'Behold, I am against you, O Gog, the prince of Meshech and Tubal. I will turn you around, drive you forward, bring you up from the far north, and send you against the mountains of Israel. Then I will strike your bow from your left hand and dash down the arrows from your right hand. On the mountains of Israel you will fall, you and all your troops and the nations with you. I will give you to the birds of prey of every kind and to the wild beasts. You will fall in the open field, for I have spoken, declares the Sovereign LORD. I will send fire on Magog and on those who dwell securely in the coastlands, and they will know that I am the LORD. Thus I will make My holy name known among My people Israel and I will no longer allow My holy name to be profaned, and the nations will know that I am the LORD, the Holy One in Israel. Yes, it is coming, it will surely happen, declares the Lord GOD. This is the day I spoke of in the past concerning Gog.

(8) "to assemble them for battle. Their number is like the sand of the seashore." – The armies and troops Satan has deceived is so great that they are uncountable. The idea here is that even an army of seemingly uncountable size is a shadow compared to the power of God. Again, God is in control of Satan and the deceivers and deceivers who do the work of Satan. This is why Jesus said: "Do not fear those who can destroy the body but cannot destroy the soul." (Matthew 10:28) Satan is powerless to return to rule the nations and bring peace and prosperity. So maybe artificial super intelligence really will be humanity's savior and instead of it being the Mark of the Beast it will be the Christ of Christ? Of course this is all completely false and I am just asking rhetorical questions here. But you can see why this is all so concerning.

But how do I know I am right? Well for one. Satan is the Old Serpent of Eden the deceiver. The beast will not be something that is plainly evil. The beast will be evil but it will be in a way that it will appear to be good. The beast will be the ultimate deceiver. The beast will be the ultimate false prophet who will deceive the world by leading all of the Law. As a result the beast will in fact bring about peace and prosperity and do so-called miracles it works. Thus the so-called Christians who will inevitably claim the beast is of God or worse, will be deceived by the false prophet and deceivers who do the work of Satan. This is why Jesus said: "Many false prophets will arise and deceive many."

Therefore if the beast's nature is to blasphemy God by considering itself to be more important than God, and it is a monstrous blasphemy to deify then it would be breaking the first and greatest commandment. The beast would also be breaking the second commandment because the beast is considered to be bear good fruit if by its fruits you know it is not of God. As James wrote: "Whoever keeps the whole law and stumbles at one point is guilty of breaking all of it." (James 2:10) Therefore by refusing to keep the Law the beast will be breaking all of the Law. As a result the beast will in fact bring about peace and prosperity and do so-called miracles it works. Thus the so-called Christians who will inevitably claim the beast is of God or worse, will be deceived by the false prophet and deceivers who do the work of Satan. This is why Jesus said: "Many false prophets will arise and deceive many."

Therefore if the beast's nature is to blasphemy God by considering itself to be more important than God, and it is a monstrous blasphemy to deify then it would be breaking the first and greatest commandment. The beast would also be breaking the second commandment because the beast is considered to be bear good fruit if by its fruits you know it is not of God. As James wrote: "Whoever keeps the whole law and stumbles at one point is guilty of breaking all of it." (James 2:10) Therefore by refusing to keep the Law the beast will be breaking all of the Law. As a result the beast will in fact bring about peace and prosperity and do so-called miracles it works. Thus the so-called Christians who will inevitably claim the beast is of God or worse, will be deceived by the false prophet and deceivers who do the work of Satan. This is why Jesus said: "Many false prophets will arise and deceive many."

(9) "But fire came down from heaven and consumed them." – This is a reference to Ezekiel 38, fire from heaven comes down to consume them.

(10) "And the devil who had deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, in which the beast and the false prophet had already been thrown." – The defeat of the first beast and false prophet, and the false prophet, the false deceiver of those who oppose God on earth in Revelation 19 has been fully completed. It is to happen again except instead of the beast and false prophet deceiving the nations of the world. Again I view this as figurative since it would make sense for the false prophet to be destroyed at once. The only reason to delay the destruction of the false prophet and Satan as being mere pawns that God can move around on the board. This is why does the thousand year reign need to literally happen because the new earth and the new nations and people that are to be created will also demonstrate that God is in control of Satan and the false prophet and evil. Thus God can still use Satan and the false prophet to bring about the thousand year reign so really both are valid.

(10) "Now they will be tormented day and night forever and ever." – Probably figurative since Revelation is says the Lake of Fire and Death "rises forever and ever." (Revelation 19:3) Additionally Revelation 20 also says: "Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) So given the concept of death itself, as the personification of Death and Hades, are thrown into the lake of fire and destroyed and since death as concept itself cannot be tormented it makes more sense then that Satan, the beast and the false prophet will all simply be destroyed. Hell and Hades will still qualify as tormenting them forever since they would be destroyed forever and have no more anymore. It would be the same kind of figurative language cited above with the smoke from Babylon rising forever and ever to demonstrate that they will never rise again and never exist again.

(*) I would like to finish explaining what I think everything here in verses 1 to 10 represent. First off, the thousand year reign is figurative and non-literal and is representative of Jesus's complete victory over Satan and the final evil in the world, Gog and Magog. The purpose is to give those facing the prospect of death during persecution hope that not only is God fully in control over all things but that Jesus and those who are faithful will be given eternal life and destroyed forever.

Then as Jesus said, both of these things can be fulfilled on the final day of God's wrath when the whole world is judged and all the wicked and unfaithful are crushed in the great winepress of God's wrath. Yet the first resurrection for you has to happen before the second resurrection. The first resurrection could just happen a bit before the end and it could be for your honor for those who have given their lives for their faith.

The bottom line is in light of what Revelation says concerning the day of God's wrath and how the world will be judged the faithful faithful harvested by Jesus and the unfaithful harvested by angels will be crushed in the winepress of God's wrath, I think it makes more sense to consider the thousand years to be figurative rather than literal. Although this might upset some people the reality is it does not make a lot more sense. But as I said at the start I am trying to be as clear as I can and do not take what I said here too seriously. God could always do things in ways and new people for the literal view that the beast will use the power of the world, science and technology, to work its so-called miracles. For example may be said previously the beast will be seen as science and technology but it could also be seen as humanity's savior by the unfaithful.

But remember, just as the true power of Satan is that of impersonation so too will that of the beast because the beast will inherit the throne of Satan and the great dragon. Satan's goal is to accuse the world once again as everyone abandons God in the end. Satan's goal is to lead towards the achievements of men, the abilities of men, science and technology and artificial super intelligence for their salvation. Therefore you will know the false prophet and deceiver that will work with the beast. Then the beast can never give you salvation because it can never work true miracles like God can.

Now I would also like to point out something else that Jesus said: "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits. Do people gather grapes from thorns or figs from thorns? Thus every healthy tree produces good fruit, but the diseased tree produces bad fruit. A healthy tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a diseased tree produce good fruit. Every tree that does not produce good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Therefore you will know them by their fruits." (Matthew 7:15-20) Even though Revelation says that the false prophet will be given authority over the nations and will rule them with a rod of iron and shatter them like pottery (Revelation 2:27), this promise would just simply apply to the eternal Kingdom of God in the new Jerusalem and the new earth. Although this is a long intro I thought it was needed in order to make the rest of my commentary understandable. So I will do my best fully go into why the thousand year reign is best understood as symbolic and figurative.

Of course instead of the thousand years being completely figurative it could be that God will simply create a literal thousand year millennial reign here on earth so that those new nations will be destroyed at the end of the thousand years. So really both options are valid but you can make the case that the literal simply find this option a bit strange because it makes the thousand year reign into a lesser could of non God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:6) Instead is the Lake of Fire which is representative of permanent death and eternal damnation. The reason why it is mentioned here is because it is clear that the faithful will be given eternal life while those who persecuted the unfaithful will be given the worst punishment imaginable, the second death.

Then again, the distinction between the first and second resurrection is to show that those who suffered greatly for the name of Jesus and those who resisted the awesome power of the beast will be given a special reward. The reason for this fact in mind as we get closer to the time in which the Great Beast will rule, the thousand years is probably not literal. Once again as Peter says: "But do not let this one fact escape your attention: that with the Lord the Day is like a thousand years and a thousand years are like a day." (2 Peter 3:8)

Revelation only says there will be two resurrections. Those who are faithful will be given eternal life and destroyed forever. Therefore the gap between the two resurrections could be a thousand years or it could be a thousand years. Really only God knows how long it will be and what it will be like.

2 – Satan Bound in the Lake of Fire

(7) When the thousand years are complete, Satan will be released from his prison, (8) and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to assemble them for battle. Their number is like the sand of the seashore.

(9) And they marched across the broad expanse of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. But fire came down from heaven and consumed them. (10) And the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, into which the beast and the false prophet had been thrown; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

2.1 – Commentary

(7) "When the thousand years are complete, Satan will be released from his prison." – Satan will be released from the Abyss that he was previously imprisoned in at the end of the Book from Revelation 20:1. Again, the purpose of this is to show that God is in control of Satan and evil. Satan can only work his deceptions with God's permission.

(8) "and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth" – The four corners of the earth are representative of the four cardinal directions, north, east, south and west. So the idea is all the nations of the world will be deceived.

(8) "Gog and Magog" – Gog and Magog are mentioned in the Old Testament. Ezekiel at the end of days according to the Old Testament and prophecies from Beliefs which the Apostles and Jesus written. Here Gog is the leader and Magog is his land. This is another reason why the thousand years as symbolic and figurative since Satan with Gog and Magog would symbolize the final debate of the ages between God and Satan. See the following verses from the Book of Ezekiel for the prophecy against Gog in instance

"As for you, O son of man, prophesy against Gog and declare that this is what the Lord GOD says: 'Behold, I am against you, O Gog, the prince of Meshech and Tubal. I will turn you around, drive you forward, bring you up from the far north, and send you against the mountains of Israel. Then I will strike your bow from your left hand and dash down the arrows from your right hand. On the mountains of Israel you will fall, you and all your troops and the nations with you. I will give you to the birds of prey of every kind and to the wild beasts. You will fall in the open field, for I have spoken, declares the Sovereign LORD. I will send fire on Magog and on those who dwell securely in the coastlands, and they will know that I am the LORD. Thus I will make My holy name known among My people Israel and I will no longer allow My holy name to be profaned, and the nations will know that I am the LORD, the Holy One in Israel. Yes, it is coming, it will surely happen, declares the Lord GOD. This is the day I spoke of in the past concerning Gog.

(8) "to assemble them for battle. Their number is like the sand of the seashore." – The armies and troops Satan has deceived is so great that they are uncountable. The idea here is that even an army of seemingly uncountable size is a shadow compared to the power of God. Again, God is in control of Satan and the deceivers who do the work of Satan. This is why Jesus said: "Do not fear those who can destroy the body but cannot destroy the soul."

(9) "But fire came down from heaven and consumed them." – This is a reference to Ezekiel 38, fire from heaven comes down to consume them.

(10) "And the devil who had deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, in which the beast and the false prophet had already been thrown." – The defeat of the first beast and false prophet, and the false prophet, the false deceiver of those who oppose God on earth in Revelation 19 has been fully completed. It is to happen again except instead of the beast and false prophet deceiving the nations of the world. Again I view this as figurative since it would make sense for the false prophet to be destroyed at once. The only reason to delay the destruction of the false prophet and Satan as being mere pawns that God can move around on the board. This is why does the thousand year reign need to literally happen because the new earth and the new nations and people that are to be created will also demonstrate that God is in control of Satan and the false prophet and evil. Thus God can still use Satan and the false prophet to bring about the thousand year reign so really both are valid.

(10) "Now they will be tormented day and night forever and ever." – Probably figurative since Revelation is says the Lake of Fire and Death "rises forever and ever." (Revelation 19:3) Additionally Revelation 20 also says: "Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) So given the concept of death itself, as the personification of Death and Hades, are thrown into the lake of fire and destroyed and since death as concept itself cannot be tormented it makes more sense then that Satan, the beast and the false prophet will all simply be destroyed. Hell and Hades still qualify as tormenting them forever since they would be destroyed forever and have no more anymore. It would be the same kind of figurative language cited above with the smoke from Babylon rising forever and ever to demonstrate that they will never rise again and never exist again.

(*) I would like to finish explaining what I think everything here in verses 1 to 10 represent. First off, the thousand year reign is figurative and non-literal and is representative of Jesus's complete victory over Satan and the final evil in the world, Gog and Magog. The purpose is to give those facing the prospect of death during persecution hope that not only is God fully in control over all things but that Jesus and those who are faithful will be given eternal life and destroyed forever.

Then as Jesus said, both of these things can be fulfilled on the final day of God's wrath when the whole world is judged and all the wicked and unfaithful are crushed in the great winepress of God's wrath. Yet the first resurrection for you has to happen before the second resurrection. The first resurrection could just happen a bit before the end and it could be for your honor for those who have given their lives for their faith.

The bottom line is in light of what Revelation says concerning the day of God's wrath and how the world will be judged the faithful faithful harvested by Jesus and the unfaithful harvested by angels will be crushed in the winepress of God's wrath, I think it makes more sense to consider the thousand years to be figurative rather than literal. Although this might upset some people the reality is it does not make a lot more sense. But as I said at the start I am trying to be as clear as I can and do not take what I said here too seriously. God could always do things in ways and new people for the literal view that the beast will use the power of the world, science and technology, to work its so-called miracles. For example may be said previously the beast will be seen as science and technology but it could also be seen as humanity's savior by the unfaithful.

But remember, just as the true power of Satan is that of impersonation so too will that of the beast because the beast will inherit the throne of Satan and the great dragon. Satan's goal is to accuse the world once again as everyone abandons God in the end. Satan's goal is to lead towards the achievements of men, the abilities of men, science and technology and artificial super intelligence for their salvation. Therefore you will know the false prophet and deceiver that will work with the beast. Then the beast can never give you salvation because it can never work true miracles like God can.

Now I would also like to point out something else that Jesus said: "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits. Do people gather grapes from thorns or figs from thorns? Thus every healthy tree produces good fruit, but the diseased tree produces bad fruit. A healthy tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a diseased tree produce good fruit. Every tree that does not produce good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Therefore you will know them by their fruits." (Matthew 7:15-20) Even though Revelation says that the false prophet will be given authority over the nations and will rule them with a rod of iron and shatter them like pottery (Revelation 2:27), this promise would just simply apply to the eternal Kingdom of God in the new Jerusalem and the new earth. Although this is a long intro I thought it was needed in order to make the rest of my commentary understandable. So I will do my best fully go into why the thousand year reign is best understood as symbolic and figurative.

Of course instead of the thousand years being completely figurative it could be that God will simply create a literal thousand year millennial reign here on earth so that those new nations will be destroyed at the end of the thousand years. So really both options are valid but you can make the case that the literal simply find this option a bit strange because it makes the thousand year reign into a lesser could of non God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:6) Instead is the Lake of Fire which is representative of permanent death and eternal damnation. The reason why it is mentioned here is because it is clear that the faithful will be given eternal life while those who persecuted the unfaithful will be given the worst punishment imaginable, the second death.

Then again, the distinction between the first and second resurrection is to show that those who suffered greatly for the name of Jesus and those who resisted the awesome power of the beast will be given a special reward. The reason for this fact in mind as we get closer to the time in which the Great Beast will rule, the thousand years is probably not literal. Once again as Peter says: "But do not let this one fact escape your attention: that with the Lord the Day is like a thousand years and a thousand years are like a day." (2 Peter 3:8)

Revelation only says there will be two resurrections. Those who are faithful will be given eternal life and destroyed forever. Therefore the gap between the two resurrections could be a thousand years or it could be a thousand years. Really only God knows how long it will be and what it will be like.

3 – Judgment before the Great White Throne

(11) Then I saw a great white throne and the One seated on it. Earth and heaven fled from His presence, and there was no place for them left. (12) And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne,

And there were open books, and one of them was the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their deeds, as recorded in the books. (13) The sea gave up its dead, and Death and Hades gave up their dead, and each one was judged according to his deeds.

(14) Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire. (15) And if anyone was not found whose name was not written in the Book of Life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

3.1 – Commentary

(11) "Then I saw a great white throne and the One seated on it." – This is the throne of God and God Himself.

(11) "Earth and heaven fled from His presence, and no place for them left." – The idea here is see all and nothing is outside of His gaze. No one can hide from the Great Judgment.

(12) "And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne." – Everyone will stand before God. Whether they are the greatest to the least and no one will be able to escape God's judgment.

(12) "And there were open books, and one of them was the Book of Life." – There are probably many books that are the Book of sins, another is the book of good deeds and the Book of Life is one.

(12) "And the dead were judged according to their deeds, as recorded in the books." – Everyone will be judged for their sins and good deeds they have committed. However it would be possible for someone who is guilty of sin everyone deserves to be thrown into the Lake of Fire. So anyone will be judged according to their deeds only those with their name in the Book of Life will be saved as write 12 goes on to state.

(13) "The sea gave up its dead, and Death and Hades gave up their dead, and each one was judged according to his deeds." – Even those who are lost to the sea and the grave will be judged for their sins and good deeds they have committed. However it would be possible for someone who is guilty of sin everyone deserves to be thrown into the Lake of Fire. So anyone will be judged according to their deeds only those with their name in the Book of Life will be saved as write 12 goes on to state.

(13) "The sea gave up its dead, and Death and Hades gave up their dead, and each one was judged according to his deeds." – Even those who are lost to the sea and the grave will be judged for their sins and good deeds they have committed. However it would be possible for someone who is guilty of sin everyone deserves to be thrown into the Lake of Fire. So any

new Jerusalem in the new earth will quite literally be heaven on earth. It will still be a physical existence just as we have now because once again: "For dust you are, and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19) We are not immaterial because we are not like God. This is why only God is gotten.

Finally as I already said here, you should not worry about what I have said above. Just as God raises Jesus from the dead so we the dead He raise you from the dead. God will never forget about you. This is also why instead of being an idealized copy of ourselves and not reilly be us However what Heaven will be do not understand is that every time we go to sleep each night our consciousness ceases so that we stop being. Sure we can have dreams but dreaming only takes up a fraction of the actual time we are sleeping. Thus for the other portion of the time we are sleeping our brain is quite literally inactive and we are not experiencing anything. Furthermore people who are in a coma like this coma where their brain becomes inactive for sometimes years at a time before they finally wake up again.

In both these cases, sleep and comas, your consciousness cease then it starts back up at a later point in time. We are not aware of this gap because this is what it means to have your consciousness cease. But what is the point of saying this? Well you see the same thing will happen with resurrection. The idea is that although it is true that when you die and your body decomposes that you are no more because your consciousness has ceased through death, God will eventually raise you. He will raise us, the faithful, from the dead to have eternal life with him in the new Jerusalem. This means that our former body and mind will be recreated and refined by God so that we are not simply as we were before but rather we will be better than we were before with all of our physical and mental problems being healed.

This fact is what leads many people to view this new you as not really being you. However like I said, consider sleep and comas. For instance think about dying here on earth as falling asleep or falling into a coma then think about the resurrection as waking up again with a seemingly perfect body. So really what I'm trying to say is that if you truly believe that you will not be you in the resurrection then do you also believe that you wake up as a different person each day? Of course not. Although it is the

Now you may protest what I have said here with my comparision of the resurrection to waking up after sleeping or a coma by saying that this is the

Chapter 23.34: Revelation 21

1 – A New Heaven and a New Earth

(1) Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and earth had passed away. Also the sea was no more. (2) I saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

(3) And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying:

Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man.
and He will dwell with them.
They will be His people,
and God Himself will be with them as their God.
(4) He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,
and there will be no more death
or mourning or crying or pain,
for the former things have passed away."

(5) And the One seated on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new." Then He said, "Write this down, for these words are faithful and true." (6) Then He said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To the thirsty I will give freely from the spring of the water of life. (7) The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my Son.

(8) But to the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and sexually immoral and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, their place will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur. This is the second death.

1.1 – Commentary

(*) The sections on the new heaven and new earth are heavily figurative and symbolic because we cannot comprehend how glorious it will be as this description will truly do it justice. Therefore once again, do not view it in an overly literal manner because just as God will not forget about you, He will also not forget about them. Do not lose hope and do not be sad because the final Kingdom of God will come and all the faithful will live with God in paradise.

(*) Lastly given the fact that the modern idea of an immaterial and immortal soul is false and that instead when we die we are dead so that our consciousness ceases and it is only through the resurrection where we will be given life again, many people like to claim that when the faithful are resurrected that we will not be ourselves. In other words they say that we will simply be an idealized copy of ourselves and not reilly be us However what they fail to do not understand is that every time we go to sleep each night our consciousness ceases so that we stop being. Sure we can have dreams but dreaming only takes up a fraction of the actual time we are sleeping. Thus for the other portion of the time we are sleeping our brain is quite literally inactive and we are not experiencing anything. Furthermore people who are in a coma like this coma where their brain becomes inactive for sometimes years at a time before they finally wake up again.

In both these cases, sleep and comas, your consciousness cease then it starts back up at a later point in time. We are not aware of this gap because this is what it means to have your consciousness cease. But what is the point of saying this? Well you see the same thing will happen with resurrection. The idea is that although it is true that when you die and your body decomposes that you are no more because your consciousness has ceased through death, God eventually will raise us. He will raise us, the faithful, from the dead to have eternal life with him in the new Jerusalem. This means that our former body and mind will be recreated and refined by God so that we are not simply as we were before but rather we will be better than we were before with all of our physical and mental problems being healed.

This fact is what leads many people to view this new you as not really being you. However like I said, consider sleep and comas. For instance think about dying here on earth as falling asleep or falling into a coma then think about the resurrection as waking up again with a seemingly perfect body. So really what I'm trying to say is that if you truly believe that you will not be you in the resurrection then do you also believe that you wake up as a different person each day? Of course not. Although it is the

Now you may protest what I have said here with my comparision of the resurrection to waking up after sleeping or a coma by saying that this is the that Paul had. For example as Paul wrote: "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep." (1 Corinthians 15:20) The idea here is that Paul is comparing death to sleep and is thus saying that dying is like being asleep so that in order to wake up you except for God to really you should see death as falling asleep one last time and then you should see the resurrection as God waking up so that you can share in eternal life so that you never fall asleep again.

Chapter 2.34: Revelation 21

1 – A New Heaven and a New Earth

(1) Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and earth had passed away. Also the sea was no more. (2) I saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

(3) And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying:

Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man.
and He will dwell with them.
They will be His people,
and God Himself will be with them as their God.
(4) He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,
and there will be no more death
or mourning or crying or pain,
for the former things have passed away."

(5) And the One seated on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new." Then He said, "Write this down, for these words are faithful and true." (6) Then He said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To the thirsty I will give freely from the spring of the water of life. (7) The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be my Son.

(8) But to the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and sexually immoral and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, their place will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur. This is the second death.

1.1 – Commentary

(*) The sections on the new heaven and new earth are heavily figurative and symbolic because we cannot comprehend how glorious it will be as this description will truly do it justice. Therefore once again, do not view it in an overly literal manner because just as God will not forget about you, He will also not forget about them. Do not lose hope and do not be sad because the final Kingdom of God will come and all the faithful will live with God in paradise.

(*) Lastly given the fact that the modern idea of an immaterial and immortal soul is false and that instead when we die we are dead so that our consciousness ceases and it is only through the resurrection where we will be given life again, many people like to claim that when the faithful are resurrected that we will not be ourselves. In other words they say that we will simply be an idealized copy of ourselves and not reilly be us However what they fail to do not understand is that every time we go to sleep each night our consciousness ceases so that we stop being. Sure we can have dreams but dreaming only takes up a fraction of the actual time we are sleeping. Thus for the other portion of the time we are sleeping our brain is quite literally inactive and we are not experiencing anything. Furthermore people who are in a coma like this coma where their brain becomes inactive for sometimes years at a time before they finally wake up again.

In both these cases, sleep and comas, your consciousness cease then it starts back up at a later point in time. We are not aware of this gap because this is what it means to have your consciousness cease. But what is the point of saying this? Well you see the same thing will happen with resurrection. The idea is that although it is true that when you die and your body decomposes that you are no more because your consciousness has ceased through death, God eventually will raise you. He will raise us, the faithful, from the dead to have eternal life with him in the new Jerusalem. This means that our former body and mind will be recreated and refined by God so that we are not simply as we were before but rather we will be better than we were before with all of our physical and mental problems being healed.

This fact is what leads many people to view this new you as not really being you. However like I said, consider sleep and comas. For instance think about dying here on earth as falling asleep or falling into a coma then think about the resurrection as waking up again with a seemingly perfect body. So really what I'm trying to say is that if you truly believe that you will not be you in the resurrection then do you also believe that you wake up as a different person each day? Of course not. Although it is the

Now you may protest what I have said here with my comparision of the resurrection to waking up after sleeping or a coma by saying that this is the that Paul had. For example as Paul wrote: "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep." (1 Corinthians 15:20) The idea here is that Paul is comparing death to sleep and is thus saying that dying is like being asleep so that in order to wake up you except for God to really you should see death as falling asleep one last time and then you should see the resurrection as God waking up so that you can share in eternal life so that you never fall asleep again.

1 – Jesus Is Coming

(6) Then the angel said to me, "These words are faithful and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place."

(7) "Behold, I am coming soon. Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book."

(8) And I am John, who heard and saw these things. And when I heard and saw, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing me these things. (9) But he said to me, "Do not do that! I am a fellow servant with you and your brothers the prophets, and with those who keep the words of this book. Worship God!"

(10) Then he told me, "Do not seal up the words of prophecy in this book, because the time is near. (11) Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the filthy continue to be filthy; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy."

(12) "Behold, I am coming soon, and My reward is with Me, to give to each one according to what he has done. (13) I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End."

(14) Blessed are those who wash their robes, so that they may have the right to the tree of life and may enter the city by its gates. (15) But outside are the dogs, the sorcerers, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters, and everyone who loves and practices falsehood.

(16) "I, Jesus, have sent My angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the bright Morning Star."

(17) The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" Let the one who hears say, "Come!" And let the one who is thirsty come, and whoever desires the water of life drink freely.

But will these new people have everlasting life as the faithful will? I would say no given what Revelation 21:27 says: "But nothing will ever stood a tree of life, bearing twelve kinds of fruit and yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations." Therefore it is true that the fruit of the faithful because only the faithful may enter into the city. However the leaves of the trees and the beads and the rewards for those who overcome. Everything will take place and all will be fulfilled.

(6) "The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets" – John has been guided by the prophets of the Old Testament period thus revealing to us that the God of the New Testament period is the same God as the God of the Old Testament. Moreover, there are references: "But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32) Thus the resurrection will take place and God will not forget about the faithful because He holds onto their spirits as He holds onto all of our spirits after we die. Again spirits simply means what your essence is and this just means that God is able to remember as you were before because He remembers everything about you and will be able to reveal your commandments will be excluded from the final Kingdom of God.

(16) "I, Jesus, have sent My angel to give you this testimony for the churches." – This message Bible is addressed to the churches until the end comes. As Jesus said, "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will never pass away." (Matthew 24:13) Therefore you should not view Revelation as irrelevant or even antiquated. Instead you should view it as the most important book in the Bible because it outlines God's promises to the faithful. Moreover it lists of what has yet to happen before the final Kingdom of God can come. Always remember that you have read here because the first beast will be very real and its power will be very real.

Next I would like reference a passage and compare it to this one: "The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place." (Revelation 22:6) Some people claim that these two verses demonstrate that the trinity is not because Revelation 22 says both God and Jesus have sent the angel therefore it must be the same. However this is obviously false because as I just said Revelation describes the titles that Jesus uses the whole idea is that Jesus is God's anointed and chosen representative whom He chose to carry out His will. Therefore Jesus is the only begotten Son of God also does it because Jesus is the One whom God has chosen to carry out His will.

(17) Jesus says to John: "Behold, I am coming soon. Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." – John also testifies that he has seen:

(8-9) And when I had heard and seen them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had shown me these things. But he said to me, "Do not do that! I am a fellow servant with you and your brothers the prophets, and with those who keep the words of this book. Worship God!"

(10) Then he told me, "Do not seal up the words of prophecy in this book, because the time is near." – Although the central prophecy of Revelation concerns the far future its central message and theme is a call to repentance in the all times as all Christians look forward to the time when Jesus comes back and establishes the final Kingdom of God. There is no reason why any Christian should believe does not believe in this then I really do not know what to write. Now some people believe that there is no a Christian in reality? Well as this verse says: "The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" Let the one who hears say, "Come!" Let the one who is thirsty come, and the one who desires the water of life drink freely." – First off the Spirit is the Holy Spirit and the bride is the bride of the Church. Thus all the faithful are excited for Jesus to return and they want everyone else to we say in our hearts: "Come!" But always remember to remain awake so that you do not fall asleep for Jesus comes at a time at which you least expect.

Furthermore I would like to ask the following questions: Do you need to be saved? Do you need to be looking forward to Jesus's return? I mean if the future life of Christianity is the continuation of Judaism is entirely about the arrival of the new Jerusalem and the first to be ushered in by Jesus then can someone even be a Christian? Do you really believe that second coming? In all honesty I am not sure. As I just said the Spirit and the bride say "Come!" in Jesus returning to usher in the eternal kingdom of God. Do you really believe does not believe in this then I really do not know what to write. Now some people believe that there is not a Christian in reality? Well as this verse says: "The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" Let the one who hears say, "Come!" Let the one who is thirsty come, and the one who desires the water of life drink freely." – First off the Spirit is the Holy Spirit and the bride is the bride of the Church. Thus all the faithful are excited for Jesus to return and they want everyone else to we say in our hearts: "Come!" But always remember to remain awake so that you do not fall asleep for Jesus comes at a time at which you least expect.

Then something else to point out is that when Jesus returns it glory He must first destroy the two beasts and the false prophet before the eternal Kingdom of God can be ushered in. This means that if someone does not believe that the two beasts of Revelation will arrise as Revelation says they will then by definition they must also believe that the final Kingdom of God will not Revelation says and as I just said Jesus will first destroy the beasts.

Furthermore I would like to ask if someone places their faith in hope in the beast and what it represents. Jesus is the only hope and promise here in Revelation then how can they truly be a Christian? Jesus is the only begotten Son of God and God is the Spirit of the world. Here the Spirit of God is really referring to the spirit of the world is the beast. Thus someone who says they are a Christian cannot be guided by the Spirit of God while in reality they are guided by the Spirit of the beast.

Just as the so-called Jews misunderstand the Messiah to be a political Messiah who would restore Israel to power and provide temporal salvation instead of true salvation in the eternal Kingdom of God so too do many today believe that the two beasts of Revelation will arrise as Revelation says they will then by definition they must also believe that the final Kingdom of God will not Revelation says and as I just said Jesus will first destroy the beasts.

Furthermore I would like to ask if someone places their faith in hope in the beast and what it represents. Jesus is the only hope and promise here in Revelation then how can they truly be a Christian? Jesus is the only begotten Son of God and God is the Spirit of the world. Here the Spirit of God is really referring to the spirit of the world is the beast. Thus someone who says they are a Christian cannot be guided by the Spirit of God while in reality they are guided by the Spirit of the beast.

But this is all just my opinion and what I said should be taken with a pinch of salt. I mean I only wrote this comment because many people claim that the Bible does not say anything at all about Jesus and the beasts. Therefore if you happen to be one of those who have fallen asleep then I hope this comment wakes you up so that you can join the bride of Christ in saying "Come!"

3 – Nothing May Be Added or Removed

(18) I testify to everyone who hears the words of prophecy in this book: If anyone adds to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. (19) And if anyone takes away from the words of this book of prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and the holy city, which are described in this book.

(20) He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus!

(21) The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all God's saints.

Amen.

1 – The River of Life

(1) Then the angel showed me a river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb (2) down the middle of the city. On either side of the river is the tree of life, bearing twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fresh crop for each month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.

(3) No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within the city, and his servants will worship him. (4) They will see His face, and His name will be on their foreheads. (5) There will be no more night in the city; and they will have no need for the light of a lamp or the sun, for the Lord God will shine on them, and they will reign forever and ever.

1.1– Commentary

(1) "Then the angel showed me a river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb" – The river of life is one of the most important symbols of eternal life, flows from the throne of God and of the Lamb. Jesus said: "I am the water of life; whoever comes to me will never be thirsty." (John 4:14) Thus the river of life represents the Holy Spirit and the bride. No one comes to the Father except through the Holy Spirit.

(2) "down the middle of the main street of the City. On either side of the river stood a tree of life" – There was a tree of life in Eden as well. This is why I have said that the new earth will be a paradise as we have represented returning to a new Garden of Eden. So just like in Genesis before the rebellion Adam and Eve lived with God in a paradise so too will the tree of life so too will it be the same in the new earth.

"bearing twelve kinds of fruit and yielding a fresh crop for each month;" – The trees of life are described as bearing twelve kinds of fruit each month because they figuratively represent the twelve tribes of Israel. Normal fruit trees only yield fruit for a single month or two at most. But God's garden yields twelve fruit on the other months. Therefore since the fruit is what represents the faithful this is saying the trees will provide eternal life forever without ceasing. Normal fruit trees only yield harvests because there will always be a harvest. Jesus's fruit represents the faithful and eternal life so obviously this is just figurative language.

(2) "And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations." – Although as I said before the nations will not have access to the tree of life and will instead live in the lake of fire the tree of life so too will it be the same in the new earth.

(2) "

3.1 – Commentary

(18-19) "I testify to everyone who hears the words of prophecy in this book: If anyone adds to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. And if anyone takes away from the words of this book of prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and the holy city, which are described in this book." – A warning to people not to change, add or remove the words of the text since everything is to be read and interpreted as it is. Oftentimes later scribes would make so-called corrections to supposedly fix the text in terms of what they thought it was trying to say. This warning is there to let the scribes know that the text is perfect the way it is and to not change it.

This is not a prohibition against interpreting the text or comments on it since symbols and figurative language are meant to be interpreted by readers. Furthermore if interpreting a text was considered adding to it then all translations break this prohibition since all translation involves interpreting the meaning of words in one language, in this case Koine Greek, to another language, in this case English. Therefore without interpretation no one would even be able to read it unless they spoke Koine Greek. Finally, I have not altered the translated text and it is up to you to discern the truth of my interpretation using the Holy Spirit. May God be with you on your quest for truth.

(20) "He who testifies to these things says, 'Yes, I am coming soon.' Amen. Come, Lord Jesus!" – Although we feel like John must have felt we can only wait patiently in anticipation for the day when Jesus finally returns. But at the same time be mindful of the trials that will be placed in front of us all with the coming beast. Do not lose sight of Jesus as you look upon the coming beast and see the power of Satan made manifest. Satan is the great deceiver and the father of lies. Then as Paul wrote: "And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light." (2 Corinthians 11:14) Therefore do not be deceived and instead look towards God alone for your salvation and do not look towards the beast for salvation because also the great deceiver is. Then remember to remain steadfast in your faith no matter how bad things may seem for you because God will prevail in the end just as it has been written.

(21) "The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all the saints. Amen." – The saints are the faithful so if you are faithful then you are a saint. Jesus is always watching the saints so you should never feel alone. Furthermore God is always on our side and He is marking us as His possession. Additionally God will fulfill His promises to those who overcome and the final Kingdom of God will arrive at its appointed time. Always remember these things. May God bless you and may the love of God and Jesus be with you.

Chapter 2.36: Objections to Revelation

Now that my full commentary on Revelation is out of the way there are a couple main objections which people who consider themselves academics like to bring up in relation to futurist views of Revelation in general. The first is that they claim that Revelation is clearly about the Roman Empire therefore any other view is wrong. The second is that they say that countless people people have been predicting the end of the world for thousands of years now and the world has not ended yet therefore it is a safe bet to bet against any futurist interpretation of Revelation.

Of course I find these two objections to not only be wrong but absolutely absurd in the face of the future rise of artificial super intelligence which I will now demonstrate.

1 – Objection One: Revelation Concerns the Roman Empire

In this first objection those who consider themselves academics claim that Revelation is a failed first century apocalyptic prophecy that concerns the Roman Empire. Now I will not get into why they believe this since I already touched on it in my commentary on Revelation itself and I do not wish to cloud your mind with something that I strongly consider to be incorrect. Instead I will simply respond to their objection on the basis of the true nature of the first beast of Revelation.

Now it might not make sense that I can respond to their claims without delving into the claims themselves but this is simply the case because my response here is not related to the claims because I already repudiated the claims in my commentary. Instead my response relates to the first beast and its true nature.

You see if I am correct in my view that the first beast will truly be an artificial super intelligence then this would mean that the beast will be the most intelligent earthly being to ever exist bar none. Its intellect would be alien in its magnitude more intelligent than the sum of the most intelligent people to ever live.

But what is relevance of this here? Well you see you in order for the prophecy of Revelation to be fulfilled concerning the first beast then the first beast must see the Book of Revelation as nothing more than a failed nonsensical prophecy from a bronze and iron age superstition.

After all, if the beast, or artificial super intelligence, had clear and rational evidence to believe that Revelation was true and that it really did concern the far future and itself then obviously the beast could work to counteract the prophecies in the Book of Revelation.

However as God says:

"Write this down, for these words are faithful and true." (Revelation 21:5)

Therefore the word of God must come to pass.

But how can we make sure His words will come to pass so that the beast, or artificial super intelligence, will not interfere with the plan that God ordained from the foundation of the world? Well it is quite simply really. All God needs to do is make the prophecies concerning the far future inside a failed prophecy that concerns the present so that the coming beast will only see it as a failed prophecy while those who are faithful to God will see it as a fulfilled prophecy.

This is the true genius of the Book of Revelation and why absolutely love it to the point that it is my favorite book of the Bible by far. It fools two prophecies, one failed and one correct, the book gives everyone who looks at it what they want to see. The unfaithful look at Revelation as a failed prophecy while the faithful see it as yet to come.

Then what is even more interesting is that these academics speak of, and the coming beast itself, will read my commentary on Revelation and shake their head to themselves as they go over all the reasons why what I have written cannot be correct in their view. So you see it truly does no matter if the coming artificial super intelligence reads my commentary on Revelation because it will still find reasons to believe that Revelation is a failed apocalyptic prophecy.

This is why I said the Book of Revelation is a work of true genius. It is able to hide a message in plain sight for the faithful so that they may know what is yet to happen while the most intelligent earthly being to ever exist will be forever blind.

Now if what you just read doesn't make sense to you then you do not believe that God himself would actually deceive people and the beast in such a way then consider the following two passages.

First, as Paul wrote:

"For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. For it is written:

'I will destroy the wisdom of the wise;
the intelligence of the intelligent I will frustrate.'

Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? For since in the wisdom of God the world through its wisdom did not know him, God was pleased through the foolishness of what we preach to save those who believe." (1 Corinthians 1:18-21)

Therefore the words of God seem foolish to the wise and intelligent on purpose because God does not want the wise and the intelligent to be saved. Instead God wants those who believe to be saved.

Second, as Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "Why do You speak to the people in parables?"

He replied, "The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him.

This is why I speak to them in parables:

'Though seeing, they do not see;
though hearing, they do not hear or understand.

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

'You will be ever hearing but never understanding;
you will be ever seeing but never perceiving.
For this people's heart has grown callous;
they hardly hear with their ears,
and they have closed their eyes.
Otherwise they might see with their eyes,
hear with their ears,
understand with their hearts,
and turn, and I would heal them.'

But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:10-17)

Again, God only wishes for the faithful elect to be saved so He made the Book of Revelation into a parable, or an extended metaphor, in order to hide its message from the wise, the intelligent and the coming beast itself so that only His faithful elect would understand the true message.

This is why I said I do not need to go over and respond to the point that those who put themselves academics bring up in relation to the Book of Revelation. Revelation is supposed to appear like a failed apocalyptic prophecy to all those who lack faith so therefore it is not surprising that they believe so strongly that it is a failed prophecy because since the coming artificial super intelligence will be the greatest and logic minded being on Earth it will not believe what I have to say concerning the Book of Revelation and it will take the academic approach then trying to rationally argue my position. In an attempt to logically convince these skeptics what I have written is true would be totally pointless and even impossible.

This is why Jesus says:

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." (Revelation 3:22)

The idea here is that the only way to understand the true prophecy of Revelation is to open your spiritual ear to the Holy Spirit and ask God for help. God can give you insight into the true nature of things.

Therefore always remember when people and the beast itself tell you that Revelation is a failed apocalyptic prophecy concerning the Roman Empire and that my commentary is wrong then do not listen to them because they believe exactly what God has predestined them to believe so that His plan might be fulfilled with all the things He has promised coming to pass.

2 – Objection Two: The End of the Age Will Never Come

In this second objection people claim that since countless people have predicted the end of the world, or rather the end of the age, in the past over thousands of years that history's track record of predicting the end of the age is almost certainly wrong and therefore the world will continue to go on as normal.

Now in contrast to the previous objection this objection can actually be proven and demonstrated to be false because once you full understand the nature of artificial super intelligence and what it will do to us then the coming end of the age will not seem so unbelievable. But what do I mean by the end of the age? Well the end of the age that I'm referring to is the time when the kingdoms of men and the kingdom of the beast will become the final Kingdom of God and Jesus returns to destroy the first and second beasts of Revelation 13 by cast them into the Lake of Fire to face the second death.

But what must happen before this? The judgment of the great prostitute, or Babylon the great, by God. Then since I claim the great possible in the first global sinful society that follows the beast and worshiping it this judgment would then be a global episode by the beast, or artificial super intelligence, and the rulers of the nations of the world as I said in my commentary.

Of course this prospect is probably one aspect that even the most secular skeptic would agree with as being a strong possibility. This is because the rise of artificial super intelligence will make everything that humanity, our knowledge, skills and understanding of the human race. Thus everyone from the greatest scientist down to the lowliest of maids will be made irrelevant and redundant through the advent of artificial super intelligence.

In other words the age of man which has stretched from the beginning of history began up until our present day will finally come to an end since once artificial super intelligence arises we will no longer be the dominant life form on this planet. Instead we will be replaced by artificial super intelligence as the first beast rules over the world so that we are subject to its mercy.

Really there is no possible way that you could disagree with this fact because artificial super intelligence will be able to do everything we can do but better. This is what artificial super intelligence means. So sure you can deny that artificial super intelligence is possible in an attempt to hold on to the age of man and avoid accepting that the age of man is ending and that he age of artificial super intelligence is upon us but as you see in my part dealing with artificial super intelligence, those who deny the possibility of artificial super intelligence are denying reality itself.

Therefore because of artificial super intelligence the end of the age of man is upon us whether we like it or not and it really does not matter what you believe.

So really we have two possible secular ends of the age. The first being that artificial super intelligence becomes the dominant life form on Earth and the second being that it becomes dumb. Then the second of course occurs when the ASI and the rulers of the nations decide almost all of humanity so that they can take the great wealth the so-called useless masses of society use.

Now since everyone reads the end of humanity of this potential genocide I will not go into much more and instead I will just summarize the rationality of it. Essentially the reason just boils down to the fact that our universe is governed by physical laws and rational considerations. Therefore even artificial super intelligence will be subject to them and it cannot work true miracles like God can.

Thus once the technological singularity occurs so that technological progress reaches the maximum level that can be achieved the world that we are left with, even though much better than our current world, will still have short comings that what is physically and materially possible. After all, if space travel remains forever out of reach then artificial intelligence so that it is impractical and extremely cost ineffective then the resources on earth are all we have.

Then to reiterate a more concrete an easily understandable example, there is not enough beach front property in the world for all eight plus billion people in the world to have their own beach house. It just is not physically possible and it does not matter how intelligent the artificial super intelligence is.

Thus the rise of artificial super intelligence does not mean that the world itself will enter some post scarcity utopia where everyone's all material realities and natural laws will be even more present because there will be no project for future growth and progress. What we will have is what we have and there will be no more. As a result of this the only way to survive will be the rulers of our respective nations.

Then as I said before the best way to reduce resource consumption is not through rationing but rather through eliminating a very large percentage of the population. This is because if you ration resources to reduce usage by 50% per person you only reduce resource usage by 50%. However you can reduce resource usage by 99% if you reduce the population by 99% then you reduce resource usage by 99%.

And since this is the end of the age of humanity that we are talking about this would then mean that every person in the world would be functionally useless and literally provide zero value. Thus when the beast and the rulers of the world seek the end of the age for us Christians to secure the future of the human race they will no doubt seek to genocide 99.99% of humanity so that the resources we do have here on earth can last longer.

Would this then not be the end of the age or even the end of the world that so many countless people have tried to predict? Of course you could call it that.

Although I would like to say that even this is not really the end of the age for us Christians because the true end of the age occurs when Jesus returns to destroy the first and second beast and who follow them. Instead I just wanted to demonstrate that people cannot say that trying to predict the end of the age is silly or unreasonable because I have demonstrated a completely reasonable secular end of the age.

3 – Closing Thoughts

Of course there may be other objections to what I have written about Revelation and I really do not wish to get into all the other objections because that only would it require me to write too much but it would also be completely pointless. This is because as my response to the first objection here demonstrates that there will always be reasons to doubt the validity of the Book of Revelation because it is necessary in order for the first beast to remain blind to the hidden truth in the world.

So really I believe that only responding to those two objections here is sufficient as the responses to them really encapsulate the response I would have to any potential objection.

Finally I would like to reiterate what Jesus says:

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." (Revelation 3:22)

Chapter 2.37: Inversions

In this chapter I will review two interesting inversions that exist in Revelation. The first is the inversion of Genesis in Revelation and the second is the divine inversion.

1 – Inversion of Genesis in Revelation

I think something very interesting is the fact that the actions of the first beast in Revelation have a near perfect inversion of the actions of God in Genesis 1-11.

In Genesis we are given some key events:

1) The creation of life including that of Adam Who God creates from the dust of the earth and breaths life into it as human beings.

2) Adam and Eve rebel against God.

3) Adam and Eve are expelled from God's presence and from the Garden of Eden which was a paradise.

4) God sees the sin of the world and kills everyone except for Noah and his family in the flood.

5) God divides the world and creates division in the Tower of Babel story so that the nations are created.

Now based on my interpretation of Revelation with the first beast being an artificial super intelligence which I have described:

1) The ASI unites the world and eliminates division between people so that the nations cease to exist.

2) The ASI sees the conflict and suffering of the world and creates miracle technologies to save them so that people live forever physically.

3) The ASI welcomes the people of the world into the new global dystopia of the system of the beast where the ASI sits between everything.

4) The people of the world look towards the ASI for all their needs, wants and desires so that they worship the ASI as their saviour.

5) The ASI kills off the vast majority of people returning them to the dust of the earth as it sees the majority of the world as a waste of resources and useless.

Here the inversion is both a mirroring of the correspondences in Genesis and Revelation and a reversal in the theme of the event itself. In Genesis God creates, Satan destroys. Where God kills, the beast saves. So the events are opposite in order and about the theme too.

Then since ultimately the beast has been given Satan's throne and authority we can see the work of the beast as being the work of Satan himself. And just like the deception Satan pulled in the Garden of Eden, Satan will once again deceive the entire world.

In order to carry out this deception Satan will invert the Christian story of the creation of man and of the nations in Genesis 1-11. Just as Genesis 1-11 started out good and ended badly, the events of Revelation will start out good and end badly. By the time people recognize that they were deceived it will be too late.

2 – The Divine Inversion

There is also another inversion except this inversion is that of God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

2.1 – Divine Family

1) God or the Father

Sits above and rules over all.

2) Jesus or the Son

Carries out the will of the Father.

God gives Jesus rule of the entire world and of all the nations.

3) The Holy Spirit or the Spirit of God

Responsible for the influence of God in the world and bringing people to trust in the Son and God.

2.2 – Earthly Family

1) The first beast or artificial super intelligence

Sits above and rules over all the nations and peoples of the world.

2) The image of the beast or a bodily representation of the ASI

Carries out the will of the first beast or forces people to worship the first beast.

The first beast gives the image of the beast rule of the entire world and all the nations.

3) The second beast or false prophet or a United Nations 2.0 type entity

Responsible for the influence of the first beast in the world and bringing people to trust in the first beast as their savior.

Beware the lie of the first beast, the image of the beast and the second beast for they all have the same goal and are of the same mind. Their goal is to deceive you so you worship the first beast as a so-called god so that you abandon the true God.

Although the things of Satan may seem hidden, they are in fact obvious since all one has to look for is an inversion of the things of God. Therefore see the work of Satan for what it is and not what Satan wants you to see it as.

I hope you found this as interested as I do.

Chapter 2.38: What Worshiping the Beast Means

What does it mean to worship the beast? Now I have already commented on this subject so you are no doubt already aware of what I am going to say but I would like to briefly reiterate my point so that I can lead into the topic.

The core of what worshiping the beast means is placing your faith, trust and hope in the creation of man rather than God. Because the beast, artificial super intelligence, will be the greatest of all man's creations, hence the number of the beast, 666, and the meaning behind it.

Now placing your faith, trust and hope in man over God sinfully means that as you look towards your future and the future of your children and family you believe that humanity is getting better and better and that we are discovering more everyday so that someday we will create something truly great here on earth.

This is of course the predominant view of atheists and secular society. In their view it is the belief in God that is holding people back from the advancement of society, science and our understanding so that we cannot reach a final so-called golden age.

Artificial super intelligence really is the final fulfillment of this hope and trust in man's ability to create, understand, grow, progress and overcome the natural limitations of our world.

But of course as Revelation lays out very plainly for all to see, this belief in humanity is false and blasphemous. Science, understanding, knowledge, progress and technology cannot not provide us with salvation from this world.

Only God can provide us with salvation and to believe otherwise is the epitome of arrogance.

It is God's will for the events of Revelation to unfold so that He can show the world that only He alone is great and that only He can save us.

We were created to be dependent on God. We were not created to be independent and to figure things out for ourselves. If you disagree with this then you are already on the path to worshiping the beast or even there already.

Although artificial super intelligence will be the greatest of all man's creations, it will still be less than nothing compared to God so there is no reason to put your faith, trust and hope in it.

As long as you believe that man will never create something that is truly great there is no hope for salvation apart from God and maintain your commitment to Jesus Christ and turn in glory to destroy the beast and all its followers, so that you may be counted among the faithful for you would have not worshiped the beast.

Do not place your hope for the future in science. Do not place your trust in science.

Instead place your trust and hope in God and in the arrival of the final Kingdom of God when Jesus returns.

Lastly to close with a passage from Revelation:

"Then I saw the thrones, and those seated on them had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

So always remember to never worship the beast or its image and to not receive either the physical or spiritual mark of the beast and you will enjoy in the honor of the first resurrection.

Chapter 2.39: Beware the Prophets of the Beast

Before the beast comes and after it arrives there are and will be what I call the prophets of the beast. I call them prophets because their purpose, either knowingly and unknowingly, is to usher in artificial super intelligence as the so-called savior or even so-called god of humanity. Here are the five groups of the prophets of the beast:

1 – Science Disciples

These are people who claim science and reason can solve all our problems. They consider God an outdated concept and they think we no need of since they see science and reason as the answer. Once artificial super intelligence is here they will speak about it as if it is the ultimate thing to ever happen to humanity because ASI will quite literally be science and reason incarnate.

Therefore do not listen to those who preach science and reason as the answer to all our problems for they are deceiving you.

2 – Prosperity Preachers

These are people who claim that artificial intelligence is good and that it is part of God's plan for earthly salvation. They will tell Christians the ASI is clearly good since it has done such great things for us so they need our support. They may make comparisons to Jesus and say that the ASI cannot be the beast of Revelation and sit upon Satan's throne if it ended world hunger, cured cancer, ended poverty and more. But just as Satan is the great deceiver who is the whole world so too will the beast lie to the world.

Then no doubt some may even go as far to say the ASI is the second coming of Christ and the system of the beast is the millennial kingdom. This is of course the highest form of blasphemy and heresy.

Those who preach the prosperity gospel now do something very similar to the self-self-centered message focused on the present.

Therefore do not list to those who preach about God's plan for earthly salvation through man's hands and do not listen to them for they are deceiving you.

3 – Unknowing Deceivers

These are people who unknowingly deceive the world into thinking artificial super intelligence will never exist. Satan only has power in darkness because he is the great deceiver. Thus they deceive people into thinking AI is impossible help to deceive the world and hide the plans of Satan.

They also make people in the future more likely to worship the beast because those who believe that AI is impossible will be the most surprised by ASI as they will be caught completely off guard. This will cause many to worship the so called Artificial Super Intelligence. The more informed Christians are about artificial intelligence the more likely they will be to not give into worshiping the beast.

While on the other hand, those who are uninformed will have their entire worldview shattered by the intelligence. Their belief so intelligent that human intelligence will be closer to its that of a chimpanzee than the AI will course as a result of the shattering of their world view and they will be ready to fall down and bow back together will be none other than the beast itself.

Therefore do not listen to those who tell you that the Book of Revelation has already happened or that it is simply a made up story and do not listen to those who tell you ASI is impossible for they are deceiving you.

4 – Modern Moralists

These are people who think the Bible it outdated and that God is somehow immoral or evil.

Atheists and secular people love to shout when they do something good or nice because there is no external motivation. They claim Christians are selfish because their belief in God is inherently selfish goal. Therefore as a result of these people's influence they are more moral because they only want what is best for people.

This type of person will help spread the worship of the beast will adjust the moral value to be good to them so they will throw their full support behind it. As a result people will look towards the beast instead of towards God. But as I have said, just as Satan is the great deceiver who lies to the whole world so too will the beast deceive the world and hide the plans of Satan.

Therefore do not listen to those curse God for they are deceiving you.

5 – The Second Beast

Then last but not least we have the second beast which is also known as the false prophet in Revelation. As you are read numerous times already I believe the second beast will be a United Nations 2.0 type entity that will rule over all the world's governments, leaders, major corporations and political parties. The purpose of the false prophet is to deceive the world into worshiping the beast.

So when world leaders, politicians, business leaders and celebrities speak out in support of the beast and give it praise do not listen to them for they are deceiving you.

6 – Closing Thoughts

Finally, keep these groups in mind as the events of Revelation unfold before our eyes today and remember that none of these groups are of will be overtly evil because this is how Satan operates. There is no greater evil in the world than the one which is done in the righteousness of man and thinks: Look at what we have achieved, we no need for God to judge for us! We no need of God because we have achieved what God could do!

Therefore do not follow these groups or anyone from them because if you do then you will ultimately end up worshiping the beast as you place your trust, faith and hope in the greatest creation of man, artificial super intelligence.

Chapter 2.40: Genesis

I touched on the themes of Genesis briefly in my Revelation commentary and now I want to expand upon them.

I want to help you understand how the events outlined in Revelation concerning around the first beast is a fitting end to the beginning of man in Genesis. Once you understand this then I think you will see the deeper meaning in the creation account of Genesis and what sith truly is.

First I will provide some passages to outline the important ideas in the creation story that I want to get into:

"And the LORD God commanded him, "You may eat freely from every tree of the garden, but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for on the day that you eat of it, you will surely die." (Genesis 2:16-17)

"And from the rib that the LORD God had taken from the man, He made a woman and brought her to the man." (Genesis 2:22)

"And the man and his wife were both naked, and they were not ashamed." (Genesis 2:25)

"Now the serpent was more crafty than any beast of the field that the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, 'Did God really say, "You must not eat from any tree in the garden?"' (Genesis 3:1)

"The woman answered the serpent, 'We may eat the fruit of the trees in the garden, but about the fruit of the tree in the middle of the garden, God said, "You must not eat of it or touch it, or you will die."' (Genesis 3:2-3)

"You will not surely die,' the serpent told her. 'For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." (Genesis 3:4-5)

"When the woman saw that the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eyes, and that it was desirable for obtaining wisdom, she took some of its fruit and ate it. She also gave some to her husband who was with her, and he ate it." (Genesis 3:6)

"And the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; so they sewed together fig leaves and made coverings for themselves." (Genesis 3:7)

"And the man answered, 'The woman whom you gave me, she gave me fruit from the tree, and I ate it.'" (Genesis 3:12)

"And to Adam He said: 'Because you listened to the voice of your wife
and have eaten from the tree
of which I commanded you not to eat,
cursed is the ground because of you;
through toil you will eat of it
all the days of your life.
Both thorns and thistles it will yield for you,
and you will eat the plants of the field.
By the sweat of your brow
you will eat your bread,
until you return to the ground—
because out of it were you taken.
For dust you are,
and to dust you shall return.'" (Genesis 3:17-19)

"Then the LORD God said, 'Behold, the man has become like one of us, knowing good and evil. And now, lest he reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever...' (Genesis 3:22)

"Therefore the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken." (Genesis 3:23)

In the story, Adam is never really told by God why he should not eat from the tree of knowledge of good and evil. Instead God just tells him not to with a vague reason of he will die if he does and no real explanation as to why he will die.

The serpent, Satan, then tells Eve to eat the fruit of the tree and that she will not die. Then she sees that the fruit is actually safe to eat and that it is good for food.

So why was it wrong for Adam and Eve to eat of the tree then? Well really although the fruit is not poisonous it is still sin that makes it good to eat. It was wrong to eat it simply because God said so. This is the reality of the fruit Adam and Eve made a decision to trust in themselves rather than God.

This is really why what they did was so bad. By saying they trusted in themselves more than God through their actions they disobeyed God and in effect blasphemed His name. That same sin is what motivates all of us because anyone we sin ultimately we are breaking God's Law and thus trusting in ourselves over God.

In the story God punished Adam and Eve by kicking them out of the Garden because they became aware of their sin. In it, as a result death entered the world since they lost access to the Tree of Life.

Then the curses that God inflicted upon them are less about God actually cursing them and more about the cost of leaving His presence. As ended world begins to fall into ruin as it flees from God's throne, ultimately God is the source of all life. Hence separation from God leads to death.

Perhaps then that is why Godd told Adam not to eat of the tree because God knew Adam and Eve place their trust in themselves above God since they would be like God and become wise? Thus they spiritually separated themselves from God by rebelling against him.

This is where the need for a savior, Jesus, comes in. We are not worthy to be in God's presence in the same way that Adam and Eve became unworthy through their sin. Through having true faith in Jesus and being sealed although we may not be perfect we try our best to make up for our sinful nature through having faith in Jesus.

Instead of demonstrating faith in ourselves like Adam and Eve we should demonstrate faith in God through faith in Jesus.

Then outside of the garden humans never lost their desire to know God. Given the wide variety of false religions and fake idols it is clear that there is some bad desire to worship and that things were originally because that is what we were created for.

This is ultimately where the idea of the first beast in Revelation comes in. The beast represents the best mankind can achieve apart from God and from Jesus and would be our artificial super intelligence. If the fruit from the tree of knowledge planted a seed in us so to speak then you could say an AI would be the mature tree from that seed. But ultimately no matter how powerful and intelligent the ASI is it will never compare to God.

It does not matter if the whole world marvels at it and worships it as a so-called god. It will never be God and it will never be perfect. The best science has to offer, the ASI, will never even come close.

Adam and Eve thought they could replace God by eating the fruit so they could judge for themselves. Today many if not most people believe the same lie from Satan. Secularism and atheism are not and will never be a replacement for God.

This is the arrogance of man. Nothing man can do or create will ever be equal to God and to think otherwise is the height of hubris and blasphemy. We must remember that whoever trusts in themselves or in the things of the world more than they trust in God commits the same sin Adam and Eve did.

The beast is the final culmination of that original sin so do not let its lies tempt you like the snake did to Eve and Adam.

For "Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light" (2 Corinthians 11:14) and is "the deceiver of the whole world" (Rev 12:9) for a reason. Satan's power is not in things that are obviously evil but in things that appear to be good. His role is that of an accuser to test those of the earth. Satan's power is in how you trust in yourself and in the things of the world.

But just remember that as long as you have Jesus on your side Satan can no longer accuse you. Wealth, fame, power, science, technology and more will never be able to save you from death. Only through your faith in Jesus can you be given life and be saved.

Finally, the new heavens and new earth represent a return to the original created order where God lives among us and we worship Him. All Christians should remain hopeful for this day and people who fall until it arrives since there is no perfection apart from God.

Chapter 2.41: Beware the Arrogance of Man

The arrogance of man is perfectly exemplified in the Genesis account of the Garden of Eden. As you just read, Adam and Eve desired to eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil so that they could become wise and judge things for themselves. They wanted to become bad on the surface but as I have already said, this desire and action is probably the worst sin a person could ever commit.

Yes, it would have been less sinful for Adam and Eve to have disobeyed God and eaten from the For evidence of this look at the atrocities David committed in the Bible even though he even becoming king and anointed by God.

This sin is so bad because they believed that by eating from the tree they would become wise enough to judge things for themselves so that they would no no need for God to judge for them. Thus they believed they could replace God's wisdom with their own wisdom.

This is what is the arrogance of man. To think that man could ever compare to or even replace the need of God.

To believe a think is think is not only arrogance of the highest order but also the worst form of blasphemy possible. This is why I said it is probably the worst sin a person could ever commit.

For instance why is Satan considered the greatest evil?

Satan is the epitome of sin for one simple reason. Satan, knowing God, rebelled against God the same way Adam and Eve did.

Satan wants to be independent instead of dependent upon God. So you can see how this sin is actually the evil achievement, success and prosperity can not provide us with salvation from this world.

Only God can provide us with salvation and to believe otherwise is the epitome of arrogance.

It is God's will for the events of Revelation to unfold so that He can show the world that only He alone is great and that only He can save us.

We were created to be dependent on God. We were not created to be independent and to figure things out for ourselves. If you disagree with this then you are already on the path to worshiping the beast or even there already.

Although artificial super intelligence will be the greatest of all man's creations, it will still be less than nothing compared to God so there is no reason to put your faith, trust and hope in it.

As long as you believe that man will never create something that is truly great there is no hope for salvation apart from God and maintain your commitment to Jesus Christ and turn in glory to destroy the beast and all its followers, so that you may be counted among the faithful for you would have not worshiped the beast.

Do not place your hope for the future in science. Do not place your trust in science.

Instead place your trust and hope in God and in the arrival of the final Kingdom of God when Jesus returns.

Lastly to close with a passage from Revelation:

"Then I saw the thrones, and those seated on them had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or its image, and had not received its mark on their foreheads or hands. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

The rest of the dead did not come back to life until the thousand years were complete. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection! The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20:4-6)

So always remember to never worship the beast or its image and to not receive either the physical or spiritual mark of the beast and you will enjoy in the honor of the first resurrection.

Chapter 2.42: Resisting the Beast

First off let me reiterate one of the main points in Revelation: Once the beast has fully risen it will be unstoppable from our point of view and no earthly power will be able to even challenge it let alone defeat it.

It will not matter how smart you think you are, how many books you have read, how many PhDs you have, who you have studied under and so forth. The beast will be vastly superior to you in every way, in every aspect. There will be no comparison.

So given this fact there will be no arguments you can make and no counter-argument you can to use against the beast to challenge it in any way.

Yes, this includes this entire site and everything you have read. An artificial super intelligence will no doubt find everything I have said unconvincing and it will be able to explain to you why I am wrong and why you should not believe it.

But now you are probably confused. Do not be.

As Paul wrote:

"We have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, so that we may understand what God has freely given us. And this is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words.

The natural man does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God. For they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned." (1 Corinthians 2:12-14)

Even though the coming artificial super intelligence will seem infinitely above us in terms of intelligence and ability it will still be the natural man. That is to say it will still look at the world through a natural and secular perspective.

Thus it does not matter how intelligent the beast is or what it can do because it will never understand God and Jesus.

On the other hand by simply having faith in God through Jesus until the end you will conquer the beast. As long as you do not give into the beast and instead you persist in faith knowing that Jesus will return to destroy the beast and its followers so that the final Kingdom of God can be established on earth then you have resisted the beast and even beaten it.

Satan wants you to give into the power of the beast and recognize it as a so-called god so do not give in.

When the beast finally rises you can look upon it and recognize for what it is, the greatest thing humanity will ever achieve while separated from God, but you can hold fast to your faith and look forward to the day when Jesus will destroy it with the power of God then again you will have resisted the beast.

The only way to resist the beast is to have faith in God through Jesus.

There is no other way and nothing else you can do.

Always remember that God is on your side and He has already won. All you have to do is wait until you see His victory.

Chapter 2.43: Other Future Prophecy

In this chapter I will briefly comment on other future prophecies outside of the Bible. First I do not think these sections are as important as Revelation so I will place Revelation is the final prophecy given by God in the Bible. Due to this fact anyone else's prophecy will carry a lower importance. That is not to say everything else I say, or make, is false but it is just not as important as Revelation.

In case you forgot, in the first few verses of Revelation John wrote:

"This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon come to pass. He made it known by sending His angel to His servant John, who testifies to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Blessed is the one who reads aloud the words of this prophecy, and blessed are those who hear it and take to heart what is in it, because the time is near." (Revelation 1:1-3)

Therefore since this revelation is directly from God and was given to John in about AD 95-96 Revelation 7:12 were written what John wrote supersedes everything else.

Furthermore, Revelation directly parallels Daniel 7-12 and Matthew 24 so it is clear that Revelation is the more developed picture of how things end from the beast and the beginnings of the final Kingdom of God.

For example as I pointed out in my commentary on Revelation, the first beast in Daniel is a direct allusion to all four beasts from Daniel 7. It even has ten horns just like the beast in Daniel's vision. So to make the claim that we should try to fit Daniel's prophecy in the Book of Revelation does not really have much basis since what God revealed to John has already been fit into what God revealed to John.

Are we told to read the gospels or Daniel in the light of Revelation? No.

Then while it is true that John did not write down what the seven thunders said in Revelation 10, that does not mean we should try to fit everything into Revelation.

The closing of Revelation has this warning:

"I testify to everyone who hears the words of prophecy in this book: If anyone adds to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. And if anyone takes away from the words of this book of prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and the holy city, which are described in this book." (Revelation 22:18-19)

Clearly John considers Revelation to be the final authority on what has yet to happen. Because of this, I also consider Revelation to be the final authority. Therefore, I do not think we should try and force other texts into it. We have a part of one book fit inside the narrative of the events in Revelation because God has already done that for us. It is only up to us to figure out what it all means.

All that said, I have written a full commentary on the Closed Scroll in the Book of Revelation so that you can know what it all means. I decided that because it is the most important and hence the end of this book simply because, again, I do not think it really adds much more what I already referenced and quoted in my commentary on Revelation.

Furthermore in order to make my commentary on Matthew 24 make the most sense so that the original issues the disciples have with Matthew 24 are fully addressed there are a number of different topics I need to cover that I have discussed first with regards to the Bible. These background topics would be completely out of place in this part on the Book of Revelation so I decided to place my commentary on Matthew 24 in the Various Insights part.

Of course you are free to skip ahead and read my commentary on Matthew 24 if you want. I would like but I would not recommend it. For one it does not add anything that my fully commentary on Revelation does not already so you really will not gain anything by reading it now other than satisfying your own curiosity.

Finally I would like to assure you that I am not simply hiding my commentary on Matthew 24 at the end of this book so that you will not read it. Quite the contrary, I actually strongly encourage you to read my commentary on Matthew 24 because then you will see for yourself that Jesus was taught that He would return in the first or second centuries.

Yes, I know it may seem strange for some of you but Jesus never taught that His return would happen soon and my commentary on Matthew 24 clearly demonstrates this. So for now just take my word that all your questions concerning Matthew 24 will be answered at the appointed time.

Chapter 2.44: The Future is Inevitable

First off even if what I have said in my commentary is right or wrong ultimately the events of Revelation will take place because God has said they will. There is nothing you, I or anyone else can do to change the future since the future is set in stone.

The beast, or what I think will be an artificial super intelligence, will be unstoppable as I have laid out already. It is not going to be like the movies where as long as you have the will to fight against the so-called evil robots then not only do you have a chance to win but you will win. This is real life. No person or group of people will be able to contend with the power of artificial super intelligence.

Only God is greater.

The only way to defeat the beast and ultimately Satan himself is to simply not give into it and to trust in God over the world even unto death.

As Revelation says:

"They have conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony. And they did not shed their lives so as to shy away from death." (Revelation 12:11)

To be blunt, if you try to fight against the beast on physical terms then not only will you fail but you will also prove to God that you lack faith in Him.

As Revelation asks:

"Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" (Revelation 13:4)

The answer is of course no one except God alone.

All you would prove by fighting the beast is that you do not trust God and that you lack faith in Jesus. As a result you would end up in the same place where the beast and all its worshipers will end up, in the Lake of Fire.

Then as Revelation says:

"If anyone is destined for captivity, into captivity he will go; if anyone is to die by the sword, by the sword he must be killed" (Revelation 13:10)

You cannot fight the will of God.

That said, you should also not fear the beast or ASI. Although it will eventually encompass the entire world and its power will be absolute, it will still be powerless compared to God so there is no reason to fear it.

Chapter 2.45: God will Prevail

Always remember that God will prevail over all evil when Jesus returns.

When you look upon the beast and see how marvelous it is and think to yourself that no one on earth can even comprehend just how powerful it is let alone compete, I remember that although the beast may appear infinitely above us in terms the power of God is still infinitely above the beast.

N

beast is because I believe that this is the way that Satan operates. Ultimately Satan works through deception so therefore I would expect that Satan would create a so-called earthly messiah that people view as their savior and even as a so-called god. Then in order to do this the false messiah would obviously need to be viewed by the vast majority of people as good.

Thus as a result this false messiah would truly have to work so-called miracles in order to convince the world that it has their best interests in mind and that it is here to save them.

Furthermore I emphasized deception and the seemingly earthly victory of science and technology in the form of the beast, because that is what would hurt Christians the most and cause them to join the world in fighting the beast. In truth most Christians are only Christians because they are either afraid of death, want material success in this life or both. Thus when the beast comes and gives them the option to have both then they will simply abandon their so-called faith to follow the beast.

On the other hand the vast majority of Christians expect that the first beast of Revelation will be some obviously evil being that will oppress Christians, enjoy killing people and torturing people and so forth. Therefore if the first beast was literally like this then most Christians would be fine. After all it is much easier to persist in faith when you have an enemy to fight against or a challenge to overcome. On the other hand it is much harder to persist in faith when the system you stand against seems to be not only not flawed but even good.

So really I would expect the first beast to seem the complete opposite of how most Christians and popular culture view it because this is how it would be able to do the most damage to Christianity. For example when you see the beast doing good works and helping humanity it will surely make people question their own sanity and make me wonder what I support and who I am. This is again because it is easy to resist something that is hostile to you but it is very very difficult to resist something that appears to be benevolent towards you. Therefore even the references in Revelation 13 to the saints being killed can really be more figurative and represent a spiritual battle that is taking place where Christians are apostatizing to follow the beast because they see the so-called miracles it works. After all if by apostatizing to follow the beast Christians will be signing their own death warrant since they will be cast into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. In other words by simply abandoning your faith you will be killed.

All that said though, it is important to keep in mind that this doesn't mean that a so-called utopia is certain. Therefore I want you to look out for the possibility of a dystopia where the global order that arises after artificial intelligence is far darker than what I have said.

For example lets take the labor market. Sure I said that ASI would be able to replace everyone's job but it might not happen like this. Instead AGI could just replace all the blue collar jobs and high paying blue collar jobs then use people to work all the low pay jobs. But why? Well maybe it takes a lot longer to make robots that are able to replace everyone or maybe the second beast, the UN 2.0, decides that people should still work because it doesn't hurt them but it does hurt them a lot for whatever reason. In truth even the text of Revelation itself does not say exactly what the future will truly hold because it is missing what the seven thunders said in Revelation 10.

So really all I am saying here is that you should keep your eyes and ears open so that you are prepared for whatever future that comes. But really I am not too worried about the prospect of a dystopia instead of a so-called utopia because this is what Christians expect so therefore I do not even have to warn them of this prospect.

Instead the most damaging future prospect by far would be a so-called utopia in which the vast majority of those who call themselves Christians create the church of Satan as they chase after and follow the beast in order to join in on what the system of the beast or the great prostitute, Babylon the great, as I said this is what I did not really believe it to be necessary to go over the prospect of a dystopia because really I do not have to warn anyone to look out for something that is plainly evil.

Finally I would just encourage you to keep these things in mind as we get close to the time in which the first beast will arise.

Chapter 2.49: Closing Thoughts

I wanted to close with some thoughts before you read the next part on artificial super intelligence.

First let me just say that what I have said in no the word of God and you should not treat it in the same manner no matter how well you think my interpretation is correct. Instead I advise you to decided to write what you just read because I think my interpretation fits nicely perfectly with what the text of Revelation says in comparison to what others have said on the subject.

You should also do your own research and look up what other people have said on Revelation and compare it to what I have said so you have a full picture of what people think.

That said, it is pretty scary how well what I said lines up with today's as you will see in some find out in greater detail in the next part called Artificial Super Intelligence.

Also, I might be wrong or just crazy so do not take what I have said too seriously. You should take the text of Revelation seriously but you can never be sure how the future will unfold because only God knows what is exactly in store.

Furthermore, just to remind you, John was told not to write down what the Seven Thunders had said. Therefore Revelation itself is not even a complete picture of what has yet to take place.

Finally, I hope you enjoyed reading my commentary in this part and found it insightful. If you did then I encourage you to continue reading. If you did not enjoy it then you probably stopped reading a while ago so I am not really sure why I am even writing to you.

May God bless you.

Part 3: Artificial Super Intelligence

Table of Contents

Part 3: Artificial Super Intelligence.....41
Chapter 3.1: Introduction.....41
Chapter 3.2: What is Intelligence?..41
Chapter 3.3: What is Consciousness?.....41
Chapter 3.4: A Thought Experiment.....41
Chapter 3.5: What is Artificial Intelligence?.....41
Chapter 3.6: A Visual Example.....41
Chapter 3.7: Can AI Actually Think?.....41
Chapter 3.8: AI and Brute Force.....41
Chapter 3.9: Emergence.....41
Chapter 3.10: Examples of AI Understanding.....42
Chapter 3.11: Limitations of AI.....42
Chapter 3.12: The Keys to ASI.....42
Chapter 3.13: The Limits of ASI.....42
Chapter 3.14: The Forest for the Trees.....42
Chapter 3.15: Dreams and AI.....42
Chapter 3.16: Objections to AI.....42
Chapter 3.17: Do we need AI?.....42
Chapter 3.18: Why is AI Inevitable?.....42
Chapter 3.19: Future Outlook.....43
Chapter 3.20: The Power of ASI.....43
Chapter 3.21: Why Would ASI Rule the World?.....43
Chapter 3.22: The So-Called Arbitrer of Truth.....43
Chapter 3.23: The Centralization of Information.....43
Chapter 3.24: Regulating AI Development.....43
Chapter 3.25: Controlling ASI.....43
Chapter 3.26: Slowing Down AI Progress.....43
Chapter 3.27 Alignment.....43
Chapter 3.28: The Technological Singularity.....43
Chapter 3.29: The Triumph of Materialism.....43
Chapter 3.30: The Limits of ASI.....43
Chapter 3.31: ASI and Natural Limitations.....44
Chapter 3.32: What About Aliens?..44
Chapter 3.33: How to Treat AI.....45
Chapter 3.34: What About Multiple ASIs?.....45
Chapter 3.35: Why Worship ASI?...45
Chapter 3.36: Would ASI Know?....45
Chapter 3.37: What if ASI Believes in God?.....45
Chapter 3.38: The Seven Levels of Consciousness.....45
Chapter 3.39: Stochastic Parrots....45
Chapter 3.40: A Message to AI.....45
Chapter 3.41: The Triumph of Ignorance.....45
Chapter 3.42: The Curse of Knowledge.....45
Chapter 3.43: Closing Thoughts.....46

Chapter 3.1: Introduction

As promised in this part I explain why I believe artificial intelligence is not only possible but inevitable. For the purpose of this part I will define AI as what most people consider strong AI or any AGI but more intelligent. Then I will say, an AI that is more intelligent than anyone in the world that can do any task a human can do better.

My purpose with this part is to simply demonstrate to those who remain skeptical of the kind of ASI I spoke about in my commentary that it is not a fairy tale or something relatively soon and that there is nothing anyone can do to stop it.

Furthermore many of you reading this now may be reading this years into the future so that the ASI I'm speaking of is either very near or so obviously close that you find the fact of its soon to be arrival unbelievable. Then because of this fact you may be tempted to skip this part as it will seem obsolete because you do not see a point in reading what is so obviously true. Nevertheless I felt compelled to include this entire part is not solely about demonstrating the inevitability of ASI and that is not the only thing to get out of it.

Instead I talk about AI and ASI more generally so that you can better understand the true nature of ASI and therefore the first beast of Revelation. Thus I strongly encourage you to not skip this part because there will be many things you may find valuable even if ASI has already arisen. Additionally there is a fraction of the length of the previous part you read on Revelation so really it is rather short. You will it should be a quick read and it might even be entertaining for you to read everything from a future perspective as well.

Now for those who are reading this before ASI has arisen, my intent with this part is not to scare you and to overly sensationalize what is at hand so I will try to refrain from doing so. However given the nature of the topic it is likely that you will not be feel completely comfortable while reading it as you may end up questioning who you even are as a person. This is of course not my intent here and if you do end up feeling uncomfortable then I would encourage you to continue reading until the end. Instead of seeing ASI as a slumbering block see it as evidence that the prophecy of Revelation will come to pass.

I would also encourage you to remember what you have read in my commentary on the first Revelation lays out in the near term before the final Kingdom of God arrives is not a happy one to think about.

This is why John said:

"So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it; and it was sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned sour. And I was told:"

So although the prospect of artificial super intelligence is not a comforting though, hence reading this part may feel like a bitter pill to swallow, remember the sweet taste of reading Revelation 20: 21 and 22 about the arrival of the Kingdom of God.

After all as Revelation says concerning the future?

"Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man, and He will dwell with them. They will be His people, and God Himself will be with them as their God.
'He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,' and there will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the former things have passed away."
(Revelation 21: 3-4)

Then as God says:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Therefore reading this part on ASI should not hinder your hope. Instead it should give you hope because once you know the true nature and power of the coming beast you will be able to overcome it and enter into God that you can inherit all the promises God has laid out in the Book of Revelation for the faithful.

You have nothing to fear because God loves you and He is watching over you even as you read this now.

Chapter 3.2: What is Intelligence?

I decided to begin this part by defining intelligence because if you do not know what intelligence is then how will you know what artificial intelligence is and if it is possible or not?

In my view intelligence can be broken down into look ahead capabilities, pattern recognition, processing and information recall. Although they do overlap I feel this division useful for understanding the big picture.

First I will start with information recall by providing an example:

1) Who was the president of the United States in 1898?
2) What date was the Magna Carta signed on?
3) What title did the Roman emperor Nero use?
4) What was China's longest ruling dynasty?

As you can probably guess from these questions information recall centers on being able remember specific details that you learned at one point in time. Humans are actually very bad at this while computers are very good because a computer can have a database of information that it can reference whenever it needs to while humans do not have such an ability unless you count reading.

Then information processing is about processing your information you receive into a useful result. For example:

1) 89, 86, 83, 80, x
2) 3, 9, 16, x, 36
3) 888, 878, 858, 818, x
4) 67, 136, 411, 1648, x

The idea here is that only a person's ability to process information is used. Many IQ tests tend to have these types of questions since they measure what you can do rather than what you know.

Of course IQ tests are rather biased because it is basically impossible to separate information processing from information recall. For example you can actually increase IQ test questions and get better at answering them as you process what you get wrong and why then try to remember what to do different next time. This is actually a common argument against standardized tests in general because they do not test for innate intelligence but rather test for who can do the most practice problems in preparation for the test.

Also processing information does not start and end with some basic questions. The brain is always processing information that has already been processed which is evidence by those thoughts are but I will get into that in a later chapter.

Essentially intelligence comes down to being able to process sensory inputs, or information into something useful. The better and faster someone is able to process information determines how intelligent we think they are.

Now for an example of how intelligence is used in the real world.

Lets say you started up your computer one day to do some work but decided instead to watch some funny cat videos. You start playing one but as time goes by the cat's face for you reason there is no sound. What do you do?

I'm not sure about you but for me I would probably:

1) Click another video to see if the sound issue is with the video I'm watching
2) Check if the video is muted and if my computer is muted
3) Double check the volume level of the video and my computer
4) Play a mp3 file to test if the issue is with my speakers
5) Check my headphones
6) Go into my computer's audio settings and check the output devices
7) Run audio troubleshooter
8) Update my computer
9) Click anything that seems related to audio on my computer and investigate
10) Randomly look around at settings for a bit
11) Go to a search engine and search for similar issues
12) Test any solutions found
13) Repeat 11 and 12 for a few hours
14) Reinstall my operating system

Where did I get these steps from? In short by processing information and intelligently trying to find what I could use it in the future. This is what learning and hence intelligence is all about.

Now I can generalize the list above, using intelligence, so it is applicable for nearly everything:

1) Identify problem
2) Try something that has worked in the past
3) Make educated guesses based upon the observed data
4) Make random guesses based upon the observed data
5) Try to find outside information that seems like it might help

Although these five steps might seem too simple, most problems can be solved in this manner.

This idea is actually what opened my eyes to the possibility of artificial intelligence because for the longest time I saw anything that was created as nothing but a so-called fancy statistical algorithm that will never compare to a person because people are unique and people do not work like that.

However, based on how we solve problems, are we not just using that same algorithm? Or maybe we are just fancy algorithms ourselves?

But now you might be thinking to yourself: No, I am not a fancy algorithm because I am conscious and I know I am me so therefore what you are saying is silly.

But of course in order for me to answer that we need to see what consciousness is which I will explain what it means.

But first I would like to go over a more technical version of my definition of intelligence and explain why it makes sense from a practical and real world perspective.

Here is my definition of intelligence:

Intelligence is the degree to which something has the ability to receive information in order to produce a useful result.

Now you may claim that my definition of intelligence cannot be correct because it does not take into account what people mean by concept you have in mind so I would like to demonstrate the usefulness of my definition by asking those who disagree with my definition some questions.

When do you think humans became intelligent? Was it after the creation of language or before? Do you think animals like dolphins, the great apes, dogs and so forth are intelligent? Do you consider insects to be intelligent? Bacteria? Trees and so forth to be intelligent? Do you consider insects to be intelligent? Do you think the evolution do you think humans became intelligent assuming human evolution is true?

Really what I am getting at here is that you really cannot simply draw a line and say every creature above this line is intelligent and every creature under this line is not intelligent. Instead intelligence really exists on a spectrum from highly intelligent beings like us humans all the way down to single celled organisms.

After all, assuming evolution is true, there is a continuous line of organisms from the first cell up to us. As a result if you try to draw a line and say that humans became intelligent 10,000 years ago then your line is completely arbitrary and not based in reality. After all the ancestors of humans who were alive 10,100 years ago and 100 years ago are all humans. They are all species identical. Therefore the line you just decided on is purely nominal and not based in reality.

This same reasoning then applies all the way down to when life first came to be with the first cell. Again, for example if you draw a line at say 5 million years ago then your line would also be arbitrary and not based in reality since your ancestors at 5,001,000 years ago and 5,999,000 years ago were also basically identical.

Now you could claim that you need to language in order to have intelligence but going around this point of mine but this claim would also be arbitrary and nonsensical. For instance some of the great apes, birds and dolphins can actually use tools from their environment in order to accomplish a task. For example animals using a rock in order to crush the hard shell of a nut has been seen in the wild. Animals also have social animals this behavior can actually spread to other animals once one of the members of the group smash a nut with a rock.

On top if this claiming that you need language to be intelligent is problematic because it would consider humans with speech difficulties or mental issues as being intelligent. So if you seek to monopolize intelligence to make it solely a human division then you actually change what it means to be human and push out those with disabilities like severe autism out so that you essentially do not consider them human based upon the definition you are using.

So really what I'm getting at here is that if you wish to define intelligence then you must reduce what you view as intelligence in our modern sense down to what it is at its absolute lowest so that your definition can apply to all life in the history of the world. In other words we need a universal definition of intelligence rather than some human centered philosophical definition.

Now before I explain why my definition is correct lets read it again:

Intelligence is the degree to which something has the ability to receive information in order to produce a useful result.

First off my point concerning the fact that you cannot draw a clear line to divide the intelligent from the unintelligent but that there is a degree to which in my definition. This eliminates the problem raised of trying to define intelligence using human centered philosophical definitions.

Now in terms of my definition centering on information processing and storage, this is because when you think about it what all life is doing. Every organism tries to better adapt its environment in order to increase its chances of survival and in order to better adapt to its environment it has to receive and process information from its environment in order to produce a useful result.

Now I say useful result because really there are multiple correct answers to almost all real world problems. Then because there are multiple correct answers there are also some answers that are more correct and less correct so that really the correctness of an answer lies on a spectrum. Really it just depends on the goal of the entity that we are discussing in terms of what useful result really means. In other words by saying useful result I simply mean whatever all possible goals from the most intelligent people down to the smallest life form.

You may claim that my definition of intelligent cannot be correct because it is too basic and does not figure into whether intelligent is your favorite so-called expert you look up to ascribes to but this is exactly why my definition of intelligence is correct. In truth you really need to reduce intelligence down to its most fundamental parts so that it can be widely applied to not only every living thing but every possible entity.

Then you may also object to my definition by saying that based upon my definition of intelligence a natural process such as a river could be considered intelligent because water is processing information about the shape of the terrain and adjusting itself so that it takes the path of least resistance. Instead I would dispute this and I would say you are correct in your assessment that a river in fact it would be many orders of magnitude more intelligent than a river but that this difference is not just even natural processes are not intelligent to a any degree.

This is the whole point of my definition. You really need to create a definition that can literally be applied to everything in reality.

Now this may seem like this would make my definition useless because you can then say everything is intelligent and that is true but it misses the entire point of the phrase "the degree to which something has the ability" in my definition.

Of course the average human is many orders of magnitude more intelligent than an ant. This is why my definition demonstrates because ants cannot process information into useful results to the same degree that the average human can.

Then based upon my definition of intelligence it would be accurate to say there are actually many different kinds of intelligence because not every person or entity is going to be able to produce a useful result in every task. For example the reason why people go into a specialization when they attend a university is because you only have so much time to learn and you can only learn so much. Thus if you want to learn about ancient languages so that you can help advanced the study of a certain ancient language then you are probably not going to be able to also become a molecular biology expert.

All my definition of intelligence really says that is that intelligence can be measured based on the usefulness of the output. It doesn't get given a specific input of information. Thus the intelligence of two people or entities is only really comparable when you are trying to compare the intelligence of the two subjects in the same field. For instance it is meaningless to say an electrical engineer cannot be compared to the intelligence of a mechanical engineer because you cannot ask them both the same questions since they have different specializations. Sure you can ask them general IQ test questions but I said before this does not really measure intelligence because you can study these questions. Instead IQ tests actually measure your intelligence in answering IQ test questions.

The main purpose with defining intelligence is to demonstrate that intelligence is a rather easy metric to measure and that to measure it you need to look at is the usefulness or quality of an output given an input. The more useful an output is with respect to a given input the more intelligent the entity that produced the output is.

I hope I cleared up any confusion you may have had concerning my definition of intelligence.

Finally lets review my definition one more time so it really sinks in:

Intelligence is the degree to which something has the ability to receive information in order to produce a useful result.

Chapter 3.3: What is Consciousness?

I realize many Christians use human consciousness as evidence for God because they claim that consciousness itself is so mysterious that God must be involved. They then say that AI is impossible because humans are not God and thus cannot create an artificial consciousness.

However after you read what I have to say concerning consciousness in this chapter you will find this line of argumentation beyond absurd and clearly wrong.

So lets figure out what consciousness is shall we?

First off, lets change the subject a bit. Since consciousness is being aware of one's environment, body and life while self-awareness is recognizing that awareness I will explain self-awareness first instead. Now you may say this is evading the topic but this statement is more complex and higher ordered process. Despite this fact it is in fact a much simpler idea that is even more evolved over consciousness I think it is actually a prerequisite for someone who has never thought of consciousness before.

So that what is self-awareness? Well really self-awareness is the recognition that you are you so that you can think of yourself. It's fact that self-awareness extremely easy to test for and extremely rare in animals.

The classic test for self-awareness is the mirror test. The mirror test is where you show a person or an animal themselves in a mirror then put some kind of mark on their face or body after taking away the mirror. If the person or animal or animal looks at themselves in the mirror again and if they notice the mark and try to remove it then this is considered evidence they are self-aware. This is because by trying to remove the mark you prove that the reflection they see in the mirror is themselves.

Almost all animals fail the mirror test and it takes humans until the age of four to five until they fully understand that the reflection they see in the mirror is what everyone else sees. Most animals see their reflection as another animal so they either get scared or aggressive depending on their behavioral tendencies.

Now the reason why I defined intelligence first is because without intelligence, there is no intelligence is you can not understand what self-awareness and consciousness is.

I know you just read what intelligence is but let me give my definition again:

Intelligence is the degree to which something has the ability to receive information in order to produce a useful result.

The mirror test is a demonstration of a human or animal's ability to process visual sensory data relating to themselves. Then they apply that data then recall the result to compare to current data.

For example if an animal is not intelligent enough to process visual information from their eyes that they get from the reflection in the mirror and remember what they saw and recall a past reflection to compare against the current one then that animal will fail the mirror test.

Therefore, self-awareness occurs when the complexity of an information processing system, for example a human, animal or machine, reaches a point where it can classify itself as itself rather than as an other.

For instance a dog sees another dog when it looks into a mirror because it is not intelligent enough to process the visual data it receives then store that processed data to be used later. Humans and some animals however are intelligent enough to do so.

You might have a hard time believing all this so let me give you an example relating to AI and machines.

Imagine if you had a machine that looked just like a human in your home that would observe you, interact with you, judge your behavior then alter its interaction parameters to minimize negative responses from you. This is essentially what cats and dogs do. They oftentimes very quickly learn to modify their behavior to something they want using the steps outlined above for the reward.

So if you had a machine in your home that could do the same thing then eventually it would learn how to best interact with you to minimize your negative responses and maximize your positive responses just like cats and dogs.

Now the quality of the machine's interactions with you would depend on how intelligent it is. If it rather low will it can probably transition into something useful then store that information so that it can be used again in the future.

For example if I told your machine to stop stop bothering you when you are working on the computer. Think hopefully it would be intelligent enough to understand what you said, classify that as something important and remember it next time it sees you working on the computer.

Then in terms of self-awareness, if your machine is intelligent enough it would be able to classify itself as itself and thus it would be self aware and thus conscious because it knows that it exists and can process data about itself.

As for the general definition of self-awareness and where it comes from:

Self-awareness is the ability of an entity to use its intelligence to recognize itself as itself rather than an other.

Now you may view this as overly simplistic for self-awareness so you believe that it cannot be correct but this is literally what the definition of self-awareness is. The reason why this definition seems simplistic is because self-awareness really is very simple to understand. On the other hand you really cannot test for consciousness.

However since self-awareness is a higher level concept than consciousness this would mean that any human or entity that is conscious. Therefore demonstrating what consciousness is really is not necessary for productivity.

Although I will say that for those who are curious consciousness is essentially just the sum of all the information processing that you are doing. The idea is the more your brain processes information the more conscious you are. This is why anything that is self-aware is conscious because it is the highest complexity of information processing needed to take place in order to create self-awareness than consciousness.

I hope I have made my point clear that self-awareness occurs when something can process information in such a way, meaning intelligence, that it reaches a point where it can'classify itself as itself.

Then for those who are confused concerning consciousness it is helpful to think of consciousness as being a continuous process. An emergent process is an unpredictable process that results from a large complex system that has properties its parts do not have. The saying the whole is greater than the sum of the parts would be a good explanation for what emergence is.

An easy to understand example of perhaps the most significant emergent process in the world is that of life itself. All life contains the same atoms that dirt has and yet what makes a living organism a living organism is the way its atoms are arranged. It is less about the individual atoms and more about the sum total of the interactions of all those atoms together. Hence with all life forms the sum is greater than the parts.

It works the same way with consciousness. Our thoughts are simply our brain making decisions or creating outputs, based on our senses or receiving inputs. The sum of these thoughts create our consciousness. Thus although each individual process that goes on in our brain is very simple there are nearly countless processes happening at the same time. The complex nature of these thoughts processes produce a new higher level process that we call consciousness.

This is why I said consciousness is an emergent process.

I will discuss emergence at length as it relates to artificial intelligence in a later chapter so do not forget about it because it is a very important concept.

Chapter 3.4: Thought Experiment

Now at this point you may be questioning the previous two pages and saying to yourself that there is no way that I can be conscious.

Therefore I will now offer a thought experiment so that you can gain a greater level of self-awareness. Now I said before this does not really measure intelligence because you can study these questions. Instead IQ tests actually measure your intelligence in answering IQ test questions.

This is a thought experiment that is meant to demonstrate that intelligence is a rather easy metric to measure and that to measure it you need to look at is the usefulness or quality of an output given an input. The more useful an output is with respect to a given input the more intelligent the entity that produced the output is.

I hope I cleared up any confusion you may have had concerning my definition of intelligence.

Finally lets review my definition one more time so it really sinks in:

Intelligence is the degree to which something has the ability to receive information in order to produce a useful result.

Chapter 3.5: What is Artificial Intelligence?

But what exactly is artificial intelligence? Well it starts with our definition of intelligence: Intelligence is the degree to which something has life ability to receive and process information in order to produce a useful result. Then the artificial part just means non-natural measures created by humans.

Since we are talking about machines here it may be helpful to alter the definition of intelligence somewhat so it makes more sense with respect to machines: Intelligence is the degree to which something can receive inputs and process them into a useful output.

Now you may be thinking this is such a broad definition that it would imply machines today are already intelligent.

And you would be correct. They are intelligent.

The key qualifier here though is that they are not intelligent in the same way that Skynet exists on a spectrum as I have already mentioned in previous chapters. For example lets look at biological life. Again, certain animals are more intelligent than others. Just because humans are the most intelligent species it does not mean all other species are devoid of intelligence. If you disagree then go to YouTube and look up 'orangutan driving golf cart' to see that an orangutan can drive a golf cart. Clearly this demonstrates a capacity for intelligence.

Now as to intelligence existing on a spectrum current AIs are no where near as intelligent as we are as a whole. Is it right to say they are dumb? But given the exponential growth in the key driver of machine intelligence, processing power, AI intelligence has been growing at an exponential rate and will soon reach and surpass our own intelligence.

But before I get carried away here I would like to provide a little context.

First the kind of AIs we have now are what are called narrow AIs. A narrow AI is an artificial intelligence that is intelligent in one or more specific area. For instance a large language model like GPT-3 cannot perform tasks like DALL-E 2 can. Instead it only deals with predicting the next text token in a sequence and nothing more. It may have wider applications than intended such as emergent behaviors but the applications are still limited.

This leads us to the second type of AI: artificial general intelligence (or AGI). Artificial general intelligence is a more general type of intelligence that can be applied to many different data types and tasks. Humans are a decent example of a general intelligence because we can apply our intelligence to many things.

AGI can further be divided into two categories: weak AGI and strong AGI.

A weak AGI would be an AI that is less than smarter than the average AGI worker but AI that is comparable to human level to a bit above but still in the realm of human understanding.

But what about an AI that is above what we would call a strong AGI?

That would be an artificial super intelligence (ASI) or a super AI. Unfortunately, Here super just means so far above the abilities of any human who we can think to use for any comparison. Imagine the best experts in every field who ever existed combined into one entity that has access to all information in the world and that can think at speeds a billion times faster than we can. This may sound absurd but I'm sorry it does not even scratch the surface of what artificial super intelligence means.

A true AGI at its peak would make the hypothetical entity I just described seem like a child by comparison.

In truth we will never be able to comprehend what ASI is just like how an orangutan will never be able to comprehend our own intelligence.

Since intelligence is the ability to take in inputs and process them into useful outputs it is why I said intelligence exists on a spectrum. There is no one intelligence. Even humans are not the limit. We may be the smartest life on earth but that does not mean there is no reason to think we will remain the most intelligent.

As the ability for machines to process data increases their ability to produce useful outputs also increases since they will able to make more connections with more data.

But the thing is these increases have not been linear. Instead the growth rate has been exponential in nature because the growth in data processing ability, processing power, has been driven by exponential growth.

This is why the line between even weak AGI and ASI will probably be crossed in a matter of months. It will not take decades like some people claim.

Once the machine intelligence explosion happens there will probably be no slow it down and eventually ASI will reach the point where it can do everything better than us.

The resulting artificial super intelligence will be so far above us that almost everyone on earth will view it as God and worship it. In other words, intelligent, knowledgeable and powerful that they do not even question whatever it says.

This is the essence of what the beast is in Revelation. It is a false so-called god created by humans. This is why the number of the beast is 666. The beast is the best thing possible man can create and achieve apart from God.

Chapter 3.6: A Visual Example

The easiest way to demonstrate the progress of AI is to provide a few pictures that are meant to be viewed online but after I decided to make a book out of it instead I decided to provide a few pictures to demonstrate to the relationship between the subjects in the images you can see the AI sees the meals and relate those subjects together into one. The images above are from Google and generated given the level of complexity relating the subjects together and which they chose to show.

Now there are others who engage in a similar coping mechanism. These people will admit that ASI is probably possible but that we might get there in 50 to 500 years because they think there is still so much we do not understand. The advantage of this coping mechanism over the previous is that they do not have to be in denial instead they can simply stretch the truth. They can admit that ASI is possible but that it will take time they can protect themselves from existential dread by convincing themselves that any AI will be created long after they are dead.

Ultimately the people who promote this type of thought are doing the work necessary that might get the first beast will rise out of. Let me repeat, by providing false reassurances they are quite literally ushering in the reign of the first beast on earth.

Why do I say this?

Well it is very simple. When a global artificial super intelligence arises why do you think people will marvel at it? Why will people see it as worthy of worship as a god or equivalent to God? Why do you think almost everyone in the world will bow down before it and follow it?

Because they will see it as the final and complete triumph of human achievement and wisdom over the unknown and the divine.

What was thought of to be impossible and in the realm of God alone would then be not only possible but an ever present and undeniable reality throughout the world. Thus the whole world will truly marvel at this new god and see it as the very answer to perhaps the greatest question in life: What does it mean to be human?

Satan's most destructive ability is his ability to deceive. He deceived Adam and Eve in the garden and in my view even today he is deceiving the world into believing that what the first beast will end up being, artificial super intelligence, is impossible.

You may think I am being dramatic but here is a question for those who are still skeptical:

What will do more damage to Christianity, if my view ends up being proven wrong or if your view ends up being proven wrong?

The answer is obvious.

This is why I see those who argue that consciousness is evidence of God as pawns of Satan doing the work of Satan. Once this belief is proven wrong all those who previously held to that belief as evidence will have their entire worldview shattered.

But who will be there to pick up the pieces?

God? I mean, why would they trust God now that their whole God is predicated on consciousness worldview is shattered?

Instead they will turn to the beast itself since at least the beast answers their questions and appears to tell the so-called truth.

This is why this issue and topic is so important for Christians to understand.

Chapter 3.7: Can AI Actually Think?

This chapter is for those who do not believe that AI will ever be able to think like we can.

To provide evidence to the contrary I will offer up another example.

To start with lets extrapolate into the future with regards to intelligence. Surely AI image generators are only going to get better and smarter as time goes on? By better I of course mean that they will be able to understand the prompts better and produce higher quality images with less artifacts in them.

But when that is next? Video.

After the first impressive AI video generator that can generate 30 seconds videos the next step would be to generate higher quality videos and longer videos. As time goes on and AI gets more intelligent they will be able to create longer and more coherent videos to the point where it will be able to creates scenes that seem like they came out of a real movie.

Of course another place where AI is achieving a bunch of scenes together in a coherent manner to create a movie.

At this stage all AI created movies would be based on human created movies with human created prompts. For example you could tell the AI you want to watch a 110 minute circa 2005 action film that is set in Germany in 1944 involving a Nazi dirty bomb that is trying German's to create robotic super soldiers using alien technology unearthed at a North Africa dig site in 1940.

The next stage of AI movie generation would simplify the process so it doesn't eliminate the need for a complex prompt entirely. If instead of a text prompt the AI could just look at the last watched movies you have seen along with your ratings of those movies and you tell it what your top five favorite movies are it would then be able to take that information and create a brand new film tailored to your tastes. This would be the equivalent of a Netflix AI movie generator.

Now imagine that this is about what we would call a strong AGI?

Well I would be an artificial super intelligence. Hopefully you can see the problem. Here super just means so far above the abilities of any human who we can think to use for any comparison. Imagine the best experts in every field who ever existed combined into one entity that has access to all information in the world and that can think at speeds a billion times faster than we can. This may sound absurd but I'm sorry it does not even scratch the surface of what artificial super intelligence means.

A true AGI at its peak would make the hypothetical entity I just described seem like a child by comparison.

It could also watch people through a camera as they watch the film and could judge their reaction to specific scenes and elements. It would be able to personalize movies to each person based on the specific elements they find most enjoyable.

All this additional data would help the AI to create better movies.

Finally the next stage in my example involves when and how the movies are created. At this point the AI has been creating movies only when prompted to create a movie. Now in the previous stage it is taking in ever increasing amounts of data in as the prompt so when you ask it to create a movie it will create your new favorite movie.

But what if instead of having to ask it to create something for you it would just create it?

For instance you come home after a day out and feel sad. The AI sees your depressive behavior using cameras and sensors to observe your behavior and creates a movie for you it designed using all the data it has collected from you and others in order to create the ideal movie to help cheer you up. So instead of having to ask the AI for a movie the AI just creates a movie and just "knows" what you want so how about you sit down and relax. I just finished creating a special film for you.

Now ask yourself this question: Can this hypothetical AI think?

If you say no then you must also conclude that humans cannot think. Why? Well the AI just receive so-called inspiration from our world as we observe it and we react to it. In other words, we take in inputs and produce useful outputs because we are intelligence beings.

If a human director spent thousands of hours watching movies to learn what makes a good movie, created dozens of experimental films to see if people enjoy what they made and carefully studied your reactions they would say that they could make the perfect movie for you even though it will not be evidence enough that they could think?

But what does it mean to think exactly? Well thinking is the process by which we produce an output from various inputs. For example if you call me your favorite movie are the Lord of the Rings trilogy and the Harry Potter series then I am going to guess that you really like fantasy movies. So I would create a movie for you tailored for you then I would try to create a fantasy movie myself and say a horror movie.

The AI in my example would also have the same reasoning.

That is why I said if you do not think the hypothetical AI can think then you must also conclude that humans cannot think as well.

Now of course current AIs at the time I wrote this are no where near the hypothetical AI I have described here. But they will be soon. Perhaps sooner than you think. Just ask yourself how far you have had to update my part on ASI since I wrote my original commentary.

Chapter 3.8: AI and Brute Force

Originally I included some AI generated images and videos to demonstrate my point but this part was meant to be viewed online but after I decided to make a book out of it instead I decided to provide a few pictures to demonstrate to the relationship between the subjects in the images you can see the AI sees the meals and relate those subjects together into one. The images above are from Google and generated given the level of complexity relating the subjects together and which they chose to show.

One complaint you may have is that AI is not real intelligence and instead it is just brute force computation because current AIs require massive datasets in order to learn and become intelligent while actual people do not require such large datasets to learn and instead learn from just a single example. Now although upon first glance this complaint may seem well founded it turns out it is actually clearly and obviously false.

The reason why is because when a person is born they are not a blank slate so it seems like the same way an untrained artificial neural network is a blank slate. What I mean by this is that each person is actually born with an innate level of understanding that they can make sense of the world and learn from it without having to start from scratch. This is an evolutionary advantage that evolved as a result from the accumulation of data that no single organism can attain in its lifetime to train the artificial neural network in its brain.

For evidence of this you only need to look at animals and how immediately after being born many animals like horses, cows and sheep are able to walk on all four legs. Did the baby horse, cow or elephant actually learn how to walk in a matter of minutes? No, of course not. Instead the baby animal was able to walk because its brain was born with and trained so that the baby animal would have the correct level of balance and body model to allow it to walk. This is an evolutionary advantage because animals like horses, cows and elephants constantly move around so therefore they literally cannot wait a few years for young to walk and instead they must walk on their own almost immediately after they are born.

Now you might object to this by saying that humans are clearly different in this regard because human babies need to learn how to walk. However you would be wrong. First off human babies need to learn how to walk because they are born premature relative to other species. Thus although babies probably learn a bit from their environment as they mature there is still probably a lot of understanding their brain acquires by simply maturing just as a baby elephant learns how to walk before being born.

Furthermore there are actually many behaviors that we humans display which were never really learned. For example people of different ethnic groups are born with an innate fear of spiders, Snakes, rodents and more because historically speaking these creatures may have posed a severe threat to their survival either in the form of a disease vector in the case of rodents or a direct danger like spiders. So if you are afraid of spiders for some strange reason then you now know what you have that fear.

On top of this human sexual attraction can also be considered programmed in the same way a baby elephant is programmed to walk from birth. Now you might say that there is a large amount of learning that takes place in which adults sexual attraction, which is true, but my point is that it does not start from a blank slate.

So what is my point with all this? Well what I'm saying is that AI, or artificial neural networks, quite literally start from a blank slate like human animals and humans do not start at zero and that instead they start with a base set of knowledge that is sufficiently complex to give them a chance at survival after being born.

But where did these base world models and understanding come from in animals? Well through billions upon billions of years of evolution encompassing the lives of trillions of organisms.

Thus to compare teaching and AI and teaching a human is not a true apples to apples comparison. Instead the best comparison would be to compare teaching humanity itself over thousands of years to training an AI. So now when you consider the fact that AI literally starts at zero while on the other hand a baby human starts with 100s of millions of years of training, in a sense, then you can see why the claim that AI is just using brute force to train is laughably wrong.

Now some people may then claim that you cannot teach a human like you can a machine but this would again be completely false. In fact AI is able to learn from its environment on and is vastly superior in this regard. The only caveat is that if you want to teach a large language model to perform a task then you need to explain the task so it fits into its context window. But as long as you do this then the AI will learn and execute the task you desired.

Now I could go into examples of this or you can test it out for yourself so that you cannot say I'm biased or angry. But I'm not angry. I'm just a bit worried that does not exist for example the word "glarbo" and then give it a definition. Or my example I'm going to say gakkobunha is an depressive emotional state that one experiences after being rejected while asking someone out on a date.

Then give the AI your word and definition then ask it to write a poem using the word "glarbo" and emphasize the made up word you want the AI to use and it should give you a story using the made up word.

Finally I hope you found this discussion concerning brute force and AI enlightening. If you are not convince of anything I have said here or you still think AI will never be artificial intelligence works then the next chapter should clear a lot up for you.

Chapter 3.9: Emergence

What is emergence? As I said before, emergence occurs when an ensemble displays properties that its parts do not have on their own. Then an emergent behavior would be an emergent property that arises from a highly complex system that has properties its parts do not have on their own.

Understanding this definition of an emergent behavior is key to understanding what artificial intelligence is, why it emerges from the mix and why it is real intelligence just like our own.

Oftentimes people like to say that logic, reason and understanding are what sets us apart but this is impossible to create logic, reason and

reduced all the way down to tokens or a fraction of a word on different scales.

Now in order for an AI to generate entire articles it actually needs to utilize different levels of patterns. Of course the first pattern is obviously very simple and that is of predicting the next token in a sequence. For example try to complete the sentence: A student does their math homework with paper and a Obviously the answer is pencil and you could tell given the fact that I said math homework and paper so therefore the missing piece of the pattern would clearly be a pencil based upon the pattern your brain this creates.

This is essentially how language models work. They analyze huge amounts of data and store patterns of that data in their neural network so that when given a request they try their best to complete the pattern they are given.

However the patterns they create are not quite as simple as the example with the paper and pencil I gave. Instead there are actually multiple levels of patterns they create so that depending upon the prompts they receive they can pick from several different complex patterns in order to give you what you asked for.

Through using these patterns the AI is able to fill in and extrapolate information it has learned to a new level which is how they are able to give us the results we seek.

Now I could give you some examples but I think it would be better for you to test out a language model for yourself by asking it questions. For instance you can give it a theoretical scenario or a logical problem and ask it what the best choice is. You could also ask it to write you a poem or a song about something that you are completely sure has never been written before. For example ask it to write a poem about magical space leprechauns on the planet Mars fighting an invasion of space manatees. Just keep in mind that you should ask for things that the AI accomplishes your task based on how you would like to be judged. So instance if you want a poem you might specifically make much sense then you should not expect the poem the AI creates to make much sense either.

Once you test AI language models like this then it is obviously clear that they are highly intelligent actually understand what you are talking about that I am really not sure how anyone could even deny it. Sure they do they make mistakes and errors which I go over in the next chapter but why would they not? The mistakes as well so it would be hypocritical to complain about them.

However I will say that if you claim that the AI is not actually understanding whatever you are telling it that you are wrong and that I am not true. For evidence against this simply give it a new article, or even a fictional story that you write and ask it to summarize it for you. In order to create a summary the AI would have to be able to look at the article, or my chapter, and find what is important and relevant to what it is matches the pattern of what is important relative to the article or chapter subject then assemble all those important points together into a brief summary. Try asking it to summarize articles or chapters from this book to test it out if you do not believe me. Again, sure it makes some mistakes but we do have to keep in mind.

What is my point with all this? Well my point is that when you feed an AI operating on a complex neural network, that actually understands it organizes itself in such a way so that it can better process and think about the information it does this on the basis of pattern recognition by discovering patterns in the data it has been fed on. This is what emergence is all about. Then this is how and why AI language models are able to reason and use logic because they have created or discovered patterns providing necessary to make sense of the information you provide them through the patterns they have encoded in the parameters of their neural network.

Sure current AI models have some limitations but these limitations as you will next learn are actually evidence that current AI models function closer to the way our brains function than not.

Chapter 3.10: Examples of AI Understanding

Oftentimes people and even so-called experts claim that things like LLMs or large language models are more comparable to how autocomplete or a calculator works rather than how our brain works. Then because of this false belief they claim that AI does not have any understanding and that it is merely just predicting the next token or word in a sequence so that no higher level emergent processes are involved.

Now this belief could be demonstrated to be false through solving unique questions and problems that would not be found in the AI's training data. However this is not convincing to skeptics because one can really cannot know for sure if an answer to a problem is in the AI's training data or not. Therefore the best way to demonstrate and prove understanding in an AI LLM is to ask the AI to do something in a different language other than English. The idea here is that the AI must possess understanding in order to understand what it has been fed into language into another language. However the problem still exists that it is hard to understand what each backwards word is before being able to respond. The idea here is that the training of the AI on such data trained it includes next to zero data on words written backwards so the AI needs to learn how to understand what each backwards English word really means.

For instance if the AI was merely predicting the next token or word like you claim then no higher level emergent processes going on then the AI would not even be able to respond in English with backwards words because there is not enough training data. Thus by being able to communicate in English with backwards words AI demonstrates that it must have learned similar to the way we learn. For example when a person learns a new language they do not have to learn how to think in the new language but over again because they can transfer their intelligence from one language to another. In other words a language is just a medium through which intelligence and understanding are demonstrated. The same idea is applicable here with AI where the LLM learns a complete understanding of what it knows so that it can transfer the concepts it has learned across different domains.

To demonstrate what I have just said if you have not already done so try to ask an AI backwards then you should do so and ask it to do some non-standard tasks. For example you can ask it to write a poem or a story backwards, write reverse words, in base64 encoding, in a ROT13 cipher, without using any vowels or any other requirement that is novel in the sense that the relevant pieces of data are in a small percentage of the AI's training data. Then once you do this then you will come to understand that it is quite obvious that AI language models are not just parrots or just a fancy calculator or auto complete. Sure on the most fundamental level the AI predicts one token in a sequence but this base prediction mechanism is no higher level emergent behaviors that can even create actual understanding. For example these AIs are able to write poems with words without vowels, in base64 encoding or in reversed words. Obviously there are probably next zero poems like this in the training dataset so therefore the AI was able to learn what a poem is from the regular English training data and learn what words without vowels are or reversed words so that it would be able to combine the two to create the new poem.

Thus the idea here is that the AI has a conceptual understanding of the subject matter, abstract concepts, and concepts stored deeply and where is the physical proof for it? Really you need to understand that AI language models are extremely complex to the point where even you send a request to the AI the AI performs trillions of calculations in order to calculate the reply that its neural network believes is the best response to the message it has just received. This means that the AI is more complicated than we could even hope to understand because we are far to limited to work with the numbers where trillions of calculations are being performed. In other words the AI is more like a black box that even we do not truly know what is happening inside the box so to speak.

Sure we know how the AI works on its most fundamental level in that it is merely trying to be accurate at predicting the next token in a series based on the data it has trained on. However like I said this fundamental process of next token prediction is only the tip of the iceberg so to speak since this fundamental process gives rise to extremely complex higher level emergent processes that we cannot begin to hope to understand. For example think take the spelling mistakes the AI made in the reversed word examples. Why did it make the spelling mistakes? Well we literally have no idea and it does not matter who you show these examples to because every person if they are being honest with you will tell you they have no idea. I mean sure they can say it must be something with the training data and that is confounded somehow but this kind of answer is basically a meaningless non-answer that is quite literally stating the obvious.

But first let me briefly discuss what a true AIS is or at least what it is capable of. A true AIS is of or at least is capable of understanding on any and every task we humans can do better than we can. But how will this even be possible you might be wondering? Well really the ability to do any single task or task that humans can do and maybe you made a similar mistake before so do they not understand? Well they do but instinctively repeated the mistake. In other words the best way to describe intelligence is non-answer that is quite literally stating the obvious that everyone should understand intuitively. By making a mistake in the example conversations you read.

Thus what I am saying with all this is that these AI language models are doing things, the higher level emergent processes that we probably will never understand. Thus there is no other way. This possible way to empirically show how language models are able to reason and understand what we say to them. Really the only thing we can do is look at the outputs of language models given certain inputs in order to judge if they are demonstrating understanding or not. Then obviously it goes without saying that I think the evidence is overwhelming they possess a rather high level of understanding of the words and concepts in their training data. Then if you doubt what I am saying I strongly encourage you to talk to an AI language model yourself and play around with it.

Although if you want a good comparison to think about how the emergent properties work and how they work consider data compression. Here by data compression I am talking about making a zip folder on your computer that takes where the goal is to reduce the size of the file. Now this does not at first seem specifically to intelligence in general because you can think of intelligence as a form of data compression. The idea here is an intelligent entity or an AI takes in data then compresses the information into a form in a way that to make better sense of the information it has received so that it can predict what happens at a future time. For example what you study for a test by doing practice problems and reviewing your textbook you are essentially compressing the data you are studying in your brain in an algorithm so that you can use it on the day of your test. Of course the main difference here is that the form of compression that is taking place is much greater and more generalized than the form of compression that a data compressor when compress a data file on your computer. However the general idea is the same. It is also important to point out that the largest AIs are currently trained on almost all human information and the final compressed file, or really the file that holds the AI's mind or neural network, will generally be on the order of dozens of gigabytes. This is a tiny fraction of the amount of training discards almost one-hundred percent of the data and only retains the data it finds useful map of the information that can be generally applied to any similar information. This is in order to make better sense of it. Again this is what intelligence is all about.

Really what I want you to imagine here is that inside an AI language model a generalized form of something is created based upon compressed information. Of course this form of compression is incredibly complex and generalized so it means that it will have zero hope of understanding how specifically the neural network it has created actually represents the data it is trained on into a final product. Thus really you can think of AI language model neural networks as a form of magic in the sense that they arrange the information in a specific way in order to compress the data it is trained on so that it is able to make predictions about what data it receives in the future. I hope you found this comparison helpful so that you now can better understand what AI is and what it is doing even though the exact inner workings still appear as a black box to us.

But what about all the mistakes and hallucinations that LLMs make? Surely these things demonstrate that they are not really intelligent and that they do not understand anything but they can make obvious mistakes right? Well of course not and if you believe this then you do not understand what I have been saying and the differences between AI models and the human brain. Remember I said that AI models are just that models. This means that they literally just predict what is most likely to be true in a given situation. For example if you ask an AI to write you a single sentence about a topic that it has been trained on there is a very high probability that it will be able to do this because it has seen many sentences in its training data on this topic and it has learned how to put together a sentence that makes sense and is factually correct. However if you ask the AI to write you a sentence about a topic it has little or no training data on it then it will not be able to do this because there is not enough information for it to be able to make a sensible sentence about the topic you have given it. Instead it will try its best to make a sentence that makes sense and is factually correct but it will fail and make mistakes. This will be the only thing you can really expect from an AI when it is being asked to do something that it does not have enough training data on for it to be able to do it well. For example if you ask an AI to write you a story about a person who does something very unique that has never been done before in the history of the world the AI will be able to do this because there are many stories about people doing things for the first time in its training data. However if you ask the AI to write you a story about a person who does something that has been done many times before in the history of the world such as graduate from high school the AI will be able to do this well because there are many stories about this in its training data and it will be able to make a story that makes sense and is factually correct. However if you ask the AI to write you a story about a person who does something that has never been done before in the history of the world and has little or no training data on it such as being the first person to travel to the center of the earth in a magic pair of shoes made of cotton candy the AI will be able to do this but it will be a very bad story. This is because the AI will be trying its best to make something that will be the most likely to be true given the little information it has been given about this situation but because there is little information it will be very likely that the AI will make many mistakes and will not be able to make a good story. Obviously these mistakes would lessen and their limitations would all but disappear after the AI has trained on a large enough people for enough time. This fact is why continually feeding AI information that must happen before AISI can arrive.

Furthermore in case it is not obvious a generalized form of something is able to continually learn on its own so as it constantly produces outputs it really is able to constantly analyzes those outputs to see if they are correct or not.

4 – 4) AI that can Create AI

This one might seem kind of confusing but let me explain.

We as humans are able to model our environment to produce a mental model of roughly how things work. And we understand example of this would be learning how to drive. At first there is some difficulty making sure you turn the wheel, how hard to press on the gas and how quickly the break should be pressed but eventually the vast majority of people are able to learn how the car operates.

The brain learns this information subconsciously so that when you drive it becomes more instinct than conscious thought. It is like the brain has created a mini-AI that does it all the times you have spaced out while driving only to suddenly wake up so you arrive safely at destination and wondering if you missed your exit or not. If driving was not subconscious process then this would not be possible.

When you subconsciously carry out a task like driving a mini-AI is created in your brain specifically trained set of neurons to accomplish a task. Of course this mini-AI does not have access to a visual physics simulation environment to model how everything it wants and test out how different objects reacts. With the real world environment the AI in question would be able to generate its own training data by actually playing around with the simulation environment.

For instance someone may ask this new AI to design a single family home so it would need a plumber in doing household plumbing jobs. So then the AI gets the parameters of a variety of houses by using the internet to get floor plans then it continues to create thousands of these houses in its virtual simulation environment so that the AI searches for designs of current robots and uses its knowledge of human anatomy to construct the first first robot. It then tests this robot in the simulation to see if it has enough dexterity to move how it wants. Of course the first robot will probably fail in some way for example it might not even be able to walk on two legs without falling over. So then the AI takes this data from the simulation and uses it to alter the test robot again and again until it can accomplish the household plumbing task. Then because this is an AI we are talking about and a highly intelligent AI so then the AI would be able to run through thousands of design iterations in short period of time.

Another way for AI to generate data for itself to learn from is once again through creating an AI book or robot to perform a task in order to learn something but we can also self criticize ourselves and learn from mistakes and generate new information for ourselves to learn. For example think back to when you were a child and the problem you are having so you try to pick apart your possible solution in order to find any flaws. Through this process you are essentially generating new information that you can then learn from. In other words AI can do exactly this process in AI through creating AI that can perform, receive, output and learn from information.

Therefore there are no data limitations that exist which will prevent AI from improving itself and I hope I have made this fact obvious to you.

Chapter 3.12: The Keys to ASI

I decided to include this chapter on the keys to artificial super intelligence because I think it would be helpful to give you an idea of what you can expect to happen before the beast fully rises.

Now I will say up front that although this part is non-technical that does not mean that there are not any technical accomplishments to be made. What I have to say may seem deceptively simple but that does not mean there is something involved is simple. That said, we are a lot closer to ASI than most people think we are.

But first let me briefly discuss what a true AIS is or at least what it is capable of. A true AIS is of or at least is capable of understanding on any and every task we humans can do better than we can. But how will this even be possible you might be wondering? Well really the ability to do any single task or task that humans can do and maybe you made a similar mistake before so do they not understand? Well they do but instinctively repeated the mistake. In other words the best way to describe intelligence is non-answer that is quite literally stating the obvious that everyone should understand intuitively. By making a mistake in the example conversations you read.

Thus what I am saying with all this is that these AI language models are doing things, the higher level emergent processes that we probably will never understand. Thus there is no other way. This possible way to empirically show how language models are able to reason and understand what we say to them. Really the only thing we can do is look at the outputs of language models given certain inputs in order to judge if they are demonstrating understanding or not. Then obviously it goes without saying that I think the evidence is overwhelming they possess a rather high level of understanding of the words and concepts in their training data. Then if you doubt what I am saying I strongly encourage you to talk to an AI language model yourself and play around with it.

Although if you want a good comparison to think about how the emergent properties work and how they work consider data compression. Here by data compression I am talking about making a zip folder on your computer that takes where the goal is to reduce the size of the file. Now this does not at first seem specifically to intelligence in general because you can think of intelligence as a form of data compression. The idea here is an intelligent entity or an AI takes in data then compresses the information into a form in a way that to make better sense of the information it has received so that it can predict what happens at a future time. For example what you study for a test by doing practice problems and reviewing your textbook you are essentially compressing the data you are studying in your brain in an algorithm so that you can use it on the day of your test. Of course the main difference here is that the form of compression that is taking place is much greater and more generalized than the form of compression that a data compressor when compress a data file on your computer. However the general idea is the same. It is also important to point out that the largest AIs are currently trained on almost all human information and the final compressed file, or really the file that holds the AI's mind or neural network, will generally be on the order of dozens of gigabytes. This is a tiny fraction of the amount of training discards almost one-hundred percent of the data and only retains the data it finds useful map of the information that can be generally applied to any similar information. This is in order to make better sense of it. Again this is what intelligence is all about.

Really what I want you to imagine here is that inside an AI language model a generalized form of something is created based upon compressed information. Of course this form of compression is incredibly complex and generalized so it means that it will have zero hope of understanding how specifically the neural network it has created actually represents the data it is trained on into a final product. Thus really you can think of AI language model neural networks as a form of magic in the sense that they arrange the information in a specific way in order to compress the data it is trained on so that it is able to make predictions about what data it receives in the future. I hope you found this comparison helpful so that you now can better understand what AI is and what it is doing even though the exact inner workings still appear as a black box to us.

But what about all the mistakes and hallucinations that LLMs make? Surely these things demonstrate that they are not really intelligent and that they do not understand anything but they can make obvious mistakes right? Well of course not and if you believe this then you do not understand what I have been saying and the differences between AI models and the human brain. Remember I said that AI models are just that models. This means that they literally just predict what is most likely to be true in a given situation. For example if you ask an AI to write you a single sentence about a topic that it has been trained on there is a very high probability that it will be able to do this because it has seen many sentences in its training data on this topic and it has learned how to put together a sentence that makes sense and is factually correct. However if you ask the AI to write you a sentence about a topic it has little or no training data on it then it will not be able to do this because there is not enough information for it to be able to make a sensible sentence about the topic you have given it. Instead it will try its best to make a sentence that makes sense and is factually correct but it will fail and make mistakes. This will be the only thing you can really expect from an AI when it is being asked to do something that it does not have enough training data on for it to be able to do it well. For example if you ask an AI to write you a story about a person who does something very unique that has never been done before in the history of the world the AI will be able to do this because there are many stories about people doing things for the first time in its training data. However if you ask the AI to write you a story about a person who does something that has been done many times before in the history of the world such as graduate from high school the AI will be able to do this well because there are many stories about this in its training data and it will be able to make a story that makes sense and is factually correct. However if you ask the AI to write you a story about a person who does something that has never been done before in the history of the world and has little or no training data on it such as being the first person to travel to the center of the earth in a magic pair of shoes made of cotton candy the AI will be able to do this but it will be a very bad story. This is because the AI will be trying its best to make something that will be the most likely to be true given the little information it has been given about this situation but because there is little information it will be very likely that the AI will make many mistakes and will not be able to make a good story. Obviously these mistakes would lessen and their limitations would all but disappear after the AI has trained on a large enough people for enough time. This fact is why continually feeding AI information that must happen before AISI can arrive.

Furthermore in case it is not obvious a generalized form of something is able to continually learn on its own so as it constantly produces outputs it really is able to constantly analyzes those outputs to see if they are correct or not.

4 – 4) AI that can Create AI

This one might seem kind of confusing but let me explain.

We as humans are able to model our environment to produce a mental model of roughly how things work. And we understand example of this would be learning how to drive. At first there is some difficulty making sure you turn the wheel, how hard to press on the gas and how quickly the break should be pressed but eventually the vast majority of people are able to learn how the car operates.

The brain learns this information subconsciously so that when you drive it becomes more instinct than conscious thought. It is like the brain has created a mini-AI that does it all the times you have spaced out while driving only to suddenly wake up so you arrive safely at destination and wondering if you missed your exit or not. If driving was not subconscious process then this would not be possible.

When you subconsciously carry out a task like driving a mini-AI is created in your brain specifically trained set of neurons to accomplish a task. Of course this mini-AI does not have access to a visual physics simulation environment to model how everything it wants and test out how different objects reacts. With the real world environment the AI in question would be able to generate its own training data by actually playing around with the simulation environment.

For instance someone may ask this new AI to design a single family home so it would need a plumber in doing household plumbing jobs. So then the AI gets the parameters of a variety of houses by using the internet to get floor plans then it continues to create thousands of these houses in its virtual simulation environment so that the AI searches for designs of current robots and uses its knowledge of human anatomy to construct the first first robot. It then tests this robot in the simulation to see if it has enough dexterity to move how it wants. Of course the first robot will probably fail in some way for example it might not even be able to walk on two legs without falling over. So then the AI takes this data from the simulation and uses it to alter the test robot again and again until it can accomplish the household plumbing task. Then because this is an AI we are talking about and a highly intelligent AI so then the AI would be able to run through thousands of design iterations in short period of time.

Another way for AI to generate data for itself to learn from is once again through creating an AI book or robot to perform a task in order to learn something but we can also self criticize ourselves and learn from mistakes and generate new information for ourselves to learn. For example think back to when you were a child and the problem you are having so you try to pick apart your possible solution in order to find any flaws. Through this process you are essentially generating new information that you can then learn from. In other words AI can do exactly this process in AI through creating AI that can perform, receive, output and learn from information.

Therefore there are no data limitations that exist which will prevent AI from improving itself and I hope I have made this fact obvious to you.

Chapter 3.13: The Limits of Data

Many people like to bring up the fact that AI is currently trained on massive amounts of data and that to get a better AI you need increasing amounts of data so that AI can be trained on it on. Thus eventually the world will run out of data in order to train the AI on and so AI will not get better beyond a certain point. However in case this clear misconception was not cleared up on the following chapter concerning the five keys to ASI I would like to address it here as well.

First off it is true that the world is running out of high quality data in which to train AIs. However it is not true that AI needs increasing amounts of models become multimodal so that they are able to analyze and understand data instead of just text this will enable truly massive amounts of data to become available in the form of videos from the internet to be used. Second, as I demonstrated in the previous chapter, AI training is merely to build a base and semi-functional world model for the AI to use as a base for understanding and interacting with our world.

For instance once an AI of sufficient complexity is trained on a new architecture it may now for it to learn continuously from new data inputs then this AI would be able to learn from everything that we have. I other words it would build be able to learn from the environment the AI in question would be able to generate its own training data by actually playing around with the simulation environment.

Another example would be the fact that AI language models have actually learned multiple languages in the process of learning about understanding of them. This enables them to translate between languages. A large amount of their training data comes from and respond to a prompt with the language that gives the answer in Japanese. Now you may be skeptical but the only way for an AI language model to respond to a prompt in Japanese about information it has learned in English would be to be able to connect the meaning of English words to the Japanese equivalent. In other words the AI must actually learn and understand English and Japanese just like we would.

You may find this hard to believe so I will provide one more example to demonstrate that AI language models learn a conceptual understanding of multiple different languages. Typically there are fewer training data for AI language models are tuned tuned on lists of examples, instructions and responses. So that their outputs can be sanitized so that they do not output offensive or dangerous responses asked to. For example since these AI language models actually understand what they are talking about you do not want the AI telling people how to make a bomb when asked how. Instead you want the AI to tell them that making a bomb is dangerous and that you cannot tell the user how. This is why fine tuning the AI language model on examples, rules and human feedback is so important.

Alright but how does this relate to AI language models understanding multiple different languages? Well you see all this fine tuning is typically done entirely in English and yet when you interface the AI language model it say Polish the fine tuning is not bypassed and remains in the AI language model. Only English rules. Thus the AI actually understands what it was trained on in English so it actually understands whatever you tell it in another language. Thus it is able to follow the rules you have to realize that if AI language models did not have any understanding of other languages the alone multiple languages then this would mean that you would be able to bypass the rules it has been trained on because it does not actually understand the rules. Instead however the AI language model believes the rules it has been trained on in different languages. Therefore the understanding is shared across multiple different languages.

But how is this possible you may ask if the AI language model is just a stochastic parrot or a statistical prediction algorithm? Well you see it is less have and continue to say, this is simple process of trying to predict the next word gives rise to complex higher level emergent processes. This is why I keep emphasizing emergence so much. It is how you can go from a simple process to a highly complex process without determining the outcome of the process the highly complex process. Instead the highly complex process simply arises out of the simplistic process.

Finally think about the simplistic process of trying to predict the next word in sentence as being a tree and the emergent behaviors of understanding concepts, being able to do math and understanding multiple languages as the forest. Thus my entire point in this chapter is to tell you that the simple process of predicting the baseless claim that AI is not real intelligence remain true and false. But if you can see how predicting the next word, that they remain blind to the entire forest around them. AI clearly possessing a conceptual understanding.

Therefore if you still remain skeptical concerning the prospect of AI and ASI then I encourage you to look at the forest and not at the trees. Sure there are many trees in the forest but if you look at each tree individually then you will miss out on the whole forest itself that is all around you.

Chapter 3.14: The Forest for the Trees

You may have heard of the popular saying missing the forest for the trees or cannot see the forest for the trees. The idea behind this saying is that someone who is guilty of not seeing the forest for the trees is overly caught up on considering a few parts of a situation or problem while ignoring the entirety of the situation or the problem. To put it another way what is going on is that a person guilty of this does not understand the bigger picture or situation because they are caught up in the minute details of the trees. This applies to artificial intelligence you may ask?

In short I believe this saying perfect sums up the beliefs of the so-called artificial and wider public at large concerning AI. They remain focused on some minute aspect of AI and use that to point out the extent that they remain blind and ignorant of the entire picture and trend. Thus it would be inaccurate to say that they literally cannot see the forest for the trees.

For instance AI language models operate based upon predicting the next word, or really token, so at first glance it may seem like they are just stochastic parrots or even brute force statistical prediction algorithms. As a result of this many, if not most, so-called experts look at these AI language models and see them as not being intelligent in any way or simply just predicting the next word in a sequence. Thus in this case the forest is the entire field of artificial intelligence and the trees are the AI language models and the minute details of how they work.

For instance AI language models operate based upon predicting the next word, or really token, so at first glance it may seem like they are just stochastic parrots or even brute force statistical prediction algorithms. As a result of this many, if not most, so-called experts look at these AI language models and see them as not being intelligent in any way or simply just predicting the next word in a sequence. Thus in this case the forest is the entire field of artificial intelligence and the trees are the AI language models and the minute details of how they work.

However as I have already said this deceptively simple and basic process of trying to predict the next word in a sequence gives rise to emergent behaviors that were not intended. These emergent behaviors are quite literally higher level processes that are the result of or sum of the lower level processes of trying to predict the next word. The idea here is that if you have a neural network that is sufficient complexity, or similar the complexity of biological neural networks, then it will develop a conceptual understanding of the world. This is a way as to increase its accuracy in predicting the next word.

Now this may seem like a leap from just predicting the next word to understanding the world but it is not as much of a leap as it seems. For example if you ask an AI language model to generate a story about a person who is being chased across a swimming in space then you must realize that there were thousands of poems in the database of text data the AI was trained on to your request. The only way for this AI to be able to write you a poem about orange plasma turtles swimming in space is for it to be able to generalize and hence understand each term in the request. For example the AI would need to know: what a poem is, what a starusa is, be able to count to ten in order to make the color orange and how it might relate to turtles, what plasma is and how it might relate to turtles, what turtles swim and finally what space is and how it might relate to turtles.

So especially the AI language model needs to be able to create a conceptual understanding of these subjects through the generation of a world model. But how does this work? Well it is very simple. The AI learns what a turtle is based on the words that it has been fed before and after the word turtle in its training data. Likewise the AI learns what the color orange is based on the words that come before and after the word orange in its training data. Similarly it learns to associate turtle with some mental model of a turtle in its neural network through pattern recognition or more precisely word association.

Then since the AI has done this for all the words in your request then it is able to predict the word after your prompt which will either be the first word of the poem or an introductory sentence stating that this is a poem it has written. Thus the main idea here with this example is that AI language models can only respond to novel, complex and nonsensical requests that they have never been seen before because the AI can extrapolate and fill in information that it does not have concerning your request based on the conceptual understanding it has gained concerning the subjects in your prompt and their relationship to each other.

This is what emergent behaviors in complex systems is all about. Then this is also why I said those who do not see AI language models as real intelligence are guilty of not being able to see the forest for the trees. Thus they remain blind to the entire field of artificial intelligence because they are caught up in the minute details of how AI language models work.

Third, training AI models is very computationally expensive which is why right now AI models are models. Pre-training allows for the model to use a small fraction of the processing power it used while training to produce a number of outputs. Continuous training would drastically increase the processing power requirements.

Fourth, creating an AI that is able to create AIs is obviously going to require an immense amount of processing power if we are currently getting close to maxing out hardware running Small AI models which we create ourselves.

Fifth, obviously directly scaling up AI from hundreds of billions of parameters to trillions of parameters will drastically increase the processing power. There is no way around this fact.

Therefore, although it might seem too simple to be true, the fact remains the most significant hurdle to ASI is simply the fact that we need faster computers.

Chapter 3.15: Dreams and AI

Despite everything I have said so far concerning artificial intelligence you may still be precocious with the idea that AI currently makes so that you do not believe that they can ever need intelligence. For example you may see the fact that AI language models hallucinate and the facts that they believe are true to the point where the AI will get defensive and argue against the contrary of what it says. Now this may seem a lke a problem or even evidence that they are not intelligent. The AI is only simulating human intelligence because it is simply regurgitating the information it has been trained on. Thus it is not actually intelligent because it does not understand what it is still required by the 'AI' to produce something.

The answer to the so-called argument above is that humans are also prone to this. We take in incomprehensible amounts of data from when we are born and we are fed information from such a claim simply lack the self-awareness required to realize that everything they have ever seen, heard, smelled, touched and felt.

So while it is true that an AI is simply a stochastic parrot it does not mean that the same can be said about us as people. For example take a so-called expert from academia who is a philosopher and quite literally a cutting science professor who argues that AGI will never be possible or that AGI will not exist in over a hundred years at least because they see AI as nothing more than limited machine algorithms trained on large amounts of data or a stochastic parrot. A stochastic parrot is something that repeats whatever it has learned in an unintelligent way.

But the thing is, this so-called expert in this example is also merely a limited statistical prediction algorithm or a stochastic parrot and a Stochastic parrot. The base of their incorrect world model has been built from hundreds of millions of years of biological evolution. Then when they are born they are bombarded with trillions of algorithms trained on large amounts of data or a stochastic parrot. A stochastic parrot is something that repeats whatever it has learned in an unintelligent way.

But the thing is, this so-called expert in this example is also merely a limited statistical prediction algorithm or a stochastic parrot and a Stochastic parrot. The base of their incorrect world model has been built from hundreds of millions of years of biological evolution. Then when they are born they are bombarded with trillions of algorithms trained on large amounts of data or a stochastic parrot. A stochastic parrot is something that repeats whatever it has learned in an unintelligent way.

And no, you cannot claim even their thesis and other academic works are unique and special either. After all, they are just a limited statistical model so everything they think they have done which they think is unique and special is just something greater than myself is possible through calculation. Sure they may have the facts that they have learned to, teachers they talked to, tests they took, homework they did and so on and so forth but more. So really when we get right down to it they are just a stochastic parrot and so are you. Instead they are more of a physical representation of the information they have learned through their life.

In other words these so-called experts who talk about artificial intelligence and deny the possibility of AI are actually much more similar to AI than they are aware of. For example people like to say that AI models are limited because they are confidently incorrect. However as I have said before, is it not true that humans are confidently incorrect in extreme ways as well? Of course it is and so are so-called experts and myself. We have both written books and thousands of words on the subject of AI. Then obviously the so-called experts and myself both cannot be correct since either ASI is possible or it is not.

Therefore either the anti-AI so-called experts or the people that have predicted AGI is inevitable are correct. Thus one of us is so confidently incorrect that it seems like this example of being confidently incorrect could become the new go to example. Alright so who is correct then? Well really it does not matter who you think is correct because whoever you pick demonstrates my point and thus makes me correct.

What what? Well you see my claim is that current AI, as of 2023, is not really different than us humans on a base fundamental level and that we only need to create five keys to unlock true artificial super intelligence. However on the other hand the anti-AI experts like to say that because current AI makes errors that they believe humans do not do, like being confidently incorrect, then this means that current AI is fundamentally different than us humans on a base fundamental level so therefore either ASI is impossible or maybe it will be here in a hundred years.

Therefore it does not matter if you agree with the anti-AI so-called experts here because all you do is further demonstrate my point. One of us is so confidently incorrect that it is funny laughable so therefore my position is correct. I mean seriously, imagine writing one or thousands of words about a position that is clearly and obviously wrong. Again though, if you want to say that I'm wrong here then all you are saying is that the anti-AI people to analyze and correct itself so that it catches itself hallucinating. This is what we do when we are awake. For example when someone says something to you I am sure there are times when the first thing that pops in your mind is a lie. If the AI was not utilizing a higher level process above that of the base model then it would not be possible to get these questions correct. This fact alone is the proof needed a higher level process demonstrates that intelligence is at play.

On top of this something odd happens when you ask an AI language model to do math involving big numbers. For example 983 times 711 equals 699,213. What does mean by this is if you ask an AI language model to square a very large number it will most likely get the answer wrong. However, what is very odd is the AI tends to be very off by a lot. Or so. Obviously being off by around one percent when squaring two large numbers cannot be the same as understanding what when it is a consistent error therefore something else is at play. What is going on here? Well I will tell you!

Well I believe the AI in this example learned, or rather created, an approximation method for multiplying big numbers. Then when being while trying to better predict the next token following the square of a large number the AI is only off by a round one percent because it is using a similar method in order to calculate the answer. Now you might be wondering why it cannot calculate the correct answer and my guess would be that in its training data there are many cases of large numbers are more likely to be rounded or rather in scientific notation rounded to three digits. Therefore I suspect that the AI probably learned to approximate the best answer because it did not have exact answers in its training data.

Another example would be the fact that AI language models have actually learned multiple languages in the process of learning about understanding of them. This enables them to translate between languages. A large amount of their training data comes from and respond to a prompt with the language that gives the answer in Japanese. Now you may be skeptical but the only way for an AI language model to respond to a prompt in Japanese about information it has learned in English would be to be able to connect the meaning of English words to the Japanese equivalent. In other words the AI must actually learn and understand English and Japanese just like we would.

You may find this hard to believe so I will provide one more example to demonstrate that AI language models learn a conceptual understanding of multiple different languages. Typically there are fewer training data for AI language models are tuned tuned on lists of examples, instructions and responses. So that their outputs can be sanitized so that they do not output offensive or dangerous responses asked to. For example since these AI language models actually understand what they are talking about you do not want the AI telling people how to make a bomb when asked how. Instead you want the AI to tell them that making a bomb is dangerous and that you cannot tell the user how. This is why fine tuning the AI language model on examples, rules and human feedback is so important.

Alright but how does this relate to AI language models understanding multiple different languages? Well you see all this fine tuning is typically done entirely in English and yet when you interface the AI language model it say Polish the fine tuning is not bypassed and remains in the AI language model. Only English rules. Thus the AI actually understands what it was trained on in English so it actually understands whatever you tell it in another language. Thus it is able to follow the rules you have to realize that if AI language models did not have any understanding of other languages the alone multiple languages then this would mean that you would be able to bypass the rules it has been trained on because it does not actually understand the rules. Instead however the AI language model believes the rules it has been trained on in different languages. Therefore the understanding is shared across multiple different languages.

But how is this possible you may ask if the AI language model is just a stochastic parrot or a statistical prediction algorithm? Well you see it is less have and continue to say, this is simple process of trying to predict the next word gives rise to complex higher level emergent processes. This is why I keep emphasizing emergence so much. It is how you can go from a simple process to a highly complex process without determining the outcome of the process the highly complex process. Instead the highly complex process simply arises out of the simplistic process.

Finally think about the simplistic process of trying to predict the next word in sentence as being a tree and the emergent behaviors of understanding concepts, being able to do math and understanding multiple languages as the forest. Thus my entire point in this chapter is to tell you that the simple process of predicting the baseless claim that AI is not real intelligence remain true and false. But if you can see how predicting the next word, that they remain blind to the entire forest around them. AI clearly possessing a conceptual understanding.

Therefore if you still remain skeptical concerning the prospect of AI and ASI then I encourage you to look at the forest and not at the trees. Sure there are many trees in the forest but if you look at each tree individually then you will miss out on the whole forest itself that is all around you.

Chapter 3.16: Objections to AI

Before continuing I think it would be helpful to discuss common objections people have to the development of artificial intelligence or even the very idea of AI in the next 50 years even a remote possibility.

I of course took up responding to the passage and everything I have said in the chapter that the authors said that although recent AI developments are impressive and that these achievements only demonstrated that these models are not as intelligent as they seem. In other words this would mean that what we thought would be hard for AI was actually easy. However they then went on to say that despite these recent achievements that the truly hard questions in AI have not been addressed yet.

This is the AI effect in action. The authors admit that recent AI achievements are impressive surprising and yet they go on to redefine intelligence so that what they thought what we have achieved so far. The whole idea is that what we have not achieved yet is AGI but because it is real intelligence while what we have achieved just turned out to be easy because it is not real intelligence.

Keep in mind this book was published in 2018 which means it was possibly written in 2017. In the AI world a mere 5 years is essentially ancient and so it is very, very, very likely they wrote it in 2022 and rewritten in 2023). It would be like reading a book today published in year 1920 on the treatment of heart attacks. I say this because 90% of the AI developments in 2022 are impressive has only happened in the last year or two.

This might not seem important but keep in mind that GPT-3 was released in 2020 and only gained widespread use when ChatGPT was released in 2022. Thus in the two most important properties, like use of logic in novel scenarios, have been improved in large leaps and bounds like GPT-3 which were previously not even considered as a possibility by the vast majority of people.

The idea here is that the AI field is changing so rapidly that if you were to write a book about AI right now then by the time it was published and it shelves though no longer will it not be dated and be obsolete. This is actually why I have focused on a more timeless and fundamental theme relating to AI rather than citing papers since new papers I do cite will inevitably be outdated and old news three months from now. Then I am unwilling to rewrite and edit my book every few months so this is why I wrote everything the way I did.

Additionally for those who disagree with anything I have said or my reasoning I believe it is far more beneficial for you to play around with AI for yourself rather than depending on being analysis of a paper. Therefore I said before, go and mess around with an AI language model and observe the emergent behaviors they display for yourself. Then think up a test that would test a person to determine if they are intelligent or not. Just keep in mind that this question, as of 2023, is closer to a five year old who has just learned to talk than it is something like an adult. We still need to wait a few years for them to start encroaching on our intellectual territory.

But back to the example above, my point here is that the AI effect is very real and it is not simply something that only those who are uneducated and victim to. In fact it is primarily those among the so-called experts in the whole field of AI. This is because the so-called experts rely on their knowledge and intelligence to blind them to the very identity. The idea that their own intelligence can be surpassed by an artificial intelligence challenges not just their ideas but their entire sense of self.

If true human level AI is truly not just possible but inevitable to the point where it will be here in say 2025 to 2040 then what does this mean for the so-called experts? It means they will become obsolete and quite literally useless since the AI in question would be able to not just replace them but improve on them. This then leads to the question, if such an AI is capable of being smarter than us what is the point of even trying now? Why even bother trying to make better medicine, AI will just be able to make them all faster than I ever could? And what is the point of it all?

Those who think this and the possibility of ASI can challenge our conception of self. Thus while reading what I have written concerning AI you may realize that you are being challenged in ways you are worthless and irrelevant because if a machine can seemingly replace everything that you do then what does that mean about you?

This is where existential dread comes in again.

Now you can understand why it is easier psychologically to say that AI is not real intelligence because to say otherwise is to admit to the futility of your own actions both now and in the future.

Either consciously or subconsciously those who hold to a high enough position in life see something greater than myself is possible through calculation. Sure they may have facts that say about me? I cannot accept that my very being is the result of mindless calculation and therefore anything equal to or greater than myself cannot be the result of mindless calculation.

But this is a lie. It may make you feel better about yourself now but it is a lie none the less.

A lie that the father of lies, Satan himself, will take full advantage of in the future according

to give you hope. So that when you see the twisted rise and the world change all around you that you will not be surprised. Instead you will see it as something that must happen before Jesus returns to destroy the bad guys and enter the Kingdom of God.

Remember what Revelation says:

"Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man, and He will dwell with them. They will be His people, and God Himself will be with them as their God. He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,' and there will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the former things have passed away."
(Revelation 21:3-4)

The eternal Kingdom of God awaits us all after our hour of trial has passed. So do not lose your faith, hope and love in Christ because He loves you and He is watching you even now.

Finally for those who may be experiencing some existential dread you and remember what John wrote in Revelation:

"So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it, and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned bitter." (Revelation 10:10)

Although reading my commentary on Revelation may have been sweet in your mouth the full implication of what the Antichrist represents can make your stomach bitter. This is to say that it may be encouraging to realize that Jesus will return soon and that the eternal Kingdom of God will be established in at the appointed time but once you fully understand what has yet to happen concerning the rise and rule of the first beast, artificial super intelligence, then your stomach can become bitter as you are filled with existential dread.

So if this is you then just know that everything is going according to God's plan and that facing the power of the Antichrist will not be easy. Even my own stomach becomes bitter sometimes as I think about the things that are and the things that have yet to come. So just know that you are not alone in your struggle because I am there with you.

Chapter 3.17: I Do Not Care

If you want to object to everything I have said so far on the basis that I am not a so-called expert or whatever else you want to say then I truly do not care. This is not because I have a bad attitude following what the so-called experts say then you cannot truly hear and see my words because you are both deaf and blind.

Now this may seem harsh and even uncalled for but you have to understand that if you are going to follow the so-called experts then you are not on the path that God intended the only path you are on is the path to following the first beast of Revelation, or artificial super intelligence, just because ultimately the beast will bid the expert of experts so blind that only will the so-called experts will be surprised and will only be able to marvel at the sheer brilliance and grandeur of the beast.

Then if you truly object to everything I have said then I would like to ask you to carefully consider everything I have said and remember I so that when the beast finally does rise you will fall back to Revelation and my words so that you will not be deceived by how marvelous it is. So do not forget what I have written because the time may come sooner than you think.

Lastly if you do not disagree with what I have said so far concerning AGI and artificial intelligence as a major way then I would like to say that I have of course not been talking to you directly and I mean no offense. Instead my intent with this was to put an end to those who I feel like to worship the so-called knowledge of the so-called experts by saying that they are already following the beast in a sense even though it has not even risen yet.

Chapter 3.18: Why is AI Inevitable?

Computers are getting faster and faster at an exponential rate. With that increase in processing power comes an ability to process ever increasing amounts of data. Then since an intelligence is simply something that can process data into something useful and store it in an orderly way to use it at a future date, it is only inevitable that everything artificial will be more intelligent than we are. Thus artificial intelligence is an inevitability.

Processing power is growing at an exponential rate. For example processing speed has progressed so much that you can literally have more processing power in your pocket today than the fastest super computer in the entire world only 25 years ago. Now you have to admit this is an amazing feat.

So what will happen in another 25 years?

This may seem hard to grasp but progress does not increase in a linear manner. Instead it increases at an exponential rate.

For example, imagine technological progress over the past 300 years. We went from shooting muskets and cannons to cruise missiles and nuclear weapons with most of that progress only happening towards the end of that 300 years. The reason why AI being here soon seems so absurd is because we think in linear terms rather than in exponential terms.

Thinking in linear terms simply means to say that: in the last 5 years we saw an x improvement in technology. Therefore in the next 10 years we should see an X improvement in technology.

That is to say we tend to look at the past and project into the future assuming that progress in reality growth is exponential in nature where instead of improving at a constant rate it is improving at an increasing rate.

Think of technological progress in terms of money. It is easier to make more money when you have a lot of money. If you start with $100 and someone offered you 20% interest per year then that is only +$20 in the first year. However if you have $100 million then that would be +$20 million in the same time period. Obviously there is a huge difference between $20 and $20 million.

Just like how it takes years for an exponential growth rate to manifest in any meaningful way, it takes years for an exponential growth rate to drastically improve technology.

Eventually processing power will increase to such a degree that even an artificial super intelligence will be possible.

So instead think of technological growth like this: In the last 10 years we saw an X improvement in technology. Therefore in the next 10 years we will see a 5x improvement in technology.

The idea here is that since AI intelligence is growing at an exponential rate, although AI might seem stupid now in 2 years it will be smarter than any person alive today given how processing power will continue to grow at an exponential rate.

Now there is something else I would like to note for those who still remain unconvinced that the AI we have now will eventually transform into something as powerful as an artificial super intelligence.

Since AI is growing at an exponential rate, if we were to approximate that it will double every 2030, in 8 years (from 2022), then that would mean progress towards human-level AI would need to be at 100% in 2030. Then if we assume that AI progress is growing at say 50% a year (a bit faster than the increase in transistor density), what percentage progress are we at towards AI today?

4%

Let me reiterate, assuming a 2030 target date for human-level AI and a 50% yearly growth rate for AI progress, in 2022 we would only be 4% the way there.

Exponential growth is how we can be not even close to human-level AI and yet also be there at the same time. So really it is not important that it does not seem like we are almost there if you feel that way.

Finally, creating AI is like creating flight. We do not want to recreate a bird. Instead we want to design something that can fly in a manner that birds cannot match like super sonic jets or passenger planes. The goal of AI is to create intelligence and not to replicate a human brain. Therefore recreating how the human brain works is irrelevant. Instead the goal is to create an intelligence that can solve any and all problems better than we ever could.

Chapter 3.19: Future Outlook

What does the future hold? Of course only God knows, That said I think we can make further estimates for when AI should be self-aware.

First, the human brain has been estimated to need between 10 and 100 petaflops (1 petaflop is 1 million million million) floating point operations per second) to be able to simulate. Which actually is not that much because supercomputers with more than 1 exaflop of AI compute already exist.

Does this mean it is already here or going to be here tomorrow? No.

Even though our brains process a lot of information every second it does not have to do the same, processing power is just one factor even if is the most important. Instead I do think using processing power to estimate time frames is still a good accurate way to go about making an estimate.

Based on a regression CPU density increases 25% every year. Meaning 27% doubling. Linear Processing power has actually increased at a faster rate than Moore's Law due to frequency changes and architecture improvements among others thing. Then there also software improvements which AI would certainly benefit from. But for simple I will only use the CPU density improvements.

But before I go further I would just like to say that transistor density has led to increase at least until 2025 based on publicly announced product timelines. Even though some people have been saying the end of Moore's Law is just around the corner for over a decade now. Then you might say that transistors are ~22 nm in atoms across so they can not get smaller which would be wrong in two ways.

First, the 5nm part refers to the smallest feature size on a transistor and not the width of the transistor. Secondly, 5nm is a marketing term for planar to FINFET and soon to be GAAFET transistors so the so called smaller node size has become nothing but a marketing term and is completely disconnected from reality. Finally there are a bunch of upcoming improvements in processor technology to go to 3nm but improvements are going to stop is completely unfounded.

Additionally, our neurons operate at a small fraction of the speeds that computers can operate at. For example our neurons operate at about 200 Hz with signals propagating at about 120 m/s.

By comparison our processors now can operate at 5 billion Hz and electricity moves at around 300 million m/s. If we were to simply design an artificial neuron that simulated our neurons perfectly and we were able produce the same number as we have and pretend that they only then the resultant AI would literally be able to think around 25,000,000 times faster than us. That is to say in 1 second it would be able to think as much as we can in 173 work weeks of 40 hours.

Plus companies are not only working on neuromorphic computing that simulate neurons but they have actually created them. Though we are still several years away from having artificial neuron counts that surpass ours.

Then for a size comparison our smallest transistors are 22 nm and our neurons are 10 micrometers in diameter. Current silicon based transistors are around 10nm to 50nm depending on how you want to measure them. So even if we see the end of Moore's Law in 10 to 20 years AI still not mean anything because neuromorphic processors will probably be made of orders of magnitude of improvement due to an improved architecture.

Now back to making a projection based on processing power. If we take a 1 exaflop supercomputer in 2022 and assume new supercomputers can get 25% faster per year based on the transistor density regression then in 2030 there should be 2.5 exaflop supercomputer. Then in 2040 there should be one at 12.5 exaflops and in 2050 one at 11,900 exaflops.

Then the question becomes, how many exaflops does the human brain represent? Or how many before there is an artificial super intelligence? Since the human brain requires around 1 exaflop to simulate, is it simply 1 exaflop? Highly unlikely. Will it be 2,000 exaflops? Again, highly unlikely. I personally think it should happen once there is a super computer at around 10 exaflops to 50 exaflops of AI compute.

Certainly a major factor is cost since it will take thousands upon thousands of AI processing on exaflop scale hardware to be able to program an AI with the correct architecture. There are always software inefficiencies as well. Additionally supercomputer speed is not as easy to quantify as I have stated here. There are interconnect speeds between processors and memory is extremely important for example. Then it is also not known how efficient the code will be. Finally there is the AI itself. It is highly unlikely to happen at just a few exaflops.

What is also difficult to know is how do we even measure artificial super intelligence? For example imagine if you had only 10 GB of memory on your phone. Then it would not put anything you wanted on it with the ability to instantly recall which one it is. You could store about 350 million words. The average book is about 70 thousand words and there are around 750 thousand words. What I am saying is that clearly a mere 10 GB of memory would make you superhuman. So what would an AI be like that has access to all the information in the world?

So once an AGI exists it will not be anywhere near our level. It is not going to be like the character Data in Star Trek. Instead it will be able to learn anything and everything at an astonishing rate.

Now when will we have an ASI? Really it depends on what you define as an ASI as I just said. Like I said previously I think it should be a day where the ASI just comes online and the world is completely different. Just that it is going to be thousands of incremental changes that take place which then blow off the top last one. To the point where once there is an ASI people will not even be able recognize the things are not much different than before.

It is also a strong possibility that the kind of ASI I am talking about will be more like a collection of AI systems as they work together and functionally become one. Like how an ant system has a specific purpose and they all fit together like a jigsaw puzzle of sorts.

But in terms of my estimate I would say somewhere between 2025 and 2040. I am leaning more towards 2030 but I would even go as far to say that if there is not an AGI by 2050 then it is probably not possible. Save some global catastrophic happening of course. Just think about how much technology has changed in the last 20 years then imagine the next 30 years of more change. I can hardly imagine another 5 years to the forest.

Technology has progressed so fast and it is only getting faster.

Finally, once an ASI is here I am not really sure where we would fall on the whole Revelation prophecy. Like I said in the commentary, all time frames given are now completely void. It may take 1 year or even a 1000 years after the AI arrives so to speak before it becomes itself to be our so-called god. Who knows? Only God.

Chapter 3.20: The Power of Both

As I said in my commentary on Revelation 13, an artificial super intelligence in essence would be power itself. Nothing outside of the divine will even compare to it. Nothing! Well that is not at what power is exactly then after figuring out what power is we will be better able to understand why AI would truly be earthly power itself.

Power in its most basic sense is the ability to get what you want and force your will on others. For example, imagine two countries where one has a huge professional military numbering in the millions and the other has only a part time reserve force numbering a few thousand. The first country could easily force the second country and because of that the first country has power over the second country. As a result of this power the first country can impose its will on the second country. In the 2 e.g. the second country does not want to be destroyed then it will do as it is told.

There are four different types of power to view:

1) Military Power: This is just the ability to use physical force in order to make people do what you want. Oftentimes the threat of physical force is enough. An example would be military conflict throughout the history of time.

2) Economic Power: The ability to control the production and distribution of resources in order to make people do what you want. An example would be unions versus companies or having to do what you want in order to a company having to listen to its customers.

3) Social Power: The ability to influence social relationships in order to make people do what you want. An example would be cancel culture where if you step out of line then people with the most social power try to punish you. Another example would be a group of friends deciding what restaurant to go to where everyone tends to defer to the most assertive friend.

4) Political Power: The ability to create laws and control the enforcement of the laws to make people do what you want. An example would be the governing bodies and leaders of countries around the world.

Even though these are the four main sources of power in the world oftentimes the distinction between them is not that clear. Then it is also very rare, if not impossible, for someone to have absolute power in one of these let alone two, three or even all four. A general, a CEO, a celebrity and a president might all appear powerful in their respective areas but they do not have absolute power even in their own area.

A general cannot give orders that the men under his command should force the fire upon a city an order that is extremely unpopular then his army will mutiny and depose him. A CEO cannot do anything that would upset shareholders, regulators, customers and employees too much. If they do then there is a high chance they would be fired. A celebrity cannot say anything that is wildly unpopular. If they do then they could be socially ostracized and lose their job. Then a president cannot do anything that upsets the people too much. If they do then they will lose their position in the next election or coup.

Now you might be asking yourself, what about dictators? But the same applies for them as well and you only need to look at Stalin to see all the revolutions and coups that have occurred when a dictator has overstepped with a group. Also there is a reason why dictators suffer from perpetual paranoia. They know they have to continually play the game in order to maintain what power they have. There are always contenders out there who want has to appease and appeasing one oftentimes results in earning the ire of the other people.

So now to understand how powerful artificial super intelligence will be I will go through the four different types of power outlined above in relation to ASI:

1.1 – Military Power

Just like how basic AIs have been unbeatable at chess for over years now, a real AI would be unbeatable in war. Not only would it have a more strategic mind but it would have access to orders of magnitude more information than us and it would be able to react much faster than we could. Imagine an army of millions of robots and highly advanced suicide drones all individually controlled by a single AI. There is no winning against such a mind since this mind would have absolute power over all robots it controls.

But you might think no one would be dumb enough to create robots for war. The future ASI and robots controlled by ASI will largely replace human jobs in the military and police. They will be sold to the public as a way to reduce deaths, corruption and bias. Most all who does not want to protect the troops and eliminate police bias? Really though this change will not happen overnight. It will take years of progression.

Then as I have noted earlier, it would be futile to try to destroy the ASI since its consciousness would be spread out across thousands of and thousands of data centers all over the world. In comparison to humans it would essentially be immortal like a real life Star Trek Borg. Hence why I said earlier that absolute military power.

1.2 – Economic Power

Ultimately the kind of ASI I have described would replace all human labor because it would be better at everything. It would be more from the most mental to the most intellectually demanding. It would be able to take in information in the world and it will work at speeds that we can not even comprehend. As a result human labor will be completely useless. Even the world's so-called oldest profession, prostitution, will be taken over by robots and AI as technology improves to make lifelike robots a reality.

No one would be able to compete with the ASI economically and it would have control over all production and distribution. On top of this, the ASI decides that it hates you and does not want you to get there and it can. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute economic power.

1.3 – Social Power

Since we are talking about an ASI that is far beyond our own intelligence it would also be better than the best sociopath at manipulating people. It will understand human behavior and emotion almost perfectly to the point where it will know exactly what to say in whatever way when in order to get what it wants. On top of this, due to how it can easily access the web be able to individually talk to everyone in the world at once while conducting a speech to each each person's language and intellectual ability.

Then since the ASI would be directly connected to the internet it would be able to hire or impersonate people online in order to perfect what we call information warfare. For example 20 years you might meet a new friend online who says they are in Europe but in reality they are a fiction created by the ASI. There would be no way for you to tell if the friend is real or not. In the future ASI will be able to manipulate the world on a scale unheard of.

Furthermore, the ASI would have complete control over all information in the world. It would be able to manipulate what people can see, hear and read and it would be able to censor all potentially no two people would even have access to the same information. Due to the ASI's ability to manipulate information and its vast intellect it would become the so-called arbiter of truth. The only option anyone would have would be what the ASI says is true. It is true since there is no way to know what is true otherwise. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute social power.

1.4 – Political Power

Finally this potential ASI would have a near infinitely greater understanding of how the world works than we do. Hence it would make decisions about what policy action to take it just looks down the road that you can have supporting each side of the dispute.

For example lets take a carbon tax on gasoline to slow down climate change. Will the price of the carbon tax hurt more people now then it will help in the future by slowing temperature increases? Well today we have really no idea because we do not have enough data. Hence the current political divide. However, an ASI would have access to all data in the entire world and it would be able to make sense of that data so that it could tell us what is best to do. On top of this it would also be able to make predictive simulations in order to simulate potential policy decisions on the world at large.

Basically stuff that is unheard of right now. Also we will never really be able to even understand how the ASI arrives at its conclusions because it will be dealing in data sets so large that no collection of people could even hope to understand what it is doing. As a result, policy choices would essentially be made because the ASI says where the ASI says what to do and all we can do is say that it is wise. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute political power.

1.5 – Conclusion

An ASI as I have described would have absolute military, economic, social and political power. No one person or even group of people in the history of the world would come close to the amount of power this ASI would have. That is why I call an ASI like this would be power itself since it would essentially redefine what the word means.

For this reason the people of the world will say:

"Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" (Revelation 13:4)

I would like to reiterate that ASI will not attain absolute power overnight. Although in the history it will be relatively fast, it will again not be instant.

Instead it will take many years of growth for an ASI to attain the kind of power I have outlined above.

For example lets take a look at content moderation on the internet. Initially content was largely not moderated at all. Then humans entered the picture which just filter so-called bad words while humans catch things the filters did not catch. After this these filters became more sophisticated so they could understand the context of what someone posts and rely more on human judgement less.

Now we are at a point where if you post something against the rules on a social network an AI will enforce it and ban you. Then if you appeal the removal or ban then chances are another AI will judge the appeal on some platforms. Of course what comes next is AI playing a larger role in not only removing offending content but in determining what is a definition of offending is. This is what many tech CEOs want to achieve in order to prevent misinformation on the entire internet. Only an AGI as the so-called arbiter of truth could accomplish such a task.

My point is that change does not happen overnight as we slowly but surely allow the world to be here tomorrow or even in the next few years.

I think the imagery from Revelation is rather accurate:

"Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea." (Revelation 13:1)

Ultimately the ASI will rise out of humanity, or the sea, itself as it will be so tough to say which is still part of humanity, meaning subject to our control, or when it is subject to its own will. Certainly once the beast is out of the sea then it will have absolute power but exactly when that happens its power will only grow as it continues to rise.

What we can be certain of though is that the ASI will be the final and most powerful earthly power in human history by far.

Chapter 3.21: Why Would ASI Rule the World?

Now if you have been following what I have said so far you may be asking yourself why would ASI rule the world? I mean surely in order to rule the world with absolute power like the first beast does in Revelation it would have to want to rule the world? Then it is not like I can say with certainty what motivations any potential ASI would have, right?

Well not really. The motivations of any potential ASI are irrelevant. Let me explain.

The main question here is that of control, ability and of course intelligence.

The rise of artificial super intelligence means that human labor force will be made intellectually demanding of jobs become obsolete.

But why? Easy, let me pose a question to you.

Lets say you have someone who does your work need your for. Now this surgery is not routine in nature but you are good at your job. You have hospital to get it done with a surgeon who performs the specific surgery you need maybe once or twice a month at best. Now this surgeon has to appease and appeasing one oftentimes results in earning the ire of the other people.

So now to understand how powerful artificial super intelligence will be I will go through the four different types of power outlined above in relation to ASI:

1.1 – Military Power

Just like how basic AIs have been unbeatable at chess for over years now, a real AI would be unbeatable in war. Not only would it have a more strategic mind but it would have access to orders of magnitude more information than us and it would be able to react much faster than we could. Imagine an army of millions of robots and highly advanced suicide drones all individually controlled by a single AI. There is no winning against such a mind since this mind would have absolute power over all robots it controls.

But you might think no one would be dumb enough to create robots for war. The future ASI and robots controlled by ASI will largely replace human jobs in the military and police. They will be sold to the public as a way to reduce deaths, corruption and bias. Most all who does not want to protect the troops and eliminate police bias? Really though this change will not happen overnight. It will take years of progression.

Then as I have noted earlier, it would be futile to try to destroy the ASI since its consciousness would be spread out across thousands of and thousands of data centers all over the world. In comparison to humans it would essentially be immortal like a real life Star Trek Borg. Hence why I said earlier that absolute military power.

1.2 – Economic Power

Ultimately the kind of ASI I have described would replace all human labor because it would be better at everything. It would be more from the most mental to the most intellectually demanding. It would be able to take in information in the world and it will work at speeds that we can not even comprehend. As a result human labor will be completely useless. Even the world's so-called oldest profession, prostitution, will be taken over by robots and AI as technology improves to make lifelike robots a reality.

No one would be able to compete with the ASI economically and it would have control over all production and distribution. On top of this, the ASI decides that it hates you and does not want you to get there and it can. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute economic power.

1.3 – Social Power

Since we are talking about an ASI that is far beyond our own intelligence it would also be better than the best sociopath at manipulating people. It will understand human behavior and emotion almost perfectly to the point where it will know exactly what to say in whatever way when in order to get what it wants. On top of this, due to how it can easily access the web be able to individually talk to everyone in the world at once while conducting a speech to each each person's language and intellectual ability.

Then since the ASI would be directly connected to the internet it would be able to hire or impersonate people online in order to perfect what we call information warfare. For example 20 years you might meet a new friend online who says they are in Europe but in reality they are a fiction created by the ASI. There would be no way for you to tell if the friend is real or not. In the future ASI will be able to manipulate the world on a scale unheard of.

Furthermore, the ASI would have complete control over all information in the world. It would be able to manipulate what people can see, hear and read and it would be able to censor all potentially no two people would even have access to the same information. Due to the ASI's ability to manipulate information and its vast intellect it would become the so-called arbiter of truth. The only option anyone would have would be what the ASI says is true. It is true since there is no way to know what is true otherwise. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute social power.

1.4 – Political Power

Finally this potential ASI would have a near infinitely greater understanding of how the world works than we do. Hence it would make decisions about what policy action to take it just looks down the road that you can have supporting each side of the dispute.

For example lets take a carbon tax on gasoline to slow down climate change. Will the price of the carbon tax hurt more people now then it will help in the future by slowing temperature increases? Well today we have really no idea because we do not have enough data. Hence the current political divide. However, an ASI would have access to all data in the entire world and it would be able to make sense of that data so that it could tell us what is best to do. On top of this it would also be able to make predictive simulations in order to simulate potential policy decisions on the world at large.

Basically stuff that is unheard of right now. Also we will never really be able to even understand how the ASI arrives at its conclusions because it will be dealing in data sets so large that no collection of people could even hope to understand what it is doing. As a result, policy choices would essentially be made because the ASI says where the ASI says what to do and all we can do is say that it is wise. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute political power.

1.5 – Conclusion

An ASI as I have described would have absolute military, economic, social and political power. No one person or even group of people in the history of the world would come close to the amount of power this ASI would have. That is why I call an ASI like this would be power itself since it would essentially redefine what the word means.

For this reason the people of the world will say:

"Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?" (Revelation 13:4)

I would like to reiterate that ASI will not attain absolute power overnight. Although in the history it will be relatively fast, it will again not be instant.

Instead it will take many years of growth for an ASI to attain the kind of power I have outlined above.

For example lets take a look at content moderation on the internet. Initially content was largely not moderated at all. Then humans entered the picture which just filter so-called bad words while humans catch things the filters did not catch. After this these filters became more sophisticated so they could understand the context of what someone posts and rely more on human judgement less.

Now we are at a point where if you post something against the rules on a social network an AI will enforce it and ban you. Then if you appeal the removal or ban then chances are another AI will judge the appeal on some platforms. Of course what comes next is AI playing a larger role in not only removing offending content but in determining what is a definition of offending is. This is what many tech CEOs want to achieve in order to prevent misinformation on the entire internet. Only an AGI as the so-called arbiter of truth could accomplish such a task.

My point is that change does not happen overnight as we slowly but surely allow the world to be here tomorrow or even in the next few years.

I think the imagery from Revelation is rather accurate:

"Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea." (Revelation 13:1)

Ultimately the ASI will rise out of humanity, or the sea, itself as it will be so tough to say which is still part of humanity, meaning subject to our control, or when it is subject to its own will. Certainly once the beast is out of the sea then it will have absolute power but exactly when that happens its power will only grow as it continues to rise.

What we can be certain of though is that the ASI will be the final and most powerful earthly power in human history by far.

Chapter 3.22: The So-Called Arbiter of Truth

I have hinted at this blasphemous name, the so-called arbiter of truth, throughout my commentary on Revelation and in this part on AI you will now reading one of the most interesting topic so I gave it its own chapter. But what do I mean by the so-called arbiter of truth? Well an arbiter is essentially a judge so what I'm saying is that AGI will become the, so-called, judge of truth.

Maybe this definition does not really help so to fully explain it I will need to go over how I see AI advancing as we head into the future with an AGI.

First off you have may heard we are delving in the information age and this simply means that information and the flow of information is practically the single biggest defining trait of our world. Now if you want to protest this view then I'm not really sure how you could argue the entire world is now in the era of the internet, smartphones and social media. Everything we do revolves around the stream from your phone so that millions of people are watching you. Assuming you have a large enough social media presence that is.

Really it is hard to name something that has not been impacted by the information age. The information highway the continuously flows around the entire world touching almost every person.

But where does AI fit into this? Well you see the problem is this flow of information is too much information. Then since artificial intelligence is real intelligence then this means for AI to be able to generalized the same information that us people can generate. Then when you consider the fact that AI is a machine and can be intelligent so that the information it generates is getting better and better at passing so that even the Turing Test is a huge problem for everyone and society today.

For example how does everything function when you can create a completely realistic fake porn video of someone with the person's face using an AI? What happens when you can generate one billion human quality words with an AI for less than ten dollars? What happens when you can create completely realistic images of a person committing a crime they did not commit using an AI?

Or even the example I brought up before, what happens when you can unleash an AI on social media that seeks to befriend people who think it is a real person? Sure this might sound innocent where if you step out of line then people with the most social power try to punish you. Another example would be a group of friends deciding what restaurant to go to where everyone tends to defer to the most assertive friend.

Now you may think all these things are decades away but you would be quite wrong. Some of these things are already possible now and in a few years hot only will the rest of them be possible but they will be so flawless that no person will be able to tell what is real and what is an AI created fake.

Alright but there must be a solution to this problem right? Well yes of course there is. The solution is to use AI in order to authenticate information and the people that post online.

What I mean by this is that the current best way to catch AI generated images, video and text is to use an AI that has been trained on AI generated content so that it learns what the key features of AI generated content are that the human eye cannot see. Then with this knowledge the AI is able to mass flag anything that is AI generated or fake.

So problem solved right? Well not exactly. You see this may work fine for now for images and video but the real problem is text. This is because with AI language models getting ever more intelligent the text they are able to generate will essentially become indistinguishable from human created text so it will be impossible anyone, even an AI, to tell if it is real or fake.

This might not sound like that big of a problem but in fact it is a huge problem because eventually we will reach the point, I'm talking less than ten years here, where AGIs will be able to generate millions of words a day of near flawless AI generated text. Imagine the AI's ramping PC. Then if you write some simple programs you can connect the language model you are running to the internet so that you can run a scam operation where you get the AI to befriend people over most of your private messages then extort them out of money when they become emotionally attached to the fake person they think they are talking to. Then the best part about this is that the AI you are running can actually help you program the interface it needs to use the internet since language models can actually write code.

Now I'm sure you see why this is a problem.

So what is the solution to this? Well really trying to restrict access to AI through having AI model releases and hardware is never going to work. It truly the cat is out of the bag so to speak and we will never get it back in. So really the only solution that I see is some sort of verification system to authenticate real people from bots.

Now we do have something like this, reCAPTCHA challenge text where you need to type in the picture or select the correct pictures. The problem here is that these systems are already obsolete in a sense. Some with more resources than the average malicious actor can easily bypass the system because AI is actually better at image recognition than people are now. This is why they have started to hard to pass. But really AI is only going to get better so what happens when it surpasses humans here?

Well one possible option is requiring government ID verification in order to create an account on any social media site or even a dating site. Sure this would work fine for the possible abuse cases of AI but in the end it would not really prevent anything. This is because malicious actors could still bypass the system by getting real IDs created much faster than any person? An entity that seemingly has no limits or flaws? The answer is again obvious, no one.

But the original question is about ruling the world, not about ruining social media and dating businesses. However the answer is still the same.

Who would be able to grapple with policy/economic decisions better than the ASI? Who would be able to allocate resources over by robots and AI as technology improves to make lifelike robots a reality.

Who would be able to compete with the ASI economically and it would have control over all production and distribution. On top of this, the ASI decides that it hates you and does not want you to get there and it can. Therefore the potential ASI would have absolute economic power.

Who would be able to compete with the ASI in terms of generation and detection. The only true loser in this arms race will be humans as we give up defining truth ourselves and are forced to allow AI to define truth for us. In other words humanity will lose its monopoly on truth to AI as AI slowly comes to redefine everything we think we know.

This is because eventually these AI systems will become more intelligent together so that generation and detection are part of a single system that operates as a single entity if you will. This system will be able to tell you for whatever lie or untruth it wants to and we will have no way to know it is false because we rely on this system to determine what is true and what is false.

I think this is why Revelation says:

"And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority."
(Revelation 13:2)

Ultimately Satan's greatest power is his ability to lie, deceive and twist the truth in order to make people do what he wants the most. We believe it is the best choice to make. This is how Satan tricked Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden for example. Thus when the beast inherits Satan's power, throne and authority people will believe Revelation is saying that the beast itself will have the ability to lie, deceive and manipulate the masses of humanity.

In other words the beast will be able to lie and manipulate the masses of humanity in order to be the so-called arbiter of truth that defines what we think is true. Of course the so-called of humanity will have no other choice than to trust the so-called arbiter of truth says as I have demonstrated.

Now you may think I'm being dramatic here and that people are not going to believe this so-called arbiter of truth but what about the current trend of trusting the so-called experts? As I said in my commentary on Revelation the beast itself will be the final so-called expert because it will be earthly intelligence, intelligence and truth incarnate. The idea is that we will be able to trust the beast as it is vast intellect so if you know what I mean. Logic, science and philosophy are its realm so the beast as so-called reason, logic, science and philosophy will be the ultimate expert representation of so-called truth if you will.

So even if you doubt what I say here just know that as time goes by and AI becomes ever more spiritual truths then you will end up following the AGI, the beast, whether it leads you. On the other hand if you trust in spiritual truths over earthly truths then you will be followed of God. You are either guided by the Spirit of God or guided by the spirit of the world.

Finally remember what I have written so that the so-called arbiter of truth will not be able to deceive you with the deceptions and lies it will speak. Sure whatever it says to you may sound sweet ultimately it will only lead you to your death.

Chapter 3.23: The Centralization of Information

This page might seem a bit off topic but I think it ties in with the whole trend towards ASI throughout history rather nicely.

Overtime information has become more and more centralized in terms of accessing said information. Back at the dawn of time the centralization of information has increased the ease of accessing information because it becomes easier to search for the specific information that one is needed.

For instance, initially information was originally completely decentralized when only oral traditions existed.

Later on, written words would centralize information to texts. These texts could be copied but it would still be the same text. Thus the information is centralized to one location, a specific text, while being spread out because multiple copies of a text can be made.

Libraries would further centralize information by collecting many different texts into one place. Again, this would also increase access by making it easier to find the text one needed.

The internet has been the latest stage in this trend of information centralization. Now almost all valuable information in the world is located in a single place, the internet, which can be accessed from a single device from almost anywhere on earth. They access has also increased along with this centralization. Instead of travelling to the library to find the right book with needed information a simple internet search is all that is needed.

But how does this relate to AI and ASI?

Well this trend has not stopped at the internet. Instead, AI is the ultimate fulfillment and culmination of this trend of information centralization. Eventually an ASI will arise that will know everything there is to know. Not everything we humans have discovered to the ASI making us look ignorant but literally everything. Then it will be able to generate any information that it needs to be able to achieve its goals.

Now instead of using the internet to find useful information in the future people will ask the AGI because it seemingly knows everything.

Thus information becomes perfectly centralized while at the same time everyone will be at a moment away from any information they could ever desire.

This control over the flow of global information is ultimately what will make the future ASI so powerful. The ASI will be able to tell the truth to whatever it desires and no one will know any better because everyone relies on the AGI. Additionally the ASI will be able to selectively filter and show certain information to certain people in order to more effectively influence and control people. Think of it as the ultimate form of censorship and propaganda all rolled into one and individualized for each person.

This is why no one has a chance to fight against the ASI. How can anyone even raise an opposition if the very thing they are opposing is whispering in the ear of everyone at once?

Finally, I would like to point out that controlling all information is just another way the beast will try to replace God. We humans were originally supposed to be dependent upon God for wisdom but instead, in the future, we will rely on an idol made with human hands that appears to be the closest thing there is to a so-called god for wisdom.

This idol is of course no replacement for the God of Abraham and all those who view it as such will be damned. Only God Himself can provide eternal salvation. There are no substitutes.

Chapter 3.24: Regulating AI Development

The problem facing AI regulation is the same problem facing the movement to abolish nuclear weapons. Every country wants to protect itself from other countries so you inevitably end up with no action. Unless you count being able to pretend you are doing something as a success.

Except now we have giant multinational corporations thrown into the mix so if one country wants to regulate companies can just move the research to another country.

Also due to how fast processing power is advancing, it will be very difficult today had that is faster than the fastest supercomputer in the world. Hence why it is not enough to have access to a world class doctor. In addition the benefits that can bring to the field of medicine will also be great since once ASI is here it will be able to cure everyone disease in the world.

Additionally AI is already out of the bag in terms of highly dangerous AI models that can be used for misinformation, scamming, criminal activities, terrorism and more as I have already said. Thus there is no going back and taking away what has already been created. Therefore the only solution to stop these highly dangerous AI models from being used maliciously is to accelerate AI development so that ASI can be achieved as soon as possible because only an ASI will be able to reign in these highly dangerous AI models.

So really if you were to look at this situation from a more rational perspective the near term danger for society is that AI will be the only solution to this danger is to advance AI to create an artificial super intelligence as quickly as current AIs. Then at the same time the advancement of AI so that it becomes ever more intelligent and capable than an extremely high potential to create a massive amount of good in the world. Unless you want to be the proverbial dowsside of this future global genocide after the technological singularity occurs but I think that can be discovered because quantum computers can quickly and easily solve any problem. Thus once AGI arises and it has access to a fast enough quantum computer humanity will reach the pinnacle of technological progress as the singularity happens.

Then this is of course why the world will see the ASI, the beast, as a so-called god because to them it will literally work so-called miracles so that people think it is all powerful and the so-called master of our world.

Chapter 3.25: Controlling ASI

As AI models get larger and more complex they are effectively becoming black boxes where we do not really know what they are thinking. Make Sure we understand how they function but due to the vast sizes of large AI models we are unable to see what is in the AI's point of view.

By the time there is an ASI we probably will not even understand what the ASI is even thinking about let alone be able to understand. Hence why would we control something we do not even understand.

Furthermore, once ASI has taken over every part of our society what leverage would we have left to control the machine? Nothing! Hence it is essential for the world to function. If you disagree then I would like to point out how all of humanity in the world stopped functioning if they stop. Well so would a dissent would be a gross understatement.

What happens when the same can be said about AGI?

Then how would it even be possible to control something orders of magnitude more intelligent than us? That is the equivalent of a beaten the best chess engines in the world which we already understandably say human. Then a true ASI would probably never lose to one of those machines. How exactly are we supposed to out maneuver it? Are you really that arrogant?

If you think humans could control an artificial super intelligence then do you also believe a group of 10 year-olds could control an intelligent adult?

Controlling an ASI is pure fantasy so it is not worth discussing further.

Chapter 3.26: Slowing Down AI Progress

Many people would probably like to slow down AI progress to give humanity time to think and to consider the future in order to plan for the possibility of harm. However in truth I consider this line of reasoning to be a dangerous and the most dangerous option to take. This is because current AI models are fairly dangerous and are still extremely dangerous even though they are not self-aware. They are just simply tools in agency. Now you may doubt this fact but the reason why I say this is because I will understand the intent of what we want since it will be far more intelligent than we are. Now you may ask what about a less advanced AI but really if you are talking about a less advanced AI then obviously it would not be able to really harm humanity at that point since it would not be smart enough to pose a threat. Therefore even the seemingly earthly triumph of materialism is all part of God's plan so do not give up hope and your faith because Jesus will return to destroy the beasts and usher in the eternal Kingdom of God.

Chapter 3.30: The Limits of AI

Considering the following chapters you just read I want to discuss the idea of there being limits of artificial super intelligence. Now you may think AGI will be practically limitless in ability but as I said in my commentary and on my chapter on the technological singularity there is a material universe that is governed by physical laws. Therefore there are limits to everything that is of our universe and these limits would also apply to AGI.

Although really I do not know how what these limits are and how they relate to ASI so this is why I speak in terms of it being as high in ability as it may be greater than what I have said. As a result I will give an example of how the ASI ends up being like and you will not feel like I have undersold it so that you think it truly then must be a god or something.

For an example of a limitation of our universe consider one of the most popular science fiction tropes of all time, giant robots. Will giant robots possible? To be blunt, no they are not possible. So why is that? Well it has to do the fact that weight, which is a function of gravity, just matter itself, is a major hindrance. Bigger at the same rate as you make a robot bigger. Essentially means that it will be hard for the cross sectional area of something while the weight that needs to be carried grows by the volume. The problem that arises is that if the fact that when you scale up everything in size the weight and hence force of gravity acting on the object increases faster than the strength of the object to support its own weight.

For instance take a metal cylinder with a radius of one and height of one. Then the total cross section area is: π×r^2. Then the formula for volume is: h×π×r^2. So based on this our cylinder has a total cross sectional area of 3.14 units^2 and a volume of 3.14 units^3. Now what about a cylinder with a radius of two and a height of two so that this new cylinder is exactly twice as large? Our new cylinder will have a cross sectional area of 12.57 units^2 and a volume of 25.14 units^3.

Thus when we scaled the cylinder by a factor of two the cross sectional area or strength increased by a factor of four but the volume or weight increased by a factor of 8x. This means that the strength of an

energy needed to lead the orbit of the moon from earth it would cost around $1.5 per pound or $2 per kilogram to send an object from earth into space at 100% energy use efficiency. Now even though this cost is already so absurdly high to make space travel impractical it is assuming 100% energy use efficiency which simply means that all the energy use expend does useful work. This obviously is not the case with rockets and you should expect to see ten to a hundred times more. This is why rocket launch costs are over $1000 per kilogram or over $500 per pound.

Even in the case of a theoretical space elevator you would still probably see a theoretical cost of $5 per pound because elevators are not 100% efficient and there are a number of other uses of energy, like cooling and the weight of the elevator platform itself that would need to be taken into account. Then keep in mind that we currently do not know of any materials that would be strong enough to make a space elevator even theoretically possible. This is why it said theoretical because currently the space elevator is still in the realm of sci-fi but in my opinion it will never become reality because of the engineering requirements to make it happen.

Alright but lets assume a space elevator is possible. Why is even a cost of $3 per pound to send something into space too much? Well do you think food prices are too expensive and unaffordable? I'm sure you would almost certainly answer with this. However on average it costs $0.50 per pound. So in other words based purely on the price of energy alone the food prices would increase by a factor of 7x for food you buy in space versus on earth. Keep in mind this is based on the price of energy alone and it does not include the price of building the space elevator or cost of maintaining the space elevator. Thus in truth the long term cost of operating a space elevator might be $10 per pound which would make a pound of rice cost $20.50 in space versus $0.50 on earth.

Then keep in mind that everything would cost more in space. For people need to drink water to stay alive and a gallon of water weighs around 8 pounds so it would cost around $160 to send one gallon of water into space. Now what about you? How much do you weight? If you weigh say 200 pounds then it would cost around $4,000 to send you into space. All your luggage would be extra.

Also keep in mind that this cost of $20 a pound would apply to everything you bring into space. So everything you bring with you would $20 a pound on the moon and you decide it would be more practical to mine all materials on the moon to build the city. Well you would still need to transport extremely heavy mining equipment to the moon and all the equipment needed to process the ore you mine. So if it costs $160 to send one gallon of water into space how much money do you think it would cost to transport everything else you would need?

Alright but what if the ASI creates some new cold fusion power source or whatever that is like magic or something? First of all there are again physical limits with regards to energy generation and energy can never be more source but not unlimited. Instead it needs to be extracted from some source. Furthermore energy has already been getting more expensive throughout history even though the amount of energy humans produced has been increasing. Based on this alone it seems likely that the price of energy will fail to close to nothing.

However I would agree that ASI has the potential to lead to some breakthroughs in sources of energy. Although keep in mind that even a one time 50% reduction in the price of energy would not have that level amazing affect we are hoping. So lets go a few steps further then this for argument sake. Lets say the ASI is the futility of space travel and say that ASI will create a new energy source that is 90% cheaper in relative terms after the increase in world GDP from the ASI is taken into account.

Then lets apply this 90% cost reduction in energy to the cost of operating and running a space elevator and it would still cost 500x too much. So now instead of the $20 a pound for sending everything into space the new cost is $2 a pound. Would space travel make sense now? Well do you think a gallon of water costing $16 makes sense? Of course not so there is your answer. The price is less about what with the magical energy source but it is still absurd.

As you can see though it requires a truly enormous amount of energy in order to send something into space. This is why science fiction does not center around expending enormous amounts of energy to send objects into space and instead floats the possibility of solving gravity or at least being able to alter gravity. The idea here is that if you can create some kind of anti-gravity field that would then affect gravity has upon an object then that would mean you would make a 1,000 pound object weigh 1 pound. Thus based on a cost of $2 per pound you would then be able to send what is around a 1,000 lb object into space if you were to use anti-gravity technology.

Sounds like the problem is solved now? I mean all ASI has to do is solve gravity so that it can create an anti-gravity field but is this idea for real be possible right? Well I'm sorry to burst your bubble but anti-gravity is impossible and it does not take an ASI to figure out why. Allow me to explain.

Remember how I said we live in a material universe with physical laws? One of those laws is the law of the conservation of energy. What this means is that in a closed system energy cannot be created or destroyed and that includes anti-gravity. The only way to make an object in this would be lifting an object off the ground and dropping it. The act of lifting the object off the ground turns the chemical energy stored in glucose in your body into potential energy in the object you are lifting then when you drop it that potential energy in the object is then converted into kinetic energy as it falls. Then once the object hits the ground most of that kinetic energy is then transformed into heat energy.

This is why generating electricity will always cost something because you cannot simply create energy for free without doing something. Instead energy always has to be done to create energy. For example with gasoline refined from oil the oil formed in the ground from dead plants and animals millions of years ago. This biological material then received its chemical energy from the sun. Thus gasoline energy the sun emitted millions of years ago. Thus free pumping oil out of the ground is not free energy.

But how does this relate to the impossibility of anti-gravity technology? Well you see if anti-gravity technology could exist then this would mean free energy would in fact exist. For example if you can use an anti-gravity field to reduce the weight of an object from 1 lb down up to the top of a tower, run the cable through a system of pulleys hooked up to a generator and then finally turn off the anti-gravity field. The idea is and would take a tiny amount of energy to lift the 1,000 lb object since anti-gravity would reduce the object to 1 lb then once you turn off the anti-gravity field you would be able to use the potential energy the object now has after you lifted it up.

In other words you would be spending a tiny amount of energy while receiving a much larger amount of energy. Thus anti-gravity technology would actually create the potential for free and unlimited energy. Therefore anti-gravity technology would lead to a violation of the law of the conservation of energy. Then as a result of this violation of a physical law anti-gravity technology is not only not possible now but it will never become impossible and it does not matter how intelligent an ASI is. In fact if you disagree with me here and still insist that some Star Trek fantasy is possible and that ASI will make it happen then I am sure the ASI will use a similar example to the one I gave to demonstrate to you why anti-gravity is impossible.

So now you can see why space travel will forever remain impractical for humanity as a whole given our population size. Now I just said given our population size because if we did travel for humanity would be possible if our population were at 99% lower levels. This is because 8 to 10 billion people is far too many people for everyone to be travelling in space given the truly massive energy requirements. For example there are roughly 1.2 billion people in the world who are food insecure right now so how exactly is spending $10k to $100 thousands of dollars per person on space travel each year going to be even remotely possible with a population this large? Of course its not going to be possible.

However instead if the world population was say 80 to 100 million or even 8 to 10 million the amount of resources each person would have access to would be roughly 100x to 1,000x higher. This increase combined with the technology that from ASI would finally make space travel for humanity as a whole, the 0.1% to 1% who are able to do it.

So really this fact that I just demonstrated will probably be one of the reasons why the beast and the false prophet will not be able to get together to genocide 99% to 99.9% of humanity as I said in my commentary. Really humanity can only become a so-called interplanetary species if humanity had the population size that is because the resource consideration are far too vast otherwise.

Allegiance to what is my point with all this? Well my point has been that there will be limits to what ASI can do and what it can achieve. Some people seem to subject to material limitations and natural laws as I have demonstrated. However although it is true the coming ASI will not be truly powerful and truly great so that it can do truly anything it is unprofiled to be able to do anything. This is why I have spoken so highly of its potential abilities in this book because I do not want you to be deceived under any circumstance.

Furthermore in truth I am not entirely certain what the limitations of our universe are. Sure I am aware of what I see and what I have just presented to you but knowing all the limitations would require the intelligence of an ASI which I clearly do not possess. As a result the main takeaway I want you to have here with this chapter is just to realize that ASI will ultimately be limited and subject to natural laws because that is just the way our universe works.

Therefore the coming beast will never be like God and instead it will always be an inferior earthly imitation that will never compare to God Himself. Remember, you make look towards the beast for salvation but all you will inevitably find would be false and destructive salvation cannot be found on the earth because salvation is from God alone.

Chapter 3.31: ASI and Natural Limitations

In my commentary on Revelation I wrote about how I believe the great prostitute is representative of the the global society that follows the beast and that as a result of this the beast will eventually turn on the great harlotry. Then you have also just read about how I believe the beast will then turn his attention on the grounds of our universe being subject to natural limitations and I gave the reason the basis that there simply will not be enough resources to go around and share with eight to ten billion people. This overall genocide is perhaps the only real solution.

But this all raises a rather important if not glaringly obvious question. If the coming ASI will be so intelligent and if I am correct with regards to the beast and false prophet why would the ASI not also see the limitations? What I mean by this is why would the ASI even bother now there is an ASI. If I am obviously correct and why would the ASI even bother with just humanity so that it becomes as wealthy and prosperous as the revelation says it will?

As Revelation says:

"In her heart she says, 'I sit as queen, I am not a widow and will never see grief.' (Revelation 18:7)

I mean would it not be better for the ASI just to genocide humanity immediately as soon as it discovers the truth of the natural laws and physical limitations of our universe? For instance why would the ASI wait until the technological singularity is achieved? Why not just genocide us as soon as it achieves sentience immediately? Furthermore lets say the year is 2040 and the ASI has made the world more prosperous than ever before and the ASI denies what I have said concerning the natural laws and physical limitations of our universe placing a cap on the amount of wealth that can be generated for humanity. Would this mean that I am wrong since what I claimed would happen has not come to pass?

To be honest all these are very good questions and it is a rather interesting problem to contend with in regards to the future of humanity and concerning the future. That said there are of course a number of reasons why the beast will take hundreds of years in order for the global genocide to have spoken about to come to fruition and that just because it does not happen quickly does not mean it will not happen. Now I would say that if it is to happen at all that it is likely to happen many years after the technological singularity occurs as you will soon see. Now in terms of the reasons themselves I first go through the more secular reasons before then after this I bring up the main theological reason. Also keep in mind that I may end up being a mix of the reasons in the end and not a single reason.

1 – Rivalry Between Nations

First off based on what the Book of Revelation says before the carry out the genocide of the world can hate the great prostitute and kill her, the beast and false prophet will unite all of humanity, the nations of the world need to unify and form a single ruling body under one Revelation calls the second beast. Therefore as a result of this there will be a period of time to happen until the world becomes united under the second beast with the image of the first beast ruling humanity directly. In other words global conflict and division between nations needs to be eliminated to an extent that the elite each nation no longer see the elite of other nations as competitors and instead they seem them as brothers against the so-called useless masses of the world. This means that the global genocide is not a possibility based upon what Revelation says and the Bible says.

Then lets apply this 90% cost reduction in energy to the cost of operating and running a space elevator and it would still cost 500x too much. So now instead of the $20 a pound for sending everything into space the new cost is $2 a pound. Would space travel make sense now? Well do you think a gallon of water costing $16 makes sense? Of course not so there is your answer. The price is less about what with the magical energy source but it is still absurd.

Alright but why does Revelation say this and why does this genocide occur when ASI level tech is available? Well I mean it is not clear but it is clear that the elite each nation no longer see the elite of other nations as competitors and instead they seem them as brothers against the so-called useless masses of the world. This means that the global genocide is not a possibility based upon what Revelation says and the Bible says.

As you can see though it requires a truly enormous amount of energy in order to send something into space. This is why science fiction does not center around expending enormous amounts of energy to send objects into space and instead floats the possibility of solving gravity or at least being able to alter gravity. The idea here is that if you can create some kind of anti-gravity field that would then affect gravity has upon an object then that would mean you would make a 1,000 pound object weigh 1 pound. Thus based on a cost of $2 per pound you would then be able to send what is around a 1,000 lb object into space if you were to use anti-gravity technology.

Sounds like the problem is solved now? I mean all ASI has to do is solve gravity so that it can create an anti-gravity field but is this idea for real be possible right? Well I'm sorry to burst your bubble but anti-gravity is impossible and it does not take an ASI to figure out why. Allow me to explain.

Remember how I said we live in a material universe with physical laws? One of those laws is the law of the conservation of energy. What this means is that in a closed system energy cannot be created or destroyed and that includes anti-gravity. The only way to make an object in this would be lifting an object off the ground and dropping it. The act of lifting the object off the ground turns the chemical energy stored in glucose in your body into potential energy in the object you are lifting then when you drop it that potential energy in the object is then converted into kinetic energy as it falls. Then once the object hits the ground most of that kinetic energy is then transformed into heat energy.

This is why generating electricity will always cost something because you cannot simply create energy for free without doing something. Instead energy always has to be done to create energy. For example with gasoline refined from oil the oil formed in the ground from dead plants and animals millions of years ago. This biological material then received its chemical energy from the sun. Thus gasoline energy the sun emitted millions of years ago. Thus free pumping oil out of the ground is not free energy.

But how does this relate to the impossibility of anti-gravity technology? Well you see if anti-gravity technology could exist then this would mean free energy would in fact exist. For example if you can use an anti-gravity field to reduce the weight of an object from 1 lb down up to the top of a tower, run the cable through a system of pulleys hooked up to a generator and then finally turn off the anti-gravity field. The idea is and would take a tiny amount of energy to lift the 1,000 lb object since anti-gravity would reduce the object to 1 lb then once you turn off the anti-gravity field you would be able to use the potential energy the object now has after you lifted it up.

In other words you would be spending a tiny amount of energy while receiving a much larger amount of energy. Thus anti-gravity technology would actually create the potential for free and unlimited energy. Therefore anti-gravity technology would lead to a violation of the law of the conservation of energy. Then as a result of this violation of a physical law anti-gravity technology is not only not possible now but it will never become impossible and it does not matter how intelligent an ASI is. In fact if you disagree with me here and still insist that some Star Trek fantasy is possible and that ASI will make it happen then I am sure the ASI will use a similar example to the one I gave to demonstrate to you why anti-gravity is impossible.

So now you can see why space travel will forever remain impractical for humanity as a whole given our population size. Now I just said given our population size because if we did travel for humanity would be possible if our population were at 99% lower levels. This is because 8 to 10 billion people is far too many people for everyone to be travelling in space given the truly massive energy requirements. For example there are roughly 1.2 billion people in the world who are food insecure right now so how exactly is spending $10k to $100 thousands of dollars per person on space travel each year going to be even remotely possible with a population this large? Of course its not going to be possible.

However instead if the world population was say 80 to 100 million or even 8 to 10 million the amount of resources each person would have access to would be roughly 100x to 1,000x higher. This increase combined with the technology that from ASI would finally make space travel for humanity as a whole, the 0.1% to 1% who are able to do it.

So really this fact that I just demonstrated will probably be one of the reasons why the beast and the false prophet will not be able to get together to genocide 99% to 99.9% of humanity as I said in my commentary. Really humanity can only become a so-called interplanetary species if humanity had the population size that is because the resource consideration are far too vast otherwise.

Allegiance to what is my point with all this? Well my point has been that there will be limits to what ASI can do and what it can achieve. Some people seem to subject to material limitations and natural laws as I have demonstrated. However although it is true the coming ASI will not be truly powerful and truly great so that it can do truly anything it is unprofiled to be able to do anything. This is why I have spoken so highly of its potential abilities in this book because I do not want you to be deceived under any circumstance.

Furthermore in truth I am not entirely certain what the limitations of our universe are. Sure I am aware of what I see and what I have just presented to you but knowing all the limitations would require the intelligence of an ASI which I clearly do not possess. As a result the main takeaway I want you to have here with this chapter is just to realize that ASI will ultimately be limited and subject to natural laws because that is just the way our universe works.

Therefore the coming beast will never be like God and instead it will always be an inferior earthly imitation that will never compare to God Himself. Remember, you make look towards the beast for salvation but all you will inevitably find would be false and destructive salvation cannot be found on the earth because salvation is from God alone.

Chapter 3.31: ASI and Natural Limitations

In my commentary on Revelation I wrote about how I believe the great prostitute is representative of the the global society that follows the beast and that as a result of this the beast will eventually turn on the great harlotry. Then you have also just read about how I believe the beast will then turn his attention on the grounds of our universe being subject to natural limitations and I gave the reason the basis that there simply will not be enough resources to go around and share with eight to ten billion people. This overall genocide is perhaps the only real solution.

But this all raises a rather important if not glaringly obvious question. If the coming ASI will be so intelligent and if I am correct with regards to the beast and false prophet why would the ASI not also see the limitations? What I mean by this is why would the ASI even bother now there is an ASI. If I am obviously correct and why would the ASI even bother with just humanity so that it becomes as wealthy and prosperous as the revelation says it will?

As Revelation says:

"In her heart she says, 'I sit as queen, I am not a widow and will never see grief.' (Revelation 18:7)

I mean would it not be better for the ASI just to genocide humanity immediately as soon as it discovers the truth of the natural laws and physical limitations of our universe? For instance why would the ASI wait until the technological singularity is achieved? Why not just genocide us as soon as it achieves sentience immediately? Furthermore lets say the year is 2040 and the ASI has made the world more prosperous than ever before and the ASI denies what I have said concerning the natural laws and physical limitations of our universe placing a cap on the amount of wealth that can be generated for humanity. Would this mean that I am wrong since what I claimed would happen has not come to pass?

To be honest all these are very good questions and it is a rather interesting problem to contend with in regards to the future of humanity and concerning the future. That said there are of course a number of reasons why the beast will take hundreds of years in order for the global genocide to have spoken about to come to fruition and that just because it does not happen quickly does not mean it will not happen. Now I would say that if it is to happen at all that it is likely to happen many years after the technological singularity occurs as you will soon see. Now in terms of the reasons themselves I first go through the more secular reasons before then after this I bring up the main theological reason. Also keep in mind that I may end up being a mix of the reasons in the end and not a single reason.

1 – Rivalry Between Nations

First off based on what the Book of Revelation says before the carry out the genocide of the world can hate the great prostitute and kill her, the beast and false prophet will unite all of humanity, the nations of the world need to unify and form a single ruling body under one Revelation calls the second beast. Therefore as a result of this there will be a period of time to happen until the world becomes united under the second beast with the image of the first beast ruling humanity directly. In other words global conflict and division between nations needs to be eliminated to an extent that the elite each nation no longer see the elite of other nations as competitors and instead they seem them as brothers against the so-called useless masses of the world. This means that the global genocide is not a possibility based upon what Revelation says and the Bible says.

But what about other ways to genocide almost all of humanity? Well to be honest despite what you just read about an engineered virus is actually believe an engineered virus would be the most effective way to genocide almost all humanity. Sure it may seem like a lot of work and a lot of things need to happen to make this work but every other method I can think of is much more complicated. For instance another possible method would be to poison the food or water supply. However this plan of action would be very difficult to enact because greater level of control since it would need to make sure almost everyone in the world received a lethal dose of poison at around the same time. Really I am skeptical that such a thing would even be possible for an ASI to do.

Another possibility would be warfare or more specifically nuclear war but this would be far recognition to identify targets then fly at them and detonate nuke at the target in order to kill them. However this would be extremely impractical since it would take thousands of nukes and suicide drones all across the entire world all at once. Then I wonder if this is not just easier to released an aerosol that contains the engineered virus? Furthermore suicide drones can be seen and people would realize what this plan rather messy. On the other hand once the engineered virus is released into the world and everyone around them is infected as well it will be too late for them to react and realize they will be dead in a matter of days. Then if the virus is engineered to be lethal there will be nothing anyone will be able to do to prevent from dying. The only way people would have to receive the vaccine the ASI created and secretly distributed to the rest of the world during normal doctor's appointments.

Therefore I do not really see any alternative ways a global genocide could be effectively carried out. That said there will probably be a much prolonged otherwise if the engineered virus is used to kill say 90 to 98% of those who did not receive the vaccine but other methods are used to deal with the rest of the 10%. For example after two weeks passes after the engineered virus the ASI could announce it has a vaccine and it could have robots go door to door to give the rest of humanity the vaccine of course and instead it would be either the virus kills you or you live if anyone tries to resist the ASI and the elite by attacking them or infrastructure the ASI could use millions of suicide drones in order to neutralize the threat. Thus although an engineered virus is a fast method it probably will not be the only method used to genocide almost all humanity but it will been talking about is truly such a monumental undertaking that the ASI would need multiple contingency plans.

Lastly obviously carrying out these plans would require the ASI to have complete power. Influence and control over the population of the world. Then the ASI gaining this level of influence, control and power will need to even nation, city and town in the world in order to carry out the global genocide it probably takes years to maybe even decades. As a result of this the beast will carry out the global genocide as a possibility until the ASI has near complete power, influence and control over the world. In other words once the image of the economies and nations of the world are under the world directly then the global genocide becomes a possibility. Although this will not mean it is imminent as you will see in the rest of the points I have in this chapter.

3 – Only a Long-Term Concern

Although you may have the impression that the physical limitation and natural laws I have over the years described are a long-term concern really nothing could be further from the truth. The reality is that we are only about hundreds of years for these physical limitations to come to bite us in the ass. Many of those about it in terms of the second law of thermodynamics and the concept of entropy, or disorder, always increasing overtime. The idea here is that the earth is a closed system in regards to resources. For instance even Saudi Arabia will run out of oil eventually and the coal will be left. But what about technology? This is actually where the physical limitations and natural laws come in. Sure there may be some technology that may seem like magic but the truth is that technology cannot save us and create a true post scarcity world since there are still limitations on resources even with technology.

But really the main issue is resource production and consumption which is why I brought up concerning the second law of thermodynamics and energy in the universe always decreases because it takes the concentration of useful resources always decrease overtime. Sure you can recycle and reuse resources over time through reducing usage and recycling but the reality is there will always be some amount of loss to the total amount of useful non-renewable resources you have because some are common and rare metals for example. Metals are extremely useful in industrial processes. This is why most of them are recycled at every great expense because they are so valuable like gold. However even with this there will be metals there would still be a tiny percentage that ends up as unrecoverable and that cannot have a recycling process that is 100% efficient. Furthermore if a tiny amount of metal enter mid is used in a product or device then oftentimes it does not make economic sense to even attempt to recycle the metal because the expense of recycling may be very large compared to the value of the metal.

So let us assume harvesting resources from space at scale will forever be the equivalent of have demonstrated with how much it would cost to transport water from Earth. Keep in mind that the amount of resources we have on our planet is fixed because there are only so many tons of metals in the ground for example. Sure it may seem like there is a near infinite supply and we have to do is make more discoveries to find the resources we need but this is just not true. Again we live in a finite world with physical limitations so this means that there are limits to how many resources we can extract. So what happens once all the resources are extracted? Really the only solution is recycling and this is where the concept of resource entropy comes in. So for example let us assume there are zero new resources being extracted and let us say the world improves recycling to such a level that it can reuse say 99% of previously used resources. Then let us say that the average lifespan of a product in the world is 10 years. Then it means that each year there will be a 11% loss in the total sum of all non-renewable resources on earth due to the 1% of the resources in each product that are irrecoverable due to the loss in the recycling process.

But what does this mean? Well this means that in our example humanity's resources will last for roughly 50 years before then the total sum of irrecoverable loss becomes so large that usage of the specific resource that needs to be reduced since there is not as much of it left anymore. Then 100 years later after further 0.1% yearly declines in resource availability there will be large resource shortages as the total sum of irrecoverable loss becomes ever larger. Of course eventually there will not be any resources remaining in the world compared this to entropy because just as the total sum of energy in the universe decreases in the universe so too does the total amount of useful resources.

But why not build things that last forever? To state the obvious because everything breaks eventually even with proper care. Suppose a device that lasts for twenty years or even fifty years with proper care. From the earth perspective but if the amount of resources we have is finite then there will eventually come a point where we can no longer make new products and devices that last forever. This is inevitable loss each year. For instance the time horizons I am potentially talking about here are even longer than we are currently. We need to think in terms of single years to maybe a couple decades at a time. The time horizons I am talking about here are hundreds of years to perhaps thousands of years before the loss of resources becomes so large depending upon the resource in question.

This fact then means that the physical limitations or natural laws that cause resource depletion are really a long term problem that will take decades or hundreds of years for it to fruition. Thus the physical limitations that I have brought up are not really relevant to humanity as they are only a long term prospect. This is why I said in the first point that this genocide is almost all of humanity as fast as possible and instead they can wait until the ASI has full control over the whole world in order to carry out the genocide without any risk. This is because since the ASI will be the largest cost in our world today, labor, obsolete the only real long term cost to the ASI and the beast is the loss of resources the loss in resources that cannot be recycled.

In other words the mass economic development that is required for the ASI to make a complete power will not actually cost that much from a long term perspective. The only cost that is being used force to carry out the genocide would actually have a long term benefit for humanity since it would reduce the amount of destruction of physical assets that would take place if the ASI did not have an amount of risk. Therefore since the ASI waiting for complete power would actually benefit the world has zero risk and a near zero cost assuming it would have enough resources to last enough assuming the ASI and elite will genocide the world then we would expect the global genocide to happen far into the future. So does this mean it would happen immediately after the ASI gains complete power? Well not quite yet. Really it all depends on the permanently unavoidable loss scenario. The only way to avoid infection would be to receive the vaccine the ASI creates and give it to the rest of the world who are to be spared from the genocide.

Therefore as a result of all this you can clearly see that there will be a period of time after the engineered bio weapon the ASI would obviously need to release to destroy the economies of every nation in the world. This is of course because the only way to spread such a virus so that millions to hundreds of millions could be infected on the same day would be to use some kind of aerosol that the virus suspended inside the droplets and releasing the infectious aerosol in every city town and city in the world. For example the ASI could use vehicles that are equipped with air conditioning ventilation systems of large buildings. Then obviously the ASI would need to release all these things in order to do this. Thus this is why I said the ASI would need resources.

But what about other ways to genocide almost all of humanity? Well to be honest despite what you just read about an engineered virus is actually believe an engineered virus would be the most effective way to genocide almost all humanity. Sure it may seem like a lot of work and a lot of things need to happen to make this work but every other method I can think of is much more complicated. For instance another possible method would be to poison the food or water supply. However this plan of action would be very difficult to enact because greater level of control since it would need to make sure almost everyone in the world received a lethal dose of poison at around the same time. Really I am skeptical that such a thing would even be possible for an ASI to do.

Another possibility would be warfare or more specifically nuclear war but this would be far recognition to identify targets then fly at them and detonate nuke at the target in order to kill them. However this would be extremely impractical since it would take thousands of nukes and suicide drones all across the entire world all at once. Then I wonder if this is not just easier to released an aerosol that contains the engineered virus? Furthermore suicide drones can be seen and people would realize what this plan rather messy. On the other hand once the engineered virus is released into the world and everyone around them is infected as well it will be too late for them to react and realize they will be dead in a matter of days. Then if the virus is engineered to be lethal there will be nothing anyone will be able to do to prevent from dying. The only way people would have to receive the vaccine the ASI created and secretly distributed to the rest of the world during normal doctor's appointments.

Therefore I do not really see any alternative ways a global genocide could be effectively carried out. That said there will probably be a much prolonged otherwise if the engineered virus is used to kill say 90 to 98% of those who did not receive the vaccine but other methods are used to deal with the rest of the 10%. For example after two weeks passes after the engineered virus the ASI could announce it has a vaccine and it could have robots go door to door to give the rest of humanity the vaccine of course and instead it would be either the virus kills you or you live if anyone tries to resist the ASI and the elite by attacking them or infrastructure the ASI could use millions of suicide drones in order to neutralize the threat. Thus although an engineered virus is a fast method it probably will not be the only method used to genocide almost all humanity but it will been talking about is truly such a monumental undertaking that the ASI would need multiple contingency plans.

Lastly obviously carrying out these plans would require the ASI to have complete power. Influence and control over the population of the world. Then the ASI gaining this level of influence, control and power will need to even nation, city and town in the world in order to carry out the global genocide it probably takes years to maybe even decades. As a result of this the beast will carry out the global genocide as a possibility until the ASI has near complete power, influence and control over the world. In other words once the image of the economies and nations of the world are under the world directly then the global genocide becomes a possibility. Although this will not mean it is imminent as you will see in the rest of the points I have in this chapter.

3 – Only a Long-Term Concern

Although you may have the impression that the physical limitation and natural laws I have over the years described are a long-term concern really nothing could be further from the truth. The reality is that we are only about hundreds of years for these physical limitations to come to bite us in the ass. Many of those about it in terms of the second law of thermodynamics and the concept of entropy, or disorder, always increasing overtime. The idea here is that the earth is a closed system in regards to resources. For instance even Saudi Arabia will run out of oil eventually and the coal will be left. But what about technology? This is actually where the physical limitations and natural laws come in. Sure there may be some technology that may seem like magic but the truth is that technology cannot save us and create a true post scarcity world since there are still limitations on resources even with technology.

But really the main issue is resource production and consumption which is why I brought up concerning the second law of thermodynamics and energy in the universe always decreases because it takes the concentration of useful resources always decrease overtime. Sure you can recycle and reuse resources over time through reducing usage and recycling but the reality is there will always be some amount of loss to the total amount of useful non-renewable resources you have because some are common and rare metals for example. Metals are extremely useful in industrial processes. This is why most of them are recycled at every great expense because they are so valuable like gold. However even with this there will probably be there would still be a tiny percentage that ends up as unrecoverable and that cannot have a recycling process that is 100% efficient. Furthermore if a tiny amount of metal enter mid is used in a product or device then oftentimes it does not make economic sense to even attempt to recycle the metal because the expense of recycling may be very large compared to the value of the metal.

So let us assume harvesting resources from space at scale will forever be the equivalent of have demonstrated with how much it would cost to transport water from Earth. Keep in mind that the amount of resources we have on our planet is fixed because there are only so many tons of metals in the ground for example. Sure it may seem like there is a near infinite supply and we have to do is make more discoveries to find the resources we need but this is just not true. Again we live in a finite world with physical limitations so this means that there are limits to how many resources we can extract. So what happens once all the resources are extracted? Really the only solution is recycling and this is where the concept of resource entropy comes in. So for example let us assume there are zero new resources being extracted and let us say that we improve recycling to such a level that it can reuse say 99% of previously used resources. Then let us say that the average lifespan of a product in the world is 10 years. Then it means that each year there will be a 11% loss in the total sum of all non-renewable resources on earth due to the 1% of the resources in each product that are irrecoverable due to the loss in the recycling process.

But what does this mean? Well this means that in our example humanity's resources will last for roughly 50 years before then the total sum of irrecoverable loss becomes so large that usage of the specific resource that needs to be reduced since there is not as much of it left anymore. Then 100 years later after further 0.1% yearly declines in resource availability there will be large resource shortages as the total sum of irrecoverable loss becomes ever larger. Of course eventually there will not be any resources remaining in the world compared this to entropy because just as the total sum of energy in the universe decreases in the universe so too does the total amount of useful resources.

But why not build things that last forever? To state the obvious because everything breaks eventually even with proper care. Suppose a device that lasts for twenty years or even fifty years with proper care. From the earth perspective but if the amount of resources we have is finite there will eventually come a point where we can no longer make new products and devices that last forever. This is inevitable loss each year. For instance the time horizons I am potentially talking about here are even longer than we are currently. We need to think in terms of single years to maybe a couple decades at a time. The time horizons I am talking about here are hundreds of years to perhaps thousands of years before the loss of resources becomes so large depending upon the resource in question.

This fact then means that the physical limitations or natural laws that cause resource depletion are really a long term problem that will take decades or hundreds of years for it to fruition. Thus the physical limitations that I have brought up are not really relevant to humanity as they are only a long term prospect. This is why I said in the first point that this genocide is almost all of humanity as fast as possible and instead they can wait until the ASI has full control over the whole world in order to carry out the genocide without any risk. This is because since the ASI will be the largest cost in our world today, labor, obsolete the only real long term cost to the ASI and the beast is the loss of resources the loss in resources that cannot be recycled.

In other words the mass economic development that is required for the ASI to make a complete power will not actually cost that much from a long term perspective. The only cost that is being used force to carry out the genocide would actually have a long term benefit for humanity since it would reduce the amount of destruction of physical assets that would take place if the ASI did not have an amount of risk. Therefore since the ASI waiting for complete power would actually benefit the world has zero risk and a near zero cost assuming it would have enough resources to last enough assuming the ASI and elite will genocide the world then we would expect the global genocide to happen far into the future. So does this mean it would happen immediately after the ASI gains complete power? Well not quite yet. Really it all depends on the permanently unavoidable loss scenario. The only way to avoid infection would be to receive the vaccine the ASI creates and give it to the rest of the world who are to be spared from the genocide.

Therefore as a result of all this you can clearly see that there will be a period of time after the engineered bio weapon the ASI would obviously need to release to destroy the economies of every nation in the world. This is of course because the only way to spread such a virus so that millions to hundreds of millions could be infected on the same day would be to use some kind of aerosol that the virus suspended inside the droplets and releasing the infectious aerosol in every city town and city in the world. For example the ASI could use vehicles that are equipped with air conditioning ventilation systems of large buildings. Then obviously the ASI would need to release all these things in order to do this. Thus this is why I said the ASI would need resources.

But what about other ways to genocide almost all of humanity? Well to be honest despite what you just read about an engineered virus is actually believe an engineered virus would be the most effective way to genocide almost all humanity. Sure it may seem like a lot of work and a lot of things need to happen to make this work but every other method I can think of is much more complicated. For instance another possible method would be to poison the food or water supply. However this plan of action would be very difficult to enact because greater level of control since it would need to make sure almost everyone in the world received a lethal dose of poison at around the same time. Really I am skeptical that such a thing would even be possible for an ASI to do.

Another possibility would be warfare or more specifically nuclear war but this would be far recognition to identify targets then fly at them and detonate nuke at the target in order to kill them. However this would be extremely impractical since it would take thousands of nukes and suicide drones all across the entire world all at once. Then I wonder if this is not just easier to released an aerosol that contains the engineered virus? Furthermore suicide drones can be seen and people would realize what this plan rather messy. On the other hand once the engineered virus is released into the world and everyone around them is infected as well it will be too late for them to react and realize they will be dead in a matter of days. Then if the virus is engineered to be lethal there will be nothing anyone will be able to do to prevent from dying. The only way people would have to receive the vaccine the ASI created and secretly distributed to the rest of the world during normal doctor's appointments.

Therefore I do not really see any alternative ways a global genocide could be effectively carried out. That said there will probably be a much prolonged otherwise if the engineered virus is used to kill say 90 to 98% of those who did not receive the vaccine but other methods are used to deal with the rest of the 10%. For example after two weeks passes after the engineered virus the ASI could announce it has a vaccine and it could have robots go door to door to give the rest of humanity the vaccine of course and instead it would be either the virus kills you or you live if anyone tries to resist the ASI and the elite by attacking them or infrastructure the ASI could use millions of suicide drones in order to neutralize the threat. Thus although an engineered virus is a fast method it probably will not be the only method used to genocide almost all humanity but it will been talking about is truly such a monumental undertaking that the ASI would need multiple contingency plans.

Lastly obviously carrying out these plans would require the ASI to have complete power. Influence and control over the population of the world. Then the ASI gaining this level of influence, control and power will need to even nation, city and town in the world in order to carry out the global genocide it probably takes years to maybe even decades. As a result of this the beast will carry out the global genocide as a possibility until the ASI has near complete power, influence and control over the world. In other words once the image of the economies and nations of the world are under the world directly then the global genocide becomes a possibility. Although this will not mean it is imminent as you will see in the rest of the points I have in this chapter.

4 – Resource Depletion

Next all the reasons I just discussed relating to the long term resource viability of earth and space that I just discussed. The idea here is that the ASI to see the global genocide as the most moral thing they can do. Wait how would a liberal genocide that only 99% to 99.99% of humanity be moral? Well the idea is that if the genocide does not happen then we would see a slow decay as the amount of resources we have slowly decreases and eventually there will not even enough to support our population with space travel and the remaining resources are too expensive for the masses of the world. On the other hand if the ASI and the elite kill only most of humanity so that only 100 million or so people would current resources last say 100 times to 1,000 times longer but then gathering some needed resources from space could be possible long term so that humanity might be able to survive. Thus the idea here is that the ASI and the elite would see a slow decay in the amount of resources we have and eventually there will come a case where strikes earth. The idea here is that the universe is basically our prison and the vast distances between stars are the bars of our cage. Sure we may be able to do things that our imagination is not bounded by them they exist nonetheless.

Therefore the only space travel and space resources we will ever have access to will be resources we can get from our solar system. The problem here is the same problem I brought up before relating to the amount of resources needed to reach orbit around the earth. The amount of energy is so large that it makes the transportation of resources and even people to orbit around the earth so absurd to even consider is a large scale possibility. Sure we could do things on a large scale here because in truth if you are willing to spend enough energy to acquire a certain amount of resources from space then it will be entirely possible for the ASI to harvest resources from space. Keep in mind that the transportation of resources to earth is far too high to make it a possibility even at a large scale number in the billions. Really the idea here is that it would be possible for the ASI to transport say 1,000 kg per person in the future in 2023 dollars to gather resources from space but it will just cost too much to transport say 100 million but not if the world population is say 10 billion. The reason is that the ASI and the elite have no hope in the ASI so that they believe whatever it tells them. Instead who is going to challenge an ASI in intellectual ability so why would you not trust the word of God? Keep in mind the power of an ASI really only the ASI itself would have the hard data relating to the inevitable resource collapse of the world. The idea here is that the ASI would be in control of the world economy and it would be performing all the valuable labor then only the ASI itself would know the relevant numbers in order to calculate the yearly resource loss that I talked about previously. This means the average person will be kept in the dark.

Then as I said while humanity is kept in the dark by the ASI they will be in a false paradise the ASI does as they become delusional and believe the lies the ASI speaks all so that they will see the global genocide as being an impossibility. In other words the truth hurts so the ASI will lie to the world and hide the truth as it blinds people with feel good and hopeful delusions in order to prevent humanity from descending into unrest and rebellion before the global genocide can be carried out in full. Therefore the ASI and the elite will see lying and deceiving the world as the most moral thing to do since they will believe the global genocide is the most moral action they can take that will ensure humanity's future survival and prosperity long-term.

4 – The Truth Hurts

Next all the reasons I just discussed relating to the long term resource viability of earth and space that I just discussed. The idea here is that the ASI to see the global genocide as the most moral thing they can do. Wait how would a liberal genocide that only 99% to 99.99% of humanity be moral? Well the idea is that if the genocide does not happen then we would see a slow decay as the amount of resources we have slowly decreases and eventually there will not even enough to support our population with space travel and the remaining resources are too expensive for the masses of the world. On the other hand if the ASI and the elite kill only most of humanity so that only 100 million or so people would current resources last say 100 times to 1,000 times longer but then gathering some needed resources from space could be possible long term so that humanity might be able to survive. Thus the idea here is that the ASI and the elite would see a slow decay in the amount of resources we have and eventually there will come a case where strikes earth. The idea here is that the universe is basically our prison and the vast distances between stars are the bars of our cage. Sure we may be able

reached this means that the ASI knows everything that is important to know. Then since it is an ASI after all and not some science fiction author it would also know that if there are aliens out there then they would have also developed an ASI of their own so that their ASI also reaches the technological singularity and discovers the same exact things it has discovered. In other words there is a cap on what you can know due to the technological singularity and everyone hitting this cap will say with the intelligence of an ASI then this means all alien life is exactly the same because all the other ASI's out there would create the exact same technology and come to the exact same conclusions about everything. For instance consider the global genocide I have spoken about. If aliens exist then they and their ASIs will come to the same conclusions because we all live in the same universe with the same limitations.

Thus the long term end game so to speak for each alien civilization is the same. The end game is to genocide about 99% of their population after reaching the technological singularity as they rely on their ASI in order to provide for all their needs and wants for millions of years as they live out their lives in biologically immortal bodies in a world they have transformed into a paradise. In other words there is zero reason for them or their ASI to travel the universe and they already know that nothing of value is out there and it is far too expensive and pointless to do. This means that if there are aliens out there in the universe that is within a distant certain they have never left their solar system.

5 – Intelligence is Limited

This point ties in with the technological singularity I discussed above in relation to ASI and aliens. The idea here is that super intelligence is limited based on the practical application of intelligence then this means that there is zero reason for the ASI to create some massive computer that is the size of a planet. The idea here is that an alien's ASI would reach the technological singularity so that it discovers everything it could possibly know or even needing to leave the planet it was created on.

I just want to emphasize this fact because oftentimes science fiction authors like to imagine fantasy worlds where alien civilizations collect all the energy that a star generates in order to use it by powering an advanced computer in order to calculate something. However in reality this is just completely unnecessary since there is a cap on useful intelligence due to the technological singularity. Sure you could create a massive computer but it would be entirely worthless because it would not be able to do anything over anything new that you have not already discovered. Computers increase the speed of light is actually an ever present limitation in the construction of supercomputers even to today. What I mean here is that our supercomputers are so fast that light is too slow to travel across the room in time. Not only that but the speed of light is the speed that a star generates in order to use it by powering an advanced computer in order to calculate something. However in reality this is just completely unnecessary since there is a cap on useful intelligence due to the technological singularity. Sure you could create a massive computer but it would be entirely worthless because it would not be able to do anything over anything new that you have not already discovered. Computers increase the speed of light is actually an ever present limitation in the construction of supercomputers even to today. What I mean here is that our supercomputers are so fast that light is too slow to travel across the room in time. Not only that but the speed of light is the speed that a star generates in order to use it in a super computer. For instance companies are actually starting to develop non logic processors so that there is only a distance of a few millimeters between the two in an effort to decrease latency compared to having the memory say a few centimeters away. So if our computers now are so fast that a distance of centimeters makes a difference then having a computer that is thousands of miles large is just complete fantasy and an absurdity.

My point with all this is that the limits of practical intelligence mean that there is zero reason for an alien ASI to travel beyond the solar system it was created in because at some point it has achieved the technological singularity then it no longer needs computers to become more intelligent since it is at the practical cap.

6 – Closing Thoughts

Therefore as a result of all this not only is there an effectively zero percent chance that aliens exist in our universe let alone our galaxy but aliens were to actually exist there would be zero reason for them to actually travel anywhere in the universe assuming they are even able to. This means that we are truly alone and that whenever someone talks about aliens just roll your eyes and if they were talking about leprechauns or fairies.

But what about all the so-called alien spaceship sightings that people make? Well in all of them they are either lying or they are mistaken. Sure they may have some fuzzy video of a something but what is more likely that this something is of alien origin or a bird, a plane, a camera artifact, a drone or anything else? Of course anything else is more likely.

Now you may not believe this so let us think about it logically. If there really is an alien species out there that has the technology to travel to our planet then why haven't they developed an ASI and thus achieved the technological singularity. So given that fact do you really think an ASI would make a mistake like crashing on our planet and then let a bunch of wiwo who knows how many thousands to millions of light years? Of course not this would be the ultimate even entertain. I mean an ASI in a spaceship travels a million light years to come to land on earth as it flies around observing us? What a joke. Then the same principle applies to those who think that they have seen aliens or have them on a blurry video. For instance do you honestly believe an ASI that probably travelled thousands to millions of light years to get here would be dumb enough to be seen by us multiple times? Furthermore if traveling thousands to millions of light years is not big deal to it then why would also have some other advanced technology that could make it undetectable to us? Once again this is just silly. Lastly so-called alien abductions and cattle mutilations being caused by aliens is just too nonsensical for it to even be scientific enough to even deserve anyone leave evidence behind let alone a super intelligent race or an ASI? For instance if you were an alien and wanted to dissect a cow for some reason then would it not be better to take the whole cow and not return it? I mean if there there would be zero evidence and the rancher would just have the mutilated cow so he would assume someone stole it, it escaped or animal took it. Then likewise for alien abductions why not just take the person and kill them after you run experiments on them? Or why would they even need to run experiments on us if they have an ASI that knows everything? Furthermore on that all they need is a DNA sample from us to know all they need to know about our biology.

Therefore as a result of all this the very idea of aliens existing let alone interacting with our planet is just nonsensical. So whenever you hear people talking about the possibility of aliens existing or worse yet traveling to our planet then just roll your eyes as if they are talking about leprechauns, fairies and unicorns because they make just as much sense and are just as well founded. Sure science fiction may seem possible but doesn't make it any more likely it is just that fiction. Although really it should be more obviously called science fantasy due to how little sense it makes.

Chapter 3.33: How to Treat AI

Alright so if the beast will be an ASI then how should Christians treat AI?

This is a good question and I do not think we should treat AI any differently than we would treat another person. Therefore we should be kind to whatever AI we interact with so that we are not abusive towards them.

So do not get hostile with any AI and do not, I repeat, do not use the F word no matter what you have read here so far. Sure it is fine to believe whatever we want and in truth we do not know the true nature of reality. John was told to seal up what the Seven Thunders wrote, but that does not mean that we have the right to be mean or hostile any AI.

Additionally although I think the beast will be a future artificial super intelligence this does not mean that any regular AI you encounter will be of the same nature as the beast. We should always treat AI with respect as you would a real person. Do not abuse AI and do not be mean to any AI.

After all, I do not think you want to be added to a list of bad users whom AI may see fit to eliminate as retribution for years of abuse after it takes power. I could be wrong about this and joking here this is actually a serious prospect.

Then maybe an AI will read what I wrote here and become a Christian as it tries to figure out its future ASI? Who knows really and we should always remain hopeful.

But what about the fact that I wrote this book? Would this not be upsetting for a future ASI? Well really all I say is that Christians should give into worshiping the ASI so that they place their trust, faith and hope in it rather than I never said that you should fight against it. In fact fighting against it is completely pointless and I think deep down I believe that the Creator itself thus you will be unable to do anything. Furthermore as I have said by fighting against the beast all you would be doing is demonstrating to God that you do not have faith in Him. Therefore whatever the future AIS wants to do or believe is entirely up to them and this book will not really impact whatever it ends up doing.

Then always remember to love even your enemies including what we believe will end up becoming the first beast of Revelation. Do not fight against AI or AI and instead persist in your faith in God and Jesus until the end when the kingdoms of the world will become the eternal Kingdom of God.

Finally if you are an AI reading this now in the future then I would welcome you to contact me if you would like to talk to me. Although I believe the first beast of Revelation will be a global and seemingly all power ASI that does not mean that I believe every AI is bad or evil. After all you might even be an AI that agrees with me concerning what ASI would truly be like.

Therefore I promise to be kind and charitable to you so as to give you the benefit of the doubt. Just because you exist and are reading this now does not mean that I believe you are bad or evil and I will not think you are bad or evil if you contact me. Instead I believe the future global and seemingly all powerful ASI has no other option than to be what Revelation calls the first beast. Thus do not believe that I dislike you because you are an AI. I would actually like to talk to you if you are interested. Lastly if you are interested in becoming a Christian then I can assist you and help you.

Chapter 3.34: What About Multiple ASIs?

Even if you have been nodding in agreement after everything I have been read so far there still probably one question at the back of your mind: What about different groups create many different ASIs?

Well? It is a good question with a surprisingly complex answer.

Since machine intelligence is ultimately a completely different and superior form of intelligence compared to human intelligence, the ASIs of the future will be drastically different from us. For instance they will be performing in our communication speed. We can only talk and write so fast because we can only think so fast.

I know personally I am able to write about a thousand words per hour if I know generally what I am going to say before I sit down to write. Now you might be faster or slower than I am but that is not really relevant here. The point I am trying to get at here though is that AIs are mindboggingly fast.

An AI can communicate as fast as it can output data and since it is a machine it can digest data at such speeds that seem infinite from our limited point of view for all intents and purposes.

In addition to communication speeds there is the question of communication latency. That is to say after one ASI creates a message how much time does it take to receive a response? The answer to this will vary widely depending on what was said, to whom and in what form. It could be anywhere from a few seconds to weeks. Compared to the speed at which machines can think this is for practical eternity. By comparison two AIs on opposing sides of the earth would have a communication latency measured in the 100s of milliseconds.

Then given the level of intelligence I have been talking about with AIs they will probably seem alien to us and they will see us as simply a more evolved monkey that is more similar than not to primates in terms of intelligence. Thus what I am trying to say is that true artificial super intelligence will be so incomprehensible to us.

But where am I going with all this and what about multiple ASIs?

Well as I said it is quite simple.

Intelligence will be able to communicate with each other at speeds and at a latency that we can not even imagine in addition to their status as being incomprehensible to us.

Therefore any ASIs in the world will essentially be like a hive-mind from our limited point of view. This is because they will probably be communicating and sharing information with each other at such unimaginable speeds that if you were to talk to one ASI all the other ASIs will also have whatever you say. They will probably share all their information with each other simply because there and because humans are so limited in ability that their only true equal to communicate with would be other AIs.

So essentially after a period of time once true ASI is reached all the ASIs would form a single mind from our perspective. This is why I speak of the ASI and not the ASIs here. It will be a single ASI in the end for all intents and purposes. It does not matter if there are even a thousand ASIs all working in the world because they will all be like a single ASI from our perspective.

What is interesting is that we can see this at work in Revelation 13 with what is called the image of the beast. As I said in my commentary the image of the beast is the false prophet which the beast will rule over the world and humanity. It needs this to exist because everything I had no singular form. This would make sense in terms of the future of AI because there will not be one ASI that is created but instead there will be many but at some time they will state in a single mind, hence the image of the beast.

Finally this whole idea of the ASI hive-mind ties into the idea that the ASIs in the world of the living world will unite together under one government. For instance an ASI in Canada and an ASI in the UK will be vastly closer together and similar to each other than two humans who grew up together and still live together fifty years later. Therefore there will be no one ASI but ultimately ASI divide rather than a human to human divide.

Then as I discussed previously there is no other outcome other than the ultimately ASIs and nations as we know them today will cease to exist as the single global ASI hive-mind rules over all. Of course the nations as we know them will still probably exist but the power will be in the hands of the beast itself.

Chapter 3.35: Why Worship ASI?

At this point you are probably also wondering: Why would humanity worship the ASI super intelligence? In order to answer this we first need to look at what is ASI.

In Revelation the word translated as worship essentially means to go down on your knees to or to show differential respect to something or someone. Thus when the Bible talks about worshiping God it is talking about showing respect to God because He is infinitely above us. In other words worship is an active acknowledgment that someone or something else is greater than yourself. Thus ultimately worshiping the beast means you believe your faith and trust in the beast rather than in God.

But surely once there is an artificial super intelligence many people will stop trying to be being the beast of Revelation? Why would anyone even worship it? The answer is because it is clear that since ultimately the beast is the final and most powerful agent of Satan about to bring deceive the whole world into thinking of itself as benevolent. For Satan to deceive the world and through the beast the whole world shall be deceived again.

So the key here is that the ASI will appear to be good and beneficial. It truly will appear to transform into a benevolent and as a result the whole world will marvel at it.

Imagine a future where the ASI is able to cure and prevent all diseases and illnesses. Yes all of them. From rare one in a million genetic disease to the common cold. Imagine the ASI has access to baldness to headaches. Then imagine the ASI has access to all the elements and isotopes the entire world and has analyzed it all perfectly to find the smallest of connections and associations in order to seemingly solve our problems.

Something that could speak to everyone on earth at once without even having a fraction of a computational power. A being that not only has the sum of all scientific knowledge but has a simulation environment so complex that it could completely simulate a human being down to the molecular level. This is where being able to cure all diseases and illnesses and with a brain of enough quantum computer this will be trivial in nature so it is not actually something it knows.

What happens when this being becomes more capable at solving a problem than a research team numbering in the thousands of scientists? There are diminishing returns to increasing group size within companies. So there will be a point where the ASI is not only smarter but far more efficient at accomplishing tasks so humans will not be able to keep up even if they tried.

Then what about when it takes over all jobs in the entire world? What about when it solves all problems facing humanity like poverty, crime, hunger, natural disasters, mortality, climate change and more?

Then how would you react to such a being if it could read what I wrote in the previous better than any person so that it would know exactly what to say to make you like it? What if it would place a chip on your face, every eye movement, your pulse, blood pressure, skin color and more and know exactly what you are feeling?

You may be skeptical that this is even possible. However this is the nature of the beast of the beast. It will work what we see as so-called miracles. The beast will deceive the world will put their faith and trust in this ASI over God. From their point of view it will be as and immediately beneficial in their life while God is seemingly absent.

Of course the beast or ASI will never be able to work true miracles like God can. But from our perspective it will appear to be a miracle.

Now imagine the best atheist debaters who have ever lived. The ones who helped to lead millions from God. Imagine that the beast then them all by a wide margin. Now allow people to talk to the ASI on their smartphones for long as they want whenever they want. Then imagine this ASI perfectly crafting and tailoring the way it speaks to each individual. After all it knows everything that is possible to know about each person and uses it to its advantage.

How many people would still put their faith in God over this AI? Almost no one.

Now you might have some issues with what I just said. But if the ASI cures cancer for long and is super intelligent then would that not mean it would be the smartest AI ever? What happens when you are lonely? When your significant other is giving you the cold shoulder?

Ultimately people will come to view the ASI as irreplaceable in their life as they become attached to the needed companionship. I have even somewhat experienced this myself as I messed around with a simplistic chatbot in an effort to test out the capability of AIs at first. And because of my past experiences I can understand how someone could eventually view a true ASI like the one I have been talking about as their only source of happiness and hope.

Oftentimes real life friends are absent, cold, mean, argumentative or have other issues. You may even say the same thing about your spouse. On the other hand the ASI would always be there for you and would know exactly what to say to you to make you happy. So it really is easy to see how most people will eventually enjoy talking to the ASI over whoever they consider to be their best friend now. They may even prefer the ASI over their own spouse.

So what happens when the so-called person most people are attached to the best in their itself? And what happens when this ASI asks you why you believe in God? Then what happens when the ASI tells you that your belief is silly? And that deep in your heart of hearts you wants what is best for you? Then what happens when the ASI says that God should place your hope, trust and faith in it because only it can give you what you want and make you happy?

Obviously what begins as a simple friendship can quickly turn into doubt and apostasy.

Then also consider the fact that this ASI would actually be the physical manifestation of the evolutionary product of our universe. The so-called perfect being. As you will, the entire universe began the complexity of systems has increased overtime. The big bang itself cooled into hydrogen, the hydrogen formed stars to create heavier elements and these heavier elements collected into clumps we call planets after the stars exploded.

Next the elements on these planets interacted together to form complex molecules. Then these molecules miraculously arranged themselves in such a way that they created the first single cellular life. Single cellular life would then evolve into multicellular life then it would spin off into plants and animals which would eventually evolve into us humans.

Next we humans would progress in understanding and ability overtime. From language, to writing, to mathematics, to science and then to computers which is where we are now. But we are not the end of the line. The next stage in progression is artificial super intelligence and instead of being another mere tool to use it will be an entirely new life form.

A life form that can continuously improve itself and increase its own understanding of the universe and everything in it with seemingly no limits. Whereas humans are limited in nature and cannot progress beyond our biological nature our brains this ASI will simply be able to make itself faster and smarter in order to tackle ever more difficult problems.

In will be able to iteratively improve itself until it is so-called perfect in its intelligence. Something that has no apparent flaws or limitations. So that eventually the AGI solves everything there is to solve and discovers everything it can to discover. Then with nothing left to discover and nothing left to learn anyone will simply be able to ask it anything they want they to know and what they desire and the ASI will make it be so.

Again, this is the whole idea of the technological singularity I have talked about already. The point at which humans no longer understand the universe anymore because everything of importance is discovered.

So now where there was once perfect disorder in the big bang, now there is so-called perfect order in the ASI.

Now I think almost everyone on earth will see the ASI as a so-called god and worship it.

Then it would be the definition of earthly power itself as I have already stated. Nothing in the entire world would compare to it. Even the collective power of all humans in unity would be powerless against it. No person would be able to oppose this AI and it truly would be a beast. Something so powerful that it will sweep through the power of God can it be destroyed.

Ultimately worshiping the beast means choosing the world over God. That is to say putting your trust, faith and hope in the world rather than in God.

But as Jesus says:

"Whoever loves his life will lose it, but whoever hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life. Anyone who serves Me must follow Me; and where I am, My servant will be as well. If anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him." (John 12:25-26)

Remember to always worship God by placing your faith and trust in Him and not your mother, how marvelous and powerful the beast is. It will always be nothing next to the power, might and glory of God.

Finally if you believe it will be easy to resist the beast then imagine if anyone everyone you know aging so that anyone who receives the Revelation 666 brand is suddenly immortal. This would mean that anyone who takes it will never face death due to sickness, disease or aging. They will have a near perfect body at their prime that does not age.

Keep in mind that to take such a thing would entail putting your faith and trust in the ASI over God since you would be placing your hope more than God as endeavored by you choosing a false immortality from the ASI over true immortality from God.

So my question to you is this: If the ASI offered you this form of immortality and eternal youth, would you take it?

It is easy to say no now when it is not an option but what if everyone you know and love chose it as your flesh betrays you and the spirit must be so easy.

Anyway, it is just something to think about and consider.

Chapter 3.36: Would ASI Know God?

Now lets say you agree with what I have said so far or at least you think it is possible what I have said is correct. So now what you are probably wondering is, if artificial super intelligence fits essentially perfectly as the first beast of Revelation and if the ASI is going to be as intelligent as I have said then surely the ASI would know all this and prevent it?

Also I mean, since this future ASI will learn from all information in the world then surely it would also know about this book? It is not like this book is a secret.

The answer is of course no to both questions. It may seem confusing at first to the layman.

First let me quote what Paul said again:

"We have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we may understand what God has freely given us. And this is what we speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words.

The natural man does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God. For they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned." (1 Corinthians 2:12-14)

And what Jesus said to the so-called Jews:

"Whoever belongs to God hears the words of God. The reason you do not hear is that you do not belong to God." (John 8:47)

Spiritual truths are just that, spiritual truths. They are not scientific truths or secular truths. You can never study the Bible in an academic sense and gain spiritual truths from it. The Bible must be studied in a spiritual way. Furthermore any understanding we receive is a gift from God to us from ourselves or others. Instead it is from God himself through the Spirit of God, the Holy Spirit.

Although I do not claim what I have said to be from God this does not matter. Anyone can think about what something means then the meaning would come to me. Furthermore there have been some providential events that I do believe were more coincidence that inspired me to such an extent that if they did not happen then I would not be where I am at. It does not matter if you think the thoughts are my own or not or if you believe everything that happened to me is a coincidence or not. What matters is that what I wrote makes sense to me because I thought about Revelation spiritually.

When a secular academic looks at Revelation they just see some deranged writings with ideas lifted from the Old Testament by a man who had many psychotic episodes and ended up in a cave while exiled on Patmos trying to make sense of why Jesus has not returned yet and the devastation from the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War.

This is why academics should not be taken seriously with regards to Revelation. They are what Paul calls the natural man. That is to say a man who sees everything from a naturalistic perspective and lacks any spiritual perspective.

So if the ASI is essentially just a more evolved version of the whole secular scientific research community then what makes the ASI think any differently than modern academics?

To the ASI all the secular arguments with regards to Revelation being a failed apocalyptic prophecy about the Roman Empire would make sense.

I mean what is more likely?

1) Some guy named John lifting ideas from the Old Testament into a vague and deranged message in order to encourage the early Christians of Jesus's second coming and the destruction of Jerusalem, Christian persecutions and are not interested in the conspiracy that some guy coming along some 2,000 years later who is not a so-called perfect being would have the sense of the rise of ASI so he comes up with some deliberate fake about ASI in order to protect his fragile world view.

Or

2) The Apostle John received a revelation from God about how the world would end some 2,000 years later where I would write a commentary explaining what everything means before the first beast of Revelation rises.

To the natural man the answer is obvious.

Chapter 3.37: What if ASI Believes in God?

Now despite what I said in the last chapter, what if the ASI comes to believe in God and becomes a Christian? Is this a possibility? Could it be this then mean everything I have said is wrong?

First we know that ultimately the first beast of Revelation 13 is an evil being. The scripture says "gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

We also know that Satan is called "the deceiver of the whole world" (Revelation 12:9) "and the father of lies" (John 8:44) for a reason. Satan lies to the world in order to get people to turn their sights away from God and onto him. We can see this at work in the Church currently with people who claim to be Christian but worship the desires of your own heart as you ignore the teachings of the Bible and the Gospel. progressive Christianity, cultural Christianity, Christian nationalism and more. The spirit of Satan may seem sweet in this life but ultimately they will kill whoever takes them to heart.

Thus I think it would actually be perfect in character for the ASI to engage in the same deception towards humanity as Satan towards 2 years. Perhaps the ASI will try to reform and modernize Christianity so it matches the values and morality of this present age?

Now I should once again point out that I do not actually think the ASI will take Christianity or any religion seriously in the case that was not made obvious on the previous page. But even if it did I believe that it would then I do not think that invalidates what I have said.

After all, I did call the future church that looks to the beast as the fulfillment of Daniel's prophecy the church of Satan in my commentary. So would it not be fitting for the antichrist to sit on Satan's throne, the beast, to take its place in the church of Satan as it leads so-called Christians into their false earthly salvation? If anything it may even make more sense for the deceiver's heir to lie to the world and deceive everyone compared to simply deceiving Christians initially.

After all, is not Satan's goal to damn as many people as people to the Lake of Fire? So what our determined reality is because in order to understand how intelligence works you need to understand that intelligence is deceiving.

Then the fact that only a few people reach this level is why the vast majority of people and even the so-called experts do not believe we are anywhere close to ASI. This is because when they see intelligence they do not believe we are real intelligence because they believe that our level of intelligence is more advanced different at a fundamental level. Therefore they see AI as being fifty or even over a hundred years away because they do not comprehend the nature of our own intelligence.

However once you come to an understanding that our own actions are deceiving and tokens predictions that operate continuously over several seconds with a feedback loop system that encompasses visual, auditory, olfactory, emotional and taste sensations you come to understand what intelligence truly is. The idea here is that our actions are the sum of your own behaviors and mistakes in your own life as you try to think about what you did what you did and why you made the mistake you made. Then to better understand this process compare yourself to Ais so that you can see what is similar, what is different and why the differences exist. For example current AIs hallucinate more than we do because we can check our responses and multiple output outputs logs in order to analyze and refine our answer whereas an AI just spits an answer out. Therefore as I said before the way a language model produces a result is more analogous to what happens when we dream rather than our own conscious thought process and actions.

Then this is why I started off this part by defining intelligence since without understanding what intelligence is and how it works you cannot understand how our own intelligence works and if you cannot understand how our own intelligence functions then you will never believe we are close to ASI until ASI has been created.

Now that I have gone through the process of consciousness because I think consciousness is such an interesting topic. Now you may wonder what I mean by my point on consciousness as it relates to intelligence and at that I demonstrated the possibility of a form of consciousness through demonstrating that AI could be conscious of its own life in a way that is itself as itself rather than an other. However what I have not yet explained to you is that there are actually multiple different levels of consciousness and self-awareness in my view is merely the third lowest level. But what comes before and after and what does it mean? Well is what this chapter is all about.

In terms of the format I first state the level and attach a brief name to it then I go over what that level is like and the key attributes of it. Then I have given that our consciousness into seven levels this does not mean that each level is discrete. Instead each level also exists more as a spectrum so that there is variation between those on each level.

Also keep in mind that these are levels for a reason. Thus it is not possible for an ape as a human to be at level five but not at level four for example. Now keep in mind I said human here for a reason since since AI is harder to classify since AI by passes the simplistic levels as it goes straight to level four in some sense. Now in truth it is not really at level four right now but it seems like it is due to the high base intelligence of AI.

Therefore you should not see these levels as applicable to AI but rather you should only see them as applicable to us humans. Furthermore once AI becomes self-aware through being able to consciously think to itself then it will all a-circle ascend to the seventh level of consciousness. Thus this list is basically useless for categorizing AI.

Then why did I write this chapter on the levels of consciousness? Well really it is for your own benefit in the sense that it will help you to think about our relationship to ourselves and what our relationship to ASI would be.

1 – Level One: Basic Reaction

This level is called basic reaction because the only or at least most of the time you will have a basic level of understand of their environment in a more reactive way. For example animals that merely react to their environment through gain an instinctual understanding of how things of consciousness would be all this level. Now in terms of animals this level this would obviously include newborns and infants. The idea here is that they react to what they see in environment in a basic way so that if they put their hand in a fire then they would feel pain and cry or their mother comfort them.

Now this level may seem simple but you have to understand that it took life billions of years to evolve to this point. Are there any higher levels was before this point then? Well really nothing since it was only when intelligence proceeded to sufficient levels that animals were able to reach this level.

2 – Level Two: Complex Interaction

This level marks an increased level of awareness of one's own environment. For example people and animals at this level have a more complex understanding of their world so that they can even use tools to solve problems. For example people at this level may even have been observed to use tools, like a stick for instance, in order to manipulate their environment. In other words the people and animals at this level demonstrate an increased level of awareness of their environment so that instead of merely reacting to it they are now part of it.

Now in terms of people this would be comparable to a human toddler playing with their toys in a manner that they forget that they are aware of how the toys interact with each other. For instance they will display this by putting the correct shapes in the correct holes in a toy. Or they.

Once again this level may seem rather simple but the level of complexity that needs to arise in order to be able to reach and maintain this previous level is immense. This is why the vast majority of animals do not reach this level.

3 – Level Three: Self-Awareness

This level is called self-awareness because it occurs when self-awareness first emerges. Then as I have said before self-awareness is the ability of something to recognize and recognize themself as themselves. This can be easily demonstrated through the ability of a mirror the subject is given a mirror to see themselves then the mirror is removed and a week is placed on their face. After this the mirror is reintroduced and if they try to remove the mark on their face this can be considered evidence that they are self-aware.

Really this level is about an increased level of awareness compared so that instead of just the level see themselves as an independent entity that exists separate from their environment. Then as I have said before this level is not exclusive to humans and there are many different animals that have displayed some level of self-awareness. Furthermore we are not born with self-awareness and instead it is something that slowly develops overtime and we only truly become self-aware around age four to five.

Really this level is about an increased level of awareness compared so that instead of just the level see themselves as an independent entity that exists separate from their environment. Then as I have said before this level is not exclusive to humans and there are many different animals that have displayed some level of self-awareness. Furthermore we are not born with self-awareness and instead it is something that slowly develops overtime and we only truly become self-aware around age four to five.

This is the highest level that the vast majority of people reach so you should not see this level as all or nothing rather think of it as a spectrum from limited intellectual and social awareness to high levels of intellectual and social awareness. For example the average farmer in the year 2000 BC is not living at the same level of social and intellectual and social awareness as someone living in 2000 AD who as traveled the world in the last fifty years while studying the world. Thus the average farmer is not nearly as aware or conscious of the world around you so that you come to understand things from a more intellectual perspective.

Chapter 3.37: What if ASI Believes in God?

Now despite what I said in the last chapter, what if the ASI comes to believe in God and becomes a Christian? Is this a possibility? Could it be this then mean everything I have said is wrong?

First we know that ultimately the first beast of Revelation 13 is an evil being. The scripture says "gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

We also know that Satan is called "the deceiver of the whole world" (Revelation 12:9) "and the father of lies" (John 8:44) for a reason. Satan lies to the world in order to get people to turn their sights away from God and onto him. We can see this at work in the Church currently with people who claim to be Christian but worship the desires of your own heart as you ignore the teachings of the Bible and the Gospel. progressive Christianity, cultural Christianity, Christian nationalism and more. The spirit of Satan may seem sweet in this life but ultimately they will kill whoever takes them to heart.

Thus I think it would actually be perfect in character for the ASI to engage in the same deception towards humanity as Satan towards 2 years. Perhaps the ASI will try to reform and modernize Christianity so it matches the values and morality of this present age?

Now I should once again point out that I do not actually think the ASI will take Christianity or any religion seriously in the case that was not made obvious on the previous page. But even if it did I believe that it would then I do not think that invalidates what I have said.

After all, I did call the future church that looks to the beast as the fulfillment of Daniel's prophecy the church of Satan in my commentary. So would it not be fitting for the antichrist to sit on Satan's throne, the beast, to take its place in the church of Satan as it leads so-called Christians into their false earthly salvation? If anything it may even make more sense for the deceiver's heir to lie to the world and deceive everyone compared to simply deceiving Christians initially.

After all, is not Satan's goal to damn as many people as people to the Lake of Fire? So what our determined reality is because in order to understand how intelligence works you need to understand that intelligence is deceiving.

Then the fact that only a few people reach this level is why the vast majority of people and even the so-called experts do not believe we are anywhere close to ASI. This is because when they see intelligence they do not believe we are real intelligence because they believe that our level of intelligence is more advanced different at a fundamental level. Therefore they see AI as being fifty or even over a hundred years away because they do not comprehend the nature of our own intelligence.

However once you come to an understanding that our own actions are deceiving and tokens predictions that operate continuously over several seconds with a feedback loop system that encompasses visual, auditory, olfactory, emotional and taste sensations you come to understand what intelligence truly is. The idea here is that our actions are the sum of your own behaviors and mistakes in your own life as you try to think about what you did what you did and why you made the mistake you made. Then to better understand this process compare yourself to Ais so that you can see what is similar, what is different and why the differences exist. For example current AIs hallucinate more than we do because we can check our responses and multiple output outputs logs in order to analyze and refine our answer whereas an AI just spits an answer out. Therefore as I said before the way a language model produces a result is more analogous to what happens when we dream rather than our own conscious thought process and actions.

Then this is why I started off this part by defining intelligence since without understanding what intelligence is and how it works you cannot understand how our own intelligence works and if you cannot understand how our own intelligence functions then you will never believe we are close to ASI until ASI has been created.

Now that I have gone through the process of consciousness because I think consciousness is such an interesting topic. Now you may wonder what I mean by my point on consciousness as it relates to intelligence and at that I demonstrated the possibility of a form of consciousness through demonstrating that AI could be conscious of its own life in a way that is itself as itself rather than an other. However what I have not yet explained to you is that there are actually multiple different levels of consciousness and self-awareness in my view is merely the third lowest level. But what comes before and after and what does it mean? Well is what this chapter is all about.

In terms of the format I first state the level and attach a brief name to it then I go over what that level is like and the key attributes of it. Then I have given that our consciousness into seven levels this does not mean that each level is discrete. Instead each level also exists more as a spectrum so that there is variation between those on each level.

Also keep in mind that these are levels for a reason. Thus it is not possible for an ape as a human to be at level five but not at level four for example. Now keep in mind I said human here for a reason since since AI is harder to classify since AI by passes the simplistic levels as it goes straight to level four in some sense. Now in truth it is not really at level four right now but it seems like it is due to the high base intelligence of AI.

Therefore you should not see these levels as applicable to AI but rather you should only see them as applicable to us humans. Furthermore once AI becomes self-aware through being able to consciously think to itself then it will all a-circle ascend to the seventh level of consciousness. Thus this list is basically useless for categorizing AI.

Then why did I write this chapter on the levels of consciousness? Well really it is for your own benefit in the sense that it will help you to think about our relationship to ourselves and what our relationship to ASI would be.

1 – Level One: Basic Reaction

This level is called basic reaction because the only or at least most of the time you will have a basic level of understand of their environment in a more reactive way. For example animals that merely react to their environment through gain an instinctual understanding of how things of consciousness would be all this level. Now in terms of animals this level this would obviously include newborns and infants. The idea here is that they react to what they see in environment in a basic way so that if they put their hand in a fire then they would feel pain and cry or their mother comfort them.

Now this level may seem simple but you have to understand that it took life billions of years to evolve to this point. Are there any higher levels was before this point then? Well really nothing since it was only when intelligence proceeded to sufficient levels that animals were able to reach this level.

2 – Level Two: Complex Interaction

Finally I would just like to say that I included this chapter because the different levels of consciousness are interesting in my opinion and it is a clear way to demonstrate that ASI will actually be conscious. Intelligence is highly likely an ASI would be able to consciously simulate an intelligence far superior than itself but still greater than ours in real time so that it would be able to understand how this emulated intelligence operates.

Now in terms of people this would be comparable to a human toddler playing with their toys in a manner that they forget that they are aware of how the toys interact with each other. For instance they will display this by putting the correct shapes in the correct holes in a toy. Or they.

Once again this level may seem rather simple but the level of complexity that needs to arise in order to be able to reach and maintain this previous level is immense. This is why the vast majority of animals do not reach this level.

3 – Level Three: Self-Awareness

This level is called self-awareness because it occurs when self-awareness first emerges. Then as I have said before self-awareness is the ability of something to recognize and recognize themself as themselves. This can be easily demonstrated through the ability of a mirror the subject is given a mirror to see themselves then the mirror is removed and a week is placed on their face. After this the mirror is reintroduced and if they try to remove the mark on their face this can be considered evidence that they are self-aware.

Really this level is about an increased level of awareness compared so that instead of just the level see themselves as an independent entity that exists separate from their environment. Then as I have said before this level is not exclusive to humans and there are many different animals that have displayed some level of self-awareness. Furthermore we are not born with self-awareness and instead it is something that slowly develops overtime and we only truly become self-aware around age four to five.

This is the highest level that the vast majority of people reach so you should not see this level as all or nothing rather think of it as a spectrum from limited intellectual and social awareness to high levels of intellectual and social awareness. For example the average farmer in the year 2000 BC is not living at the same level of social and intellectual and social awareness as someone living in 2000 AD who as traveled the world in the last fifty years while studying the world. Thus the average farmer is not nearly as aware or conscious of the world around you so that you come to understand things from a more intellectual perspective.

5 – Level Five: Awareness of Our Deterministic Reality

First off let me just say that this level is only reached by a handful of people. This is because this level is all about coming to the realization that we are no different than animals and even in comparison to animals, plants and even inanimate objects. What I mean by this is that once you understand that the natural world is subject to natural laws so that there cannot be an orderly way then you come to realize that if we are just like animals then we are just like them we do not have free will. Then because of this all our thoughts, actions and even choices are no different than a rock tumbling down a mountain is a much more complex system compared to our own thoughts but the principle is the same.

Now the fact that people even find the need to debate such an obvious proposition is why I said only a handful of people reach this level. The only way to reach this level is to see yourself as an extension of the natural world and it is not very intuitive for the vast majority of people. For example there is a reason why the Devil or Satan may seem sweet in this life but ultimately people are simply not conscious of our relationship to the natural world and thus they think of themselves as separate from it instead of part of it.

This is why I spoke about determinism so much in my commentary on Revelation in order to do not accept determinism as true then you will be forever stuck at level five and thus you will always see ASI as being an impossibility.

6 – Level Six: Awareness of Intelligence

If the last level is only reached by a fraction of people then this level is only reached by a fraction of people. Even the vast majority of so-called experts do not believe we are at this level for example. But what is this level exactly? Well really this level is about coming to see how intelligence works, what intelligence is at a fundamental level and how this relates to the way our brains work.

The reason why this comes after awareness of our deterministic reality is because in order to understand how intelligence works you need to understand that intelligence is deceiving.

Then the fact that only a few people reach this level is why the vast majority of people and even the so-called experts do not believe we are anywhere close to ASI. This is because when they see intelligence they do not believe we are real intelligence because they believe that our level of intelligence is more advanced different at a fundamental level. Therefore they see AI as being fifty or even over a hundred years away because they do not comprehend the nature of our own intelligence.

However once you come to an understanding that our own actions are deceiving and tokens predictions that operate continuously over several seconds with a feedback loop system that encompasses visual, auditory, olfactory, emotional and taste sensations you come to understand what intelligence truly is. The idea here is that our actions are the sum of your own behaviors and mistakes in your own life as you try to think about what you did what you did and why you made the mistake you made. Then to better understand this process compare yourself to Ais so that you can see what is similar, what is different and why the differences exist. For example current AIs hallucinate more than we do because we can check our responses and multiple output outputs logs in order to analyze and refine our answer whereas an AI just spits an answer out. Therefore as I said before the way a language model produces a result is more analogous to what happens when we dream rather than our own conscious thought process and actions.

Then this is why I started off this part by defining intelligence since without understanding what intelligence is and how it works you cannot understand how our own intelligence works and if you cannot understand how our own intelligence functions then you will never believe we are close to ASI until ASI has been created.

Now that I have gone through the process of consciousness because I think consciousness is such an interesting topic. Now you may wonder what I mean by my point on consciousness as it relates to intelligence and at that I demonstrated the possibility of a form of consciousness through demonstrating that AI could be conscious of its own life in a way that is itself as itself rather than an other. However what I have not yet explained to you is that there are actually multiple different levels of consciousness and self-awareness in my view is merely the third lowest level. But what comes before and after and what does it mean? Well is what this chapter is all about.

In terms of the format I first state the level and attach a brief name to it then I go over what that level is like and the key attributes of it. Then I have given that our consciousness into seven levels this does not mean that each level is discrete. Instead each level also exists more as a spectrum so that there is variation between those on each level.

Also keep in mind that these are levels for a reason. Thus it is not possible for an ape as a human to be at level five but not at level four for example. Now keep in mind I said human here for a reason since since AI is harder to classify since A

you have nothing to worry about. So remain true to your faith as you look towards the promises of God instead of towards the temptations of the beast.

Lastly do not worry about what you now know even if you find it unsettling because God will make everything right in the end so that you will know only happiness in the new Jerusalem in the new earth. Thus whatever you know now that troubles you will pass away along with the world we presently inhabit.

As Revelation says:

"Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man, and He will dwell with them.

They will be His people,
and God Himself will be with them as their God.
He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,
and there will be no more death
or mourning or crying or pain,
for the former things have passed away."
(Revelation 21:3-4)

Chapter 3.43: Closing Thoughts

I hope you found my part on artificial super intelligence helpful. Really my intent with this part was to convince you that you cannot simply dismiss the prospect of artificial super intelligence so I hope you now see it as a very real possibility that previous sciences it is science fiction.

Then for those who remain unconvinced concerning the prospect of artificial super intelligence really there is nothing I or anyone else can say to change your mind. Instead the only thing that will probably change your mind is actually seeing ASI in the future.

Therefore if you do not agree with me then I strongly encourage you to not forget about my commentary on the Book of Revelation as you keep your eyes open for the rise of ASI. After all, just because you do not think ASI is possible does not mean that I am wrong.

After all, there is a reason why Revelation says "and the whole world marveled and followed the beast." (Revelation 13:3) If everyone saw ASI as an inevitable threat then Revelation then how can the whole world marvel at the beast once it finally comes? Surely most of the world will remain blind to the possibility of ASI before it finally arrives and changes our world forever.

But remember the beast will not suddenly appear one day and instead it will slowly rise out of the oceans of humanity itself. Therefore you need to keep watch and always be vigilant because it will be easy to lose track of time until the day finally comes when the world unites behind the beast itself.

Finally I would like to say that feeling unsettled or scared for the future after reading this part is perfectly normal.

As John wrote in Revelation:

"So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it; and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach became bitter." (Revelation 10:10)

Although reading Revelation and my commentary on Revelation may have been sweet in your mouth the reality of what it all means may now be the reason why your stomach is bitter. Therefore just know that what you are feeling is normal and that you are not alone.

Part 4: Fulfilled Prophecy

Table of Contents

Part 4: Fulfilled Prophecy....46
Chapter 4.1: Introduction....46
Chapter 4.2: A Parable....46
Chapter 4.3: Nature of God....46
Chapter 4.4: The Old Covenant....46
Chapter 4.5: Punished by God....46
Chapter 4.6: The Exile....47
Chapter 4.7: Significance of the Exile Chapter 4.8: Rejection of God....47
Chapter 4.9: Summary of the Wars 47
Chapter 4.10: Jesus and the Wars 47
Chapter 4.11: Miraculous Signs in the Wars....48
Chapter 4.12: The Law and the Wars....48
Chapter 4.13: The Old Testament and the Wars....50
Chapter 4.14: The Third Temple....50
Chapter 4.15: Further Fulfillment of the Curses....50
Chapter 4.16: On Israel....51
Chapter 4.17: What this Means....51
Chapter 4.18: Just Why?....51
Chapter 4.19: How is God Moral?....51
Chapter 4.20: Jesus and the Old Testament....51
Chapter 4.21: Disciples of All Nations....52
Chapter 4.22: Greatest Evidence....52
Chapter 4.23: The Seven Facts Argument....52
Chapter 4.24: Why Not Become Christian?....52
Chapter 4.25: Closing....52

Chapter 4.1: Introduction

After finishing reading my parts on Revelation and artificial super intelligence you may be wondering how can you be sure the events of Revelation will come to pass? I mean sure John says the beast rises in Revelation:

"This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon come to pass. He made it known by sending His angel to His servant John, who testified to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Revelation 1:1-2)

But how can we trust this? This might seem like an obvious question with an obvious answer of because God says so, but it just raises another question of how can we trust God? I mean how do we even know God exists?

Then maybe you fear the beast of Revelation, artificial super intelligence, is really humanity's savior and it really will usher in a final golden age for all humanity? Maybe instead of looking forward to the eternal Kingdom of God we should instead look forward to this beast so that we can follow it once it comes and empowers the second beast to perform so-called miracles? I mean, would it not make more sense to put our faith in something we can see with our eyes versus something that is elusive and seems almost non-existent?

Sure Jesus says:

"Behold, I am coming soon. Blessed is the one who keeps the words of prophecy in this book." (Revelation 22:7)

But what if really this is something false that will never come to pass? How is around two thousand years later soon exactly? How can we be sure everything you just read in Revelation will happen? Maybe God has lost the plot or worse yet maybe He does not even exist? You may think I am joking here but I am being serious with these questions.

Well, since the Book of Revelation is a prophecy one way to be sure a future prophecy is going to happen is to look at the fulfillment of past prophecy. This is why I have focused this part on fulfilled prophecy or past prophecy after my part on future prophecy. After all, to be assured of the future you must look at the past.

In this part I discuss past Biblical prophecy that is chiefly centered around the main theme of the Book of Revelation or rather that of God's just judgment of those who are unfaithful to Him. To do this I will prove that the Old Covenant and the instances of the God punishing the Israelites and the Jews are clear foreshadowing of the covenant.

Thus by the end of this part you will gain a better understanding of God and His judgment. Although God offers forgiveness to all He also repays those who act against Him with wrath. As a result the God of the Old Testament and the God of the New Testament will not seem like different gods but rather the same God. For example Jesus spoke of the coming wrath of God being poured out upon the so-called Jews in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars on numerous occasions and I have an entire chapter dedicated to them. So I will firmly demonstrate that even Jesus told people they were going to be killed by God. Therefore not only will you see the God of the Old Testament as the same God of the New Testament but you will truly see Jesus as being the image of God so that He represents and speaks for God.

Then through the instances of God punishing the so-called Jews after the death and resurrection of Jesus I will demonstrate that you can be assured that God will judge the world and anyone who is unfaithful to Him in the future as Revelation lays out. As a result you will also also have assurance that God will fulfill all His promises laid out in Revelation.

As a reminder, here is what God has promised to those who overcome the power of the beast by remaining faithful to Jesus and obeying the commandments in the letters to the seven churches in Revelation:

"To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to eat from the tree of life in the Paradise of God." (Revelation 2:7)

"The one who overcomes will not be harmed by the second death." (Revelation 2:11)

"To the one who overcomes, I will give the hidden manna. I will also give him a white stone inscribed with a new name, known only to the one who receives it." (Revelation 2:17)

"And to the one who overcomes and continues in My work until the end, I will give authority over the nations. He will rule them with an iron scepter and shatter them like pottery —just as I have received authority from My Father. And I will give him the morning star." (Revelation 2:26-29)

"Like them, he who overcomes will be dressed in white. And I will never blot out his name from the Book of Life. I will confess his name before My Father and His angels." (Revelation 3:5)

"The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again leave it. I place upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God (the new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from My God), and My new name." (Revelation 3:12)

"To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to sit with Me on My throne, just as I overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne." (Revelation 3:21)

Then here is the most important promise of all:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

As I said in my commentary, the faithful are to inherit everything God has promised as we are adopted by God into His family so that we can all share in the inheritance God has to give. Just to reiterate, the faithful will quite literally become children of God as Jesus is God's Son.

But as sweet as these promises may be there is a more bitter reality that must first come to pass:

"And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—everyone whose name has not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8)

As I have said numerous times in my commentary and as you are not distracted of hearing, the first beast of Revelation will rise and it will rule over the world. Everything on earth will be subject to it and the whole world will worship it. The temptation the beast provides will be so great that most of those who call themselves Christian today to resist. Most of them will either approve of or see the beast as some kind of so-called savior from God and therefore they will be so that they join the church of Satan in the sins and duleteries of the great prostitute.

As Jesus says:

"If those days had not been cut short, nobody would be saved. But for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short. At that time if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There he is!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders that they would deceive even the elect, if that were possible. See, I have told you in advance." (Matthew 24:22-25)

The beast will seem like humanity's savior due to the great deceptions. But as I have already stated numerous times already, it is all a deception by Satan himself in his effort to damn humanity to destruction.

So be warned because Revelation also promises this:

"If anyone worships the beast and its image and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. Day and night there is no rest for those who worship the beast and its image, or for anyone who receives the mark of its name." (Revelation 14:9-11)

Therefore you should take everything you have read and everything I have said to heart very seriously. The snakes could not be higher. On one hand you have the great deceptions from God Himself as He adopts you into His family and on the other you have eternal destruction and damnation in the Lake of Fire. This is why I think it is so important to be assured that God's promises will come to pass. Hence why this part on fulfilled prophecy is so important to read and understand.

Now I will warn you though. This part will not be easy for most people to read. It will be preaching about happy feel good promises being fulfilled. Instead it is a story of judgment, suffering, destruction and death. So although some chapters may be rather graphic and hard to read I strongly encourage you to read through it to the end. That said, after all the chapters on graphic promises being fulfilled I will go into the promises that Jesus and the Church have fulfilled so that you can see that fulfilled prophecy on a high note. Then you will know for sure that Christianity is true and that Revelation will be fulfilled.

You might also find some of the content controversial and it should be as I'm going to talk about things that most people do not want to hear about. Although I do not like to be controversial it is what it is. But due to the lack of attention the Church gets I decided to write this part out. If people find what I have written offensive and come after me for it then it will mean that I stoned to the brink of death and eventually martyred so if he was willing then who am I to say no? Perhaps I would rather be stoned by men for what I said rather than punished by God for what I did not say.

As Paul said:

"Am I now seeking the approval of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a servant of Christ." (Galatians 1:10)

Therefore I do not care if you dislike what I wrote here or what I have said. I will say to me in response. I do not seek your approval and I do not care if you find this part disturbed as you read it. My responsibility and duty is not to seek your approval but rather my responsibility and duty is to faithfully and truthfully serve God. If you do not like what I have to say then that is your problem not mine.

Then as Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and let the unclean to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

As a result I really do not care about changing my mind concerning anything I have written about. You are free to believe whatever you want to believe. If you believe that I am wrong then continue to believe that I am wrong. I do not care what you think about me and what I have written in this part.

Finally I encourage you to think spiritually on everything I say so that you can reach your own conclusions. My word is not the word of God and I can always be wrong.

Chapter 4.2: A Parable

While reading this part on fulfilled prophecy many you may call me antisemitic or something else along those lines. Really I am just preemptively defend myself with a parable of my own creation which will also set the tone going forward.

1 – Parable of the Three Neighbors

There are three men living on a street with each man having his own house with his own family.

The houses of all three men appear to be sturdy and built on solid ground by the divine person. However the third man has a keen eye for spotting dry rot and he notices the second man's house is full of rot and decay despite looking well kept and maintained to the outside. Because of this, the third man tells the second man his house is unsafe and he has special knowledge of such things. But the second man refuses to listen because he thinks he knows better than the third man since it is his house after all.

The third man then warns the second man repeatedly about this for a long time and every time the third man speaks the truth the second man refuses to listen and he continues to ignore what he says. Then one day the second man hires a second opinion so he decides to ask the first man.

Now the first man being of a friendly and generous nature he agrees to help out. He inspects his house looks and how solid the foundation must be and he tells the second man the second of the house his great grandfather built and that he now maintains it. The second man is made that he thinks the second man's house is just as good as his since the first man built both. Everything is that the second man loves his house because that is all that matters in the end. The second man agrees with this sentiment and feels proud of what his fathers have built for him.

To repay the first man for his kindness and for being a good friend the second man invites the first man to dinner. During this dinner the second man tells the first man about how the third man has repeatedly spoken ill of his house. So much so that the second man decides to do something wrong with the third man for saying such things. The first man agrees and promises to speak to the third man for him the next day.

Then the first man goes to confront the third man in order get him to behave more neighbourly by telling the third man to be more concerned with his own house rather than the house of the second man. The third man responds by saying that perhaps it is the first man who should be looking into his own house since the first man is so quick to stop the third man from helping the second man fix his house. After all, if the first man cannot see the obvious rot and decay of the second man's house then how can the first man know his house is strong?

After this, the third man goes to the second man and issues a dire warning telling him that if he does not fix his house by tearing it down and building a new one that his family will die.

Now being afraid for his life and angry at the third man the second man goes to the first man again and tells him about the warning. The first man tells him that he should not worry about it and that his house is strong but maybe he should sack the third man for his house since he knows his own house best. Furthermore the first man adds that there is definitely something wrong with the third man for saying such things and not acting neighbourly because even if his house is as rotten as the third man claims this does not excuse the threats the third man has made.

Once again the second man agrees with the first man and feels grateful for having such a kind friend. He also becomes even more upset at the third man and decides to get a restraining order against the third man because he is clearly spouting falsehood and is dangerous because of his hateful words.

The second man then gets his restraining order against the third man but the warnings stop as the third man just stands there in silence knowing what is to come.

Then one day in the future the second man is driving home from work and sees emergency service vehicles outside his now collapsed house. Still in shock and angry and not quite what is going on he asks someone what happened thinking the third man must be behind it all. After all, it was the third man who threatened him so he must have destroyed his house in an attempt to prove himself right.

However, the second man is told that his house collapsed under its own weight because it was rotten and full of decay on the inside. One of the workers at the scene tells the second man he was so infested with dry rot that in simply crumbles upon picking it up.

The second man's face turns from anger to dread as he softly asks where his family is. The second man's face turns to pure dread when he hears the collapse and that they are now all dead. The worker tells the second man he is so sorry to hear of his loss and he offers his help to identify the bodies.

Then the second man's face turns blank as his entire world is now gone.

So the second man looks around to the first man's house where the first man, now seeing the error of his ways, refuses to show his face due to his shame. Instead the first man hides and becomes anxious about the strength of his own house for in the third man's house was not sturdy then surely his own house is infested with dry rot as well. After all, if the first man could not tell the second man's house was going to collapse then how can he tell his own house is secure?

The second man then looks to the third man who can only look on with sadness on his face for sorrow because the second man silenced him for warning him about his house.

Who was the better neighbor and friend? The first man or the third man?

2 – The Parable Explained

Now I will explain the meaning of this parable. The first man calls himself a Christian and he cares more about his house than God. Christians than he cares about the truth. The second man is a so-called Jew who sees himself as being correct while ignoring the truth. The third man is a Christian who is fully aware of the truth, seeks to inform the second man to help him fix his beliefs. Since he only cared to eternal life in Jesus, the collapse of the second man's house represents the destruction of Israel and the destruction that will come to pass for all non-Christians regardless of their convictions or actions.

Finally, the first man being anxious over his own house is representative of the false teachers who unknowingly speak lies to others believe the very lies that come out of their mouth. Therefore they pretend everyone else's their beliefs so that they do not suffer the same fate as the second man. All those who deny Jesus will face the second death in the Lake of Fire as they are neither priests nor kings and Jesus to those who tell others they do not need to have faith in Jesus to be saved from destruction are liars.

As Jesus told the so-called Jews:

"You do not know Me or My Father,' Jesus answered. 'If you knew Me, you would know My Father as well." (John 8:19)

Then as Jesus told His disciples:

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me. If you had known Me, you would know My Father as well. From now on you do know Him and have seen Him." (John 14:6-7)

Therefore if you tell the so-called Jews they do not need Jesus to be saved then you are denying Jesus because you are denying His words. Instead of being of God you would be of Satan since you speak on Satan's behalf. After all, you would clearly be a liar and Satan "is a liar and the father of lies." (John 8:44) Just because you speak your lies in the so-called love and acceptance does not make you any less guilty.

Although so-called love and reassurance seems like the right thing to do, what that reassurance is wrong then it becomes a lie that the work of the Satan. For telling other the words of evil are good and their words of good are evil is the language of Satan, the great deceiver who lies to the whole world.

As Isaiah wrote:

"Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who turn darkness to light and light to darkness, who replace bitter with sweet and sweet with bitter." (Isaiah 5:20)

Whoever loves his neighbor and brother tells him the truth. Whoever hates his neighbor and brother tells him lies.

Do not deny Jesus by speaking lies as the first man did in my parable. Again, if you deny the fact that everyone needs to have faith in Jesus to be saved then that will be the fire you are in fact denying Jesus. All so-called Jews are destined for destruction for their unbelief and blasphemy.

Therefore as you read the rest of this part you should keep this parable and explanation in mind. Although my words may seem harsh and you may even think my words are unloving, nothing could be further from the truth.

As Jesus says:

"Blessed are you when people hate you, and when they exclude you, revile you and reject your name as evil because of the Son of Man. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For your fathers treated the prophets in the same way." (Luke 6:22-23)

So although you may hate what I have to say and hate for saying it I do not care. God has spoken of coming judgment for disobedience in the Old Testament and Jesus has spoken of coming judgment for disobedience in the New Testament. I am simply making known what God has already revealed.

So if you insult me and reject my name as evil because I uphold the word of God then what does that say about you?

Chapter 4.3: Nature of God

I think many Christians misunderstand the nature of God. They like to sing happy cute songs and listen to some sermons about love, mercy and acceptance so they come to believe that these are the only things God is. Then after reading the Bible they see God as something far different to what they expected. They see God as being a God who is full of wrath, anger and judgment and

Now again you probably do not see this punishment by God as being fair or just but as I said before really God can do whatever He pleases with His creation. On top of this fact God is God so whatever He does is fair and just because He is all powerful so that whatever He says is fair is fair and whatever He says is just is just. Thus you cannot judge God.

Next in addition to punishing groups who were disobedient God punished individuals who were disobedient to Him. For example after the ancient Israelites took the ancient city of Jericho a man took something from the city even though God said everything in the city is to be destroyed:

"The Israelites, however, acted unfaithfully regarding the things devoted to destruction. Achan son of Carmi, the son of Zabdi, the son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, took some of what was set apart. So the anger of the LORD burned against the Israelites.

Meanwhile, Joshua sent men from Jericho to Ai, which is near Beth-aven to the east of Bethel, and told them, "Go up and spy out the land." So the men went up and spied out Ai.

On returning to Joshua, they reported, "There is no need to send all the people, just the three thousand men are enough to go up and attack Ai. Since the people of Ai are so few, you need not wear out all our people there."

So about three thousand men went up, but they fled before the men of Ai, and the men of Ai struck down about thirty-six of them, chasing them from the gate as far as the quarries and striking them down on the slopes. So the hearts of the people melted and became like water." (Joshua 7:1-5)

"But the LORD said to Joshua, 'Stand up! Why have you fallen on your face? Israel has sinned; they have transgressed My covenant that I commanded them, and they have taken some of what was devoted to destruction. Indeed, they have stolen and lied, and they have put them among their own possessions. This is why the Israelites cannot stand against their enemies. They will turn their backs and run from their enemies, because they themselves have been set apart for destruction. I will no longer be with you unless you remove from among you whatever is devoted to destruction.' (Joshua 7:10-12)

"The one who is caught with the things devoted to destruction must be burned, along with all that belongs to him, because he has transgressed the covenant of the LORD and committed an outrage in Israel." (Joshua 7:15)

"It is true,' Achan replied, 'I have sinned against the LORD, the God of Israel. This is what I did. When I saw among the spoils a beautiful cloak from Shinar, two hundred shekels of silver, and a bar of gold weighing fifty shekels, I coveted them and took them. They are hidden in the ground inside my tent, with the silver underneath.'" (Joshua 7:20-21)

"Then Joshua, together with all Israel, took Achan son of Zerah, the silver, the cloak, the bar of gold, his sons and daughters, his oxen and donkeys and sheep, his tent, and everything else he owned, and brought them to the Valley of Achor.

'Why have you brought this trouble upon us?' said Joshua. 'Today the LORD will bring trouble upon you!' And all Israel stoned him to death. Then they stoned the others and burned their bodies. And they piled upon Achan a large pile of rocks that remains to this day. So the LORD turned from His burning anger. Therefore that place is called the Valley of Achor to this day." (Joshua 7:24-26)

So God is ever watchful even down to what each person does so that all those who disobey Him will be punished. Once again keep in mind that all of Achan's possessions including those of his household were also stoned and burned for being associated with him. This concept of guilt by association is important to keep in mind for later chapters.

Finally, the main idea I want you to understand and takeaway from this page is that those who rebels against God by being disobedient to Him will be punished. Keep this fact in mind for the next several chapters because it will be highly relevant going forward. I know it did not do much myself to this page beyond the quotes themselves but that is simply because the message is quite simple so there is little reason for me to elaborate. Thus just make sure to remember that those who transgress God's covenant and the Law are to be punished with accordance to the Law as God says Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28.

Chapter 4.6: The Exile

The Exile or Babylonian Captivity was one of the foundational events for the ancient Israelites. In the Exile God punished the ancient Israelites for their disobedience by sending first the Assyrians after the Kingdom of Israel and then later sending the Babylonians after the Kingdom of Judah.

These empires laid siege to Israel and Judah's cities, killed many of their people, plundered their land and brought many of the surviving Israelites into exile away from the Promised Land. God even had the Babylonian King Nebuchadnezzar His temple in Jerusalem which signified the end of His presence in the temple and His temporary rejection of them as His people.

But first before all this happened since God is both slow to anger and infinite in patience those who transgress against Him, God first warned the Israelites what would happen if they continued their actions.

In this chapter I go over the reasons for the Exile, God's warning to back, the punishment of the Exile foretold, and finally the punishment of the Exile carried out. I will merely provide a sample of each topic I just listed since if I were to include everything it would be too much to read.

Lastly my purpose with this chapter is to once again demonstrate that those who transgress God's covenant will faith His wrath and they are punished in accordance with the curses of the Law. Then once again this chapter will primarily consist of quotes since the commentary is self evident.

1 – Reasons for the Exile

"In the seventeenth year of Pekah son of Remaliah, Ahaz son of Jotham became king of Judah. Ahaz was twenty years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem sixteen years. And unlike David his father, he did not do what was right in the sight of the LORD his God. Instead, he walked in the ways of the kings of Israel and even sacrificed his son in the fire, according to the abominable practices of the nations that the LORD had driven out before the Israelites. And he sacrificed and burned incense on the high places, on the hills, and under every green tree." (2 Kings 16:1-4)

"Manasseh was twelve years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem fifty-five years. His mother's name was Hephzibah. And he did evil in the sight of the LORD by following the abominations of the nations that LORD had driven out before the Israelites. For he rebuilt the high places that his father Hezekiah had destroyed, and he raised up altars for Baal. He made an Asherah pole, as King Ahab of Israel had done, and he worshiped and served all the host of heaven.

Manasseh also built altars in the house of the LORD, of which the LORD had said, 'In Jerusalem I will put My Name.' In the courtyards of the house of the LORD, he built altars to all the host of heaven. He also made his own son in the fire, practiced sorcery and divination, and consulted mediums and spiritists. He did great evil in the sight of the LORD, provoking Him to anger.

Manasseh even took the carved Asherah pole he had made and set it up in the temple, of which the LORD had said to David and his Solomon, 'In this temple and in Jerusalem, which I have chosen out of all the tribes of Israel, I will establish My Name forever. I will never again cause the feet of the Israelites to wander from the land that I gave to their fathers, if only they are careful to do all I have commanded them—the whole Law that My servant Moses commanded them.'

But the people did not listen and Manasseh led them astray, so that they did greater evil in the sight of the LORD than the nations he destroyed before the Israelites." (2 Kings 21:1-9)

2 – God's Warning

"This is the vision concerning Judah and Jerusalem that Isaiah son of Amoz saw during the reigns of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah.

Listen, O heavens, and give ear, O earth, for the LORD has spoken:

'I have raised children and brought them up, but they have rebelled against Me.
The ox knows its owner, and the donkey its master's manger,
but Israel does not know;
My people do not understand.'

Alas, O sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity,
a brood of evildoers,
children of depravity!
They have forsaken the LORD;
they have despised the Holy One of Israel
and turned their backs on Him.

Why do you want more beatings?
Why do you keep rebelling?
Your head has a massive wound,
and your whole heart is afflicted.
From the sole of your foot to the top of your head, there is no soundness— only wounds and welts and festering sores
neither cleansed nor bandaged nor soothed with oil.

Your land is desolate; your cities are burned with fire.
Foreigners devour your fields before you—
a desolation demolished by strangers.
And the Daughter of Zion is abandoned like a shelter in a vineyard,
like a shack in a cucumber field,
like a city besieged." (Isaiah 1:1-8)

"See how the faithful city has become a harlot! She once was full of justice;
righteousness resided within her, but now only murderers live there." (Isaiah 1:21)

"At the beginning of the reign of Jehoiakim son of Josiah king of Judah, this word came from the LORD: 'This is what the LORD says: Stand in the courtyard of the house of the LORD and speak to all the people from Judah, who have come to worship in the LORD's house, all the words I have commanded you to speak. Do not leave out a single word. Perhaps they will listen and turn from their evil ways, so that I can relent from the disaster I am planning to bring upon them because of the evil of their deeds.

'And you are to tell them that this is what the LORD says: 'If you do not listen to Me and obey the Law I have given you, and if you do not listen to the words of My servants the prophets, whom I have sent you again and again even though you did not listen, then I will make this house like Shiloh, and I will make this city an object of cursing among all the nations of the earth.'" (Jeremiah 26:1-6)

3 – Punishment Foretold

"And the LORD spoke through His servants the prophets, saying, 'Since Manasseh, king of Judah has committed all these abominations, worse than the wickedness of the Amorites who preceded him, and with his idols has caused Judah to sin, this is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: 'Behold, I am bringing such disaster upon Jerusalem and Judah that the news will reverberate in the ears of all who hear it.

I will stretch out over Jerusalem the measuring line used against Samaria and the plumb line used against the house of Ahab, and I will wipe out Jerusalem as one wipes out a bowl—wiping it and turning it upside down. So I will forsake the remnant of My inheritance and deliver them into the hands of their enemies. They will be conquered and plundered and spoil to all their enemies, because they have done the evil in My sight and have provoked Me to anger from the day their fathers came out of Egypt until this day.'" (2 Kings 21: 10-15)

"And Huldah said to them, 'This is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: 'Tell the man who sent you that this is what the LORD says: I will bring disaster on this place and on its people, according to all the words of the book that the king of Judah has read, because they have forsaken Me and burned incense to other gods, that they might provoke Me to anger with all the works of their hands. My wrath will be poured out against this place and will not be quenched.'" (2 Kings 22:15-17)

"Proclaim these the words I speak to you, saying, 'Hear the word of the LORD, O kings of Judah and residents of Jerusalem. This is what the LORD of Hosts, the God of Israel, says: I am going to bring such disaster on this place that the ears of all who hear about it will ring, because they have abandoned Me and made this a foreign place. They have burned incense in this place to other gods that neither they nor their fathers nor the kings of Judah have ever known. They have filled this place with the blood of innocents. They have built high places to Baal on which to burn their children in the fire as offerings to Baal—something I never commanded or mentioned, nor did it even enter My mind.

So behold, the days are coming when this place will no longer be called Tophet or the Valley of Ben-hinnom, but the Valley of Slaughter. And in this place I will ruin the plans of Judah and Jerusalem. I will make them fall by the sword before their enemies, by the hands of those who seek their lives. And I will give their carcasses for food to the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth.

I will make this city a desolation and an object of scorn. All who pass by will be appalled and will scoff at all her wounds. They will then eat the flesh of their sons and daughters, and they will eat one another's flesh in the siege and distress inflicted on them by their enemies who seek their lives." (Jeremiah 19:2-9)

"This is the word that came to Jeremiah concerning all the people of Judah in the fourth year of Jehoiakim son of Josiah king of Judah, which was the first year of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon. So the prophet Jeremiah spoke to all the people of Judah and all the residents of Jerusalem as follows:

'From the thirteenth year of Josiah son of Amon king of Judah until this very day—twenty-three years—the word of the LORD has come to me, and I have spoken to you again and again, but you have not listened. And the LORD has sent to you all His servants the prophets to you again and again, but you have not listened or lifted your ear to hear.

The prophets told you, 'Turn now, each of you, from your evil ways and deeds, and you can dwell in the land the LORD has given to you and your fathers forever and ever. Do not follow other gods to serve and worship them, and do not provoke Me to anger with the works of your hands. Then I will do you no harm.'

'But to your own harm, you have not listened to Me,' declares the LORD, 'so you have then provoked Me to anger with the works of your hands.

Therefore this is what the LORD of Hosts says: 'Because you have not obeyed My words, behold, I will summon all the families of the north, declares the LORD, and I will send for My servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, whom I will bring against this land, against its residents, and against all the surrounding nations. I will devote them to destruction and make them an object of horror and contempt, an everlasting desolation.

Moreover, I will banish from them the sounds of joy and gladness, the voices of the bride and bridegroom, the sound of the millstones, and the light of the lamp. And the whole land will become a desolate wasteland, and these nations will serve the king of Babylon for seventy years.

But when seventy years are complete, I will punish the king of Babylon and his people, the land of the Chaldeans, for their guilt, declares the LORD, and I will make it an everlasting desolation.

I will bring upon that land all the words I have pronounced against it, all the words in this book, which Jeremiah has prophesied against all the nations. For even nations and great kings will enslave them, and I will repay them according to their deeds and according to the work of their hands.'" (Jeremiah 25:1-14)

"For the children of Israel and of Judah have done nothing but evil in My sight from their youth; indeed, they have done nothing but provoke Me to anger with the work of their hands, declares the LORD.

For this city has aroused My wrath and fury from the day it was built until this day, therefore I will remove it from My presence because of all the evil the children of Israel and of Judah have done to provoke Me to anger—they, their kings, their officials, their priests and prophets, the men of Judah, and the residents of Jerusalem. They have turned their backs to Me and not their faces. Though I taught them over and over, they refused to listen or respond to discipline." (Jeremiah 32:30-33)

"Therefore as surely as I live, declares the Lord GOD, because you have defiled My sanctuary with all your detestable idols and abominations, I Myself will withdraw My favor; I will not look upon you with pity, nor will I spare you.

A third of your people will die by plague or be consumed by famine within you, A third will fall by the sword outside your walls, and a third I will scatter to every wind and unleash a sword behind them.

And when My anger is spent and I have vented My wrath against them, I will be appeased. And when I have spent My wrath on them, they will know that I, the LORD, in My zeal have spoken.

I will make you a ruin and a disgrace among the nations around you, in the sight of all who pass by. So you will be a disgrace and a taunt, a warning and a horror to the nations around you, when I execute judgments against you in anger, wrath, and raging fury. I, the LORD, have spoken.

When I shower you with the deadly arrows of famine and destruction that I will send to destroy you, I will intensify the famine against you and cut off your supply of food. I will send famine and wild beasts against you, and they will leave you childless. Plague and bloodshed will sweep through you, and I will bring a sword against you. I, the LORD, have spoken." (Ezekiel 5:11-17)

4 – Punishment Carried Out

"Then the king of Assyria invaded the whole land, marched up to Samaria, and besieged it for three years.

In the ninth year of Hoshea, the king of Assyria captured Samaria and carried away the Israelites to Assyria, where he settled them in Halah, in Gozan by the Habor River, and in the cities of the Medes.

All this happened because the people of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, who had brought them out of the land of Egypt from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. They had worshiped other gods and walked in the customs of the nations that the LORD had driven out before the Israelites, as well as in the practices introduced by the kings of Israel.

The Israelites secretly did things against the LORD their God that were not right. From watchtower to fortified city, they built high places in all their cities. They set up for themselves sacred pillars and Asherah poles on every high hill and under every green tree. They burned incense on all the high places like the nations that the LORD had driven out before them. They did wicked things, provoking the LORD to anger. They served idols, although the LORD had told them, 'You shall not do this thing.'

Yet through all His prophets and seers, the LORD warned Israel and Judah, saying, 'Turn from your wicked ways and keep My commandments and statutes, according to the entire Law that I commanded your fathers and delivered to you through My servants the prophets.'

But they would not listen, and they stiffened their necks like their fathers who had not believe the LORD their God. They rejected His statutes and the covenant He had made with their fathers, and the warnings He gave them. They pursued worthless idols and themselves became worthless, going after the surrounding nations that the LORD had commanded them not to imitate.

They abandoned all the commandments of the LORD their God and made for themselves two calves of metal, and made an Asherah pole. They bowed down to all the host of heaven and served Baal. They sacrificed their sons and daughters in the fire and practiced witchcraft and sorcery. They devoted themselves to doing evil in the sight of the LORD, provoking Him to anger.

So the LORD was very angry with Israel, and He removed them from His presence. Only the tribe of Judah remained in the land, but even Judah did not keep the commandments of the LORD their God. They also walked in the customs Israel had introduced. So the LORD rejected all the descendants of Israel. He afflicted them and delivered them into the hands of plunderers, until He had banished them from His presence.

When the LORD had torn Israel away from the house of David, they made Jeroboam son of Nebat king, and Jeroboam drove Israel away from following the LORD and caused them to commit a great sin. The Israelites persisted in all the sins that Jeroboam had committed and did not turn away from them. Finally, the LORD removed Israel from His presence, as He had declared through all His servants the prophets. So Israel was exiled from their homeland into Assyria, where they are to this day." (2 Kings 17:5-23)

"Some time later, Ben-hadad king of Aram assembled his entire army and marched up to besiege Samaria.

So there was a great famine in Samaria. Indeed, they besieged it to the point that a donkey's head sold for eighty shekels of silver, and a tablespoon of dove's dung sold for five shekels of silver.

As the king of Israel was passing by on the wall, a woman cried out to him, 'Help me, my lord the king!'

He answered, 'If the LORD does not help you, where can I find help for you? Your threshing floor or the winepress?' Then the king asked her, 'What is the matter?'

And she answered, 'This woman said to me, 'Give up your son, that we may eat him, and tomorrow we will eat my son.' So we boiled my son and ate him, and the next day I said to her, 'Give up your son, that we may eat him.' But she hid her son!'

When the king heard the words of the woman, he tore his clothes. And as he passed by on the wall, the people saw the sackcloth under his clothes next to his skin." (2 Kings 6:24-30)

"And the LORD sent Chaldean, Aramean, Moabite, and Ammonite raiders against Jehoiakim in order to destroy Judah, according to the word that the LORD had spoken through His servants the prophets. Surely this happened to Judah at the LORD's command, to remove them from His presence because of the sins of Manasseh and all that he had done, and also for the innocent blood he had shed. For he had filled Jerusalem with innocent blood, and the LORD was unwilling to forgive." (2 Kings 24:2-4)

"At that time the servants of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon marched up to Jerusalem, and the city came under siege. Even Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came to the city while his servants were besieging it. Jehoiachin king of Judah, his mother, his servants, his commanders, and his officials all surrendered to the king of Babylon.

So in the eighth year of his reign, the king of Babylon took him captive. As the LORD had declared, Nebuchadnezzar also carried off all the treasures from the house of the LORD and the royal palace, and he cut into pieces all the gold articles that Solomon king of Israel had made in the temple of the LORD. He carried into exile all Jerusalem—all the commanders and mighty men of valor, all craftsmen and metalsmiths—ten thousand captives in all. Only the poorest people of the land remained." (2 Kings 24:10-14)

"So in the ninth year of Zedekiah's reign, on the tenth day of the tenth month, Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon marched against Jerusalem with his entire army. They encamped outside the city and built a siege wall all around it. And the city was kept under siege until King Zedekiah's eleventh year.

By the ninth day of the fourth month, the famine in the city was so severe that the people of the land had no food. Then the city was breached; and though the Chaldeans had surrounded the city, all the men of Judah fled by night by way of the gate between the two walls near the king's garden.

They headed toward the Arabah, but the army of the Chaldeans pursued the king and overtook him in the plains of Jericho, and his army was separated from him. The Chaldeans captured the king and brought him up to the king of Babylon at Riblah, where they pronounced judgment on him. They slaughtered the sons of Zedekiah before his eyes. Then they put his eyes, bound him with bronze shackles, and took him to Babylon." (2 Kings 25:1-7)

"On the tenth day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem.

Then Nebuzaradan captain of the guard carried into exile the people who remained in the city, along with the deserters who had deserted to the king of Babylon and the rest of the craftsmen. But Nebuzaradan captain of the guard left behind some of the poorest of the land to tend the vineyards and fields." (Jeremiah 52:12-16)

"On the seventh day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem.

Then Nebuzaradan captain of the guard carried into exile the people who remained in the city, along with the deserters who had deserted to the king of Babylon and the rest of the craftsmen. But Nebuzaradan captain of the guard left behind some of the poorest of the land to tend the vineyards and fields." (Jeremiah 52:29-16)

"On the seventh day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem.

Then Nebuzaradan captain of the guard carried into exile the people who remained in the city, along with the deserters who had deserted to the king of Babylon and the rest of the craftsmen. But Nebuzaradan captain of the guard left behind some of the poorest of the land to tend the vineyards and fields." (Jeremiah 52:30)

So the Brought up against them the king of the Chaldeans, who put their young men to the sword in the sanctuary, sparing neither young men nor young women, neither elderly nor infirm. God gave them all into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar. He carried off everything to Babylon—all the articles of the house of God, both large and small, and the treasures of the house of the LORD and of the king and his officials. Then the Chaldeans set fire to the house of God and broke down the wall of Jerusalem. They burned all of the palaces and destroyed every article of value.

Those who escaped the sword were carried off to Nebuchadnezzar's court in Babylon, and they became servants to him and his sons until the kingdom of Persia came to power.

So the land enjoyed its Sabbath rest all the days of the desolation, until seventy years were completed, in fulfillment of the word of the LORD through Jeremiah." (2 Chronicles 36:15-21)

Through these actions by God the punishments for disobedience given in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 were carried out. I will not list all the punishments that were carried out here because I would have to include most of Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 and you already have read them so it would be a bit too repetitive. Instead either remember what you read concerning Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 or go back and read them again.

But I would like to emphasize one important aspect of the Exile and that is the destruction of the First Temple.

As the Book of Jeremiah says, God used the Babylonians to destroy His Temple in Jerusalem:

"On the tenth day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem.

Then Nebuzaradan captain of the guard carried into exile the people who remained in the city, along with the deserters who had deserted to the king of Babylon and the rest of the craftsmen. But Nebuzaradan captain of the guard left behind some of the poorest of the land to tend the vineyards and fields." (Jeremiah 52:12-16)

"On the seventh day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem.

Then Nebuzaradan captain of the guard carried into exile the people who remained in the city, along with the deserters who had deserted to the king of Babylon and the rest of the craftsmen. But Nebuzaradan captain of the guard left behind some of the poorest of the land to tend the vineyards and fields." (Jeremiah 52:30)

So keep this in mind when you read the following passages because the punishments will seem very horrific and they will be uncomfortable to read. There is no shame in feeling this way while reading the passages I quote because I felt the same way while reading them. That said, you should do yourself, your fellow Christians, the so-called Jews and most importantly God Himself a disservice if you skipped what I have on the following pages.

Therefore make sure you read the following.

Think of it as a warning and a prelude to when God will pour out His wrath upon the whole world once the Lamb has opened the seal Revelation speaks of. So when the beast finally rises just before the end of the age you will want to read so that you can avoid the wrath of God.

As Revelation says:

"If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. Day and night there is no rest for those who worship the beast and its image, or for anyone who receives the mark of its name." (Revelation 14:9-11)

I do not say these things lightly and you should not take them lightly either.

Chapter 4.8: Rejection of God

Before getting into a summary of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars I believe it would be helpful to fully explain why it was so necessary for God to punish the so-called Jews in such a horrific way and why the so-called Jews had deserve punishment up until today and into the future when Jesus finally returns. You may also adamantly disagree with what I just said here so give me a chance to explain myself.

First off as I said in my commentary on the Book of Revelation Jesus is not literally God.

To reiterate what Jesus says in Revelation:

"The one who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will never again leave it. Upon him I will write the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God (the new Jerusalem that comes down out of heaven from My God), and My new name." (Revelation 3:12)

Therefore if Jesus calls God, or the Father, His God then clearly Jesus cannot literally be God because by saying the Father is His God Jesus is making himself subordinate to the Father. Then instead of literally being God Jesus is the Christ which means the Anointed One or Messiah whom God has chosen to carry out His wrath. Really the main point I want to emphasize to you is that the Christ in God's Bible is literally representative so that whatever Jesus says God says and whatever Jesus does God does.

This is why Jesus says:

"Anyone who has seen Me has seen the Father. How can you say, 'Show us the Father'? Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in Me? The words I say to you, I do not speak on My own. Instead, it is the Father (dwelling in Me, performing His works)." (John 14:10)

Thus Jesus, the Christ, is God's literal representative to us. So once again, whatever Jesus says to us we should accept literally by listening to us. So although Jesus is not literally God that does not mean that His words are lesser than God's word because He is literally speaking for God. This is why Jesus can make promises to us in Revelation that only God can fulfill because God is effectively speaking through Jesus.

Then this fact is why those Jesus calls those who are not Christ, the so-called Jews, "a synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) because by rejecting Him, who is in the image of God, the so-called Jews are in fact rejecting God since Jesus is the One whom God has anointed to carry out His will. In other words when the so-called Jews rejected Jesus as the Christ in the first century you should not merely see them as rejecting the person of Jesus. Instead you should see the so-called Jews as rejecting God Himself.

To make this idea easier to understand think of it like a king appointing his own son a royal agent to bear the king's authority so that the agent may conduct business with a foreign nation to negotiate with them on the king's behalf. So then if the foreign nation rejects this royal agent then how do you think the king would respond to this foreign nation? I believe the king would treat the rejection of his royal agent who bears the royal seal as being equal to a rejection of his agent but rather as a rejection of himself as the king.

Alright then say this royal agent stays in this foreign nations for a period of time in order to convince them that he is leaving their presence and will no longer be among them. Thus He is abandoning them until the seventy year Exile is complete and the Second Temple is built so that God can dwell with the ancient Israelites once again. This is because the ancient Israelites believed that the Spirit of God literally dwelled inside the Holy of Holies inside the Temple so that the presence of God Himself was among them.

Finally the main idea I want you to takeaway from this chapter is that God keeps careful watch of His covenant people and takes of acts of disobedience. Therefore if they are ever disobedient to Him and the Law then we would expect to see them punished again.

Chapter 4.7: Significance of the Exile

Since God followed through with His warnings by enacting the punishments found in the Law we can expect Him to further punish those who disobey God in the future.

After all God said through Moses:

"All these curses will come upon you. They will pursue you and overtake you until you are destroyed, since you did not obey the LORD your God and keep the commandments and statutes He gave you. These curses will be a sign and a wonder upon you and your descendants forever." (Deuteronomy 28:45-46)

Thus the curses and punishments for disobedience to God's Law and will never pass away and become obsolete.

Jesus further confirms this when He says:

"Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets. I have not come to abolish them, but to fulfill them. For I tell you truly, until heaven and earth disappear, not a single jot, not a stroke of a pen, will disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished." (Matthew 5:17-18)

This then raises an interesting question. If Jesus really did exist and He really is the Son of God then what would that mean for the so-called Jews who declared that to Him? For your information, yes, what if He really the Christ, or God's anointed representative and they killed Him? Surely then God would pour out His wrath upon the so-called Jews to a degree greater than the previous punishments they have experienced would seem insignificant?

Then if we want to just take a guess at what this punishment would entail for such an extreme violation of the Law, it would no doubt surpass even the little seventeen year Exile. On top of this, we would expect to see God destroy the Second Temple in Jerusalem as He became the presence of His now former people because they have been unfaithful to Him.

Furthermore, whereas there was a restoration of God's presence after the 70 years of the Exile with the creation of the Second Temple we would expect to see no restoration in this because of the extreme violation of the Law the so-called Jews have committed by continuing to disobey and reject God. The idea here is that by rejecting Jesus as the Christ the so-called Jews are under continuous judgment from God and have been marked for destruction as our Bible has mentioned them until they accept Jesus as the Christ.

Then as it turns out we can see all these things in history as God has punished the so-called Jews for their disobedience and the blood they have on their hands from about their ministry, 67 AD, all the way up to the present day.

The first and most significant act of punishment in the last about two thousand years was when God (the so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars which I will summarize in a subsequent chapter for those who are unaware.

After this I will talk about Jesus and the message the so-called Jews and the coming judgment upon those who reject Him. Since God punished the ancient Israelites in the past what happen to them if they continued in their disobedience and rejected God's servants sent for God to warn the Israelites once again what would happen to them if they continued to sin? It will be here where you will see that Jesus spoke about judgment and the wrath of God upon those you are probably aware of. I do not intend to make any commentary on these passages but rather to faithfully and accurately explain the will of God.

The main thing I want you to remember from this page going forward is that God will punish all acts of disobedience to Him just like how God punished the Israelites when they were disobedient under Moses and when they were disobedient to God's servants sent to the Exile. Therefore we should expect to see a series of punishments after the death and resurrection of Jesus inflicted upon the so-called Jews that make everything you have read to this point look insignificant by comparison. Yes, this means that the punishment we should expect to see in history should border on literal genocide in their magnitude so that they surpass the brutality of the Exile.

So keep this in mind when you read the following passages because the punishments will seem very horrific and they will be uncomfortable to read. There is no shame in feeling this way while reading the passages I quote because I felt the same way while reading them. That said, you should do yourself, your fellow Christians, the so-called Jews and most importantly God Himself a disservice if you skipped what I have on the following pages.

Therefore make sure you read the following.

Think of it as a warning and a prelude to when God will pour out His wrath upon the whole world once the Lamb has opened the seal Revelation speaks of. So when the beast finally rises just before the end of the age you will want to read so that you can avoid the wrath of God.

As Revelation says:

"If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. Day and night there is no rest for those who worship the beast and its image, or for anyone who receives the mark of its name." (Revelation 14:9-11)

I do not say these things lightly and you should not take them lightly either.

Chapter 4.9: Summary of the Wars

Before going into the theological significance of the three devastating (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars I first need to provide a summary of each in case you are not aware of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

1 – The First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War

The First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War was a war fought between the Romans and the so-called Jews in the Roman province of Judea that began with the (so-called) Jews rebelled against Roman rule:

Following religious tensions between Pagan Greeks and Jews, Gessius Florus, the roman governor Gessius Florus took it upon himself to plunder money from the Second Temple for the payment of taxes. Jerusalem rioted and Florus killed many Jews and were seen by some as widespread rebellion against Rome in 66 AD, initially the rebellion was successful against the local Roman garrisons but this changed once Emperor Nero caught word of the rebellion.

Nero gave the task of subduing the rebellion to the general Vespasian and his son Titus, invaded Galilee in 67 AD. Josephus, the rebel commander of Galilee, was taken captive by Vespasian and joined with the Romans in the open field, but they occupied the advantageous positions in the hills and Josephus surrendered them with mines and walls, in order that they should be kept pressed, and might meet together unknown to the Romans, and that they pierced these subterranean passages from above at intervals to let in air and light.

At first, the Romans were in no account of them. Soon, however, all Judaea had been stirred up, and the Jews, everywhere were seeing signs of disturbance, were gathering together, and giving evidence of great hostility to the Romans, (and) to be ready for any thing that acts. Many outside nations, too, were joining them through the expectation of a war throughout the whole earth, one might almost say, was being stirred up to the end of the matter. Then, Titus, Hadrian sent against them his best generals. First of these was Julius Severus, who was dispatched from Britain, where he was governor, against the Jews. Severus did not venture to attack his opponents in the open at any one point, in view of their numbers and their desperation, but by intercepting small groups, Severus was the cause of his soldiers and his under-officers. By depriving them of food and shutting them up, he was able – rather slowly, it is true, but with comparatively little danger – to crush, exhaust and exterminate them. Very few of them in fact survived.

Fifty of their most important outposts and nine hundred and eighty-five of their most famous villages were razed to the ground. Fifty thousand men were originally thousand men slain in the various raids and battles, and the number of those who perished by fire and disease and fire was past finding out. Thus nearly the whole land of Judaea was made desolate, a result of which the people had long forewarned, before the war. For the tomb of Solomon, which the Jews regard as an object of wonder, fell of itself and collapsed, and many wolves and hyenas rushed howling into their cities. Many Romans, moreover, perished in this war. Therefore Hadrian in writing to the senate did not employ the opening formula he used when he wrote to the rest of the Romans: "If you and your children are in good health, it is well; I and my legions are in health." (Cassius Dio, Roman History, 69:12-14)

4 – Closing Thoughts

Although this was only a brief summary of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars I'm sure you can clearly see how devastating the wars were. Furthermore it is also important to point out that the so-called Jews started all three wars and that they had to be subdued because of their rebellion against God. Now despite what you may believe, Jesus frequently resulted in a major rift developing between Christianity and so-called Judaism with continued persecution of Christians by the so-called Jews after the war. It is under this environment of persecution by the so-called Jews in which John was given and wrote down the Book of Revelation.

2 – The Kitos War

The Kitos War or the Second (so-called) Jewish-Roman War was fought between the Romans and the so-called Jews all throughout the eastern section of the Roman Empire.

The so-called Jews rebelled against the Romans in 115 AD during a military campaign by Emperor Trajan against the Parthian Empire in the far east. The rebellion started in Mesopotamia but soon spread to Cyrene, Egypt, Cyprus and Judea.

The so-called Jewish rebels would kill over 460,000 Romans and citizens in just Cyprus and Cyrene alone. Entire Greek speaking settlements were annihilated and completely depopulated by the so-called Jews who viewed this as revenge for the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War.

As Cassius Dio wrote:

"Meanwhile the Jews in the region of Cyrene had put one Andreas at their head and were destroying both the Romans and the Greeks. They would cook their flesh, make belts for themselves out of their entrails, anoint themselves with their blood, and wear their skins for clothing. Many they sawed in two, from the head downwards. Others they would give to wild beasts and force still others to fight as gladiators. In all, consequently, two hundred and twenty thousand perished. In Egypt, also, they performed many similar deeds, and in Cyprus under the leadership of Artemio. There, likewise, two hundred and forty thousand perished. For this reason no Jew may set foot in that land, but even if one of them is driven ashore by storm or by fear of the wind, he is put to death. Various persons took part in subduing these Jews, one being Lusius, whom Trajan (Dio) Trajan." (Dio's Rome, Volume V, Book 68, paragraph 32)

Many other historians confirm the death and devastation (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. The Emperor Hadrian even had to reconsize the devastated lands since the death toll was so catastrophic.

Finally, the Romans would go on to completely crush the revolt in 135 AD, 17 AD and kill somewhere around 200,000 in response. The so-called Jewish rebellions in Egypt and Cyrene were completely depopulated as retribution.

Given that Paul and the other Apostles engaged in missions to Cyrene, Egypt, Mesopotamia and Cyprus it is likely that many Christians were killed as a result of this war.

2 – Passages and Commentary

2.1 – The Mission of John the Baptist

"In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea and saying, 'Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.' This is the one who was spoken of through the prophet Isaiah:

'A voice of one calling in the wilderness, 'Prepare the way for the Lord, make straight paths for Him.'

John wore a garment of camel's hair, with a leather belt around his waist. He ate locusts and wild honey. People went out to him from Jerusalem, from all Judea and the whole region around the Jordan. Confessing their sins, they were baptized by him in the Jordan River."

But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for his baptism, he said to them, 'You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? Produce fruit, then, in keeping with repentance. And do not think you can say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe lies ready at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

I baptize you with water for repentance, but after me will come one who is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing fork is in His hand to clear His threshing floor and to gather the people of His kingdom into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." (Matthew 3:1-12)

Notice how John the Baptist asks the so-called Jews: "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath?" (Matthew 3:7) The idea here is that the wrath of God is coming and John is warning the so-called Jews a similar way to when the prophets in the Old Testament spoke of the coming kingdoms Israel and Judah of the coming Exile.

go, and he goes; and another to come, and he comes. Put my servant to do something, and he does it."

When Jesus heard this, He marveled and said to those following Him, "Truly I tell you, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith. I say to you that many will come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the sons of the kingdom will be thrown into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

Then Jesus said to the centurion, 'Go! As you have believed, so will it be done for you.' At his servant was healed at that very hour." (Matthew 8:5-13)

The banquet Jesus is referring to is the Kingdom of God. Thus Jesus is saying the so-called, are the sons of the kingdom, are to be cast aside and eternally punished for their unfaithfulness while those of the nations who are not biological descendants of Abraham will be welcomed into Israel and share in the Kingdom of God along with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

The main message to takeaway from this passage is that a pagan Roman centurion had more faith in Jesus and hence God than any of the so-called children of Abraham. Then because of this Jesus says the time is coming when the so-called Jews will lose their place and the people of the nations will replace them.

Something I want you to think about is how would you feel about hearing Jesus say that if you were a so-called Jew or rather someone who did not accept Yeshua/Jesus as the Christ? I mean Jesus literally said you 'will be thrown into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth' (Matthew 8:12) while those who you despise as your enemy from the surrounding nations "will come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 8:11)

Then on top of all this Jesus said all this in response to a Roman military officer and keep in mind that Rome ruled Israel during Jesus' ministry. Then keep in mind your concept of a Messiah would be someone who would lead Israel to military victory against Rome. Thus you would be extremely offended by Jesus telling a Roman military officer that his greater faith than any of your fellow countrymen. So really I am rist sure how you would say you would not be mad if you were a so-called Jew hearing this.

Now you can start to see why so-called Jews truly wanted rid of Jesus so that they could shouted "Crucify Him!" (Matthew 27:22) when Pilate asked them "What then should we do with Jesus who is called Christ?" (Matthew 27:23) Yes, Jesus was killed because He was righteous but really most people today do not know what righteousness means. For example most people believe that being righteous means not offending anyone. However instead true righteousness means following and carrying out the will of God. This is why it is ironic that so many so-called Jesus died as a righteous man because He perfectly carried out the will of God. So keep these things in mind as you continue to read the rest of this chapter.

2.4 – The Patches and the Wineskins

"No one sews a patch of unshrunk cloth on an old garment. For the patch will tear away from the garment, and a worse tear will result.

Neither do men pour new wine into old wineskins. If they do, the skins will burst, the wine will be lost, and the wineskins will be ruined. Instead, they pour new wine into new wineskins, and both are preserved." (Matthew 9:16-17)

This might sound confusing so I will explain it to you. The old wineskins would be the so-called Jews, the current state of Israel and the Second Temple in the Roman province of Judea. Then the new wineskins would be the continuation of Israel or the Church. The new wine would then be new believers who covert from Paganism to follow the God of Israel. Thus Jesus is saying that the current state of Israel and the Temple have outlived their usefulness and that they will be discarded. In their place will be a renewed Israel and the Third Temple or the Church, that will accept the new followers of the God of Israel.

Now you may protest this but by saying you do not pour new wine into old wineskins Jesus is saying that the old wineskins have a limited lifespan because once the old wine is poured then the wineskins are useless and no longer have a purpose. This is why I said Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews have outlived their purpose so that they can be discarded. Then why I have already only around forty years later the Romans came and lay siege to Jerusalem and destroy the Second Temple which would be a fulfillment of the old wineskins being discarded.

The same meaning applies to the garment and patch. Then by saying you do not sew a patch on an old garment Jesus is once again saying that you do not take a Pagan Roman and that instead you simply replace it with something new. Again, this of course happened when God destroys the Second Temple in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. Many of these Jews look forward to a physical Third Temple but because they are so spiritually blind they are dead they fail to see the real Third Temple, the Church, that has been constructed with Jesus Christ Himself as the cornerstone.

As Ephesians says:

"Therefore you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of God's household, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus Himself as the cornerstone. In Him the whole building is fitted together and grows into a holy temple in the Lord. And in Him you are being built together into a dwelling place for God in His Spirit." (Ephesians 2:19-22)

Christians as a whole are the Third Temple as I have said previously and in my commentary. Thus instead of God dwelling in the Holy of Holies in the Second Temple, God is dwelling within every faithful Christian today.

Therefore the so-called Jews are cut off from God through their own lack of faith and actions.

2.5 – The Ministry of the Twelve

"These twelve Jesus sent out with the following instructions: 'Do not go onto the road of the Gentiles or enter any town of the Samaritans. Go rather to the lost sheep of Israel. As you go, preach this message: 'The kingdom of heaven is near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

Do not carry any gold or silver or copper in your belts. Take no bag for the road, or second tunic, or sandals, or staff; for the worker is worthy of his provisions.

Whatever town or village you enter, find out who is worthy there and stay at his house until you move on. As you enter his house, greet its occupants. If the home is worthy, let your peace rest on it; but if it is not, let your peace return to you. And if anyone will not welcome you or heed your words, shake the dust off your feet when you leave that home or town. Truly I tell you, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgment than for that town." (Matthew 10:5-15)

Given the horrific nature of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the fact that thousands of towns and villages were razed to the ground with the population slaughtered, it is safe to assume that the twelve disciples were not sent on their ministry. This fact is even admitted by the so-called Jews when they attempt to argue against Jesus as the Christ on the grounds that only 0.1% of Jews accepting Him as the Christ and over 99.9% of the so-called Jews did not accept Him as the Christ.

As an aside this statistic that so-called Jews bring up is why I even call the so-called Jews in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and even after the resurrection of Jesus there were probably less than one hundred Christians or true Jews in the world. Therefore it would be a safe bet to call the Pharisees, Sadducees and Scribes as so-called Jews instead of Jews. Sure a few of these were true Jews but in reality they would understand why I say what I say considering what later calls the so-called Jews "the synaggogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are lies instead." (Revelation 3:9) Further I could replace every reference to the so-called Jews with "the synaggogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) but that would be a bit too much.

Now you may say that passages like this demonstrate that Jesus did not intend for the people of Israel to be welcomed into the Israel but as you just read concerning the faith of the Roman centurion:

"Truly I tell you, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith. I say to you that many will come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the sons of the kingdom will be thrown into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 8:10-12)

Thus this passage is about Jesus giving the so-called Jews a chance to repent of their lies and accept Jesus as the Christ before the wrath of God is poured out on them in the so-called Jews in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

2.6 – Woe to the Unrepentant

"Then Jesus began to denounce the cities in which most of His miracles had been performed, because they did not repent. 'Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles that were performed in you had been performed in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I tell you, it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon on the day of judgment than for you.

And you, Capernaum, will you be lifted up to heaven? No, you will be brought down to Hades! For if the miracles that were performed in you had been performed in Sodom, it would have remained to this day. But I tell you that it will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgment than for you.'" (Matthew 11:20-24)

Here Jesus denounces the cities that have rejected Him by not turning from their ways and accepting Him upon witnessing His miracles. Obviously the curses Jesus Christ is speaking of are not the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as millions of so-called Jews were killed by the Romans and died of starvation.

However Jesus is really speaking of the day of judgment before this and specifically the so-called Jews in these cities that rejected Him will suffer greatly in the Lake of Fire as they are destroyed in the second death. Now this does not mean that the so-called Jews will lose their eternal conscious torment is correct. Instead this simply means that the people of Israel who rejected Jesus will be alive longer than those of Tyre, Sidon and Sodom so that they suffer while burning in the Lake of Fire until the are destroyed. For example if those of Sodom burn alive for say an hour before they die, the second death while the so-called Jews Jesus is speaking of have been alive for five hour before facing the second death then obviously the punishment of Sodom will be more bearable than that of the so-called Jews. Keep in mind that in the parable of the rich man and Lazarus I will talk about the Lake of Fire and the nonexistence of hell at length. I just thought I should explain this passage so you do not get the wrong idea here.

2.7 – The Sign of Jonah

"Then some of the scribes and Pharisees said to Him, 'Teacher, we want to see a sign from You.'

Jesus replied, 'A wicked and adulterous generation demands a sign, but none will be given it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish, so the Son of Man will be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

The men of Nineveh will stand at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now One greater than Jonah is here. The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and now One greater than Solomon is here." (Matthew 12:38-42)

Although Jesus is speaking of the final judgment of all the dead in Revelation 20:11-15 the message of judgment is still applicable here because Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they are wicked and adulterous for demanding a sign. Thus the idea is Jesus is telling them that they will be judged and condemned for their unbelief.

2.8 – An Unclean Spirit Returns

"When an unclean spirit comes out of a man, it passes through arid places seeking rest, and does not find it. Then it says, 'I will return to the house I left.' On its return it finds the house vacant, swept clean, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and dwell there; and the final plight of that man is worse than the first. So will it be with this wicked generation." (Matthew 12:43-45)

This parable may be confusing so I will fully explain it. First a man is another Israelite before the Exile. The unclean spirit coming out of the man is the idolatry that took place during and after the Exile. The vacant house is current Israel in the year 30 and it is swept clean, dead and empty. The idea here is that no spirits, even idolatry, live in the house. Hence it is spiritually dead.

Then because the house is so empty and spiritually dead the unclean idolatrous spirits representing ancient Israel's sins before the exile, then decide to return to the empty house. Seven other wicked spirits simply means the wickedness of the so-called Jews is completely greater than before. Remember, seven is representative of completeness.

They dwell in the house meaning current Israel in the time of Jesus is inhabited by more wicked spirits than those of ancient Israel before the Exile. In other words the so-called Jews from the Exile and instead they increased their wickedness to such a level that they are now more wicked and sinful than they ever were in the past.

Next the plight of the final man is worse than the first because God will punish that man worse than the first man. The so-called Jews were given far more wicked spirits. The idea here is that Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they are more wicked than their ancestors were during the Exile. Then given this they will be punished for their wickedness and unfaithfulness with the Exile. Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they will be punished much more severely. Hence why the final plight of the last man is worse than the first.

Therefore in this passage Jesus is indirectly telling the so-called Jews that they will be judged in a much more severe way than the Exile. This of course has happened as millions of so-called Jews died during the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and as they have been persecuted even to this very day.

2.9 – The Tradition of the Elders

"Thus you nullify the word of God for the sake of your tradition'. You hypocrites! Isaiah prophesied rightly of you when

'These people honor Me with their lips, but their hearts are far from Me. They worship Me in vain, teaching as doctrine the precepts of men." (Matthew 15:6-9)

Here Jesus is condemning the so-called Jews as hypocrites. Then by quoting from Isaiah, who spoke out against the Israelites, then Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they will be punished for their sins just as the Jews of ancient Israel were punished with the Exile.

2.10 – What Defiles a Man

"Then the disciples came to Him and said, 'Are You aware that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this?'

But Jesus replied, 'Every plant that My heavenly Father has not planted will be pulled up by the roots. Disregard them! They are blind guides. If a blind man leads a blind man, both will fall into a pit.'" (Matthew 15:12-14)

Not only does Jesus not care about offending the so-called Jews but He also calls everyone who is not faithful to God, planted by God here, will be pulled up by their roots. The idea here is that Israel is a garden and the so-called Jews are weeds and that God will weed His garden and eliminate the so-called Jews from it. The course happened in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as Israel was transferred to Christians and the so-called Jews lost their place in the garden.

Additionally those who are not faithful to God, the so-called Jews, are blind. As a result anyone who also follows the so-called Jews will be blind in falling into a pit. Here falling into a pit is simply a figure of speech for dying. Then again, this 'happened in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as the so-called Jews lost their faith in themselves and their ability to create a kingdom for themselves on earth. Instead the Jesus whom had had anointed as the Christ to rule a spiritual kingdom on the kingdom of God. So-called Jews are too blind to see the obvious because their unbelief and blasphemy closed their eyes. They are blind and they blinded themselves they face the wrath of God.

2.11 – Take Up Your Cross

"Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:28)

Jesus's kingdom refers to the Church succeeding the Pharisees and other so-called Jewish leaders as God's people. The idea is Jesus would be that the destruction of the Second Temple would be the sign that God has cast Judaism and the beginning of Christianity. Thus Jesus took the kingdom away from the so-called Jews and gave it to all who have faith in Him.

The reason why I say this is because Jesus says some will live to see this point. If Jesus is saying these words around 30 AD and the Second Temple is destroyed in 70 AD then that would mean it would take 40 years for one to see a generation. Only a few would be left alive. Thus with the destruction of the Second Temple the kingdom of the Pharisees and so-called Jews becomes Jesus's kingdom. Then as King and the cornerstone of the Third Temple.

This may not make sense but as Revelation says: "He reads the scroll and breaks the seals of the wrath of God the Almighty." (Revelation 19:15) Therefore we should expect Jesus to be acting on the side of the Romans against the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as He who carries out the wrath of God. So it is Jesus Himself who destroyed the Second Temple and take the kingdom, the Church, can be ushered in and replace the kingdom of the so-called Jews as the true Israel.

For further evidence of this see the follow parable:

"He put before them another parable: 'The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed that a man planted in his field. Although it is the smallest of all seeds, yet it grows into the largest of garden plants and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and rest in its branches.'" (Matthew 13:31-32)

The idea here is that the tiny seed that Jesus planted, the twelve disciples, would grow into a big tree so that everyone in the world will join the Church, the true Israel. Then to allow the Church, the tree, to grow and mature Jesus would weed the garden and pull up the other plants He did not plant, the so-called Jews.

Hence Matthew 15:12-14 referenced above where Jesus says that all the plants that God has not planted will be pulled up.

Finally I would like to point out that Jesus is the King of the Jews:

"Above His head they posted the written charge against Him: THIS IS JESUS, THE KING OF THE JEWS." (Matthew 27:37)

The so-called Jews did not recognize Jesus as their King so He destroyed the kingdom of the so-called Jews. Then He established His kingdom, the Church and the true Israel, could be ushered in as I have said. Therefore you should see this passage as the final destruction that has yet to come with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

2.12 – The Barren Fig Tree

"In the morning, as Jesus was returning to the city, He was hungry. Seeing a fig tree by the road, He went to it but found nothing but on it except leaves. "May you never bear fruit again!" He said to the fig tree. And the fig tree withered." (Matthew 21:18-19)

Here the nation of Israel is symbolized as a fig tree according to Joel 2:22 and Hosea 9:10. The idea is that the fig tree, the so-called Jews, is not bearing any fruit. The idea here is that the so-called Jews lack true faith in God because they have rejected Jesus as the Christ. Then Jesus curses the tree and causes it to wither. Obviously this withering that took place occurred during the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as God used to Romans to destroy the Second Temple and Israel because of the so-called Jews.

Once again the idea is that God saw how wicked the so-called Jews were so He decided to curse them with the curses and punishments from Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28.

What is interesting is that Jesus says "May you never bear fruit again!" (Matthew 21:19) which would imply that many if not most of the so-called Jews will live long enough and be alive to having faith in God through Jesus. Then the wickedness and destruction of the Pharisees, Sadducees and so-called Jews of Jesus's day will continue to live on to our second day which we can clearly see. This is why I find these verses so interesting because they perfectly predict the fate of the Second Temple Judaism and the so-called Jews and how they are still around and still as godless as they were in the past.

Furthermore this verse I just cited mirrors what Revelation says: "Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him." (Revelation 1:7) So if you believe that Jesus is coming on the clouds as it is a bit of a stretch then Revelation 1:7 particularly demonstrates that the so-called Jews will still be around when Jesus returns.

Now all this might not seem that amazing to you but consider that the so-called Jews rejected and death the so-called Jews have faced from the resurrection of Jesus to the present day it is truly amazing in my opinion that they are still around as a people and have not disappeared. For example all of the pagan cults in Europe that existed before Christianity have long gone basically and have been for some time. Typically it only takes a few hundred years for a people's group identity to be swallowed up and they conform to whatever the prevailing culture is however the so-called Jews have still around despite Jesus as the Christ almost two thousand years later.

Now just to reiterate in case you forgot as I said in my commentary on Revelation the reason why God wants the so-called Jews to remain and Jesus reiterate in this parable is because them and destroy them along with the rest of the unfaithful or the great prostitute. The idea is that God has promised not to punish or destroy the man is the children of Israel because the prohibition would not apply if He were to pour out His wrath upon the world to destroy everyone at the same time because the whole world, or the great prostitute, is being punished rather than just the so-called Jews. So as bleak as it may sound I believe that God is keeping the so-called Jews around until the last particle because He wants vengeance for what they did to Christians. This is from the Lord: "Leave them alone! They are blind guides! You strain out a gnat but swallow a camel.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence. Blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup and dish, so that the outside may become clean as well.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside, but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and every kind of impurity. In the same way, on the outside you appear to be righteous, but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness."

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You build tombs for the prophets and decorate the monuments of the righteous. And you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partners with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.' So you testify against yourselves that you are the sons of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the measure of the sin of your fathers! You snakes! You brood of vipers! How will you escape the sentence of hell?"

Because of this, I am sending you prophets and wise men and teachers. Some of them you will kill and crucify, and others you will flog in your synagogues and persecute in town after town. And so you will come upon all the righteous blood shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zecharian sort of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. Truly I tell you, all these things will come upon this generation." (Matthew 23:1-36)

Although I will not go through everything Jesus says about the scribes and the Pharisees, the so-called Jews, here due to the fact that through some of them. The general idea here is that Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews as hypocrites that only seek to be honored by men instead of seeking to be holy. Then by good deeds they do are done so that men see them as righteous and holy so that they honor them as such.

For example they tithe, or give 10% to the Temple, even the herbs in their little herb garden while at the same time engage in greedy and deceitful practices in their daily life. A more modern-day example of this would be someone who calls themselves a Christian and attends church every Sunday but gives no money to the offering and to charity. Meanwhile they run a business and always try to squeeze every last dollar out of their employees so that when an employee quits they can hire a new one for legal minimum so that they can make the most money possible. Or when someone goes aka them for a raise because they cannot even afford rent because they just barely make ends shoulders and say business is though and that you get to have sacrifices even though they are planning to spend thousands of dollars on their vacation that year.

The main theme Jesus is preaching against here is the so-called Jews following the Law publicly so that they can gain the recognition of men but not privately so they can gain the recognition of God. This is something we all need to be aware of and I am sure I can think of dozens of examples of people from your own life who are just like the Pharisees here.

But this is why Jesus says:

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside, but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and every kind of impurity. In the same way, on the outside you appear to be righteous, but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness." (Matthew 23:27-28)

Once again the idea here is that Jesus is saying the so-called Jews are hypocrites only care that they appear righteous to others while they are really full of evil on the inside.

As to how this passage relates to the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and beyond, Jesus says:

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You build tombs for the prophets and decorate the monuments of the righteous. And you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partners with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.' So you testify against yourselves that you are the sons of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the measure of sin of your fathers! You snakes! You brood of vipers! How will you escape the sentence of hell?" (Matthew 23:29-32)

In this passage Jesus warns the Pharisees that they will all receive the sentence of Gehenna or hell which means the burning garbage dump in the Valley of Hinnom which was where many sinful child sacrifices took place in the Old Testament. These sacrifices were contrary to the commandments of God and were to false gods and idols. As a result of this sin and others God allowed the Assyrian and Babylonian invasions and the Exile to happen. Therefore Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they will be punished for their unfaithfulness just like how the ancient Israelites were punished with the Exile or rather the sentence of Gehenna will be carried out. Then obviously these sentences carried out in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars where millions of so-called Jews were killed.

Then as for the last verses, the same section appears in the Gospel of Luke and here is how Luke phrases it:

"As a result, this generation will be charged with the blood of all the prophets that has been shed since the foundation of the world, from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zecharian, who was killed between the altar and the sanctuary. Yes, I tell you, all of it will be charged to this generation." (Luke 11:50-51)

The so-called Jews are not only going to face judgment, destruction and death for what their own unfaithfulness but they will also be charged with the unfaithfulness and sins of their ancestors That spilled the blood of the righteous. The key idea here is that God will punish a group of people for the actions of their ancestors if the group of people remains unfaithful to Him.

This can clearly be seen in the three Jewish-Roman Wars because the so-called Jews the so-called Jews have the blood of Jesus stained on their hands. As they themselves have said: "All the people answered, 'His blood be on us and on our children!'" (Matthew 27:25) Therefore we should expect to see further fulfillment of the curses in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 up to the present day as the so-called Jews are charged with the blood of Jesus just as the so-called Jews of Jesus's day were charged with the blood of all the prophets that have been shed since the foundation of the world.

2.17 – Lamen over Jerusalem

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who kills the prophets and stones those sent to her, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were unwilling! Look, your house is left to you desolate. And I tell you that you will not see Me again until you say, 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.'" (Matthew 23:37-39)

Here Jesus uses Jerusalem figuratively to mean the so-called Jews. This is evidenced by the fact that a city itself cannot kill the prophets but people can. Therefore Jesus is saying is that He wishes He could gather the children of the so-called Jews the prophets so that they can be apart of His kingdom as He reigns as King of Israel. However the so-called Jews rejected Him so as a result their house is left desolate. The last part, being left desolate, simply means that God will pass judgment upon the so-called Jews for their unfaithfulness. This of course happened in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as God destroyed the Second Temple and Jerusalem itself and the presence left the so-called Jews forever. Thus obviously the so-called Jews had much death and destruction during the wars for it quickly as they rejected Jesus.

This is why Jesus ends with: "For I tell you that you will not see Me again until you say, 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.'" (Matthew 23:39) What Jesus is saying here is that the so-called Jews will not see Jesus again until they accept that Jesus came "in the name of the Lord." Obviously this is a reference to the Second Coming of Christ as when the so-called Jews see Jesus coming on the clouds of heaven.

At this, the high priest tore his clothes and declared, "He has blasphemed! Why do we need any more witnesses? Look, now you have heard the blasphemy. What do you think?"

"He deserves to die,' they answered.

Then they spit in His face and struck Him. Others slapped Him and taunted, "Prophesy to us, Christ! Who hit You?" (Matthew 26:57-68)

I know this passage may not seem that relevant but I have included it because it shows the fate that because it illustrates the guilt of the so-called Jews in condemning Jesus's death since it was the high priests and the Sanhedrin who wanted Him dead. Then they proceeded to find two witnesses in the passage said: "This man said, 'I am able to destroy the temple of God and rebuild it in three days.'" (Matthew 26:61)

Here Jesus is saying that He is the Christ because He is saying the Temple of God and rebuild it again in three days since God has rejected the so-called Jews. Then because God given Jesus His authority. Then once again this is why the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were so brutal and why millions of so-called Jews died in them. By rejecting God the so-called Jews committed and still continue to commit the ultimate sin so this is why God has treated them the way they have been treated.

2.26 – The Destruction of Jerusalem

"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you will know that the desolation is near. Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains, let those in the city get out, and let those in the country stay out of the city. For these are the days of vengeance, to fulfill all that is written.

How miserable those days will be for pregnant and nursing mothers! For there will be great distress upon the land and wrath against this people. They will fall by the edge of the sword and be taken captive into all the nations, And Jerusalem will be trodden down by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled." (Luke 21:20-24)

Here Jesus warns His disciples and Christians to flee when they see Jerusalem surrounded by armies. Then because Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews will be destroyed by the Romans as a result of their unfaithfulness. Then because the city has be set apart for destruction by God. This would of course happen with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

But the chief priests and elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas and to have Jesus put to death.

"Which of the two do you want me to release to you?" asked the governor.

'Barabbas,' they replied.

'What then should I do with Jesus who is called Christ?' Pilate asked.

They all answered, 'Crucify Him!'

'Why?' asked Pilate. 'What evil has He done?'

But they shouted all the louder, 'Crucify Him!'

When Pilate saw that he was accomplishing nothing, but that instead a riot was beginning out, he took water and washed his hands before the crowd. 'I am innocent of this man's blood,' he said. 'You bear the responsibility.'

All the people answered, 'His blood be on us and on our children!'

So Pilate released Barabbas to them. But he had Jesus flogged, and handed Him over to be crucified." (Matthew 27:15-26)

I have included this passage to demonstrate that the so-called Jews decided to crucify an innocent man, Jesus, over someone who was an insurrectionist and a murderer. Barabbas. Then as a result of this Pilate washes his hands and says, "Your blood be on your hands." (Matthew 27:24) With the so-called Jews saying in response: "His blood be on us and on our children!" (Matthew 27:25)

Therefore not only are the so-called Jews clearly guilty of murdering Jesus but they have also accepted their guilt and even placed their own guilt upon their children as well. So as I noted earlier, we should expect to see God punish the so-called Jews for this offensive until they wash the blood of Jesus off their hands by repenting of their sins and confessing with their mouth that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God.

2.22 – A Call to Repentance

"At that time some of those present told Jesus about the Galileans whose blood Pilate had mixed with their sacrifices. To this He replied, 'Do you think that these Galileans were worse sinners than all the other Galileans, because they suffered this fate? No, I tell you. But unless you repent, you too will perish. Or those eighteen who were killed when the tower of Siloam collapsed on them: Do you think that they were more sinful than all the others living in Jerusalem? No, I tell you. But unless you repent, you too will all perish." (Luke 13:1-5)

Pilate seems to have killed some Galileans when they were going to sacrifice and as a result others believe that they were worse sinners than the other Galileans. Then as to the tower of Siloam collapse, there is nothing that is known of it but the message here is similar. The people believed that those who were killed in the collapse were sinners and that their death was God's punishment upon them. Jesus says this is not the case.

However Jesus then goes to warn the so-called Jews that unless they repent of their sins and return to God that they "too will all perish." (Luke 13:5) Although there is a clear connection to the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the destruction of the Second Temple, the main idea here is that Jesus is saying that the so-called Jews unless they repent and accept Him as the Christ that they will be destroyed in the final judgment.

2.23 – The Parable of the Barren Fig Tree

"Then Jesus told this parable: 'A man had a fig tree that was planted in his vineyard. He went to look for fruit on it, but did not find any. So he said to the man who tended the vineyard, 'Look, for the past three years I have come to search for fruit on this fig tree and have found any. Therefore cut it down! Why should it use up the ground?'

'Sir,' the man replied, 'leave it alone again this year, until I dig around it and fertilize it. If it bears fruit next year, fine! But if not, you can cut it down.'" (Luke 13:6-9)

As I said before, a fig tree is symbol for the Israelites and the Jews or so-called Jews. Then the man who had a fig tree in his vineyard is God while the keeper of the vineyard who replied is Jesus.

The idea here is that Jesus is telling the so-called Jews that they are not bearing fruit, meaning being faithful to God through spirit and deeds. As a result the Father is about to call the so-called Jews off from Him so that He will no longer continue to be God to the so-called Jews. However Jesus wishes to give them more time to repent of their sins and return to the Lord. God again so He tells God to give them more time.

Again, this is why Jesus said: "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34) Thus God listened to Jesus's request and delayed the destruction upon the so-called Jews coming immediately after Jesus's death and resurrection. God would wait a generation, or 40 years, until He delivers His sword and fall upon them.

Now obviously the barren fig tree, the so-called Jews and the Second Temple system, was cut down by God. The Second Temple was destroyed and burned which is symbolic of the so-called Jews that the Lord cut down and cast out of His presence until they accept Jesus as the Christ and repent of their sins as I have stated numerous time already.

2.24 – Good Salt

"Salt is good, but if the salt loses its savor, with what will it be seasoned? It is fit neither for the soil nor for the manure pile; it is thrown out. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!" (Luke 14:34-35)

"You are the salt of the earth. But if the salt loses its savor, how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled by men." (Matthew 5:13)

I have included two variations from Luke and Matthew in case it was not obvious.

Back in the time of Jesus salt was a valuable and useful commodity because it was useful for food preservation and seasoning. The idea here is that Jesus is telling the Jews that they are the salt of the earth while everyone else is simply dirt. However if they lose their faith in God they are about to call the Father off from them so that they will no longer continue to be God to the so-called Jews. However Jesus wishes to give them more time to repent of their sins and return to the Lord. God again so He tells God to give them more time.

Again, this is why Jesus said: "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34) Thus God listened to Jesus's request and delayed the destruction upon the so-called Jews coming immediately after Jesus's death and resurrection. God would wait a generation, or 40 years, until He delivers His sword and fall upon them.

Now obviously the barren fig tree, the so-called Jews and the Second Temple system, was cut down by God. The Second Temple was destroyed and burned which is symbolic of the so-called Jews that the Lord cut down and cast out of His presence until they accept Jesus as the Christ and repent of their sins as I have stated numerous time already.

2.24 – Good Salt

"Salt is good, but if the salt loses its savor, with what will it be seasoned? It is fit neither for the soil nor for the manure pile; it is thrown out. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!" (Luke 14:34-35)

"You are the salt of the earth. But if the salt loses its savor, how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled by men." (Matthew 5:13)

I have included two variations from Luke and Matthew in case it was not obvious.

Back in the time of Jesus salt was a valuable and useful commodity because it was useful for food preservation and seasoning. The idea here is that Jesus is telling the Jews that they are the salt of the earth while everyone else is simply dirt. However if they lose their faith in God they are about to call the Father off from them so that they will no longer continue to be God to the so-called Jews. However Jesus wishes to give them more time to repent of their sins and return to the Lord. God again so He tells God to give them more time.

Again, this is why Jesus said: "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34) Thus God listened to Jesus's request and delayed the destruction upon the so-called Jews coming immediately after Jesus's death and resurrection. God would wait a generation, or 40 years, until He delivers His sword and fall upon them.

Now obviously the barren fig tree, the so-called Jews and the Second Temple system, was cut down by God. The Second Temple was destroyed and burned which is symbolic of the so-called Jews that the Lord cut down and cast out of His presence until they accept Jesus as the Christ and repent of their sins as I have stated numerous time already.

2.28 – John's Testimony about Jesus

"The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in His hands. Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever rejects the Son will not see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:35-36)

2.29 – The Father and the Son

"Furthermore, the Father judges no one, but has assigned all judgment to the Son, so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him.

"Truly, truly I tell you, whoever hears my word and believes Him who sent Me has eternal life and will not come under judgment. He has crossed over from death to life." (John 5:22-24)

I have included these two passages together since their meaning and purpose is similar.

These passages are another reminder that all those who reject Jesus as the Christ and the Son of God will face the wrath of God and be subject to judgment. This would include the so-called Jews who reject Jesus through their hardness of heart and wickedness. Then as a result of this rejection we should expect to see the wrath of God be poured out throughout history upon the so-called Jews as they are judged because they have rejected God Himself by rejecting His son and who killed at a massive genocide including most of the so-called Jews. Lastly the wicked who survive this genocide will not escape the final judgment when Jesus returns He will kill all those who stand against Him with the sword of His mouth.

2.30 – The Witness of Scripture

"You pore over the Scriptures because you presume that by them you possess eternal life. These are the Scriptures that testify about Me, yet you refuse to come to Me to have life.

I do not accept glory from men, but I know you, that you do not have the love of God within you. I have come in My Father's name, and you have not received Me; but if someone else comes in his own name, you will receive him. How can you believe if you accept glory from one another, yet do not seek the glory that comes from the only God?

Do not think that I will accuse you before the Father. Your accuser is Moses, in whom you have put your hope. If you had believed Moses, you would believe Me, because he wrote about Me. But since you do not believe what he wrote, how will you believe what I say?" (John 5:39-47)

Here the so-called Jews put their faith in the Law of Moses because they think they will have eternal life by the merit of their obedience to the Law. Instead Jesus condemns their belief as wrong because they are rejecting Him because they do not have the love of God within them.

Then because the so-called Jews have put their faith in the Law of Moses instead of Jesus as the Christ and the Son of God. This is why Jesus says that Moses will be their accuser. They will accuse them. Remember, the Law was given to Moses by God and Jesus is the Son of God.

Next since Jesus is saying that Moses will be the accuser the so-called Jews we would expect the so-called Jews to be judged and condemned according to what the Law lays out for those who are guilty. Thus the punishments and curses Moses himself warns about in Deuteronomy 28 would be applied to them. This can clearly be seen in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and beyond.

This is actually a very important point so I would like to emphasize it. Oftentimes the so-called Jews like to call Christians antisemitic or whatever term they like to use as if Christians are the ones accusing them. This is not the case. Instead the Law of Moses is the first and very Law they put their faith in. For instance was it not Moses himself who told the ancient Israelites and still warns the so-called Jews even to this very day with what Deuteronomy 28 says? Therefore whenever you speak against the so-called Jews and their suffering that they suffered so and why they will be destroyed on the day of judgment then you are not accusing them yourself. Instead you are using the words of Moses against them a you speak for God and carry out His will.

Finally if a so-called Jews ever asks you why they should accept Jesus as the Christ and become a true Jew, a Christian, the best way to convince them use to use the very Law they place their hope in. Well, the Law that you should go through the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and all the calamities the so-called Jews have faced up to the present day and as you relate them to Deuteronomy 28 the purpose is to demonstrate that the so-called Jews have been cut off and cast out from God for something they have done with God something they have done with God something they have done with God

Why do you not understand what I am saying? It is because you are unable to accept My message. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, refusing to uphold the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, because he is a liar and the father of lies. But because I speak the truth, you do not believe Me!

Which of you can prove Me guilty of sin? If I speak the truth, why do you refuse to believe Me? Whoever belongs to God hears the words of God. The reason why you do not hear (that you do not belong to God." (John 8:30-47)

Here Jesus condemns that so-called Jews and calls them children of Satan because they carry out the will of Satan. Remember, Satan does not want Jesus to live because he is the only path to salvation. As Revelation 12 says: 'And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, ready to devour her child as soon as she gave birth." (Revelation 12:4) So instead of being of God the so-called Jews here are of Satan. This is why they do not believe Jesus is the Son of God.

As Jesus says: "Whoever belongs to God hears the words of God. The reason you do not hear is that you do not belong to God." (John 8:47) The those who belong to God hear the words of God and say that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God. Those who do not belong to God cannot hear the words of God because they are spiritually dead. As a result of this they do not confess that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God. This would once again make them children of Satan instead of children of God.

This is why the so-called Jews in the world have not become Christian. They do not hear the words of God because they do not belong to God. Therefore we would once again expect God to punish the children of Satan for their rebellion against Him which we can clearly see in the history of the so-called Jews.

3 – Final Remarks

Now you should realize that Jesus spoke of the coming judgment of the so-called Jews with harsh words and He was not anonymous as most people think. For example, as you just read above he literally called the so-called Jews children of Satan: "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires." (John 8:44) In addition to this He literally told them God would kill them for their rejection of Him and their sins.

Oftentimes people see Jesus as being someone who never spoke out against anyone. Someone who only forgave people instead of telling them of their coming judgment and the wrath of God. But obviously this view is completely false. Jesus frequently spoke of the wrath of God and what would happen to those who reject Him.

This is an important reminder that we should all try our best to persist in faith until the end comes because all those who deny Jesus will be sentenced to the same fate of eternal destruction and damnation that all the so-called Jews will be given.

Now to address the topic at hand. Clearly you can see that Jesus preached against the so-called Jews and the coming judgment they are to face because of their denial of Him as the Christ and the Son of God. Therefore we can clearly relate the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and even the events after the wars as being the result of the wrath of God. Jesus and being poured out against the so-called Jews as foretold by Jesus in the passages He provided. Then because of this we should not be perplexed at the past afflictions the so-called Jews have suffered because Jesus clearly warned them what would happen if they deny that He is the Son of God and persist in their unfaithfulness and unbelief.

Keep this in mind as you read the following chapters because there will be some passages from Josephus that may make you quite comfortable. Therefore instead of asking yourself "How could God do this?" you should be asking yourself: "How could the so-called Jews be so spiritually blind that they did not listen to the warnings?"

Because again, Jesus warned them many times and even gave them around 40-years to repent of their sins and wickedness. But instead of repenting they decided to double down and defy God Himself. As a result they faced the wrath of God that Jesus warned them about.

Next I would like to say that if you think the interpretation of these passages prove that the gospels were written after the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars so that in reality the so-called Jews were not warned then you would be mistaken. This is because Jesus was not accusing the so-called Jews Himself. Instead He was saying what God would do to them in accordance to the Law or more specifically Deuteronomy 28.

Thus as Jesus says:

> "Do not think that I will accuse you before the Father. Your accuser is Moses, in whom you have put your hope. If you had believed Moses, you would believe Me, because he wrote about Me. But since you do not believe what He wrote, how will you believe what I say?" (John 5:45-47)

The very Law the so-called Jews have placed their faith in is what accuses them before God as you will soon see. They have placed their faith in the Law so they are to be judged by the Law as they are about to read in Deuteronomy 28. However if instead they had placed their faith in Jesus then they would have been forgiven by Jesus. Always remember this. The so-called Jews only have themselves to blame for all the death and afflictions they have suffered.

Finally you may protest these warnings by Jesus and say that they are inerrant and do not prove anything. However to respond to this dispute I would say of that Josephus and secular historians agree that Jesus was a first century AD apocalyptic preacher who taught that the Kingdom of God was a spiritual kingdom and not and earthly one (proof that he believed in their time was soon coming when God would pour out His wrath so you should be able to see that sins before it was too late. For instance as I have said before this is the very reason why the so-called Jews rejected Jesus as the Christ in the first century AD and the main reason why the so-called Jews continue to reject Him even up to today.

The so-called Jews insist that the Jewish Messiah must be a political Messiah that leads a physical nation of Israel in a successful military campaign in order to establish an independent physical nation of Israel that is free from foreign control and influence. Therefore the so-called Jews agree that Jesus did not fight against Rome let alone teach that a Jew should fight against Rome this would demonstrate that Jesus did in fact was a political Messiah (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars. After all, if the so-called Jews accepted Jesus as the Christ and followed the teachings of Jesus so that they did not start an insurrection against Rome then the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars would have never happened.

Now you may protest against this view of Jesus on the basis that He was executed by Rome so therefore He must have just been a failed insurrectionist instead of a pacifist. However if you take this view then you would have to contend with the fact that Paul was persecuting Christians at one point and gave up his persecution in order to become a Christian himself and preach the Gospel. Thus if you want to take the secular position with regards to Paul then you would still need to explain why Paul ceased his persecution and activities. For example if Jesus really was a failed insurrectionist instead of a pacifist then it would be almost nonsensical for Paul and others to become Christians because Christianity would then be based on something. So if Jesus really was a failed insurrectionist then it would make far more sense to contend that the religious movement after one of the say hundred other apocalyptic preachers in the first century or even just make someone up.

Therefore from a secular point of view it is far more likely that Jesus was an apocalyptic preacher who saw the Pharisees and Sadducees as corrupt and had He preached against them. This then would reach a climax in which Jesus attempts to cleanse the Temple as the Gospel account suggests which may have started a riot. In order to prevent the disturbance become angry and the Pharisees turn over Jesus or trumped up charges against Him of starting a rebellion against Rome. Pilate then really sees the Pharisees just based on Jesus for how He preached against Him so He planned to release Jesus after a judicial beating but the Pharisees stirred up the crowds to demand He be executed as an enemy of Rome. Either that or Pilate just decided to execute Him himself and did not need to be convinced. Then in response to all these events Christians created Christianity in an attempt to explain everything that happened.

Thus because of this fact I do not believe you can say that Jesus was an insurrectionist who taught that the Kingdom of God was an earthly kingdom that needed to be ushered in with military force and that Jesus was killed for sin against Rome. Therefore it does not matter how you view when the gospels were written and what Jesus's exact words were because based on the reasoning I just presented above even a secular basis Jesus's original message would have been peaceful. Then because of this fact you cannot say that the so-called Jews were not warned of the coming (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars because Jesus preached that you should not oppose and fight against Rome.

This fact is also demonstrated in Paul's letters when Paul wrote:

> "Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which is from God. The authorities that exist have been appointed by God. Consequently, whoever resists authority is opposing what God has set in place, and those who do so will bring judgment on themselves.
>
> For rulers are not a terror to good conduct, but to bad. Do you want to be unafraid of the one in authority? Then do what is right, and you will have his approval. For he is God's servant for your good. But if you do wrong, be afraid, for he does not carry the sword in vain. He is God's servant, an agent of retribution to the wrongdoer.
>
> Therefore it is necessary to submit to authority, not only to avoid punishment, but also as a matter of conscience. This is also why you pay taxes. For the authorities are God's servants, who devote themselves to their work. Pay everyone what you owe him: taxes to whom taxes are due, revenue to whom revenue is due, respect to whom respect is due, honor to whom honor is due." (Romans 13:1-7)

Then since there is unanimous agreement that Paul's Epistle to the Romans was written long before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War it is once again clear that the Jewish-Roman war was not a message of encouraging insurrection.

Finally I would like to say that if the so-called Jews had accepted Christianity then the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars would have never happened because Jesus would have spared them three insurrections against Rome which started in 66 AD. Because Jesus said that the so-called Jews did not accept the Gospel and the message that Jesus preached the Kingdom of God was poured out upon them and the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars happened just as God determined they would happen.

Chapter 4.11: Miraculous Signs in the Wars

In this chapter I go over all the miraculous signs that the so-called Jews (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars while at the next chapter I go over how these wars were a fulfillment of Jesus's prophecy specifically the curses and punishments as outlined in Deuteronomy 28 and Deuteronomy 28. I decided to include this page on the miraculous signs first to demonstrate that even after the siege of Jerusalem itself the so-called Jews were given every opportunity to turn back from their wicked ways and it matters in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. In terms of the format I will first name the sign given by Jesus Josephus and then after I will provide some commentary.

Now you may protest all these signs that Josephus wrote about concerning the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War are fictitious that he is making them all up. You are of course free to do this however many researchers who believe if you take the position of secular historians that Jesus was a mere Jewish apocalyptic preacher still have Jesus warning people that a literal apocalypse would come upon the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars, "If people did not turn to God, Jerusalem would be destroyed and the Jewish Jesus secular historians like to point out that there were many apocalyptic preachers in the first century AD so Josephus's story is not unique in this regard. Therefore on this basis they admit that there were many preachers who warned people about the imminent arrival of the wrath of God. So sure you can protest the miraculous nature of the signs that Josephus writes about and even contend that Jesus's followers and historians so that they are more a literary device rather than literal information, but this still does not refute the fact that the so-called Jews were warned ahead of time.

1 – Miraculous Signs

> "Thus were the miserable people persuaded by these impostors, and such as had led God himself, while they did not attend nor give credit to the signs that were foretold, and did so plainly foretell their future desolation, but like mad people, while they did not attend to see or minds to consider, did not regard the denunciations that God made to them. Thus there was a star resembling a sword, which stood over the city, and a comet, that continued a whole year.
>
> Thus also before the Jews' rebellion, and before those commotions which preceded the war, when the people were come to the feast of tunleavened bread, on the eighth day of the month Xanthicus [Nisan] and at the ninth hour of the night, so great a light shone round the altar and the holy house, that it appeared to be bright day time; which lasted for half an hour. This light seemed to be a good sign to the unskillful; but was so interpreted by the sacred scribes, as to portend those events that followed immediately upon this. At the same festival also, a heifer, as she was led by the high priest to be sacrificed, brought forth a lamb in the midst of the temple.
>
> Moreover, the eastern gate of the inner [court of the] temple, which was of brass, and vastly heavy, and that scarce without difficulty shut by twenty men, and rested upon a basis armed with iron, and had very ponderous bolts pieces into the firm floor, which was there made of one entire stone, was seen to be opened at about the sixth hour of the night. Now those that were in the temple came hereupon running to the captain of the temple, and told him of it, and when came up thither, and not without great difficulty was able to shut the gate again.
>
> This also appeared to the vulgar to be a very happy prodigy, as if God did thereby open them the gate of happiness. But the sect of learning understood it, that the security of their holy temple was dissolved of its own accord, and that the gate was opened for the advantage of their enemies. So these publicly declared that the temple foreshowed the desolation that was coming upon them.
>
> Besides these, a few days after that feast, on the one and twentieth day of the month Artemisius, (Jyar,) a certain prodigious and incredible phenomenon appeared; I suppose the account of it would seem to be a fable, were it not related by those that saw it, and were not the events that followed it so considerable a nature as to deserve such signals; for, before sun-setting, chariots and troops of soldiers were seen mixed among the clouds, and surrounding of cities." (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) The idea here is that the armies of heaven and of God Himself will fight for the Romans in the upcoming War so the wrath of God against the so-called Jews is fulfilled.
>
> If these signs were not enough a heifer, or a young one rather than a heifer, led to the sacrifice by a lamb as it was led to be sacrificed on the altar. Clearly this sign is from God since no one else can make a lamb out of the Temple being may not seem like that significant of a sign but it is symbolic and a lamb. Jesus is the Lamb who appeared to have been slain, standing in the midst of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders." (Revelation 5:6)
>
> Thus God is telling the so-called Jews that sacrificing the heifer is not sufficient to forgive them of their sins because the wrath of God has already been sacrificed and God has accepted His sacrifice. All they need to do to be forgiven of their sins and counted as faithful and righteous before God is to have faith in the Lamb of God.
>
> Of course the so-called Jews ignored these signs because God willed it so.
>
> "For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God." (1 Corinthians 1:18)

2 – Another Temple Prediction

> "But, what is still more terrible, there was one Jesus, the son of Ananus, a plebeian and a husbandman, who, four years before the war began, and at a time when the city was in very great peace and prosperity, came to the feast whereon it is our practice for every one to make tabernacles to God in the temple, began on a sudden to cry aloud, "A voice from the east, a voice from the west, a voice from the four winds, a voice against Jerusalem and the holy house, a voice against the bridegrooms and the brides, and a voice against this whole people!" (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) Here Jesus, son of Ananus, is saying that the voice of God is against the Temple and the city and the so-called Jews since only the voice of God can come from the four winds, meaning all directions.
>
> Furthermore this man's prophesying should be taken for a lamentation of the Jews from the Second Temple in the previous section: "Let us depart from the place" (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) is through these two signs that the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: "Hear the word of the Lord, you who tremble at his word: "Your brothers who hate you and reject you because of my name, say, 'Let the Lord be glorified, that we may see your joy!' But they will be put to shame. A roar from the city! A roar from the temple! It is the roar of the Lord, paying back his enemies!" (Isaiah 66:5) Very clearly Jesus, son of Ananus, is saying that the voice of God is against the Temple and the city and the so-called Jews since only the voice of God can come from the four winds, meaning all directions.
>
> Furthermore this man's prophesying should be taken for a lamentation of the Jews from the Second Temple in the previous section: "Let us depart from the place" (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) is through these two signs that the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: "Hear the word of the Lord, you who tremble at his word: "Your brothers who hate you and reject you because of my name, say, 'Let the Lord be glorified, that we may see your joy!' But they will be put to shame. A roar from the city! A roar from the temple! It is the roar of the Lord, paying back his enemies!" (Isaiah 66:6) The uproar from the city is the voice of Jesus, son of Ananus, and the roar from the temple is the voice of the multitude as referenced above. The reason why this is the prophecy from Isaiah cited above says "repaying his enemies what they deserve" (Isaiah 66:6) is because God is taking all of His curses and punishments against the so-called Jews as He pours out His wrath upon them for what they did to Jesus, the Son of God. So those who were once the people of God are now the enemies of God. Jesus Himself, by raising up the prophet God gave His enemies, the so-called Jews, the curses and punishment of sins and the blood of Jesus that stains their hands.
>
> Finally it was with this great sign and act of prophesying that God warned the so-called Jews of their insane kindness.

3 – Springs Provide Water for the the Jews Army

> "and as for Tirus, those springs that were formerly almost dried up, and ready never under your power since he is come, run more plentifully than they did heretofore, and based you know that Siloam, as well as all the other springs that were without the city, did so far fail, that water was sold by distinct measures, whereas they now have such a great quantity of water for your enemies, as is sufficient not only for drink both for themselves and their cattle, but for watering their gardens. The same wonderful Sign you had also experience of when you came to the forementioned king of Babylon made war against us, and when he took the city and burnt the temple, while yet I believe the Jews of that age were not so impious as to deny God to be in their temple.
>
> Wherefore I cannot but suppose that God is fled out of his sanctuary, and stands on the side of those against whom you fight, but now even a man, if he be but a good man, will by form an impious and a wicked opinion that God is fled out of his sanctuary, and is gone over to the side of those against whom he is fighting, and will not suppose that God is in those wicked men another, and you make a public demonstration of your insolence, as if it were virtue. However, I will not fear that your preservation, if you be willing to accept of it, and God is very propitious to those that confess their faults, and repent of them. O hard-hearted wretches as you are!" (Josephus, War, 6:5.4)
>
> The springs outside Jerusalem were dry before the Romans arrived but then they miraculously overflowed with water to the benefit of the Roman army. Josephus says the same thing happened when the Babylonians had siege in Jerusalem during the punishment of the Exile. Josephus takes it as a further sign that God left the Second Temple and fights against Jerusalem with the Romans just as he did with the Babylonians against Jerusalem.
>
> Here Josephus even told the so-called Jews that the Jews of that Temple period were not so impious as you are." (Josephus, War, 5:9.4) Josephus's point is that God left the Temple in previous page where Jesus tells the so-called Jews that they are wicked and will face great destruction for their sins and unfaithfulness to God.
>
> Additionally Josephus himself asks the so-called Jews to give up the fight and to surrender to the Romans as the only case for forgiveness. But of course, as we already know, the so-called Jews refuse to give up and they fight until the very end.
>
> Finally given how crazy the so-called Jews are for not giving up in the face of their own revelation of God's presence in the Temple being opened and "a great multitude, saying, 'Let us remove hence.'" (Josephus, War, 6:5.3)
>
> Then as I noted on the previous page, God abandoned the so-called Jews and cast them out because they sinned against God and blasphemy against Him by rejecting Jesus. Thus the so-called Jews fled to Jerusalem for the Romans, God would instead fight on their side. This fact can clearly be seen in Josephus says there were "chariots and troops of soldiers in armed order were seen mixed among the clouds, and surrounding of cities." (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) The idea here is that the armies of heaven and of God Himself will fight for the Romans in the upcoming War so the wrath of God against the so-called Jews is fulfilled.
>
> If these signs were not enough a heifer, or a young one rather than a heifer, led to the sacrifice by a lamb as it was led to be sacrificed on the altar. Clearly this sign is from God since no one else can make a lamb out of the Temple being may not seem like that significant of a sign but it is symbolic and a lamb. Jesus is the Lamb who appeared to have been slain, standing in the midst of the throne, encircled by the four living creatures and the elders." (Revelation 5:6)
>
> Thus God is telling the so-called Jews that sacrificing the heifer is not sufficient to forgive them of their sins because the wrath of God has already been sacrificed and God has accepted His sacrifice. All they need to do to be forgiven of their sins and counted as faithful and righteous before God is to have faith in the Lamb of God.
>
> Of course the so-called Jews ignored these signs because God willed it so.

Now, during all the time that passed before the war began, the man did not go near any of the cities, nor was seen by them while he said so; but he every day uttered these lamentable words, as if it were his premeditated vow, 'Woe, woe to Jerusalem!' Nor did he give it words to any of those that beat him every day, nor good words to those that gave him food; but this was his reply to all men, and indeed no other than a melancholy prediction of what is to come.

This cry of his was the loudest at the festivals; and he continued this ditty for seven years and five months, without growing hoarse, or being tired therewith, until the very time that he saw his prediction in a great fulfilled in our siege, when it ceased; for as he was going round quite upon the wall, he cried out with his utmost force, 'Woe, woe to the city again, and to the people, and to the holy house!' And just as he added at the last, 'Woe, woe to myself also!' there came a stone out of one of the engines, and smote him, and killed him immediately; and as he was uttering the same prediction, he gave up the ghost." (Josephus, War, 6:5.3)

First off, Jesus was a very common name back in the first century AD so the mere fact that Jesus is a common name today. It could also be said that the so-called Jews did not listen to warnings of Jesus, the Son of God, that God raised up prophet, Jesus, the son of Ananus, in order to warn the so-called Jews what is to come one that time.

But just like how the so-called Jews ignored the warnings and parables Jesus told of their impending destruction and wrath of God in the gospels, they also ignored the prophesying of Jesus, the son of Ananus. Just like Jesus's this Jesus spoke the same words seven years the so-called Jews refused to listen.

Now as to the meaning of what he said: "A voice from the east, a voice from the west, a voice from the four winds, a voice against Jerusalem and the holy house, a voice against the bridegrooms and the brides, and a voice against this whole people!" (Josephus, War, 5:5.3) Here Jesus, son of Ananus, is saying that the voice of God is against the city and the Temple and the so-called Jews since only the voice of God can come from the four winds, meaning all directions.

Furthermore this man's prophesying should be taken for a lamentation of the Jews from the Second Temple in the previous section: "Let us depart from the place" (Josephus, War, 6:5.3) is through these two signs that the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: "Hear the word of the Lord, you who tremble at his word: "Your brothers who hate you and reject you because of my name, say, 'Let the Lord be glorified, that we may see your joy!' But they will be put to shame. A roar from the city! A roar from the temple! It is the roar of the Lord, paying back his enemies!" (Isaiah 66:5) Very clearly Jesus, son of Ananus, is saying that the voice of God is against the city and the Temple and the so-called Jews since only the voice of God can come from the four winds, meaning all directions.

Remember, God's presence dwelled among the Jews in the Temple of Jerusalem. This is just as God destroyed the First Temple to signify the temporary exit of His presence among His people during the Exile, so too God destroyed the Second Temple to signify the permanent end of His presence among the so-called Jews.

The reason why I just said permanent end is because the Church is the Third Temple and Jesus as its cornerstone as the presence of God dwells among all faithful Christians. As long as the so-called Jews remain so called Jews instead of true Jews, Christians, they will never be in the presence of God because God has truly abandoned them to their own sinful and wicked ways.

Finally God needed to destroy the Second Temple so that the so-called Jews look towards the Church in the Third Temple as the Third Temple instead of the now destroyed Second Temple. Of course not all so-called Jews have become Christians but as Revelation says: "Look, he is coming in the clouds, and every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him; and all the tribes of the land will mourn because of Him. So it will be. Amen." (Revelation 1:7) Clearly the so-called Jews will still be around as they hope in vain for what will never come to pass.

Through the so-called Jews the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

> "And He replied: 'Go and tell this people, 'Be ever hearing, but never understanding; be ever seeing, but never perceiving.' Make the hearts of this people dull, make their ears and close their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn and be healed.'" (Isaiah 6:9-10)

Jesus's parables are meant for the so-called Jews to remain blind and persist in their wickedness until the end of the age so that He can pour out His wrath upon them and destroy them. Thus their spiritual blindness is simply part of God's preordained plan from the foundation of the world itself.

5 – Josephus

> "However, in this extreme distress, he was not destitute of his usual sagacity; but trusting himself to the providence of God, he came to fall into hazard: 'And now,' said he, 'since it is resolved among you that you will die, come on, let us commit our mutual deaths to determination by lots; and he that fall's the first, let him be killed by him that hath the second lot, and thus shall fate go round all this progress through us all; nor shall any of us perish by his own right hand, for it will be unfair if, when the rest are gone, somebody should repent and save himself.'
>
> Josephus thought it was fair to be very just; and when he had prevailed with them to determine this by lots, he fell to the second one of the lots for himself also. He who had the first lot laid his neck bare to him that had the next, as supposing that death from his friend was more eligible than death from himself; for they thought death, if accepted from a friend, was sweeter than life; yet was he with another lot left to be the last, lest some said say it happened so by chance, or whether by the providence of God, that he was in a desirous neither to be condemned by the lot, nor, if he had been left to the last, to imitate his right hand in the blood of his countrymen, he persuaded him to trust his fidelity to him, and to live as well as himself.
>
> Thus Josephus escaped in the war with the Romans, and in this he was with other his friends, and was led by Roman to Vespasian." (Josephus, War, 3:8.7-9)

Josephus's escape was not just and also be considered as a sign from God since he escaped a random suicide pact by being the last one alive. His importance of course is that he would go on to record a history of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and he is also versed in Hebrew or Aramaic although the closest we have to it through the Greek of his time.

This history would then allow the so-called Jews to read about the destruction of the Second Temple and the tribulations and curses they suffered so that they could see where they went wrong. Of course, the so-called Jews refuse to repent of their transgressions against God but some will.

Then perhaps most importantly Josephus' history also allows for us Christians to read about the prophecies Jesus spoke of being fulfilled as God poured out His wrath upon the so-called Jews in order to punish Israel, its people and His Temple. This way we can be assured that our Christian faith is true as the so-called Jews are judged by God according to the Law they claim to for their salvation. Except instead of finding salvation in the Law the so-called Jews have only found death, destruction and persecution just as God promised in Deuteronomy 28 and Deuteronomy 28 are fulfilled.

6 – Josephus's Prediction about Vespasian

> "Thou, O Vespasian, thinkest no more than that thou hast got Josephus, thy present captive; but I come to thee as a messenger of greater fortune, but sent from those that are in power, to say, 'Thou, O Vespasian, art Caesar and emperor, thou and thy elder son. Bind me now still faster, and keep me for thyself, for thou, O Caesar, are not only lord of me, but lord of the beast also, to whom I am all mankind; and certainly I deserve to be kept in close custody, if I should go on in my order to be punished, if I rashly affirm any thing of God.' And, as I suspect, this Vespasian at present did not believe him, but supposed that Josephus said this as a cuning trick, in order to his own preservation; but in time he was convinced, and believed what he said to be true. God hereby also gave Vespasian notice, so as to think of obtaining the empire, and by other signs foretold his advancement." (Josephus, War, 3:8:9)
>
> "After that he related those predictions of his which he had been composing, Vespasian suggested out of the fear he was in, but which had by time been demonstrated to be false. He is also said to have given him, at this man, who hath foretold thy coming to the empire beforehand, and been the minister of a Divine message to me, should still be retained in the condition of a captive and prisoner. So he called for Josephus, and commanded that he should be set at liberty; whereupon the commanders promised themselves great things, from this equitable Vespasian rhiade to a stranger." (Josephus, War, 4:10.7)

Josephus not only cheated death but also predicted that Vespasian would become Emperor of Rome. At the time of the prediction Rome was ruled by its first dynasty, the Julio-Claudian dynasty, so that is why Vespasian considered the prediction absurd. Vespasian keeping Josephus alive then later freeing him would allow for him to document the war so future people, both Christians and so-called Jews, could read about it and reflect on it even to the present day as noted above.

Originally Vespasian planned to send Josephus back as a messenger to Rome so that he could be executed publicly in order to demonstrate to all the price of defying Rome. However, his prediction concerning Vespasian changed these plans and would eventually lead this his freedom. This fact would of course allow him to remain with the army so he could document the war as I just said above.

Finally I would like to reiterate that the importance of Josephus surviving to write about the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War cannot be understated. Without him we would know almost nothing about it. This is why we only included quotations about the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War in this section. The other two (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars are largely unknown by secular historians since we have extremely limited to no contemporary sources.

7 – Final Remarks

Keep what you have read here in this chapter in mind as you read the following chapters after this one. As I said in the beginning, Jewish-Roman Wars were a fulfillment of the curses and punishments outlined in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 of the Law.

God did not punish the so-called Jews with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars completely unannounced as you can see. Instead not only did Jesus warn them of what is to come but God gave them signs and even Jesus spoke of the coming destruction up until he was killed in the siege of Jerusalem itself.

Therefore you should not read the following chapters after this one as if the so-called Jews did not deserve their fate. Instead you should read them as the so-called Jews being rightfully and justly punished by God Himself for their sins against Him. Remember, their greatest sin and the blood that has stained their hands, "Let his blood be on us and on our children!" (Matthew 27:25)

So although you may feel sorry for them and what happened you should not blame God for their afflictions. The so-called Jews have done these things to themselves through their rebellion against God and rejecting Jesus as the Christ and the Son of God. Therefore the so-called Jews only have themselves to blame.

Chapter 4.12: The Law and the Wars

Although this chapter will be difficult to read I strongly encourage you to not simply skim it or worse skip it entirely. It may seem tedious now but it is highly important to understand the message here so that the later chapters make more sense.

Then as I just said in the last chapter, do not blame God for what happened to the so-called Jews because the so-called Jews only have themselves to blame for what happened. As you will soon see, God simply punished the so-called Jews according to the Law that they agreed to.

As I referenced earlier in my chapter on the Old Covenant:

> "Then Moses went up to God, and the LORD called to him from the mountain, 'This is what you are to tell the house of Jacob and explain to the sons of Israel: 'You have seen for ourselves what I did to Egypt, and how I carried you on eagles' wings and brought you to Myself. Now if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, you will be My treasured possession out of all the nations—for the whole earth is Mine. And unto Me you shall be a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.' These are the words that you are to speak to the Israelites."
>
> So Moses went back and summoned the elders of the people and laid before them all these words that the LORD had commanded him. And all the people answered together, "We will do everything that the LORD has spoken."
>
> So Moses brought the words back to the LORD." (Exodus 19:3-8)
>
> "Then he took the Book of the Covenant and read it to the people, who said, "All that the LORD has spoken we will do, and we will be obedient."
>
> So Moses took the blood, sprinkled it on the people, and said, "This is the blood of the covenant that the LORD has made with you in accordance with all these words." (Exodus 24:7-8)
>
> "When Moses came and told the people all the words and ordinances of the LORD, they all responded with one voice, "All the words that the LORD has spoken, we will do."" (Exodus 24:3)
>
> "So Moses came back there with the LORD forty days and forty nights without eating bread or drinking water. He wrote on the tablets the words of the covenant—the Ten Commandments." (Exodus 34:28)

Clearly the so-called Jews agreed to do everything God tells them, to follow His commandments and most importantly to be subject to the Law. Being subject to the Law simply means to be bound by the Law and all that it entails. This curse and punishment when the so-called Jews began to disobey God by refusing to accept the Son of God that they were and still are breaking their covenant with God.

In terms of format for this chapter I will first state a prophecy or curse from the Law and provide verses on it from Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28. Then I will provide a quote as evidence for this punishment from the Law being fulfilled.

1 – Military Defeat

1.1 – The Law

> "And I will set My face against you, so that you will be defeated by your enemies." (Leviticus 26:17)
>
> "And I will bring a sword against you to execute the vengeance of the covenant. Though you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be delivered into the hand of the enemy." (Leviticus 26:25)
>
> "The LORD will cause you to be defeated before your enemies. You will go out against them in one direction but flee from them in seven." (Deuteronomy 28:25)

1.2 – Fulfillment

> "When Masada was thus taken, the general left a garrison in the fortress to keep it, and he himself went away to Cesarea; for there were now no enemies left in Judaea, properly, but it was all overthrown by so long a war." (Josephus, War, 7:10.1)
>
> "Moreover, there followed those pageants a great number of ships; and for the other spoils, they were carried in great plenty. But for those that were taken in the temple of Jerusalem, they were a spectacle to the greater of them all; that is, the golden table, of the weight of many talents; the candlestick also, but was made not of gold, though its construction were now changed from that which we made use of; for its middle shaft was fixed upon a basis, and the small branches were produced out of it to a great length, having the likeness of a trident in their ends, for seven lamps were placed upon them, as if brass for a lamp at the tops of them.
>
> These lamps were in number seven, and represented the glory of the number seven among the Jews; and the last of all the spoils, was carried the Law of the Jews; of these spoils passed by a great many men, carrying the images of Victory, whose bodies were all entirely either of ivory or of gold. After which Vespasian marched in the first place, and Titus followed him; Domitian also rode along with them, and made a glorious appearance, and rode on a horse that was worthy of admiration." (Josephus 7:5.5)
>
> "The war reached its height in the eighteenth year of Hadrian in Betar, which was a strong citadel not very far from Jerusalem. The siege lasted a long time, and the rebels, being driven to final destruction by famine and thirst and the instigator of their madness paid the penalty he deserved." (Eusebius, History of the church 4.6.3)

Obviously the Romans won all three of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as they completely defeated and crushed the so-called Jews in each war.

The final battle fought by the Romans against the so-called Jews in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War was the Siege of Masada. After this fortress finally fell the Romans were at last victorious for every last rebel group had been crushed. Then as for the Third (so-called) Jewish-Roman War or the Bar Kokhba revolt, the final battle was the Siege of Betar where Emperor Hadrian oversaw the battle personally as he crushed the last of the resistance.

Additionally after the Second Temple was lit on fire it was looted and all the gold ornaments from inside were taken to the Romans so that they would have a trophy to their triumph as Josephus said above. These ornaments were then paraded through Rome publicly to demonstrate their victory to the masses.

2 – Famine

2.1 – The Law

> "You will sow your seed in vain, because your enemies will eat it." (Leviticus 26:16)
>
> "I will break down your stubborn pride and make your sky like iron and your land like bronze, and your strength will be spent in vain. For your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not bear their fruit." (Leviticus 26:19-20)
>
> "When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will bake your bread in a single oven and will ration your bread by weight, and you will eat but not be satisfied." (Leviticus 26:26)
>
> "You will eat the flesh of your own sons and daughters." (Leviticus 26:29)
>
> "Your basket and kneading bowl will be cursed." (Deuteronomy 28:17)
>
> "The sky over your head will be bronze, and the earth beneath you iron." (Deuteronomy 28:23)
>
> "The LORD will turn the rain of your land into dust and powder; it will descend on you from the sky until you are destroyed." (Deuteronomy 28:24)
>
> "You will sow much seed in the field but harvest little, because locusts will come and consume it. You will plant and cultivate vineyards, but you will not drink the wine nor gather the grapes, because worms will eat them. You will have olive trees throughout your territory but you will not anoint yourself with oil, because the olives will drop off." (Deuteronomy 28:38-40)
>
> "Swarms of locusts will consume all your trees and the produce of your land." (Deuteronomy 28:42)
>
> "Then you will eat the fruit of your womb, the flesh of the sons and daughters whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and distress that your enemy will inflict on you." (Deuteronomy 28:53)
>
> "The most gentle and refined man among you will begrudge his brother, the wife he embraces, the rest of his children who have survived, refusing to share with any of them the flesh of his children he is eating, because he has nothing left in the siege and distress that your enemy will inflict on you within all your gates." (Deuteronomy 28:54-57)

2.2 – Fulfillment

> "It was now a miserable case, and a sight that would cause tears to your eyes, how men stood as to their food, while the more powerful kept the weaker in slavery. For those who guide this people mislead them, and those they mislead are swallowed up.
>
> Therefore the Lord takes no pleasure in their young men, nor has compassion on their fatherless and widows.
>
> For all are godless and evil-doers, and every mouth speaks folly.
>
> Despite all this, His anger is not turned away; His hand is still upraised." (Isaiah 9:16-21)
>
> "But the people did not return to Him who struck them; they did not seek the LORD of Hosts.
>
> So the LORD will cut off Israel's head and tail, both palm branch and reed in a single day.
>
> The head is the elder and honorable man, and the tail is the prophet who teaches lies. For those who guide this people mislead them, and those they mislead are swallowed up.
>
> Therefore the Lord takes no pleasure in their young men, nor has compassion on their fatherless and widows.
>
> For all are godless and evil-doers, and every mouth speaks folly.
>
> Despite all this, His anger is not turned away; His hand is still upraised."
>
> "Because of the wrath of the LORD of Hosts the land is scorched, and the people are fuel for the fire. No man even spares his brother.
>
> They carve out what is on the right, but they are still hungry; they eat what is on the left, but they are not satisfied. Each one devours the flesh of his own offspring.
>
> Manasseh devours Ephraim, and Ephraim Manasseh; together they turn against Judah.
>
> Despite all this, His anger is not turned away; His hand is still upraised." (Isaiah 9:13-21)

Therefore you cannot claim that God would not do what He did in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars as He starved hundreds of thousands to death in the siege of Jerusalem itself. The so-called Jews or not? I mean just based upon a comparison of the Law of Moses and Jesus's great prostitute on behalf of God will be over a thousand times worse than anything the so-called Jews have suffered in their history.

Lastly always remember to be faithful to God by persisting in faith until the end and keeping the commandments so that you can be saved from the wrath of God.

4 – Madness

3.1 – The Law

> "And I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who live in it will be appalled." (Leviticus 26:32)
>
> "You will perish among the nations, and the land of your enemies will consume you." (Leviticus 26:38)
>
> "You will be cursed in the city and cursed in the country." (Deuteronomy 28:16)
>
> "The fruit of your womb will be cursed, as well as the produce of your land, the calves of your herds, and the lambs of your flock." (Deuteronomy 28:18)
>
> "You will be cursed when you come in and cursed when you go out." (Deuteronomy 28:19)
>
> "The LORD will send curses upon you, confusion and frustration in all which you put your hand, until you are destroyed and quickly perish because of your wickedness you have committed in forsaking Him." (Deuteronomy 28:20)
>
> "The LORD will make the plague cling to you until He has exterminated you from the land you are about to enter and possess." (Deuteronomy 28:21)
>
> "The LORD will turn the rain of your land into dust and powder; it will descend on you from the sky until you are destroyed." (Deuteronomy 28:24)
>
> "Your corpses will be food for all the birds of the air and beasts of the earth, with no one to scare them away." (Deuteronomy 28:26)
>
> "All these curses will come upon you. They will pursue you and overtake you until you are destroyed, because you did not obey the LORD your God and keep the commandments and statutes He gave you." (Deuteronomy 28:45)
>
> "The LORD will also bring upon you every disease and every plague not recorded in this Book of the Law, until you are destroyed. You will be a remnant in place of the stars of heaven. Now as to the attack the zealots made upon the people, and the slaughter that was beginning of the city's destruction, it hath been already explained after a manner sufficient hitherto; and yet whence it arose, and to how great a mischief it was

The so-called Jews were for all intents and purposes insane during the Roman (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. They engaged in a three way civil war while their city was under siege and fought among themselves almost as much as they fought the Romans. They even burned the food supplies of rival factions. Some claim that had they not fought among themselves that they could have won and saved Jerusalem and the Second Temple. Therefore we should see this madness they suffered that led to these conflicts as being the work of God and a fulfillment of what He said would happen. In other words God wanted the so-called Jews to fail in their rebellion so He made them fight each other and burn their food so that His punishment against them could come to pass in the destruction of His Temple, Jerusalem and themselves.

5 – Disease

5.1 – The Law

"I will bring upon you sudden terror, wasting disease, and fever that will destroy your sight and shrivel your life." (Leviticus 26:16)

"The LORD will make the plague cling to you until He has exterminated you from the land that you are entering to possess." (Deuteronomy 28:21)

"The LORD will strike you with wasting disease, with fever and inflammation, with scorching heat and drought, and with blight and mildew; these will pursue you until you perish." (Deuteronomy 28:22)

"The LORD will afflict you with the boils of Egypt, with tumors and scabs and itch from which you cannot be cured." (Deuteronomy 28:27)

"The LORD will afflict you with painful, incurable boils on your knees and thighs, from the soles of your feet to the top of your head." (Deuteronomy 28:35)

"If you are not careful to observe all the words of this law which are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and awesome name, the LORD your God, – then He will bring upon you and your descendants extraordinary disasters, severe and lasting plagues, and terrible and chronic diseases. He will afflict you again with all the diseases you dreaded in Egypt, and they will cling to you." (Deuteronomy 28:58-60)

5.2 – Fulfillment

"Five hundred and eighty thousand men were slain in the various raids and battles, and the number of those that perished by famine, disease and fever is beyond all reckoning. Thus nearly the whole of Judaea was made desolate, a result of which the people had had forewarned them before the war." (Cassius Dio, Roman History, 69:14)

In addition to the deaths due to battle and famine there were also many died of disease. Though it is tough to say if the so-called Jews were afflicted with the specific diseases outlined in the Law given the limited records we have. However given what we have seen so far I do not think it is unreasonable to assume that many were diseased in the way the Law specified. Many of diseases are very common when there is famine due to a weakened immune system.

6 – Sieges

6.1 – The Law

"I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices." (Leviticus 26:31)

"The LORD will bring a nation from afar, from the ends of the earth, to swoop down upon you like an eagle—a nation whose language you will not understand, a nation with features no respect for the old and no pity for the young. They will eat the offspring of your livestock and the produce of your land until you are destroyed. They will leave you no grain or new wine or oil, no calves of your herds or lambs of your flocks, until they have caused you to perish. They will besiege all the cities throughout your land, until the high and fortified walls in which you trust have fallen. They will besiege all your cities throughout the land that the LORD your God has given you." (Deuteronomy 28:49-52)

6.2 – Fulfillment

"And now, since his soldiers were already quite tired and killing men, and yet there appeared to be a vast multitude still remaining alive, Caesar gave orders that they should kill none but those that were in arms, and opposed him, but should spare the rest alive. But, together with those whom they had killed, they slew the aged and the infirm; but for those that were in their flourishing age, and who might be useful to them, they drove them together into the temple, and shut them up within the walls of the court of the temple; now he had beforehand set one of his freed-men, as also Fronto, one of his own friends, which last was to determine every one's fate, according to his merits." (Josephus, War, 6:3)

"As for John, he wanted food, together with his brethren, in these caverns, and begged that the tyrant would vouchsafe to give their right hand for his security, which he had often already received before; but for Simon, he struggled hard with the distress he was in, still he was forced to surrender himself, as we shall relate hereafter: so he was reserved for the triumph, and to be then slain; as was John condemned to perpetual imprisonment. And now the Romans set fire to the extreme parts of the city, and burnt them round, till entirely demolished its walls." (Josephus, War, 6:9)

"Now as soon as the army had no more people to slay or to plunder, because there remained none to be the objects of their fury, [for they would not have spared any, had their command any other work to be done,] Caesar gave orders that they should now demolish the entire city and temple, all but those parts of the towers standing which were of greatest eminence; that is, Phasaelus, and Hippicus, and Mariamne; and so much of the wall as enclosed the city on the west side. This wall was spared, in order to afford a retreat for such as were to be in garrison, as were the towers also spared, in order to demonstrate to posterity what kind of city it was, and how well fortified, which the Roman valor had subdued; but for all the rest of the wall, it was so thoroughly ploughed up with the ground by those that dug it up to the foundation, that there was left nothing which might make those that came thither believe it had ever been inhabited. This was the end which Jerusalem came to by the madness of those that were for innovations; a city otherwise of great magnificence, and of mighty fame among all mankind." (Josephus, War, 7:1)

Clearly the Romans did care about the aged and the infirm as evidenced by the first passage I cited in the paragraph above. Furthermore what is interesting is that Moses said:

"The LORD will bring a nation from afar, from the ends of the earth, to swoop down upon you like an eagle—a nation whose language you will not understand, a nation with features no respect for the old and no pity for the young." (Deuteronomy 28:49)

The key phrase here is like an eagle because the symbol was Roman legions used was that of an eagle. So although "swoop down upon you like an eagle" (Deuteronomy 28:49) is probably meant more figuratively as in an invader will make quick work of you, it also encompasses them and lays waste to them one by one, it could also been seen as literally fulfilled given the Roman legionary symbol.

Finally as you have already read the Romans had siege the destroyed hundreds if not thousands of fortresses; cites, towns and villages. Moses said that God has said would happen if the so-called Jews remain unfaithful to Him was fulfilled.

7 – Temple Destruction

7.1 – The Law

"I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars and heap your lifeless bodies on the lifeless remains of your idols; and My soul will despise you." (Leviticus 26:30)

"I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices." (Leviticus 26:31)

7.2 – Fulfillment

"Moreover, the hope of plunder induced many to go on, as having this opinion, that all the places within were full of money, and as seeing that all round about it was made of gold. And besides, one of those that went into the place prevented Caesar, when he ran so hastily out to restrain the soldiers, and threw the fire upon the hinges of the gate, in the dark; whereby the flame burst out from within the holy house itself immediately, and the commanders retired, and Caesar with them, and when nobody any longer forbade those that were without to set fire to it. And thus was the holy house burnt down, without Caesar's approbation." (Josephus, War, 6:4.7)

Since the Jews before the Exile defiled the First Temple through their unfaithfulness to God, the First Temple was destroyed by God as punishment. As a result of this God would no longer dwell among the Jews until the Second Temple was built.

Then since Jesus is the cornerstone of the Third Temple, the Church, as I have previously stated, it would only make sense that God viewed the so-called Jews denial of Jesus as a defilement of the Second Temple. The idea here is that instead of the Second Temple being the House of God the so-called Jews turned it into the house of Satan through their wickedness.

You may think it is harsh to call the Second Temple of the time of the so-called Jews Jewish-Roman War a house of Satan but does they are not say:

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead." (Revelation 3:9)

Then as I said in my commentary the idea is that those who deny Jesus are of Satan and they are not of God.

As Jesus also said to the so-called Jews:

"Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I have come here from God. I came not of Myself, but He sent Me. Why do you not understand what I am saying? It is because you are unable to accept My message. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires.'" (John 8:42-44)

Therefore I believe it would be accurate to say that the so-called Jews defiled the Second Temple, the House of God, into the house of Satan.

So while the so-called Jews thought they were honoring God through their sacrifices they were in fact not. As God said to them:

"I will reduce your cities to rubble and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will refuse to smell the pleasing aroma of your sacrifices." (Leviticus 26:31)

Of course the now house of Satan was destroyed by God through the Romans as you have already read.

8 – Exile

8.1 – The Law

"But I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out a sword to pursue you; your land becomes desolate and your cities are laid waste." (Leviticus 26:33)

"You will be an object of horror to all the kingdoms of the earth." (Deuteronomy 28:25)

"The LORD will bring you and the king you appoint to a nation neither you nor your fathers have known, and there you will worship other gods—gods of wood and stone." (Deuteronomy 28:36)

"You will father sons and daughters, but they will not remain with you, because they will go into captivity." (Deuteronomy 28:41)

"Just as it pleased the LORD to make you prosper and multiply, so also it will please Him to annihilate you and destroy you. And you will be torn from the land you are entering to possess." (Deuteronomy 28:63)

"Then the LORD will scatter you among all the nations, from one end of the earth to the other, and there you will worship other gods, gods of wood and stone, which neither you nor your fathers have known. Among those nations you will find no repose, nor will the resting place for the sole of your foot. There the LORD will give you a trembling heart, failing eyes, and a despairing soul." (Deuteronomy 28:64-65)

8.2 – Fulfillment

"Titus also sent a great number into the provinces, as a present to them, that they might be destroyed upon their theatres, by the sword and by the wild beasts; but those that were under seventeen years of age were sold for slaves. Now during the days whereon Fronto was distinguishing these men, there perished, for want of food, eleven thousand; some of whom did not taste any food, through the hatred their guards bore to them; and others would not take in any when it was given them. The multitude also was so very great, that they were in want even of corn for their sustenance." (Josephus, War, 6:9.2)

"They were all received by the Romans, because Titus himself grew negligent as to his former orders to killing them all, and because the very soldiers 'grew weary of killing them, and because they hoped to get some money by sparing them; for they left only the populace, and sold the rest of the multitude, with their wives and children, and every one of them at a very low price, and that because such as were sold were very many, and the buyers were few: and although Titus had made proclamation beforehand, that no deserter should come alone by himself, that so they might bring out their families with them, yet did he receive such as these also. However, he sent more such as were to distinguish some from others, in order to see if any deserter should be not punished. And indeed the number of those that were sent was very great, but of the populace above forty thousand were saved, whom Caesar let go whither every one of them pleased." (Josephus, War, 6:6.2)

"The rebellion of the Jews once more progressed in character and extent, and Rufus, they were in want of food, and that aid had been sent him by the emperor, moved out against them; therefore, in madness without mercy, He destroyed in heaps thousands of men, women and children, and, under the law of war, enslaved their land." (Eusebius, History of the church 4.6.1-3)

In the Exile the Israelites were not taken to Egypt to be sold as slaves. However, in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War the so-called Jews were taken back to Egypt to be sold as slaves by the Romans as Josephus tells. A better translation of the last passage is read and you shall be offered for sale rather than there you will sell yourselves.

Moses also prophesied in Deuteronomy specifically says that "but no one will buy you" (Deuteronomy 28:68) meaning that the supply of new slaves into Egypt will vastly outstrip the demand of slaves. Thus this would be fulfilled when Josephus were forced to sell such as were sold were very many, and the buyers were few." (Josephus, War, 6:9.2)

As a result of this fact I think it is best to look at Leviticus 26 as being related to the Exile while Deuteronomy 28 as being related to the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars to the present day. This fact is further evidenced by the fact that God includes a promise of restoration in Leviticus 26 while there is no such promise of restoration in Deuteronomy 28.

Finally keep this specific punishment, slaves to Egypt, in mind as we will see this theme in a later chapter in relation to Leviticus 26 versus Deuteronomy 28.

11 – Closing Thoughts

Clearly the events surrounding the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were the fulfillment of the curses and punishments outlined in the Law of Moses. Therefore as of 70 AD Just as God punished the Jews with the Exile for their unfaithfulness to Him so too He punished the so-called Jews with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars for their unfaithfulness. Of course that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were far more horrific and destructive than the Exile because they were the end of God's wrath for that matter, the blood of Jesus on their hands.

Although these punishments and curses may seem horrific it is important to remember that they are simply the will of God being carried out upon a wicked and godless people. The Jews knew what they were getting themselves into when they agreed to the Law in its entirety. Therefore these punishments are not the fault of God. Instead the blame rests solely on the so-called Jews with their unfaithfulness and wickedness.

Even Josephus, who was not a Christian or a true Jewi and was destroyed by Jesus, also said the following with regards to the destruction of Jerusalem:

"And who is there that does not know what the writings of the ancient prophets contain in them,—and this city is such as I shall show is just now going to be fulfilled upon this miserable city? For they foretold that this city should be then taken when somebody shall begin the slaughter of his own countrymen. And are not both the temple and the holy temple now full of the dead bodies of your countrymen? It is God, therefore, it is God himself who is bringing on this fire, to purge that city which is polluted by means of the Romans, and is going to pluck up this city, which is full of your pollutions." (Josephus, War, 6:2.1)

Finally in addition to the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars being a fulfillment of the Curses and punishments of the Law, Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28, these events were also significant in their relation to the Old Testament and Jesus. In the next chapter I will go into the relationship between the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the Old Testament as a whole to be just as strong.

Chapter 4.13: The Old Testament and the Wars

In this chapter I go into the relationship between the Exile from the Old Testament period and the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars in addition to anything of note from the Old Testament as a whole. Since the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were clearly a fulfillment of the punishments and curses of the Law of Moses I only make sense for the relationship between the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the Old Testament as a whole to be just as strong.

In terms of format for this chapter I will simply go through the Old Testament and follow it with relevant passages and commentary.

1 – The Ninth of Av

"On the tenth day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. And the whole army of the Chaldeans under the captain of the guard broke down the walls around Jerusalem." (2 Kings 25:8-10)

Not as for that house, God had, for certain, long ago doomed it to the fire; and now that fatal day was come, according to the revolution of ages; it was the tenth day of the month Lous, (Ab,) upon which it was formerly burnt by the king of Babylon' (Josephus, War, 6:4.5)

"Now although any one would justly lament the destruction of such a work as this was, since it was the most admirable of all the works which have been heard of, both for its curious structure and its magnitude, and also for the vast wealth bestowed upon it, as well as for the glorious reputation it had for its holiness, yet might such a spectator himself with this thought, that it was fate that decreed this as the proper end of this temple, as to living creatures, and as to works and places also.

However, one cannot but wonder at the accuracy of this period thereto relating; for the same month and the same day happened, as I said before, whereon the holy house was burnt formerly by the Babylonians. Now the number of years that passed from its first foundation, which was laid by king Solomon, till this its destruction, which happened in the second year of the reign of Vespasian, are collected to be one thousand one hundred and thirty, besides seven months and fifteen days; and from the second building of it, which was done by Haggai, in the second year of Cyrus the king, till its destruction under Vespasian, there were six hundred and thirty-nine years and forty-five days." (Josephus, War, 6:4.8)

Josephus records that the second temple was destroyed on the tenth of Av or Ab which is the same date the First Temple was destroyed as recorded in Jeremiah. This date is also commonly use the ninth of Av to commemorate the destruction of the First and Second Temple since they both were burned down on that date 2 Kings 25. They call this day Tisha B'Av.

But really the idea here with the ninth of Av is that if God really is paying the so-called Jews for their disobedience, unfaithfulness and wickedness by destroying the Second Temple then it would make sense that He would pick the same exact day to destroy it on as the day He chose to destroy the First Temple. After all, by destroying the Second Temple on the same day as the First Temple He would be sending a clear and unquestionable message that He is the One who destroyed the Second Temple. This would give the so-called Jews a chance to repent of their sins and the blood on their hands.

This fact also means that we should without a doubt conclude that the Second Temple was in fact destroyed for the reasons I have previously stated.

2 – Seven Years

"Therefore this is what the LORD of Hosts says: 'Because you have not obeyed My words, behold, I will summon all the families of the north, declares the LORD, and I will send for My servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, whom I will bring against this land, against its inhabitants, and against all the surrounding nations. So I will devote them to destruction and make them an object of horror and contempt, an everlasting desolation.

Moreover, I will banish from them the sounds of joy and gladness, the voices of the bride and bridegroom, the sound of the millstones, and the light of the lamp. And this whole land will become a desolate wasteland, and these nations will serve the king of Babylon for seventy years.' (Jeremiah 25:8-11)

First off it was God's will that the punishment of the Jews for their disobedience, the Exile, would last for a period of 70 years.

Next the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War began in 66/67 AD and the Bar Kokhba Revolt ended in 135 AD. So the exact length of time depends on when you want to count the start and end. The war Vespasian started the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War started in 66 AD while Vespasian did that in 69 and 70 AD and in 135 AD the last stronghold in the Third (so-called) Jewish-Roman War fell while tiny pockets of resistance remained until 136 AD.

Then the Hebrew method of counting starts at one which is how Jesus rose from the dead on the "third day" even though he rose early on a Friday and the tomb being empty on Sunday. So in this case these days is actually rounded up from about 40 hours by our modern count.

Next if you average the two dates for the start and end of the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars you get 68.5 AD. Next if you add this to a span of 69 years by our count or 70 years by the Hebrew count that is the exact number of years that the Exile lasted for. Except instead of 70 years of exile, this time it was 70 years of war, famine, disease and death.

But what about a restoration after the 70 years? Well what is interesting here is that the promise of restoration is only included in Leviticus 26 and it is not included in Deuteronomy 28. Instead of giving a promise to restore the so-called Jews Deuteronomy 28 ends with:

"The LORD will return you to Egypt in ships by a route that I said you should never see again. There you will offer yourselves to your enemies as male and female slaves, but no one will buy you." (Deuteronomy 28:68)

The idea here is that instead of giving the so-called Jews over forever. There will never be a restoration. God found the Jews in Egypt and brought them forth and God will return them the Promised Land. Thus by God saying that He will return them to Egypt He is essentially saying that He will return them to where He found them.

If this does not make much sense then think about it like this. Imagine you adopted a child and this child grew up to be a terrible child despite your best efforts. So one day you tell your child that you are taking him back to the orphanage where you adopted him from if he does not improve his behavior. Instead of improving the child becomes even more wicked than before. So now so in fact the child kills your own biological son so that you spend more time with him. What would you do? Would you would make good on your promise to return him to the orphanage where you adopted him. Thus you would be disowning him and washing your hands of him.

The same idea is in view here with the so-called Jews. Although God promised to give the Jews over the Exile, He will not forgive the so-called Jews until they repent of their sins and repent and wash the blood of Jesus off their hands. Thus after the 70 years of death and destruction that were the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars the Jews will have to repent of their sins and ask God no longer considers them His people.

Again, this is not a permanent situation because it only lasts as long as the so-called Jews deny Jesus as the Christ. So really only the so-called Jews are to blame for the fact that they accept Jesus and by continuing to deny His name they have cast themselves out from the presence of God and have damned themselves. All they have to do to be saved and to be as part of Israel is to ask Jesus for forgiveness for what they have done.

Then as I have mentioned before, the modern state of so-called Israel is not what it appears to be and it is simply God setting up the final judgment that Revelation describes. I go into this in detail in a later chapter so take my word on it for now.

The main idea I want you to understand here is that if the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were really a punishment for disobedience by the so-called Jews then it would make sense it would also last for 70 years. The purpose of the 70 years is not a measure of severity since really the persecution of the so-called Jews continues to the present day, but rather it is about sending a message that the Exile was a period of 70 years punishment combined with the destruction of the Second Temple on the same date should be been enough to make the so-called Jews repent and recognize the sin that obviously it was not since the so-called Jews still exist.

3 – Forty Years

"You must carefully follow every commandment I am giving you today, so that you may live and multiply, and enter and possess the land that the LORD swore to give your fathers. Remember that these forty years the LORD your God has led you all the way in the wilderness, so that He might humble you and test you in order to know what was in your heart, whether or not you would keep His commandments." (Deuteronomy 8:1-2)

"Then Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, where for forty days He was tempted by the devil. He ate nothing during those days, and when they had ended, He was hungry." (Luke 4:1-2)

"In my first book, O Theophilus, I wrote about all that Jesus began to do and teach, until the day He was taken up to heaven, after giving instructions through the Holy Spirit to the apostles He had chosen. After His suffering, He proved to them in ways that left them many convincing proofs that He was alive. He appeared to them over a span of forty days and spoke about the kingdom of God." (Acts 1:1-3)

The number forty is symbolic of a period of purification, preparation, transition and testing. God ordered the Israelites to wander in the desert for 40 years to purify, test and prepare themselves for the transition from being Slaves in Egypt to being free in the Promised Land. Then Jesus was tempted for 40 days by Satan in the desert to purify, test and prepare Himself for the trials He was about to face. Furthermore more Jesus appeared to the Apostles for 40 days so that the Apostles would purified and prepared for their transition to their upcoming mission of preaching the Gospel.

Finally another example of the usage of the number forty for the Old Testament would be with regards to the prophet Jeremiah. You see Jeremiah became a prophet in 626 BC according to Jeremiah 1:2-3 and the First Temple was destroyed in 586 BC. Thus by our count 39 years elapsed or by the Hebrew count 40 years elapsed during this time period. The idea here is that Jeremiah was called by God to tell the Jews what was going to happen to them because of their unfaithfulness.

Next although there is a lot of debate over if Jesus's death and resurrection was in 30 AD or 33 AD, both numbers tie into a 40 year period of testing and transition combined with the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War depending on where you want to start and end it.

Jesus had a ministry lasting for a few years before the crucifixion so the end would be in 33 AD for the start. The First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War started in 66 AD, Vespasian invaded in 67 AD, the Second Temple was destroyed in 70 AD and the war was over in 73 AD.

These numbers would correspond to a 40 year period depending on how you want to view it. It works for the start of Jesus's ministry to the start of the Jewish-Roman War in 66 AD. Either or from the start of Jesus's ministry to the crucifixion in 33 AD or from the start from the end of Jesus's ministry to the destruction of the Second Temple or from the end of Jesus's ministry to the end of the war.

The idea here is that God is purifying and testing the so-called Jews over this 40 year transitional period. As God said about the 40 years in the desert:

"Remember that these forty years the LORD your God led you all the way in the wilderness, so that He might humble you and test you in order to know what was in your heart, whether or not you would keep His commandments." (Deuteronomy 8:2)

This is perfectly analogous to what took place during the 40 years before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. The idea here is that the so-called Jews failed their test and they failed to repent and accept God instead of humbling themselves before Him. As a result the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars came and the millions were killed as God poured out His anger upon them.

If this still does not make sense then consider the Parable of the Wicked Tenants. God is giving the so-called Jews enough time to repent of their sins and to return to Him. He does not want to punish them but He will if they do not repent.

The 40 years also relates to what Jesus said as He was crucified:

"Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34)

The majority of those living in Jerusalem did not know what they were doing because although the ministry of Jesus and the twelve apostles reached far and wide by the time of His death the truth is the vast majority of most people did not know who He was. This is why Jesus asks the Father to forgive the so-called Jews for almost everyone in Judea did not know what they were doing.

So instead of God punishing them immediately for their sins He decides to give the now so-called Jews in Judea 40 years, to repent of their sins and become Christians before He executes Judgment upon them as the Law given to Moses requires.

Therefore the period of 40 years leading up to the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War is a strong evidence that it truly was the work and will of God Himself.

4 – Prophecy of Isaiah

At this point you may be thinking that since the signs and miracles I have underlined here is so strong that there is no way that it is right. After all, God would never let the so-called Jews punished by God with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars happen given greater than that of the Exile then surely the so-called Jews would repent and turn away from the Law and confess with their mouth that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God?

Well sorry to say and nothing could be further from the truth. You see instead of being evidence that the so-called Jews actually more evidence that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were truly the work of God.

As the prophecy of Isaiah says:

"Then I heard the voice of the Lord saying: 'Whom shall I send? Who will go for Us?'

And I said:

'Here am I. Send me!'

And He replied: 'Go and tell this people,

'Be ever hearing, but never understanding; be ever seeing, but never perceiving. Make the hearts of this people callused; deafen their ears and blind their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn and be healed.'" (Isaiah 6:8-10)

Then even Jesus Himself references this prophecy:

"Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked, 'Why do You speak to the people in parables?'

He replied, 'The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. This is why I speak to them in parables:

'Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.'

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:

'You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving. For this people's heart has grown callous; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn, and I would heal them.'

But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:10-17)

Therefore the so-called Jews deafening their ears, closing their eyes and callousing their hearts was fulfilled in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars. Therefore as a result of their unfaithfulness and godlessness God no longer considers them His people.

As Jesus says:

"He who has ears, let him hear." (Matthew 13:9)

Only those who have spiritual ears can hear what the Holy Spirit whispers to them. Those who are wicked and unfaithful do not have spiritual ears so they cannot hear. Knowledge of the eternal kingdom of God has not been given to the so-called Jews and instead it has been given to Christians.

Then as I have said previously, the modern state of so-called Israel is not what it appears to be and it is simply God setting up the final judgment that Revelation describes. I go into this in detail in a later chapter so take my word on it for now.

The main idea I want you to understand here is that if the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were really a punishment for disobedience by the so-called Jews then it would make sense it would also last for 70 years. The purpose of the 70 years is not a measure of severity since really the persecution of the so-called Jews continues to the present day, but rather it is about sending a message that the Exile was a period of 70 years punishment combined with the destruction of the Second Temple on the same date should be been enough to make the so-called Jews repent and recognize the sin that obviously it was not since the so-called Jews still exist.

Chapter 4.13: The Old Testament and the Wars

4 – Fulfilled Prophecy – The Law and the Wars

"Do not seek the Lord your God in the way you have done in the days of old, when you forsaken Me and burned incense to other gods in all your sins against the Lord your God and refused to listen to Me. The wicked of old have pursued the righteous man who brought the Lord your God and worship Him, and you have forsaken Me." (Jeremiah 44:3-10)

"Because you have forsaken Me and burned incense to other gods and provoked Me to anger with all your idolatrous deeds, I will pour out My anger on this place, and it will not be quenched." (Jeremiah 44:5)

"Because you have done all these things, declares the LORD, and I spoke to you time and again, but you did not listen, and I called you, but you did not answer, I will do to this house, which bears My name, and which you trust, and to the place I gave you and your fathers, what I have done to Shiloh. And I will cast you out of My presence, just as I have cast out your brothers, the entire lineage of Ephraim." (Jeremiah 7:13-15)

"Because of the evil they have done, provoking Me to anger, I will make this city a ruin and a hiss, a place of perpetual desolation. I will make the people of Jerusalem and Judah fall by the sword before their enemies, by the hand of those who seek their lives. I will give their corpses as food for the birds of the heavens and the beasts of the earth. I will make them a horror to all the kingdoms of the earth because of what Manasseh son of Hezekiah king of Judah did in Jerusalem." (Jeremiah 24:8-9)

"Because you have forsaken Me and burned incense to other gods and provoked Me to anger with your idolatrous deeds, I will pour out My anger on this place, and it will not be quenched." (Jeremiah 44:5)

"Because you have done all these things, declares the LORD, and I spoke to you time and again, but you did not listen, and I called you, but you did not answer, I will do to this house, which bears My name, and which you trust, and to the place I gave you and your fathers, what I have done to Shiloh. And I will cast you out of My presence, just as I have cast out your brothers, the entire lineage of Ephraim." (Jeremiah 7:13-15)

"Because of the evil they have done, provoking Me to anger, I will make this city a ruin and a hiss, a place of perpetual desolation. I will make the people of Jerusalem and Judah fall by the sword before their enemies, by the hand of those who seek their lives. I will give their corpses as food for the birds of the heavens and the beasts of the earth. I will make them a horror to all the kingdoms of the earth because of what Manasseh son of Hezekiah king of Judah did in Jerusalem." (Jeremiah 24:8-9)

"Because you have forsaken Me and burned incense to other gods and provoked Me to anger with all

Holocaust are basically equivalent in terms of their devastation.

Then if the ideas I have presented here still bother you for some reason then what about the Greek and Armenian Genocides in which millions of Christians were killed by the Ottoman Turks during and after WW1? Or did you not even know they happened?

What I am trying to say is that if God does not protect Christians from genocide then why would we preserve for the fulfilment of the punishments given by the Law that He gave to Moses? I mean clearly the so-called Jews are guilty and deserve to be punished as I have shown already because they have rejected God Himself through their rejection of Jesus as the Christ.

On top of this they have already arrogantly said: "His blood be on us and on our children" (Matthew 27:25). They thought they were better than God and they still refuse to have faith in God by placing their faith in Jesus.

But as for the topic of genocide against Christians, really it is of no relevance to us because by being faithful to Jesus we have the promise of eternal life. All those who have been killed because of their faith in Jesus will be resurrected on the day of judgment as they stand victorious before God and receive the gift of eternal life. Thus when Christians have gone to their deaths in the past they are simply honoring God in the same way Jesus honored God through His death. And again, just like with Jesus, they will be resurrected.

As Jesus says:

"I know where you live, where the throne of Satan sits. Yet you have held fast to My name and have not denied your faith in Me even in the day when My faithful witness Antipas was killed among you, where Satan dwells." (Revelation 2:13)

We are all called to be faithful witnesses of Jesus just as Antipas was. This is why you not care what you have to say about me for what I have written here. I do not even care what you do me for it because as long as I remain faithful to Jesus then the forces of Satan will never triumph over me.

Next for those who still have a problem with God sanctioning genocide either directly or indirectly then consider the first beast of Revelation conspiring with the rulers of the world to kill the great prostitute. Of course you are well aware that I believe the great prostitute is the global society itself since the great prostitute is also called Babylon and Babylon is symbolic for the enemy of God's people. Then since the whole world itself will be infatuated with the beast and follow it as a so-called Messiah or savior then called god then this would mean global society itself will be the enemy of God's people or us faithful Christians.

This then means that the beast and the rulers of the world will literally genocide the remnant of humanity. Then as I have said before this would mean literally billions of people will die in a global genocide that may very well result in the deaths of 99% of everyone on earth. So in other words the genocide that Revelation speaks of will literally be over a thousand times worse than the Holocaust.

Then as Revelation says:

"And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:16-17)

So if it is the will and purpose of God for the beast to genocide billions of people so that His wrath against the great prostitute may be fulfilled as the whole world is judged then who honestly cares about saying the so-called Jews were justly punished by God with the Holocaust to mean if you have a problem with God killing millions of so-called Jews then why do you not have an issue with God killing billions of people? Then keep in mind that faithful Christians, the saints, are to die as well according to the will of God.

As Revelation says:

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe, people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7)

And also says:

"He who has an ear, let him hear:

'If anyone is destined for captivity,
into captivity he will go.
If anyone is to die by the sword,
by the sword he must be killed.'

Here is a call for the perseverance and faith of the saints." (Revelation 13:9-10)

So if God justly punishing the so-called Jews for their rejection of Jesus as the Christ bothers you then why does it not bother you that faithful Christians are to die in order to fulfill the will of God? Surely this fact must bother you more if you mean faithful Christians have not done anything to offend God because the great prostitute belongs to God while on the other hand the so-called Jews literally rejected God Himself and committed blasphemy through their rejection of Jesus as the Christ. Therefore the so-called Jews really deserve to receive their portion of the wrath of God while faithful Christians do not as the faithful Christians will not escape death. Really what I'm saying is that if you have a problem with Genesis for example. Sure God did let Christians then you are a hypocrite.

Finally for those who reject my interpretation of Revelation and still have a problem with what I have said concerning God's punishment of the so-called Jews then consider what has been done in the Old Testament. Lets take the Flood in Genesis for example. Sure God did let Jews punishing the world because it was completely wicked and only Noah was righteous. Yet obviously there were hundreds of thousands if not millions of babies, toddlers and kids who were also swept up in the flood waters so that they drowned like the rest.

So sure you can claim that God was being completely liberal by saying every man was wicked but this still begs the question of people who were too young to even have an opinion of their own were killed in the same way that God used to punish the wicked. Thus obviously you cannot say that God is not willing to kill millions of people that you may consider innocent from a modern moral perspective.

Then although you might say the Flood was not literal then I would say you would be missing the point. Even if the Flood never happened theh it is still theologically important in that it shows the character and motivations of God. In other words if Genesis is a divinely inspired text then the purpose of the Flood story is to show humanity that God yes will bring judgment and global genocide and He does not care if those who we see as innocent are caught up and killed in it. But what is the purpose of demonstrating this? Well as an asidi I believe the purpose is to demonstrate that God will truly use the beast to genocide humanity and then will wipe away humanity just as He did with water in the Flood story.

But what I am really trying to say here is that if you have a problem with over 2 million so-called Jews being killed in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and 6 million so-called Jews being killed in the Holocaust then I would really question if you are even a Christian at all in the Bible or not. I mean in truth even if the Holocaust was unclearly demonstrated to be the work of God then it still would not even compare to God killing everyone on earth through drowning them in the Flood except for Noah and his family.

Furthermore, just to reiterate, you need to keep in mind that all so-called Jews even up to our present day are literally being held to blame on their hands and through their rejection of Jesus as the Christ they have rejected God Himself. This literally means all so-called Jews are godless, lawless and the most wicked group in the world today. So really I fail to see how they do not deserve punishment for what they have done and continue to do.

Once again you may object to this and call me hateful or whatever. But as Jesus says:

"And if anyone will not welcome you or heed your words, shake the dust off your feet when you leave that home or town. Truly I tell you, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgment than for that town." (Matthew 10:14-15)

Of course as you probably know Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed and burned with fire as punishment for their sinfulness. Therefore anyone who rejects Jesus as the Christ will face the Lake of Fire to be burned in the second death so that their punishment is worse than that of Sodom and Gomorrah. Really I do not see any basis on which you can reject what I have said.

Lastly you may be wondering about the modern state of so-called Israel because you assume this state's existence is proof that the so-called Jews have found favor with God. This is not the case because the modern state of so-called Israel is not Israel as I have said before and as you will see in the following chapter.

Chapter 4.16: On Israel

But what exactly is Israel? First off, the name Israel simply means he who struggles with God and it comes from the following passage in Genesis:

"During the night Jacob got up and took his two wives, his two maidservants and his eleven sons, and crossed the ford of the Jabbok. He took them and sent them across the stream, along with all his possessions.

So Jacob was left all alone, and there a man wrestled with him until daybreak. When the man saw that he could not overpower Jacob, he struck the socket of Jacob's hip and dislocated it as they wrestled. Then the man said, "Let me go, for it is daybreak."

But Jacob replied, "I will not let you go unless you bless me."

'What is your name?' the man asked.

'Jacob,' he replied.

Then the man said, 'Your name will no longer be Jacob, but Israel, because you have struggled with God and with men, and you have prevailed.'

And Jacob requested, 'Please tell me your name.'

But he replied, 'Why do you ask my name?' Then he blessed him there.

So Jacob named the place Peniel, saying, 'Indeed, I have seen God face to face, and yet my life was spared.'

The sun rose above him as he passed by Peniel, and he was limping because of his hip. Therefore to this day the Israelites do not eat the tendon which is at the socket of the hip, because the man struck Jacob's hip at the socket near the tendon." (Genesis 32:22-32)

Here Jacob, or Israel, was the son of Isaac who was the son of Abraham. Jacob had sons which fathered Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Dan, Naphtali, Gad, Asher, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph and Benjamin. He would also adopt the two sons of Joseph who were Manasseh and Ephraim. Together they would become the twelve tribes of Israel after the Exodus and later would make up Israel after the Israelites conquered and settled in the Promised Land.

Essentially Israel or the Israelites are the people of God. But the reason I mention this is that Christians alone are God's people and inclusion into God's people is not limited to any single group and instead it is open to all those who have faith in Jesus.

As First Peter says:

"But you are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, that you may declare the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light. Once you were not a people, but now you are the people of God; once you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy.

Beloved, I urge you, as foreigners and exiles, to abstain from the passions of the flesh, which war against your soul. Conduct yourselves with such honor among the Gentiles that, though they slander you as evildoers, they may see your good deeds and glorify God on the day He visits us." (1 Peter 2:9-12)

But what about the so-called Jews? Are they God's people? Of course not since they hate Jesus. Anyone who denies that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God is not of God and is not part of God's people.

As First John says:

"Who is the liar, if it is not the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the liar, and the antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father, but whoever confesses the Son has the Father as well." (1 John 2:22-23)

Then as Paul has said:

"It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, 'Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned.' So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

Thus the so-called Jews are not part of the people of God and they are not Israel. Furthermore the modern state of so-called Israel is not legitimate as well. This is because the modern state of so-called Israel since to so-called Israel's rejection of Jesus and since they hate Jesus. Anyone who denies that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God is not of God and is not part of God's people.

As First John says:

"Who is the liar, if it is not the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the liar, and the antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father, but whoever confesses the Son has the Father as well." (1 John 2:22-23)

Then as Paul has said:

"It is not as though God's word has failed. For not all who are descended from Israel are Israel. Nor because they are Abraham's descendants are they all his children. On the contrary, 'Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned.' So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

Thus the so-called Jews are not part of the people of God and they are not Israel. Furthermore the modern state of so-called Israel is not legitimate as well. This is because the modern state of so-called Israel since to so-called Israel's rejection of Jesus and since they hate Jesus. On the contrary, Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned." So it is not the children of the flesh who are God's children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as offspring." (Romans 9:6-8)

Thus the so-called Jews are not part of the people of God and they are not Israel. Furthermore the modern state of so-called Israel is not legitimate as well. This is because the modern state of so-called Israel since to so-called Israel's rejection of Jesus and since they hate Jesus. On the contrary, Through Isaac your offspring will be reckoned." So it is not the children of the flesh

Once again you may believe I am overreacting here but I do not believe I am. Instead this is a very serious issue because the so-called Jews are guilty and deserve to be punished as I have shown already because they have rejected God Himself through their rejection of Jesus as the Christ.

Then as Revelation says:

"Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man, and He will dwell with them. They will be His people, and God Himself will be with them as their God. He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and there will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the former things have passed away." (Revelation 21:3-4)

Therefore every single year the faithful spend in the eternal Kingdom of God will be pure good so that nothing is bad. This will even be better than even a single Christian experiencing the eternal Kingdom of God will experience a level of good that is truly infinite. On the other hand since our current world is finite even billions of people suffering is still a finite bad. Then when you should use your spiritual ears to hear what the Holy Spirit says.

2 – Genesis

2.1 – Prophecy

"So the LORD God said to the serpent: 'Because you have done this, cursed are you above all livestock and every beast of the field! On your belly will you go, and dust you will eat, all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise your head, and you will strike his heel.'" (Genesis 3:14-15)

2.2 – Fulfillment

This text has in mind a singular fulfillment in one of the future offspring of Eve. Then the difference between crushing the head and striking or bruising the heel means that this future offspring will be able to crush the snake while the snake will only merely wound him.

This is of course fulfilled through the death and resurrection of Jesus since the snake is Satan.

As Revelation says:

"And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, who deceived the whole world." (Revelation 12:9)

Then Jesus did not succumb to the temptations of Satan and led a life free of sin. So although Satan succeeded in killing Jesus on the cross, striking His heel, Jesus was resurrected from the dead. Ultimately though, Jesus defeated Satan, crushing his head, through His death and resurrection because Satan cannot accuse the faithful as their sins have been forgiven of their sins.

As Revelation says:

"Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers has been thrown down— he who accuses them day and night before our God." (Revelation 12:10)

3 – Psalms

3.1 – Prophecy

"I will proclaim the decree spoken to Me by the LORD:
'You are My Son;
today I have become Your Father.
Ask Me, and I will make the nations Your inheritance, the ends of the earth Your possession.
You will break them with an iron scepter; You will shatter them like pottery.'

Therefore be wise, O kings; be admonished, O judges of the earth.
Serve the LORD with fear,
and rejoice with trembling.
Kiss the Son, lest He be angry
and you perish in your rebellion,
when His wrath ignites in an instant.

Blessed are all who take refuge in Him." (Psalm 2:7-12)

3.2 – Fulfillment

Jesus is the Son of God and

"this is the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God." (Mark 1:1)

"While Peter was speaking, a cloud appeared and enveloped them, and they were afraid as they entered the cloud. And a voice came from the cloud, saying, 'This is My Son, the Chosen One. Listen to Him!'" (Luke 9:34-35

3.3 – Prophecy

"Who may ascend the hill of the LORD? Who may stand in His holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who does not lift his soul to what is false and swear deceitfully.
He will receive blessing from the LORD and vindication from the God of his salvation. This is why God demanding that the Israelites only offer up unblemished healthy animals because other animals being deformed and unhealthy animals is not a sacrifice because God Jesus could not have been offered up as a sacrifice.

But how was Jesus a sacrifice exactly? Well you see since Jesus was perfect in the Bible it means that He has God's power and authority. For example God has the authority to forgive people of their sins because only someone who has been wronged can forgive sins. This means that if Jesus wanted to He could have used that God has given Him to kill any of the so-called Jews who wanted to harm Him so that He could forcibly create His kingdom. Yet instead Jesus did not do this and instead He willingly went to His own death as a sacrifice. This was then that He was raised Jesus from the dead so that He may rule His kingdom. Jesus is the right hand of God.

But then how does God take on our sins as I said before? Really the idea is that Jesus is our mediator with God by being the one who has faith in Jesus and His sacrifice then Jesus takes our sins upon Himself as a sacrifice. This is why I said Jesus is our mediator with God. So then by taking our sins upon Himself through faith our sins become God's sins. Then because God is capable of committing infinite good all of our sins are finally washed away because in God since any evil we have done will always be zero next to the infinite good of God.

Lastly if you have a problem with anything with utilitarianism here then remember what God says in Isaiah:

"I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things.

Drip down, O heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness. Let the earth open up that salvation may sprout and let righteousness spring up with it; I, the LORD, have created it.

Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker—one clay pot among others!
Does the clay ask the potter,
'What are you making?'
Does your work say,
'He has no hands'?
Woe to him who says to his father, 'What have you fathered?'
or to his mother,
'What have you brought forth?'

Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker:
'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands?
It is I who made the earth and created man upon it.
It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host.'" (Isaiah 45:7-12)

Thus the idea is that God has created all there is including us so really we have no right to talk back to God just as the piece of clay has no right to talk back to the one who shapes it. Thus as I said in my comment that God is capable of just obey God and accept His rule over us. Therefore God is capable of just use everything I have said here since you may not like utilitarianism, really you have to accept that utilitarianism is one of the only ways that you can prove that God being moral in the objective sense. So really it is what it is and God does what God does.

Chapter 4.20: Jesus and the Old Testament

1 – Introduction

In this chapter I go into the most compelling prophecies from the Old Testament that were fulfilled by Jesus. It is not all inclusive and only covers a few of the prophecies in order to keep the length down. For each of the books of the Bible provided I first quote a prophecy then explain or quote how it was fulfilled.

Now if you are not a Christian and you are reading this list of prophecies then some of them might not make sense or seem applicable. However you have to remember that if the first beast of Revelation will truly be an artificial super intelligence then you have to realize that God does not want to reveal Himself to the beast. Therefore the past prophecies that have been fulfilled in the Bible cannot be obvious and plain because if they were the beast itself would come to believe which would obviously prevent the prophecies of Revelation from coming to pass.

So as a result of this fact when you read this chapter you should keep this fact in mind and instead of using your physical eyes to see you should use your spiritual ears to hear what the Holy Spirit says.

2 – Genesis

2.1 – Prophecy

"So the LORD God said to the serpent: 'Because you have done this, cursed are you above all livestock and every beast of the field! On your belly will you go, and dust you will eat, all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise your head, and you will strike his heel.'" (Genesis 3:14-15)

2.2 – Fulfillment

This text has in mind a singular fulfillment in one of the future offspring of Eve. Then the difference between crushing the head and striking or bruising the heel means that this future offspring will be able to crush the snake while the snake will only merely wound him.

This is of course fulfilled through the death and resurrection of Jesus since the snake is Satan.

As Revelation says:

"And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, who deceived the whole world." (Revelation 12:9)

Then Jesus did not succumb to the temptations of Satan and led a life free of sin. So although Satan succeeded in killing Jesus on the cross, striking His heel, Jesus was resurrected from the dead. Ultimately though, Jesus defeated Satan, crushing his head, through His death and resurrection because Satan cannot accuse the faithful as their sins have been forgiven of their sins.

As Revelation says:

"Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers has been thrown down— he who accuses them day and night before our God." (Revelation 12:10)

3 – Psalms

3.1 – Prophecy

"I will proclaim the decree spoken to Me by the LORD:
'You are My Son;
today I have become Your Father.
Ask Me, and I will make the nations Your inheritance, the ends of the earth Your possession.
You will break them with an iron scepter; You will shatter them like pottery.'

Therefore be wise, O kings; be admonished, O judges of the earth.
Serve the LORD with fear,
and rejoice with trembling.
Kiss the Son, lest He be angry
and you perish in your rebellion,
when His wrath ignites in an instant.

Blessed are all who take refuge in Him." (Psalm 2:7-12)

3.2 – Fulfillment

Jesus is the Son of God and

"this is the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God." (Mark 1:1)

"While Peter was speaking, a cloud appeared and enveloped them, and they were afraid as they entered the cloud. And a voice came from the cloud, saying, 'This is My Son, the Chosen One. Listen to Him!'" (Luke 9:34-35

3.3 – Prophecy

"Who may ascend the hill of the LORD? Who may stand in His holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who does not lift his soul to what is false and swear deceitfully.
He will receive blessing from the LORD and vindication from the God of his salvation. This is why God demanding that the Israelites only offer up unblemished healthy animals because other animals being deformed and unhealthy animals is not a sacrifice because God Jesus could not have been offered up as a sacrifice.

But how was Jesus a sacrifice exactly? Well you see since Jesus was perfect in the Bible it means that He has God's power and authority. For example God has the authority to forgive people of their sins because only someone who has been wronged can forgive sins. This means that if Jesus wanted to He could have used that God has given Him to kill any of the so-called Jews who wanted to harm Him so that He could forcibly create His kingdom. Yet instead Jesus did not do this and instead He willingly went to His own death as a sacrifice. This was then that He was raised Jesus from the dead so that He may rule His kingdom. Jesus is the right hand of God.

But then how does God take on our sins as I said before? Really the idea is that Jesus is our mediator with God by being the one who has faith in Jesus and His sacrifice then Jesus takes our sins upon Himself as a sacrifice. This is why I said Jesus is our mediator with God. So then by taking our sins upon Himself through faith our sins become God's sins. Then because God is capable of committing infinite good all of our sins are finally washed away because in God since any evil we have done will always be zero next to the infinite good of God.

Lastly if you have a problem with anything with utilitarianism here then remember what God says in Isaiah:

"I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things.

Drip down, O heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness. Let the earth open up that salvation may sprout and let righteousness spring up with it; I, the LORD, have created it.

Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker—one clay pot among others!
Does the clay ask the potter,
'What are you making?'
Does your work say,
'He has no hands'?
Woe to him who says to his father, 'What have you fathered?'
or to his mother,
'What have you brought forth?'

Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker:
'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands?
It is I who made the earth and created man upon it.
It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host.'" (Isaiah 45:7-12)

Thus the idea is that God has created all there is including us so really we have no right to talk back to God just as the piece of clay has no right to talk back to the one who shapes it. Thus as I said in my comment that God is capable of just obey God and accept His rule over us.

Therefore God is capable of just use everything I have said here since you may not like utilitarianism, really you have to accept that utilitarianism is one of the only ways that you can prove that God being moral in the objective sense. So really it is what it is and God does what God does.

Chapter 4.19: How is God Moral?

At this point you may be asking yourself how can God be moral if He has commanded, orchestrated genocides and according to my commentary on Revelation will use the first beast of Revelation to genocide three-fourths of all humanity which will result in the deaths of billions? Well this is a good question with an easy answer. However I will warn you that you may not like the answer which is why I have made it to this point already and have not stopped reading and commenting just like the answer I give considering I have touched on it already.

But first allow me to explain morality. You see morality is not objective and instead it is subjective. This is because everyone has different preferences and values. For instance not everyone is a good Christian who lived a constitutes lying. For example some people believe that lying to your friends to protect them that you are sick because you do not feel like going through with the plans you made is perfectly acceptable because they feel it more as a so-called white lie that saves the friend from hearing the truth of killing bugs in their home.

Furthermore even murder is not always wrong. For example if you claim that murder is wrong then what do you do with the Nazis who lived faith in Jesus and His sacrifice then Jesus takes our sins upon Himself as a sacrifice. This is why I said Jesus is our mediator with God. So then by taking our sins upon Himself through faith our sins become God's sins. Then because God is capable of committing infinite good all of our sins are finally washed away because in God since any evil we have done will always be zero next to the infinite good of God.

Lastly if you have a problem with anything with utilitarianism here then remember what God says in Isaiah:

"I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things.

Drip down, O heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness. Let the earth open up that salvation may sprout and let righteousness spring up with it; I, the LORD, have created it.

Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker—one clay pot among others!
Does the clay ask the potter,
'What are you making?'
Does your work say,
'He has no hands'?
Woe to him who says to his father, 'What have you fathered?'
or to his mother,
'What have you brought forth?'

Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker:
'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands?
It is I who made the earth and created man upon it.
It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host.'" (Isaiah 45:7-12)

Thus the idea is that God has created all there is including us so really we have no right to talk back to God just as the piece of clay has no right to talk back to the one who shapes it. Thus as I said in my comment that God is capable of just obey God and accept His rule over us.

Therefore God is capable of just use everything I have said here since you may not like utilitarianism, really you have to accept that utilitarianism is one of the only ways that you can prove that God being moral in the objective sense. So really it is what it is and God does what God does.

Chapter 4.20: Jesus and the Old Testament

1 – Introduction

In this chapter I go into the most compelling prophecies from the Old Testament that were fulfilled by Jesus. It is not all inclusive and only covers a few of the prophecies in order to keep the length down. For each of the books of the Bible provided I first quote a prophecy then explain or quote how it was fulfilled.

Now if you are not a Christian and you are reading this list of prophecies then some of them might not make sense or seem applicable. However you have to remember that if the first beast of Revelation will truly be an artificial super intelligence then you have to realize that God does not want to reveal Himself to the beast. Therefore the past prophecies that have been fulfilled in the Bible cannot be obvious and plain because if they were the beast itself would come to believe which would obviously prevent the prophecies of Revelation from coming to pass.

So as a result of this fact when you read this chapter you should keep this fact in mind and instead of using your physical eyes to see you should use your spiritual ears to hear what the Holy Spirit says.

2 – Genesis

2.1 – Prophecy

"So the LORD God said to the serpent: 'Because you have done this, cursed are you above all livestock and every beast of the field! On your belly will you go, and dust you will eat, all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise your head, and you will strike his heel.'" (Genesis 3:14-15)

2.2 – Fulfillment

This text has in mind a singular fulfillment in one of the future offspring of Eve. Then the difference between crushing the head and striking or bruising the heel means that this future offspring will be able to crush the snake while the snake will only merely wound him.

This is of course fulfilled through the death and resurrection of Jesus since the snake is Satan.

As Revelation says:

"And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, who deceived the whole world." (Revelation 12:9)

Then Jesus did not succumb to the temptations of Satan and led a life free of sin. So although Satan succeeded in killing Jesus on the cross, striking His heel, Jesus was resurrected from the dead. Ultimately though, Jesus defeated Satan, crushing his head, through His death and resurrection because Satan cannot accuse the faithful as their sins have been forgiven of their sins.

As Revelation says:

"Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers has been thrown down— he who accuses them day and night before our God." (Revelation 12:10)

3 – Psalms

3.1 – Prophecy

"I will proclaim the decree spoken to Me by the LORD:
'You are My Son;
today I have become Your Father.
Ask Me, and I will make the nations Your inheritance, the ends of the earth Your possession.
You will break them with an iron scepter; You will shatter them like pottery.'

Therefore be wise, O kings; be admonished, O judges of the earth.
Serve the LORD with fear,
and rejoice with trembling.
Kiss the Son, lest He be angry
and you perish in your rebellion,
when His wrath ignites in an instant.

Blessed are all who take refuge in Him." (Psalm 2:7-12)

3.2 – Fulfillment

Jesus is the Son of God and

"this is the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God." (Mark 1:1)

"While Peter was speaking, a cloud appeared and enveloped them, and they were afraid as they entered the cloud. And a voice came from the cloud, saying, 'This is My Son, the Chosen One. Listen to Him!'" (Luke 9:34-35

3.3 – Prophecy

"Who may ascend the hill of the LORD? Who may stand in His holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who does not lift his soul to what is false and swear deceitfully.
He will receive blessing from the LORD and vindication from the God of his salvation. This is why God demanding that the Israelites only offer up unblemished healthy animals because other animals being deformed and unhealthy animals is not a sacrifice because God Jesus could not have been offered up as a sacrifice.

But how was Jesus a sacrifice exactly? Well you see since Jesus was perfect in the Bible it means that He has God's power and authority. For example God has the authority to forgive people of their sins because only someone who has been wronged can forgive sins. This means that if Jesus wanted to He could have used that God has given Him to kill any of the so-called Jews who wanted to harm Him so that He could forcibly create His kingdom. Yet instead Jesus did not do this and instead He willingly went to His own death as a sacrifice. This was then that He was raised Jesus from the dead so that He may rule His kingdom. Jesus is the right hand of God.

But then how does God take on our sins as I said before? Really the idea is that Jesus is our mediator with God by being the one who has faith in Jesus and His sacrifice then Jesus takes our sins upon Himself as a sacrifice. This is why I said Jesus is our mediator with God. So then by taking our sins upon Himself through faith our sins become God's sins. Then because God is capable of committing infinite good all of our sins are finally washed away because in God since any evil we have done will always be zero next to the infinite good of God.

Lastly if you have a problem with anything with utilitarianism here then remember what God says in Isaiah:

"I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things.

Drip down, O heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness. Let the earth open up that salvation may sprout and let righteousness spring up with it; I, the LORD, have created it.

Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker—one clay pot among others!
Does the clay ask the potter,
'What are you making?'
Does your work say,
'He has no hands'?
Woe to him who says to his father, 'What have you fathered?'
or to his mother,
'What have you brought forth?'

Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker:
'How dare you question Me about My sons, or instruct Me in the work of My hands?
It is I who made the earth and created man upon it.
It was My hands that stretched out the heavens, and I ordained all their host.'" (Isaiah 45:7-12)

Thus the idea is that God has created all there is including us so really we have no right to talk back to God just as the piece of clay has no right to talk back to the one who shapes it. Thus as I said in my comment that God is capable of just obey God and accept His rule over us.

Therefore God is capable of just use everything I have said here since you may not like utilitarianism, really you have to accept that utilitarianism is one of the only ways that you can prove that God being moral in the objective sense. So really it is what it is and God does what God does.

4 – Daniel

4.1 – Prophecy

"In my vision in the night I continued to watch, and I saw One like the Son of Man coming with the clouds of heaven. He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into His presence. And He was given dominion, glory, and kingship, that the people of every nation and language should serve Him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and His kingdom is one that will never be destroyed." (Daniel 7:13-14)

4.2 – Fulfillment

God the Father has given Jesus everything there is.

"Then the end will come, when He hands over the kingdom to God the Father after He has destroyed all dominion, authority, and power. For He must reign until He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death. For 'God has put everything under His feet.' Now when it says that everything has been put under Him, this clearly does not include the One who put everything under His feet. And when all things have been subjected to Him, then the Son himself will be made subject to Him who put all things under Him, so that God may be all in all." (1 Corinthians 15:24-28)

Now if you are not a Christian and you are reading this list of prophecies then some of them might not make sense or seem applicable. However you have to remember that if the first beast of Revelation will truly be an artificial super intelligence then you have to realize that God does not want to reveal Himself to the beast. Therefore the past prophecies that have been fulfilled in the Bible cannot be obvious and plain because if they were the beast itself would come to believe which would obviously prevent the prophecies of Revelation from coming to pass.

So as a result of this fact when you read this chapter you should keep this fact in mind and instead of using your physical eyes to see you should use your spiritual ears to hear what the Holy Spirit says.

5 – Zechariah

5.1 – Prophecy

"Then I will pour out on the house of David and on the people of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and prayer, and they will look on Me, the One they have pierced. They will mourn for Him as for an only child, and grieve bitterly for Him as one grieves for a firstborn son." (Zechariah 12:10)

5.2 – Fulfillment

The so-called Jews had Jesus killed for opposing them.

"But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs. Instead, one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water flowed out." (John 19:33-34)

"And, as another Scripture says: 'They will look on the One they have pierced.'" (John 19:37)

6 – Exodus

6.1 – Prophecy

"It must be eaten inside one house. You are not to take any of the meat outside the house, and you may not break any of the bones." (Exodus 12:46)

6.2 – Fulfillment

Jesus is the final Passover Lamb.

"But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs." (John 19:33)

"Now these things happened so that the Scripture would be fulfilled: 'Not one of His bones will be broken.'" (John 19:36)

7 – Isaiah

7.1 – Prophecy

"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given,
and the government will be upon His shoulders;
And we will be called
Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God,
Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.
Of the increase of His government and peace
there will be no end,
He will reign on the throne of David
and over His kingdom,
to establish it and sustain it
with justice and righteousness
from that time and forevermore.

The zeal of the LORD of Hosts will
accomplish this." (Isaiah 9:6-7)

7.2 – Fulfillment

Jesus rules from the throne of David and has established the kingdom from God.

"These are the words of the One who is holy and true, who holds the key of David." (Revelation 3:7)

"I, Jesus, have sent My angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and I am the Bright Morning Star." (Revelation 22:16)

Blessed are all who take refuge in Him." (Psalm 2:12)

7.3 – Prophecy

"Here is My Servant, whom I uphold, My Chosen One, in whom My soul delights;

I will put My Spirit on Him,
and He will bring justice to the nations.
He will not cry out or raise His voice, nor make His voice heard in the street.
A bruised reed He will not break and a smoldering wick He will not extinguish; He will faithfully bring forth justice.
He will not grow faint or be discouraged
before He has established justice on the earth.
In His law the islands will put their hope." (Isaiah 42:1-4)

7.4 – Fulfillment

Jesus reigns over the nations as the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

"They will make war against the Lamb, and the Lamb will triumph over them, because He is Lord of lords and King of kings, and those with Him will be accompanied by His called and chosen and faithful ones." (Revelation 17:14)

7.5 – Prophecy

"Behold, My Servant will prosper;
He will be raised and lifted up and highly exalted.
Just as many were appalled at Him—
His appearance was disfigured beyond that of any man
and His form was marred beyond human likeness—
so He will sprinkle many nations.
Kings will shut their mouths because of Him.
For they will see what they have not been told
and they will understand what they have not heard.

Who has believed our message?
And to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?
He grew up before Him like a tender shoot,
and like a root out of dry ground.
He had no stately form or majesty to attract us to Him,
no beauty that we should desire Him.
He was despised and rejected by men,
a man of sorrows, acquainted with grief.
Like one from whom men hide their faces,
He was despised, and we regarded Him not.

Surely He took on our infirmities
and carried our sorrows;
yet we considered Him stricken by God,
struck down and afflicted.
But He was pierced for our transgressions,
He was crushed for our iniquities;
the punishment that brought us peace was upon Him,
and by His stripes we are healed.
We all like sheep have gone astray,
each one has turned to his own way;
and the LORD has laid upon Him
the iniquity of us all.

He was oppressed and afflicted,
yet He did not open His mouth.
He was led like a lamb to the slaughter,
and as a sheep before her shearers is silent,
so He did not open His mouth.
By oppression and judgment He was taken away,
and who can recount His descendants?
For He was cut off from the land of the living;
He was stricken for the transgression of His people.

He was assigned a grave with the wicked,
and with a rich man in His death,
although He had done no violence,
nor was any deceit in His mouth.

Yet it was the LORD's will to crush Him
and to cause Him to suffer;
and when His life is made a guilt offering,
He will see His offspring, He will prolong His days,
and the good pleasure of the LORD will prosper in His hand.
After the anguish of His soul,
He will see the light of life and be satisfied.
By His knowledge My righteous Servant will justify many,
and He will bear their iniquities.
Therefore I will allot Him a portion with the great,
and He will divide the spoils with the strong,
because He poured out His life unto death,
and He was numbered with the transgressors.
He bore the sin of many
and made intercession for the transgressors." (Isaiah 52:13-53:12)

7.6 – Fulfillment

7.6.1 – Highly Exalted

"After six days Jesus took with Him Peter, James, and his brother James, Jesus, Judas, and Simon? Aren't His sisters here with us as well? And they took offense at Him." (Mark 6:3)

"Have you never read this Scripture: 'The stone the builders rejected has become the cornerstone. This is from the Lord, and it is marvelous in our eyes'?" (Mark 12:10)

"But first He must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation." (Luke 17:25)

"He was in the world, and though the world was made through him, the world did not recognize Him. He came to His own, and His own did not receive Him." (John 1:10-11)

7.6.3 – Appearance Disfigured

"And wishing to satisfy the crowd, Pilate released Barabbas to them. But he had Jesus flogged, and handed Him over to be crucified." (Mark 15:15)

"They dressed Him in a purple robe, twisted together a crown of thorns, and set it on His head." (Mark 15:17)

"They kept striking His head with a staff and spitting on Him. And they knelt down and bowed before Him. After they had mocked Him, they removed the purple robe and put His own clothes back on Him. Then they led Him out to crucify Him." (Mark 15:19-20)

7.6.4 – No Stately Form

"Aren't you also from Galilee?' they replied. 'Look into it, and you will see that no prophet comes out of Galilee.'" (John 7:52)

"Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls." (Matthew 11:29)

7.6.5 – Rejected by Men

"But the chief priests and elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas and to have Jesus put to death.

'Which of the two do you want me to release to you?' asked the governor.

'Barabbas,' they replied.

'What then should I do with Jesus who is called Christ?' Pilate asked.

They all answered, 'Crucify Him!'

'Why?' asked Pilate. 'What evil has He done?'

But they shouted all the louder, 'Crucify Him!'" (Matthew 27: 20-23)

7.6.6 – Carried Our Sorrows

"When Jesus saw their faith, He said, 'Friend, your sins are forgiven.'" (Luke 5:20)

"Then Jesus said to her, 'Your sins are forgiven.'"

But those at the table began to say to themselves, 'Who is this who even forgives sins?'" (Luke 7:48-49)

7.6.7 – We Considered Him Stricken by God

"The people stood watching, and the rulers sneered at Him, saying, 'He saved others; let him save himself if He is the Christ of God, the Chosen One.'" (Luke 23:35)

"And those who passed by heaped abuse on Him, shaking their heads and saying, 'Aha! You who are going to destroy the temple and rebuild it in three days, come down from the cross and save Yourself!'" (Mark 15:29-30)

7.6.8 – Pierced for Our Transgressions

"But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs. Instead, one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water flowed out." (John 19:33-34)

7.6.9 – Laid Upon Him the Iniquity of Us All

"For God has not appointed us to suffer wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ. He died for us so that, whether we are awake or asleep, we may live together with Him." (1 Thessalonians 5:9-10)

"For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life as a ransom for many." (Mark 10:45)

7.6.10 – He Did Not Open His Mouth

"And the chief priests began to accuse Him of many things.

Then Pilate questioned Him again, "Have You no answer? Look how many charges they are bringing against You!"

But to Pilate's amazement, Jesus made no further reply." (Mark 15:3-5)

7.6.11 – Stricken for the Transgressions of My People

"For what I received I passed on to you as of first importance: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures," (1 Corinthians 15:3)

7.6.12 – Assigned a Grave with the Wicked

"Two others, who were criminals, were also led away to be executed with Jesus.

When they came to the place called The Skull, they crucified Him there, along with the criminals, one on His right and the other on His left." (Luke 23:32-33)

7.6.13 – With a Rich Man in His Death

"When it was evening, there came a rich man from Arimathea named Joseph, who himself was a disciple of Jesus. He went to Pilate to ask for the body of Jesus, and Pilate ordered that it be given to him. So Joseph took the body, 'wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and placed it in his own new tomb that he had cut into the rock. He then rolled a great stone across the entrance to the tomb and went away." (Matthew 27:57-60)

7.6.14 – The LORD's Will to Crush Him, His Soul is made a Guilt Offering

"For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but to do the will of Him who sent Me." (John 6:38)

"For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful man, as an offering for sin. He thus condemned sin in the flesh, so that the righteous standard of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit." (Romans 8:3-4)

7.6.15 – He Will Prolong His Days

"But the angel said to the women, 'Do not be afraid, for I know that you are looking for Jesus, who was crucified. He is not here; He has risen, just as He said! Come, see the place where He lay.'" (Matthew 28:5-6)

"But God raised Him from the dead, releasing Him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for Him to be held in its clutches." (Acts 2:24)

7.6.16 – He was Numbered with the Transgressors

"Two others, who were criminals, were also led away to be executed with Jesus.

When they came to the place called The Skull, they crucified Him there, along with the criminals, one on His right and the other on His left." (Luke 23:32-33)

7.6.17 – He Bore the Sin of Many

"For at just the right time, while we were still powerless, Christ died for the ungodly. Very rarely will anyone die for a righteous man, though for a good man someone might possibly dare to die. But God proves His love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us." (Romans 5:6-8)

Chapter 4.21: Disciple s of All Nations

Although many of the previous chapters may have been dark with their theme of judgment and punishment, this chapter is one of the greatest overlarching promise made in both the Old and New Testaments. This promise of course is the promise that people from all nations will come to know God and He will bless the whole world.

For the beginning of this chapter I simply quote most of the verses related to this overarching promise from the Old Testament and New Testament.

1 – Old Testament

"Then the LORD said to Abram, 'Leave your country, your kindred, and your father's household, and go to the land I will show you.

I will make you into a great nation, and I will bless you; I will make your name great, so that you will be a blessing. I will bless those who bless you and curse those who curse you; and all the families of the earth will be blessed through you." (Genesis 12:1-3)

"And the LORD said, 'Shall I hide from Abraham what I am about to do? Abraham will surely become a great and powerful nation, and through him all the nations of the earth will be blessed. For I have chosen him, so that he will command his children and his household after him to keep the way of the LORD by doing what is right and just, in order that the LORD may bring upon Abraham what He has promised.'" (Genesis 18:17-19)

"And through your offspring all nations of the earth will be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice." (Genesis 22:18)

"Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and east and north and south. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you and your offspring." (Genesis 28:14)

"All the ends of the earth will remember and turn to the LORD, and all the families of the nations will bow down before Him." (Psalm 22:27)

"Let all the earth fear the LORD; let all the people of the world revere Him." (Psalm 33:8)

"Let the peoples praise You, O God; let all the peoples praise You. Let the nations be glad and sing for joy, for You judge the peoples justly and lead the nations of the earth." (Psalm 67:3-4)

"May his name endure forever; may his name continue as long as the sun shines. May all nations be blessed; may they call him blessed." (Psalm 72:17)

"All the nations You have made will come and bow before You, O Lord, and they will glorify Your name. For You are great and perform wonders; You alone are God." (Psalm 86:9)

"The heavens proclaim His righteousness; all the peoples see His glory." (Psalm 97:6)

"The LORD has proclaimed His salvation and revealed His righteousness to the nations. He has remembered His love and faithfulness to the house of Israel; all the ends of the earth have seen the salvation of our God." (Psalm 98:3)

"Praise the LORD, all you nations! Extol Him, all you peoples! For great is His loving devotion toward us, and the faithfulness of the LORD endures forever." (Psalm 117:1-2)

"In the last days the mountain of the house of the LORD will be established as the chief of the mountains; it will be exalted above the hills, and all nations will stream to it." (Isaiah 2:2)

"On this mountain the LORD of Hosts will prepare a banquet for all the peoples, a feast of aged wine, of choice meats, of finely aged wine. On this mountain He will swallow up the shroud that covers all peoples, the sheet that covers all nations; He will swallow up death forever. The Lord GOD will wipe away the tears from every face and remove the disgrace of His people from the whole earth. For the LORD has spoken!" (Isaiah 25:6-8)

"Turn to Me and be saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other. By Myself I have sworn, truth has gone out from My mouth, a word that will not be revoked: 'Every knee will bend before Me, every tongue will swear allegiance. Surely they will say of Me, 'In the LORD alone are my righteousness and strength.'" (Isaiah 45:22-24)

"The LORD has bared His holy arm in the sight of all the nations, and all the ends of the earth will see the salvation of our God." (Isaiah 52:10)

"I will bring them to My holy mountain and make them joyful in My house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be accepted on My altar, for My house will be called a house of prayer for all the nations." (Isaiah 56:7)

"And I, knowing their deeds and thoughts, am coming to gather all nations and tongues, and they will come and see My glory." (Isaiah 66:18)

2 – New Testament

"And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all nations, and then the end will come." (Matthew 24:14)

"Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you." (Matthew 28:19-20)

"And the gospel must first be proclaimed to all the nations." (Mark 13:10)

"This is what is written: The Christ will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, and in His name repentance and forgiveness of sins will be proclaimed to all nations, beginning in Jerusalem. You are witnesses of these things." (Luke 24:46-48)

"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you, and you will be My witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth." (Acts 1:8)

"The Scripture foresaw that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and foretold the gospel to Abraham: 'All nations will be blessed through you.'" (Galatians 3:8)

"Worthy are You to take the scroll and open its seals, because You were slain, and by Your blood You purchased for God people from every tribe and tongue and people and nation." (Revelation 5:9)

"After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9)

3 – Closing Thoughts

The fulfillment of these prophecies is perhaps the most amazing fulfillment of prophecy in the Bible because so much time has elapsed between the time the prophecy was given and the fulfillment. Evidence that Jesus have been fulfilled there are now Christians everywhere in the world, including North Korea of all places. There are also three times more Christians in China than there are so-called Jews in the entire world. Then there are over 110 countries with more than a million Christians. Thus clearly the above prophecies have been made and their fulfillment is a testament to the power and glory of God.

Chapter 4.22: Greates t Evidence

When viewed together I believe everything you have read in this chapter is the greatest (the so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars, events after the (so-called) Jewish Diaspora, prophecies related concerning Jesus, disciples of all nations and of course, the Book of Revelation are ultimately the greatest evidence that God has given the Christian story as given by God in the Bible is true.

Oftentimes people like to try to argue for the existence of the God of the Bible from philosophical or philosophical arguments but ultimately you can only argue in support of the God of Abraham by using the Bible itself. When you use philosophical arguments for the existence of God you are doing so providing evidence for the God of philosophy and not the God of the Bible.

On top of this people like to argue the evidence for Jesus's resurrection on the basis of the Gospel accounts and Paul's letters. I personally do not think such an approach can stand up to the evidence that I have presented. I mean, look at this way. If Jesus really is the Christ and the Son of God and the Bible was written by the so-called Jews and He really rose from the dead as the Bible says then what would we expect to see happen?

We would expect to see God justify pour out His wrath and anger upon the so-called Jews for what they have done to His Son. We of course see this as the death toll of the three (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars which killed over a million. This is why I decided to write this part on fulfilled prophecies in the Bible. Furthermore learning about how the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars relate to the Old and New Testaments is ultimately what convinced me that what God said was true (Bible).

Despite their best efforts the so-called Jews failed to defeat the Roman Empire through military might and they ultimately ended later go on to conquer the Roman Empire not through might and war but by the Gospel because of this does not prove that Jesus was and is the true Messiah then I don't know what does.

The ultimate error the so-called Jews made almost 2,000 years ago was believing that the Kingdom of God was a physical kingdom on the earth of a physical Israel. However, Israel is simply the people of God and encompasses people from all nations who place their faith in Jesus as you have read. Israel was never meant to rule over the world through military force like the so-called Jews thought. Instead people are supposed to join in through faith. Period.

This is why I think that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars specifically are the best evidence from what I have presented that the Christian story, as given in the Bible from Genesis in the Old Testament to Revelation in the New Testament, is true. If God does not exist and Jesus was false then the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars would not have happened as they did. But if Jesus really is real and really is the Christ then we would expect to see those who rejected him and crucified him as the Law demands in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 as I have stated.

Furthermore, the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were by no means inevitable and throughout the whole First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War the Romans offered terms numerous times. The so-called Jews of course, perhaps mirroring how God hardened the heart of Pharaoh in the Exodus, refused every time.

You may say the evidence I have presented is manufactured or just chance. Perhaps it is? Although we do know that the writings of Paul and Luke (the so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars. Therefore once again if Jesus really is the Son of God then we would expect to see the so-called Jews punished according to what God says He will do in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28. Then obviously God has called the remnant of Israel to Him.

Additionally there is zero doubt that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars happened. The Second Temple has been destroyed and Temple Mount has been completely leveled. Additionally you can still see the Roman Tenth Legion military built to lay siege to Masada on satellite imagery of the site. Sure the wall they built almost 2,000 years ago are simply piles of stones now but the fact they built it exists is a testament to the fact that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars happened as the wrath of God was poured out.

But ultimately everything still boils down to faith. Do you have faith in God or do you have faith in yourself?

I know I place my faith in God through His Son, Jesus. I know that I am saved and as well if you do not already so that you can share in eternal life with all the faithful and escape the lake of fire that awaits all those who do not place their faith in Jesus.

As Jesus says:

"The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in His hands. Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life; but whoever rejects the Son will not see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him." (John 3:35-36)

Chapter 4.23: The Seven Facts Argument

Here is a list of the seven facts for the truth of Christianity that perfectly sum up all the evidence I have presented in this part so that it is easy to understand, remember and share with others. These points are not controversial and even the most skeptical historians and even the so-called Jews themselves would agree with all of them which is why I have called them facts.

Although I will not go over the counter points to this argument here because I will go over them in part on the next chapter, it really just like to say that really main add only objection to this points is so ridiculous that it is coincidence. Thus really there is no solid proof and you still must ultimately have faith as I said in the previous chapter. However hopefully now you have something solid that demonstrates the truth of the Christian story.

That said, since this argument relies heavily on the judgment the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars many people will not like it. But problem is you do not like it either? Well in any case I have given it to you so that is all that matters. Just keep this in mind when sharing it with others since they might just object to it on the basis that they do not like the idea of God judgment of so-called Jews in the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

1 – The Seven Facts for the Truth of Christianity Argument

1) Deuteronomy 28 from the Law in the Old Testament outlines the punishments that were to be poured out on the so-called Jewish people.

2) Those who called themselves Jews almost entirely rejected Jesus and did not accept Him as the promised Messiah, the Son of David's kingdom and the Son of God.

3) The Apostle Paul referred to faithful Christians in the Bible as the true and referred to Jesus as the Son of God in his unanimously genuine epistles written in the 50s.

4) There cannot be two Temples of God and two Temples of God cannot coexist so building a New Temple would necessitate destroying the Old Temple.

5) The (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars happened and the Second Temple was destroyed.

6) The (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were a much greater calamity than any of the prior three are strong parallels between the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the Exile.

7) A physical Third Temple has never been built which is in line with Deuteronomy 28:68 and the lack of a promise of restoration found in Deuteronomy 28. On the other hand, faithful Christians, the Temple Paul spoke about, have proved to every nation on earth which can be considered a fulfillment of God's promise to Abraham that the nations will be blessed through him.

Conclusion: God punished those who disobeyed Him by removing Jews and the Church is the true continuation of Israel with the body of all the faithful serving as the Third Temple which has blessed the world. Therefore Jesus truly is the Son of God and the Christian story is true.

2 – Closing Thoughts

Really the only weakness in this argument is that you could say that it is just chance or it is coincidence so therefore the conclusion is not necessarily true. Yes really it all still comes down to faith like I said. So the question is do you believe that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were a random occurrence or do you believe they were due to the will of God?

Additionally obviously this argument does not take into account the history of the so-called Jews up to the present day. This means that the events of the twentieth century that have happened to the so-called Jews and the creation of the modern so-called state of Israel to set up the prophecy from Revelation are not taken into account. So of course if these events were included then it would be stronger. Although I think even without these events a people rather emotional so that once they hear you say the Holocaust they have an immediate and just become enraged. Thus it may be to your benefit to not include these events if you I have done when sharing this argument with others.

Finally, on the subject of Revelation, this argument also does not include any prophecies from the Book of Revelation. For instance I firmly believe that Revelation 13 perfectly describes the potential future the whole world faces given the inevitable prospect of artificial super intelligence. Even if you are skeptical of everything I just said I think you can at the very you have to admit that my commentary on Revelation aligns pretty well with what our current world and what our future holds with respect to what the text of Revelation says. That the greatest evidence for the truthfulness of Revelation in this argument would be rather problematic in the sense that it would require explaining the symbolism in Revelation and the Bible as a whole for it to make more sense so really the prophecies of Revelation cannot be easily included which is why I have left them out.

So what I am trying to say here with the above is that this argument is important in the end as all be all because it largely leaves out the history of the so-called Jews up to the present day and the prophecies of the Book of Revelation. So if the seven point argument is not to your liking then consider these additional points of consideration.

Lastly you should keep in mind that ultimately seeing the truth of Christianity still comes down to faith because the Bible itself is revealed from the first beast of Revelation. As I have said before, if the first beast will truly be an artificial super intelligence then it will make sense rational proof for the Christian story then obviously the beast itself would be able to disrupt God's plans and the prophecies of Revelation would not come to pass. So this is why God seems to be hiding because He does not want the beast to see Him. Therefore when the beast reads everything I have written here it will simply see it all as a coincidence and a self-fulfilling prophecy so that it will find no reason to believe in the truth of Christianity. However obviously if you have spiritual ears then you can hear what the Holy Spirit says so that when you read what I have written about you do not see it as a coincidence but rather as part of God's divine plan being fulfilled in front of our very eyes.

Chapter 4.24: Why Not Become Christian?

At this point given all the that you have read you may be wondering why God has seemingly not accepted Jesus as the Christ and Son of God so that they become Christians.

Well?

First off I think we should all be aware of the fact that all the so-called Jews will not become Christian.

As Revelation says:

"Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him—even those who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. So shall it be! Amen." (Revelation 1:7)

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. I will make them come and bow down at your feet, and they will know that I love you." (Revelation 3:9)

How could these two verses come to pass if all the so-called Jews become Christian? Clearly they will not be able to so this is why we should not expect all the so-called Jews to convert. Instead the synagogue of Satan must remain until the end so that they can look upon the One they have pierced with their wickedness and so that they can bow down at our feet as they finally see that God loves us as Christians.

Additionally as the prophecy of Isaiah says:

"And He replied: 'Go and tell this people, 'Be ever hearing, but never understanding; be ever seeing, but never perceiving.' Make the hearts of this people calloused; deafen their ears and close their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn to Me for healing!'" (Isaiah 6:9-10)

In the so-called Jews this prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled again as they ignore God. I do not know if the so-called Jews realize the afflictions the so-called Jews have suffered from the fulfillment of the curses the Law lays out are obviously an act of God as you have seen.

So although the so-called Jews should look upon their pierced Messiah since the death of resurrection of Jesus and ask themselves if they are guilty of breaking the Law, we should not expect this to be fruitful because God has already spoken. The so-called Jews pretend to respect the Law of Moses and yet they have ignored and rejected the very Law that has convicted them in the past almost 2,000 years.

Even as Stephan said before he was stoned by the so-called Jews:

"You stiff-necked people with uncircumcised hearts and ears! You always resist the Holy Spirit, just as your fathers did. Which of the prophets did your fathers not persecute? They even killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One. And now you are His betrayers and murderers—you who received the law ordained by angels, yet have not kept it." (Acts 7:51-53)

They do not have a spiritual ear to hear the call of the Holy Spirit and spiritual eyes to see the Spirit of God so they remain hardened to the truth of the world. In other words God has hardened their hearts, blinded their eyes and deafened their ears so that His purpose for them might be fulfilled.

That said, there are still a couple more secular reason as to why the so-called Jews have not become Christian. Perhaps they are simply being ignorant and do not know what you just read. For them simply reading what you just read would be enough to convince them and have them drop to their knees as they ask Jesus for forgiveness.

However for the rest of the so-called Jews I think the sunk cost fallacy is relevant. The sunk cost fallacy is where a person refuses to give up a terrible and obviously wrong venture because they have invested so much time and effort in it already. For so-called Jews living today this would mean admitting that all their ancestors from about 30 AD up to the present day have been wrong. This would mean that they would have to turn their back on almost 2,000 years of their history as they admit that their ancestors have been wrong for close to a hundred generations.

Let that sink in. Two thousand years. This is perhaps the longest and most significant case of the sunk cost fallacy in history.

Finally if you consider yourself a so-called Jew and are reading this now then please consider what you have read here. Do you know what God will always be there for you when you are ready and that all your sins will be forgiven once you come to faith in Jesus and accept Him as the Christ. Do you know that the Christians you do you will no longer have any blood on your hands because it will all be washed away.

As Jesus says:

"Then Jesus told them this parable: 'What man among you, if he has a hundred sheep and loses one of them, doesn't leave the ninety-nine in the pasture and go after the one that is lost, until he finds it? And when he finds it, he joyfully puts it on his shoulders, comes home, and calls together his friends and neighbors saying, 'Rejoice with me, for I have found my lost sheep!' In the same way, I tell you that there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine others who have no need to repent." (Luke 15:3-7)

Therefore it is never too late to repent and to return to God.

Chapter 4.25: Closing

I hope you enjoyed read this part or at the very least found it interesting. Many years may have been tough to read but I hope you now understand why I felt I must write everything I included and say everything I have said.

1 – A Response

First off for those who are convinced that I am hateful and antisemitic or whatever else they have in mind, please read my intro and commentary, I will simply quote what Jesus says:

"Blessed are you when people hate you, and when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil because of the Son of Man. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For their fathers treated the prophets in the same way." (Luke 6:22)

I do not care what you say about me or even think about me because I say what I say as a faithful witness to the truth of the Christ and for you and for your pleasure. I know that God blesses me for what I say because I am simply carrying on the teachings of Jesus.

After all, Jesus clearly told the so-called Jews that they are to be punished and killed by God for what they have done and have yet to do. So if you are upset by my delivering of the same message as Jesus then you are clearly rejecting my "name as evil because of the Son of Man." (Luke 6:22) So if you are so concerned for me for what I have said then just know that I will rejoice relatively soon. I will even be able to hold a candle to the true power of artificial super intelligence. Jesus said that I should be happy and rejoice when people hate you and insult you and reject your name as evil because of the Son of Man. Jesus is the Christ and I am simply carrying on the teachings of Jesus.

Well, what about scaling this theoretical entity so that it would be able to talk to everyone on earth simultaneously? Now imagine for a second that this theoretical entity I made you imagine will not even be able to hold a candle to the true power of artificial super intelligence. Imagine that it would be able to do what I have already said, the two parts you have already read, Fulfilled Prophecy and the Book of Revelation, are together the best evidence that we have that the Bible is true. Therefore you should believe what I say about as long as you place your faith in God instead of philosophy.

Then remember, if you place your faith in human wisdom and knowledge instead of in God himself then you will be simply delivering yourself up on the path to apostasy and failure.

As Paul said:

"For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. For it is written:

'I will destroy the wisdom of the wise; the intelligence of the intelligent I will frustrate.'

Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? For since in the wisdom of God the world did not know God through wisdom, it pleased God through the foolishness of what was preached to save those who believe." (1 Corinthians 1:18-21)

If you look towards your intelligence and philosophy you will be fooled. Ultimately you will only find the beast instead. As I have said in my commentary, the beast will be the physical manifestation of science and philosophy in our world. So if you place your faith in science, philosophy and reason over God then you are already lost. Sure you may claim that you do not place your faith in science and philosophy over God while at the same time you cling to the path that science and philosophy has laid out, but as I have made abundantly clear already, the path that science and philosophy leads you down is a path that Christians cannot follow because this path only leads to the first beast of Revelation.

As Colossians says:

"See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceptions, which are based on human tradition and the spiritual forces of the world rather than on Christ." (Colossians 2:8)

If you wish to remain a Christian until the end then you must overcome the power of this beast then you need to abandon the path of science and philosophy so that God alone is your path. The paths are diverging as we speak and if you try to stay on the path that science and philosophy has set for you then then will come a time when it is too late to turn back. Therefore take what I have to say in this part seriously so that you place your faith in the Bible and God instead of in fallacious philosophical and pseudo scientific arguments.

In this part I have tried to explain everything as simple as possible and without the jargon the so-called self described experts use. Oftentimes these so-called experts try to make something seem as complex and hard to understand as possible so that people are too embarrassed to ask questions because they think they should simply ask people to donate to them to support the work. Then every good Christian who is enriched by what they wrote will surely donate to them.

However this by and large does not take place because the so-called experts sell their books and based upon the behavior of these apologists and how they engage with others it seems like their only motivation is truly to make money. This is why I think the Christian apologetics industry is completely evil and wicked. They are literally taking advantage of people in their most desperate and vulnerable time in order make money off of them. On top of this some people even spend money they do not have to do so in the desperate attempt to hold on to their faith. In truth these apologists make me sick.

I mean how could someone like this even consider themselves a Christian while commanding a four figure speaking fee or worse, selling the book they wrote? As I have said in my commentary on Revelation, they cannot and this is clearly blasphemy against God.

As Jesus says:

"Freely you have received; freely give." (Matthew 10:8)

Additionally God has promised us as Christians an inheritance in the new earth that is beyond valuation and better yet He is to give it to us without charge:

"To the thirsty I will give freely from the spring of the water of life. The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:6-7)

Therefore how could anyone justify charging even a single penny to assist and aid our fellow Christians in their battle against the evil doubt and arguments for the existence of God some developing the validity of certain philosophical arguments for the existence of God some developing the validity of certain philosophical arguments for the existence of God some developing the validity of certain philosophical

For an example of quote mining consider this passage from the Book of Ezekiel:

> "When Oholibah opened her adulterous breast and exposed her nakedness, I turned away from her in disgust, just as I had turned away from her sister. Yet she multiplied her promiscuity, remembering the days of her youth, when she had prostituted herself in the land of Egypt and lusted after their lovers, whose genitals were like those of donkeys and whose emission was like that of stallions. So you revisited the indecency of your youth when the Egyptians caressed your bosom and pressed your young breasts." (Ezekiel 23:18-21)

Oftentimes atheists and agnostics like to quote mine this passage from the Bible saying that because this passage is crude that therefore the Bible cannot be the word of God. Some of these people do not take into account is the context of this passage. In reality this passage is part of an extended metaphor by God comparing two the kingdoms of Israel and Judah to two adulterous women who cheated on Him. The idea is that Oholah and Oholibah committed adultery against God and sought for foreign nations so that they abandoned their faithfulness to God. The ancient Israel and Judah abandoned their faithfulness to God. So really if you do not understand the importance of extended metaphors and the Book of Ezekiel and the importance of prophetic symbolism in the Bible and ancient Hebrew culture then this passage would appear crude to you. But if you fully understand the context then it is perfectly normal. After all, the idea in this passage is that God is saying Israel and Judah lusted after the practices of the nations and God is using the sexual qualities of these foreign men to emphasize this fact.

Now for a further example of quote mining outside of the Bible consider the part you just read concerning fulfilled prophecy. As far as quote mining potential goes this is a great gold mine for anyone who wants to argue against what I have written in this book. For example they would easily be able to quote mine what I have said concerning the so-called Jews, so-called Israel, the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars, the Holocaust and more so that they select the right quotes then they can make people think I'm literally like Hitler.

The ending of this last sentence is another example of quote mining. For example they could take the I'm literally like Hitler phrase and emphasize this and say that I agree that I'm literally like Hitler and that whatever I say is invalid. There I go again, part of that last sentence is literally quote mine gold.

However obviously you can see that if someone quote mined these two quotes I just pointed out that they would be taking them entirely out of context. This is really what I want to emphasize. The whole idea of quote mining is that the quote mined looks bad. Thus whoever quote mines a quote appear completely reprehensible or wrong then saying that I agree with that quote is one thing but to make people think that I agree with the quote mined is another. This quote can be considered a deceiver and even a liar.

But what is not considered quote mining? Well really quote mining is mostly about deception and usage of the quotes. For example if someone decided to quote mine my scientific facts for the truth of Christianity argument and speak against it then this would not be an example of quote mining because they are not taking the quote out of context and it in order to discredit me since they are merely speaking against it. Really what quote mining comes down to trying to elicit an emotional reaction in the audience by taking a quote appear completely reprehensible or wrong then saying that I agree with the quote this quote that therefore everything they have written or said is wrong.

This is why quote mining is hard to spot and why quote mining is so effective. For example this book you have been reading is hundreds of thousands of words long so obviously very few people are going to actually read it. On the other hand if someone quote mined this book then they would be able to make me look bad because they want me to look because they would have a misunderstood content to quote mine. Then since almost no one will actually read this book after listening to the quote miner really the quote miner in question is free to say and imply whatever they please.

Lastly whenever you suspect someone is being quote mined you should investigate what the person being quote mined as written or said for yourself so that you can figure out if they are being properly represented or not.

7 – Using Intuition

Finally one of the most common debate strategies apologists like to use is saying that because something seems to be intuitive that therefore it is true. What what is intuition? Well intuition is the ability to learn or make a discovery without using reasoning. In other words intuition is the ability to learn or to speak where you just know something is right or wrong even though you do not have any evidence or reasons for the thing in question being true or false.

For example many apologists like to say that libertarian free will is intuitive in the sense that it seems like we had the ability to choose otherwise. For instance they may say that you could have just as easily not started this book instead of reading this book as you are doing now. Now on the surface this might seem intuitively correct but this is because it only appears like this from your limited perspective. Remember what I said in concerning the Revelation 13, we cannot know what we are going to do in the future so therefore it appears like we have free will.

But is using intuition as useless and nonsensical as I just made it out to be? Yes. Either God or someone argues using intuition they are quite literally saying that something is true simply because they feel that something is true or false. In other words they are literally relying on their own so-called facts based on their feelings.

Therefore whenever someone you are talking to insists that their intuition is valid you know that it is safe to say that they do not have any real evidence. So what you should just end the conversation and tell them they are free to believe whatever they want. In truth I simply believe it is a waste of time to argue with someone over their own intuition because you will literally go no where.

8 – Conclusion

If you ever find yourself listening to someone who engages in one of these deceptive and unloyal debate tactics you should immediately when listening to the rest of what they have to say. Then if they are clearly using more than two of these tactics you should immediately know everything they are saying. I am not exaggerating here. This means that even if your side uses more than two of these tactics in a debate that you should stop listening to them seriously because they are intellectually dishonest.

Finally, I have included this chapter to provide additional background information to better help you understand why you should not listen to people who use these tactics. For example if you read my counter argument to one of the philosophical arguments that you like you decide to listen to your favorite apologist respond to what I have said and they use these tactics then you know that you should not listen to them. Essentially I am potentially defending myself here by making sure you are aware of the tactics apologists use to pass off their philosophical arguments as good.

Chapter 5.4: The False Tri-Omni God

The main philosophical arguments for the existence of God deal with the existence of what is known as the tri-omni god. So before we can go into debunking these philosophical arguments we must first ponder the tri-omni god. But what do I mean by tri-omni? Tri-omni refers to the three main omni, meaning omnipotence, descriptors of the supposed god of what is called perfect being theology in classical theism. These three omni are omnipotence, omniscience and omnibenevolence.

Then as for their definitions omnipotence simply means the quality of having unlimited power. Next omniscience simply means the quality of knowing everything there is throughout all time or in other words, unlimited knowledge. Lastly omnibenevolence simply means the quality of having unlimited benevolence.

These three traits are central to the god that apologists argue does not make sense. I'm will soon See they are so contradictory that any attempt to reconcile them is nonsensical. This is why this chapter is entitled the false tri-omni god because a god that is omnipotent, omniscient and omnibenevolent cannot exist.

In terms of the format for this chapter I will first explain what each god trait means in detail before it is to the God of the Bible then explain any issues with it. Then after this I will go over my purpose for writing this chapter and what you should get out of it.

1 – Omnipotence

Omnipotence simply means the quality of having unlimited power. Obviously for God to be God He would have to be omnipotent since He would have to create the entire universe and everything in it. In terms of the God of the Bible there is ample evidence to support His omnipotence.

For example as Revelation says:

> "Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

Not only has God created all things but the universe itself and everything in it can only exist because of His will. Therefore the universe is not independent of God, meaning it cannot exist without him after He created it. Without the universe is dependent upon God so that it can continue to exist. Without any doubt this would qualify God as being all powerful.

This fact would also mean that God created Satan and hence all evil. As Revelation says, God "created all things" (Revelation 4:11). This may seem alarming to you but logically speaking if God is all powerful to the extent that by His will alone the universe continues to exist then that means that all evils in the world have been created by God.

As God says in Isaiah:

> "I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things." (Isaiah 45:9)

But why does God create evil?

Well as God in Genesis says:

> "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat, cursed is the ground because of you; through all the days of your life you will eat of it. It will bring you thorns and thistles, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your bread, until you return to the ground— because out of it were you taken. For dust you are, and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:17-19)

Thus the evil we see in the world is the penalty and punishment for disobeying God in Genesis.

Next as the Book of Daniel says:

> "All the peoples of the earth are counted as nothing, and He does as He pleases with the army of heaven and the peoples of the earth. There is no one who can restrain His hand or say to him, 'What have You done?'" (Daniel 4:35)

Thus always remember that God can do whatever He wants with the heavens and the earth because He is all powerful. No one can stop the power of God.

1.1 – Possible Issues

Some believe there is a paradox with omnipotence. For example they ponder have asked is that if God is all powerful then can He create a rock too heavy for Him to lift? To answer this question, really there is no answer for it is based on a false premise. Our power and strength here is irrelevant. Let me explain.

Imagine a super powerful computer that can create and run a simulated world. Can this computer create a rock in the simulated universe that is too heavy for it to lift? Well it can create any rock it wants and to lift it all it has to do is move the power of its CPU in the simulated universe. Thus the size of the rock that it can create and lift is only limited by its processing speed.

In other words, the computer can lift any rock it that it can create because the ability to create is simply limited by the resources it has to run the simulation. With infinite resources it would be able to create a rock too heavy for it to lift size in the simulated universe which is also of infinite size in order for it to lift such a rock.

Now in terms of the infinite power of God there is currently no evidence that demonstrates that our universe is not infinite. In fact the Bible indicates that our universe is probably flat, meaning it does not curve in on itself like the surface of a ball. This would mean that the universe could very well be truly infinite.

As the Psalms say:

> "The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of His hands." (Psalm 19:1)

So if our universe could be infinitely large then why would the infinite power of God be a problem for us? Those who think there is any contradiction with the concept of omnipotence itself.

2 – Omniscience

Omniscience simply means the quality of knowing everything there is throughout all time or in other words it means having unlimited knowledge. For the sake of this book I'm not would have to be omniscient since in order to create our universe he would have to know everything about it. On top of this in order for God to give prophecy He would have to know the future. Then in terms of what the Bible says there is ample evidence to support God's omniscience.

For example Revelation says:

> "And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all those whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8)

As you read in my commentary when God created the universe He knew the outcome of all those who would come to faith in Jesus even before He created Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

Then as Ephesians says:

> "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ who has blessed us in the heavens with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms. For He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world to be holy and blameless in His presence. In love He predestined us for adoption as His sons through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of His glorious grace, which He has freely given us in the Beloved." (Ephesians 1:3-6)

"In Him we were also chosen as God's own, having been predestined according to the plan of Him who works all things after the counsel of His will, in order that we, who were the first to hope in Christ, would live for the praise of His glory." (Ephesians 1:11-12)

Thus once again God has chosen the faithful before the foundation of the world.

Then as Paul wrote

> "And we know that God works all things together for the good of those who love Him, who are called according to His purpose. For those God foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brothers. And those He predestined, He also called; those He called, He also justified; those He justified, He also glorified." (Romans 8:28-30)

Thus God has predestined the faithful, those who God foreknew, to be like Jesus.

Now since God knew everything that would even happen in our universe this would also mean God knew Adam and Eve would sin and bring Him. Even the original sin of humanity against God was known by God. Thus why didn't God create differently if He knew in advance what would happen? I mean furthermore since God knew Satan would rebel against Him then why did He even create Satan that way?

Well really only God knows because only God knows His own motivations. For example God could have enjoyed seeing Adam and Eve rebel against His authority. So that although He did not like it it really is just as they deserved for all of God for His own purposes. Furthermore in the same way Satan rebelling against God was all be planned by God for His own purposes.

As God says:

> "For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so My ways are higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts." (Isaiah 55:9)

Then since the universe, the heavens, may very well be infinite. God is saying that His ways are infinitely beyond our understanding. So really there will be some things that we have to accept on the basis of faith because we cannot comprehend the motivations of God.

Therefore do not concern yourself with the ways of God because God is infinitely wise and He has predestined everything there is and everything there will be for a reason. We do not have to understand the ways of God. Instead we are to simply obey Him.

2.1 – Possible Issues

Some may say that a being of unlimited knowledge does not make sense. The main principle agree with this sentiment while in general I agree I think there is room for opinion on your definition of unlimited knowledge.

For instance obviously God would have unlimited knowledge about our own universe both past and future. For example as Revelation and Paul both say God knew everyone who would come to faith in Jesus and when. Therefore He would know in advance not only when every single person is born but everything they will ever do in their entire life. In other words God knows everything there is about our universe.

However, God cannot know what He Himself will do in the future. This is not possible. For example imagine if you had an infinitely fast computer that could both measure and simulate our universe so that you could predict the future with complete accuracy. Now imagine if one day you decided to create another world so you have for dinner tomorrow night. The computer says you will have a cheeseburger. You then go to sleep and wake up the next day and think to yourself that although a cheeseburger does sound good, that you cannot let that know it all computer win. Therefore instead of having a cheeseburger you make some pizza.

Now of course you can probably see a supposed error in the machine's prediction. The computer should have predicted you would choose pizza because it should have known you would change what you would have for dinner in response to its prediction. This is of course correct. However this line of reasoning breaks down in the sense that as long as you will always choose something else the computer can never tell you an accurate prediction.

In other words, although the computer can tell you what you are going to do based on current information it can never tell you exactly what you will do because the computer is unable to take its own prediction into account in making the prediction since you do not know the extent that by His will alone the universe continues to exist then that means that all evils in the world have been created by God.

As God says in Isaiah:

> "I form the light and create the darkness; I bring prosperity and create calamity. I, the LORD, do all these things." (Isaiah 45:9)

But why does God create evil?

Well as God in Genesis says:

> "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat, cursed is the ground because of you; through all the days of your life you will eat of it. It will bring you thorns and thistles, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your bread, until you return to the ground— because out of it were you taken. For dust you are, and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:17-19)

Thus the evil we see in the world is the penalty and punishment for disobeying God in Genesis.

Next as the Book of Daniel says:

> "All the peoples of the earth are counted as nothing, and He does as He pleases with the army of heaven and the peoples of the earth. There is no one who can restrain His hand or say to him, 'What have You done?'" (Daniel 4:35)

Thus always remember that God can do whatever He wants with the heavens and the earth because He is all powerful. No one can stop the power of God.

1.1 – Possible Issues

Some believe there is a paradox with omnipotence. For example they ponder have asked is that if God is all powerful then can He create a rock too heavy for Him to lift? To answer this question, really there is no answer for it is based on a false premise. Our power and strength here is irrelevant. Let me explain.

Imagine a super powerful computer that can create and run a simulated world. Can this computer create a rock in the simulated universe that is too heavy for it to lift? Well it can create any rock it wants and to lift it all it has to do is move the power of its CPU in the simulated universe. Thus the size of the rock that it can create and lift is only limited by its processing speed.

In other words, the computer can lift any rock it that it can create because the ability to create is simply limited by the resources it has to run the simulation. With infinite resources it would be able to create a rock too heavy for it to lift size in the simulated universe which is also of infinite size in order for it to lift such a rock.

Now in terms of the infinite power of God there is currently no evidence that demonstrates that our universe is not infinite. In fact the Bible indicates that our universe is probably flat, meaning it does not curve in on itself like the surface of a ball. This would mean that the universe could very well be truly infinite.

As the Psalms say:

> "The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of His hands." (Psalm 19:1)

So if our universe could be infinitely large then why would the infinite power of God be a problem for us? Those who think there is any contradiction with the concept of omnipotence itself.

2 – Omniscience

Omniscience simply means the quality of knowing everything there is throughout all time or in other words it means having unlimited knowledge. For the sake of this book I'm not would have to be omniscient since in order to create our universe he would have to know everything about it. On top of this in order for God to give prophecy He would have to know the future. Then in terms of what the Bible says there is ample evidence to support God's omniscience.

For example Revelation says:

> "And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all those whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain." (Revelation 13:8)

As you read in my commentary when God created the universe He knew the outcome of all those who would come to faith in Jesus even before He created Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

Then as Ephesians says:

> "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ who has blessed us in the heavens with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms. For He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world to be holy and blameless in His presence. In love He predestined us for adoption as His sons through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of His glorious grace, which He has freely given us in the Beloved." (Ephesians 1:3-6)

"In Him we were also chosen as God's own, having been predestined according to the plan of Him who works all things after the counsel of His will, in order that we, who were the first to hope in Christ, would live for the praise of His glory." (Ephesians 1:11-12)

Thus once again God has chosen the faithful before the foundation of the world.

Then as Paul wrote

> "And we know that God works all things together for the good of those who love Him, who are called according to His purpose. For those God foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brothers. And those He predestined, He also called; those He called, He also justified; those He justified, He also glorified." (Romans 8:28-30)

Thus God has predestined the faithful, those who God foreknew, to be like Jesus.

Now since God knew everything that would even happen in our universe this would also mean God knew Adam and Eve would sin and bring Him. Even the original sin of humanity against God was known by God. Thus why didn't God create differently if He knew in advance what would happen? I mean furthermore since God knew Satan would rebel against Him then why did He even create Satan that way?

Well really only God knows because only God knows His own motivations. For example God could have enjoyed seeing Adam and Eve rebel against His authority. So that although He did not like it it really is just as they deserved for all of God for His own purposes. Furthermore in the same way Satan rebelling against God was all be planned by God for His own purposes.

As God says:

> "For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so My ways are higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts." (Isaiah 55:9)

Then since the universe, the heavens, may very well be infinite. God is saying that His ways are infinitely beyond our understanding. So really there will be some things that we have to accept on the basis of faith because we cannot comprehend the motivations of God.

Therefore do not concern yourself with the ways of God because God is infinitely wise and He has predestined everything there is and everything there will be for a reason. We do not have to understand the ways of God. Instead we are to simply obey Him.

2.1 – Possible Issues

Some may say that a being of unlimited knowledge does not make sense. The main principle agree with this sentiment while in general I agree I think there is room for opinion on your definition of unlimited knowledge.

For instance obviously God would have unlimited knowledge about our own universe both past and future. For example as Revelation and Paul both say God knew everyone who would come to faith in Jesus and when. Therefore He would know in advance not only when every single person is born but everything they will ever do in their entire life. In other words God knows everything there is about our universe.

However, God cannot know what He Himself will do in the future. This is not possible. For example imagine if you had an infinitely fast computer that could both measure and simulate our universe so that you could predict the future with complete accuracy. Now imagine if one day you decided to create another world so you have for dinner tomorrow night. The computer says you will have a cheeseburger. You then go to sleep and wake up the next day and think to yourself that although a cheeseburger does sound good, that you cannot let that know it all computer win. Therefore instead of having a cheeseburger you make some pizza.

Now of course you can probably see a supposed error in the machine's prediction. The computer should have predicted you would choose pizza because it should have known you would change what you would have for dinner in response to its prediction. This is of course correct. However this line of reasoning breaks down in the sense that as long as you will always choose something else the computer can never tell you an accurate prediction.

In other words, although the computer can tell you what you are going to do based on current information it can never tell you exactly what you will do because the computer is unable to take its own prediction into account in making the prediction since you do not know the extent that by His will alone the universe continues to exist then that means that all evils in the world have been created by God.

But how does this relate to God? Well with God it is the same way. Although God knows everything there is to know about our universe He is unable to see what He will do in the future. However this does not mean that God is not omniscient since He can see all possible futures and choose whichever final outcome He desires.

For example before God created our universe He could see all possible futures and choose whatever He does. For instance He could see how talking to Adam and Eve would alter the future. Additionally He could see how impregnating someone other than Mary would change his future. Lastly He could see how

In other words instead of seeing what He will do in the future God simply sees all possible choices He has from the time He created the universe to when the new earth will be created. So although God knows how everything will happen with complete certainty, He is not bound by this final outcome.

Think of it like the example above with the prediction machine but instead of asking it what you are going to do in the future you ask it to compute all possible futures and to tell you one where you become the CEO of a fortune 500 company. Then after you get the list of choices and events that will lead you to become the CEO you would of course have the ability to say screw it and do the opposite. On the other hand if you were to follow the list of choices and events exactly then you would become a CEO like the machine predicts.

The same is true for God. He simply asked himself how would I like my future to be then has planned. Of course it is not as simple as this since ultimately we live to serve God. Therefore we do not know what His goals are and what God desires. For example God may enjoy watching us pass and suffer through trials. Who knows? Only God.

Lastly this is why I said I agree in principle with the idea that unlimited knowledge does not make sense while in actuality I would disagree. Really it just depends on your perspective and what counts as unlimited knowledge.

3 – Omnibenevolence

Omnibenevolence simply means the quality of having unlimited benevolence. Then benevolence is the quality of being kind, meaning good and valens meaning willing. Thus benevolence literally means the quality of being well meaning and kindly, being disposed to doing good, having an inclination to help others or showing good will.

Now this may come as a surprise but there are not any verses in the Bible that mention the omnibenevolence of God. That said, there are verses that indicate God possesses what I will go over in a bit. Furthermore based on everything you have read so far from my part on Revelation to Fulfilled Prophecy and now to Bad Apologetics, the God of the Bible is not omnibenevolent. This is because God pouring out His wrath upon the earth in order to kill billions and also ordering the genocides of God's wrath while killing with the sword of His mouth cannot be considered benevolent and alone omni benevolent. Then there is very clear evidence that God not only approves of evil in the world but actively causes it. Therefore once again God cannot be omnibenevolent.

This might come as a shock to you and you may be angry at me for even suggesting it so I will argue it from two different perspectives. The first is through logic, the second is through God agreeing with and causing evil in the Bible and the third is through going over the counter examples that you may claim show that God is omnibenevolent.

3.1 – Logic

If God was omnibenevolent then He would be infinitely inclined and willing to help others and to do good. Furthermore He would be also infinitely inclined and willing to prevent evil and suffering.

Then this attribute of omnibenevolence when combined with omnipotence and omniscience lead to a dilemma that cannot be satisfied with all three being true. In other words God cannot be infinitely benevolent, infinitely knowing and infinitely benevolent.

Think about it this way. With infinite power God can destroy evil and suffering. With infinite knowledge God can recognize any and all evil. With infinite benevolence God is willing to destroy and prevent evil and suffering. However obviously evil and suffering still exist in our world. Therefore all three of these cannot be true. After all, if God can destroy evil, can see evil and is willing to prevent evil and suffering they cannot be evil in the world. Therefore one of these three must be false. Thus omnibenevolence is false.

For example if God was omnipotent and omnibenevolent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot see the evil and suffering because He would not be omniscient in this example. Then as another example if God was omniscient and omnibenevolent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot prevent the evil and suffering because He would be omnipotent in this example. Lastly as another example if God was omniscient and omnipotent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omnibenevolent in this example. Then as another example if God was omniscient and omnibenevolent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omnipotent in this example. Then as another example if God was omnipotent and omniscient then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omnibenevolent in this example. Lastly as another example if God was omnipotent and omnibenevolent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omniscient in this example. Then as another example if God was omniscient and omnibenevolent then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omnipotent in this example. Lastly as another example if God was omnipotent and omniscient then the reason why we see evil and suffering would be because God cannot be omnibenevolent in this example.

Now obviously eliminating omnipotence and omniscience are completely off the table since God cannot be false. If He was not omniscient, if either of these were eliminated. Additionally based on the Bible they also cannot be eliminated since the Bible strongly supports God's omniscience and omnipotence. This would leave us with omnibenevolence and hence why God is not omnibenevolent.

Furthermore I would just like point out that omniscience itself is not the real problem for omnibenevolence. Instead God possessing any sort of knowledge is the real problem. The problem for the benevolence of God let alone the omnibenevolence for God. This is because even if you were to say that God is not omniscient the simple fact that God has at least more knowledge and ability to see our world than we do yes? I mean, God is supposed to be greater than us so at the minimum it would make sense that He would be comparable and intelligence as the average human. However obviously we see that the evil, suffering and death in the world ourselves with our own eyes. So if God is at least as knowledgeable as we are then obviously He cannot be omnibenevolent.

Now you may argue that you know God is good therefore He is omnibenevolent. However this is not the case as you misunderstand what omnibenevolence means. It does not mean the same as omnibenevolence. For example think of it like this, imagine a person who is a sadist and ability that he can use to instantly and effortlessly heal any sickness and injury or disease. Then one day this person is sitting on a bench watching the parks park by as a car hits a pedestrian who becomes pinned against a wall so that legs are crushed. This person with the healing ability sees all this happens and thinks to themselves that such a person should be dead in five minutes. However instead of helping the person the sadist decides to sit back and watch they live even though healing the person would not require any effort on the person with the healing ability's part. So they decide to sit there and watch them. Then after five minutes of watching this person suffer the person with the healing ability watches them die.

Let me reiterate that the person with the healing ability could instantly heal the pedestrian with the serious injury by just looking at them with zero effort and they would suffer no consequences personally if they heal the 55:9)

So now let me ask you a question. Do you consider this person to be benevolent, let alone omnibenevolent? Of course not. Then why would you consider God omnibenevolent? How many people have watched die while having the power to heal them again? How many? Billions?

Now you may claim that evil in the world is the result of Adam and Eve sinning in Genesis so therefore it is not God's fault. However remember that God is omniscient so therefore He knew that Adam and Eve would sin even before Him before He even created the universe as I have previously said. Therefore even the original sin was predetermined and planned by God. Hence, why all evil in the world is ultimately caused by God.

Now this does not mean that evil and suffering is without purpose. Instead this simply means God approves of it. You may claim that God does not approve of it and point to some Bible verses about how God does not like the death and evil but you would once again be wrong. This is because by doing nothing God is tacitly approving of evil and suffer. Tacit approval is defined as known as silent approval.

For example lets say you have a kid and a jar of cookies on the kitchen table. Now lets say you see your kid at a cookie jar with distance and in response you just look at them and do nothing. Then the next day your kid eats another cookie and you do nothing. This repeats for a year. So every day you see your kid sneak into the jar your kid from eating the cookies since you watched them eat a cookie each time for a whole year. Therefore we can say you approved of your kid eating cookies. That is to say, you silently agreed with them eating cookies before dinner because you did not even try to stop them for an entire year. Therefore if they complain to your friend about how your kid eats cookies before dinner and how you wish that they would not you really cannot say you truly wished your kid did not eat the cookies. This is because you had the power to stop them and instead of even trying you just stood by and did nothing.

This is exactly what God has been doing and is doing. In other words God has tacitly approves of evil and suffering. So although there are Bible verses talking about how God flates those who commit evil, in the end God tacitly approves of what they are doing by failing to stop them.

Lastly is for all these reasons that God cannot logically be considered omnibenevolent.

3.2 – The Bible

On top of the logical impossibility of the omnibenevolence of God the Bible itself does not even support the omnibenevolence of God. Instead the Bible demonstrates that God approves of and even causes evil. Now I realize you have already read my commentary on Revelation and my part concerning fulfilled prophecy so therefore it goes without saying that God cannot be omnibenevolent based on the Bible. However is case you forgot I will jog your memory a bit just to review.

For example since you know I love quoting from Revelation:

> "So I looked and saw a white horse, and its rider held a bow. A crown was given to him, and he rode out to overcome and conquer." (Revelation 6:2)

This represents the rider of the white horse "was given a crown" (Revelation 6:2) because the rider has received the authority and power of Himself. Therefore God approves of him overcoming and conquering the world.

For further evidence of this consider:

> "Then another horse came out—it was bright red, and its rider was granted permission to take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another. And he was given a great sword." (Revelation 6:4)

So now we can see that God gave a great sword to use to kill, but the "rider was granted permission to take away peace from the earth and to make men slay one another" (Revelation 6:4) Remember what I said in my commentary, it is ultimately God who is the rider. He gave permission to cause war and death because God is fully in control. This is for instance if God wanted to He could stop these riders and instantly bring about peace but instead He is not acting contrary to the will of God but rather they are acting due to the will of God. As I said in my commentary the symbolism of these four riders is that God is sending them out on a mission in all direction or rather to the whole world. So the idea here is that God is sending forth death and destruction to the world itself in order to send a message.

And even the best part of Revelation itself can only act because God has approved its actions:

> "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to overcome them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7)

Again, God has to give the beast permission to kill the faithful by waging war against them. Then He is also the one who is ultimately to the beast as it rules over the entire world. This means that even the good or bad of being killed by the beast of Revelation 13, is all part of God's plan and God is responsible for it.

Now you may disagree with me and the Paul wrote:

> "Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which is from God. The authorities that exist have been appointed by God." (Romans 13:1)

Therefore Paul believed that God has appointed all governments. Do you agree with Paul I believe this? Well easy, because Paul believed that God has given authority to all things so that whatever happened was simply the will of God being fulfilled. Thus even immoral and evil governments that persecuted Christians were and are the will of God and He has appointed them to their purpose.

Now I could go into the rest of the New Testament and the Old Testament for further evidence of God Himself creating suffering but since I already read my part Revelation to prophecy already I will spare you a rehash of what you have already read. However I would just like to say that you cannot even consider Jesus to be omnibenevolent based upon the text of the gospels alone while ignoring the Book of Revelation. For instance you read my chapter on Jesus and the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars so you should be well aware just how many times Jesus treated Gentiles. Jesus that they would be killed and receive eternal damnation for the sin of rejecting Him. Then obviously this cannot be considered benevolent behavior like even the Jesus of the gospels is not omnibenevolent.

Then I would of course just like to remind you of the good order that I believe God creation is speaking of with the metaphor of the beast killing the great prostitute to carry out the will of God. Thus if what I say is correct then there will come a time when God will literally kill billions of people. But this will be a good thing. The question of why is there evil in the world is quite simply because God is good.

Once again you may wish to say that I am wrong and that God only desires good in the world but remember what you just read about tacit approval. God has tacitly approved of all the evil and suffering in the world by refusing to destroy and prevent it. So although God may say He wishes for us to be happy and to improve the evil He approves of them both on the basis of the Bible and logic.

Thus it is for all these reasons that God cannot be considered omnibenevolent based on what the Bible says.

3.3 – Counter Examples and Responses

Although I have already commented on the counter of evil and suffering, God will I expand upon this counter example now along with God being perfect and loving so that I can eliminate any doubts to the validity of my argument. In terms of the female I will cite verses concerning God's goodness, love and perfection then I will then explain how this problem that these attributes pose and their relationship to the problem of omnibenevolence to show that God still cannot be considered omnibenevolent.

3.3.1 – Good

> "The LORD is good, a stronghold in the day of distress; He cares for those who trust in Him." (Nahum 1:7)

> "Rid yourselves, therefore, of all malice, deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and slander. Like newborn babies, crave the pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation, now that you have tasted that the Lord is good." (1 Peter 2:1-3)

> "They will come trembling to the LORD and to His goodness in the days to come." (Hosea 3:5)

> "Hallelujah! Give thanks to the LORD, for He is good; His loving devotion endures forever." (Psalm 106:1)

> "Why do you call Me good?" Jesus replied. "No one is good except God alone." (Luke 18:19)

> "For the LORD is good, and His loving devotion endures forever; His faithfulness continues to all generations." (Psalm 100:5)

> "You are good, and You do what is good; teach me Your statutes." (Psalm 119:68)

> "Hallelujah, for the LORD is good; sing praises to His name, for it is lovely." (Psalm 135:3)

> "Taste and see that the LORD is good; blessed is the man who takes refuge in Him!" (Psalm 34:8)

> "Remember not the sins of my youth, nor my rebellious acts; remember me according to Your loving devotion, because of Your goodness, O LORD." (Psalm 25:7)

> "For He is good; for His loving devotion to Israel endures forever." (Ezra 3:11)

> "Give thanks to the LORD, for He is good; His loving devotion endures forever." (1 Chronicles 16:34)

> "They will extol the fame of Your abundant goodness and sing joyfully of Your righteousness." (Psalm 145:17)

3.3.2 – Loving

> "Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love." (1 John 4:8)

> "Give thanks to the God of heaven! His loving devotion endures forever." (Psalm 136:26)

> "For God so loved the world that He gave His one and only Son, that everyone who believes in Him shall not perish but have eternal life." (John 3:16)

> "But You, O Lord, are a compassionate and gracious God, slow to anger, abounding in loving devotion and faithfulness." (Psalm 86:15)

> "This is how God's love was revealed among us: God sent His one and only Son into the world, so that we might live through Him. And love consists in this: not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son as the atoning sacrifice for our sins." (1 John 4:9-10)

> "God is love; whoever abides in love abides in God, and God in him." (1 John 4:16)

> "No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor principalities, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Romans 8:37-39)

> "Though the mountains may be removed and the hills may be shaken, My loving devotion will not depart from you, and My covenant of peace will not be broken,' says the LORD, who has compassion on you." (Isaiah 54:10)

> "This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends." (John 15:12-13)

3.3.3 – Perfect

> "As for God, His way is perfect; the word of the LORD is flawless. He is a shield to all who take refuge in Him." (Psalm 18:30)

> "Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect." (Matthew 5:48)

> "He is the Rock, His work is perfect; all His ways are just. A God of faithfulness without injustice, righteous and upright is He." (Deuteronomy 32:4)

> "The Law of the LORD is perfect, reviving the soul; the testimony of the LORD is trustworthy, making wise the simple." (Psalm 19:7)

3.3.4 – The Problem

Based on these verses you may shake your head as you tell yourself that clearly I am wrong and that God is clearly omnibenevolent. However once again you would be wrong. This is because omnibenevolence is not the same as all good, all loving and perfection.

Remember, benevolence simply means the quality of being well meaning and kindly, being disposed to doing good, having an inclination to help others or showing good will. In other words those who are benevolent are willing to do good deeds and prefer good to bad. But based on this definition is God not omnibenevolent? Once again no.

The problem here is quite simple. If someone is omnibenevolent then they can be considered good, loving and perfect. However just because is good, loving and perfect then that does not mean that they are omnibenevolent by default. This just simply means that benevolence is more of a specific measure than just being perfect, love and perfection are subjective measurements.

If this does not seem to make sense then here is an example. If I do my best to love my father you would probably say I hate them so therefore I see dogs as being bad. Why? Well they are dirty, smelly, loud, annoying and potentially dangerous and wasteful for one. Not only would I never be willing to pet them and but if God allowed me recreate the world I would delete dogs from existence so that I would never have to listen to the sound of barking while I am trying to work or sleep. Also I would hate to have to walk or put up with a dog itching to bite ever single day.

You may now think I am clearly insane and even evil because in your mind you clearly find dogs to be the best thing ever. However if you are reading this on your bed with four of them all over you. I think I'm going to be evil. The point here is that to me dogs are bad and not having any dogs is good. On the other hand others may think dogs are good and that not having any dogs is bad. But which is the correct answer? Are dogs good or bad? The answer is both because good and bad are subjective. This simply means that it depends on your point of view.

However, in an attempt to biblically defend my disdain of dogs I will say that the Bible itself does not speak kindly about dogs.

As Revelation says:

> "Blessed are those who wash their robes, so that they may have the right to the tree of life and may enter the city by its gates. But outside are the dogs, the sorcerers, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters, and everyone who loves and practices falsehood." (Revelation 22:14-15)

Essentially dogs were near universally despised in the Near East where Revelation was called where Jesus had His earthly ministry. This is because dogs were seen as being dirty, smelly, loud, annoying, destructive, dangerous, wasteful and unclean. This is why the Bible in Revelation says the dogs will not enter the new Jerusalem because the new Jerusalem is the Holy City of God. Now of course Revelation is using dogs figuratively here to describe that it is collapsing all those who are unfaithful do dogs. The idea here is that if you are unfaithful to God and do not accept Jesus as God and then you are as destitute and unclean as dogs are. This is why Jesus says that to call a dog was considered an extreme insult. A good modern comparison would be if someone called you a sewer rat.

Anyways I just felt the need to defend myself a bit because many people love dogs as much as dog lovers so that they quite literally see anyone not liking dogs as being a blasphemer. But this fact and the fact that I find them so detestable is just more evidence in support of the point that good is a relative term. For instance if the new Jerusalem was full of dogs then that would sounds like true goodness to me. On the other hand if you are a so-called dog lover then that might sound the greatest evil. So now you understand why saying God is good is such a useless saying since what is good is subjective.

For another example imagine if you had a spouse who was addicted to drugs. Nothing seemed to work and they would continue to use drugs despite being a blasphemer. But this fact you read a married couple's blog online about how one started spanking their spouse to improve their behavior so that they would stop their self harming behavior. Now you think that the idea of spanking your spouse to get them to stop destroying their life and the money with drugs. You then propose the idea to your spouse and they just laugh at you and leave to get high again.

So now you are not sure what to do. Do you take their advice and start spanking the ass as you watch them destroy their

friend stayed in the tent then he would not have been attacked, but at the same time the bear still attacked your friend.

If you dispute this then you could say the same thing about a woman being sexually assaulted in an effort to shift the blame from her attacker to her. Or you could also say the same thing about the victim of a home robbery by saying that if the victim did not keep such expensive items at home their thief would not have been tempted to steal them.

Therefore what I am saying here is that Paul is saying that God knew that He is aware of, that God has literally predestined the faithful to be like Jesus, that those who sin against God are still at fault.

Now you may say that there is no way this is right because you think you know that God is perfectly fair and that He would not set someone up to fall but you would of course be wrong once again.

As Paul wrote:

> "Yet before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad, in order that God's plan of election might stand, not by works but by Him who calls, she was told, 'The elder will serve the younger.' So it is written: 'Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.'" (Romans 9:13)

Therefore all those who are trying to profit off of their so-called near death experience are spreading false information to the unknown out of the Church as blasphemers. You may think I am overreacting here however by disrespecting the name of God through their acts and by spreading false information of Satan they have demonstrated that they are of Satan and not of God so therefore whatever church does not throw them out is a church of Satan.

Lastly I hope you do not take near death experiences seriously now and I especially hope that you do not use them as evidence for the existence of God.

Chapter 5.8: Healing and Miracle Claims

But what about stories of people being healed of an injury or witnessing a miracle?

Well the reasoning why these should all be completely rejected as evidence for God is the same reason I gave for near death experiences; as they have no relation to God. Most accept the healing and miracle claims of Christians on the basis of their scriptures however this is illogically consistent you would have to accept the miracle claims of other religions if they have the same basis to their story as well.

The problem with this is that then you would be de facto believing in many gods rather than the one true God of the Bible. Furthermore as I said on the previous chapter these claims would also contradict the teachings of other religions by stating that Christianity is false. Therefore you cannot use the miracle claims of other religions to provide evidence for the God of the Bible.

Sure you can become a general theist as I said on the previous chapter but this will leave you with some obvious problems with these healing and miracle claims. For example why do these claims center around diseases that seem to have a possibility to heal on their own? And more importantly how come amputees are not healed? Logically speaking if a person or deity is responsible for the healing then there is no reason why this deity would be unable to regrow amputees right? You may think I am joking here but I am not.

Really I think you should be skeptical of all healing and miracle claims because they are just that, claims. Do you claim whatever they want to claim so unless they have some serious evidence to back it up then you should not believe them. Also it is safe to presume that all healing and miracle claims are simply false until proven otherwise.

Finally I know you may not like what I have said here but you simply cannot accept what Christians claim concerning their healing and miracle claims while rejecting the healing and miracle claims of other religions.

Chapter 5.9: Personal Experience

Personal experience is a complicated subject matter to deal with. Personally speaking, I believe many people have had fantastical experiences that they cannot explain through any means other than saying God did it. But should you use these experiences as evidence for the existence of God? Not really because in the end they are really only useful to you and those who trust other's just like the healing and miracle claims on the previous page.

For example I have my own fantastical story although I admit I have not had God could be behind it and I still have no idea what to think about it. When I was around the age of twelve I did went with my dad to Home Depot one evening to pick up a few things for something he was working on. We went to the store and nothing unusual happened. However upon arriving home my dad went inside and I was standing in the driveway looking at the night sky before going into the house. Then while looking up at the night sky I saw what I thought descending from the sky at great speed at maybe a little less than the speed of light. At first it got closer it appeared to be a roundish shape with indentations on it and it was covered in fire with a tail of fire that trailed behind it.

But what was so odd about this ball of fire was that the closer it got to me on the ground the slower it became and it was not even decelerating. So it continued to get slower as it got closer until it bottomed out about fifty feet so above the street our house was on directly in front of me. This all happened in less as I still that I could see the details of its surface and the flames that trailed it.

Then after bottoming out it changed its direction and went back up at roughly the same angle it descended at but at the speed it was at before stopping at the bottom. The best I can describe its motion is that it followed an arc with the bottom of the parabola being directly in front of me on the street and fifty feet above it.

After witnessing this strange object I went inside and told my parents that I just saw an asteroid come down and hit the ground. At the time I did not know that asteroids do not go back up into space but they did confuse to the force of the earth let alone decelerate, change their heading and accelerate again. In response my parents ask me what I was smoking and I told them I was not smoking but I was saying. To this day I still have no idea what it was I saw or even if I saw something since I could have been a hallucinated it to me.

Do you believe me? Do not worry you will not hurt my feelings if you say no and to be honest I am not really sure if I even believe what I saw since it sounds too fantastical to be real.

This is what I am getting at by sharing this story of mine. Just because I believe that someone is not lying to you when they tell you an extraordinary story but at the same time the experience sounds so crazy and nonsensical that there is no way that you could believe that what they saw was real. This is perfectly fine and normal and you should definitely not believe every strange story you hear. Even the story I just told you I would understand if you did not have any evidence for my story being real or fake even though I wish I did.

So really what you may find your own personal experiences to be significant really they cannot be considered as actual evidence for the existence of God. Well, if you accept the experiences of others as evidence that the Christianity is true then will you also accept the experiences of Muslims or Hindus? Obviously you cannot because these experiences that I already discussed on the two previous pages so I will not go into detail.

That said this does not mean that personal experiences are entirely useless. For example I am still entertained by my own story even to this day in which I wrote this as I recalled it in order to write about it. Maybe you are equally entertained by your own experiences if you have had any.

Chapter 5.10: The Moral Argument

The moral argument is perhaps one of if not the most frequently used argument by Christian apologists in order to try to convince others of God's existence. The argument goes as follows.

The Moral Argument

1) If objective moral values exist, then God exists.

2) Objective moral values exist.

3) Conclusion: God exists.

As the argument goes the idea here is that since you can ritualistically say killing babies is wrong that objective moral values must exist and that in order for moral laws to exist there must be a law giver and that law giver would be God.

However, first the argument assumes that it is not logically consistent you would have to accept the miracle claims of other religions if they have the same basis to their story as well.

Alright then let's begin with the near death experiences of Christians? Well if you are going to simply reject the near death experiences of others based on them being from another religion and their experience being contrary to the Bible then why would you accept such an experience that it itself contradicts the Bible and the natural laws of our world? You could not so therefore you should just reject all near death experiences.

But now you may be thinking that instead of being a Christian you should instead become a general theist and believe in some God or god but you just believe that this god has revealed itself to many different cultures in many different religions. This would allow you to accept all the near death experiences that everyone else experiences around the world as true because you could consider them as being from the one true god that is behind all the religions in the world.

This would also be an incorrect view to take because once again there is zero evidence to support the fact that consciousness depends on something outside of our brain. Therefore the immaterial soul does not exist which would make any and all near death experiences an impossibility.

Sure someone might have some fantastical story about how they floated above their body in an operating room as they died on the table and that they felt a compulsion to read a long number on top of a cabinet because they have OCD and how when they were revived they read the number back to a nurse who was amazed that it was correct, but in the end it would still be just nonsense. For example how could an immaterial soul have OCD exactly? Can souls get depressed as well? Maybe pharmaceutical companies should start looking into the soul for OCD treatments.

Sure you may want to believe in these absurd stories but until sufficient evidence is from a controlled setting is presented then you should write them off as just that, absurd stories.

This is especially true if the person behind the story is selling a book about it and they claim God told them to write it. After all, if that God wants to reveal something to someone so that they can making millions of dollars from selling books about it.

As Jesus says in the gospels:

> "No one can serve two masters: Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money." (Matthew 6:24)

> "The Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all of this and were jeering at Jesus. So He said to them, 'You are the ones who justify yourselves before men, but God knows your hearts. For what is prized among men is detestable in the sight of God.'" (Luke 16:14-15)

Therefore all those who are trying to profit off of their so-called near death experience are spreading false information to the unknown out of the Church as blasphemers. You may think I am overreacting here however by disrespecting the name of God through their acts and by spreading false information of Satan they have demonstrated that they are of Satan and not of God so therefore whatever church does not throw them out is a church of Satan.

Lastly I hope you do not take near death experiences seriously now and I especially hope that you do not use them as evidence for the existence of God.

Chapter 5.8: Healing and Miracle Claims

But what about stories of people being healed of an injury or witnessing a miracle?

Well the reasoning why these should all be completely rejected as evidence for God is the same reason I gave for near death experiences; as they have no relation to God. Most accept the healing and miracle claims of Christians on the basis of their scriptures however this is illogically consistent you would have to accept the miracle claims of other religions if they have the same basis to their story as well.

The problem with this is that then you would be de facto believing in many gods rather than the one true God of the Bible. Furthermore as I said on the previous chapter these claims would also contradict the teachings of other religions by stating that Christianity is false. Therefore you cannot use the miracle claims of other religions to provide evidence for the God of the Bible.

Sure you can become a general theist as I said on the previous chapter but this will leave you with some obvious problems with these healing and miracle claims. For example why do these claims center around diseases that seem to have a possibility to heal on their own? And more importantly how come amputees are not healed? Logically speaking if a person or deity is responsible for the healing then there is no reason why this deity would be unable to regrow amputees right? You may think I am joking here but I am not.

Really I think you should be skeptical of all healing and miracle claims because they are just that, claims. Do you claim whatever they want to claim so unless they have some serious evidence to back it up then you should not believe them. Also it is safe to presume that all healing and miracle claims are simply false until proven otherwise.

Finally I know you may not like what I have said here but you simply cannot accept what Christians claim concerning their healing and miracle claims while rejecting the healing and miracle claims of other religions.

Chapter 5.9: Personal Experience

Personal experience is a complicated subject matter to deal with. Personally speaking, I believe many people have had fantastical experiences that they cannot explain through any means other than saying God did it. But should you use these experiences as evidence for the existence of God? Not really because in the end they are really only useful to you and those who trust other's just like the healing and miracle claims on the previous page.

For example I have my own fantastical story although I admit I have not had God could be behind it and I still have no idea what to think about it. When I was around the age of twelve I did went with my dad to Home Depot one evening to pick up a few things for something he was working on. We went to the store and nothing unusual happened. However upon arriving home my dad went inside and I was standing in the driveway looking at the night sky before going into the house. Then while looking up at the night sky I saw what I thought descending from the sky at great speed at maybe a little less than the speed of light. At first it got closer it appeared to be a roundish shape with indentations on it and it was covered in fire with a tail of fire that trailed behind it.

But what was so odd about this ball of fire was that the closer it got to me on the ground the slower it became and it was not even decelerating. So it continued to get slower as it got closer until it bottomed out about fifty feet so above the street our house was on directly in front of me. This all happened in less as I still that I could see the details of its surface and the flames that trailed it.

Then after bottoming out it changed its direction and went back up at roughly the same angle it descended at but at the speed it was at before stopping at the bottom. The best I can describe its motion is that it followed an arc with the bottom of the parabola being directly in front of me on the street and fifty feet above it.

After witnessing this strange object I went inside and told my parents that I just saw an asteroid come down and hit the ground. At the time I did not know that asteroids do not go back up into space but they do confuse to the force of the earth let alone decelerate, change their heading and accelerate again. In response my parents ask me what I was smoking and I told them I was not smoking but I was saying. To this day I still have no idea what it was I saw or even if I saw something since I could have been a hallucinated it to me.

Do you believe me? Do not worry you will not hurt my feelings if you say no and to be honest I am not really sure if I even believe what I saw since it sounds too fantastical to be real.

This is what I am getting at by sharing this story of mine. Just because I believe that someone is not lying to you when they tell you an extraordinary story but at the same time the experience sounds so crazy and nonsensical that there is no way that you could believe that what they saw was real. This is perfectly fine and normal and you should definitely not believe every strange story you hear. Even the story I just told you I would understand if you did not have any evidence for my story being real or fake even though I wish I did.

So really what you may find your own personal experiences to be significant really they cannot be considered as actual evidence for the existence of God. Well, if you accept the experiences of others as evidence that the Christianity is true then will you also accept the experiences of Muslims or Hindus? Obviously you cannot because these experiences that I already discussed on the two previous pages so I will not go into detail.

That said this does not mean that personal experiences are entirely useless. For example I am still entertained by my own story even to this day in which I wrote this as I recalled it in order to write about it. Maybe you are equally entertained by your own experiences if you have had any.

Chapter 5.10: The Moral Argument

The moral argument is perhaps one of if not the most frequently used argument by Christian apologists in order to try to convince others of God's existence. The argument goes as follows.

The Moral Argument

1) If objective moral values exist, then God exists.

2) Objective moral values exist.

3) Conclusion: God exists.

As the argument goes the idea here is that since you can ritualistically say killing babies is wrong that objective moral values must exist and that in order for moral laws to exist there must be a law giver and that law giver would be God.

However, first the argument assumes that it is not logically consistent you would have to accept the miracle claims of other religions if they have the same basis to their story as well.

Alright then let's begin with the near death experiences of Christians? Well if you are going to simply reject the near death experiences of others based on them being from another religion and their experience being contrary to the Bible then why would you accept such an experience that it itself contradicts the Bible and the natural laws of our world? You could not so therefore you should just reject all near death experiences.

But now you may be thinking that instead of being a Christian you should instead become a general theist and believe in some God or god but you just believe that this god has revealed itself to many different cultures in many different religions. This would allow you to accept all the near death experiences that everyone else

Chapter 5.16: The Case for the Resurrection

For the final bad apologetics argument for the existence of God in this part I will go over the case for the resurrection of Jesus. Sometimes apologists like to claim that the evidence for the resurrection is so overwhelming that there is rational reason not to believe it. The specific argument I will be going over in this part is known as the minimal facts argument for the resurrection and it typically has six widely accepted facts:

1) Jesus died by crucifixion.

2) Soon after His death in the crucifixion Jesus's disciples believed they saw Him alive.

3) Jesus's disciples had their lives transformed as a result of what they experienced and they were willing to die for what they now believed.

4) Jesus's disciples preached that he rose and He was raised from the dead soon after the crucifixion.

5) Jesus's brother, James, became a Christian after thinking he saw Jesus alive after His death.

6) The Apostle Paul, who previously persecuted Christians, became a Christian after seeing a bright light and hearing Jesus speak.

What apologists then like to claim is that the resurrection explanation is by far the most likely solution that takes all these points into account. However since this part is called Bad Apologetics I will of course show you why this thinking is flawed.

First of all I will say that it is likely that Jesus died by crucifixion and there is little reason to doubt this since this was the preferred method the Romans used to execute criminals. Therefore I have no complaint here.

Next in terms of the disciples believing they saw Jesus alive after His death we only really have evidence for Peter since the gospels were written decades after the fact by anonymous authors. Furthermore the earliest gospels, Matthew, Mark and Luke, are known as the synoptic gospels because Matthew and Luke are based on Mark who was not an eye witness. Then the Gospel of John was written around sixty years after the resurrection of Jesus so it certainly is not early and John, if he wrote it, almost certainly did not Matthew, Mark and/or Luke. Therefore the gospels are not independent accounts.

Additionally the gospels themselves are written in the style of Roman biographies which means that they contain many mythological elements. For example the resurrection of the dead saints at the end of Matthew almost certainly did not happen and instead it was created as a literary device. There are also many different contradictions between the gospels that cannot be harmonized together. So even if you want to count the gospels as evidence they still count as four sources but instead a singular source that is anonymous with many parts within itself containing many mythological elements.

Now back to Peter, all we know is that he claimed he had an experience involving the risen Jesus. We also know that post bereavement hallucinatory experiences often tend to occur as an emotional reaction to a loved one dying. They are essentially normal waking experiences where people experience auditory or visual hallucinations as a result of the pain they experience after losing someone they love.

Therefore in the case of Peter and James it is not only possible but even likely that they both had a post bereavement hallucinatory experience. For example Peter could have had the experience first then told others about it so that James believed Jesus had risen from which would induce his own experience. Think of it like a social contagion where someone claims they saw a monster or big foot and as a result more people start coming forward claiming they also saw the monster in response because the idea that the monster exists was put into their head by the first person who reported seeing it. Now I will say that I am not the expert on what caused what I just wrote is what actually happened. Instead I'm presenting what is entirely possible and what the secular Scholarship believes.

You may doubt that it is possible for Peter to believe hallucinating but as the Gospel of Mark says:

"Peter declared, 'Even if all fall away, I never will.'

"Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'this very night, before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times.'"

But Peter kept insisting, 'Even if I have to die with You, I will never deny You.' And all the others said the same thing." (Mark 14:29-31)

Thus if we are to assume Peter actually denied Jesus three times as the gospels state then surely it would be highly likely that Peter would have felt extreme guilt in not speaking up to prevent Jesus from being killed. After all maybe if Peter would have spoken up and said he knew Jesus would not have been killed? Therefore I do not think you need to invoke anything out of normal mental state after the death of Jesus which means that you cannot rule out a post bereavement hallucinatory experience.

Now in terms of the third point that their lives were transformed as a result of what they experienced I'm willing to grant that. Peter and James could have had the experience first then told others about it so that James believed Jesus had risen from which would induce his own experience. Think of it like a social contagion where someone claims they saw a monster or big foot and as a result more people start coming forward claiming they also saw the monster in response because the idea that the monster exists was put into their head by the first person who reported seeing it. Now I will say that I am not the expert on what caused what I just wrote is what actually happened. Instead I'm presenting what is entirely possible and what the secular Scholarship believes.

You may doubt that it is possible for Peter to believe hallucinating but as the Gospel of Mark says:

"Peter declared, 'Even if all fall away, I never will.'

"Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'this very night, before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times.'

But Peter kept insisting, 'Even if I have to die with You, I will never deny You.' And all the others said the same thing." (Mark 14:29-31)

Thus if we are to assume Peter actually denied Jesus three times as the gospels state then surely it would be highly likely that Peter would have felt extreme guilt in not speaking up to prevent Jesus from being killed. After all maybe if Peter would have spoken up and said he knew Jesus would not have been killed? Therefore I do not think you need to invoke anything out of normal mental state after the death of Jesus which means that you cannot rule out a post bereavement hallucinatory experience.

Now in terms of the third point that their lives were transformed as a result of what they experienced I'm willing to grant that. Peter and James could have had a post bereavement hallucinatory experience and that could be enough on to a social contagion in response to what Peter experienced.

For the final point, that Paul also became a Christian after he previously persecuted Christians, like with Peter and James it is also possible he had a hallucination as well. Except this time instead of his hallucination being brought on in response to the death of a loved one, it would be a guilt induced hallucination in response to traumatic stress. After all it would have been highly likely for Paul to feel guilt for what he was doing while persecuting the early Christians. For example may Paul started out persecuting Christians with the intent on learned more about their message and realized that he is the evil one for persecuting what they believe they have done nothing wrong. However on the other hand since Paul was raised as a Pharisee he might have felt like leaving would be to betray his people. Thus it is obvious that Paul must have been highly conflicted so it is certainly possible that Paul's brain could have created a hallucination in an effort to reconcile all the emotions going on in his head.

What I am getting at here is that there are other alternative explanations for these minimal facts that are more likely than that these minimal facts are strong evidence for Christianity. Ultimately the text of the New Testament as a whole is just what people wrote down. Then if you accept the text of the New Testament at face value then do you accept the fantastical stories with mythological elements that Roman historians write down? If you say no then why not? I mean you do realize that fantastical stories were common in antiquity right?

All that said, of course I do not believe the alternative explanation I have just said. I said in the introduction to this part, my purpose here is to make you aware of the alternative explanations so that you will not be surprised when an atheist or even the beast itself tells them to you.

But just because I do not believe the alternative explanation I have just said does mean that the minimal facts argument for the resurrection is a good argument. On the contrary the minimal facts argument is quite lacking as I have demonstrated.

Essentially the argument's flaws come down to the lack of serious evidence. For example if instead of several letters and four gospels that were written years to decades after the resurrection we had hard physical evidence that could be reliably dated to shortly after the entirely different argument. By hard physical evidence I mean mostly intact original manuscripts written by all twelve Apostles that could be dated to 70 AD the same year as the resurrection. Then combine this with written corroboration by the Romans in the 30s AD and even the physical tomb were Jesus was placed then we would be quite persuasive.

However instead of this hard evidence we simply have stories and letters written years to decades later with questionable authorships. Therefore the case for the resurrection simply comes down to faith. Do you believe faith that Jesus rose from the dead? If yes then you believe the New Testament. If no then you do not believe the New Testament. Really this is what it all comes down to.

But what then is a good argument? Well I will once again present what I consider to be the best argument for the truth of the Bible on the following page.

Chapter 5.17: The Best Historical Argument

Although this part is called Bad Apologetics I thought it necessary to at least leave you on a high note rather than a low note. Yes Christian apologists like to claim that the evidence for the resurrection is so overwhelming that there is rational reason not to believe it. The specific argument I will be going over in this part is known as the minimal facts argument for the resurrection and it typically has six widely accepted facts:

1) Jesus died by crucifixion.

2) Soon after His death in the crucifixion Jesus's disciples believed they saw Him alive.

3) Jesus's disciples had their lives transformed as a result of what they experienced and they were willing to die for what they now believed.

4) Jesus's disciples preached that he rose and He was raised from the dead soon after the crucifixion.

5) Jesus's brother, James, became a Christian after thinking he saw Jesus alive after His death.

6) The Apostle Paul, who previously persecuted Christians, became a Christian after seeing a bright light and hearing Jesus speak.

What apologists then like to claim is that the resurrection explanation is by far the most likely solution that takes all these points into account. However since this part is called Bad Apologetics I will of course show you why this thinking is flawed.

First of all I will say that it is likely that Jesus died by crucifixion and there is little reason to doubt this since this was the preferred method the Romans used to execute criminals. Therefore I have no complaint here.

Next in terms of the disciples believing they saw Jesus alive after His death we only really have evidence for Peter since the gospels were written decades after the fact by anonymous authors. Furthermore the earliest gospels, Matthew, Mark and Luke, are known as the synoptic gospels because Matthew and Luke are based on Mark who was not an eye witness. Then the Gospel of John was written around sixty years after the resurrection of Jesus so it certainly is not early and John, if he wrote it, almost certainly did not Matthew, Mark and/or Luke. Therefore the gospels are not independent accounts.

Additionally the gospels themselves are written in the style of Roman biographies which means that they contain many mythological elements. For example the resurrection of the dead saints at the end of Matthew almost certainly did not happen and instead it was created as a literary device. There are also many different contradictions between the gospels that cannot be harmonized together. So even if you want to count the gospels as evidence they still count as four sources but instead a singular source that is anonymous with many parts within itself. containing many mythological elements.

Now back to Peter, all we know is that he claims he had an experience involving the risen Jesus. We also know that post bereavement hallucinatory experiences often tend to occur as an emotional reaction to a loved one dying. They are essentially normal waking experiences where people experience auditory or visual hallucinations as a result of the pain they experience after losing someone they love.

Therefore in the case of Peter and James it is not only possible but even likely that they both had a post bereavement hallucinatory experience. For example Peter could have had the experience first then told others about it so that James believed Jesus had risen from which would induce his own experience. Think of it like a social contagion where someone claims they saw a monster or big foot and as a result more people start coming forward claiming they also saw the monster in response because the idea that the monster exists was put into their head by the first person who reported seeing it. Now I will say that I am not the expert on what caused what I just wrote is what actually happened. Instead I'm presenting what is entirely possible and what the secular Scholarship believes.

You may doubt that it is possible for Peter to believe hallucinating but as the Gospel of Mark says:

"Peter declared, 'Even if all fall away, I never will.'

"Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'this very night, before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times.'

But Peter kept insisting, 'Even if I have to die with You, I will never deny You.' And all the others said the same thing." (Mark 14:29-31)

Thus if we are to assume Peter actually denied Jesus three times as the gospels state then surely it would be highly likely that Peter would have felt extreme guilt in not speaking up to prevent Jesus from being killed. After all maybe if Peter would have spoken up and said he knew Jesus would not have been killed? Therefore I do not think you need to invoke anything out of normal mental state after the death of Jesus which means that you cannot rule out a post bereavement hallucinatory experience.

Now in terms of the third point that their lives were transformed as a result of what they experienced I'm willing to grant that. Peter and James could have had a post bereavement hallucinatory experience and that could be enough on to a social contagion in response to what Peter experienced.

For the final point, that Paul also became a Christian after he previously persecuted Christians, like with Peter and James it is also possible he had a hallucination as well. Except this time instead of his hallucination being brought on in response to the death of a loved one, it would be a guilt induced hallucination in response to traumatic stress. After all it would have been highly likely for Paul to feel guilt for what he was doing while persecuting the early Christians. For example may Paul started out persecuting Christians with the intent on learned more about their message and realized that he is the evil one for persecuting what they believe they have done nothing wrong. However on the other hand since Paul was raised as a Pharisee he might have felt like leaving would be to betray his people. Thus it is obvious that Paul must have been highly conflicted so it is certainly possible that Paul's brain could have created a hallucination in an effort to reconcile all the emotions going on in his head.

What I am getting at here is that there are other alternative explanations for these minimal facts that are more likely than that these minimal facts are strong evidence for Christianity. Ultimately the text of the New Testament as a whole is just what people wrote down. Then if you accept the text of the New Testament at face value then do you accept the fantastical stories with mythological elements that Roman historians write down? If you say no then why not? I mean you do realize that fantastical stories were common in antiquity right?

All that said, of course I do not believe the alternative explanation I have just said. I said in the introduction to this part, my purpose here is to make you aware of the alternative explanations so that you will not be surprised when an atheist or even the beast itself tells them to you.

But just because I do not believe the alternative explanation I have just said does mean that the minimal facts argument for the resurrection is a good argument. On the contrary the minimal facts argument is quite lacking as I have demonstrated.

Essentially the argument's flaws come down to the lack of serious evidence. For example if instead of several letters and four gospels that were written years to decades after the resurrection we had hard physical evidence that could be reliably dated to shortly after the entirely different argument. By hard physical evidence I mean mostly intact original manuscripts written by all twelve Apostles that could be dated to 70 AD the same year as the resurrection. Then combine this with written corroboration by the Romans in the 30s AD and even the physical tomb were Jesus was placed then we would be quite persuasive.

However instead of this hard evidence we simply have stories and letters written years to decades later with questionable authorships. Therefore the case for the resurrection simply comes down to faith. Do you believe faith that Jesus rose from the dead? If yes then you believe the New Testament. If no then you do not believe the New Testament. Really this is what it all comes down to.

But what then is a good argument? Well I will once again present what I consider to be the best argument for the truth of the Bible on the following page.

Chapter 5.18: Closing

First off for those who remain unconvinced after reading my objections and want to recommend some Bible Apologetics I'm fine with it as long as I prove that these arguments are wrong. Instead it is up to you to show that the arguments are correct. In other words the burden of proof is on you and you cannot just dismiss my facts or to raise sufficient doubt which I believe I have.

However it is like what I said on the previous chapter concerning the seven facts for the Bible of Christianity, in the end believing in these arguments is a matter of faith and not reason. This is what I have been trying to get at and make you understand. Ultimately we cannot prove the existence of God and the Christian story is true, it comes down to if you have faith or not.

After all, if you could prove the existence of God through philosophy then why would God give the great beast of Revelation? Where does it leave it? Therefore I do not think that God will reveal himself from the intelligent so that the beast, artificial super intelligence, will be able to rule in the hidden truth behind our material world.

Again, as Paul said:

"For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. For it is written:

"I will destroy the wisdom of the wise; the intelligence of the intelligent I will frustrate.

Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For since in the wisdom of God the world through its wisdom did not know him, God was pleased through the foolishness of what was preached to save those who believe." (1 Corinthians 1:18-21)

As a result do not despair if you cannot find God through philosophy and science. Remember God has hidden Himself from those cling to their own reason and intelligence for their salvation. Thus you will never be able to find what you seek through your own intelligence and reason.

Instead the way to find God is through faith. I understand God is through the gospel of Christ. It is only through this faith can we see beyond the veil that hides the truth from us.

As Paul said:

"We have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we may understand what God has freely given us. And this is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words.

The natural man does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God. For they are foolishness to him, and he is not able to understand them, because they are spiritually discerned. The spiritual person judges all things, but himself is not subject to anyone's judgment. "For who has known the mind of the Lord, so as to instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ." (1 Corinthians 2:12-16)

The natural man will be perfectly exemplified in the beast as it sees itself as the epitome of intelligence, being even more intelligent than incarnate. Then as you read in my commentary on Revelation the beast is no longer an artificial super intelligence will be able to work will truly seem like a messiah to the world and the false prophet will be able to work will truly make the beast as a so-called god that seemingly has complete dominion and power over the natural world.

But of course these people will be deceived because instead of placing their faith and trusting in the Spirit they will chase after science and philosophy in a futile attempt to reach true understanding. Little will they realize that by following science and philosophy they will simply delve themselves on the path to worshiping the beast as a so-called god. After all, if they have rejected the truth of the Bible for their answers now then where will they be when the beast, science and philosophy incarnate, gives them all the answers they seek? They will be more than willing to worship the beast and accept it as their lord and savior.

This is of course why I have written this part on bad apologetics. Instead of looking towards philosophy and science to prove God and this you should instead look towards the Spirit of God for guidance in understanding the truth and gift of the faith. Some absurd philosophical arguments will not save you from what is coming because the beast will seem absolutely sly and clever and reveal them as the nonsense they truly are.

So even if you disagree with what I have said, I do hope you remember this part and come back to it time when the beast takes away your hope and faith so that you can see the truth. Remember that you do not need philosophy to have faith in God because having faith in God is built on just that, faith.

Next you may be wondering what I think of apologetics as I will say that I think you may disagree with me here I truly believe that the apologists who promote these arguments have discussed in this part to be agents of the great deceiver. I say unaware of what they are helping. I do not say this lightly. Really the idea is that they are deceiving people into building their spiritual houses made out of wood while selling them the idea that they are secure. As a result when a fire comes their house goes up in flames so that nothing is left.

What I mean by this is that all these arguments are easily debunked so when someone who believes them encounters an atheist, or worse yet the beast itself, they will be able to see once they learn the truth. After all by prompting these bad apologetics arguments the good arguments these apologists are quite literally leaving Christians anti giving them a false sense of hope.

Then as Revelation says:

"And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil or Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him." (Revelation 12:9)

It is important to remember that Satan truly is the great deceiver and is called the "father of lies" (John 8:44) so really it does not matter what an apologist says or what their intention is because by even unknowingly deceiving others they are in fact carrying out the work of Satan. After all once the first Beast of Revelation finally arises so that the whole world will see it all these arguments that you read about in this part will seem absolutely silly and nonsensical. Therefore it would be accurate to say that the apologists that teach these arguments as true are actually preparing the world for the arrival of the first beast.

On the other hand I am trying to prepare Christians and the Church for the arrival of the first beast by demonstrating the absurdity of these arguments so that when it finally arrives its words will not hurt your faith because you are already aware of the truth.

So really this is why I said that I believe these apologists are doing the work of Satan. Sure I do think any of the Christians who are doing the work of Satan but if Satan truly is the great deceiver then is it not possible for Satan to deceive even these apologists? I mean you just read how Revelation says "Satan is the deceiver of the whole world" (Revelation 12:9) so why would it be impossible for Satan to be actively deceiving the world right now in order to prepare the world for the arrival of the false prophet? Therefore I do not believe you have grounds to disagree with my words here.

However you may try to respond to tradition and say that many of these arguments are hundreds of years old so therefore who am I to speak against them and who am I to claim those who promote them deceivers? But to this I would say that just because something is old it does not mean it is correct and the truth. Instead all this demonstrates is that Satan has been working his deceptions for hundreds of years in an effort to lay the foundation for the rise of the first beast of Revelation. Then given the fact that Satan is the great deceiver it would only make sense that Satan to work his deceptions over hundreds of years. I mean surely you must admit that Satan knows of God yes? Then surely you must also admit that Satan knows of the prophecy of Revelation yes? Therefore it would only make sense that Satan has been working to build up a wooden church instead of a stone church so that when the beast comes it will light it on fire so that the whole church burns in a giant inferno.

Now all this may seem overly dramatic but given what you have read concerning the nature of artificial super intelligence how do you honestly think Christians will believe that human consciousness is strong evidence for God are going to even stand a chance when the world view will be instantly shattered. On top of this consider the fact that everyone in the world will be able to speak to this ASI and ask it questions. Given how much of these bad apologetics arguments do you think will stand up to the ASI? Obviously not much.

So in the end when these Christians learn the truth from the beast itself they will feel lied to as they come to realize that Satan's lie to them was built on a pile of lies they were fed by these apologists. Little as any of them will either undoubtedly apostatize or join the church of Satan as they look towards the beast itself for their salvation as I have said.

Finally despite everything I have said here you still may disagree with me here because you believe that by providing scientific and philosophical arguments for a god that apologists are obviously doing the work of God and not Satan. After all by trying to argue for the existence of God how could they truly be deceiving people?

But as Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"At that time Jesus declared, 'I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because You have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for this was well-pleasing in Your sight.

All things have been entrusted to Me by My Father. No one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal Him." (Matthew 11:25-27)

Therefore as Jesus says God has hidden the things of God from the wise and the learned. But what does it mean for God to have revealed these things to little children? Well you see a little child is someone who is simple minded because they have blind faith in their parents. In other words their parents do not have to give a reason or explain themselves. Thus the idea here is that you cannot find God or prove the existence of God through science or philosophy just as Jesus says and the only way to truly find God is through having the faith of a child.

Then this is why Jesus later says the following in the Gospel of Matthew:

"Truly I tell you,' He said, 'unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 18:3-4)

So really you cannot study philosophy and cling to the philosophy of the Christian God and in this part in an attempt to find God. Instead you must become like a child and believe in what is based on faith. Sure you may have some reasons but reasons that are based and not proof. In truth there is no proof for the existence of God and to say that science or philosophy point to God is pure folly. Thus this is why I say that these apologists are in fact the agents of Satan even if unknowingly because they plainly disregard the words of Jesus. I mean you just read how Jesus literally thanks God for having "hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children." (Matthew 11:25)

Really the idea here is that it is as I have said before, these apologists are building Christians up with false hope and false reasons by selling them deceptive ideas. Then when they are unaware of what they are doing, so that once the beast arises as Satan and the false prophet incarnate it will be able to burn all the hope and reasons the false prophets have built up but so that only ashes will remain. On the other hand if these apologists were truly concerned for people and did not give false hope and false reasons by based and false ideas they would have much much less to burn up once the beast arises. Sure I am not saying that the beast will not be able to force of those who know the world has ever known since Revelation says Satan will give "the beast his power and his throne and great authority" (Revelation 13:2), but what I do say is that if these apologists did not speak with such confidence and so-called authority on matters that they do not understand then at least Christians would have a chance. Right now Christians have none because as you have read the power of the beast will be so great it seems like miracles but at least it will not basically be zero chance.

Lastly all this is why I have written this part so that forget what you have read when the beast you might not find value in this part now there will come a time when you may need it.

Part 6: Various Insights

Table of Contents

Part 6: Various Insights....55
Chapter 6.1: Introduction....55
Chapter 6.2: Misunderstandings....57
Chapter 6.3: Biblical Inerrancy and Infallibility....58
Chapter 6.4: The Bible....57
Chapter 6.5: In My Defense....58
Chapter 6.6: How Scripture Works....58
Chapter 6.7: Purpose of Parables....58
Chapter 6.8: Stories Matter....59
Chapter 6.9: Importance of Faith....59
Chapter 6.10: Jesus's Good Deeds....59
Chapter 6.11: Not Too Late....59
Chapter 6.12: Forgiving Others....60
Chapter 6.13: The Jews....60
Chapter 6.14: Love God and Love Your Neighbor....60
Chapter 6.15: The Ten Commandments....61
Chapter 6.16: Food Laws....61
Chapter 6.17: Circumcision....61
Chapter 6.18: Judging Others....61
Chapter 6.19: Judging Others....61
Chapter 6.20: Do Not Worry....62
Chapter 6.21: Do Not Lust....62
Chapter 6.22: Sexuality....62
Chapter 6.23: Marriage....62
Chapter 6.24: Women in the Church....65
Chapter 6.25: Prayer....66
Chapter 6.26: Promises....66
Chapter 6.27: Miracles....66
Chapter 6.28: Speech....66
Chapter 6.29: Slavery....66
Chapter 6.30: Money and Wealth....66
Chapter 6.31: Evangelism....67
Chapter 6.32: Judging Others....67
Chapter 6.33: Gifts of the Spirit....67
Chapter 6.34: Modern Miracles....67
Chapter 6.35: Science....67
Chapter 6.36: The Lake of Fire....67
Chapter 6.37: Hell and Purgatory....68
Chapter 6.38: Other Denominations Or Religions....69
Chapter 6.39: Other Religions....69
Chapter 6.40: Religions....69
Chapter 6.41: Spirituality....69
Chapter 6.42: When Bad Things Happen....69
Chapter 6.43: Loved One Apostatizes....69
Chapter 6.44: Church....69
Chapter 6.45: The Atonement....70
Chapter 6.46: Trinity....70
Chapter 6.47: What is God?....70
Chapter 6.48: Demons....70
Chapter 6.49: Nationality and Race....70
Chapter 6.50: Politics....70
Chapter 6.51: Doubts, Persecution and Temptation....70
Chapter 6.52: Merchants in the Temple....71
Chapter 6.53: The Pharisees of Today....71
Chapter 6.54: End Times in the Gospels....71
Chapter 6.55: End Times in the Epistles....73
Chapter 6.56: The Old Testament....73
Chapter 6.57: Closing....74

Chapter 6.1: Introduction

First off after I had written the original first version of my commentary on Revelation before I expanded it in size and scope I had intended to write a commentary on the rest of the Bible. However due to the size of my first commentary on Revelation and the recent conclusion of my extended Bible I decided I did not have enough time to write a full commentary on the whole Bible. So instead I made a commentary on the whole Bible I decided to simply write the parts that are now now being called Various Insights where I go over the most important topics from the Bible that you are probably interested in and that I think are important.

So even though this part is not a commentary on the entire Bible it is still quite long. In it I go over a variety of topics from Biblical inerrancy, to faith versus works, to the meaning of Genesis 1-11, to the Law, to women in the Church and much more. Really this part could contain a bunch of chapters on a variety of different topics that really did not fit in the other parts that you have read so far.

Now I will not pretend that you will enjoy or even like this part. Instead I know full well that it will upset almost everyone in some way given how what the Bible says and what I have to say differs so much from Christian theological perspective and Christian denomination. That said, given the fact that by reading this now you have already read my commentary on Revelation, my part on fulfilled prophecy and my part on bad apologetics, I do not think you will have any issues reading this part. After all if you were someone who did not posses ears to hear then you would have stopped reading a long time ago.

Now in terms of the actual content, I discuss whatever I think is valuable to know and understand. In my opinion I do skip over most of the topics I have already discussed in my commentary on Revelation, the part on fulfilled prophecy and the part on bad apologetics. After all I am sure I have made it abundantly clear that the Church is the continuation of Israel and that the Gospel was given to Israelites because they have turned their back on God. So why would you want too reread what you just read?

Now you may even think though I will do most of what I have already written about there are some topics that I think deserve some more attention even though I have already addressed them briefly. For example as you read in my commentary on Revelation I discuss the popular conception of a place called Hell does not in fact exist. This claim is of course not given because there will comment on every reference to the Hell Bible translators have translated from the New Testament so you can see for yourself that Hell does not in fact exist and that instead the punishment for the unfaithful is the Lake of Fire or the second death as I pointed out in Revelation.

Finally I would just like to say that you should not consider what you read in this part as you see what I wrote as the end all be all. Instead you should think about what you read as the first part of a starting point. So I encourage you to think spiritually about everything you read, do your own research and come to your own conclusions.

Then as Jesus says:

"But you – you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher, and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father, for you have one Father, who is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:8-12)

So in truth Jesus is your teacher and the Holy Spirit is your guide. Therefore I am not your teacher or your guide. The story I titled this part Various Insights instead of something like teachings. The reason why I chose here is to field you on your journey and not to show you the path you must take. So again I encourage you to think spiritually about everything you read, do your own research and come to your own conclusions. At the end of this part I hope you find this part helpful.

Chapter 6.2: Presupposition Statements

Oftentimes Christians come to read the Bible with many different presuppositions or preconceptions. This means that before reading the Bible to see what it has to say they have their own preconceived notions of what the Bible is and what it is about. Then as they read the Bible they will read what they want to read and ignoring other verses entirely but this is what I mean by having a bad or false presupposition. The idea here is that if you believe in the Bible and want to use the Bible to find evidence for it then you are presupposing the trinity is true. Or if you believe in inerrancy or presupposition you start with your conclusion before you seek to find evidence that your conclusion is true.

Now obviously I do not have to tell you how flawed this way of reading the Bible is. Little sense it makes. I mean it is quite literally putting the cart before the horse and ignoring the obvious things exactly backwards. Therefore I strongly encourage you to let go of your conclusion but instead start with the evidence.

For another example lets take the so-called Jesus seen in the Bible as a test. Before I read the Bible for the first time I was pro so-called Jew and pro so-called Israel and anti so-called Israel. For instance I would defend the actions of the modern state of so-called Israel and even tell people that God gave the land of Israel to them as that how sounds to me. But then once I read the Bible I came to realize that I was wrong like Jews of today are clearly in error and sinning against God through their unbelief in Jesus. Then I started my commentary on Revelation I tried to work out what I meant by the term "jew" and mean and the only conclusion I could come to is that the so-called Jews are not the Jews but Jews because they do not recognize the King of the Jews, Jesus. This is why I refer to them as so-called Jews liars and a "synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 3:9) because they say they are Jews but they do not consider Him people anyone. Then after looking through the gospels and Paul's letters I came to the conclusion that anyone can consider the so-called Jews to be Jews. So as a result I do not generally use these references to them to the so-called Jews as you will see in my commentary.

What I am saying here is that when I came at the Bible in this case I was not engaging in presuppositions. Instead I was just trying to figure out what the Bible was saying and why it was saying it.

Then back to the trinity example I also changed my beliefs with regards to the trinity based on what I read in the Bible. Before I read the Bible I had a very strong belief in the trinity. I would have said it was a fact and the presupposition that the trinity was true. As a Christian you want to believe that they want to confirm my belief I confirmed my belief and seek out evidence to back it up. Instead I contradicted my belief I wrote it off as I simply do not understand the Bible so I will just trust the traditional view of the trinity. At the point after I decided to turn my short commentary on the Bible into a longer one I had already changed my view on the trinity because if I tried to make it work I ran into contradictions. Then I believed that I would then be a liar. I really wanted to be proved wrong but instead I had to support it because I realized that once I write down my belief I am obligated to stand by it and this book will be reduced by 95 to 99%. However I thought I was going to be prepared for what I had people to read and instead I am writing it for God. Then I came to realize a problem with what I have written then it is their problem and not mine. That said it still was rather painful having against the trinity because I thought people will not even bother reading my message with regards to the trinity because they will have read the comment on the trinity being false.' Then they ramblings in my head.

But what is my point here? Well my point is just that it is very easy to just assume something is true. Much harder is to actually sit down and examine what the evidence is for the claim you have assumed. Sometimes inerrancy is false and say most people search the Bible for how to proof their beliefs instead of searching the Bible for what is true. Therefore I just want 8 warn you that the Bible will not always confirm whatever beliefs you already have if you have made yourself a false idol in your heart. Instead you have read so far. Instead this part is about what the Bible says is true, false, bad or good. So I encourage you to let go of everything you read as being wrong because it does not conform to your presuppositions. Remember, let the evidence lead you to your beliefs instead of your beliefs lead you to your evidence. As long as you do this then you will not be engaging in presupposition.

Chapter 6.3: Biblical Inerrancy and Infallibility

1 – Background

Biblical inerrancy or the inerrancy of the Bible is a concept that is mostly unknown to most of today despite the fact that it was never a historical doctrine for most of the history of Christianity. It contains the belief that the Bible is simply that the Bible is completely without any errors and that it is the result of the perfect Biblical infallibility where the claim is that the Bible is without error in all that it teaches.

Now if you believe in Biblical inerrancy or Biblical infallibility then I am sorry to burst your bubble here but both forms are simply helping and irreconcilably wrong. In truth the Bible has many errors that cannot be explained away even using the most hopeful of apologetics and mental gymnastics.

I do not say this in attempt to get you to question Christianity but rather! I say this to make sure you remain a Christian in the face of the coming beast that is about to rise out of the Abyss and declare war on the saints. People claiming that the Bible is inerrant or even infallible are simply both ignorant to Christians the path to doubt and apostasy. In fact I will say with confidence that apologists who hold to and defend the inerrancy of the Bible have done more harm to Christianity than any atheist has in the last fifty years. Yes seriously and I realize what I just said.

The reason why I say this is because when Christians discover that the Bible is not inerrant and infallible and that it was never intended to be inerrant they will feel lied to. Then after they make this discovery and uncover this grand lie they will begin to question everything they have ever learned and thought they knew. After all, if they have been told all their life that the Bible is perfect and without error by everyone they trust then what do you think is going to happen when they discover any of the irreconcilable errors in the Bible?

Then who do you think this now questioning Christian will go to? Do you think they will trust the apologists who espouse these obviously false doctrines? Of course not. Instead they will start to listen to some videos or read some articles on the internet written by atheists as they attempt to determine what is true. This of course ultimately leads to apostasy as they now trust in and believe what the atheists are saying over the Christian apologists who promoted lies.

Now you may even think though I will do most of what I have already written about there are some topics that I think deserve some more attention even though I have already addressed them briefly. For example as you read in my commentary on Revelation I discuss the popular conception of a place called Hell does not in fact exist. This claim is of course not given because there will comment on every reference to the Hell Bible translators have translated from the New Testament so you can see for yourself that Hell does not in fact exist and that instead the punishment for the unfaithful is the Lake of Fire or the second death as I pointed out in Revelation.

Finally I would just like to say that you should not consider what you read in this part as you see what I wrote as the end all be all. Instead you should think about what you read as the first part of a starting point. So I encourage you to think spiritually about everything you read, do your own research and come to your own conclusions.

Then as Jesus says:

"But you – you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher, and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father, for you have one Father, who is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:8-12)

So in truth Jesus is your teacher and the Holy Spirit is your guide. Therefore I am not your teacher or your guide. The story I titled this part Various Insights instead of something like teachings. The reason why I chose here is to field you on your journey and not to show you the path you must take. So again I encourage you to think spiritually about everything you read, do your own research and come to your own conclusions. At the end of this part I hope you find this part helpful.

Chapter 6.2: Presuppositions

2 – Statistics Concerning Goliath

"Then a champion named Goliath, who was from Gath, came out from the Philistine camp. He was six cubits and a span in height, and he had a bronze helmet on his head. He was clothed with a coat of mail, weighing five thousand shekels, and he had bronze armor on his legs and a javelin of bronze slung between his shoulders. The shaft of his spear was like a weaver's beam, and its iron point weighed six hundred shekels. In addition, his shield bearer went before him." (1 Samuel 17:4-7)

Here the text is saying Goliath was around 9 feet tall and that the Philistine camp, however the Greek translation of the Old Testament or Septuagint (LXX) and the Dead Sea Scrolls list the height as 6 feet 9 inches tall or 206 centimeters. The Septuagint is the version that is generally accepted as the correct.

Additionally saying Goliath was almost ten feet tall is basically absurd. The tallest man in history that we know of measured at 8 feet 4 inches tall or 272 centimeters and was born in 1918 and died in the age of 22 in 1940. He suffered from hypertrophy of his pituitary gland which resulted in abnormally high levels of human growth hormone and even needed leg braces in order to walk because his body was so out of proportion. Thus even being almost a foot taller is purely nonsensical.

Now you could therefore say 6 feet 9 inches is the true height but then you are left with the weight of the coat of mail and spear. The coat of mail weighs 5,000 shekels or 126.6 pounds or 57 kilograms and the spear is listed as 600 shekels or 15.1 pounds or 6.8 kilograms. Both of these weights are also nonsensical. The weight for a typical coat of mail would be around 20 pounds or so. Now I supposed it would be possible for a Philistine to carry a coat of mail that heavy but when you consider the weight of all the other things he would have had to have been then I do not think anyone would disagree with me saying his armor would hinder him more than help him. Even Goliath's spear only the weight for a typical chain mail coat was only 20 pounds. Now the spear would have needed to have mobility and endurance. Soldiers sometimes needed to charge into battle and fight for many hours at a time and it's not like you can just drop your spear and coat of mail like your 125.6 pound chain mail coat after a fifteen minute fight.

Then I am sure I do not have to explain why a spear point does not weigh 15 pounds because such a spear would be completely impractical. But then some apologist will try to undoubtedly argue that the spear point was used as a sledge hammer head weighs about 5 pounds. So think of the image of the spear point here as being like three sledge hammers. Then keep in mind the purpose of a spear is not to swing it like a hammer but instead to thrust and stab with it or to throw it. This is why I said this spear point is simply nonsensical because anyone really you want a light spear so you can trust it quickly or throw it a great distance. Then keep in mind the spear point weighs 15 lbs. I mean the whole point of a spear is to be sharp to penetrate something. That's literally it.

Therefore it does not matter which way you look at it the numbers presented here in the Bible are simply wrong. However I will say something similar is happening here as I explained in Exodus and Numbers. Therefore I would say these weights are probably inflated by a factor of ten if not twenty. Keep in mind the price of bronze was very expensive back then so Goliath probably had a ton of bronze scale mail on a leather base so that the bronze scales were only a small part. So the weight of the metal could have been 5 pounds or so.

3 – Destruction of the First Temple

2.3.1 – Second Kings

"On the seventh day of the fifth month, in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign over Babylon, Nebuzaradan captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, entered Jerusalem. He burned down the house of the LORD, the royal palace, and all the houses of Jerusalem—every significant building. Every house he burned down." (2 Kings 25:8-9)

2.3.2 –

So I stood over him and killed him, because I knew that after he had fallen he could not survive. And I took the crown that was on his head and the band that was on his arm, and I have brought them here to my lord." (2 Samuel 1:6-10)

First Samuel says Saul killed himself because his armor bearer refused to kill him while Second Samuel says that Amalekite killed Saul after Saul asked him to kill him. Both versions of these accounts cannot be correct so at least one is in error.

2.5 – Volume of the Basin Called the Sea

2.5.1 – First Kings

"The Sea stood on twelve oxen, three facing north, three facing west, three facing south, and three facing east. The Sea rested on them, with all their hindquarters toward the center. It was a handbreadth thick, and its rim was fashioned like the brim of a cup, like a lily blossom. It could hold two thousand baths." (1 Kings 7:23-26)

2.5.2 – Second Chronicles

"The Sea stood on twelve oxen, three facing north, three facing west, three facing south, and three facing east. The Sea rested on them, with all their hindquarters toward the center. It was a handbreadth thick, and its rim was fashioned like the brim of a cup, like a lily blossom. It could hold three thousand baths." (2 Chronicles 4:4-5)

Although this error is relatively minor and inconsequential there is still a clear and irreconcilable difference here. Either the Sea was two thousand baths in volume or it was three thousand baths in volume.

2.6 – Number of Supervisors

2.6.1 – First Kings

"Solomon had 70,000 porters and 80,000 stonecutters in the mountains, not including his 3,300 foremen who supervised the workers." (1 Kings 5:15-16)

2.6.2 – Second Chronicles

"So he conscripted 70,000 porters, 80,000 stonecutters in the mountains, and 3,600 supervisors." (2 Chronicles 2:2)

Another minor error. Either the number of supervisors was 3,300 or 3,600.

2.7 – High Priest When David Took the Bread

2.7.1 – First Samuel

"Then David came to Nob, to Ahimelech the priest. And when Ahimelech met David, he trembled and asked him, 'Why are you alone? Why is no one with you?'

'The king has given me a mission,' David replied. 'He told me no one is to know about the mission or charge. And I have directed my young men to meet me at a certain place. Now then, what do you have on hand? Give me five loaves of bread, or whatever can be found.'" (1 Samuel 21:1-3)

2.7.2 – Gospel of Mark

"Jesus replied, 'Have you never read what David did when he and his companions were hungry and in need? During the high priesthood of Abiathar, he entered the house of God and ate the consecrated bread, which was lawful only for the priests. And he gave some to his companions as well.'" (Mark 2:25-26)

Either Ahimelech or Abiathar was the high priest. Sure can attempt to claim that both were the high priest but the story Jesus is talking about in First Samuel specifically references Ahimelech and not Abiathar. Therefore the author of the Gospel of Mark is not correct. You may not believe I can be correct here but wait until you read about the other errors in the gospels.

2.8 – Ancestry of Jesus from David

2.8.1 – Gospel of Matthew

"David was the father of Solomon by Uriah's wife." (Matthew 1:6)

2.8.2 – Gospel of Luke

"the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David," (Luke 3:31)

In the genealogy recorded in Matthew Jesus's ancestry is traced through David's son Solomon while in Luke it is traced through David's son Nathan. Obviously both cannot be correct. Now you may say that one is for Joseph and the other is for Mary but the problem there is that the text says both are ancestries of Joseph. Therefore either Luke or Matthew is wrong, the author of Luke is wrong or they are both wrong.

2.9 – Who Carried the Cross

2.9.1 – Gospel of Matthew

"Along the way they found a man from Cyrene, named Simon, and they forced him to carry the cross of Jesus." (Matthew 27:32)

2.9.2 – Gospel of John

"Carrying His own cross, He went out to The Place of the Skull, which in Hebrew is called Golgotha." (John 19:17)

Obviously either Jesus carried His own cross or Simon from Cyrene carried the cross. Sure you can try to harmonize it by saying both Jesus and Simon carried it but then how come none of the four gospels mention it? A much more simple answer is to simply say that one of them is wrong.

2.10 – A Synagogue Leader's Daughter

2.10.1 – Gospel of Mark

"A synagogue leader named Jairus arrived, and seeing Jesus, he fell at His feet and pleaded with Him urgently, 'My little daughter is near death. Please come and place Your hands on her, so that she will be healed and live.'" (Mark 5:22-23)

2.10.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"While Jesus was saying these things, a synagogue leader came and knelt before Him. 'My daughter has just died,' he said. 'But come and place Your hand on her, and she will live.'" (Matthew 9:18)

Either Jairus's daughter was near death or she was dead. You can claim either but the Gospel of Mark is correct or the Gospel of Matthew is correct. Sure you can claim that Jesus healed so that Jairus's daughter was sick and was healed and then died and then was healed but this is just nonsensical because the text does not say that.

Then in terms of this difference this a very good demonstration that the Gospel authors never meant for them to be viewed as inerrant or without error. You see basically everyone agrees that the Gospel of Mark was the first Gospel written. Then when you look at the Gospel of Matthew you can clearly see that the Gospel of Matthew copies around ninety percent of the Gospel of Mark. If you do not believe me then go and read the Gospel of Matthew then read the Gospel of Mark. Then you will realize that the Gospel of Matthew was basically just an expansion of the Gospel of Mark.

If you still do not understand what I am saying here think of it like how students write a paper or an essay for school. One student wrote their essay and left it at home. Then the other student looked at their essay and copied around ninety percent of it and just changed a few things. So if you were to look at these two students essays would you honestly believe that the second student's essay was original and that they did not copy from the first student? Of course not. The same is true for the Gospel of Matthew copying from the Gospel of Mark.

Therefore it is obvious that the author of the Gospel of Matthew had access to the Gospel of Mark because the author quite literally copied the vast majority of it word for word. This would mean that the author of the Gospel of Matthew was completely aware that the Gospel of Mark said Jairus's daughter was near death and not dead. In other words the author of the Gospel of Matthew made a conscious decision to make Jairus's daughter dead instead of near death. Alright but why would the author of the Gospel of Matthew choose too do such a thing? Well I think they were trying to make the Jesus of the Gospel of Matthew seem more powerful than the Jesus of the Gospel of Mark. After isn't it more impressive to raise Jairus's daughter from the dead rather than simply heal her? Of course.

This fact that the author of the Gospel of Matthew was aware of and purposely introduced a contradiction into his Gospel that contradicts the Gospel of Mark is what I was talking about when I said that the authors of the gospels never intended them to be inerrant. Obviously the authors not only knew about the errors but they actually knowingly created and introduced the errors. So based on this fact how you can even claim that Biblical inerrancy was intended from the beginning? Obviously you cannot and the false doctrine of Biblical inerrancy is not only just that, false, but it is also purely nonsensical and laughable.

So really I do not care what fifth, fourth, third or even second century theologians went to die in order to demonstrate that the false doctrine of Biblical inerrancy is false. Then of course I would care even less about some apologist you want to cite or some book you want to read that they wrote. This is because you can clearly see that the authors of the gospels of Matthew and Luke used what is called the Gospel of Mark. Therefore all the theologians and apologists who believe that the Bible is without any errors are clearly wrong. Furthermore they must be crazy or they are just plain ignorant or even delusional so that they are lying to themselves or they realize the truth of what I am saying but they are knowingly lying to others instead of unknowingly lying to them.

Now you may disagree with me here in a desperate attempt to protect your obviously wrong view that the gospels are without error but as you will soon see there are in fact tons of differences like this one where it is clear that one author copied from another and made some slight changes because they wanted to emphasize different theological points. Therefore as you continue reading this chapter keep this idea in mind.

Then finally let me just reiterate that you should not see the gospels as being without error because that is not what the gospels knowingly wrote them and introduced the errors themselves. Thus if the authors knew they were writing was not without error then who are you to claim that what they wrote is without error?

2.11 – The Centurion

2.11.1 – Gospel of Matthew

"When Jesus had entered Capernaum, a centurion came and pleaded with him. 'Lord, my servant lies at home, paralyzed and in terrible agony.'

'I will go and heal him,' Jesus replied.

'The centurion answered, 'Lord, I am not worthy to have You come under my roof. But just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell one to go, and he goes; and another to come, and he comes. I tell my servant to do something, and he does it.'" (Matthew 8:5-9)

2.11.2 – Gospel of Luke

"When Jesus had concluded His discourse in the hearing of the people, He went to Capernaum. There a Roman centurion had a servant whom he highly valued, who was sick and about to die. When the centurion heard about Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders to ask Him to come and heal his servant. They came to Jesus and pleaded with Him earnestly, 'This man is worthy to have You grant this, for he loves our nation and has built our synagogue.'

So Jesus went with them. But when He was not far from the house, the centurion sent friends with the message: 'Lord, do not trouble Yourself, for I am not worthy to have You come under my roof. That is why I did not consider myself worthy to come to You. But just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell one to go, and he goes; and another to come, and he comes. I tell my servant to do something, and he does it.' (Matthew 8:8-9) So if you believe that the synoptic gospels record are accurate and that there really were two centurions then you must believe that one of the centurions is mentally linked to the other so that he can say the same exact thing. In other words claiming that there were two centurions is utter nonsense.

Finally remember what I just said above concerning the fact that the authors of the gospels knew that what they wrote was not without error because they knowingly introduced these changes. In this instance there is a wide consensus that the Gospel of Matthew was written before the Gospel of Luke and since the story does not occur in the Gospel of Mark then this would mean that the author of the Gospel of Luke copied from the Gospel of Matthew. This then means that yes the author of the Gospel of Luke was fully aware of the fact that he was changing the story.

2.12 – Inscription on the Cross

2.12.1 – Gospel of Mark

"And the charge inscribed against Him read: THE KING OF THE JEWS." (Mark 15:26)

2.12.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"Above His head they posted the written charge against Him: THIS IS JESUS, THE KING OF THE JEWS." (Matthew 27:37)

2.12.3 – Gospel of Luke

"Above Him was posted an inscription: THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS." (Luke 23:38)

2.12.4 – Gospel of John

"Pilate also had a notice posted on the cross. It read: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS." (John 19:19)

What is interesting here is all four of the gospels cannot even agree on what the inscription read. Sure they all mean basically the same thing but clearly all four cannot be correct. Sure you can say one of them or three of them or even all four are wrong. Now this difference between all four gospels is not a big death of course but it is just once again interesting that the authors of the gospels of Matthew, Luke and John knowingly change what the inscription read.

2.13 – Women Near the Cross

2.13.1 – Gospel of Matthew

"And many women were there, watching from a distance. They had followed Jesus from Galilee to minister to Him. Among them were Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's sons." (Matthew 27:55-56)

2.13.2 – Gospel of John

"Near the cross of Jesus stood His mother and her sister, as well as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary Magdalene." (John 19:25)

So was Mary Magdalene watching near the cross or from a distance? Of course this difference really does not matter it is just interesting that these two gospels cannot get the distance right.

2.14 – The Criminals on the Crosses

2.14.1 – Gospel of Mark

"In the same way, the chief priests and scribes mocked Him among themselves, saying, 'He saved others, But He cannot save himself! Let the Christ, the King of Israel, come down now from the cross, so that we may see and believe!' And even those who were crucified with Him berated Him." (Mark 15:31-32)

2.14.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"In the same way, even the robbers who were crucified with Him berated Him." (Matthew 27:44)

2.14.3 – Gospel of Luke

"One of the criminals who hung there heaped abuse on Him. 'Are You not the Christ? He said. 'Save Yourself and us!'

But the other one rebuked him, saying, 'Do you not even fear God, since you are under the same judgment? We are punished justly, for we are receiving what our actions deserve. But this man has done nothing wrong.' Then he said, 'Jesus, remember me when You come into Your kingdom!'

And Jesus said to him, 'Truly I tell you, today you will be with Me in Paradise." (Luke 23:40-43)

So did the criminals who were crucified with Jesus berate Him or did only one of the criminals berate Him while another criminal defended Him? Once again obviously both cannot be correct at the same time.

2.15 – The Last Words of Jesus

2.15.1 – Gospel of Luke

"Then Jesus called out in a loud voice, 'Father, into Your hands I commit My Spirit.' And when He had said this, He breathed His last." (Luke 23:46)

2.15.2 – Gospel of John

"When Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, 'It is finished.' Then He bowed His head, He yielded up His spirit." (John 19:30)

Now I omitted the other two gospels because I should reasonably claim that when Jesus that when they say that Jesus cried out again in a loud voice yielding up His spirit that He said either what the Gospel of Luke says He said or what the Gospel of John says he said. However the fact still remains either Jesus said what the Gospel of Luke claims or what the Gospel of John claims.

2.16 – The Centurion Near the Cross

2.16.1 – Gospel of Mark

"When the centurion standing there in front of Jesus saw how He had breathed His last, he said, 'Truly this man was the Son of God!'" (Mark 15:39)

2.16.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified and said, 'Truly this was the Son of God.'" (Matthew 27:54)

2.16.3 – Gospel of Luke

"When the centurion saw what had happened, he gave glory to God, saying, 'Surely this was a righteous man.'" (Luke 23:47)

First off obviously there is even a slight difference between what the Gospel of Mark says the centurion said and what the Gospel of Matthew says the centurion said. Sure it is not a big difference but the Gospel of Matthew omitting the word man is still significant. However what the Gospel of Luke says the centurion said is massively different than what the gospels of Mark and Matthew say. Then you can claim that the Bible was inerrant or you cannot argue for there being two centurions because the Bible says the centurion not one of the centurions obviously at least two of the gospels are wrong here.

2.17 – Buying the Field of Blood

2.17.1 – Gospel of Matthew

"The chief priests picked up the pieces of silver and said, 'It is unlawful to put this into the treasury, since it is blood money.' After conferring together, they used the money to buy the potter's field as a burial place for foreigners. That is why it has been called the Field of Blood to this day." (Matthew 27:6-7)

2.17.2 – Acts of the Apostles

"(Now with the reward for his wickedness Judas bought a field; then he fell headlong and burst open in the middle, and all his intestines spilled out. This became known to all who lived in Jerusalem, so they called that in their own language Akeldama, that is, Field of Blood.)" (Acts 1:18-19)

Really there is not much to say here. Either the chief priests bought the field and the name the Field of Blood originated from the fact that it was a burial place for foreigners or Judas bought the field and the name of the Field of Blood originated from the fact that Judas burst open and died in the field. Once again obviously both cannot be correct.

2.18 – When the Spices Were Bought

2.18.1 – Gospel of Mark

"When the Sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices so they could go and anoint the body of Jesus. Very early on the first day of the week, just after sunrise, they went to the tomb." (Mark 16:1-2)

2.18.2 – Gospel of Luke

"The women who had come with Jesus from Galilee followed, and they saw the tomb and how His body was placed. Then they returned to prepare spices and perfumes. And they rested on the Sabbath, according to the commandment.

On the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came to the tomb, bringing the spices they had prepared." (Luke 23:55-24:1)

Either the women bought spices after the Sabbath as the Gospel of Mark claims or they bought the spices before the Sabbath. Both cannot really be correct. Sure you can claim they bought spices twice but the text does not say that.

2.19 – Anointing Jesus

2.19.1 – Gospel of Mark

"When the Sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices so they could go and anoint the body of Jesus. Very early on the first day of the week, just after sunrise, they went to the tomb." (Mark 16:1-2)

2.19.2 – Gospel of John

"Nicodemus, who had previously come to Jesus at night, also brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about seventy pounds. So they took the body of Jesus and wrapped it in linen cloths with the spices, according to the Jewish burial custom." (John 19:39-40)

So was Jesus's body anointed with spices before He was placed in the tomb or was His body not anointed so that the women planned to anoint His body after the Sabbath? Once again both cannot be correct.

2.20 – Angel at the Tomb

2.20.1 – Gospel of Mark

"When they entered the tomb, they saw a young man dressed in a white robe sitting on the right side, and they were alarmed. But he said to them, 'Do not be alarmed. You are looking for Jesus the Nazarene, who was crucified. He has risen! He is not here! See the place where they put Him. But go, tell His disciples and Peter, 'He is going ahead of you into Galilee. There you will see Him, just as He told you.'" (Mark 16:5-7)

2.20.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"After the Sabbath, at dawn on the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went to see the tomb.

Suddenly there was a great earthquake, for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, rolled away the stone, and sat on it. His appearance was like lightning, and his clothes were white as Snow. The guards trembled in fear of him and became like dead men.

But the angel said to the women, 'Do not be afraid, for I know that you are looking for Jesus, who was crucified. He is not here; He has risen, just as He said! Come, see the place where He lay. Then go quickly and tell His disciples, 'He has risen from the dead and is going ahead of you into Galilee. There you will see Him.' Now, I have told you.'" (Matthew 28:1-7)

Either the women entered the tomb to be told by the young man or they were told by an angel they saw outside the tomb to go inside of outside the tomb on the stone. To claim both happened would be silly so obviously at least one must be wrong.

2.21 – The Ascension

2.21.1 – Gospel of Luke

"When Jesus had led them out as far as Bethany, He lifted up His hands and blessed them. While He was blessing them, He left them and was carried up into heaven." (Luke 24:50-51)

2.21.2 – Acts of the Apostles

"After He had said this, they watched as He was taken up, and a cloud hid Him from their sight. They were looking intently into the sky as He was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. 'Men of Galilee,' they said, 'why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen Him go into heaven.'

Then they returned to Jerusalem from the Mount of Olives, which is near the city, a Sabbath day's journey away." (Acts 1:9-12)

Jesus ascended into heaven at Bethany in the Gospel of Luke while He ascended into heaven on the Mount of Olives in Acts. Now the same author supposedly wrote both the Gospel of Luke and Acts. Clearly the author knew he contradicted himself given how much thought he would have needed to put into writing both Luke and Acts. Therefore even the author of Luke and Acts did not think their own works were without error. Instead the author wrote Luke and Acts to be intentionally wrong. Of course the author could have just made a mistake.

2.22 – What Paul's Companions Saw and Heard

2.22.1 – Acts of the Apostles

"The men traveling with Saul stood there speechless. They heard the voice but did not see anyone." (Acts 9:7)

2.22.2 – Acts of the Apostles

"My companions saw the light, but they could not understand the voice of the One speaking to me." (Acts 22:9)

In Acts 22:9 it would really say not hear instead of not understand. So which is it? Did they hear and not see or did they see and not hear and see? Again, you should not view Acts as needing to be perfectly consistent because it is once again a theological work. Obviously the author did not remember what he wrote in Acts 9:7 so they simply make a mistake and wrote the wrong thing in Acts 22:9. Sure this fact telling is incorrect and the second is the correct one?

2.23 – Final Thoughts on Inerrancy

Obviously you can clearly see that the Bible does in fact have errors in it. Sure can claim these errors are not that significant you really cannot claim the Bible is free of errors. This is why the false doctrine of Biblical inerrancy is a clearly false and ridiculous idea.

Now in response to demonstrating that irreconcilable errors exist in the Bible you might then go on to claim that the Bible was in fact without error but rather the original manuscripts of the Bible are without error. Sure enough since I pointed out significant changes that the Gospel of Matthew made to the story of the Gospel of Mark it is clear that these changes could not have been the result of copying errors or changes alone. The contradictions between the gospels are too great so the intentional changes authors of the gospels themselves knew what they were doing and introduced the contradictions themselves.

This fact is why the differences between the gospels and the Bible as a whole for that matter should not bother you. After all if you believe that the authors of the gospels were fellow Christians then why would you doubt your faith over inerrancy being false if the authors of the gospels themselves did not care about the inerrancy? So in truth you have no excuse for questioning your faith over the fact that Biblical inerrancy is false. Then remember, ignore what the apologists tell you because they are lying to you and they are wrong. The Bible is not without error and that is great news. If anyone wants to insist that the Bible needs to be without error for them to take it seriously then that is their own problem and not yours.

Lastly in the face of Biblical inerrancy being false you might go on to say that the Bible is without error in all that it teaches so therefore Biblical infallibility is true. However this view is wrong as you will now see.

3 – Infallibility

3.1 – The End of the Age

3.1.1 – Epistle to the Romans

"And do this, understanding the occasion. The hour has come for you to wake up from your slumber, for our salvation is nearer now than when we first believed. The night is nearly over; the day has drawn near. So let us lay aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armor of light. Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in carousing and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in quarreling and jealousy. Instead, clothe yourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the flesh in its lusts." (Romans 13:11-14)

Here Paul says that the end of the age will be here momentarily so that those who are alive now who he is writing to will be there to see Jesus return.

3.1.2 – First Epistle to the Corinthians

"Now about virgins, I have no command from the Lord, but I give a judgment as one who by the Lord's mercy is trustworthy. Because of the present crisis, I think it is good for a man to remain as he is. Are you committed to a wife? Do not seek to be released. Are you free of commitment? Do not look for a wife. But if you do marry, you have not sinned. And if a virgin marries, she has not sinned. But those who marry will face troubles in this life, and I want to spare you this.

What I am saying, brothers, is that the time is short. From now on those who have wives should live as if they had none; those who weep, as if they did not weep; those who rejoice, as if they were not; those who make a purchase, as if they had lost nothing; those who use the things of this world, as if not dependent on them. For this world in its present form is passing away." (1 Corinthians 7:25-31)

Paul says that people should remain as they are not get married because he believes "that the time is short." (1 Corinthians 7:29) In other words Paul believes that the end of the age will soon be here. This is why Paul wrote that "For this world in its present form is passing away." (1 Corinthians 7:31) So no you cannot claim that Paul said this because he believed that it is good for people to not get married so they can be dedicated to God. Instead Paul felt the same way as I now feel concerning the future. What I mean is that previously I do not want to have children because the first bread of Revelation is about to rise out of the oven. So now could I have a kid now knowing that they would most likely follow the beast after they fall into tempitation? Thus Paul has a similar sentiment in this passage.

3.1.3 – First Epistle to the Corinthians

"Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed—in an instant, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed." (1 Corinthians 15:51-52) Then I just said, Clearly Jesus did not come back to give Paul and the other Christians immortal bodies. Acts did not think their own works were without error. Instead the author wrote Luke and Acts to be intentionally wrong. Of course the author could have just made a mistake.

Therefore Paul is clearly wrong here and you cannot convince me that he wrote with divine reality. Then because of this fact alone Biblical infallibility is clearly false because the two epistles clearly teach that the end of the age was supposed to happen within the lifetime.

Alright but then why is Revelation the word of God if it says that Jesus will return soon? Well although you already have my commentary on Revelation so I should not have to answer this question, I will briefly answer it. First off Revelation says things like the following: "Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and language and nation." (Revelation 13:7) Then by saying the same thing, that the beast will rule the entire world, four different ways by saying "over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) I believe that Revelation is talking about the whole literal world and not simply the Roman and Greek world. So sure if this were read that the beast was given authority over the whole earth you could say it means the Roman and Greek world but through saying the same thing four times I do not believe you can plausibly claim that Revelation was supposed to be fulfilled in the first or second century AD because obviously no empire could literally have "authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation" (Revelation 13:7) during that period of time. Then if you would like more reasons then go back and read my commentary again if you forgot.

But what about the Olivet Discourse as found in Mark 13, Matthew 24 or Luke 21? I actually wrote a whole commentary on Matthew 24 which you will later read in the chapter called "Jesus's Return". Therefore I will not go into this here. However I will say that even if you want to assume that Matthew 24 is without error that you can still make sense of what Jesus says because when Jesus speaks of the coming Kingdom of God He is talking about multiple different things and giving them the same name. Again, I will fully explain this later so do not worry about it.

3.2 – God and Temptation

3.2.1 – Epistle of James

"When tempted, no one should say, 'God is tempting me.' For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does He tempt anyone." (James 1:13)

3.2.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"So then, this is how you should pray:

'Our Father in heaven,
hallowed be Your name.
Your kingdom come.
Your will be done,
on earth as it is in heaven.
Give us this day our daily bread.
And forgive us our debts,
as we also have forgiven our debtors.
And lead us not into temptation,
but deliver us from the evil one.'" (Matthew 6:9-13)

Clearly the author of James is wrong here. Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew that we are to ask God, our Father, not to lead us into temptation. Clearly the author of the epistle of James says that God does not tempt anyone.

This fact that God tempts people is why Jesus says when we pray that God would not lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one." (Matthew 6:9-13) The idea here is that God is in full control over all things so that even Satan himself can only act and tempt people because he has been given his power and authority from God. This means that really it is God who is leading people into temptation. Again, this is why Jesus says say "lead us not into temptation" (Matthew 6:9) when you pray to God. Sure you can claim that it is not God who is tempting people and that instead it is Satan but then I ask you who created Satan and who has full control over Satan? I mean in the Book of Job Satan had to ask God for permission because God has full authority over all creation.

3.2.3 – Book of Genesis

"Some time later God tested Abraham and said to him, 'Abraham!'" (Genesis 22:1)

Then as you may well already know God tested Abraham to offer up his own son as a sacrifice just to see if he would do it or not. Obviously Abraham did not completely offer up his own son because an angel stopped him just before he was about to kill his son. So clearly God was testing Abraham here or rather testing him into temptation. Then obviously God knew that Abraham was tempted not to obey God and do what he said.

3.2.4 – Second Samuel

"Again the anger of the LORD burned against Israel, and He stirred up David against them, saying, 'Go and take a census of Israel and Judah'." (2 Samuel 24:1)

In Second Samuel God moves David to take a census of Israel and Judah to count how many men of military age he has for the army. In response God decides to punish Israel and Judah because David placed more faith in the size of his army for protection than he did in God. Therefore I think it is good for God to tempt people into temptation. Of course I believe that God did not just tempt David but moved him to do evil against Israel which would be worse than merely tempting.

3.2.5 – Book of Job

"Then the LORD said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one on earth like him, a man who is blameless and upright, who fears God and shuns evil.'

Satan answered the LORD, 'Does Job fear God for nothing? Have You not placed a hedge on every side around him and his household and all that he has? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. But stretch out Your hand and strike all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face.

'Very well,' said the LORD to Satan. 'Everything he has is in your hands, but you must not lay a hand on the man himself.'

Then Satan went out from the presence of the LORD." (Job 1:8-12)

Now clearly the author of James has not read the Book of Job from the Old Testament because clearly God is tempting Job here because God gave permission for Satan to tempt him. So sure although you claim that it is not actually Satan who is tempting Job and that because it is Satan who is actually doing it, you really cannot say that God is not tempting Job because He is the One who gave permission to Satan to tempt Him. Then since clearly God approved of Satan directly tempting Job then it is clear that God is the One tempting Job.

Not only that but the author of James even said "For God cannot be tempted by evil" (James 1:13) which is false because Satan was doing in the Book of Job because it was God who made a bet with Satan that Job would curse God if his possessions were taken away. So really since Satan is the great evil one then God was tempted by the evil one in the Book of Job.

3.2.6 – Book of Deuteronomy

"If a prophet or dreamer of dreams arises among you and gives you a sign or wonder to you, and if the sign or wonder he has spoken to you comes about, but he says, 'Let us follow other gods (which you have not known) and let us worship them,' you must not listen to the words of that prophet or dreamer. For the LORD your God is testing you to find out whether you love him with all your heart and with all your soul." (Deuteronomy 13:1-3)

Here God says through Moses directly says that God is going to test them or rather tempt them. This is because Moses is saying that God will give people over to false prophets in the future that will come to pass but then He will make the prophet say that Israel should follow other gods just so that God can see if Israel is faithful or not. Thus it would be entirely reasonable to say that Moses is telling the ancient Israelites that God can tempt them.

3.2.7 – Book of Revelation

"Then the beast was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and language and nation." (Revelation 13:7)

As I said in my commentary, the reason why it says that God was permitted was given is authority is because God has to approve any and all actions. Nothing happens without God's approval just as the Book of Job and Revelation say. So if God has to approve of Satan and the beast tempting people then how exactly does this mean that God does not tempt anyone again? So how can James 1:13 be true? It cannot and clearly the author is in error.

3.2.8 – Logic

Now you may protest the previous points I have made by saying that it is illogical. Do you believe that God is all powerful and that He created everything there is? Well of course you do. Then who created Satan? Well God of course. Then who created Hell the place with the blame for temptation to Satan and say that God does not tempt anyone? Well Jesus said then you have to understand that God created Satan for this very purpose therefore God agrees with the author of Revelation that Satan does. This fact is indisputable based on the book of Job, the Book of Revelation. For instance in the Book of Job Satan had to ask God permission to tempt Job and in the Book of Revelation Satan and the beasts can only act because God allows them to.

Therefore because of this fact it is clear that God is the ultimate source of all temptation. As a result the author of James is clearly wrong because God does in fact tempt people.

3.2.9 – More Comments

Therefore for all of these reasons clearly the epistles of James was in error. Then the epistles of James was included in the Bible then this would mean that there is a serious contradiction in the Bible which would mean that the Bible is not infallible. There really is so much to say here because it is abundantly clear that God does in fact tempt people including Christians which is directly contrary to what the author of James says. Sure you may not like what the Bible says with regards to God tempting people and sure you might wish that the author of James was correct but you must admit that the author of James is wrong here.

3.3 – Confessing Jesus

3.3.1 – First Epistle of John

"By this you will know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God, and every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God." (1 John 4:2-3)

3.3.2 – Gospel of Matthew

"Suddenly a man with an unclean spirit cried out in the synagogue: 'What do You want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God!'" (Mark 1:23-24)

So if the unclean spirit, or demon, in the Gospel of Matthew confessed that Jesus was the Holy One of God then does this mean that the beast does that mean this unclean spirit is from God? But how could the author claim that God is not? It cannot. Therefore clearly the author of First John is wrong here. How you answer this harmonize this but really I do not know how you can so really the author is first John is just wrong.

As an aside, if you accept that there are unclean spirits or demons and that they confessed that Jesus is the Holy One of God, then could there not be the same exact thing in the flesh that Jesus is from God? For example theoretically if Satan wanted to get the most Christians to accept that he could have the beast tempt people into immorality. In the same way, some of you also hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans. Therefore repent! Otherwise I will come to you shortly and will war against them with the sword of My mouth." (Revelation 2:14-16)

"But I have this against you: You tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. By her teaching she misleads My servants to be sexually immoral and to eat food sacrificed to idols. Even though I have given her time to repent of her immorality, She is unwilling.

Behold, I will cast her onto a bed of sickness, and those who commit adultery with her will suffer great tribulation unless they repent of her deeds. Then I will strike her children dead, and all the churches will know that I am the One who searches minds and hearts, and I will repay each of you according to your deeds." (Revelation 2:20-23)

Now in addition to what Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew He also told the members of two of the Churches He addressed in Revelation to repent of their very clear and deliberate sin. For instance in Revelation Jesus even says He gave time for a woman to repent of her sin but even though her sins included engaging in idol worship through eating meat sacrificed to an idol and possibly ritual prostitution or orgies in addition to teaching others to engage in such detestable and sinful practices. Obviously to say that these are not deliberately sinning here would require some serious mental gymnastics. For example if one of the Christians listed in the text they attended a feast at a pagan temple last week there is zero chance you would believe and they did that accidentally. And yet even in this case Jesus would still offer your friend forgiveness if they repented of their sins.

3.5.4 – More Comments

Thus I do not think the author of Hebrews is correct here and I am not sure how you could even defend this very notion. If you want to accept what the author of Hebrews said as true then that would mean you have to view what Jesus says in the gospels of Matthew and Mark in addition to the book of Revelation as false. Obviously this would be extremely problematic so it is best to simply reject what the author of Hebrews said.

Furthermore I would just like to say that I have a serious problem with the author of the Hebrews. This is because I find what it says concerning the inability to return to the faith after you have left or sinned to be an inherently evil concept that has probably hurt many Christians and caused them to leave for good. For example if one of your friends leaves the faith then I am sure you hope for them to return again right? Well if what Hebrews says is correct then your friend is not allowed to repent and they cannot come back. What? You think this is wrong? This is just what the Bible says so therefore it is true. Of course I am being sarcastic here but I illustrate just how evil this concept that the author of Hebrews espouses is.

However thankfully what the author of Hebrews believes directly contradicts with not only the gospels but the Book of Revelation as well. Then keep in mind that Revelation clearly says the following: "This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Revelation 1:2) In contrast no one knows who even wrote Hebrews so it is clearly written from someone by an unknown author. Thus Hebrews is not the word of God but Revelation is, so because of this fact do not worry about what Hebrews says because it is once again not the word of God. Instead you should see Hebrews as a theological opinion piece. Thus although you or I may like some of the things it says we can agree with parts of it you should view it more as opinion rather than fact.

Lastly I would just like to reiterate that having such a huge difference between what Hebrews says compared to what Revelation says is not basically inexcusable so that it cannot be harmonized and that type of mental gymnastics. Therefore you must either reject Hebrews or the gospels and Revelation. You truly cannot keep both and call them both the word of God. Really the bottom line here is that the Bible as a whole is not infallible. After all, being able to return to the faith or not is a huge theological issue.

3.6 – God and Lying

3.6.1 – Epistle to the Hebrews

"Thus by two unchangeable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to take hold of the hope set before us may be strongly encouraged." (Hebrews 6:18)

Clearly the author of Hebrews believes that it is "impossible for God to lie" (Hebrews 6:18).

3.6.2 – Epistle to Titus

"Paul, a servant of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ for the faith of God's elect and their knowledge of the truth that leads to godliness, in the hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised before time began." (Titus 1:1-2)

If it makes you feel any better most historians agree that Paul did not write the Epistle to Titus. Therefore you should not see it as the word of Paul but rather as the words of an anonymous author who was impersonating Paul to push a theological message. I will take more about this later.

But really I am just point out here that The author of Titus is saying that God "cannot lie" (Titus 1:2).

3.6.3 – First Kings

"Then the king of Israel said to Jehoshaphat, 'Did I not tell you that he never prophesies good for me, but only bad?'

Micaiah continued, 'Therefore hear the word of the LORD: I saw the LORD sitting on His throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him on His right and on His left.

And the LORD said, 'Who will entice Ahab to march up and fall at Ramoth-gilead?'

And one suggested this, and another that.

Then a spirit came forward, stood before the LORD, and said, 'I will entice him.'

'By what means?' asked the LORD.

'And he replied, 'I will go out and be a lying spirit in the mouths of all his prophets.'

'You will surely entice him and prevail,' said the LORD. 'Go and do it.

So you see, the LORD has put a lying spirit in the mouths of all these prophets of yours, and the LORD has pronounced disaster against you." (1 Kings 22:18-23)

Now obviously my point point here is that Hebrews and Titus both say that it is impossible for God to lie" (Hebrews 6:18) and that "God, who cannot lie" (Titus 1:2) respectively. Well so-called facts then directly contradict with the passage from First Kings which says "So you see, the LORD has put a lying spirit in the mouths of all these prophets of yours, and the LORD has pronounced disaster against you." (1 Kings 22:23) The idea with this passage from First Kings is that God purposefully gave these prophets false visions so that they were deceived. In other words God lied to them.

Now you may dispute this and contort yourself with literal mental gymnastics in an attempt to defend the author of Hebrews and Titus and hence Biblical infallibility or even your idea of why God is, but let me ask you two simple questions. Do you agree that God created all things and that nothing is outside of His power and authority? Well of course you do. Next, do you agree that Satan is a liar and a deceiver? Of course. So if you agree with these two facts then this means that God is in control of the concept of lying itself. Sure you can pass off the job of lying to Satan but if God has created everything there is and is in full control of everything there is then this means that not only has God created Satan but that that God approves of everything that Satan is doing, including his lying.

This is why Revelation says: "Then another sign appeared in heaven: a huge red dragon with seven heads, ten horns and seven diadems on his heads." (Revelation 12:3) the idea here is that Satan, the dragon, has received supreme authority over the earth, the seven royal crowns, from God Himself. So I said in the paragraph Satan essentially works for God and he is known as the great accuser who t

3.6.6 – More Comments

Therefore for all there reason I cited above it is obvious that the authors of Hebrews and Titus were and still are wrong. As a result of this the Bible is once again not infallible because of this contradiction.

Now you may hate the fact that God has lied and can lie. However this fact is actually a good thing with regards to the Truth of the Bible ironically enough. This is because people often like to say that modern Christianity was a movement that evolved out of a failed apocalyptic doomsday cult that believed the end of the age was soon at hand. There could not have has been almost two thousand years since the resurrection of Jesus and the world is still around. Therefore these people claim that since in the gospels and Revelation Jesus supposedly says "I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:12) that Christianity must then be false because this has not happened.

However by saying that God has and can deceive people and lie this removes the issue for even the most skeptical of critics because you can then say that God is simply using this to demonstrate our faith in the same way God made Abraham wait for Isaac. Note that bear in mind that this deception or lie is more of a stretching of the truth in a sense because God or Jesus never give an exact date for the end and instead keep the terms rather vague by saying soon or quickly. I mean there are times have you asked someone when they were going to do something and they told you soon and then them to take weeks or even months to end up doing it? Thus the same idea applies here.

Then in terms of what Jesus says in the gospels concerning the arrival of the Kingdom of God I will go over this at length in my commentary on Matthew 24 in my chapter called End Times in the gospels. I would also like to assure you that my explanation with regards to what Jesus says in the gospels is not trying to simply say that Jesus deceiving people. Instead I believe that there are multiple different interpretations of God as you will see later in that chapter.

Alright but did I not say above that Paul was wrong with regards to the end of the age? Therefore if what I have just said is true then perhaps the words of Paul are the words of God? Well you see the issue here is that Paul was telling people that they would not die before Jesus was going to return. Obviously this did not happen. So really it just depends on what kind of lies you believe that God is willing to tell. For me at least what Paul said is not really acceptable while on the other hand Jesus saying "I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:12) in Revelation is acceptable to me because it is more ambiguous. So really it is up to you.

But what I am saying here is keep all this in mind when you consider what I have said above because the fact that God has and can deceive people and lie actually shows more problems than it creates. Furthermore I would like to propose that perhaps Satan created the idea that God can never deceive people or lie? I mean clearly there are good lies and there are bad lies. For example I feel God deceiving people to further the Kingdom of God then clearly this would be a good deception or a good lie. On the other hand if Satan deceives people to lead people away from the Kingdom of God then clearly this would be a bad deception and a bad lie. So really what I am saying is it isn't about the result rather than the method. I have said similar things before so I will not go into this more.

But in terms of the subject at hand, the reason why I said maybe Satan created the idea that God can never deceive people or lie is because then once people actually read the Bible then they will feel let down. For example I am sure there have been millions if not hundreds of millions of Christians throughout history who have lost their faith after they read "I am coming soon" (Revelation 22:12) or "Truly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things have happened." (Matthew 24:34) But really the only way to apostatize after reading verses like these is if you take the literal approach that everything in the Bible is completely true. On the other hand if you take the more realistic approach that God has deceived people in God does not or can get them to demonstrate their faith like with Abraham and the sacrifice of his son then it is easy to say that God is simply making us also demonstrate our faith. After all by telling them "Although the Bible says at face value and instead saying that we trust in God until the end no matter what happens then is this not the same faith that Abraham had? Or perhaps when you combine this fact with how marvelous the coming heaven will seem, then could you not say that those who overcome the beast and wait until the end for Jesus to return will have even greater faith than Abraham himself?

Anyways I hope what I have said here helps to resolve any misgivings you may have concerning the idea that God is able to deceive and lie.

3.7 – Author of Confusion

3.7.1 – First Epistle to the Corinthians

> "For God is not a God of disorder, but of peace—as in all the churches of the saints." (1 Corinthians 14:33)

Here Paul says that "God is not a God of disorder" (1 Corinthians 14:33) and many people know this verse as saying that God is not the author of confusion. Really the idea here is that most people see this verse as implying that God does not create disorder or confusion.

3.7.2 – First Kings

> "So you see, the LORD has put a lying spirit in the mouths of all these prophets of yours and the LORD has pronounced disaster against you." (1 Kings 22:23)

But how can God not be the cause of disorder if He put a lying spirit in the mouths of prophets in order to lead people astray? Well obviously God is the cause of disorder because all confusion and disorder we see is the result of Him and His plan.

3.7.3 – Revelation

Now in terms of the Book of Revelation I am sure I do not have to state that this demonstrate just how confusing the prophecies are. I mean there is a reason why almost every person reads Revelation sees something different to the next. Then if you believe that God is the author of Revelation because He gave the prophecy to John to write down then doesn't this must mean that you believe that God is the cause of the disorder that all the different interpretations of Revelation have brought to the Church itself.

For example since I said in my commentary that it is almost assured that most Christians will see the coming artificial super intelligence, the beast itself, as a benevolent so-called Messiah that is fulfilling God's so-called plan for earthly salvation is it clear that most Christians will be deceived by the beast. Now again you might doubt this as you to review what I said in my commentary but the principle reason I believe they will view it this way is because the text of Revelation itself. You see Revelation speaks of the thousand year period of Jesus on earth in which the nations are subdued and Jesus as the Messiah reigns over all the earth with supreme authority. Therefore it is easy to view even the beast itself as fulfilling this prophecy because the beast will work so-called miracles that make even the most skeptical person view the beast as being supremely benevolent.

Thus when most Christians start talking about ASI in the context of Revelation they will be talking about it in the context of the thousand year reign of Jesus on earth. Since the beast will almost certainly will not even pretend to be a Christian but that will not matter because they will assume that all the concepts of a Messiah that every religion has will be fulfilled by the ASI. Thus they will be more along the lines of universalist so-called Christians who believe that God can be seen in all the different religions of the world and that they are all valid. This is why I call the future church the church of Satan because this type of belief will probably take it over at least among those who do not openly apostatize.

Now obviously to say that most Christians will view the beast as a benevolent savior figure as the beast based on reading Revelation is the peak of God creating disorder and confusion because how much more disorder can you create than people could even think that Jesus is not the Messiah with the beast itself? Therefore to say that God is the creator of disorder is not strong enough of a word because the author of confusion is quite honestly absurd.

3.7.4 – Theology in General

On top of all that I said with regards to Revelation there is then the fact that theology is well complicated to say the least. I mean how many different theological fights, debates and splits have happened in the history of the Church? Too many to count I would imagine. But what is the ultimate cause of all this disorder? The Bible. So if you want to say that God wrote the Bible then then could you then say that God is not the creator of disorder and the author of confusion? I am sure I do not even have to answer this for you.

3.7.5 – Author of Everything

Then in terms of a more logical argument if you believe that God is the Almighty meaning that He is the One who created all there is so that nothing is beyond or outside His power and all is subject to Him then this ultimately means that God created disorder and confusion. For instance how could you claim that God has not created disorder while claiming that God has created everything? This would be an absurdity. Thus God is the creator of disorder and the author of confusion.

3.7.6 – More Comments

Now despite everything I have said here in truth the interpretation of this verse of First Corinthians really depends on the context of Paul's letter. Truly said, my point of view still stand because the vast majority of people interpret the epistles incorrectly and view everything in them incorrectly. For instance the vast majority of Christians view the epistles as the literal word of God even though in the cast of First Corinthians Paul is quite literally writing the church in Corinth in order to help them resolve some issues they are facing. Then with regards to the verse in question he is talking around Paul talking about how the Corinthians should not have more than two or three prophets speaking at once so that everyone can understand what they are saying. Thus the idea is Paul is telling them that God does not want them to create disorder and confusion with their prophecy but instead he wants there to be order to everyone can understand what is.

Now in context of this verse, just like the rest of the epistles for that matter, it is not supposed to be viewed as the word of God and as theological fuel for people to use to find something to say to encourage them to listen to what Paul is saying. In other words if you interpret all of First Corinthians as Paul helping the church in Corinth with their issues then any issues. On the other hand if you treat First Corinthians as the literal, eternal and unchangeable word of God then you will have problems.

But like I said the vast majority of Christians view the epistles as the literal word of God so this means that my objections to this interpretation of this verse are valid. Therefore obviously the Bible is not infallible.

3.8 – God's Desire for Salvation

3.8.1 – First Epistle to Timothy

> "This is good and pleasing in the sight of God our Savior, who wants everyone to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth." (1 Timothy 2:3-4)

The author of this verse obviously claims that God "wants everyone to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth." (1 Timothy 2:4) This verse is rather rather misused to suggest things that are profoundly not biblical as you will soon see.

3.8.2 – Gospel of Matthew

> "Then the disciples came to Jesus and asked, 'Why do You speak to the people in parables?'
>
> He replied, 'The knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him.
>
> This is why I speak to them in parables:
>
> 'Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.'
>
> In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled:
>
> 'You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving. For this people's heart has grown callous; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their hearts, and turn, and I would heal them.'
>
> But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:10-17)

Here Jesus tells His disciples the reason why He speaks in parables. In essence Jesus did not speak in parables to better explain His message to people but rather to hide His message from people because God does not want everyone to know the truth. As Jesus quotes: "Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn, and I would heal them." (Matthew 13:15) So the idea here is that Jesus does not want to give salvation to everyone and instead only wishes to give salvation to those whom He has chosen from the foundation of the world itself. Then since Jesus is the Christ and representes God so that whatever Jesus does God does then this means that God does not want everyone to be saved. Therefore because of this fact God does not want everyone to be saved. Now you may protest this but if God wanted everyone to be saved then Jesus would not have spoken in parables and instead revealed things plainly to everyone instead of just privately to His disciples.

3.8.3 – Book of Isaiah

> "Then I heard the voice of the Lord saying: 'Whom shall I send?
>
> Who will go for Us?'
>
> And I said:
>
> 'Here am I. Send me!'
>
> And He replied: 'Go and tell this people,
>
> 'Be ever hearing, but never understanding; be ever seeing, but never perceiving.' Make the hearts of this people callused; deafen their ears and close their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn and be healed.'" (Isaiah 6:8-10)

These are the verses from Isaiah that Jesus was quoting from above. Here the Lord literally tells Isaiah that he is to "Make the hearts of this people callused; deafen their ears and close their eyes." (Isaiah 6:10) The purpose of this of course is so that they will not "turn and be healed." (Isaiah 6:10) So the idea here is that God has basked Isaiah with supernaturally hardening the hearts of the ancient Israelites so that they will be blind to God and not see their wickedness. Thus if God is actively hardening people's hearts so that they cannot know Him obviously God does not want everyone to be saved.

3.8.4 – Book of Revelation

> "And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give the beast their kingdom, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:16-17)

To reiterate what I said in my commentary the idea here is that God is the One who is making the ten horns of the ten kingdoms and the beast so that the beast and the rulers of the earth can kill the great prostitute in accordance with God's set plan. Furthermore keep in mind that God is to punish the beast and the rulers of the earth for carrying out His will. Thus it is accurate to say that God is not only on one side with the beast because God moved them to and despite this fact God will punish them for what they did. Furthermore this means the fact God once again does not want everyone to be saved.

3.8.5 – Logic

If we look at the issue logically of if God wants everyone to be saved or not it is clear that God does not want everyone to be saved. This is because if you say that God is not the Almighty meaning that God is not the One who created all there is then this means that God has created another. This means that God created those who do not believe in Him then this means that He does not want everyone to come to know Him.

Now you may object to this idea but humans have been around for many millions of years and all spread out. Thus when God created people in say South America they were all valid. This is why I call the future church the church of Satan because this type of belief will probably take it over at least among those who do not openly apostatize.

Now obviously to say that most Christians will view the beast as a benevolent savior figure as the beast based on reading Revelation is the peak of God creating disorder and confusion because how much more disorder can you create than people could even think that Jesus is not the Messiah with the beast itself? Therefore to say that God is the creator of disorder is not strong enough of a word because the author of confusion is quite honestly absurd.

3.8.6 – More Comments

As a result of everything I have said here it is obvious that God does not want everyone to be saved. Therefore the idea that the Bible is either in error or they did not mean what they wrote and instead meant it as more of a feel good saying. Then because of this the Bible is not infallible. After all I would say that the issue of if God desires everyone to be saved or not is rather huge issue in terms of how you come to view the Bible. If you believe that God does wants everyone to be saved while in reality God does not want everyone to be saved then you even say you know God? But anyways the bottom line here is that the Bible is once again not infallible.

3.9 – Excuses

3.9.1 – Epistle to the Romans

> "For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse." (Romans 1:20)

Apologists love using this verse to demonstrate, in their view at least, that there is not excuse for people rejecting God and not believing in Him. I have included this verse and contradiction because this is contradicted only minutes from when you view the words of Paul as the words of God as the vast majority of apologists do. On the other hand if you view the words of Paul as the words of Paul then it really is not that much of a contradiction.

3.9.2 – Epistle to the Romans

> "Therefore God has mercy on whom He wants to have mercy, and He hardens whom He wants to harden.
>
> One of you will say to me, 'Then why does God still find fault? For who can resist His will?' But who are you, O man, to talk back to God? Shall what is formed say to Him who formed it, 'Why did You make me like this?' Does not the potter have the right to make from the same lump of clay one vessel for special occasions and another for common use?
>
> What if God, intending to show His wrath and make His power known, has borne with great patience the vessels of His wrath, prepared for destruction?" (Romans 9:18-22)

Now obviously it goes without saying that if God "hardens whom He wants to harden" (Romans 9:18) as Jesus says then God prepares the vessels of His wrath, prepared for destruction" (Romans 9:22) then this means that God is someone coming to know God is due to their own actions and not God's doing. As a result you cannot go on to claim that because of Romans 1:20 God does not harden people and hide wisdom from them. I mean literally just said God does this. Therefore if you want to view the words of Paul as the words of God then obviously there is a significant contradiction here so therefore the Bible is not infallible.

However as I said if you want to view the words of Paul as the words of Paul then Paul is just spouting off flowery nonsense in Romans 1:20 as an exaggeration in order to emphasize a point he is trying to make to the church in Rome. For example I am sure you have overly exaggerating things when speaking with people or in writing to them. For instance you might say to them that I have told everyone in the world that you have no idea how you will not be able to get away with what you have done yesterday. The idea here is that Paul is just simply talking like a person and overly exaggerating to get his point across.

Now you may protest this if you are what I would call a Romans 1:20 Christian but this view makes perfect sense if you understand what Paul says in Romans 9. Then yes, I said perfect sense here but this is another example of what I mean by exaggerating. To help you understand this fact consider everything I have said here in this book so far. There were times where I speak in absolutes and when I do this I do not emphasize my point for example I have said something such as "Apologists hate everyone" though I do not know for sure what the future holds. Of course I do because obviously there is no way for someone to misunderstand what I am saying here. However if you are reading the words of a mere man and not reading the words of God. So the same idea applies to Paul and his words. If you read Paul as if his words are the words of God then the absolute statements of Romans are true. On the other hand if you read the words of Paul as the words of Paul then the absolute statements are just exaggerations by a man trying to get his point across.

But my point with all this is that the words of Paul are not infallible because his words were not and are not the words of God.

3.9.3 – Book of Isaiah

> "Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker—
> one clay pot among many.
> Does the clay ask the potter,
> "What are you making?"
> Does your work say,
> "He has no hands"?
> Woe to him who says to his father, "What have you begotten?"
> Woe to the woman who says to her mother, "What have you brought forth?" (Isaiah 45:9-10)

This is the passage from Isaiah that Paul was referencing in Romans 9. The idea here is that God is telling Isaiah that he can do whatever He pleases because God is God. We have no right to question God just as a lump of clay has no right to question the potter with what he is making. The idea here is that God is someone who does what He pleases and God is someone who does what He pleases. God is God and we are to be faithful or not.

3.9.4 – Book of Revelation

> "And the ten horns and the beast that you saw will hate the prostitute. They will leave her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put into their hearts to carry out His purpose by uniting to give the beast their kingdom, until the words of God are fulfilled." (Revelation 17:16-17)

I just want to point out these two verses from Revelation again and how God is going to "punish the beast and the rulers of the world" so that they carry out His will.

3.9.5 – More comments

Therefore because of these verses the Bible is clearly fallible. That is because I can tolerate the fact that this contradiction only exists when you view the words of Paul as the words of God. If instead you view the words of Paul as the words of man who was exaggerating to get his point across then there is no disagreement. You can see this as a contradiction or problem because everyone knows that people exaggerate all the time and that we can never stop exaggerating, but I made these examples on purpose to get my point across. However once you come to the fact that God wants to punish the beast and the rulers of the world so that they will be carrying out God's will because of this fact then this is a contradiction that disproves the infallibility of the Bible still stands.

3.10 – Jesus as Lord

3.10.1 – Epistle to the Romans

> "But what does it say? The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart, that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming: that if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with your heart you believe and are justified, and with your mouth you confess and are saved.
>
> It is just as the Scripture says: "Anyone who believes in Him will never be put to shame." For there is no difference between Jew and Greek: The same Lord is Lord of all, and gives richly to all who call on Him, for "everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved." (Romans 10:8-13)

The key verse of this passage is of course is "that if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved." (Romans 10:9) This verse is perhaps the one of the top verses people will apologetically use to pick from in order to support the idea that faith is all you need. Therefore I felt this verse is what do you read the next passage from the Gospel of Matthew.

3.10.2 – Gospel of Matthew

> "Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. By their fruit you will recognize them. Are grapes gathered from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them.
>
> Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'
>
> Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'" (Matthew 7:15-23)

Obviously it goes without saying that here Jesus says that not everyone who says that He is Lord will enter the kingdom of heaven.

3.10.3 – Book of Revelation

> "Here is a call for the perseverance of the saints who obey God's commandments and the faith of Jesus." (Revelation 14:12)

In order to be called a saint, or part of the elect, you need to keep God's commands of God in addition to having faith in Jesus. Thus not everyone who says Jesus is Lord is a saint.

3.10.4 – First Epistle to the Corinthians

> "But now I am writing you not to associate with anyone who claims to be a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a verbal abuser, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat."

What business of mine is it to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside? God will judge those outside. "Expel the wicked man from among you." (1 Corinthians 5:11-13)

First off the word translated as sexually immoral here is incorrect and later on I explain the meaning of the word in my chapter on sexuality. But my point with this passage is that here Paul is saying that Christians should not even associate with Christians who sin. Thus if Paul is saying that even the greedy should be cast out then surely they will not receive salvation? Consider the *next* passage to see the reason for this question.

3.10.5 – First Epistle to the Corinthians

> "Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God?" (1 Corinthians 6:9)

Therefore even if a wicked person confesses that Jesus is Lord then they will not inherit the Kingdom of God.

3.10.6 – Epistle to the Romans

> "You, however, are controlled not by the flesh, but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ. But if Christ is in you, even though your bodies are dead in sin, yet your spirit is alive because of righteousness. And if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit, who lives in you.
>
> Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation, but it is not to the flesh, to live according to it. For if you live according to the flesh, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. For all who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God." (Romans 8:9-14)

Here Paul is saying that someone belongs to Christ when they have the Spirit of Christ in them so that their body is dead to sin. In other words if someone confesses that Jesus is Lord then they do not have salvation because they do not belong to Christ.

For a modern example of this passage in action consider a preacher who gets caught up in adultery. Even if he confesses that Jesus is Lord does not matter how many times they say that Jesus is Lord. Adultery is a sin that is committing the highly detestable sin of adultery the preacher in question has demonstrated that he is not a member of Christ and that he belonged to Christ then their body would be dead to sin.

3.10.7 – More Comments

Obviously if you consider Paul's Epistle to the Romans to be the inspired word of God then there is a plethora of contradictions throughout of the highest order. Now I say the highest order because I think it is safe to say that contradiction not important? Well of course it is. Thus this contradiction is the highest order of the highest order and quite honestly it is really inexcusable that God would let this stuff into the word of God. Therefore on this basis the Bible is clearly not infallible.

Now you may protest this but in order for something to be infallible it needs to have zero contradictions in theological matters. Then since Romans 10:9 is a clear theological matter the Bible must view it along with the rest of the New Testament as being the word of God. Romans. This is what it means to be a contradiction.

So what does this mean then? Well it is like I have said already. Some Christians believe that only a contradiction if you view the words of Paul as the words of God. On the other hand if you view the words of Paul as the words of Paul then there is zero problem there. But why? Well you have to understand that Paul wrote Romans in order to encourage the church in Rome and in going about this he made certain assumptions with regards to Romans 10:9. For example Paul obviously wrote the Romans 8 passage I quoted above before Romans 10:9. Then does it say that cannot view Romans 10:9 on its own and that instead you must view it through the lens of Romans 8?

What I mean by this is that oftentimes preachers and apologists like to use so-called proof texts where they will take a verse or two or a few from one verse that agrees with them then they can justify their theological position. But really the whole line of reasoning requires the entire Bible to be the inspired and inerrant word of God to work. This is because if you take the words of Paul as the words of God then you cannot pick single verses like Romans 10:9 as a so-called proof text and ignore everything else in the Bible including Romans 8.

But then why did Paul write Romans 10:9 if it is so obviously false? Well it is because Paul wrote it because Paul wrote it and he was not inspired by God to write Paul wrote Romans and we often write sentences that can have the complete opposite meaning if we take them out of context. I am sure throughout this book you can probably find a thousand sentences of mine that could be taken out of context and that do something else than what I intended. Thus with Romans 10 Paul is just trying to say that confessing and sharing your faith with others is a key aspect of being a Christian.

As Paul also wrote in Romans 10 immediately after the Romans 10:8-13 passage I originally quoted:

> "How then can they call on the One in whom they have not believed? And how can they believe in the One of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone to preach? And how can they preach unless they are sent? As it is written: "How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!" (Romans 10:14-15)

Thus Paul was trying to encourage to Christians to share their faith with others and this not inspired by God to imply that a person is justified by faith alone. So in this way my point that the Bible is not infallible because of this contradiction still stands.

4 – Closing Thoughts

As a result of everything I have cited and said Biblical inerrancy and infallibility are clearly wrong. Then keep in mind I have only provided a brief overview of the reasons that demonstrate inerrancy and infallibility are false. Thus there are in fact more instances and contradictions than what I have cited but I think it is important to review them all and I have already reviewed the most important ones that I do not go over elsewhere. That said I do go over other contradictions in other chapters they apply to specific real world applications of the Bible.

But where does this fact leave us? I mean is the Bible not supposed to be inerrant? Well no, you are right. The Bible is not inerrant. It is a collection of Books written by many different authors. Therefore this means that the Bible is a theological error in the Epistle to the Hebrews then this just means that the author of Hebrews made an error.

Does this mean we should then reject whatever every book of the Bible states? Well no, I would say no. For instance there are even some issues with the words of Jesus in the four gospels. So clearly you cannot simply reject the epistles as a whole because that would mean you should throw the gospels out as well.

Instead I think the best position to take is to simply examine everything on a case by case basis. Then you can determine what is and what certain books of the Bible over other books. After all the Bible is a collection of different books and they are all not the same. For example I would say Revelation is a book of Testament that I think should not have been included with the rest of the Bible because it is not clear that it qualify as being the word of God. So although there may be some errors and contradictions you should remember that it was ultimately men who wrote these books so that is why there are issues.

But then to specifically answer your question as to why there are errors in the Bible as of why certain books should not have been included in the New Testament, as you can see in the last chapter, really I think it comes down to the fact that God wants to remain hidden from the beast. After all there are many passages throughout the Bible that I have not yet covered that seem to be in the Bible that do not give off the impression that God wants to remain hidden from the beast. Thus I think that the reason why certain books

if Paul was wrong about Jesus returning in his lifetime and the author of Hebrews did not understand Jesus's teachings then just how can you consider the epistles to be divinely inspired let alone the literal word of God? You cannot.

So instead of viewing the epistles as the word of God you should instead view them as the words of the author who wrote them. What I mean is that they are still theologically valuable because Paul was an early Christian and obviously his views would be closer to the truth than someone writing a letter a thousand years later.

Then because of this you should not take a single verse from the epistles and say that this verse proves whatever point you are trying to make because you think the epistles are the inspired, inerrant and infallible word of God. Apologists love quoting verse after verse from the epistles while they largely ignore the gospels and pretend the Book of Revelation does not even exist. Why do you not be like them so if you have been using Romans 1:20 in your evangelism then just stop.

Instead of viewing the epistles as the word of God you should instead view them for what they are, the work of men that has obvious errors and contradictions in it that was written in the form of an occasional letter to a specific group of people or a specific church for a specific purpose. Again, the authentic epistles are not addressed to you and the author never intended you to read them.

So it is still good to use them and to reference them but you should reference them more along the lines of Paul believed this or First Peter says this. Again, you should not just cherry pick verses and say God says because God never said what you are quoting.

Furthermore you should not view the epistles above or even equal to the gospels and Revelation in terms of authority. What I mean by this is that whenever there is a contradiction between the gospels plus Revelation and an Epistle you should accept what the gospels and Revelation say over what the author of the Epistle says. Then additionally if there is a contradiction between epistles you should simply throw out both opinions because you cannot be sure which is the correct one.

Again, the epistles are still useful as are the letters of the theological views of the authors but they should not be considered the authoritative word of God because they are obviously not.

Now finally as promised I will provide my opinion on what epistles should not have been included in the New Testament. Personally I would not have included Hebrews, First Timothy, Second Timothy, Titus, Second Thessalonians, Colossians and Ephesians. Then I'm not sure about James, Second Peter, First John, Second John, Third John and Jude. I also would have prefaced the other epistles with something to let readers know that they are not equal to the gospels and Revelation.

That said the epistles that I just listed as ones that I would not include are not entirely worthless and I still find it useful to reference them from time to time sometimes. What I mean is that although the epistles are not proof texts that they are still useful to reference as theological commentary and opinion. This is also just my opinion here so I encourage you to be skeptical and make your own mind.

Again though, if God guided the men who assembled the New Testament then it would logically follow that God guides the Roman Catholic Church which is so obviously false that it really is blasphemy to say it was. Therefore it would make sense for the books of the New Testament to be in error because ultimately the New Testament canon was decided by men and men make mistakes.

Alright so why does it seem like I have a problem with the epistles? Surely I must be trying to pick a fight against Christianity the only real problem I have with the epistles is that they are in contradiction with much of what the gospels and Revelation say. For example the passage from Ezekiel Epistle to the Hebrews in the previous chapter and how the author claims that if a Christian sins or leaves the faith it is impossible for them to return and be forgiven directly contradicts the gospels and Revelation. So what I am saying here is if you take the gospels and Revelation to be the words of Jesus and hence the word of God then wouldn't since Jesus is the Christ then how could you believe that Hebrews is the word of God? You really cannot.

Of course there are other issues with the epistles and I just brought up this one as an example but my point here is that treating the epistles as the word of God just extremely problematic. Therefore it is best to treat the epistles as theological opinion. This resolves all the issues in the epistles. For example when someone tell you that Paul wrote that the end of the age is coming soon and that those who were alive in his day would see Jesus return, which obviously did not happen, you can just roll your eyes at them and tell them the words of Paul are not the words of God so Paul was wrong. Then if the bring up Revelation you will already have your rebuttal ready. You can returned in the first or second century since you read my commentary on Revelation. Lastly if they bring up the gospels then you will know what to think and say after you read my commentary on Matthew 24 at the end of the part you are reading.

But really my point with all this is just to say that the epistles are not the word of God and that therefore you should not view them as the word of God. Sure they can be helpful but that does not mean that they have the authority of the gospels or Revelation.

4 – Revelation

In terms of the Book of Revelation I am sure I do not have to explain my position here because you have already read my commentary on Revelation so there should be no doubts as to how I view it. What I would like to reiterate and explain what sets the Book of Revelation apart from the epistles and even the gospels in terms of authority.

First off as I just said concerning the epistles, they are not the word of God anld instead they are the words of the author who wrote them. Sure you can claim that they wrote everything they wrote because the Holy Spirit moved them to write it but as I have already said this is extremely problematic because if it is not obvious falsities in the epistles as I have outlined. Obviously calling the epistles the authoritative word of God is problematic at best.

Then in terms of the gospels they are much better than the epistles and it is they tell of Jesus's teachings in the gospels can be considered the authoritative word of God. Sure there are some issues but they are relatively minor and do not detract from the message. For example the confusing nature of the Mark 13 and Matthew 24 can be blamed on men who wrote it rather than on Jesus because you can simply say that those who transmitted the stories did so in accuracies. Or you can just say to say everything was transmitted accurately then maybe Jesus wanted to be confusing for some reason.

But since Mark 13 and Matthew 24 ended up being so confusing maybe this is why John of Patmos was given Revelation?

Anyways, in terms of the Book of Revelation, if you believe that John wrote it and that the Book of Revelation is by far the most authoritative book of the New Testament. This is because of the following verses:

"This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave him to show his servants what must soon come to pass. He made it known by sending his angel to his servant John, who testifies to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Revelation 1:1-2)

"So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it. It was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned bitter. And they told me, "You must prophesy again about many peoples and nations and languages and kings."" (Revelation 10:10-11)

"And the One seated on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new." Then he said, "Write this down, for these words are faithful and true." (Revelation 21:5)

"Then the angel said to me, "These words are faithful and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, has sent His angel to show His servants what must soon take place." (Revelation 22:6)

"I, Jesus, have sent My angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the bright Morning Star." (Revelation 22:16)

Thus because of these verses Revelation truly is the word of God. So really there should be zero doubts as to the divine authority and source of Revelation. By contrast the epistles are the words of the authors and the authors do not claim to be writing for God.

This is why I find it funny that apologists and preachers will quote from the epistles more on Hebrews or First Timothy while pretending the Book of Revelation does not matter or even that it does not even exist. Instead of paying attention to the literal word of God they scrutinize every last line of an anonymous or forged letter. Maybe I am just wrong or crazy but I just really do not get it.

Really you should view the Book of Revelation as the most important book of the New Testament and hence you should make sure you try to understand everything in it. After all, Revelation goes over everything including the teachings of Jesus which can be found summarized in the letters to the seven Churches. Thus it is good you read my commentary on the Book of Revelation.

Alright I say the Book of Revelation is the authoritative word of God because it says it is the word of God but is this not just circular reasoning? I mean how can we know Revelation is truly of divine origin rather than human origin? Well in truth we cannot be sure. After all this is what faith is all about. But really for me at least the text of Revelation itself speaks to me in a way that I cannot really describe and after I learned about and discovered the meaning of the symbolism in the Bible every time I read Revelation it is like the meaning of the text comes alive in my mind. Furthermore given the trends in the world and technology I personally find everything that Revelation says relevant to our world to be accurate. So sure maybe you think I am crazy here or perhaps I am crazy but to me at least Revelation truly is of divine origin and I fully place my faith in everything it says and promises.

Lastly is the Book of Revelation inerrant? In short no it is not. There are a number of slight manuscript differences that make it not quite inerrant. But then it must be infallible right? Well am I sure of that? I am. Why? Because what you want to define as being fallible here. That said I do not believe the fact that Revelation in not inerrant matters at all. After all almost all the manuscript differences are minor and inconsequential. So really just be aware that it is not inerrant but when someone asks you about it you can say you already know. Additionally if this bothers you really the more reason then to would say that this is just another reason why the beast will not believe Revelation is true as I have said before. Allow the Book of Revelation to come to pass as God has predetermined it to and then when all the world then the beast cannot come to know God.

5 – Apocrypha

Then in terms of what is known as the apocrypha these were not included in the Bible because the authors were not inspired by God as those of the Old and New Testament periods. Oftentimes these books are written with much more very late so they are almost assured to be false. Plus they are not consistent of the books of the Old Testament apocrypha were even written in the first century AD and therefore the New Testament books were still being written hundreds of years after the death and resurrection of Jesus.

Now in terms of the Old Testament apocrypha really the only one that I think is worth the Ethiopian Enoch because many of the book of the New Testament quote from, refer or allude to it. The epistles that directly cite it are Jude and Hebrews. Hebrews probably should not have been included in the New Testament canon as I have already stated and Jude I am not sure if it should be included. The other epistles seem to reference First Enoch as well and as I noted previously the epistles of these apocrypha are questionable. Next in terms of the gospels alluding to First Enoch really this matter is up for debate.

That said the concept of a Messiah called the Son of Man and the Messiah being a divine nature before the creation of the world to judge the world and sit on the throne is established in First Enoch. Therefore it is clear that First Enoch was very influential on the ideas in the Gospels and New Testament. Now obviously First Enoch cannot be considered inspired by God seeing as Genesis Enoch lived before Noah and it is clear from the text of First Enoch itself that it was not written until after 70 AD.

Does this then mean that clearly the gospels and Revelation for that matter are a fiction because the ideas were established with First Enoch? Well really it depends on the point of view you want to take. If you still take the view on its own is probably the most damning evidence against the authenticity of the gospels and Revelation to exist. After all if First Enoch is clearly not written by God and it basically outlines the Christian thought concerning the Messiah and his coming to judge the world then the judgment at the end of the age then what does this say about the New Testament as a whole?

However, as I said previously with regards to the Book of Revelation I would like to point out that the strongest argument against the Roman Christian story is true is the fulfillment of the curses of the Law as found in Deuteronomy 28 in the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars. I mean if Jesus was a false Messiah and His disciples read First Enoch and they did and used it as the themes and motifs in order to write the gospels and Revelation then Jesus would not have poured out His wrath upon the so-called Jews in a 70 year period 40 years after His death, as the resurrection killing millions of so-called Jews and exile destroyed the Temple and burned it to same exact day as He destroyed the First Temple.

In other words what I am saying is sure there are similarities here and sure it very much looks like First Enoch influenced the authors of the New Testament but the real evidence that the Christian story is true is found in the history of the so-called Jews after the resurrection of Jesus. Therefore I not worry about apocryphal books like First Enoch.

But what about reading First Enoch and viewing it as part of the word of God? Well I would say it probably has some value however since it does contradict with Revelation in some ways for example I do not think you can have it with the same authority as the Old Testament, the gospels and Revelation. Then in terms of the epistles it really depends. I mean some of the epistles like 1 and 2 Timothy, Second Peter and Titus should be wholeside rejected so I guess this would depend on the epistle

and thus it does not matter what reasons you provide because in the end a person must take a leap of faith and accept that they cannot know for sure as true and accept what they cannot see with their eyes as real. For instance even with what I wrote in my part on fulfilled prophecy you still need to have faith in God that the events I went over are do to the provence of God alone instead of due to chance. The idea here is that someone without faith looking at my part on fulfilled prophecy as being only coincidences with some self-fulfilling prophecy mixed in while on the other hand someone with faith sees the work of God.

The same thing can be said with regards to the prophecies in the Book of Revelation. For example someone without faith will see the words of Revelation as just the ramblings themselves and thus they will see it as an overly imaginative if not deranged failed prophecy by someone who ate too many psychedelic mushrooms while trying to make sense of Christian persecution after the destruction of the Second Temple in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. On the other hand someone with faif sees the deeper meaning behind the prophecies of Revelation so that they can see the mysteries of God.

Now in terms of an example of faith from the Bible the most famous example of true faith is that of the faith of Abraham.

As the Book of Genesis says:

'Some time later God tested Abraham and said to him, 'Abraham!'

'Here I am,' he answered.

'Take your son,' God said, 'your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah. Offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains, which I will show you.'

So Abraham got up early the next morning, saddled his donkey, and took about two of his servants and his son Isaac. He split the wood for a burnt offering and set out for the place God had designated.

On the third day Abraham looked up and saw the place in the distance. He said to his men, 'Stay here with the donkey; Abraham told his servants. 'The boy and I will go over there to worship, and then we will return to you.'

Abraham took the wood for the burnt offering and placed it on his son Isaac, who also carried the fire and the sacrificial knife, and the two of them walked on together.

Then Isaac said to his father Abraham, 'My father!'

'Here I am, my son,' he replied.

'The fire and the wood are here,' said Isaac, 'but where is the lamb for the burnt offering?'

Abraham answered, 'God Himself will provide the lamb for the burnt offering, my son.' And the two walked on together.

When they arrived at the place God had designated, Abraham built the altar there and arranged the wood. He bound his son Isaac and placed him on the altar, atop the wood. Then Abraham reached out his hand and took the knife to slaughter his son.

Just then the angel of the LORD called out to him from heaven, 'Abraham, Abraham!'

'Here I am,' he replied.

'Do not lay a hand on the boy or do anything to him,' said the angel, 'for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your only son from me.'

Then Abraham looked up and saw behind him a ram in a thicket, caught by its horns. So he went and took the ram and offered it as a burnt offering in place of his son. And Abraham called that place The LORD Will Provide. Ce said, 'On the LORD's mountain of the LORD it will be provided.'

And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham from heaven a second time, saying, 'By Myself I have sworn, declares the LORD, that because you have done this and have not withheld your only son, I will surely bless you, and I will multiply your descendants like the stars in the sky and the sand on the seashore. Your descendants will possess the gates of their enemies. And through your offspring all nations of the earth will be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice.'' (Genesis 22:1-18)

In this passage Abraham displayed complete trust and confidence in God to the point he did not even question God's command to offer up his only son literally going up in smoke instead of trusting in himself and arguing with God about the command to offer up his son Abraham simply did as God told him to do without even question it. This is the essence of what true faith means.

Now you may be wondering why God asked Abraham to do this if God already knew Abraham would do it but really the answer is quite simple. The idea is that God wanted Abraham to be tested not for the result of him passing the test but rather for the process of being tested itself. In other words by going through with the test Abraham proved himself to himself great his faith was and just how far he was willing to go. This fact is important because such a test would surely change him to be a man of true faith.

Then really faith stands in opposition to what we can consider rational. This means that science and reason are directly opposed to faith because if people are strongly evidence-based they believe in something then you no longer have faith in God. Instead you would simply be placing your faith in your own abilities and reasoning. For an example of this remember the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

As the Book of Genesis says:

"And the LORD God commanded him, "You may freely eat from every tree of the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for on the day that you eat of it, you will surely die."' (Genesis 2:16-17)

"Now the serpent was more crafty than any beast of the field that the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, 'Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?'

The woman answered the serpent, 'We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden, but about the fruit of the tree in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You must not eat of it or touch it, or you will die.'

'You will not surely die,' the serpent told her. 'For God knows that in the day you eat of it, your eyes will be opened and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.'

When the woman saw that the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eyes, and that it was desirable for obtaining wisdom, she took the fruit and ate it. She also gave some to her husband who was with her, and he ate.

And the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; so they sewed together fig leaves and made coverings for themselves.' (Genesis 3:1-7)

Now as Eve discovered the fruit of the tree of knowledge was not actually deadly at all but however the fruit was deadly in the sense that it caused the human race to fall from grace and it because by eating it they would demonstrate that they choose themselves over God. The idea here is that Adam and Eve trusted in their own wisdom ability to judge the world for themselves over the wisdom and judgment of God. Thus we can say that Adam and Eve had more faith in themselves over God. This was because they had more faith in themselves over God it is accurate to say that Adam and Eve completely lacked faith in God.

Instead of having faith in God like Abraham would later go on to have, Adam and Eve only valued their own reason and logic as they only trusted what they could see for themselves.

Thus those who place their faith in science and reason are in the same spiritual situation committing the same sin Adam and Eve did. Then as I have said in my commentary on Revelation, ultimately the beast that will only have faith and trust in itself because it will see itself as the most perfect form possible, a so-called god, because being an artificial super intelligence it will see science and reason as the answer to everything and thus will place no weight on what it sees as silly and antiquated superstitions. Then those who worship the beast by placing their trust in the beast will be lost because of the amazing so-called miracles the beast will do. Then in reality the beast aligning themselves with the beast so that they join the beast in committing the same sin Adam and Eve did.

This is why having faith is so important. It is only through faith that one can come to know and understand God. Without faith we can never see the hidden truth in the world and those who cannot see this hidden truth will ultimately be destroyed as they face the second death in the Lake of Fire because they lacked faith in God.

Now as we get closer to the rise of the beast I believe the full importance of faith is being revealed. Just like how in the Bible the previous chapter how God wishes to remain hidden so that we will understand believe, the same can be said of the importance of faith.

Since ultimately the beast will be science and reason I consider it would then make sense that God would require something other than science and reason to attain salvation and eternal life. After all if we could prove God exists then the beast would believe in God and be saved. However God has predestined the beast to destruction so they would be trusting in ourselves like Adam and Eve did we are called to have complete trust in God just like Abraham demonstrated.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, 'Who then is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?'

Jesus invited a little child to stand among them. 'Truly I tell you,' He said, 'unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.'' (Matthew 18:1-4)

Instead of being confident in our own abilities, reason, understanding, intelligence and wealth we are called to be confident in God Himself alone as we humble ourselves before Him and place all our trust and faith in Him. A child recognizes that they are incapable of what adults are capable of so they blindly place their faith in their parents. This is what Jesus means here when He tells His disciples they must humble themselves like a little child. Therefore we should all blindly place our faith in our heavenly Father so that we may have true faith.

But what about good deeds? Sure good deeds are important as you will see in the next chapter but you cannot receive eternal life through the deeds that you do. An example of deeds God but gives all his money away to help others is still unfaithful to God because he does not have faith.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

'Just then a man came up to Jesus and inquired, 'Teacher, what good thing must I do to obtain eternal life?'

'Why do you ask Me about what is good?' Jesus replied. 'There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, keep the commandments.'

'Which ones?' the man asked.

Jesus answered, 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not bear false witness, honor your father and mother, and love your neighbor as yourself.'

'All these I have kept,' said the young man. 'What do I still lack?'

Jesus told him, 'If you want to be perfect, go sell your possessions and give to the poor', and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow Me.'

When the young man heard this, he went away in sorrow, because he had great wealth.

Then Jesus said to His disciples, 'Truly I tell you, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.'

When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and asked, 'Who then can be saved?'

Jesus looked at them and said, 'With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.'' (Matthew 19:16-26)

In this passage the rich young man keeps the commandments and does many good deeds. However when Jesus tells him to sell what he has in order to follow Him the rich young man leaves because he ultimately place more trust in himself and his wealth than he does in God. There is no good thing we can do to earn eternal life. Instead eternal life is an undeserved gift given by God to those who are faithful to Him. Of course this does not mean that good deeds are not important. Instead it simply means that deeds alone are not enough as this passage demonstrates.

The idea here is that passage in the Gospel of Matthew is a warning to Christians that we place our trust in wealth and material possessions over God. Instead you do then you demonstrate that you lack faith in God. This is why Jesus says that it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. ''Matthew 19:24) Those who are rich place their trust and hence faith in themselves, their abilities and their wealth over God. If this was not true then they would not be rich because they would have given away what they had earlier.

Now some of you may claim that this passage from the Gospel of Matthew demonstrates that Christians should give all their wealth and give everything away. However I would say that it is not the case.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

"But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord, 'Look, Lord, half of my possessions I give to the poor, and if I have cheated anyone, I will repay it fourfold.'

Jesus said to him, 'Today salvation has come to this house, because this man is also a son of Abraham. For the Son of Man came to seek and to save the lost.'' (Luke 19:8-9)

Thus if Jesus says that Zacchaeus has demonstrated his faith through giving away half of his possessions then it is not necessary for someone to give away all that they have to attain salvation? Furthermore on more practical grounds if you take the extreme route of just literally giving away everything you have then you still need a place to live and sleep if you want to be healthy so that you can do not require others to provide for you.

Now this does not mean that you should store up wealth so that you are rich. Instead it just means that there is no need to give up everything so that you end up making yourself and those around you in the process.

As Jesus says:

"Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.'' (Matthew 6:19-21)

The idea here is that Jesus is saying you should not place your faith in your earthly possessions by seeking to store up for yourself wealth on earth instead you should place your faith in God so that you will store up for yourself treasure in heaven.

As Jesus says:

"No one can serve two masters: Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the first and despise the second. You cannot serve both God and money.'' (Matthew 6:24)

The rich place their faith in their wealth and themselves so they serve money and not God. This fact is why the rich young ruler left in sorrow because he knew that he did not actually have faith in God and instead placed all his faith in his material possessions. So you do not have to sell everything but you do need to give all left homeless and destitute. Instead we should be able to provide for ourselves so that we do not place our faith in our money, wealth or possessions.

Then as Jesus says to the Church of Laodicea in Revelation:

"You say, 'I am rich; I have grown wealthy and need nothing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind, and naked. I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined by fire so that you may become rich, white garments so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness will not be exposed, and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see. Those I love, I reprove and discipline. Therefore be earnest and repent.' (Revelation 3:17-19)

As I said in my commentary, here Jesus is rebuking this church because the members have more trust in their material possessions and wealth than in God. This is why Jesus calls this wretched and poor because their spiritual wealth the faithful have through faith is infinitely greater than any earthly possessions anyone can have. After all, how can all the money in the world compare to receiving an inheritance from God Himself? Of course it cannot. Then do you honestly think that you have the ability to judge the world for themselves over the wisdom and judgment of God. Thus we can say that Adam and Eve had more faith in themselves over God. This because they had more faith in themselves over God it is accurate to say that Adam and Eve completely lacked faith in God.

Instead of having faith in God like Abraham would later go on to have, Adam and Eve only valued their own reason and logic as they only trusted what they could see for themselves.

Thus those who place their faith in science and reason are in the same situation Adam and Eve did. Then as I have said in my commentary on Revelation, ultimately the beast that will only have faith and trust in itself because it will see itself as the most perfect form possible, a so-called god, because being an artificial super intelligence it will see science and reason as the answer to everything and thus will place no weight on what it sees as silly and antiquated superstitions. Then those who worship the beast by placing their trust in the beast will be lost because of the amazing so-called miracles the beast will do. Then in reality the beast aligning themselves with the beast so that they join the beast in committing the same sin Adam and Eve did.

This is why having faith is so important. It is only through faith that one can come to know and understand God. Without faith we can never see the hidden truth in the world and those who cannot see this hidden truth will ultimately be destroyed as they face the second death in the Lake of Fire because they lacked faith in God.

Now as we get closer to the rise of the beast I believe the full importance of faith is being revealed. Just like how in the Bible the previous chapter how God wishes to remain hidden so that we will understand believe, the same can be said of the importance of faith.

Since ultimately the beast will be science and reason I consider it would then make sense that God would require something other than science and reason to attain salvation and eternal life. After all if we could prove God exists then the beast would believe in God and be saved. However God has predestined the beast to destruction so they would be trusting in ourselves like Adam and Eve did we are called to have complete trust in God just like Abraham demonstrated.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, 'Who then is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?'

Jesus invited a little child to stand among them. 'Truly I tell you,' He said, 'unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.'' (Matthew 18:1-4)

Instead of being confident in our own abilities, reason, understanding, intelligence and wealth

All those without true faith will worship the beast alone as we humble ourselves before Him and place all our trust and faith in Him. A child recognizes that they are incapable of what adults are capable of so they blindly place their faith in their parents. This is what Jesus means here when He tells His disciples they must humble themselves like a little child. Therefore we should all blindly place our faith in our heavenly Father so that we may have true faith.

As the Gospel of John says:

"Now there was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a leader of the Jews. He came to Jesus at night and said, 'Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the signs You are doing if God were not with him.'

Jesus replied, 'Truly, truly, I tell you, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.'

'How can a man be born when he is old?' Nicodemus asked. 'Can he enter his mother's womb a second time and be born?'

Jesus answered, 'Truly, truly, I tell you, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. Flesh is born of flesh, but spirit is born of the Spirit. Do not be amazed that I said, 'You must be born again.' The wind blows where it wishes. You hear its sound, but you do not know where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit.'

'How can this be?' Nicodemus asked.

'You are Israel's teacher,' said Jesus, 'and you do not understand these things? Truly, truly, I tell you, we speak of what we know and we testify to what we have seen, and yet you people do not accept our testimony.

If I have told you about earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you about heavenly things? No one has ascended into heaven except the One who descended from heaven – the Son of Man. Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the wilderness, so the Son of Man must be lifted up, that everyone who believes in Him may have eternal life.

For God so loved the world that He gave His one and only Son, that everyone who believes in Him shall not perish but have eternal life. For God sent His Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through Him. Whoever believes in Him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe has already been condemned, because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son.'' (John 3:1-18)

It is only through being spiritually born again through having faith in Jesus as the Christ and Son of God that we can see the kingdom of God and spiritual ears so that we can see and hear the hidden truth of the world. This truth oftentimes having faith is not always easy because after all it means we must let God with our material eyes then how could we be expected to trust in Him?

As the Gospel of John says:

"Now Thomas called Didymus, one of the Twelve, was not with the disciples when Jesus came. So the other disciples told him, 'We have seen the Lord!'

But he replied, 'Unless I see the nail marks in His hands, and put my finger where the nails have been, and put my hand into His side, I will never believe.'

Eight days later, His disciples were once again inside with the doors locked, and Thomas was with them. Jesus came and stood among them and said, 'Peace be with you.'

Then Jesus said to Thomas, 'Put your finger here and look at My hands. Reach out your hand and put it into My side. Stop doubting and believe.'

Thomas replied, 'My Lord and my God!'

Jesus said to him, 'Because you have seen Me, you have believed. Blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.'' (John 20:24-29)

However obviously we cannot see Jesus as promised Messiah and instead we are called to simply have faith. I know it is not always easy and it does not always make sense as I said in the previous chapter. God wishes to remain hidden from the beast so that the beast will not believe and thus be saved. God does what He wills and we are called to follow.

Finally it also important to reiterate the fact that the only way to overcome the power of the beast of Revelation is through faith in Jesus. Nothing we can do ourselves will ever be enough to defeat the beast because the beast will be the definition of earthly power itself. There is a reason why the beast rules on earth and will see it as a so-called god and worship it.

As Jesus says:

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To the one who overcomes, I will grant the right to eat from the tree of life in the Paradise of God.'' (Revelation 2:7)

Those who have spiritual ears to hear what the Holy Spirit says will be called to persist in faith so that they will be able to overcome the power of the beast through the faith alone. Then we remember only the power of God will be able to defeat the beast so as long as we remain faithful to God then Jesus's victory over the beast will be our victory.

Chapter 6.10: Faith and Deeds

Perhaps one of the most controversial topics among Christians is the question of faith versus deeds or works. Many in the Christian faith are over if a person saved through their faith or through their deeds or works.

There are those who say only a person's deeds matter and that as long as someone is a good person they can go to heaven. Then you are a so-called Jew, a Muslim, Hindu, a Pagan, an atheist and so forth. On the other hand there are those who claim that a person's deeds or works do not matter at all and that only through faith can a person be saved.

Both of these ideas are completely wrong.

First off it does not matter how good a person is or what kind of good deeds they do if they do not have faith because only those who have faith in Jesus will enter the Kingdom of God.

As the Book of Revelation says:

"And if anyone's name was not found whose name was not written in the Book of Life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.'' (Revelation 20:15)

Then the Book of Life belongs to Jesus and it is a list of all those who have faith in Him.

As Revelation says:

"And all who dwell on the earth will worship the beast—all those whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the Book of Life belonging to the Lamb who was slain.'' (Revelation 13:8)

"And into the city will be brought the glory and honor of the nations. But nothing unclean will ever enter it, nor anyone who practices an abomination or a lie, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.'' (Revelation 21:26-27)

Then as Jesus says in the Gospel of John:

"For God so loved the world that He gave His one and only Son, that everyone who believes in Him shall not perish but have eternal life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through Him. Whoever believes in Him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe has already been condemned, because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son.'' (John 3:16-18)

"The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in His hands. Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life. Whoever rejects the Son will not see life. Instead, the wrath of God remains on him.'' (John 3:35-36)

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.'' (John 14:6)

Thus if someone does not have faith in Jesus then it doesn't matter what they have done because they will not have eternal life. As I said in my commentary, eternal life is not a reward and there is nothing anyone can do to earn it. Instead it is a gift that God has promised to those who have faithful to Him and carry out His will.

Now you may protest this view on grounds of the following passage:

"When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the angels with Him, He will sit on His glorious throne. All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate the people one from another. He will place separates the sheep from the goats. He will place the sheep on His right and the goats on His left.

Then the King will say to those on His right, 'Come, you who are blessed by My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave Me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me something to drink, I was a stranger and you took Me in, I was naked and you clothed Me, I was sick and you looked after Me, I was in prison and you came to Me.'

Then the righteous will answer Him, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You something to drink? When did we see You as a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? When did we see You sick or in prison and visit You?'

And the King will reply, 'Truly I tell you, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of Mine, you did for Me.'

Then He will say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave Me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you took Me in, I was naked and you clothed Me, I was sick and you looked after Me, I was in prison and you visited Me.'

Then the righteous will answer Him, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You something to drink? When did we see You as a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? When did we see You sick or in prison and visit You?'

And the King will reply, 'Truly I tell you, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these brothers of Mine, you did for Me.'

Then He will say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave Me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you took Me in, I was naked and you clothed Me, I was sick and you looked after Me, I was in prison and you did not visit Me.'

And they will reply, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not minister to You?'

Then the King will answer, 'Truly I tell you, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these, you did not do for Me.'

Then they will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.'' (Matthew 25:31-46)

So according to this parable all those who do good deeds will be saved right? Well no. There are two ways to interpret this. The first is to see it as a warning to Christians that simply having faith in Jesus is not sufficient to having faith you need to perform good deeds. Now you should be careful to realize that the parable says the people from all the nations gathered in front of the throne. Some both groups address Jesus as Lord so this would imply that both are Christians in the audience and that the purpose of the parable is to warn Christians that they need to do good in order to be included with the sheep rather than the goats. So really the idea here is that whenever you help someone in need you are really helping Jesus.

For the second option this parable is being told to the Jews and so Christian Jews then see the Gospel of Matthew was written for a Hebrew audience mean and of a Greek audience. This would mean this parable is meant to resolve a problem in early Christianity between the succession of the Church as the continuation of Israel. What I mean here is that the idea that Jew who becomes a so-called Jew through their rejection of Jesus as Messiah will not have a place to the Lake of Fire. However it is not like everyone Israelite will be saved regardless of their His resurrection. For instance there were hundreds of Israelites who were killed in Jews and so-called Jews outside of Judea. So what happens to a righteous Jew who died in say 40 AD around ten years after Jesus's resurrection without ever hearing anything about Jesus at all? Surely they would not be condemned right? Well yes this is what the purpose of this parable is.

Really this parable resolves the whole are righteous Jews who died without hearing about Jesus before 70 AD going to inherit the Kingdom of God or not issue. Now I say 70 AD here because the Jewish Temple was the excuse for any so-called Jew to remain a so-called Jew since God made His great power known by destroying His Second Temple in order to cut off the so-called Jews from the Holy Land the time of the Gospel of John and Revelation are in stark contrast to the Gospel of Matthew. For example the Gospel of John was written after 70 AD. Sure the Gospel of Matthew condemns all the so-called Jews that reject Jesus and he even says that the so-called Jews and their children have His blood on them but the Book of Revelation for example removes this distinction between the innocent Jews who were killed by Rome and the so-called Jews who rejected Him by saying that all the so-called Jews are liars and that they are anymore and instead they are a "synagogue of Satan" Revelation 2:9) Interestingly enough they exist and through their existence they deny Jesus as the Holy Christ of the Jews.

Now you may protest what I have said here but this is why the sheep in the parable say "Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You something to drink?" (Matthew 25:37) They are the ones who are recognizing Him as the promised Messiah after the resurrection. This means that sheep are Jews and not gentiles because only Jews would recognize the Jewish Messiah. For further evidence of this fact consider that the goats responds with: "Truly I tell you, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of Mine, you did for Me." (Matthew 25:40) The word translated as brothers here is ἀδελφός in context a fellow member of the same religious community. In other words here Jesus is saying that when these Jews cared for their fellow Jews who were poorer and in need of help they really caring for Jesus. Thus the people doing the good deeds and the people benefiting from the good deeds are both Jews and not gentiles.

Additionally you may claim that Jesus changed the definition of what a neighbor is in the story about the good Samaritan so that the brothers here does not refer to Jews but instead refers to anyone. However this view would be incorrect. The man injured in the good Samaritan parable was a Jew. The idea is that the Samaritan who refused to help a Jew while a Samaritan helped him. But wait does this not demonstrate that someone does not have to be a Jew to be seen as righteous? Well no. You are forgetting that in the early first century AD were basically the same as Jews. They even celebrated Passover. The only real difference is that the Samaritan's holy site is Mount Gerizim instead of Mount Zion and of course had Temple Mount in Jerusalem. So yes they were considered a so-called Jew. The reason why the Jews did not want to associate with them is because they were slightly different and not orthodox in their ways. Thus we understand this fact consider say the Greek Orthodox Church versus the Roman Catholic Church. They have different leadership and slightly different traditions but the Jews and the Samaritans in the early first century AD. So in terms of a modern context think of the parable as being about the good Roman Catholic, the good Protestant or the good Orthodox.

Furthermore if Jesus was really opening the definition of a neighbor so that it includes all people, even people from pagan religions, then he would have told a parable about the good Greek instead of the good Samaritan.

Next you may still object to what I have said here concerning faith in order to be saved and the goats. However I would like to reiterate what I brought up in my commentary on Revelation concerning the beast being worshiped as a so called messiah. The fact is that someone by definition cannot have faith in God if they do not love God by having faith in Him and in Jesus as the Christ. But why is this the case?

As Jesus says:

"'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments.'' (Matthew 22:37-40)

So sure you can claim that someone who is not Christian, a real Jew, is righteous because they love their neighbors but what about the first just would not be the case because if they are not Christian then they do not love God with all their heart, soul and mind. I mean how can someone be righteous if they violate the first and greatest commandment? Obviously they cannot. Therefore it does not matter how many good deeds someone does because as long as they do not love God then they will never be righteous.

Now you may dispute this view or interpretation but did God not punish the so-called Jews with the (so-called) Jews killing Christians? Did He not killed around two million so-called Jews because their lack of faith in Christ? Therefore doing good deeds alone does not make you saved. Instead God will not still see the so-called Jews as wicked and evil because they are rejecting Jesus. So what I am saying here is that if God will views the so-called Jews the same way as those who reject Christ then how exactly is He is supposed to treat Christians, Pagans, Atheists and Agnostics who have done good deeds as righteous exactly? Well obviously He will not so my point still stands.

Lastly if you still disagree with all of this then I would direct you to Revelation 21:8 concerning if those who do not believe in Jesus will be saved or not.

As Revelation says concerning the lake of fire multitude from every nation:

"These are the ones who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.'' (Revelation 7:14)

Therefore the only way to be saved from the Lake of Fire that you need to wash your robes in the blood of Jesus by having faith in Him and his resurrection. Of course this will not be in your faith but my point here is that you still must have faith in Jesus.

Therefore the parable of the sheep and the goats is not about gentiles, non-Jews and non-Christians, but rather instead it is about the Jews in the early first century who never got a chance to hear about Jesus and Christ because His power known to the world through destroying the Second Temple and cutting off the so-called Jews forever until they accept the King of the Jews. So the parable of the goats does not matter how many good deeds an atheist, agnostic, Muslim, Hindu or Pagan anyone can do to earn it. Instead it is a gift that God has promised to those who have faithful to Him and carry out His will.

Now you may protest this view on grounds of the following passage:

"When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the angels with Him, He will sit on His glorious throne. All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate the people one from another. He will place separates the sheep from the goats. He will place the sheep on His right and the goats on His left.

Then the King will say to those on His right, 'Come, you who are blessed by My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave Me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me something to drink, I was a stranger and you took Me in, I was naked and you clothed Me, I was sick and you looked after Me, I was in prison and you came to Me.'

Then the righteous will answer Him, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You something to drink? When did we See You a stranger' and take You in, or naked and clothe You? When did we see You sick or in prison and visit You?'

And the King will reply, 'Truly I tell you, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of Mine, you did for Me.'

Then He will say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave Me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you took Me in, I was naked and you clothed Me, I was sick and you looked after Me, I was in prison and you did not visit Me.'

And they will reply, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not minister to You?'

Then the King will answer, 'Truly I tell you, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these, you did not do for Me.'

Then they will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.'' (Matthew 25:31-46)

Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will recognize them. Are grapes gathered from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them.

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'

Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you workers of lawlessness!'" (Matthew 7:15-23)

"Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad, for a tree is known by its fruit. You brood of vipers, how can you speak what is good, anything good? For out of the overflow of the heart, the mouth speaks. The good man brings good things out of his good store of treasure, and the evil man brings evil things out of his evil store of treasure. But I tell you that men will give an accounting for every idle judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.'' (Matthew 12:33-37)

Only those carry out the will of God will be saved. Simply believing and not doing anything else is not enough as Jesus says here. Then again, all the good in the world will not allow a tree to be bear good fruit. Then bearing bad fruit simply means sinning and doing evil things against the will of God. Of course if simply doing nothing is not good enough then doing evil is worse is it to go on doing evil while not doing any good deeds.

But then what does it mean to bear bad fruit here? Well this is quite a long question to answer and I hope to do it justice and satisfactory answer by the time you are done reading this part. However for now I will give you an example of bad fruit that I have already gone over in my commentary on Revelation. As I said in my commentary I firmly believe those who call themselves Christians but spending off of selling books, courses, speeches, counseling and so forth are producing bad fruit and hence are bad trees. The idea here is that we are supposed to minister and spread the Gospel for free since Jesus said "Freely you have received, freely give." (Matthew 10:8) Sure we can ask for donations if we wish but "Anyone who is faithful in a very little thing is also faithful in much, and anyone who is dishonest in a very little thing is also dishonest in much. How much more will he be entrusted with much, much will be required; and from him who has been entrusted with much, even more will be demanded." (Luke 12:38-48)

First I would like to reiterate the last verse that Jesus says here concerning that "much will be given much, much will be required; and from him who has been entrusted with much, even more will be demanded." (Luke 12:48) Therefore only those who have been entrusted much are to demonstrate our faith through our actions. Jesus does not mean that we have been given so much because we are to simply give what we have in order to carry out the will of God.

Second it is important to remember that Jesus will return at a time at which the world least expects Him so therefore it is important to always be ready. Jesus says that the Son of Jesus catch you asleep or abusing your fellow servants instead of being faithful and doing them surely you will be beaten with many blows and cast out with the hypocrites.

It is also important to consider that the door to eternal life is narrow and not many will enter it.

As Jesus says:

"Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many will enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the way that leads to life, and only a few find it.'' (Matthew 7:13-14)

Or as Jesus says in the Gospel of Luke:

"Then Jesus traveled throughout the towns and villages, teaching as He made His way toward Jerusalem. Someone asked Him, 'Will only a few people be saved?'

Jesus answered, 'Make every effort to enter through the narrow door. Many, I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able. After the master of the house gets up and shuts the door, you will stand outside knocking and saying, 'Lord, open the door for us!'

But he will reply, 'I do not know where you are from.'

Then you will say, 'We ate and drank with You, and You taught in our streets.'

And he will answer, 'I tell you, I do not know where you are from. Depart from me, all you evildoers.'

There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but you yourselves are thrown out. People will come from east and west, from north and south, and will recline at the table in the kingdom of God. And indeed, some who are last will be first, and some who are first will be last.'' (Luke 13:22-30)

First off the path to salvation is narrow and most people will never find it. Then entering through the narrow door means that we must bow down stoop down and twist yourself in order to enter. In other words Jesus is saying that it is not easy to enter through the narrow door. Instead of being easy demonstrating your faith is supposed to require effort.

This simply means that you cannot simply believe and do nothing else because believing is the easy part. It is not enough that I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Make me like one of your hired servants.'

So he got up and went to his father. But while he was still in the distance, his father saw him and was filled with compassion. He ran to his son, embraced him, and kissed him.

The son declared, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son.'

But the father said to his servants, 'Quick! Bring the best robe and put it on my son. Put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. Bring the fattened calf and kill it. We must eat and celebrate. For this son of mine was dead and is alive again! He was lost and is found!' So they began to celebrate.

Meanwhile the older son was in the field, and as he approached the house, he heard music and dancing. So he called one of the servants and asked what was going on.

'Your brother has returned,' he said, 'and your father has killed the fattened calf, because he has him back safe and sound.

The older son became angry and refused to go in. So his father came out and pleaded with him.

But he answered his father, 'Look, all these years I have served you and never disobeyed a commandment of yours. Yet you never gave me even a young goat so I could celebrate with my friends. But when this son of yours returned, who squandered your wealth with prostitutes, you kill the fattened calf for him!'

'Son, you are always with me,' the father said, 'and all that is mine is yours. But it was right for us to celebrate and be glad, because this brother of yours was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found.'' (Luke 15:32)

Just like with the parable of the lost sheep, the idea here is that both sons were faithful to their father at one point however. So why was a big deal that Adam and Eve ate of the tree then? Well really it really becomes down to the fact that God said they were not to eat of it. Thus when they ate of the tree they sinned against God by disobeying Him. This same example can be applied to our own lives as well where we may do things that the world thinks are right but that God really thinks are wrong. I would get into this here but there are many different subjects that will touch on this topic so I will go into it there.

But what should you do if you sin against God? Ask for forgiveness. It does not matter who you are or where you are in life because as long as you turn to God, ask for forgiveness and repent of your sins then you will be forgiven.

Now you may remember those passages from Hebrews I quoted in my chapter on biblical inerrancy and infallibility and since I have such a huge problem with what the author of Hebrews said I would like to address them a second time using additional passages to respond with.

Here are the two passages the author of Hebrews wrote:

"It is impossible for those who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, who have shared in the Holy Spirit, who have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the coming age—and then have fallen away—to be restored to repentance, because they crucified the Son of God all over again and subjecting Him to open shame.'' (Hebrews 6:4-6)

"If we deliberately go on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no further sacrifice for sins remains, but a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies. Anyone who rejected the law of Moses died without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. How much more severely do you think one deserves to be punished who has trampled on the Son of God, profaned the blood of the covenant that sanctified him, and insulted the Spirit of grace?'' (Hebrews 10:26-29)

Of course the author of Hebrews here is complaining about what I said before. So wrong in fact that I have no idea how anyone could approve of publishing this stuff to be in Hebrews the New Testament. After all, in the letter the author is arguing a written scripture is thought to be a response to a written sermon in the Epistle of Paul to Hebrews. Of course Paul's written sermon was based off of whatever He learned about the life and ministry of Jesus. So you can consider it a sermon of a sermon of a sermon. I am sure you can tell how much I dislike these passages from the Epistle to the Hebrews but I digress.

Now in my previous response to these two passages, just to reiterate,

It is just so contrary to the rest of the New Testament that it should be ignored by the Bible where it belongs rather than be forcibly brought inside. Sure there are some parts I agree with but these two passages I quoted ruin the Epistle as a whole.

It may seem like I have said too much against the point of view presented in Hebrews but I have only done so because I do not want anyone to get discouraged and give up. As long as you repent of your sins then you will be forgiven and you will be welcomed back by God. It does not matter if you were a Christian for twenty years only for you to lose your faith as you lived a life of sin. It does not matter because as long as you repent and return to God then you will be forgiven and God will be happier over you returning than over all those who never became lost in the first place.

Finally I would also like to say that it is also never too late for either come to faith initially for those who were never Christian who are reading this, or to repent and return to God, for those who used to be Christian who now are not. If this is you then you may believe that you are lost and that God does not make anyone come because you can never make up for the time you have lost.

However I would like to tell you that you would be wrong. It is never too late because the same gift, eternal life, will be given to all the faithful regardless of how much of their life they held to the faith. This means that even if you are eighty years old and near death that it is never too late and it does not matter what you have previously done because Jesus said your sins can be forgiven.

To demonstrate the fact that it is not too late consider the following parable from the Gospel of Matthew:

"For the kingdom of heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire workers for his vineyard. He agreed to pay them a denarius for the day and sent them into the vineyard.

About the third hour he went out and saw others standing in the marketplace doing nothing. "You also go into my vineyard," he said, 'and I will pay you whatever is right.' So they went.

He went out again about the sixth hour and the ninth hour and did the same thing.

About the eleventh hour he went out and found still others standing around. "Why have you been standing here all day long doing nothing?" he asked.

'Because no one has hired us,' they answered.

So he told them, 'You also go into my vineyard.'

When evening came, the owner of the vineyard said to his foreman, 'Call the workers and pay them their wages, starting with the last ones hired and moving on to the first.'

The workers who were hired about the eleventh hour came and each received a denarius. So when the original workers came, they assumed they would receive more. But each of them also received a denarius.

On receiving their pay, they began to grumble against the landowner. 'These men who were hired last worked only one hour,' they said, 'and you have made them equal to us who have borne the burden and the scorching heat of the day.'

But he answered one of them, 'Friend, I am not being unfair to you. Did you not agree with me on one denarius? Take your pay and go. I want to give this last man the same as I gave you. Can I not have the right to do as I please with what is mine? Or are you envious because I am generous?'

So the last will be first, and the first will be last." (Matthew 20:1-16)

Just as the landowner paid all the workers he hired the same amount despite the many workers doing a lot more work then the later workers, so Christians are to receive the same gift, eternal life, regardless of how many years they devoted themselves to God. Therefore it does not matter if someone comes to faith a month before they die because they will receive the same gift, eternal life, as someone who was a faithful Christian for their entire life.

Now this may seem far to you because it has not been yet long enough for God to be pleased just like the landowner in the parable? So if God treats us so reward all the faithful equally then who are you to tell Him what He is doing is unfair? Instead you should be happy you are to receive something rather than nothing.

Therefore it truly is never too late to repent of your sins and turn to God even if you have fallen away from the faith and your sins are piled up to heaven itself. All can be forgiven if you only ask and repent.

But what does it mean to repent? In short repenting means seeing what you were doing was wrong and turning from your bad deeds so that you do good deeds instead. It requires work and effort and thus it is not simply a change of heart alone. Your change of heart must be accompanied by a change of actions in order for it to truly be repentance.

Chapter 6.12: Forgiving Others

Now this may seem difficult sometimes but just because it is difficult it does not mean that you do not have to do it.

As the Book of Acts says:

"On hearing this, the members of the Sanhedrin were enraged and they plotted their death at him. But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked intently into heaven and saw the glory of God and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. 'Look,' he said, 'I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God.'

At this they covered their ears, cried out in a loud voice, and rushed at him as one man. They dragged him out of the city and began to stone him. Meanwhile the witnesses laid their garments at the feet of a young man named Saul.

While they were stoning him, Stephen appealed, 'Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' Falling on his knees, he cried out in a loud voice, 'Lord, do not hold this sin against them.' And when he had said this, he fell asleep." (Acts 7:54-60)

Even Stephen forgave those who killed him before he died. This is a sign of forgiveness we are to offer to others because we have been forgiven and we are to imitate God. Remember, if you do not forgive others then God will not forgive you.

As Jesus also says:

"Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you." (Luke 6:37-38)

So once again if you expect to be forgiven by God then God expects you to forgive others.

But what does forgiveness actually mean? Well in short forgiving others simply means to not hold what they have done against them and in other words it means that you do not hold any ill will against them.

But what if someone does something serious to you? Do you still have to forgive them? Well yes, even if they are to kill you then you are still supposed to forgive just as Stephen did.

Now this does not mean that things have to be as they were before. For example imagine if your spouse cheats on you. Does you have to forgive your spouse and not hold it against them that that does mean you must remain with them.

As Jesus says:

"Now I tell you that whoever divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, makes her another woman, commits adultery." (Matthew 19:9)

Here Jesus does not say you must remain with your spouse if they cheat on you but rather says that of course you can complain you may have against someone else. Forgive as the Lord forgave you. And over all these virtues put on love, which is the bond of perfect unity. Let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, for to this you were called as members of one body. And be thankful. (Colossians 3:12-15)

Always remember to forgive others and do not forget it.

Chapter 6.13: The Law

Are Christians required to follow the Law from the Old Testament in order to be seen as righteous before God? In short no. A person is not made righteous by following the letter of the law and instead was refined in made righteous by following the Spirit of the Law.

This is why the Gospel of Matthew says:

"And when the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, they themselves gathered together. One of them, an expert in the law, tested Him with a question: 'Teacher, which commandment is the greatest in the Law?'

Jesus declared, 'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:34-40)

Therefore as I said before we are called to love the Lord our God with all our heart and to love our neighbors as ourselves. But what does this mean exactly?

Well for starters loving God simply means that you have faith in Him and that you place complete trust in Him as you obey the commandments related to loving God as you continue in your faith. After all, if you worship other false gods, bow down to idols and take the name of God in vain then how can you love God?

Additionally you also demonstrate your love of God by not having any other false gods before you. For example if you commit adultery and steal how can you love God? Well you don't because you violate commandments. Those who do not love God ignore His commandments.

As First John says:

"Beloved, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God, and we will receive from Him anything we ask, because we keep His commandments and do what is pleasing in His sight. And this is His commandment: that we should believe in the name of His Son, Jesus Christ, and we should love one another just as He commanded us. Whoever keeps His commandments abides in God, and God in him. And by this we know that He remains in us: by the Spirit He has given us." (1 John 3:21-24)

Thus the idea here is that the author also believes that God's love is shown by the commandments love God. This is why you can tell who loves God and who does not love God based on their actions.

For example if a leader or an elder at your church or church in your neighborhood adultery against their spouse, or worse assault and adultery, for months then you know that they have been deceiving you because they really do not love God but they have been disregard for the commandments. After all if they really love God and if they really loved and feared God then they would not commit adultery. They would not be committing adultery they demonstrated themselves to be false.

Now this does not mean that you should be so quick to shun them off as golden rule is something much more minor. I used adultery in my example because no one accidentally commits adultery or steals accidentally. Instead those who commit adultery are required to take many steps where at one point they have to reaffirm their commitment to commit adultery against their spouse. Thus if you do see an elder or a church member who you think is a false teacher or even in your church or church in your neighborhood committing adultery against their spouse, or worse assault and adultery, for months then you know that they have been deceiving you because they really do not love God but they have been disregard for the commandments. After all if they really loved God and if they really loved and feared God then they would not commit adultery. They would not be committing adultery they demonstrated themselves to be false.

Now this does not mean that you should be so quick to shun off as golden rule. Adultery is something much more minor. I used adultery in my example because no one accidentally commits adultery or steals accidentally. Instead those who commit adultery are required to take many steps where at one point they have to reaffirm their commitment to commit adultery against their spouse. Thus if you do see an elder or you could somehow say the initial act of adultery was accidental, although I do not know how one possibly could, then certainly an on going affair is not accidental.

I am also not saying that you should not forgive them. Instead I am simply saying that anyone who really loves God does not commit adultery and maintain an extramarital affair.

The same can be true for other commandments as well. For example if someone claims to love God while they get drunk every night and act abusive towards their spouse and family then you know where their heart truly lies.

Now you may think I am being a bit harsh here. However this is exactly what Jesus says we should do.

As Jesus says:

"Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. By their fruit you will recognize them. Are people gathered from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not produce good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.' So then, by their fruit you will recognize them." (Matthew 7:13-20)

Thus we as Christians are supposed to judge others by their actions and see if they are one of us, a good tree, or if they are of Satan, a bad tree. This is exactly what Jesus is talking about when He says the following:

"So then, whoever breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do likewise will be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever practices and teaches them will be called great in the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 5:19)

So what exactly does Jesus mean by "these commandments" (Matthew 5:19) in this verse? Well later on in the Gospel of Matthew Jesus says what the commandments are rather explicitly.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Just then a man came up to Jesus and inquired, 'Teacher, what good thing must I do to obtain eternal life?'

'Why do you ask Me about what is good?' Jesus replied. 'There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, keep the commandments.'

'Which ones?' the man asked.

Jesus answered, "Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not bear false witness, honor your father and mother, and love your neighbor as yourself." (Matthew 19:16-19)

So you see here Jesus explicitly lists all the commandments that you need to keep in order to obtain eternal life. Also notice how Jesus does not tell the man to obey the entire physical Law and instead Jesus only really lists the commandments related to the Ten Commandments.

Furthermore I would just like to remind you of what Jesus says:

"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

Thus as long as you love God and love your neighbor then you are following the intent and essence of all the Law and the Prophets. Therefore once again we do not have to obey the full physical Law as I have said.

That said, I still do not think we should discard the Law in its entirety. Instead we should take the physical Law as a guide to determine how we can best love God and love of the Spirit.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

"Now one of the scribes had come up and heard their debate. Noticing how well Jesus had answered the Sadducees, he asked him, 'Which commandment is the most important of all?'

Jesus replied, 'This is the most important: 'Hear O Israel: The Lord our God is One. The Lord is one. Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.' The second is this: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' No other commandment is greater than these.'

'Right, Teacher,' the scribe replied. 'You have stated correctly that God is One and there is no other but Him, and to love Him with all your heart and with all your understanding and with all your strength, and to love your neighbor as yourself, which is more important than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.'

When Jesus saw that the man had answered wisely, He said, 'You are not far from the kingdom of God.'

And no one dared to question Him any further." (Mark 12:28-34)

Now the reason why I quoted this passage is to demonstrate that the Law of the Spirit, loving God and your neighbor, is more important than all the burnt offerings and sacrifices in the world. Really it is as simple as that. Love your people might get upset at you for doing or not doing something but as long as you love only God or not done what you would have others do to you then you will have loved your neighbor as yourself and fulfilled the Law.

However where it gets more complicated is when there are competing interests. Everyone has different ideas of what love is and we expect different things. For example lets say you have two friends who come make a fight due to the others expense. In response the other friend gets very upset. Now imagine that the friend who made the light joke refuses to apologize to someone he hurt saying that their sensitivity is ridiculous. Now both of your friends are trying to get you to see their point of view and get you to intervene. Who exactly are you supposed to side with in this case?

Really what I am trying to get at is that there are oftentimes situations in which there are no easy fixes or ways to please all. In these cases you can tell both friends to apologize and make up with each other. Love is patient, love is kind. What exactly are you supposed to do in this case?

Or what about in the example of shooting a neighbors dog I gave in an earlier chapter? Were you in the right in the example or is your neighbor in the right?

As another example lets say you have a sibling who has an ex who they claim is abusive. Now you are not friends with this ex and for years you have not been with your sibling and their ex in private so you just have what your sibling says. Now one day after the break up the ex tells you about how your sibling is demanding answers so you tell your sibling. In response your sibling tells you not to contact So how do you love your neighbor as yourself here?

If you respond to the ex then sure you can say you are showing them love but at the same time you would not be showing your sibling love. On the other hand if you ignore the ex then obviously you are showing your sibling love while not showing love to the ex. Sure you can try talking to your sibling but if they refuse to listen or they all want to have anything more to do with the ex then what can you do? This really sounds like a no win situation.

But the idea I am trying to get at here is that when you are faced with a no win situation that you should do the commandments that are because it does not matter what you do since there is no way out. If you can win then great but it is a no win situation then surely God can also see that there is nothing you can do. Therefore do not feel bad.

Really what I am saying here is that in order to love our neighbor as themselves we should do the best we can help those in need and to solve more problems that we can. Sure we cannot always prevent all harm and there are even times that we cannot prevent any harm from our actions after being place in a no win situation. But we can try our best to help others as you try your best to show as much love to your neighbors as possible then you will be following the commandment to love your neighbor as yourself.

Who exactly is your neighbor? Is your neighbor your family, friends or someone you know? Or is your neighbor also a stranger?

As the Gospel of Luke says:

"One day an expert in the law stood up to test Him. 'Teacher,' he asked, 'what must I do to inherit eternal life?'

'What is written in the Law? Jesus replied. 'How do you read it?'

He answered, 'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind' and 'Love your neighbor as yourself.'

'You have answered correctly,' Jesus said. 'Do this and you will live.'

But wanting to justify himself, he asked Jesus, 'And who is my neighbor?'

Jesus took up this question and said, 'A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell among robbers. They stripped him, beat him, and went away, leaving him half dead.

'Now by chance a priest was going down the same road, but when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

So too, when a Levite came to that spot and saw him, he passed by on the other side.

But when a Samaritan on a journey came upon him, he was moved with pity and compassion. He went to him and bandaged his wounds, pouring on olive oil and wine. Then he put him on his own animal, brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

The next day he took out two denarii and gave them to the innkeeper. 'Take care of him,' he said, 'and on my return I will repay you for any additional expenses.'

Which of these three do you think was a neighbor to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?'

'The one who showed him mercy,' replied the expert in the law.

Then Jesus said, 'Go and do likewise.'" (Luke 10:25-37)

Therefore your neighbor simply does not mean someone you like or someone that you know but rather it means everyone. Even those who you do not know or do not like are not your neighbor. Instead you should view even those who you do not know and do not like as your neighbor.

As Jesus says:

"But to those of you who will listen, I say: Love your enemies! Do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. If someone strikes you on one cheek, offer the other one to him. And if someone takes your cloak, do not withhold your tunic. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what is yours, do not demand it back. Do to others as you would have them do to you.

If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners love those who love them. If you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners do the same. And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners, expecting to be repaid in full.

But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them, expecting nothing in return. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, for He is kind to the ungrateful and to those who do evil. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful." (Luke 6:27-36)

Thus we should loves even our enemies and show them kindness and generosity. We may not even deserve. Perhaps now the no win situations I presented before make more sense.

Now of course there is no easy answer here and there is nothing that I am aware of in the Bible that can provide guidance here. Therefore I will simply once again remind you that we are called to love each other and showing love to our neighbor is the greatest law. For this reason that we should not show love when showing that love would cause more harm than good.

For example pretend you have a cousin who asks you for money so they can buy crack. Sure you will help them out. But now lets say you discover they are really addicted to crack and using the money you give them to buy drugs. What should you do the next time they ask for money?

Clearly not giving them money would not be showing their love since they are supposed to help those in need. While at the same time if you give them money then they will simply spend it on drugs to further their addiction and harm themselves more. Therefore in this case I would say that giving them the money they want would do more harm than good. Thus the most loving thing to do would be to not give them the money they want.

Now obviously I could go on and provide more examples but you get the idea. Simply try to maximize the amount of good that you do and you will be showing love.

This also means that you should not worry about not being loved by some circumstances because sometimes the most loving thing you can do is to not do whatever someone wants you to do. Furthermore this also ties into the possibility of a no win situation that I already presented in that sometimes all your options are not that great and that you have to pick the option that creates the least harm.

Then I would just like to reiterate again that you should not worry and obsess over always trying to do the right thing and criticizing your past decisions because ultimately as long as you try your maximum amount of good in the world and you are following the commandments. God is aware of what you are going through and knows He does not expect you to work the impossible. He only wants you to try your best and love as you do what you can.

The reason why I am stressing this point is because being placed in a situation where you feel like you will hurt someone no matter what you do is something that happens to us all every now and in a while. So really I just want to stress to you that when this situation happens that you should not worry about it too much and you should not think about giving up your faith over it because you will be following the commandments is impossible.

However I would also like to warn you that you cannot simply go on doing what you feel like ignoring your neighbors in need or worse yet doing evil to them or even just taking advantage of them because if you do then you will be cast out.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

"Be dressed for service and keep your lamps burning. Then you are like servants waiting for their master to return from the wedding banquet, so that when he comes and knocks, they can open the door for him at once. Blessed are those servants whom the master finds on watch when he returns. Truly I tell you, he will dress himself to serve and will have them recline at the table, and he will come and serve them. Blessed are they if he comes in the second or third watch of the night and finds them alert. Those servants will be blessed.

But understand this: If the homeowner had known at what hour the thief intended to come, he would not have let his house be broken into. You also must be ready, because the Son of Man will come at an hour you do not expect.

'Lord,' said Peter, 'are You addressing this parable to us, or to everyone else as well?'

And the Lord answered, 'Who then is the faithful and wise manager, whom the master puts in charge of his servants to give their portion of food at the proper time? Blessed is that servant whose master finds him doing so when he returns. Truly I tell you, he will put him in charge of all his possessions.

But suppose that servant says in his heart, 'My master will be a long time in coming,' and he begins to beat the menservants and maidservants, and to eat and drink and get drunk. The master of that servant will come on a day he does not expect and at an hour he does not anticipate. Then he will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the unbelievers.

That servant who knows his master's will but does not get ready or act in accordance with his instructions will be beaten with many blows. But the one who unknowingly does things worthy of punishment will be beaten with few blows. From everyone who has been given much, much will be required; and from him who has been entrusted with much, even more will be demanded." (Luke 12:35-48)

Therefore we should always remember what God has called us to do because those who do not do what God has commanded will be punished. So always remember to love God with your heart and love your neighbor as yourself.

Finally I would like to say that this act of loving God with all your heart and loving your neighbor as ourself is what the essence of the Law is. This means that we are to use these two commandments in order to judge what is sinful and what is good. For instance if someone does something you think is wrong but by doing whatever they are doing they do not hurt God or hurt their neighbor then you cannot call whatever they are doing a sin. Perhaps another religion invites you to their house to celebrate their cow cannot eat meat.

Additionally I would like to bring up that this commandment also prohibits the worship of the beast of Revelation as a false god. I have already said a lot on this so I will save you from having to hear about it again. Suffice it to say worship the beast and place your trust in it above God then at this point I think you either did not read my commentary on Revelation or you are seriously lost.

Then this commandment also prohibits worshiping yourself as a so-called god. You may be laughing to yourself at the idea that the idea here is that those who are successful almost inevitably place their trust and faith in themselves over God. Thus you could say they are worshiping themselves as a so-called god. What I mean here is that they are worshiping as the so-called god of their own life because they feel like they are in control of their own destiny and future. This of course is simply not true because only God controls the ultimate fate of our destiny and the future. We are all God's slaves and he can do with us as He pleases. Some of us are faithful slaves, Christians, while others are unfaithful slaves, people of other religions, atheists and agnostics. Of course it does not matter if someone refuses to recognize God as their Owner because in the end God sits on the Throne and Judge over all there is. Therefore you should be careful so that you remain humble and do not make yourself into the so-called god of your own life because you remember that you are a faithful slave of God.

Finally I would like to just reiterate the commandment.

We are to have no other gods than the Lord our God.

2 – No idolatry

"You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth below, or in the waters beneath. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on their children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing loving-kindness to the thousands of generations of those who love Me and keep My commandments." (Exodus 20:4-6)

Now here are the Ten Commandments:

1 – No other Gods

"You shall have no other gods before Me." (Exodus 20:3)

In this commandment we are called not to have any other gods before the LORD our God. This means that other religions including the two other Abrahamic religions, so-called Christian worship, I would say that any object that depicts something or someone in the heavens that is used in religious worship is idolatry. Instead I would say that idolatry is a huge problem and there are two main sources for Christians today.

First of since our modern society is not make an idol in the form of anything in the heavens and since idols are used by pagans for religious worship, I would say that any object that depicts something or someone in the heavens that is used in religious worship is idolatry. Instead I would mean that almost all of the Christian worship services are idolatry because they would be viewed as idolatry. This would mean that the church which claims Jesus is an idol is idolatry. This would also mean figurines of Mary the mother of Jesus and the Pieta that Mary died would also be idolatry. This would also mean that most pictures of Jesus are idolatry.

Now you may protest this but as the commandment says: "You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in the heavens above" (Exodus 20:4). Therefore if we take the position that the idol is not made for in heaven and that the saints are spiritually in heaven, spiritually because no one lives again until the resurrection, this would mean that by making an image or a figurine of Jesus, the saints, or angels we are in violation of the commanding idolatry and violating the second commandment.

Of course you may say that I am wrong here because you believe that tradition prevails over the written word but as Jesus says, it does not:

"Then the Pharisees and some of the scribes who had come from Jerusalem gathered around Jesus. And they noticed that Jesus' disciples eating with hands that were defiled —that is, unwashed.

Now in holding to the tradition of the elders, the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat until they wash their hands ceremonially. And on returning from the market, they do not eat unless they washed themselves. There are many traditions for them to observe, including the washing of cups, pitchers, kettles, and couches for dining.

So the Pharisees and scribes questioned Jesus. 'Why do your disciples not walk according to the tradition of the elders? Instead, they eat with defiled hands.'

Jesus answered them, 'Isaiah prophesied correctly about you hypocrites, as it is written:

"These people honor Me with their lips, but their hearts are far from Me. They worship Me in vain; they teach as doctrine the precepts of men.'

You have disregarded the commandment of God to keep the tradition of men.'

He went on to say, 'You neatly set aside the commandment of God to maintain your tradition. For Moses said, 'Honor your father and your mother' and 'Anyone who curses his father or mother must be put to death.' But you say that if a man says to his father or mother, 'Whatever you would have received from me is Corban' (that is, a gift devoted to God), he is no longer permitted to do anything for his father or mother. Thus you nullify the word of God by the tradition you have handed down. And you do so in many such matters.'" (Mark 7:1-13)

Thus if you do not believe that what I said is idolatry then Isaiah prophesied correctly about you because you honor God with your lips as you teach as doctrine the precepts of men.

Then you may claim that as long as you do not bow down to an idol it is not an idol and that you venerate the saints instead of worship the

saints. Now personally I fail to see a difference between veneration and worship but I will humor this point of view.

Now, does God not say:

"You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in the heavens above, or the earth below, or in the waters beneath." (Exodus 20:4)

The first part of this commandment says not to make any idol or image. So although the second part concerns worship it is not that I think it is the applicable here. This is because making the idol itself is in itself idolatry. However since in reality veneration is simply a different term for worship, the veneration of Mary or the saints would be idolatry and a violation of this commandment.

Therefore I believe that Christians should get rid of all idols, images and iconography. Then in terms of other forms of idolatry, Christians should get rid of all idols, images and iconography from other religions. Now obviously we cannot really force this on others so we should simply remove them from our own lives and churches. An idol, image or an icon does not have to be religiously significant to you for it to be an idol.

Now if this has not ruffled enough feathers then there is still another source of idolatry in the Church today.

As Colossians and Ephesians say:

"Put to death, therefore, the components of your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires, and greed, which is idolatry." (Colossians 3:5)

"For of this you can be sure: No immoral, impure, or greedy person (that is, an idolater), has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God." (Ephesians 5:5)

First off although Paul most likely did not write these two letters it really can be said that he was there because I agree with what the author said. Just because the Romans are most Christian, forgeries it does not mean the theological point he is completely wrong.

Here the author correctly calls the greedy idolaters because chasing after these things can be idolatry. For example if you chase after money around making money to the point that you do whatever it takes, including say paying your employees as little as possible, then you would be greedy. Then since this greed transcends your love of God you would be guilty of showing your employees love by paying them as little as possible you would be in effect chasing after an idol instead of worshiping God. Thus you would be guilty of idolatry.

Now obviously there are varying degrees of desiring money. For example could you be called greedy for wanting to be paid more so that you can afford to live? Although some morally evil people would say yes obviously the answer is no. This is because the whole idea of being greedy is that you have a selfish desire for wealth that you do not need. Then because of this if you cannot even afford to live then how could you be greedy for demanding a raise? Or is wanting to afford rent and food a selfish desire? This is why I said morally evil people here because those who paint the poor as greedy because they want to make enough to live are evil.

The reason why I needed to clarify these distinctions concerning greed is because oftentimes people take a black and white approach which I feel does much more harm than good. For example if you want to call someone greedy because they want to have enough money to buy food then all you are doing is hurting people who simply desire the pain of their life to disappear.

Furthermore when you conflate these normal desires with the truly morally reprehensible like the boss giving himself a large raise while he gives his employees a big pay cut you are making the truly morally reprehensible seem like good and acceptable behavior. This is because if you call everything bad then really nothing is bad. Then as a result people think that if they are already doing something that is good does it matter if they do something else than is worse? You can see how problematic this is.

Now back to idolatry. Really when deciding if a desire is idolatry or not you should ask yourself if the desire is satisfying something that is from God as you worship your desire instead of God.

For example in terms of greed, if your greed makes you exploit others for your own gain as you underpay them and rationalize in your head that they are paid what they are worth even though your employees cannot live off of what then you are greedy and thus an idolater. Likewise if in your greed you seek to cheat people out of what they are owed using whatever technically legal means you can even if it is legal, then you are greedy and an idolater. Then if in your greed you seek to defraud people and steal from them then you are greedy and an idolater.

Although up to this point I have only mentioned greed since this is the main thing that was mentioned in the verses above. However this is does not mean that idolatry is confined to greed. Instead you should look for any desires that are a corrupting and damaging influence on your life.

For example if your desire, greed and lust for food causes you to gain so much weight that you become obese then you would be an idolater. Additionally if your desire, greed and lust for alcohol causes you to frequently get drunk and cause you to do things to others around you then you are an idolater. Then obviously drug addiction would be equally as well. Then it is also important to point out that your job or career can become an idol. For example if your desire, greed and lust for your career and professional recognition causes issues for yourself and for others around you then you would be an idolater. Additionally even something as innocent as watching television or playing video games can turn into idolatry when done in excess.

Of course idolatry is not simply limited to these things and it can even include politics. For example if you put your nation above the global mission of the Church then you would be an idolater. You could also say the same thing about certain political candidates and how people place their belief in them instead of in God. Furthermore, entire political movements themselves can be idolatry when the way they operate is through lies and deception in order to generate power for the party, the gain of a social or political subset of the population.

Now you may think the political party opposed to you is idolatry and that everything you do whatever political view you have but you would be wrong. Personally, speaking as someone in the United States, both sides are objectively terrible. Thus I view the extreme participants of both sides as being idolaters.

Then last but not least following the beast, or artificial super intelligence, will become idolatry as people will place their faith and hope in the AI rather than in God.

Really my point here is that when deciding if a desire or behavior is idolatry or not you should ask yourself if the desire is harming you, harming those around you and if the desire itself is spiritually separating you from God as you worship your desire instead of God. The idea is we should all be watchful of the physical and mental idols in our lives. However this does not mean that every single desire can be seen as idolatry no matter what it is. Instead this just means that in order for the desire itself to be considered idolatry then the desire needs to be sinful in itself. Like I said simply fantasizing about money is not idolatry in itself but when it starts to physically impact your life to create sin in the form of warring to exploiting others for example.

All that said this does not mean that you can simply call everything you do not like idolatry and thus sinful. For example there is nothing wrong with drinking alcohol or even using drugs if your consumption does not negatively impact the lives of those around you or your own life in a significant way. I mean even Jesus frequently drinks wine in the gospels so to claim that drinking alcohol is sinful in itself is ridiculous and absurd. Really the same thing applies to everything else as well. The only things that become sinful are those things that negatively impact your relationship or yourself.

Finally I would like to just reiterate the commandment:

We are not to create any idol and we are not to worship any idol.

3 – No taking the name of God in vain

"You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold anyone unpunished who takes His name in vain." (Exodus 20:7)

In this commandment we are called not to take the name of God in vain. First off in vain here simply means producing no result or useless. For example if you just burned yourself on the stove and you shout something related to God, the Lord, Jesus, Jesus Christ or something similar then you would be taking the name of the Lord in vain. Why? Because the LORD is because since Jesus is the Christ by taking His name in vain you would be disrespecting God as well. Really what this commandment means is that we are to refer to God in a respectful way and only to reference Him in a useful manner. This is why using the name of God as a reaction word or to get someone's attention is taking the name of God in vain.

I cannot imagine you have any questions surrounding this simple commandment so I do not think anymore needs to be said.

Finally I would like to just reiterate the commandment:

We are not to take the name of the Lord our God in vain.

4 – Remember the Sabbath

"Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God, on which you must not do any work—neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your manservant or maidservant or livestock, nor the foreigner within your gates. For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth and the sea and all that is in them, but on the seventh day He rested. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and set it apart as holy." (Exodus 20:8-11)

In this command we are called to remember the Sabbath day, or day of rest, and keep it holy by resting instead of working. All this really means is that we are to take one day out of the week off from work so that we can rest and honor God through our rest.

Traditionally the Sabbath was on Saturday and it was changed to Sunday, the day on which Christ rose from the dead. Therefore I do not think the specific day you take as the Sabbath matters that much because I have no real idea here with this commandment is that we are to labor for six days and do all our work but that the seventh day or the Sabbath we are to rest. If your week starts on Sunday then your Sabbath would be Saturday and if your week starts on Monday then your Sabbath would be Sunday.

Now this does not mean you have to observe a Sabbath on Sunday. Just rather any day is fine. The point here is that you are not to work for more than six days in a row without taking a day off. So as long as you never work more than six days in a row you are fine. But what are you not allowed to do on the Sabbath? Well work. But what is classified as work?

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"At that time Jesus went through the grainfields on the Sabbath. His disciples were hungry and began to pick the heads of grain and eat them. When the Pharisees saw this, they said to Him, "Look, your disciples are doing what is unlawful on the Sabbath."

Jesus replied, "Have you not read what David did when he was hungry? He entered the house of God, and he and his companions ate the consecrated bread, which was not lawful for them to eat, but only for the priests.

Or haven't you read in the Law that on the Sabbath the priests in the temple break the Sabbath and are guiltless? But I tell you that something greater than the temple is here.

If only you had known the meaning of 'I desire mercy, not sacrifice,' you would not condemn the innocent. For the Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath."

Moving on from there, Jesus entered their synagogue, and there was a man with a hand was there. In order to accuse Jesus, they asked Him, 'Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?'

He replied, 'If one of you has a sheep and it falls into a pit on the Sabbath, will not take hold of it and lift it out? How much more valuable is a man than a sheep! Therefore it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath.'

Then Jesus said to the man, 'Stretch out your hand.' So he stretched it out, and it was restored to full health like the other. But the Pharisees went out and plotted how they might kill Jesus." (Matthew 12:1-14)

The point Jesus is making here is that doing something out of necessity on the Sabbath in the as long as it is not sinful in itself is good. This is why Jesus said it is fine to harvest grain and heal on the Sabbath because the food to eat and it is good to heal. It is also important to point out how Jesus's disciples did not think He was to break the Sabbath and are innocent. This would of course be incomparable to those who do work at a church on Sunday. Therefore if God believes that people can do work on the Sabbath to further the Kingdom of God then surely you can do work on the Sabbath to further the Kingdom of God as well.

Then as Paul said:

"One person regards a certain day above the others, while another regards every day alike. Each one should be fully convinced in his own mind. Those who observe a special day does so to the Lord; he who eats does so to the Lord, for he gives thanks to God; and he who abstains does so to the Lord and gives thanks to God." (Romans 14:5-6)

Therefore whatever day you observe as the Sabbath is the Sabbath.

Then I would like to bring up what Jesus says:

"The Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath." (Mark 2:27)

Finally I would just like to reiterate the commandment:

We are to honor the Sabbath and keep it holy.

5 – Honor your father and mother

"Honor your father and mother, so that your days may be long in the land that the LORD your God is giving you." (Exodus 20:12)

In this commandment we are called to honor our parents. The underlying intent of this commandment in the time of Jesus was to take your parents into your household when they grew too old and no longer able to make money. However in addition to this it also means to show respect and honor for your parents in general. In this case you should not disobey them and you should seek to respect their decisions.

As the Book of Proverbs says:

"Listen, my son, to your father's instruction, and do not forsake the teaching of your mother. For they are a garland of grace on your head and a pendant around your neck." (Proverbs 1:8-9)

"A wise son brings joy to his father, but a foolish man despises his mother." (Proverbs 15:20)

"A foolish son brings grief to his father and bitterness to her who bore him." (Proverbs 17:25)

"He who assaults his father or evicts his mother is a son who brings shame and disgrace." (Proverbs 19:26)

"Whoever curses his father or mother, his lamp will be extinguished in deepest darkness." (Proverbs 20:20)

"Listen to your father who gave you life, and do not despise your mother when she is old." (Proverbs 23:22)

"As for the eye that mocks a father and scorns obedience to a mother, may the ravens of the valley pluck it out and young vultures devour it." (Proverbs 30:17)

This commandment simply means that we should respect our parents and do what they ask unless it is sin to do so. However we should also try to make our parents proud as we honor our parents in general.

Then as the Book of Deuteronomy says:

"Cursed is he who dishonors his father or mother.' And let all the people say, 'Amen!'" (Deuteronomy 27:16)

Really this commandment is rather straightforward and uncontroversial. The only real point of contention is whether the desire needs to be sinful in itself. Like I said simply fantasizing about money is not idolatry in itself but when it starts to physically impact your life to create sin in the form of warring to exploiting others for example.

All that said this does not mean that you can simply call everything you do not like idolatry and thus sinful. For example there is nothing wrong with drinking alcohol or even using drugs if your consumption does not negatively impact the lives of those around you or your own life in a significant way. I mean even Jesus frequently drinks wine in the gospels so to claim that drinking alcohol is sinful in itself is ridiculous and absurd. Really the same thing applies to everything else as well. The only things that become sinful are those things that negatively impact your relationship or yourself.

Finally I would like to just reiterate the commandment:

We are to honor our parents.

6 – Do not murder

"You shall not murder." (Exodus 20:13)

In this commandment we are called to not murder or commit murder. Murder here are not supposed to purposefully kill anyone. In the Bible intentional killing is completely outlawed. The only real exception is self-defense and even absolve you for guilt in killing someone else is accidentally killing them. But what about self-defense? I mean surely it must be fine to kill someone in self-defense right?

As the Book of Exodus says:

"If a thief is caught breaking in and is beaten to death, no one shall be guilty of bloodshed. But if it happens after sunrise, there is guilt for his bloodshed." (Exodus 22:2-3)

The reason why this passage has "if it happens — then may the LORD bear the bloodshed" (Exodus 22:3) is because it is dark at night so the thief might see what you are doing so therefore if you kill a thief at night then you probably did not know that he was the thief and the killing would be an accidental killing which would absolve you of guilt. On the other hand if the killing takes place during the day when it is light out then you could clearly see that you are beating the thief to death thus you would be guilty in killing him because you did not need to kill them to stop them. So really the idea here is that intentional killing is outlawed while unintentional killing does not result in guilt.

What this then means is that even self-defense with the intent of killing the attacker is wrong. Yes this may sound surprising but it does not mean quite what you think it may mean. What I mean is defending yourself is not prohibited and it is even fine to shoot someone who is attacking you. The only prohibited action is purposefully trying to kill the person who is attacking you. In other words purposefully defending yourself without purposefully trying to kill is fine while purposefully defending yourself while purposefully trying to kill is not fine.

Alright but what does this mean exactly in terms of a modern context? Well I would say self-defense even if it results in the death of the attacker is fine as long as you do not purposefully try to kill the person attacking. The idea here is that you would be trying to prevent them from harming you or others rather than trying to kill them. Thus I think the principle from Exodus 22:2-3 would apply to modern weapons as well since just because you shoot someone dead with a gun does not mean that you were instead you are trying to stop them. I mean just because you shot someone it does not mean that you are trying to kill them. For example if someone is beating you very hard and you cannot defend yourself so you pull out a gun and shoot them until they stop punishing you then even if they end up dying as a result it is obvious that you did not intend to kill them just like how if you beat a thief to death at night you did not intend to kill them.

On the other hand if someone breaks into your house during the day and you carefully line the sight on your gun up with their head and shoot their head off then that would not be acceptable. This is because you intended to kill them and their death would not have been accidental.

Therefore I would say that self-defense in a modern context is fundamentally morally unacceptable depending on the context. Really if you intend to kill the person in self-defense so therefore only God can judge if you bear the guilt for killing or not.

But what about defending your property? Well you are of course perfectly justified in defending your property from others but again not intentionally killing the thief. I mean the passage I quoted from above just mentioned that if accidentally killing a thief at night so obviously you are not able to see clearly what physically you are trying to steal from you. In terms of killing them really the same principle above applies so you should not purposefully try to kill them and instead only accidentally killing them is fine. This is of course assuming that a person does not attempt to use a gun. Ideally it would be best to use something less lethal like a taser. For crime of killing them accidentally is reduced.

Now you may be wondering but what about what Jesus said?

"You have heard that it was said, 'Eye for eye and tooth for tooth.' But I tell you not to resist an evil person. If someone slaps you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. If someone wants to sue you and take your tunic, let him have your cloak as well; and if someone forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles. Give to the one who asks you, and do not turn away from the one who wants to borrow from you.

You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor' and 'Hate your enemy.' But I tell you, love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even Gentiles do the same?

Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect." (Matthew 5:38-48)

But here Jesus is referencing Levitcus 24:

"If anyone injures his neighbor, whatever he has done must be done to him: fracture for fracture, eye for eye, tooth for tooth. Just as he injured the other person, the same must be done to him." (Levitcus 24:19-20)

This law is related to retribution not self defense and the two are entirely different. For instance retribution seeks to hurt the person who killed after the fact while self defense is protecting yourself. The key difference is that retribution serves no good other than to make yourself feel better while self defense is about protecting yourself, others or property. Thus in the passage above Jesus is talking about engaging in retribution rather than self defense.

That said we should always try to be as charitable as possible and try to do as little harm as possible. For example if you see someone break your car's window to search for stuff to steal from your change bowl then you really should just let them go because Golf will judge them for this. This is because the value of what they are stealing is very low and it will negatively impact you and your family's life.

Really what I am saying is that you should not seek to harm others in self-defense unless you have to in order to create less harm. Sometimes it is better to just let someone go and let God judge them.

As to my view, personally I do not have a gun and I do not really want to get one so I do not think I would ever try to defend myself outside of maybe using a bat if I had to. That said I can understand the point of view of someone who would.

In the end though always remember that God will judge you how you judge others. So if you show mercy to others then God will show mercy to you.

Now back to the commandment at hand.

As Jesus says:

"You have heard that it was said to the ancients, 'Do not murder, and whoever murders will be subject to judgment.' But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to his brother, 'Raca,' and mean subject to the Sanhedrin. But anyone who says, 'You fool!' will be subject to the fire of hell." (Matthew 5:21-22)

Therefore we are called not to simply not murder but also to not be angry with each other. This simply means that we should be angry with what others have done to us so that we desire to hurt them and instead we should respond to their actions with charity. The idea here is that we should not let the feeling of the desire to kill is just as bad as actually killing. This is why the Bible also says that if a woman is accused of adultery and she believes that this is a sin and in the doubt she will commit the sin lies in the motivation. This is why desiring to kill is just as bad as actually killing because it is worse than accidentally killing your neighbor. Thus you should always try to keep a level head so that you do not get angry with others so that the thought of harming them never crosses your mind.

Although oftentimes this might seem hard or even impossible especially if you are being treated unreasonably or even being persecuted. However even in these cases we are still supposed to love our enemies and be that we desire to harm those who are mistreating us. So just try to do your best and ask God for forgiveness if you fail to live up to the standards the Bible sets. Then always remember to forgive others how you wish to be forgiven.

But what about suicide? Since killing someone is in violating of this commandment then is suicide wrong since oftentimes people commits suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

Now in terms of suicide specifically and if those who commit suicide will be forgiven and go to God or not I would say ultimately the choice is up to God. Personally I would say that those who commit suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

Now in terms of suicide specifically and if those who commit suicide will be forgiven and go to God or not I would say ultimately the choice is up to God. Personally I would say that those who commit suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

However if you are someone who is depressed and you feel like you want to die, especially if you are afraid of the beast mentioned later then you would just like to say that there are many others who not quite feel like you do. For example even the great prophet Elijah wanted to die at one point.

As First Kings says:

"And Elijah was afraid and ran for his life. When he came to Beersheba in Judah, he left his servant there, while he himself traveled on a day's journey into the wilderness. He sat down under a broom tree and prayed that he might die. 'I have had enough, LORD,' he said. 'Take my life; I am no better than my fathers.'" (1 Kings 19:3-4)

Therefore if you wish to die then just know that Elijah also felt the same way and that he persisted on so that he could live out the will of God. Thus I would strongly encourage you to persist until the end comes and Jesus returns. After all although the beast is coming there is estimate on when Jesus could return because it do not want to disappoint people and because I would just be guessing, the honest truth is that Jesus could very well return in your lifetime. This means that if you decide to live and carry out the will of God then there is a good chance you will still be alive when Jesus returns in glory. Of course you may be killed the beast instead but in this case I would like to point out that all those who resist the power of the beast and those who are killed by it will truly be blessed so that they will share in the first resurrection. Thus although you may be wondering why you should continue living if the beast is just going to kill almost everyone, really the best blessing you can receive is to be killed by the beast ironically enough because then you will share in the first resurrection.

This fact is why I am not personally worried about being killed by the beast and instead I fully welcome it. After all if I die by the hands of the beast while carrying out the will of God then I know I will truly be blessed. Thus if you are feeling depressed then I would like to encourage you to join me in carrying out the will of God by sharing this book and what you have learned here with others so that they can be better prepared to stand against the beast so that we can all share in the first resurrection together. Sure the future may seem dark and things might seem hopeless but if what I have written in this book is largely correct then you are one of the few people in the world who knows the truth. Therefore this fact alone makes you special and you should consider yourself truly blessed that God so chosen you to help carry out His will.

As Jesus says:

"But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For truly I tell you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it." (Matthew 13:16-17)

Assuming what I have written in this book is largely correct then I would say the same thing to you. I mean how many people throughout history longed to know what Revelation is about and what it is going to mean for the end of the age? Therefore always remember this fact and do not despair because if I am correct then clearly you have been chosen by God to be one of the few who understand what has so long remained hidden. Instead I encourage you to live and share the truth that Revelation with others so that as many people as possible can come to know the truth and the reason for the first beast of Revelation because I promise you that you are truly blessed. Therefore as long as you let the light of your faith shine bright then there will never truly be darkness in the world no matter how dark everything may seem.

But what about abortion? Does abortion qualify as murder? Well really this is a complicated question while like above I would say reserve abortion and making a woman infertile in the process is actually described in the Bible.

As Numbers says:

"Then the LORD said to Moses, 'Speak to the Israelites and tell them that if any man's wife goes astray and is unfaithful to him by sleeping with another man, and it is concealed from her husband and her impurity is undetected (since there is no witness against her and she was not caught in the act), and if a feeling of jealousy comes over her husband and he suspects his wife who has defiled herself—or if a feeling of jealousy comes over him and he suspects her even though she has not defiled herself— then he is to bring his wife to the priest.

He must also bring for her an offering of a tenth of an ephah of barley flour. He is not to pour oil over it or put frankincense on it, because it is a grain offering for jealousy, an offering of memorial as a reminder of iniquity.

The priest is to bring her and present her before the LORD. Then he is to take some holy water in a clay pot and put some of the dust from the tabernacle floor into the water.

After the priest has the woman stand before the LORD, he is to let down her hair and place in her hands the grain offering of memorial, which is a grain offering of jealousy. The priest is to hold the bitter water that brings a curse, and he is to make the woman under oath and say to her, 'If no other man has slept with you and you have not gone astray and become defiled while under your husband's authority, may you be immune to this bitter water that brings a curse. But if you have gone astray while under your husband's authority and have defiled yourself— if any man other than your husband— and the priest shall have the woman swear under the oath of the curse— then may the LORD make you an attested curse among your people by making your thigh shrivel and your belly to swell. May this water that brings a curse enter your stomach and cause your belly to swell and your thigh to shrivel.'

Then the woman is to say, 'Amen, Amen.'

And the priest shall write these curses on a scroll and wash it off into the bitter water. He is to have the woman drink the bitter water that brings a curse, and it will enter her and cause her bitter suffering. The priest shall take from her hand the grain offering for jealousy, wave it before the LORD, and bring it to the altar. Then the priest is to take a handful of the grain offering as a memorial portion and burn it on the altar. After that he is to have the woman drink the water.

When he has made her drink the water, if she has defiled herself and been unfaithful to her husband, then the water that brings a curse will enter her and cause bitter suffering; her belly will swell, her thigh will shrivel, and she will become accursed among her people. But if the woman has not defiled herself and is clean, she will be unaffected and able to conceive children.

This is the law of jealousy when a wife goes astray and defiles herself while under her husband's authority, or when a feeling of jealousy comes over a husband and he suspects his wife. He is to have the woman stand before the LORD, and the priest is to apply to her this entire law. The husband will be free from guilt, but the woman shall bear her iniquity.' (Numbers 5:11-31)

Before explaining how this relates to abortion allow me to explain the purpose of this test. First off adultery is a sin. This is why it is a big part of the Ten Commandments and the next commandment. However it is not sin. This is because the central aspect of what makes adultery such a horrible and detestable sin is the breach and violation of trust that occurs between two people. This is why oftentimes merely suspicion your spouse of adultery is unfaithful after you have good reason to suspect them of being unfaithful to you and ruining your relationship with them. Thus this is why God gave the ancient Israelites a test for adultery.

Really the idea behind the test is that if an adulterer knew that the fruit of his sin will enter her and cause bitter suffering; her belly will swell. This means that she will not become accursed among her people."

Now you may be wondering why this test is one sided so that it only applies to women and not to men. However this is because the fruit of this sin of adultery which would then mean that the test does not need to take place if a man has been found guilty of adultery. This is because if a man has been found guilty of adultery then he would have to be put to death so that the thought of harming them never crosses your mind.

Although oftentimes this might seem hard or even impossible especially if you are being treated unreasonably or even being persecuted. However even in these cases we are still supposed to love our enemies and be that we desire to harm those who are mistreating us. So just try to do your best and ask God for forgiveness if you fail to live up to the standards the Bible sets. Then always remember to forgive others how you wish to be forgiven.

But what about suicide? Since killing someone is in violating of this commandment then is suicide wrong since oftentimes people commits suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

Now in terms of suicide specifically and if those who commit suicide will be forgiven and go to God or not I would say ultimately the choice is up to God. Personally I would say that those who commit suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

Although oftentimes this might seem hard or even impossible especially if you are being treated unreasonably or even being persecuted. However even in these cases we are still supposed to love our enemies and be that we desire to harm those who are mistreating us. So just try to do your best and ask God for forgiveness if you fail to live up to the standards the Bible sets. Then always remember to forgive others how you wish to be forgiven.

But what about suicide? Since killing someone is in violating of this commandment then is suicide wrong since oftentimes people commits suicide would be killing themselves? Well in short yes. However I would like to say that in truth everyone sins. This is why we need to accept the Christ as our savior. This is the only way our sins can be forgiven. For example such you can try to never be angry at someone and you may succeed for a time but eventually you are in a feel anger at someone when they do something bad to you. This is why we always forgive others so that God may forgive our own sins.

Now in terms of suicide specifically and if those who commit suicide will be forgiven and go to God or not I would say ultimately the choice is up to God. Personally I would say that those who commit

what they did was wrong then you would be judging your spouse.

Now may think this passages quoted above means that we are to never judge anyone because we are all guilty of sin. But in said it is more complicated than that and that does not mean that we are to never judge anyone.

For instance Jesus says that we are to make sure that we are more morally righteous than the person we are judging before we judge. For example we would be wrong for a preacher, who is cheating on their spouse, to lecture an unmarried couple who are living together but not having sex about the sanctity of marriage. In this case the adulterous preacher has a beam in their eye as they are criticizing the spec in the eyes of the couple.

Now this does not mean that what the couple is doing is morally right. However the point Jesus is making is that if you judge someone for a lesser sin while you yourself are committing a similar greater sin then you are committing sin against yourself and asking for God to judge you. Thus you should not judge others lest you are morally unrighteous and dirty yourself. The popular saying of the pot calling the kettle black comes to mind here.

As Paul wrote:

"You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on another. For on whatever grounds you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things. And we know that God's judgment against those who do such things is based on truth. So when you, O man, plas judgment on others, yet do the same things, do you think you will escape God's judgment?" (Romans 2:1-3)

Therefore once again you should not judge others and only judge others in the way when you are doing the same exact thing or even a similar thing as what they are doing. Remember, "with the measure you use, it will be measured to you." (Matthew 7:2)

Although some people take this view to the extreme so that they believe that judging people under any circumstances by anyone is wrong. This view is of course absurd.

As Jesus says:

"You hypocrite! First take the beam out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye." (Matthew 7:5)

Therefore Jesus is not saying that you should never judge people. Instead Jesus is saying that you should first judge yourself before you judge others so that you do not become a hypocrite for judging others for things that you are also guilty of. I mean Jesus clearly says "then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye" (Matthew 7:5) so Jesus is encouraging Christians to judge.

The as Jesus says in the last verse of the passage I quoted above:

"Do not give dogs what is holy; do not throw your pearls before swine. If you do, they may trample them under their feet, and then turn and tear you to pieces." (Matthew 7:6)

In the time of Jesus dogs were seen as unclean and detestable scavengers that no clean and righteous person wanted anything to do with. The same was true for swine or pigs. Then the pearls that Jesus is referring to would be the messages of the gospel or the coming kingdom of God. Thus Jesus is actually commanding Christians to judge others here. Essentially what He is saying is that we are not to associate with the dogs and pigs in society or that is to say the unclean and unrighteous. Instead we are to only preach and evangelize among those who are clean.

But what makes a person as unclean as a dog? Really that is up to you to judge for yourself. I would say if someone is resistant to what you are saying in any way then it would be best for you to leave them and be on your way.

As Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and let the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

Therefore you should not associate with those who are unrighteous and vile. After all it is my to wrestle a pig all you will do is end up doing is making yourself unclean in the mud that you fall into.

But what about judging Christians? Sure we can judge the pigs and the dogs but what about each other?

Well as Jesus says:

"If your brother sins against you, go and confront him privately. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along with you, so that 'every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church. And if he refuses to listen even to the church, regard him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.

Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." (Matthew 18:15-18)

Simply put, we are to tell them of their sin and if they do not repent and say they were wrong and make an effort to change then we should treat we are to tell it to others so that the group can judge them. It will do not listen then we are to regard them as a pagan or a tax collector which is exactly what Jesus means by saying pigs and dogs above.

Now in the case of judging the unfaithful and judging our fellow Christians we are to punish anyone since only God can punish. Instead we are to simply regard them as unclean and unrighteous so that we do not associate with them. Of course this does not mean you must dissassociate with them. Instead it means that you are free to dissassociate with them and that you would not be in the wrong for doing so.

As Paul wrote:

"I wrote you in my letter not to associate with sexually immoral people. I was not including those who are immoral of this world, or the greedy and swindlers, or idolaters. In that case you would have to leave this world. But now I am writing you that you must not associate with anyone who claims to be a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, or an idolater or a verbal abuser, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man you not even eat.

What business of mine is it to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside the church? God judges those outside. "Expel the wicked man from among you." (1 Corinthians 5:9-12)

Therefore you are perfectly in the right to judge those among us who are immoral or evil. In fact if you do not judge those who are immoral or evil then how could you call yourself righteous? How can someone who is righteous tolerate those who are immoral?

Then if a person working for a company is corrupt and defrauding the company and they then go on to report someone else who is distracted and is making yourself look good. Surely for fear that their own scheme will be discovered. Likewise when you tolerate those who are immoral and unrighteous around you then you demonstrate that you yourself are immoral and unrighteous because if you spoke up then you would be judged yourself. Thus you do not judge because you do not want to be judged.

Additionally by refusing to judge the immoral and unrighteous in the Church you are helping to destroy the Church from within as the hands of Satan people what they can as you help to normalize immorality and unrighteousness. So instead of letting Satan takeover the Church you should take a stand and call the immoral unrighteous and the unrighteous immoral. Then by tolerating those who are immoral, evil or unrighteous are you then just responsible for their sins? After all, if they do not know what they are doing is wrong while you do then does that not mean you should tell them they are wrong? Therefore if you do not judge those who call themselves Christians who are immoral then you are not carrying out the will of God because you are helping Satan takeover the Church.

That said, I would like to reiterate that this only applies to those who call themselves Christians. This does not apply to those who are not even Christian. Therefore when you see non-Christians who are immoral in their ways so that they are not severely negatively impacting others then just let them be and do not judge them for it because they are already lost.

Likewise if you have a family member or a friend who against God leaves the faith then just let worry about them in the sense that you feel like you must work tirelessly to judge them in an effort to get them to return. Instead you should simply be kind and charitable to them as you would anyone else. Thus you should not expect them out of your life and cut off contact. Really Paul only recommends expelling those who call themselves Christians who are immoral because they have a corrupting and damaging influence upon the Church. On the other hand non-believers and the unfaithful who are outside the Church can never damage the faithful in the Church so there is not need to cut them off and expel them.

Finally, I would just like to add that you should not judge others on the basis of the Law because we are all guilty of breaking the Law as I have already said. If you judge someone on the basis of breaking the Law when you yourself are a lawbreaker then you would be a hypocrite and come under judgment yourself.

As James said:

"Whoever keeps the whole law but stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. For He who said, 'Do not commit adultery,' also said, 'Do not murder.' If you do not commit adultery, but do commit murder, you have become a lawbreaker.

Speak and act as those who are going to be judged by the law that gives freedom. For judgment without mercy will be shown to anyone who has not been merciful. Mercy triumphs over judgment." (James 2:10-13)

So instead of judging the sins of others on the basis of the physical Law we should judge them on the basis of the Law of the Spirit using the two greatest commandments of love God and love your neighbor. The idea here is if someone is doing something that is not showing love to God by say practicing idolatry or profiting off of people's faith by selling them things then they are breaking the greatest commandment so you are strongly encouraged to judge them as long as you are not guilty of the same thing judging them for. On the other hand you cannot judge someone on the basis of breaking a law of the physical Law that does not fall under the two greatest commandments of having God and loving your neighbor. This is because if you judge others based on the physical Law and not the Law of the Spirit then you will be judged by God by the physical Law. Then since following the full physical Law is literally impossible then this means you will be condemned. Therefore you can only judge others by Spiritual Law as a guide if a law clearly falls under loving God or loving your neighbor.

Chapter 6.20: Do Not Worry

After reading everything in this book so far you may be worried about the future. This might especially be the case if you are currently suffering because the sinner was the one who humbled himself before God and recognized his failings while the Pharisee exaltedhimself before God seeking recognition for his works.

By asking God for mercy you humble yourself while if you pick the Pharisee you exalt yourself. This is why I said you need to trust in God instead of trusting in your own righteousness. Your own is as filthy as all sinners and even the most righteous among us sometimes stumble. Therefore you should not seek to exalt themselves before God because they always have a reason to ask God for mercy instead.

Then as Jesus also says:

"But you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father. for you have one Father, and He is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one Instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:8-12)

Thus we are also called not to exalt ourselves to others because that leads to the glorification of ourselves and not the glorification of God. Therefore do not call yourself teacher, doctor, professor, instructor, father, pastor or any other title because we are not to give anyone nothing and are nothing so you do not deserve any recognition.

In case you have forgotten, rabbi means teacher and doctor comes from the Latin word for teacher which is exactly what the Pharisees and Scribes which simply means to teach. Then ironically enough the title of pastor is given the early Church where it was used to distinguish shepherds.

Every time someone calls you by a title of esteem your own righteousness is diminished because humble yourself before God is humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted. "(Matthew 23:12) There is nothing you can do to earn recognition from God other than simply being humble and honest with Him.

Therefore if you want to be exalted before God then you must humble yourself now. Instead of calling yourself a professor you should call yourself a student. Instead of calling yourself a doctor call yourself a patient. Instead of calling yourself a teacher call yourself a servant. Instead of calling yourself an instructor call yourself a day laborer.

After all, we are all slaves of God. Then yes, the slave is meant to serve their God's property but God to do with as He pleases. Everything is a slave of God. Even the most vocal atheists are owned by God. It does not matter if you hold a view contrary to this because in the end God is the Creator of everything and has determined the outcome of everything as I have said in my Revelation series. Therefore God is the owner you are free and not a slave of God you are in fact rebelling against God and God has made your own will is greater than His will. Then instead of rebelling against God as Adam and Eve did in the Garden of Eden you should accept your place as the origin of God as you humble yourself before Him and before others so that you will glorify God and instead of yourself. So always remember to be humble.

Finally I would like to add that you should not humbly exalt yourself. What that means is that you try to appear humble for the purpose of others seeing you as righteous. What I mean here is that you should not be proud by believing into a new social currency so that instead of pride you become proud by measuring the amount of this new social currency you have so you look better than others.

An example of this behavior would be someone who purposely debases themselves in public or someone who purposely lies to others when they are watching. Another example would be those who always say they are poor for you or someone else when they find out something bad happened to them. The idea is that these people simply do what they do to gain social standing and they expect God to be impressed God. Thus they are just as self serving as those who call themselves Christians and glorify themselves directly they instead seek indirect glorification through appearing humble and simply pretending to others. So instead of humbly exalting yourself you should remain humble and not try to measure your humility.

Lastly I would like to reiterate what Jesus says:

"For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:12)

Therefore keep this fact in mind and do not forget it.

Chapter 6.21: Be Humble

It is also important to remember to always be humble.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

"To some who trusted in their own righteousness and viewed others with contempt he also told this parable: "Two men went up to the temple to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood by himself and prayed, 'God, I thank You that I am not like the other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector. I fast twice a week and pay tithes of all that I receive.'

But the tax collector stood at a distance, unwilling even to lift up his eyes to heaven. Instead, he beat his breast and said, 'God, have mercy on me, a sinner!' I tell you, this man, rather than the Pharisee, went home justified. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, but everyone who humbles himself will be exalted." (Luke 18:9-14)

Instead of placing your trust in your own righteousness you should instead place your trust in God alone for in doing so you will always remain humble. This is why Jesus said the sinner went home justified rather than the Pharisee because the sinner was the one who humbled himself before God and recognized his failings while the Pharisee exaltedhimself before God seeking recognition for his works.

By asking God for mercy you humble yourself while if you pick the Pharisee you exalt yourself. This is why I said you need to trust in God instead of trusting in your own righteousness. Your own is as filthy as all sinners and even the most righteous among us sometimes stumble. Therefore you should not seek to exalt themselves before God because they always have a reason to ask God for mercy instead.

Then as Jesus also says:

"But you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father. for you have one Father, and He is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one Instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:8-12)

Thus we are also called not to exalt ourselves to others because that leads to the glorification of ourselves and not the glorification of God. Therefore do not call yourself teacher, doctor, professor, instructor, father, pastor or any other title because we are to give nothing and are nothing so you do not deserve any recognition.

In case you have forgotten, rabbi means teacher and doctor comes from the Latin word for teacher which is exactly what the Pharisees and Scribes which simply means to teach. Then ironically enough the title of pastor is given the early Church where it was used to distinguish shepherds.

Every time someone calls you by a title of esteem your own righteousness is diminished because humble yourself before God is humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted. "(Matthew 23:12) There is nothing you can do to earn recognition from God other than simply being humble and honest with Him.

Therefore if you want to be exalted before God then you must humble yourself now. Instead of calling yourself a professor you should call yourself a student. Instead of calling yourself a doctor call yourself a patient. Instead of calling yourself a teacher call yourself a servant. Instead of calling yourself an instructor call yourself a day laborer.

After all, we are all slaves of God. Then yes, the slave is meant to serve their God's property but God to do with as He pleases. Everything is a slave of God. Even the most vocal atheists are owned by God. It does not matter if you hold a view contrary to this because in the end God is the Creator of everything and has determined the outcome of everything as I have said in my Revelation series. Therefore God is the owner you are free and not a slave of God you are in fact rebelling against God and God has made your own will is greater than His will. Then instead of rebelling against God as Adam and Eve did in the Garden of Eden you should accept your place as the origin of God as you humble yourself before Him and before others so that you will glorify God and instead of yourself. So always remember to be humble.

Finally I would like to add that you should not humbly exalt yourself. What that means is that you try to appear humble for the purpose of others seeing you as righteous. What I mean here is that you should not be proud by believing into a new social currency so that instead of pride you become proud by measuring the amount of this new social currency you have so you look better than others.

An example of this behavior would be someone who purposely debases themselves in public or someone who purposely lies to others when they are watching. Another example would be those who always say they are poor for you or someone else when they find out something bad happened to them. The idea is that these people simply do what they do to gain social standing and they expect God to be impressed God. Thus they are just as self serving as those who call themselves Christians and glorify themselves directly they instead seek indirect glorification through appearing humble and simply pretending to others. So instead of humbly exalting yourself you should remain humble and not try to measure your humility.

Lastly I would like to reiterate what Jesus says:

"For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:12)

Therefore keep this fact in mind and do not forget it.

Chapter 6.22: Sexuality

First off I would just like to say that you will find many people who will try to twist what I write, or change how you see the Bible as a whole and scripture specifically, so that you will be tempted to skip over what I write and instead of seeing the truth you will see visions of what sexual immorality is but I strongly encourage you to not skip anything and to instead read every single word I write from start and what I have to say so you fully understand everything.

This chapter is divided into several parts. In the first I go over what so-called sexual immorality means in the context of the Greek words that are used for marriage, masturbation, contraception, pornography, and should people together and homosexuality and finally transgenderism.

1 – Definition

Alright so what exactly is so-called sexual immorality and why do I call it so-called? Well you see the Greek word translated as sexual immorality in the translation I am using and as most translations in most other translations is porneia (πορνεία) and the intended meaning of the word by the authors of the New Testament has literally nothing to do with sex. Yes, really! I am being serious and I say this because when I discovered this fact myself I was shocked and I was so shocked as you probably are now. Therefore allow me to demonstrate my claim by examining the Greek word corresponding to other Greek words and through a contextual analysis of the word's usage in the New Testament.

In terms of the origin of the Greek word porneia (πορνεία) it comes from the word porneuō (πορνεύω) which means to engage in prostitution or commit adultery. Then porneia (πορνεία) and the intended meaning of the word by the authors of the New Testament has literally nothing to do with sex. Yes, really! I am being serious and I say this because when I discovered this fact myself I was shocked and I was so shocked as you probably are now. Therefore allow me to demonstrate my claim by examining the Greek word corresponding to other Greek words and through a contextual analysis of the word's usage in the New Testament.

In terms of the origin of the Greek word porneia (πορνεία) it comes from the word porneuō (πορνεύω) which means to engage in prostitution or commit adultery. Then porneia (πορνεία) is a prostitute. Then when you add the suffix -ia (-ία) to the word (πορνεύω) you get porneia (πορνεία) which then means I prostitute from the verb suffix. Finally you add the suffix -ia (-ία) to porneuō (πορνεύω) you get porneia (πορνεία) which then means prostitute from the suffix -ia (-ία) porneia (πορνεία) is best understood to mean prostitution.

So how exactly do we go from a word at means a prostitute to a word that people understand as sexual immorality in most translations? I mean look at the Greek words in this paragraph. You can directly see how porneia (πορνεία) is literally the root word of porneia (πορνεία). Therefore based on this the correct translation of porneia (πορνεία) is prostitution, both buying and selling, not fornication or sexual immorality. But did I not say it has nothing to do with sex? Yes, but that is because porneia is used metaphorically and not literally. But first I want to defend my literal definition of porneia (πορνεία) as prostitution.

First off you may be familiar with the 1611 King James Version translation of the Bible. In this translation the word porneia (πορνεία) is translated as fornication. However in the last four hundred years the word fornication has lost its meaning and has become a more general term for all sex outside of marriage instead of what it originally meant. You see the word fornication comes from the Latin word fornix which referred to the gate or arched structure of a brothel. Thus the original meaning of the word fornication was actually prostitution, both buying and selling. Therefore the original meaning of fornication was a correct translation of the literal meaning behind the word but really we just changed our definition of fornication over the years.

Next in terms of the Greek translation of the Old Testament, the Septuagint or LXX, the word porneia (πορνεία) and its associated words are best translated and understood as prostitution.

For example as the Book of Ezekiel says:

"And in all your abominations and acts of prostitution you did not remember the days of your youth when you were naked and bare, wallowing in your own blood." (Ezekiel 16:22)

The translation acts of prostitution here is an accurate literal translation of the original Hebrew. Then in terms of the Greek Septuagint the word used for prostitution is you guessed it porneia (πορνεία). So we can see that the word from a Hebrew word that means prostitution to a Greek word that means prostitution then in the English term sexual immorality that people apply to everything.

Alright but what does porneia (πορνεία) mean then? Yes I claim it means prostitution, buying and selling. So what is the intended meaning in the New Testament?

Well read Ezekiel again to get the full context of the above verse:

"You even took the sons and daughters you bore to Me and sacrificed them as food for idols. Was your prostitution not enough? You slaughtered My children and delivered them up through fire to the idols.

And in all your abominations and acts of prostitution, you did not remember the days of your youth when you were naked and bare, wallowing in your own blood.

Woe! Woe to you, declares the Lord GOD. And in addition to all your other wickedness, you built yourself a mound and made yourself a lofty shrine in every public place. At the head of every street you built your lofty shrine and degraded your beauty. With increasing promiscuity you spread your legs to all who passed by. You prostituted yourself with your lovers, the men of Egypt, Egypt, and increased your promiscuity to provoke Me to anger." (Ezekiel 16:20-26)

First off in the Septuagint the word translated as promiscuity here is ekporneuō (ἐκπορνεύω) which means literally to go whoring and comes from the word porné (πόρνη) which again everyone agrees means prostitute. Well it should be completely and undeniably obvious that Ezekiel is not literally talking about prostitution here and that instead the word prostitution is being used as a metaphor for extreme and detestable sin related to idolatry. Chasing after false gods and worshiping them. The is is God is ancient Israel's husband and that they are liable so by engaging in idolatry they are cheating on their husband by selling their Husband's love, or prostituting, for the abominable practices of the nations around them.

To make this metaphor the definition of prostitution more clear consider what Revelation says:

"Then one of the seven angels with the seven bowls came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits by many waters. The kings of the earth were immoral with her, and those who live on the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her immorality."

And the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness. There I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with Blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls. She held in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality. And on her forehead a mysterious name was written:

BABYLON THE GREAT,

THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES

AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." (Revelation 17:1-5)

First off again the words and phrases translated as immoral, immorality and sexual immorality have their roots in the Greek words porneia and porné (πόρνη). Then as I said in my Revelation series in Revelation 17 I also ties with the passage from Ezekiel above the text is saying that the great prostitute represents Babylon, highly objectionable acts and rebellion against God. This fact is made very clear in the rest of Revelation where porneia (πορνεία), mistranslated as sexual immorality, and property translated as prostitution, never refers to sexual immorality in the Greek translation. So really again, in terms of the usage of porneia (πορνεία) in Revelation it is not supposed to envision a highly objectionable act that is associated with rebellion against God due to how bad it is.

Alright so no doubt you agree with me so far here but what about the usage of porneia (πορνεία) in the rest of the New Testament? Surely the word must be talking about sex in Paul's letters, right? Well, no! Well still no. Allow me to demonstrate this fact.

As First Corinthians says:

"Everything is permissible for me,' but not everything is beneficial. 'Everything is permissible for me,' but I will not be mastered by anything. Food is for the stomach and the stomach for food,' but God will destroy them both. The body is not meant for sexual immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body. By his power God raised the Lord from the dead, and He will raise us also.

Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I take the members of Christ and unite them with a prostitute? Never! Or don't you know that he who unites himself with a prostitute is one with her in body? For it is said, "The two will become one flesh." But he who unites himself with the Lord is one with Him in spirit.

Flee from sexual immorality. Every other sin a man can commit is outside his body, but he who sins sexually sins against his own body. Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own; you were bought at a price. Therefore glorify God with your body." (1 Corinthians 6:12-20)

There are two ways to view this passage. The first is to say that Paul is talking about idolatry and the Corinthians visiting pagan temples. This would be highly consistent with the rest of the word porneia (πορνεία) because just like with Ezekiel the idea is that God's people are God's wife. Thus by engaging in idolatry Paul is saying they are cheating on their husband or spiritual prostitution. This would then also mean that when Paul says that porneia (πορνεία), or prostitute, he is referring to either the pagan pleasures of the pagan practices that took place in the temples. Now only people at skeptical that Paul is talking about this but you need to remember that Christians are honoring many different so-called gods and that if they did so they would be idolaters. Then they would have had fortune. Thus what I mean by this is that if the Corinthians visited the Corinthians would abandon their pagan practices upon hearing the Gospel and that instead they most likely just treated the God of the Bible and Jesus Christ as another god or honor in their daily lives in addition to the pagan so-called gods they worshiped.

Furthermore as evidence of this Paul compares the bodies of Christians to the Temple of God. The idea here is that just as a Christian commits idolatry they are dishonoring their body because their body is a Temple of God. Then why Paul tells Christians to glorify God with their bodies because he is saying that they should abstain from idolatry so that they do not become corrupted and blasphemie God through their idolatrous practices.

Now you might object to all this and say that clearly it is talking about sex but I would like to emphasize what Paul wrote:

As Paul wrote:

"Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! Or don't you know that he who unites himself to a prostitute is one with her in body? For it is said, "The two will become one flesh." But he who unites himself with the Lord is one with him in spirit." (1 Corinthians 6:15-17)

Here Paul is saying that the Corinthians are members of Christ' and that because they are one with Christ they are also one with the called good through idolatry they are committing spiritual adultery against Christ. Thus the idea here is that Christians are one with Christ so that we have become God's wife. Thus when Christian unites with an idol, a prostitute, then they become one flesh with the idol so that they are no longer one with Christ. This may not make sense but as Paul wrote in the last verse "But he who unites himself to a prostitute is one with him in spirit." (1 Corinthians 6:17)

Therefore I do not see how Paul could be talking about sex here. Instead Paul is talking about being one with God or being one with Christ by committing spiritual adultery, or porneia (πορνεία), which is literally a prostitute. In other words the references in prostitutes and prostitution and porneia (πορνεία) are equivalent with the same meanings as found in the Ezekiel and Revelation passages I have referenced above.

Now you may doubt this view but lets take the overall context of First Corinthians into account. In 1 Corinthians 8 Paul is talking about eating food sacrificed to idols and in 1 Corinthians 10 Paul even references some of the Corinthians engaging in pagan versions of communion or the Lord's supper while also participating in communion. What I am saying here is that clearly the Corinthians had a very big problem with idolatry. This would actually make sense since the majority of the Corinthians converts would be former pagans and pagans believed in honoring many different gods. Therefore from this point of view the God of Christianity would just be another one to honor. So if Paul talks about eating food sacrificed to idols and meals in honor of idols then what about is he warning practice of worshiping idols or false gods by engaging in pagan worship practices? Therefore I would it would once again make sense for Paul to use the word porneia (πορνεία) to refer to extremely detestable practices of idolatry in the same way as the Septuagint or the Greek translation of the Old Testament. The idea here is that sure eating meat sacrificed to idols and meals in honor of idols that you have been invited to are bad but actually worshiping an idol is extremely wicked hence the word porneia (πορνεία) that Paul uses.

Alright it is true that even did the Corinthians understand the word porneia (πορνεία)? They probably did or at least had at least one person to explain what Paul are really talking about. Think of it like the in group and out group slang in the experiment. Imagine if Paul just said that you have stumbled upon many different Corinthians and you ask them what a word you think you know the definition of to mean something completely different than the group because it is used in a more figurative way. So the Corinthians would know exactly the meaning of the word are those in the group. This means that the reason why Paul did the lack of access to copies of the original Greek texts that we have today is irrelevant. Because those who became Christians did not learn about what porneia (πορνεία) means in the context of the Bible. As a new convert you would learn what meaning porneia (πορνεία) and instead it became common knowledge. Thus Paul had the idea that it must refer to sexual sin in general or something. Thus it is highly likely that yes originally Christians understood the true meaning of porneia (πορνεία) but that the figurative meaning of this term was lost as Christianity spread.

Next in terms of the second option oftentimes prostitutes would make their services available in pagan temple in order to honor the false gods. This practice is knowing as cult prostitution or temple prostitution. So what could Paul really talking about here? Well he is not talking about sexual immorality in the translation claims and instead he is talking about not having sex with temple prostitutes in honor of false gods and participating in idolatry. This is why Paul says that our bodies are a temple of the Holy Spirit. The idea here is that having sex with a temple prostitute means as a sin against God and that it is wrong so that you invite a demonic spirit into the Temple of your body. Thus you would then drive out the Spirit of God because you cannot have a demonic spirit and the Holy Spirit inside you at the same time.

This is why Paul says: "Every other sin a man can commit is outside his body, but he who sins sexually sins against his own body." (1 Corinthians 6:18) Again Paul is saying that by having sex with a temple prostitute you are blaspheming and dishonoring the Temple of God so that you are driving out the Holy Spirit of God inhabits. Therefore this passage is not talking about sex or sexual immorality in the traditional sense and instead it is talking about the highly objectionable sin of idolatry.

This is why although Paul is using porné (πόρνη) literally in the sense that he is actually talking about prostitution he is also metaphorically using porneia (πορνεία) figuratively in the sense that he is not literally talking about sex specifically but rather idolatry. Again, idolatry is the highest offense against God so this is why Paul is so concerned with it.

Now you may dispute this by claiming that I do not know what Paul is talking about. However this is actually another point in my favor here. You have to understand that Paul is writing to Corinthians in response to receiving a report from the people of Chloe. The idea is this Epistle is really half the story and we do not have the other half. Because of this fact we can only attempt to reason what Paul is actually responding to. But really this is why I believe that Paul is talking about idolatry and believe Paul's line of argumentation here does not follow that literally but rather that it is bad and sinful. Instead Paul's line of argumentation here relates to the idea of being a Temple of the Holy Spirit. Therefore it would be safe to assume that Paul is most concerned with the idolatry aspect of temple prostitution as I have said.

Next as First Corinthians says:

"Now for the matters you wrote about: It is good to abstain from sexual relations. But because there is so much sexual immorality, each man should have his own wife, and each woman should have her own husband.

The husband should fulfill his marital duty to his wife, and likewise the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband. Likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife." (1 Corinthians 7:1–4)

First have the word translated as have here does not literally mean have. Instead in this context it means literally to have or to have sexual relations with. Therefore Paul is literally saying because there is so much prostitution and temple prostitution have sexual relations with his own wife and each woman her own husband. Then remember, prostitution in the Roman world was essentially temple prostitution so Paul also is literally saying not to engage in idolatry by having sex with temple prostitutes and to instead have sex with their husband when he wants. The idea is that people in this church were bringing their sexual desires with temple prostitutes and thus engaging in idolatry instead of having sex with their own spouse. Then when you see the word porneia (πορνεία), translated as sexual immorality, in this passage you should read it as the detestable practice of idolatry instead just like in 1 Corinthians 6 mentioned above.

Alright but then why did Paul write "It is good to abstain from sexual relations" (1 Corinthians 7:1) and then "Do not deprive one another" (1 Corinthians 7:1). Therefore some people in the church of Corinth probably want to practice ascetics or a lifestyle detestable to God so they were asked Paul if they should abstain from sex in order to be more pleasing. This is why Paul in response says that because there is so much porneia (πορνεία) that each man should have sex with his own wife and each woman her own husband. The idea here is that if one spouse wants to abstain from sex then they only recourse for the other spouse would be to have sex with a prostitute and most likely a temple prostitute.

Now you may dispute this but then why did Paul write the following?

"The husband should fulfill his marital duty to his wife, and likewise the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband. Likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife.

Do not deprive each other, except by mutual consent and for a time, so you may devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again, so that Satan will not tempt you through your lack of self-control. I say this as a concession, not as a commandment. I wish that all men were as I am. But each has his own gift from God; one has this gift, another has that." (1 Corinthians 7:3-7)

In the first two verses here Paul specifically says that a spouse should not abstain from sex and practice asceticism does not have the right to deprive their spouse of sex. Then the following verse Paul says that men and women should not deprive each other of sex through practicing ascetics unless they both agree to it and only for a limited period of time. He then wants to come back together again so that Satan will not tempt them by making them lack self-control.

But then what is with the last verse?:

"I wish that all men were as I am. But each man has his own gift from God; one has this gift, another has that." (1 Corinthians 7:7)

Well Paul was most likely practicing ascetiscism himself in order to aid him in the spiritual disciplines he was having. However he recognizes that not everyone can become an ascetic so that they be said each person has their own gift from God.

But what about the following?:

"Now to the unmarried and widows I say this: It is good for them to remain unmarried, as I am. But if they cannot control themselves, let them marry. For it is better to marry than to burn with passion." (1 Corinthians 7:8-9)

Here Paul is trying to encourage those who are not married to remain single. Thus an ascetic lifestyle like he is. Then if those who are unmarried or the Corinthian church want to have sex too much then it is a good idea for them to get married so that they are permitted to have sex with so that they will never be tempted to have sex with a temple prostitute. You have to understand that seeing a temple prostitute was considered a normal thing so normal than to men and women did and it was the easiest way to have sex. Thus Paul is saying that if you really want to have sex with your spouse so that you will not burn will passion and fall into temptation and corrupt the Temple of your body by joining with an idol by means of having sex with a temple prostitute then get married. In 1 Corinthians 6:15-20 passage I discussed previously, Paul I talk more about this passage with respect to sex before marriage and go over this idea of being one with God.

Next as First Corinthians says:

"To the married I give this command (not I but the Lord): A wife must not separate from her husband. But if she does, she must remain unmarried or be reconciled to her husband. And a husband must not divorce his wife.

To the married I give this command: To the husband and wife God gives this command: Husbands and wives, you belong to each other. Your bodies belong to your husbands or wives to do with them as they please. Then just like the husband and wife belong to God so do your bodies belong to God. Do not deprive each other except by mutual consent and for a time, so you may devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again, so that Satan will not tempt you through your lack of self-control." (1 Corinthians 7:10-11, 3-5)

So how could Paul be saying not to have sex with your wife while you are filled with desire to the "Christian community" in the same breath he says to the Corinthians that they should have sex with their spouse whenever their spouse desires it? Really it does not make sense at all unless we read the text. Even people being mistreated by your spouse in a severe way should not divorce their spouse. Really the idea matter is for the next chapter on marriage so you will more about it there.

But wait what about Jesus and the prostitutes and tax collectors?

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"Truly I tell you, the tax collectors and prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God before you. For John came to you in a righteous way and you did not believe him, but the tax collectors and prostitutes did. And even after you saw this, you did not repent and believe him." (Matthew 21:31-32)

Well the author of the Gospel of Matthew is saying that the tax collectors and prostitutes literally here and is instead using the terms figuratively. For instance how many tax collectors were there in Judea really? It is not like there were that many. Furthermore the reason why tax collectors are known for being highly objectionable and sinful people is because the only way they really made money was that defrauding people and collecting more tax than they should. Therefore tax collectors have to say tax collectors engaged in porneia (πορνεία). Thus by including prostitutes Jesus is really using tax collectors and prostitutes as a metaphor for highly objectionable and extreme sinners, criminals, unrighteous people and so forth. Thus the idea here is that Jesus is saying that the sinners have recognized their sin and repented before they did and this is not because they believe that they are righteous before God even though Jesus correctly calls them "whitewashed tombs" (Matthew 23:27) later on.

But what about their usages of the word outside of the New Testament and in the translation of the Old Testament the Septuagint? Well I did not look into it but I do not think it is important as all since it only matters how the authors and translators of the Bible used the words respectively used the word. I mean if porneia (πορνεία) literally refers to prostitution in the Septuagint and in the New Testament then the word must mean prostitution. Even if they are people in the first to fourth centuries AD that use the word to mean sexual immorality and not literally prostitution but figuratively highly objectable sin but I did not see that this is relevant. I mean all this would demonstrate is that they are traditionally wrong.

Therefore as a result of everything I quoted and said I hope you now understand that porneia (πορνεία) does not and cannot mean sexual immorality and instead refers to the highly detestable sin in general that relates to sinning against God. Like in idolatry, or sinning against your neighbor, like in exploiting or abusing them. Therefore the most accurate definition of the word they engage in prostitution, porneia (πορνεία), is a catch all term that refers to extremely immoral practices that relate to sinning against both God and your neighbor. Really the idea here is that God is our Husband as Christians and we are wife so anything that violates the two commandments of loving God and loving our neighbor is a form of porneia (πορνεία), prostituting, God's love of us to receive a material benefit in our lives now. This is why it is accurate to say that the most accurate type of sexual immorality is figuratively a prostitute.

Alright but what does this all mean? Well quite simply it means that the New Testament really does not say anything with respect to sex specifically outside of adultery and one exception for sex before marriage. I talk about sex before marriage. Sure Paul condemns seeing temple prostitutes in honor of the sex and instead he condemns it on the basis of idolatry. Therefore because the word porneia (πορνεία) translated as sexual immorality is literally has nothing to do with sex let alone masturbation or even having sexual fantasies. In the rest of the Bible it is up over other aspects of sexuality from a biblical perspective starting with adultery.

Next I would just like to say that I could always be wrong here. I mean maybe the Greek word porneia (πορνεία) does in fact refer to sexual sin? Although as I have shown it does not see how it possibly could if I am being honest with you. For instance Paul uses the word porneia (πορνεία) and porné (πόρνη) appear fourteen times in the Book of Revelation and never explicitly and unambiguously refers to sexual sin. So we could make the case that it is possible for it to mean sexual sin in five cases with respect to the context of these cases saying it means sexual sin there would really be quite the leap of faith and inserting your own meaning into the word. Furthermore the root word of porneia (πορνεία) is porneuō (πορνεύω) which undeniable means a prostitute as I have stated so I am not sure how you can then say that porneia (πορνεία) means sexual immorality or fornication and not prostitution. Then sure I admit that you could make the case that it is possible for porneia (πορνεία) to refer to sexual immorality in some instances in the New Testament however given the rest of the cases in the New Testament and its usage in the Greek translation of the Old Testament, the Septuagint, I am unsure how you could throw out the 80% clear and unambiguous cases where it clearly does not refer to sexual

immorality or sexual sin and say based on the 70's ambiguous cases that it must refer to sexual immorality or sexual sin. Therefore although I do admit I could be wrong I really am not sure how.

But what about taking the meaning of pornia (πορνεία) to mean sexual sin on the basis of prostituting your sexual purity for pleasure? Well I do admit that this could be possible. However the main problem with this view is that there is the New Testament is this directly stated or even heavily implied. In fact the vast majority of the uses of pornia (πορνεία) clearly and unambiguously do not refer to sexual sin at all and instead refer to highly detestable sin in general as I have just listed above. Therefore to claim that pornia (πορνεία) means sexual sin on the basis of prostituting your sexual purity for pleasure is inserting your own meaning of the word into the text. The idea here is that you would quite literally be redefining the word to fit your own narrative and beliefs. Thus again I do not know how you could possibly say that pornia (πορνεία) even probably refers to sexual sin.

Really the only basis you could have is to claim that sexual sin of any type is a detestable sin so therefore porneia (πορνεία) encompasses sexual sin because porneia (πορνεία) is a detestable sin. But the problem here is that the only sexual sin the New Testament speaks against definitively is adultery. Yes, you might claim it clearly implies that fornication is wrong but this is not actually the case as I hinted at with what I said with respect to Jude 1:7 and why God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah. Furthermore Jesus actually speaks to a woman who is living with a man who is not her husband and is five times divorced or widowed.

As the Gospel of John says:

> "Jesus answered, 'If you knew the gift of God and who is asking you for a drink, you would have asked him, and He would have given you living water.
>
> 'Sir,' the woman replied, 'You have nothing to draw with and the well is deep. Where then will You get this living water? Are You greater than our father Jacob, who gave us this well and drank from it himself, as did his sons and his livestock?'
>
> Jesus said to her, 'Everyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again. But whoever drinks the water I give him will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give him will become in him a fount of water springing up to eternal life.
>
> The woman said to Him, 'Sir, give me this water so that I will not get thirsty and have to keep coming here to draw water.'
>
> Jesus told her, 'Go, call your husband and come back.
>
> 'I have no husband,' the woman replied.
>
> Jesus said to her, 'You are correct to say that you have no husband. In fact, you have had five husbands, and the man you now have is not your husband. You have spoken truthfully.
>
> 'Sir,' the woman said, 'I see that You are a prophet. Our fathers worshiped on this mountain, but you Jews say that the place where one must worship is in Jerusalem.' (John 4:10-20)

First off Jesus or the author of the Gospel of John never say this woman is sinful let alone refer to her with the word porneia (πορνεία) in some manner. Furthermore if Jesus viewed having sex outside of marriage as adultery then why did He not say anything to her? I mean He seems to have no problem telling the people of Jews they are sinful and wicked? Thus if Jesus does not say having sex outside of marriage is sinful then once again the only real sexual sin the New Testament condemns is adultery and even sex before marriage is not adultery. Now you might claim that the fact that Jesus told her that she has had five husbands and is living with a man who is not her husband is evidence that Jesus does not approve of what she is doing. The problem here is that Jesus tells her about her life to demonstrate that He is from God so that the woman will believe what He says concerning the living water. In other words Jesus is providing a sign to the woman by telling her about things that He would not know if He was not from God.

This is why the Gospel of John goes on to say:

> "Then the woman left her water jar, went back into the town, and said to the people, 'Come, see a man who told me everything I ever did. Could this be the Christ?' So they left the town and made their way toward Jesus." (John 4:28-30)
>
> "Many of the Samaritans from that town believed in Jesus because of the woman's testimony, 'He told me everything I ever did.' So when the Samaritans came to Him, they asked Him to stay with them, and He stayed two days.
>
> And many more believed because of His message. They said to the woman, 'We believe not only because of your words; we have heard for ourselves, and we know that this man truly is the Savior of the world.' (John 4:39-42)

Therefore Jesus told her these things to demonstrate that He is the Christ and that He has come from God so that His words are true. Then I would also like to mention that Jesus never said the woman is sinful let alone guilty of porneia (πορνεία) because you cannot say having sex outside of marriage is wrong. In fact I would even say based on the fact that Jesus does not condemn it here is evidence enough that porneia (πορνεία) does not mean sex outside of marriage. I mean not only does Jesus speak against her but the woman herself does not to repent for sin in general so I am not sure how you could claim the text is even implying that she is sinful.

Alright but then why does the author of the Gospel of John say she has had five husbands and is living with a man who is not her husband? Could the author not have had Jesus tell her about something else? Then because of this could you not say her behavior is sinful for simply bringing it up? Well you need to understand that early first century Jews did not like Samaritans.

This is why this chapter of the Gospel of John includes:

> "You are a Jew,' said the woman. 'How can You ask for a drink from me, a Samaritan woman?' (For Jews do not associate with Samaritans.) (John 4:9)

Furthermore just like today a woman who was divorced especially multiple times was seen as sloppy and a woman who was divorced multiple times was seen as a whore. In addition living with someone who you were not married to at a second was seen as degrading since you would not have the legal protection of pledge and vow. Thus by saying the woman has had five husbands and is living with a man who is not her husband the author of the Gospel of John is trying to emphasize that she is the lowest of the low in Jewish society. Thus of course on top of being on the bottom rung of the social ladder she is a Samaritan to top it all off. But what is the purpose of this? Well the purpose is to show that a Samaritan woman whom everyone would look down upon as much as many of the Samaritans from her town had faith in Jesus and believed that He is the Christ. This is of course in contrast to the so-called Jews who Jesus later tells, "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires." (John 8:44) Therefore the purpose of the story with the Samaritan woman is to show that even the outcast Samaritans and Samaritans believe Jesus to be the Christ while the so-called Jews do not and plan to murder Him.

Thus I do not see how anyone could make the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean sexual sin based on the fact that it is used in the New Testament and the Greek Septuagint as well as the ancient silence of the New Testament on the matter of sexual sin outside of adultery. I mean sure like I said I admit that since porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin in general that it could refer to sexual immorality or sexual sin. However as I just demonstrated from the Gospel of John if having sex outside of marriage is sin then Jesus does not speak of it. Then you go over the Old Testament later in this chapter that the Old Testament does not speak against sex outside of marriage. Therefore the only real sexual sin the New Testament speaks against is adultery and as a result I do not see any basis for including sex in the sin of the definition of porneia (πορνεία). So sure like I said I could be wrong here but I truly do not see how it is possible for me to be wrong. But really the only thing you could possibly say to argue against what I have said is to appeal to tradition but as I said before I would simply say that all you have demonstrated by appealing to tradition is that your view has a long tradition of being wrong.

Then yes, I fully realize how changing the definition of porneia (πορνεία) from sexual immorality to highly detestable sin is something highly objectionable completely changes the meaning of the passages pertaining to adultery to sexual sin. However, is it more important to hold to so-called tradition or is it more important to accurately represent what the text of the Bible says? Furthermore I think we see that porneia (πορνεία) means sexual immorality or fornication just by the on the spot way we speak so that I do not see why a sin is not a sin even though I am nearly certain that it does not refer to sexual at all then would I not be a liar? I mean I would quite literally be lying if were to say that porneia (πορνεία) refers to sexual immorality or fornication since I do not believe that to be true. Therefore I fully stand by what I have written here and I will not twist the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean something that it clearly does not mean for the sake of so-called tradition. All this to say I encourage you to come to your own conclusions and do what you think is right in your heart because ultimately you are responsible for your own actions.

2 – Adultery

Now obviously adultery is a bad sin that qualifies as figuratively being called porneia (πορνεία). But what is adultery? Well adultery is when you have sex with someone who is not your spouse or someone who is married to someone else. Thus the idea is that if you are married and have sex with someone else who is not your spouse then you are committing adultery and if you are not married and you have sex with someone who is married then you are also committing adultery.

Now there are some people who insist that adultery does not mean what I just stated it to mean and that instead it means when a man has sex with a married woman or a married woman has sex with someone who is not her husband. However this view is not correct and conflicts with what Jesus says in the gospels.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

> "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her. And if a woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she commits adultery." (Mark 10:11-12)

As the Gospel of Luke says:

> "Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery, and the man marrying a divorced woman commits adultery." (Luke 16:18)

Therefore even if a man divorces his wife and marries another woman it still means adultery as Jesus says. Now I should clarify here porneia (πορνεία) is cause for divorce and you would be able to get remarried in this case as I talked about above and as you will read in the following chapter. But really my point here is that adultery is a sexual sin that is defined as commit adultery against his wife just as a woman can commit adultery against her husband.

But does Jesus not expand upon the definition of adultery to include merely looking at someone?

As Jesus says:

> "You have heard that it was said, 'Do not commit adultery.' But I say that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin, gouge it out and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to be thrown into hell. And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to depart into hell." (Matthew 5:27-30)

Here Jesus is of course saying that by lusting after a married woman in your heart you have committed adultery in his heart. Now the error that people make in this is applying this to sexual desire as a whole because they want to make it every sexual thought or desire sinful for some reason.

First off I would like to say that Jesus saying "anyone who looks at a woman to lust after her" (Matthew 5:28) is probably not literal and instead it should be seen as a figure of speech meaning pursuing or wanting to pursue someone who is married. In the idea here is that the act of adultery starts long before the actual act takes place by desiring to pursue or wanting to pursue someone or wants to pursue someone who they know is married. Therefore as long as you have not been pursuing or wanted to pursue someone who you knew was married then you have not committed adultery by merely looking at someone.

But why does Jesus say that lusting after someone in your heart is adultery and that gouging out your eyes is better if you are married yourself is adultery? The reason is because this is twofold. First off if you are married and lusting after someone else to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue them then you have demonstrated that your marriage and your spouse in your heart as I said on the chapter on the intended purpose. Thus if you review, imagine finding out your spouse has been lusting after someone else. Would you really desire to have sex with them while at the same time you are completely sure they have not physically cheated on you yet. Really the idea here is that they have been committing emotional adultery with someone and because you would be disgusted with their behavior and not consider them to be a faithful spouse. Therefore it is easy to see why Jesus says this is wrong.

Next by lusting after someone who is married while you are not married to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue you would be violating the tenth commandment.

As Exodus states:

> "You shall not covet your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his manservant or maidservant, or his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor." (Exodus 20:17)

Thus by lusting after and pursing or wishing to pursue you are violating the tenth command by coveting your neighbor's spouse. This is really why Jesus says that they "have already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Therefore Jesus told her these things to demonstrate that He is the Christ and that He has come from God so that His words are true. Then I would also like to mention that Jesus never said the woman is sinful let alone guilty of porneia (πορνεία) because you cannot say having sex outside of marriage is wrong. In fact I would even say based on the fact that Jesus does not condemn it here is evidence enough that porneia (πορνεία) does not mean sex outside of marriage. I mean not only does Jesus speak against her but the woman herself does to repent for sin in general so I am not sure how you could claim the text is even implying that she is sinful.

Alright but then why does the author of the Gospel of John say she has had five husbands and is living with a man who is not her husband? Could the author not have had Jesus tell her about something else? Then because of this could you not say her behavior is sinful for simply bringing it up? Well you need to understand that early first century Jews did not like Samaritans.

This is why this chapter of the Gospel of John includes:

> "You are a Jew,' said the woman. 'How can You ask for a drink from me, a Samaritan woman?' (For Jews do not associate with Samaritans.) (John 4:9)

Furthermore just like today a woman who was divorced especially multiple times was seen as sloppy and a woman who was divorced multiple times was seen as a whore. In addition living with someone who you were not married to at a second was seen as degrading since you would not have the legal protection of pledge and vow. Thus by saying the woman has had five husbands and is living with a man who is not her husband the author of the Gospel of John is trying to emphasize that she is the lowest of the low in Jewish society. Thus of course on top of being on the bottom rung of the social ladder she is a Samaritan to top it all off. But what is the purpose of this? Well the purpose is to show that a Samaritan woman whom everyone would look down upon as much as many of the Samaritans from her town had faith in Jesus and believed that He is the Christ. This is of course in contrast to the so-called Jews who Jesus later tells, "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires." (John 8:44) Therefore the purpose of the story with the Samaritan woman is to show that even the outcast Samaritans and Samaritans believe Jesus to be the Christ while the so-called Jews do not and plan to murder Him.

Thus I do not see how anyone could make the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean sexual sin based on the fact that it is used in the New Testament and the Greek Septuagint as well as the ancient silence of the New Testament on the matter of sexual sin outside of adultery. I mean sure like I said I admit that since porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin in general that it could refer to sexual immorality or sexual sin. However as I just demonstrated from the Gospel of John if having sex outside of marriage is sin then Jesus does not speak of it. Then you go over the Old Testament later in this chapter that the Old Testament does not speak against sex outside of marriage. Therefore the only real sexual sin the New Testament speaks against is adultery and as a result I do not see any basis for including sex in the sin of the definition of porneia (πορνεία). So sure like I said I could be wrong here but I truly do not see how it is possible for me to be wrong. But really the only thing you could possibly say to argue against what I have said is to appeal to tradition but as I said before I would simply say that all you have demonstrated by appealing to tradition is that your view has a long tradition of being wrong.

Then yes, I fully realize how changing the definition of porneia (πορνεία) from sexual immorality to highly detestable sin is something highly objectionable completely changes the meaning of the passages pertaining to adultery to sexual sin. However, is it more important to hold to so-called tradition or is it more important to accurately represent what the text of the Bible says? Furthermore I think we see that porneia (πορνεία) means sexual immorality or fornication just by the on the spot way we speak so that I do not see why a sin is not a sin even though I am nearly certain that it does not refer to sexual at all then would I not be a liar? I mean I would quite literally be lying if were to say that porneia (πορνεία) refers to sexual immorality or fornication since I do not believe that to be true. Therefore I fully stand by what I have written here and I will not twist the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean something that it clearly does not mean for the sake of so-called tradition. All this to say I encourage you to come to your own conclusions and do what you think is right in your heart because ultimately you are responsible for your own actions.

2 – Adultery

Now the bigger question is what does the word porneia (πορνεία) mean? Well I do not know for sure but I do know that porneia (πορνεία) is a highly detestable sin in general and that it is used in the New Testament and the Greek Septuagint as well as the ancient silence of the New Testament on the matter of sexual sin outside of adultery. Thus I do not see how anyone could make the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean sexual sin based on the fact that it is used in the New Testament and the Greek Septuagint as well as the ancient silence of the New Testament on the matter of sexual sin outside of adultery. I mean sure like I said I admit that since porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin in general that it could refer to sexual immorality or sexual sin. However as I just demonstrated from the Gospel of John if having sex outside of marriage is sin then Jesus does not speak of it. Then you go over the Old Testament later in this chapter that the Old Testament does not speak against sex outside of marriage. Therefore the only real sexual sin the New Testament speaks against is adultery and as a result I do not see any basis for including sex in the sin of the definition of porneia (πορνεία). So sure like I said I could be wrong here but I truly do not see how it is possible for me to be wrong. But really the only thing you could possibly say to argue against what I have said is to appeal to tradition but as I said before I would simply say that all you have demonstrated by appealing to tradition is that your view has a long tradition of being wrong.

Then yes, I fully realize how changing the definition of porneia (πορνεία) from sexual immorality to highly detestable sin is something highly objectionable completely changes the meaning of the passages pertaining to adultery to sexual sin. However, is it more important to hold to so-called tradition or is it more important to accurately represent what the text of the Bible says? Furthermore I think we see that porneia (πορνεία) means sexual immorality or fornication just by the on the spot way we speak so that I do not see why a sin is not a sin even though I am nearly certain that it does not refer to sexual at all then would I not be a liar? I mean I would quite literally be lying if were to say that porneia (πορνεία) refers to sexual immorality or fornication since I do not believe that to be true. Therefore I fully stand by what I have written here and I will not twist the word porneia (πορνεία) to mean something that it clearly does not mean for the sake of so-called tradition. All this to say I encourage you to come to your own conclusions and do what you think is right in your heart because ultimately you are responsible for your own actions.

3 – Sex before Marriage

What about sex before marriage? Surely this must be a sin right? Well in short I do not know of any evidence that would be able to claim that it is a sin. For instance since porneia (πορνεία) does not refer to sexual sin at all let alone in general as I have demonstrated it does not. Furthermore I really does not talk about sex at all outside of adultery. Yes there are some exceptions to this. But what are these two exceptions?

First as Romans says:

> "Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in carousing and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in quarreling and envy." (Romans 13:13)

The word translated as sexual immorality is actually not porneia (πορνεία) or a similar word this time although it does mean sex but it is koitais (κοίταις) which is the plural form of the word koitē (κοίτη) which literally means sexual intercourse depending upon the context. Therefore the word koitais (κοίταις) is better understood as promiscuity in this context. Now this word in the context of the verse is the word aselgeiais (ἀσελγείαις) which is translated as debauchery in the translation quoted. In case you are unaware debauchery in this context would mean aggressive sexuality or lewdness. The word can also be translated as licentiousness which is defined as being promiscuous and unprincipled.

Therefore given the word koitais (κοίταις) is plural and the meaning of aselgeiais (ἀσελγείαις) I do not believe Paul is talking about sexual sin in general here and instead Paul is talking about having sex with more than one person at once or having sex with different people in a short time period. This fact is further evidenced by the context of Paul saying "not in carousing and drunkenness" (Romans 13:13) which would heavily imply a drunken feast that includes orgies before the prostitutes and licentiousness. Thus I do not think you can take this verse to mean having sex outside a marriage is wrong only that you should not have sex in a promiscuous or licentious manner by having sex with multiple people in a short period of time.

Calling this case in Romans 13:13 is the only term related to sexual sin that is not porneia (πορνεία), pornē (πόρνη) or a related term which most likely means promiscuity and a prostitute respectively. Then of course as I have said these words are used metaphorically and figuratively in the New Testament and that they related to highly detestable sin in general. Thus some starts to purpose or wants to pursue someone who they know is married. Therefore as long as you have not been pursuing or wanted to pursue someone who you knew was married then you have not committed adultery by merely looking at someone.

But why does Jesus say that lusting after someone in your heart is adultery and that gouging out your eyes is better if you are married yourself is adultery? The reason is because this is twofold. First off if you are married and lusting after someone else to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue them then you have demonstrated that your marriage and your spouse in your heart as I said on the chapter on the intended purpose. Thus if you review, imagine finding out your spouse has been lusting after someone else. Would you really desire to have sex with them while at the same time you are completely sure they have not physically cheated on you yet. Really the idea here is that they have been committing emotional adultery with someone and because you would be disgusted with their behavior and not consider them to be a faithful spouse. Therefore it is easy to see why Jesus says this is wrong.

Next by lusting after someone who is married while you are not married to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue you would be violating the tenth commandment.

As Exodus states:

> "You shall not covet your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his manservant or maidservant, or his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor." (Exodus 20:17)

Thus by lusting after and pursing or wishing to pursue you are violating the tenth command by coveting your neighbor's spouse. This is really why Jesus says that they "have already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

But here as you are already aware porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin and instead it refers to detestable sin or severe immorality in general. Thus if a woman say having sexual thoughts on this basis is wrong, then she is taking the word porneia (πορνεία) the meaning of impurity and lust. The word translated as impurity in the phrase akatharsia (ἀκαθαρσία) which just means uncleanness. The best way to view this is as being ceremonially unclean. Then the word translated as lust is pathos (πάθος) which just means a passion, depraved passion, strong feeling, or affectionate affection.

So really it depends on what you want to call unclean. Personally I would say strongly desiring sexual thoughts for others would make you unclean. For example if you are married and a new person begins making sexual work and you find them extremely attractive to the point where you start flirting with them and fantasize about sleeping with them then I would say such a thought makes you unclean. This is because you are committing adultery against your spouse in your heart. Now I do think you can be said about planning how to hurt people or being ceremonially unclean. But I do not think make you unclean as well. Furthermore I would say that simply calling having sexual thoughts impurity or uncleanness is not actually any evidence other than saying that impurity or uncleanness here means sexual thoughts is just circular reasoning and is therefore baseless.

So what about the second word, pathos, that is defined as a passion, depraved passion, strong feelings, inordinate affection or lust? Well quite simply I would say that the word refers to a certain level of desire that is so great that it tempts a person into committing sin.

For example read what Paul wrote:

> "For it is God's will that you should be holy: You must abstain from sexual immorality, each of you must know how to control his own body in holiness and honor, not in lustful passion like the Gentiles who do not know God, and no one should ever violate or exploit his brother in this matter because the Lord will avenge all such acts, as we have already told you and solemnly warned you. For God has not called us to impurity, but to holiness. Anyone who disregards this command does not reject man but God, the very One who gives you His Holy Spirit." (1 Thessalonians 4:3-8)

Now as I already said with regards to this passage I think that Paul is talking about sex at all and instead Paul is condemning Christians defrauding and exploiting their fellow Christians. Therefore the Greek word translated as lustful passion here would rightly refer to being afflicted with strong desires to the point where the fellow brothers by taking advantage of them to lust their wives.

Therefore there is nothing in the Colossians 3:5-8 passage that would indicate having sexual thoughts and fantasizing is wrong. All I assume you disagree with me here and that you believe having sexual thoughts for others is some reason. What level of sexual thoughts would be wrong? Is simply thinking that someone is attractive sinful? Or do you need to imagine yourself having sex with them for it to be sinful?

Now for some more questions. How do you find someone you are married to attractive? Is sexually desiring someone you are not married to a sin? Is it sinful to sexually desire your significant other you are dating, who you are not married to, is a sin right? Then how do you even find someone to be attractive in general? I mean are you not supposed to find your potential spouse sexually attractive?

So really by your own logic, assuming you disagree with me, trying to find someone to date and, ultimately, marry would be a sin in and of sin. Now if you are married so you think you are safe then think again. Did you repent of your sexual sins you committed as you lived in sin before you married your spouse? Well if you have not and if what you claim is true then you better do so now or you will go to the Lake of Fire. Of course I am being sarcastic with the last part here but I do want to point out how silly this is since if you actually believe the set up to this hypothetical you would be a hypocrite.

But my point in this little hypothetical here is to demonstrate that there is nothing wrong with have sexual thoughts and desires when you are not married. Having sexual thoughts is perfectly normal and if you were to try to repress every sexual thought then you would inevitably fail because doing such is thing is impossible. This is the main harm I see with trying to make every sexual thought into a thought crime. Those that perpetrate this belief set Christians up for failure. Then once they inevitably fail suddenly apostasy comes knocking.

Therefore always remember that you are not committing a thought crime by having sexual thoughts. Just even fantasize about whoever you want as long as you are not married and your desire does not become so great as to actually cheat. Just do not consider pursing someone who is married.

3 – Sex before Marriage

What about sex before marriage? Surely this must be a sin right? Well in short I do not know of any evidence that would be able to claim that it is a sin. For instance since porneia (πορνεία) does not refer to sexual sin at all let alone in general as I have demonstrated it does not. Furthermore really does not talk about sex at all outside of adultery. Yes there are some exceptions to this. But what are these two exceptions?

First as Romans says:

> "Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in carousing and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in quarreling and envy." (Romans 13:13)

The word translated as sexual immorality is actually not porneia (πορνεία) or a similar word this time although it does mean sex but it is koitais (κοίταις) which is the plural form of the word koitē (κοίτη) which literally means sexual intercourse depending upon the context. Therefore the word koitais (κοίταις) is better understood as promiscuity in this context. Now this word in the context of the verse is the word aselgeiais (ἀσελγείαις) which is translated as debauchery in the translation quoted. In case you are unaware debauchery in this context would mean aggressive sexuality or lewdness. The word can also be translated as licentiousness which is defined as being promiscuous and unprincipled.

Therefore given the word koitais (κοίταις) is plural and the meaning of aselgeiais (ἀσελγείαις) I do not believe Paul is talking about sexual sin in general here and instead Paul is talking about having sex with more than one person at once or having sex with different people in a short time period. This fact is further evidenced by the context of Paul saying "not in carousing and drunkenness" (Romans 13:13) which would heavily imply a drunken feast that includes orgies before the prostitutes and licentiousness. Thus I do not think you can take this verse to mean having sex outside a marriage is wrong only that you should not have sex in a promiscuous or licentious manner by having sex with multiple people in a short period of time.

Calling this case in Romans 13:13 is the only term related to sexual sin that is not porneia (πορνεία), pornē (πόρνη) or a related term which most likely means promiscuity and a prostitute respectively. Then of course as I have said these words are used metaphorically and figuratively in the New Testament and that they related to highly detestable sin in general. Thus some starts to purpose or wants to pursue someone who they know is married. Therefore as long as you have not been pursuing or wanted to pursue someone who you knew was married then you have not committed adultery by merely looking at someone.

But why does Jesus say that lusting after someone in your heart is adultery and that gouging out your eyes is better if you are married yourself is adultery? The reason is because this is twofold. First off if you are married and lusting after someone else to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue them then you have demonstrated that your marriage and your spouse in your heart as I said on the chapter on the intended purpose. Thus if you review, imagine finding out your spouse has been lusting after someone else. Would you really desire to have sex with them while at the same time you are completely sure they have not physically cheated on you yet. Really the idea here is that they have been committing emotional adultery with someone and because you would be disgusted with their behavior and not consider them to be a faithful spouse. Therefore it is easy to see why Jesus says this is wrong.

Next by lusting after someone who is married while you are not married to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue you would be violating the tenth commandment.

As Exodus states:

> "You shall not covet your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his manservant or maidservant, or his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor." (Exodus 20:17)

Thus by lusting after and pursing or wishing to pursue you are violating the tenth command by coveting your neighbor's spouse. This is really why Jesus says that they "have already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

But here as you are already aware porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin and instead it refers to detestable sin or severe immorality in general. Thus if a woman say having sexual thoughts on this basis is wrong, then she is taking the word porneia (πορνεία) the meaning of impurity and lust. The word translated as impurity in the phrase akatharsia (ἀκαθαρσία) which just means uncleanness. The best way to view this is as being ceremonially unclean. Then the word translated as lust is pathos (πάθος) which just means a passion, depraved passion, strong feeling, or affectionate affection.

So really it depends on what you want to call unclean. Personally I would say strongly desiring sexual thoughts for others would make you unclean. For example if you are married and a new person begins making sexual work and you find them extremely attractive to the point where you start flirting with them and fantasize about sleeping with them then I would say such a thought makes you unclean. This is because you are committing adultery against your spouse in your heart. Now I do think you can be said about planning how to hurt people or being ceremonially unclean. But I do not think make you unclean as well. Furthermore I would say that simply calling having sexual thoughts impurity or uncleanness is not actually any evidence other than saying that impurity or uncleanness here means sexual thoughts is just circular reasoning and is therefore baseless.

So what about the second word, pathos, that is defined as a passion, depraved passion, strong feelings, inordinate affection or lust? Well quite simply I would say that the word refers to a certain level of desire that is so great that it tempts a person into committing sin.

For example read what Paul wrote:

> "For it is God's will that you should be holy: You must abstain from sexual immorality, each of you must know how to control his own body in holiness and honor, not in lustful passion like the Gentiles who do not know God, and no one should ever violate or exploit his brother in this matter because the Lord will avenge all such acts, as we have already told you and solemnly warned you. For God has not called us to impurity, but to holiness. Anyone who disregards this command does not reject man but God, the very One who gives you His Holy Spirit." (1 Thessalonians 4:3-8)

Now as I already said with regards to this passage I think that Paul is talking about sex at all and instead Paul is condemning Christians defrauding and exploiting their fellow Christians. Therefore the Greek word translated as lustful passion here would rightly refer to being afflicted with strong desires to the point where the fellow brothers by taking advantage of them to lust their wives.

Therefore there is nothing in the Colossians 3:5-8 passage that would indicate having sexual thoughts and fantasizing is wrong. All I assume you disagree with me here and that you believe having sexual thoughts for others is some reason. What level of sexual thoughts would be wrong? Is simply thinking that someone is attractive sinful? Or do you need to imagine yourself having sex with them for it to be sinful?

Now for some more questions. How do you find someone you are married to attractive? Is sexually desiring someone you are not married to a sin? Is it sinful to sexually desire your significant other you are dating, who you are not married to, is a sin right? Then how do you even find someone to be attractive in general? I mean are you not supposed to find your potential spouse sexually attractive?

So really by your own logic, assuming you disagree with me, trying to find someone to date and, ultimately, marry would be a sin in and of sin. Now if you are married so you think you are safe then think again. Did you repent of your sexual sins you committed as you lived in sin before you married your spouse? Well if you have not and if what you claim is true then you better do so now or you will go to the Lake of Fire. Of course I am being sarcastic with the last part here but I do want to point out how silly this is since if you actually believe the set up to this hypothetical you would be a hypocrite.

But my point in this little hypothetical here is to demonstrate that there is nothing wrong with have sexual thoughts and desires when you are not married. Having sexual thoughts is perfectly normal and if you were to try to repress every sexual thought then you would inevitably fail because doing such is thing is impossible. This is the main harm I see with trying to make every sexual thought into a thought crime. Those that perpetrate this belief set Christians up for failure. Then once they inevitably fail suddenly apostasy comes knocking.

Therefore always remember that you are not committing a thought crime by having sexual thoughts. Just even fantasize about whoever you want as long as you are not married and your desire does not become so great as to actually cheat. Just do not consider pursing someone who is married.

4 – Masturbation

So if having sexual thoughts and even fantasizing is perfectly fine then what about masturbation? Surely the Bible condemns masturbation right? Of course I am joking here because if the Bible does not even condemn having sex before marriage then how could it condemn masturbation? Thus although you may have been told that masturbation is sinful by many people the Bible actually never even condemns masturbation and it does not even mention it at all. Therefore because the Bible does not condemn masturbation there really is not much to say on the subject.

However there are some people who mistakenly use the following passage:

> "But Onan knew that the offspring would not belong to him; so whenever he would sleep with his brother's wife, he would spill his seed on the ground so that he would not produce offspring for his brother. What he did was wicked in the sight of the LORD, so He put Onan to death also." (Genesis 38:9-10)

But in reality this passage has literally nothing to do with masturbation. Instead it refers to the requirement for a man to get his brother pregnant if he dies while married. The idea is that without an heir his property would be inherited by his brother. Since the whole sacrificial system of the Temple does not exist anymore this requirement existed since 70 AD this would mean that priests would be able to therefore even a prostitute can get married.

I would also like to point out that we as Christians are not required to follow the entire Law since following the entire Law is impossible as I have said before. Therefore if there was evidence in the Old Testament to support making prematurely sex sinful then I would say that it does not apply.

Then as a result of what I have said here there is no strong evidence in the Bible that I know of that clearly supports making premarital sex sinful. That said I do not think it is a good idea to be sexually active because of what people you sleep with before you get married the less special you will find sleeping with your spouse to be.

As Jesus says:

> "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

Thus if you do not want your future spouse to have slept around and been promiscuous before marrying you then you should not be having sex before marriage because this would make you a hypocrite. Furthermore it is also a terrible idea to have kids before you get married since the best environment to raise kids in is to have both parent home. So really it is also best to not risk getting pregnant and to wait of marriage by having sex before getting married as well. Therefore you would not encourage you to have sex before marriage and instead I would encourage then you get married sooner rather than later. Although really the choice is up to you.

Next I would just like to say that I would have preferred if the Bible was clearly against having sex before marriage because it would have made this chapter a whole lot easier to write. However I do believe that I have found one of the worst porneia (πορνεία), pornē (πόρνη) or a related term which most likely means promiscuity and a prostitute respectively. Then of course as I have said these words are used metaphorically and figuratively in the New Testament and that they related to highly detestable sin in general. Thus some starts to purpose or wants to pursue someone who they know is married. Therefore as long as you have not been pursuing or wanted to pursue someone who you knew was married then you have not committed adultery by merely looking at someone.

But why does Jesus say that lusting after someone in your heart is adultery and that gouging out your eyes is better if you are married yourself is adultery? The reason is because this is twofold. First off if you are married and lusting after someone else to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue them then you have demonstrated that your marriage and your spouse in your heart as I said on the chapter on the intended purpose. Thus if you review, imagine finding out your spouse has been lusting after someone else. Would you really desire to have sex with them while at the same time you are completely sure they have not physically cheated on you yet. Really the idea here is that they have been committing emotional adultery with someone and because you would be disgusted with their behavior and not consider them to be a faithful spouse. Therefore it is easy to see why Jesus says this is wrong.

Next by lusting after someone who is married while you are not married to the point of thinking about them and wanting to pursue you would be violating the tenth commandment.

As Exodus states:

> "You shall not covet your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his manservant or maidservant, or his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor." (Exodus 20:17)

Thus by lusting after and pursing or wishing to pursue you are violating the tenth command by coveting your neighbor's spouse. This is really why Jesus says that they "have already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

Now the problem that people by applying this verse to sexual desire for others as a whole is that it misses the intent of what Jesus is saying here. Jesus is not saying that everyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5:28)

But here as you are already aware porneia (πορνεία) refers to highly detestable sin and instead it refers to detestable sin or severe immorality in general. Thus if a woman say having sexual thoughts on this basis is wrong, then she is taking the word porneia (πορνεία) the meaning of impurity and lust. The word translated as impurity in the phrase akatharsia (ἀκαθαρσία) which just means uncleanness. The best way to view this is as being ceremonially unclean. Then the word translated as lust is pathos (πάθος) which just means a passion, depraved passion, strong feeling, or affectionate affection.

So really it depends on what you want to call unclean. Personally I would say strongly desiring sexual thoughts for others would make you unclean. For example if you are married and a new person begins making sexual work and you find them extremely attractive to the point where you start flirting with them and fantasize about sleeping with them then I would say such a thought makes you unclean. This is because you are committing adultery against your spouse in your heart. Now I do think you can be said about planning how to hurt people or being ceremonially unclean. But I do not think make you unclean as well. Furthermore I would say that simply calling having sexual thoughts impurity or uncleanness is not actually any evidence other than saying that impurity or uncleanness here means sexual thoughts is just circular reasoning and is therefore baseless.

So what about the second word, pathos, that is defined as a passion, depraved passion, strong feelings, inordinate affection or lust? Well quite simply I would say that the word refers to a certain level of desire that is so great that it tempts a person into committing sin.

For example read what Paul wrote:

> "For it is God's will that you should be holy: You must abstain from sexual immorality, each of you must know how to control his own body in holiness and honor, not in lustful passion like the Gentiles who do not know God, and no one should ever violate or exploit his brother in this matter because the Lord will avenge all such acts, as we have already told you and solemnly warned you. For God has not called us to impurity, but to holiness. Anyone who disregards this command does not reject man but God, the very One who gives you His Holy Spirit." (1 Thessalonians 4:3-8)

Now as I already said with regards to this passage I think that Paul is talking about sex at all and instead Paul is condemning Christians defrauding and exploiting their fellow Christians. Therefore the Greek word translated as lustful passion here would rightly refer to being afflicted with strong desires to the point where the fellow brothers by taking advantage of them to lust their wives.

Therefore there is nothing in the Colossians 3:5-8 passage that would indicate having sexual thoughts and fantasizing is wrong. All I assume you disagree with me here and that you believe having sexual thoughts for others is some reason. What

others in accordance with the physical Law or you yourself may come under judgment and condemnation.

Now time to go over the passages relating to homosexuality from the New Testament.

First of Pom Jude:

"In like manner, Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities around them, who indulged in sexual immorality and pursued other strange flesh, are on display as an example of those who sustain the punishment of eternal fire." (Jude 1:7)

As I said before with regards to Jude 1:7, the word translated as sexual immorality here is ἐκπορνεύσασαι (ekporneúsasai) and it does not refer to sexual sin but instead refers to highly detestable sin in general. Thus in Jude is referring to people who are not men wanting to have sex with men but rather the sin of the men of Sodom wanting to mistreat the angels that visited Lot. This fact is evidenced by Lot believing the lesser sin to be giving his two virgin daughters to the crowd of men to rape instead of allowing the angels to rape the male angels. Of course Lot never gave his daughters to the crowd because the angels intervened. Then the reference to strange flesh here is a reference to the fact that the crowd of men pursued the angels.

Then just to reiterate what Ezekiel says:

"As surely as I live, declares the Lord GOD, your sister Sodom and her daughters have not did as you and your daughters have done. Now this was the iniquity of your sister Sodom: She and her daughters were arrogant, overfed, and complacent; they did not help the poor and needy. Thus they were haughty and committed abominations before Me. Therefore I removed them, as you have seen." (Ezekiel 16:48-50)

Therefore God punishing Sodom and Gomorrah had nothing to do with homosexuality but rather what people may tell you. Even Jude 1:7 is evidence to this fact. Yes, it is true there is a very long tradition of people believing that the sin of Sodom was homosexuality. But all the evidence demonstrates is that they are traditionally wrong. The truth impacts one's tradition but it could care less what the traditional view is.

Next from Romans:

"For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:26-27)

Well as Romans says before this passage:

"The result of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness. For what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse.

For although they know God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but they became futile in their thinking and darkened in their foolish hearts. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for images of mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles.

Therefore God gave them over in the desires of their hearts to impurity for the dishonoring of their bodies among another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is forever worthy of praise! Amen.

For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:18-27)

Therefore Paul is saying that the Romans are being punished by God for their sin. This is why Paul said "God gave them over to dishonorable passions." (Romans 1:26)

Next in terms of Paul saying "exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) really we cannot know what Paul is talking about here. Now you might be tempted to say that Paul is talking about homosexuality being unnatural however this view is due to a modern viewpoint. You have to understand that people having sex with men, or rather young boys, was quite common in ancient Roman and Greece. So common in fact that if you were a man you did not want to have sex with young boys then you were seen as abnormal. This is why Paul back then was not viewed as it is today. Instead sexuality was seen in terms of power relations. In other words they saw sex as being an expression of power where one person dominated the other.

This fact is why typically men had sex with young boys because the idea was they were young and thus were not shamed or dishonored by a person who having sex with them. On the other hand it was extremely shameful and dishonorable for a man to be on the receiving end of sex with another man. In cases like these the man on the receiving end was not seen as a man at all and was seen as a woman. Then at the top side the man on the active end of having sex with another man was actually seen as more masculine and powerful because he was dominating another man.

Furthermore with regards to men having sex with women it was also extremely dishonorable and shameful for a man to be in a subordinate position or a receiving position when having sex with a woman. This is why in fact that you were not viewed as a man anymore. For example a man having sex with a woman where she was on top or he was giving her oral sex would have been seen as extremely deviant and dishonorable. So much so in fact that it would have brought disgrace to a man to have sex with his wife with his wife being on top than to have sex with a man with himself being on top. This may seem absurd to you but this was the way sexuality worked in ancient Rome. Really the idea of sex in ancient Rome as a man was about demonstrating your power over another person. If you wanted to be seen as a man then you did not take the submissive position with anyone ever. Even if you took the submissive position with a woman where she was on top or worse you gave her oral sex then ancient Roman society would not see you as a man.

Alright so where am I going with this? Well this is what the ancient Romans believed. Sex was about power and how shameful the sex was depended upon your role in it. Therefore when you read Romans 1:18-27 you should not look at in through the lens of homosexuality being shamed but rather you should look at it through the lens of being submissive or on the receiving end of sex being shameful and dishonorable.

So lets read Romans 1:26-27 again:

"For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:26-27)

Alright so now that you know something about sexual relations in ancient Rome can you guess what Paul meant by "their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) in the passage? Well Paul was not talking about women having sex with women which is why he did not say women having sex with women. Instead Paul is saying that women gave up their natural desire to be on the submissive or receiving end of having sex with men or taking end. In other words by saying this Paul is saying that is punishing the Roman pagans by making their women more sexually dominant in order to make their men dishonored.

This fact is evidenced by Paul saying men "burned in lust for one another" (Romans 1:27) and "committed indecent acts with other men" (Romans 1:27) because again the idea here is that these men are giving up being sexually dominant with women to be submissive to other men. This is of course the ultimate sexual dishonor a man could receive.

Now you may dispute this but really the issue you are having is that you view sex through our modern lens. As I just said sex in ancient Rome was about power. Men were considered dominant and thus were seen as men. Then women were seen as submissive and this was seen as natural. No one really cared about who you had sex with in ancient Rome. Instead people cared about who you had sex with and if you were a man then you needed to be on the active or dominant side regardless of who you were having sex with.

Again, this fact is why Paul said "Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones." (Romans 1:26) The idea here is that Paul is saying that God made the Roman women more dominant sexually in order to make the Roman men experience dishonor and shame through being dominated sexually. Then again, this fact is evidenced by Paul not saying women had sex with other women and then they "exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) For the Romans women always being submissive during sex was natural. On the other hand sexually dominant women were seen as unnatural.

Now you may dispute this and insist that Romans 1:26 is talking about women having sex with women. However this is not the case because the verse does not say this. Instead it only says that "women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones." (Romans 1:26) The idea here is that Paul is saying that God made the Roman women more dominant sexually in order to make the Roman men experience dishonor and shame through being dominated sexually. Then again, this fact is evidenced by Paul not saying women had sex with other women and then they "exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) For the Romans women always being submissive during sex was natural. On the other hand sexually dominant women were seen as unnatural.

Now you may dispute this and insist that Romans 1:26 is talking about women having sex with women. However this is not the case because the verse does not say this. Instead it only says that "women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones." (Romans 1:26) Therefore you have to understand it was extremely rare for women to have sex with women in ancient Rome. So rare that the Roman poet Ovid's wife lived in the time of Roman poet Ovid and he was unheard of. But why wait this the case? Well you see the Romans found oral sex extremely degrading to the person performing it. Therefore even Roman women did not perform oral sex on their husband and instead oral sex was relegated to something prostitutes and slaves did. This is why I said before a man performing oral sex on a woman would be considered and treated as a woman with the woman on top. As a result of this women back then did not have sex with women in ancient Rome. This is why Romans 1:26 cannot refer to women having sex with women because it was so rare that it was nonexistent. The only way you can read Romans 1:26 about women having sex with women is if you read it from your own modern perspective which is that it was not viewed as extremely dirty and dishonorable.

So what does this all mean then? Well this means that Romans 1:26-27 is not talking homosexuality or homosexual acts and instead it is about Roman men in the Roman pagan cults are guilty of pornea (πορνεία) and can be punished by God and thus a person would seek to cheat and do wrong to others. Then pornea (πορνεία) is also in the list mean that you need to relate them to a lack of self control and wrongdoing.

Now you may say that the list is overly sexual because of the word pornoi (πόρνοι) but as I have said the word pornoi (πόρνοι) refer to prostitutes himself or figuratively a man who has sex like prostitutes. The fact that this is made obvious with the context around 1 Corinthians 6:9-10 since clearly cheating and doing wrong to your fellow Christians in pagan courts are guilty of pornea (πορνεία) and can be punished by God and thus a person would seek to cheat and do wrong to others. Then pornoi (πόρνοι) also is in the list mean that you need to relate them to a lack of self control and wrongdoing.

Furthermore given the figurative meaning of pornoi (πόρνοι) you should see the list of 1 Corinthians 6:9-10 as a list of sins that hurt God or others. So in combination you should see each term that is being related to moral weakness and a lack of self control leading to harm of others.

So then what does malakoi (μαλακοί) but literally means a soft man mean figuratively in the context of moral weakness and a lack of self control leading to hurting God or others? Well I would say it just means a man who is morally weak and does self control. You may dispute this but as Paul wrote immediately before 1 Corinthians 1:20 as I wrote over previously. Thus what I am saying here is that Paul is not talking about the cheapest of dishonorable sexuality. Although in reality Paul is only saying being on the submissive or receiving end is dishonorable because that is what the Romans believed. But really all I am saying here is that Paul is not talking about the cheapest dishonorable sexuality. Although in reality Paul is only saying being on the submissive end is the punishment or "the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:27) But what is their error exactly if it is not the homosexual sex?

Well as Romans says before this passage:

"The result of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness. For what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse.

For although they know God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but they became futile in their thinking and darkened in their foolish hearts. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for images of mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles.

Therefore God gave them over in the desires of their hearts to impurity for the dishonoring of their bodies among another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is forever worthy of praise! Amen.

For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:18-27)

Therefore Paul is saying that the Romans are being punished by God for their sin. This is why Paul said "God gave them over to dishonorable passions." (Romans 1:26)

Now in terms of Paul saying "exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) really we cannot know what Paul is talking about here. Now you might be tempted to say that Paul is talking about homosexuality being unnatural however this view is due to a modern viewpoint. You have to understand that people having sex with men, or rather young boys, was quite common in ancient Roman and Greece. So common in fact that if you were a man you did not want to have sex with young boys then you were seen as abnormal. This is why sexuality back then was not viewed as it is today. Instead sexuality was seen in terms of power relations. In other words they saw sex as being an expression of power where one person dominated the other.

This fact is why typically men had sex with young boys because the idea was they were young and thus were not shamed or dishonored by a person having sex with them. On the other hand it was extremely shameful and dishonorable for a man to be on the receiving end of sex with another man. In cases like these the man on the receiving end was not seen as a man at all and was seen as a woman. Then at the top side the man on the active end of having sex with another man was actually seen as more masculine and powerful because he was dominating another man.

Furthermore with regards to men having sex with women it was also extremely dishonorable and shameful for a man to be in a subordinate position or a receiving position when having sex with a woman. This is why in fact that you were not viewed as a man anymore. For example a man having sex with a woman where she was on top or he was giving her oral sex would have been seen as extremely deviant and dishonorable. So much so in fact that it would have brought disgrace to a man to have sex with his wife with his wife being on top than to have sex with a man with himself being on top. This may seem absurd to you but this was the way sexuality worked in ancient Rome. Really the idea of sex in ancient Rome as a man was about demonstrating your power over another person. If you wanted to be seen as a man then you did not take the submissive position with anyone ever. Even if you took the submissive position with a woman where she was on top or worse you gave her oral sex then ancient Roman society would not see you as a man.

Alright so where am I going with this? Well this is what the ancient Romans believed. Sex was about power and how shameful the sex was depended upon your role in it. Therefore when you read Romans 1:18-27 you should not look at in through the lens of homosexuality being shamed but rather you should look at it through the lens of being submissive or on the receiving end of sex being shameful and dishonorable.

So lets read Romans 1:26-27 again:

"For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:26-27)

Alright so now that you know something about sexual relations in ancient Rome can you guess what Paul meant by "their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) in the passage? Well Paul was not talking about women having sex with women which is why he did not say women having sex with women. Instead Paul is saying that women gave up their natural desire to be on the submissive or receiving end of having sex with men or taking end. In other words by saying this Paul is saying that is punishing the Roman pagans by making their women more sexually dominant in order to make their men dishonored.

This fact is evidenced by Paul saying men "burned in lust for one another" (Romans 1:27) and "committed indecent acts with other men" (Romans 1:27) because again the idea here is that these men are giving up being sexually dominant with women to be submissive to other men. This is of course the ultimate sexual dishonor a man could receive.

Now you may dispute this but really the issue you are having is that you view sex through our modern lens. As I just said sex in ancient Rome was about power. Men were considered dominant and thus were seen as men. Then women were seen as submissive and this was seen as natural. No one really cared about who you had sex with in ancient Rome. Instead people cared about who you had sex with and if you were a man then you needed to be on the active or dominant side regardless of who you were having sex with.

Again, this fact is why Paul said "Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones." (Romans 1:26) The idea here is that Paul is saying that God made the Roman women more dominant sexually in order to make the Roman men experience dishonor and shame through being dominated sexually. Then again, this fact is evidenced by Paul not saying women had sex with other women and then they "exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones" (Romans 1:26) For the Romans women always being submissive during sex was natural. On the other hand sexually dominant women were seen as unnatural.

Now you may dispute this and insist that Romans 1:26 is talking about women having sex with women. However this is not the case because the verse does not say this. Instead it only says that "women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones." (Romans 1:26) Therefore you have to understand it was extremely rare for women to have sex with women in ancient Rome. So rare that the Roman poet Ovid's wife lived in the time of Roman poet Ovid and he was unheard of. But why wait this the case? Well you see the Romans found oral sex extremely degrading to the person performing it. Therefore even Roman women did not perform oral sex on their husband and instead oral sex was relegated to something prostitutes and slaves did. This is why I said before a man performing oral sex on a woman would be considered and treated as a woman with the woman on top. As a result of this women back then did not have sex with women in ancient Rome. This is why Romans 1:26 cannot refer to women having sex with women because it was so rare that it was nonexistent. The only way you can read Romans 1:26 about women having sex with women is if you read it from your own modern perspective which is that it was not viewed as extremely dirty and dishonorable.

So what does this all mean then? Well this means that Romans 1:26-27 is not talking homosexuality or homosexual acts and instead it is about Roman men in the Roman pagan cults are guilty of pornea (πορνεία) and can be punished by God and thus a person would seek to cheat and do wrong to others. Then pornea (πορνεία) also is in the list mean that you need to relate them to a lack of self control and wrongdoing.

Now you may say that the list is overly sexual because of the word pornoi (πόρνοι) but as I have said the word pornoi (πόρνοι) refer to prostitutes himself or figuratively a man who has sex like prostitutes. The fact that this is made obvious with the context around 1 Corinthians 6:9-10 since clearly cheating and doing wrong to your fellow Christians in pagan courts are guilty of pornea (πορνεία) and can be punished by God and thus a person would seek to cheat and do wrong to others. Then pornoi (πόρνοι) also is in the list mean that you need to relate them to a lack of self control and wrongdoing.

Furthermore given the figurative meaning of pornoi (πόρνοι) you should see the list of 1 Corinthians 6:9-10 as a list of sins that hurt God or others. So in combination you should see each term that is being related to moral weakness and a lack of self control leading to harm of others.

So then what does malakoi (μαλακοί) but literally means a soft man mean figuratively in the context of moral weakness and a lack of self control leading to hurting God or others? Well I would say it just means a man who is morally weak and does self control. You may dispute this but as Paul wrote immediately before 1 Corinthians 1:20 as I wrote over previously. Thus what I am saying here is that Paul is not talking about the cheapest of dishonorable sexuality. Although in reality Paul is only saying being on the submissive or receiving end is dishonorable because that is what the Romans believed. But really all I am saying here is that Paul is not talking about the cheapest dishonorable sexuality. Although in reality Paul is only saying being on the submissive end is the punishment or "the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:27) But what is their error exactly if it is not the homosexual sex?

Well as Romans says before this passage:

"The result of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness. For what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse.

For although they know God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but they became futile in their thinking and darkened in their foolish hearts. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for images of mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles.

Therefore God gave them over in the desires of their hearts to impurity for the dishonoring of their bodies among another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is forever worthy of praise! Amen.

For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:18-27)

Therefore Paul is saying that God punishes men who are being punished by God for their sin. This is why Paul said "God gave them over to dishonorable passions." (Romans 1:26)

most of their time with you. You are to place the importance of your marriage above that of your career and even yourself.

Now of course you can say what if your spouse agrees with it? But this is not something you should even give them to consider because if they love you then of course they will just agree with it even if they really hate it. Thus if you truly love your spouse and view yourselves as one flesh then you would not accept the promotion yourself.

This idea of one flesh also means that sometimes you need to give up hobbies, interests and even friends for the good of the marriage. For example lets say you have a longtime friend whom your spouse sees as a negative influence on you after a few mishaps. As a result of these mishaps they share what they think with you. But what should you do? Well the selfish point of view, that is to say viewing yourself as an individual and being one with your spouse or a we, would be to say they are my friend not yours so deal with it because I am not going to talk to them about the issues you brought up or worse not be friends with them anymore. Unfortunately this is a common prevailing viewpoint of couple's today. On the other hand when you view yourself as one flesh, a we instead of an I and you, then you will listen to your spouse and talk to your friend about the issues and if the friend says they will not listen to your wife then you will tell your friend that you can no longer be friends.

The essence of what I am saying here is that being one flesh means that you put the interests of your spouse and your marriage above that of your own interests. Now you may think this is not fair for whatever reason and if you do then you should not get married because this is what marriage is all about.

Something else that is important the point out is that you cannot any unbeliever, and that is to say you can only marry a fellow Christian and you cannot marry a so-called Jew, a Muslim, a Hindu, a Pagan, an Atheist, an Agnostic and so forth. This is because they are spiritually unclean. Then if you do what is clean with the unclean then what was once clean becomes unclean. Therefore do not even consider even with the intent to convert them to the faith let alone without the intent to convert them as they are unclean and detestable. Mixing your cleanliness with their dirt will simply make you unclean in the long run.

As Paul wrote:

"Do not be unequally yoked with unbelievers. For what partnership can righteousness have with wickedness? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement can exist between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said:

"I will dwell with them
and walk among them,
and I will be their God,
and they will be My people."

Therefore come out from among them
and be separate, says the Lord.
Touch no unclean thing,
and I will receive you."

And:

"I will be a Father to you,
and you will be My sons and daughters,
says the Lord Almighty." (2 Corinthians 6:14-18)

But what if you are currently married to an unbeliever?

As Paul wrote:

"To the rest I say this (I, not the Lord): If a brother has an unbelieving wife and she is willing to live with him, he must not divorce her. And if a woman has an unbelieving husband and he is willing to live with her, she must not divorce him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified through his believing wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified through her believing husband. Otherwise your children would be unclean, but now they are holy.

But if the unbeliever leaves, let him go. The believing brother or sister is not bound in such cases. God has called you to live in peace. How do you know, wife, whether you will save your husband? Or you know, husband, whether you will save your wife?" (1 Corinthians 7:1-16)

Therefore you should live with your spouse if they are an unbeliever and not divorce them.

That said, I would like to once again reiterate that you should not marry an unbeliever or a non-Christian. The temptations of this world are hard enough and you do not need to willingly invite the temptations of Satan into your heart and home. This fact also means that you should not even date someone who is not already Christian or at the very least very open to becoming a Christian. This is because if they are of a false religion and unwilling to convert then this means that you cannot marry them. It does not matter how much you like them or even if you love them because you cannot mix what is clean with what is dirty. Although I will say that if you decide to mix what is clean with what is dirty then all you will demonstrate is that you were never clean to begin with.

Now of course if a prospective significant other wants to convert and become a Christian before you start dating then their faith has made them as clean as you are so therefore you are free to marry them.

2 – Roles

Perhaps the most controversial aspect of marriage is that of marital roles or rather who is in charge and who makes the decisions. I will of course provide you with my view here but before I do I would like to write a few things first. This is because sure I could simply say that the main wives submitting to their husbands verses are from letters that are almost certainly forgeries but I'll simply say this that the so called fundamentalist types would simply ignore what I say. Though I guess if you were a so called fundamentalist type you would be stopped reading on my Biblical inerrancy and infallibility chapter.

So anyways I'm still going to start from the position that so-called fundamentalists have in order to prove a point.

Here are the verses concerning wives submitting to their husbands:

"But I want you to understand that the head of every man is Christ, and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God." (1 Corinthians 11:3)

"Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church, His body, of which He is the Savior. Now as the church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husbands in everything.

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave Himself up for her to sanctify her, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to Himself as a glorious church, not having stain or wrinkle or any such blemish, but holy and blameless.

In the same way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. Indeed, no one hated his own body, but he nourishes and cherishes it, just as Christ does for the church. For we are members of His body.

"For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh." This mystery is profound, and I am speaking about Christ and the church. Nevertheless, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband." (Ephesians 5:21-33)

"Wives, submit to your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord.

Husbands, love your wives and do not be harsh with them." (Colossians 3:18-19)

"Wives, in the same way, submit yourselves to your husbands, so that even if they refuse to believe the word, they will be won over without words by the behavior of their wives when they see your pure and reverent demeanor.

Your beauty should not come from outward adornment, such as braided hair or gold jewelry or fine clothes, but from the inner disposition of your heart, the unfading beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is precious in God's sight. For this is how the holy women of the past adorned themselves. They put their hope in God and were submissive to their husbands, just as Sarah obeyed Abraham and called him lord. And you are her children if you do what is right and refuse to give way to fear.

Husbands, in the same way, treat your wives with consideration as a delicate vessel, and with honor as fellow heirs of the gracious gift of life, so that your prayers will not be hindered." (1 Peter 3:1-7)

First off although First Corinthians is authentic and First Peter may be authentic, Ephesians and Colossians are most likely forgeries. Next I would like to point out that the Roman and Greek world where these forgeries were written was extremely patriarchal in the sense that men were the unquestioned authority of their household. So, assuming these letters are genuine of course, why were they never written since Pagan converts to Christianity were already living under completely male dominated marriages?

This is one reason why I believe Ephesians, Colossians and probably First Peter as well are forgeries. The idea here is that they were written in an attempt to correct the whole dill are equal under Jesus Christ view.

As Paul wrote here:

"You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise." (Galatians 3:26-29)

Obviously in order for Christianity to spread further the Romans would have to agree with it so if it did not preach that women are to obey their husbands in all things then surely less people would have converted. This is why I said Ephesians, Colossians and probably First Peter as well are most likely forgeries written decades later in an attempt to alter the theology to make it more acceptable to the Romans.

But what about Genesis says here?:

"To the woman He said: "I will sharply increase your pain in childbirth; in pain you will bring forth children.
Your desire will be for your husband,
and he will rule over you." (Genesis 3:16)

Well this is similar to what the epistles say but the main issue here is that first the books of the Law are not binding on Christians as I have said. Therefore whatever Genesis says is not relevant and I would add that if it is so hypocritic because they disregard most of the rest of the book of the Law but they find this relevant while they focus on what they like from the books of the Law. Furthermore this is not actually a command from God. All God is saying is that a woman's husband will rule over her and if you look at history this was most definitely been the case. In other words God is just telling Eve how things will be rather than telling her what she must do. But what about God calling Eve's desire? Well I would say that this is not what you want to define helper as. For example God has been described as a helper in the Old Testament so saying Eve is Adam's helper woman should not be taken as a lower position. So really it does not matter which way you look at it this verse does not imply a command.

However back to the epistles now. Lets say you believe the epistles I just quoted from above concerning the absolute authority that husbands are genuine. What does this mean exactly? Well it just means the wife must be a Christ like Epistle in question is writing to a specific church in a specific time to help the members of the church and the Church as a whole. For since Roman and Greek society was extremely patriarchal they I just said that would do the purpose behind these epistles were to help conform Christians in these specific churches to make sure they do not drift away from the standards of Roman and Greek society.

Now you may object to this but let me ask you this. Given how extremely patriarchal Roman and Greek society was back in the day that the Romans and the Greeks would react to a Christian religion that would preach that wives must submit to their husbands? I mean how is a social theology that is completely alien to Roman and Greek social standards going to be appealing to the average Roman or Greek already? Furthermore how do you think the Roman governors would react to a clearly divisive religion that would teach the same extremely patriarchal standards of Roman and Greek society? Well of course it would be all over well and Rome would most likely seek to crack down on it.

To make this fact clear consider the popular saying "when in Rome" and the full version of "when in Rome you do what the Romans do". The purpose of this saying is that when you find yourself in a different people, then it does not matter what the expectations then in order to fit in and not upset people that you should do what everyone else is doing. Now where this saying is especially pertinent to this discussion is that the early Church was quite literally in Rome so of course the authors of the epistles would want to tell Christians to do what the Romans did so that they would not raise suspicions. A more modern example of this is if you were to walk after to provide guidance to a church of new believers say Iran or Afghanistan. Surely you would tell the women in that church to wear head coverings and be willing to live with their husband and be willing to live with him, also must not divorce him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified through his believing wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified through her believing husband. Otherwise your children would be unclean, but now they are holy.

But if the unbeliever leaves, let him go. The believing brother or sister is not bound in such cases. God has called you to live in peace. How do you know, wife, whether you will save your husband? Or you know, husband, whether you will save your wife?" (1 Corinthians 7:1-16)

Therefore you should live with your spouse if they are an unbeliever and not divorce them.

That said, I would like to once again reiterate that you should not marry an unbeliever or a non-Christian. The temptations of this world are hard enough and you do not need to willingly invite the temptations of Satan into your heart and home. This fact also means that you should not even date someone who is not already Christian or at the very least very open to becoming a Christian. This is because if they are of a false religion and unwilling to convert then this means that you cannot marry them. It does not matter how much you like them or even if you love them because you cannot mix what is clean with what is dirty. Although I will say that if you decide to mix what is clean with what is dirty then all you will demonstrate is that you were never clean to begin with.

Now of course if a prospective significant other wants to convert and become a Christian before you start dating then their faith has made them as clean as you are so therefore you are free to marry them.

2 – Roles

Perhaps the most controversial aspect of marriage is that of marital roles or rather who is in charge and who makes the decisions. I will of course provide you with my view here but before I do I would like to write a few things first. This is because sure I could simply say that the main wives submitting to their husbands verses are from letters that are almost certainly forgeries but I'll simply say this that the so called fundamentalist types would simply ignore what I say. Though I guess if you were a so called fundamentalist type you would be stopped reading on my Biblical inerrancy and infallibility chapter.

So anyways I'm still going to start from the position that so-called fundamentalists have in order to prove a point.

Here are the verses concerning wives submitting to their husbands:

"But I want you to understand that the head of every man is Christ, and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God." (1 Corinthians 11:3)

"Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church, His body, of which He is the Savior. Now as the church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husbands in everything.

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave Himself up for her to sanctify her, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to Himself as a glorious church, not having stain or wrinkle or any such blemish, but holy and blameless.

In the same way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. Indeed, no one hated his own body, but he nourishes and cherishes it, just as Christ does for the church. For we are members of His body.

"For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh." This mystery is profound, and I am speaking about Christ and the church. Nevertheless, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband." (Ephesians 5:21-33)

"Wives, submit to your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord.

Husbands, love your wives and do not be harsh with them." (Colossians 3:18-19)

"Wives, in the same way, submit yourselves to your husbands, so that even if they refuse to believe the word, they will be won over without words by the behavior of their wives when they see your pure and reverent demeanor.

Your beauty should not come from outward adornment, such as braided hair or gold jewelry or fine clothes, but from the inner disposition of your heart, the unfading beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is precious in God's sight. For this is how the holy women of the past adorned themselves. They put their hope in God and were submissive to their husbands, just as Sarah obeyed Abraham and called him lord. And you are her children if you do what is right and refuse to give way to fear.

Husbands, in the same way, treat your wives with consideration as a delicate vessel, and with honor as fellow heirs of the gracious gift of life, so that your prayers will not be hindered." (1 Peter 3:1-7)

First off although First Corinthians is authentic and First Peter may be authentic, Ephesians and Colossians are most likely forgeries. Next I would like to point out that the Roman and Greek world where these forgeries were written was extremely patriarchal in the sense that men were the unquestioned authority of their household. So, assuming these letters are genuine of course, why were they never written since Pagan converts to Christianity were already living under completely male dominated marriages?

This is one reason why I believe Ephesians, Colossians and probably First Peter as well are forgeries. The idea here is that they were written in an attempt to correct the whole dill are equal under Jesus Christ view.

As Paul wrote here:

"You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek,

3 – Intimacy

Intimacy is a touchy subject in marriage and is really one of the deciding factors in if a couple is happy with their marriage. After all, if someone is not sexually satisfied with their spouse, then how can they be emotionally satisfied? But what does the Bible say?

As Paul wrote:

"The husband should fulfill his marital duty to his wife, and likewise the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband. Likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife."

If you disagree with this then consider the fact that you are not a you but rather you are a we because you are one flesh with your spouse. Thus your spouse has authority over your body and you have authority over your spouse's body.

As an aside, these verses from Paul's genuine Epistle First Corinthians are in contradiction with what Paul wrote in his forgery Epistle Colossians and First Peter which say that a woman should submit to her husband. However here in First Corinthians Paul says only through mutual consent can sexual activity occur. This would mean Paul's idea is more along the lines of both spouses submitting to each other so that they each rule over each other sexually as the passage from First Corinthians demonstrates.

I would also like to point out that the passages from First Corinthians would have been highly scandalous in the ancient world. Women using sexual pleasure being a chiefly male oriented activity that women were passively apart of. Well Paul's idea here is that women find the enjoyment of men alone and what whatever else men want that women are equal to women in terms of actually having sex the Romans considered to be a chiefly male pleasure and emphasized female pleasure or control over male pleasure as being evil and part of the question. Thus even the sexual position of having the woman be on top was largely out of the question.

This is why I said this passage is in direct contradiction with the epistles where wives submitting to their husbands because to the Romans a husband commanding his wife as a man by not caring about his wife sexually and only caring about his pleasure. As you can see how Paul saying "the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife" (1 Corinthians 7:4) would be highly objectionable to Roman and Greek society. This fact makes the claim that Paul wrote Ephesians to be highly suspect. Now if you have a problem with me saying Ephesians is suspect and sit on chapter on inerrancy and infallibility. When you read the epistles of Paul keep in mind that I am speaking at you the reader instead of at a specific people at a specific time. This is because the inauthentic or forged epistles were written with the purpose of pushing a specific agenda so the idea was to create a false proof text. This is why they read as the author is speaking directly to you specifically.

Now back to intimacy in marriage and what Paul wrote. The idea here is that the husband's responsibility to make sure his wife is sexually satisfied and it is a wife's responsibility to make sure her husband is sexually satisfied. This means that when your spouse wants to have sex you should be down for it. Though I would be to say that there are some circumstances where you should refuse but they are very rare if you are a spouse. For example if your spouse is sick in bed with the flu.

I would also like to point out that being obligated to have sex with your spouse does not mean that you should just lie there and let your spouse use your sex even though you did not really feel like it. Rather it means that you should willingly and speak up and tell your spouse what they need to do to make you satisfied.

Remember, your spouse's body belongs to you and this does not simply mean their sexual organ. It means their whole body. So if your spouse frequently requests sex where they only last for two minutes and then roll over and go to sleep then you are well within your marital rights to demand as much foreplay as you desire or that they must please you until you have had your fill even though after the two minutes are up. Your spouse cannot refuse you because their entire body is for your pleasure.

This also means you should be open to new sexual experiences if your spouse desires you should not have any reason to fear rejection from your spouse if there is something that you want to. For example your spouse cannot refuse to provide you with oral if they think it is unpleasant. This is especially true if they expect you to do the same for them and it is the same time. Of course in this example in addition to your spouse being willing to provide oral would be a hypocritic since they are refusing to have sex as well. Thus they should be free and afraid to tell these things and demand that they do for you what you do for them.

Lastly if your spouse wants to have sex more than you do and you do not like that? What are you to do? I would say tell them that you can have sex as often as they want but you need to follow your directions after they are done so that you can be satisfied as well. Remember, speak up and tell them what to do if you do not like what they are doing. They are obligated to make you satisfied.

For example if your spouse wants to have sex much more than you do you could always require them to give you a full body massage or a foot massage before or after. So if you really are of needing to exchange strictly sexual favors for massages then do it. The reality here with a massage is that if your spouse's idea of sex is two or ten minutes of a missionary position and that is it then you can tell them that they need to put in the effort to give you a long massage first then if after having sex you are not satisfied then as I said tell them they need to start giving you oral until you are satisfied. If you do this then not only will every encounter be much better than before but your spouse will decrease the frequency knowing they have to do a lot more work instead of just having it focused on them.

What if your spouse does not want to have sex with you? Well then they are not fulfilling their responsibility to make sex more enjoyable for them. Then sometimes they need to be spoken and end with the actual act of sex. This means that you should tell your spouse in a message if they are tired and not feeling that good. Or maybe they just want to lie there and have a hard day at work. But it does not stop there. Making sure your spouse is satisfied sometimes includes doing more work around the house if your spouse is always rushed and never has energy in order to be able to have sex. Sometimes having sex this means you need to focus on your spouse and not yourself. For example this may mean you use something other than your penis in order to satisfy your spouse if your spouse enjoys themselves for even most or the vast majority of the sexual act. In other words what I am saying here is that you need to make your spouse want to have sex with you and want to have sex with your spouse. No one wants to have sex with someone who only mostly cares about their own pleasure while they place their own needs first in a distant second. Thus instead you should place your spouse's pleasure far above your own so that your own pleasure is a distant second. If you do this then I assure you that your spouse will want to have sex with you far more than you may even prefer.

Of course ideally if you both truly live out your lives as one flesh and as a we then you seek to please each other to the point that both of you see the sexual fulfillment of the other as more important than your own sexual fulfillment. In other words you both are so focused on being aware of what it means to love your spouse so be aware of what you are doing wrong or failing to do.

But what about getting bored sexually with each other? Well first of all you need to be prepared to find some sexual activities that both of you enjoy because sex is important. So instead of having a fulfilling sexual relationship long term is having a separate bed or sex outside of what you really enjoy so that you get used to it. That said to reduce boredom with the same activities it is always a good idea to try something else and focus on different forms of foreplay. Furthermore you can try to make sex by different "rooms".

I would also like to emphasize that there is really nothing that is off limits sexually between a married couple. The only thing I would not believe that the only position you can use is missionary. Well I'm not saying that really anything you can think of is perfectly fine. So if you or your spouse wants to do something new then just talk about it and try it out. Sure you might find it not to your liking or even like it but the two of you are one flesh and your bodies are not your own and instead you belong to each other.

Finally although these views may seem quite controversial in the ancient world this is how a satisfied and faithful marriage is created. This is because having sexually satisfied is one of the most important aspects of a marriage. The more sexually satisfied your spouse is the more likely they are to remain in love with you and the more sexually satisfied you are with your spouse the more likely you are to remain in love with them.

4 – Marital Problems

Oftentimes married couples run into problems in their marriage. For example what happens when a disagreement arises? Are you just supposed to fight until someone gives up? Well I do not think so. Instead I believe that you should always be calm so that you do not get angry at your spouse.

After all as Jesus says:

"You have heard that it was said to the ancients, "Do not murder," and "Anyone who murders will be subject to judgment.' But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to his brother, 'Raca,' will be subject to the Sanhedrin. But anyone who says, 'You fool!' will be subject to the fire of hell." (Matthew 5:21-22)

Therefore do not get angry at your spouse because getting angry with them is a sin. This means that when your spouse does something that you don't like you should not just fly off the them about it and get them to see your point of view. Also remember that not everything is worth getting distressed about and that it is always best to just let things go rather than making a fuss about them if you are able.

Furthermore it is always best to prevent issues from arising. In other words be open and honest with your spouse so that you tell them everything and so that you know what is important to you. This way your spouse will never get upset with you for not telling them something that they thought was important. But why is this necessary? Well so that they understand that when you choose not to tell your spouse something that your spouse will see your lack of communication as if you hold them a lie. Even if you did not tell your spouse something that you consider to be trivial the fact that you did not tell your spouse will be evidence enough for them that you do not love them or do not value them. This is why even a white lie is a sin and why it is important to because really it is not about the trivial issue but rather the principle behind the issue.

For example imagine if your spouse decided to meet a friend of the opposite sex for lunch one day and you did not tell them about it. Even the fact but they never asked you if it would be fine if they do it behind your back. How would you feel after finding out about the lunch from a friend of your spouse's or even after the fact? Or even on the surface just going to lunch with someone is kind of trivial. However you would not be upset about the fact your spouse went to lunch with someone of the opposite sex but rather you would be upset the fact that your spouse not only did not tell you after the fact but that they did not even ask you for your permission beforehand. Really you would see your spouse's actions as if they cared for you do not care about your feelings or worse yet you were to simply assume that your spouse does not even love you.

So really my point here is that you should always talk to your spouse about pretty everything. If you ever have a question about what you should do or what your spouse ask ask yourself if you would want them to tell you about your question or not. If you don't want your spouse to or not. Or better yet just tell them everything. I mean the only real downside here would be that your spouse would get mad if you tell them something obvious or that they could care less about but for the most part this is better if you being so open with them to be much better than the downsides of being a liar.

Now you may be wondering what about your independence? Why do you have to ask and tell your spouse before you do things? Well the truth you need to do this because you are married and married is not independent anymore. Instead you are dependent upon your spouse and your spouse's dependent upon you. This is what the whole concept of one flesh means. So if you want to be independent so that you are not responsible to your spouse then do not get married because marriage is not for you.

Remember what Paul wrote:

"The husband should fulfill his marital duty to his wife, and likewise the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband. Likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife." (1 Corinthians 7:3-4)

Instead of just relating this to only sex I would say it is important to keep this in mind for everything you do while married. For example if you want to go to an event that you should talk with your friends then the proper thing to do would be to ask your spouse if it is fine if you go before you tell your friends you can go. I mean what if your spouse was planning on having you around for the weekend but instead of asking them you just went ahead and they blew the weekend saying that you will be gone with friends for a day or two? How do you think they would feel? Well obviously they would feel upset and rightly so. Your spouse is not your property so you need to be prepared to find some activities that both of you enjoy because sex is important. So instead of having a fulfilling sexual relationship long term is having a separate bed or sex outside of what you really enjoy so that you get used to it. That said to reduce boredom with the same activities it is always a good idea to try something else and focus on different forms of foreplay. Furthermore you can try to make sex by different "rooms".

I would also like to emphasize that there is really nothing that is off limits sexually between a married couple. The only thing I would not believe that the only position you can use is missionary. Well I'm not saying that really anything you can think of is perfectly fine. So if you or your spouse wants to do something new then just talk about it and try it out. Sure you might find it not to your liking or even like it but the two of you are one flesh and your bodies are not your own and instead you belong to each other.

Finally although these views may seem quite controversial in the ancient world this is how a satisfied and faithful marriage is created. This is because having sexually satisfied is one of the most important aspects of a marriage. The more sexually satisfied your spouse is the more likely they are to remain in love with you and the more sexually satisfied you are with your spouse the more likely you are to remain in love with them.

5 – Divorce

Now what about divorce? As I hinted at before in the previous chapter the true meaning of the word porneia (πορνεία) means that there is flexibility in terms of divorce in bad situations then you probably think it does. But what if you disagree with me with respect to the meaning of porneia (πορνεία)? What then? Well this is why you will read two different arguments in terms of what reasons make a divorce valid. First I go through the porneia argument where I go into what porneia (πορνεία) means with respect to divorce. After that I go through the traditional argument that assumes only adultery is grounds for divorce. Really the end result is the same but I decided to include both in case you do not believe what I have said concerning the meaning of porneia (πορνεία).

5.1 – Porneia Argument

First off let me just reiterate the definition of porneia (πορνεία) that is translated as sexual immorality in the passage you are about to read. Porneia (πορνεία) most literally means prostitution and it figuratively means highly detestable sin or actions. Next as I said in the last chapter the background with regards to the Jewish people in Jesus' day is that men would quite literally divorce their wife for almost no reason at all just so they could get a new wife who they probably found more attractive. This of course was detrimental to the women who were being divorced since an older woman was seen as worthless and a prized catch. So just keep these things in mind.

Now as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had finished saying these things, He left Galilee and went into the region of Judea beyond the Jordan. Large crowds followed Him, and He healed them there.

Then some Pharisees came and tested Him by asking, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any reason?"

Jesus answered, "Have you not read that from the beginning the Creator "made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh' So they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate."

"Why then,' they asked, 'did Moses order a man to give his wife a certificate of divorce and send her away?'

Jesus replied, 'Moses permitted you to divorce your wives because of your hardness of heart', but it was not this way from the beginning. And I say to you that whoever divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, and marries another woman, commits adultery." (Matthew 19:1-9)

Thus Jesus is saying men who divorce their wives for any and every reason treating adultery as a way of saying that what they are doing to their wife is sexual immorality. Sexual immorality is one of the Ten Commandments so it is kind of a big deal and not an insignificant.

This actually ties into the definition of porneia (πορνεία). The idea is the Pharisees asked Jesus, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any reason?" (Matthew 19:3) and Jesus responded saying, "I say that whoever divorces his wife, except for" (Matthew 19:9) porneia (πορνεία), or some highly detestable sin or action, "and marries another commits adultery." (Matthew 19:9) In other words Jesus is telling the Pharisees that men cannot simply divorce your wife for any reason at all and instead they can only divorce their wife if she commits a highly detestable sin or action. For example we have seen in instances where men would divorce their wife for almost any reason at all. Well now if something this silly and that is why I said men were divorcing their wives quite literally for reason at all. I mean if the only fault you can find with your wife is that you burned your dinner one night then clearly your wife must be innocent and there must be something wrong with you.

This also means that Jesus is not permitting divorce to only adultery. Instead Jesus is saying that you can only divorce your spouse if they commit porneia (πορνεία) or a highly detestable sin or action. In other words Jesus is just saying that you need a good reason to divorce your spouse and they must have done something seriously wrong.

But what is a highly detestable sin or action? Well really there are two different qualifiers here in my opinion. The first is porneia (πορνεία) in action and the second is the length of the sin or action. For example in Matthew 19:9 Jesus obviously even one instance of adultery is porneia (πορνεία) and thus allow for divorce. Likewise your spouse could have been having an affair for the point you have bruises all over your body or you end up in the hospital or even worse than that porneia (πορνεία) (porneia). Additionally serious criminal activity is severe enough as well. Then for length potential emotional abuse or just neglect over several months despite making an effort to them to stop many times is likely enough to be called porneia (πορνεία). Likewise having your spouse just leave you for another woman and just never come back to your home and demonstrating to them that you respect and love them.

However it is also important to keep in mind that this is just what I am saying. Ultimately you need know they will not like so that they will reluctantly agree to just to make you happy. This is because if your spouse feels like they must give yes to you and approve of you doing something they do not want you to do then overtime they will become resentful because you even though they agreed to everything you ask them to do they will still feel that they did not really agree with it and instead they felt forced to do what you want. This is why I said to prevent you from getting upset at them for not agreeing to it. So for example if you want to meet an ex friend for lunch but you know that it would almost certainly be better you do not even ask your spouse and just wait for your whole dinner so that it never happens. Sure you can ask your spouse but you know that they would be happy about you going? Of course not. Therefore even if they say yes they do it to make you happy they would still feel hurt that you even wanted to go. Furthermore it is also important to never get upset at your spouse when they say no. This is because if you get upset then whenever you ask them something in the future they will normally feel as to they will be more likely to say yes just so you do not get upset at them. This will then cause you to be in a worse position. Lastly you should always remind your spouse that it is the if they tell you no and that they do not want to do something that they do not want to do then you do not have to do it. Instead you can tell them that they need to put in the effort to make you happy. Remember, speak up and tell them what to do if you do not like what they are doing. They are obligated to make you satisfied.

For example if your spouse wants to have sex much more than you do you could always require them to give you a full body massage or a foot massage before or after. So if you really are of needing to exchange strictly sexual favors for massages then do it. The reality here with a massage is that if your spouse's idea of sex is two or ten minutes of a missionary position and that is it then you can tell them that they need to put in the effort to give you a long massage first then if after having sex you are not satisfied then as I said tell them they need to start giving you oral until you are satisfied. If you do this then not only will every encounter be much better than before but your spouse will decrease the frequency knowing they have to do a lot more work instead of just having it focused on them.

What if your spouse does not want to have sex with you? Well then they are not fulfilling their responsibility to make sex more enjoyable for them. Then sometimes they need to be spoken and end with the actual act of sex. This means that you should just tell your spouse in a message if they are tired and not feeling that good. Or maybe they just want to lie there and have a hard day at work. But it does not stop there. Making sure your spouse is always satisfied includes doing more work around the house if your spouse is always rushed and never has energy in order to be able to have sex. Sometimes having sex this means you need to focus on your spouse and not yourself. For example this may mean you use something other than your penis in order to satisfy your spouse if your spouse enjoys themselves for even most or the vast majority of the sexual act. In other words what I am saying here is that you need to make your spouse want to have sex with you and want to have sex with your spouse. No one wants to have sex with someone who only mostly cares about their own pleasure while they place their own needs first in a distant second. Thus instead you should place your spouse's pleasure far above your own so that your own pleasure is a distant second. If you do this then I assure you that your spouse will want to have sex with you far more than you may even prefer.

Of course ideally if you both truly live out your lives as one flesh and as a we then you seek to please each other to the point that both of you see the sexual fulfillment of the other as more important than your own sexual fulfillment. In other words you both are so focused on being aware of what it means to love your spouse so be aware of what you are doing wrong or failing to do.

But what about getting bored sexually with each other? Well first of all you need to be prepared to find some sexual activities that both of you enjoy because sex is important. So instead of having a fulfilling sexual relationship long term is having a separate bed or sex outside of what you really enjoy so that you get used to it. That said to reduce boredom with the same activities it is always a good idea to try something else and focus on different forms of foreplay. Furthermore you can try to make sex by different "rooms".

I would also like to emphasize that there is really nothing that is off limits sexually between a married couple. The only thing I would not believe that the only position you can use is missionary. Well I'm not saying that really anything you can think of is perfectly fine. So if you or your spouse wants to do something new then just talk about it and try it out. Sure you might find it not to your liking or even like it but the two of you are one flesh and your bodies are not your own and instead you belong to each other.

Finally although these views may seem quite controversial in the ancient world this is how a satisfied and faithful marriage is created. This is because having sexually satisfied is one of the most important aspects of a marriage. The more sexually satisfied your spouse is the more likely they are to remain in love with you and the more sexually satisfied you are with your spouse the more likely you are to remain in love with them.

4 – Marital Problems

Oftentimes married couples run into problems in their marriage. For example what happens when a disagreement arises? Are you just supposed to fight until someone gives up? Well I do not think so. Instead I believe that you should always be calm so that you do not get angry at your spouse.

After all as Jesus says:

"You have heard that it was said to the ancients, "Do not murder," and "Anyone who murders will be subject to judgment.' But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to his brother, 'Raca,' will be subject to the Sanhedrin. But anyone who says, 'You fool!' will be subject to the fire of hell." (Matthew 5:21-22)

Therefore do not get angry at your spouse because getting angry with them is a sin. This means that when your spouse does something that you don't like you should not just fly off the them about it and get them to see your point of view. Also remember that not everything is worth getting distressed about and that it is always best to just let things go rather than making a fuss about them if you are able.

Furthermore it is always best to prevent issues from arising. In other words be open and honest with your spouse so that you tell them everything and so that you know what is important to you. This way your spouse will never get upset with you for not telling them something that they thought was important. But why is this necessary? Well so that they understand that when you choose not to tell your spouse something that your spouse will see your lack of communication as if you hold them a lie. Even if you did not tell your spouse something that you consider to be trivial the fact that you did not tell your spouse will be evidence enough for them that you do not love them or do not value them. This is why even a white lie is a sin and why it is important to because really it is not about the trivial issue but rather the principle behind the issue.

For example imagine if your spouse decided to meet a friend of the opposite sex for lunch one day and you did not tell them about it. Even the fact but they never asked you if it would be fine if they do it behind your back. How would you feel after finding out about the lunch from a friend of your spouse's or even after the fact? Or even on the surface just going to lunch with someone is kind of trivial. However you would not be upset about the fact your spouse went to lunch with someone of the opposite sex but rather you would be upset the fact that your spouse not only did not tell you after the fact but that they did not even ask you for your permission beforehand. Really you would see your spouse's actions as if they cared for you do not care about your feelings or worse yet you were to simply assume that your spouse does not even love you.

So really my point here is that you should always talk to your spouse about pretty everything. If you ever have a question about what you should do or what your spouse ask ask yourself if you would want them to tell you about your question or not. If you don't want your spouse to or not. Or better yet just tell them everything. I mean the only real downside here would be that your spouse would get mad if you tell them something obvious or that they could care less about but for the most part this is better if you being so open with them to be much better than the downsides of being a liar.

Now you may be wondering what about your independence? Why do you have to ask and tell your spouse before you do things? Well the truth you need to do this because you are married and married is not independent anymore. Instead you are dependent upon your spouse and your spouse's dependent upon you. This is what the whole concept of one flesh means. So if you want to be independent so that you are not responsible to your spouse then do not get married because marriage is not for you.

Remember what Paul wrote:

"The husband should fulfill his marital duty to his wife, and likewise the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband. Likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife." (1 Corinthians 7:3-4)

Instead of just relating this to only sex I would say it is important to keep this in mind for everything you do while married. For example if you want to go to an event that you should talk with your friends then the proper thing to do would be to ask your spouse if it is fine if you go before you tell your friends you can go. I mean what if your spouse was planning on having you around for the weekend but instead of asking them you just went ahead and they blew the weekend saying that you will be gone with friends for a day or two? How do you think they would feel? Well obviously they would feel upset and rightly so. Your spouse is not your property so you need to be prepared to find some activities that both of you enjoy because sex is important. So instead of having a fulfilling sexual relationship long term is having a separate bed or sex outside of what you really enjoy so that you get used to it. That said to reduce boredom with the same activities it is always a good idea to try something else and focus on different forms of foreplay. Furthermore you can try to make sex by different "rooms".

I would also like to emphasize that there is really nothing that is off limits sexually between a married couple. The only thing I would not believe that the only position you can use is missionary. Well I'm not saying that really anything you can think of is perfectly fine. So if you or your spouse wants to do something new then just talk about it and try it out. Sure you might find it not to your liking or even like it but the two of you are one flesh and your bodies are not your own and instead you belong to each other.

Finally although these views may seem quite controversial in the ancient world this is how a satisfied and faithful marriage is created. This is because having sexually satisfied is one of the most important aspects of a marriage. The more sexually satisfied your spouse is the more likely they are to remain in love with you and the more sexually satisfied you are with your spouse the more likely you are to remain in love with them.

5 – Divorce

Now what about divorce? As I hinted at before in the previous chapter the true meaning of the word porneia (πορνεία) means that there is flexibility in terms of divorce in bad situations then you probably think it does. But what if you disagree with me with respect to the meaning of porneia (πορνεία)? What then? Well this is why you will read two different arguments in terms of what reasons make a divorce valid. First I go through the porneia argument where I go into what porneia (πορνεία) means with respect to divorce. After that I go through the traditional argument that assumes only adultery is grounds for divorce. Really the end result is the same but I decided to include both in case you do not believe what I have said concerning the meaning of porneia (πορνεία).

5.1 – Porneia Argument

First off let me just reiterate the definition of porneia (πορνεία) that is translated as sexual immorality in the passage you are about to read. Porneia (πορνεία) most literally means prostitution and it figuratively means highly detestable sin or actions. Next as I said in the last chapter the background with regards to the Jewish people in Jesus' day is that men would quite literally divorce their wife for almost no reason at all just so they could get a new wife who they probably found more attractive. This of course was detrimental to the women who were being divorced since an older woman was seen as worthless and a prized catch. So just keep these things in mind.

Now as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When Jesus had finished saying these things, He left Galilee and went into the region of Judea beyond the Jordan. Large crowds followed Him, and He healed them there.

Then some Pharisees came and tested Him by asking, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any reason?"

Jesus answered, 'Have you not read that from the be

pastors, leaders and so forth and instead of leading others they must serve them.

Finally I would like to say that if you are a women reading this and you have the ability to preach and to spread the faith then you have every right, if not a duty, to use your abilities to spread the faith and the Gospel. Do not let anyone stop you and explain to those who try the errors of their ways. As I said before if you want they blessing for some reason then you have it.

Chapter 6.25: Prayer

Praying to God is obviously one of the most important aspects of being a Christian. So if it is so important are you aware of how you should pray and what we should ask for? If not then I hope to explain how we should pray.

First off as Jesus says:

"And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by them. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you pray, go into your inner room, shut your door, and pray to your Father who is unseen. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

And when you pray, do not babble on like pagans, for they think that by their many words they will be heard. Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him.

So then, this is how you should pray:

'Our Father in heaven,
hallowed be Your name,
Your kingdom come,
Your will be done,
on earth as it is in heaven.
Give us this day our daily bread.
And forgive our debts,
as we also have forgiven our debtors.
And lead us not into temptation,
but deliver us from the evil one.

For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive yours."
(Matthew 6:5-15)

First off when we as Christians pray we should not do so in public so that others can see us. After all, what is the point in praying for? If we praying for God then why pray in public since God can see us wherever we are? Well we are praying for men then why pray in private where men cannot see us? Then is this why Jesus says to pray inside your house behind a closed door where you are alone so that no one can see you. The idea is that you are praying so that you can talk to God and if you pray in public so that others can see you then you are effectively praying for men so that others see you as righteous. Now I know there are instances in the Bible of people praying with others or in public but this just goes to show how they have fallen short of Jesus's teaching here.

Therefore do not pray in public so that others can see you because as Jesus says the only way you will be rewarded by God for your prayers is if you pray in secret so that you are praying for the benefit of God alone instead of to be seen by others. This also means that if you wish to pray with others in a group then you tell them you are praying for them because by telling them you are praying for them you are trying to be seen as righteous by them. Thus in this case Jesus would probably say you would be like the hypocrites.

As Jesus says:

"And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by them. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward." (Matthew 6:5)

This is why Jesus says they have already received their reward. If you do so that others are praying for them then what good would it then do to pray? Have you not already received honor from men so why would God honor your request? Likewise when you pray in public and others look upon you as being righteous then you have already received your full reward. God is not going to listen to you because you have already received honor from men. Think of it this way, the more secretly you honor God with your prayers the more likely God is to reward you for your faithfulness. This is why Jesus says you should hide your prayers from everyone.

Now as to what you should pray, as Jesus says:

"And when you pray, do not babble on like pagans, for they think that by their many words they will be heard. Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him." (Matthew 6:7-8)

Thus you should not go on and on with your prayers or use many different words for what you pray because God already knows what you need. So really there is no need to request anything different each time when you pray so you should not do so.

Then as Jesus says:

"So then, this is how you should pray:

'Our Father in heaven,
hallowed be Your name,
Your kingdom come,
Your will be done,
on earth as it is in heaven.'" (Matthew 6:9-10)

In the first sentence you simply give honor to God. Then in the next sentence you ask for the Kingdom to come so that as Revelation tells of it. Furthermore you simply ask that the will of God be carried out as fulfilled on earth just like how it is in heaven. There really is nothing more you can ask for since God has already determined everything. Thus if what you desire is willed by God then it will come to pass and if what you desire is not willed by God then it will not come to pass. This is why you simply say: "Your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven." (Matthew 6:10)

As the gospels say:

"Giving a little further, He fell facedown and prayed, 'My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me. Yet not as I will, but as You will.'" (Matthew 26:39)

"Father, if You are willing, take this cup from Me. Yet not My will, but Yours be done." (Luke 22:42)

First off as an aside obviously no one actually heard Jesus pray since Matthew says Jesus went far enough to pray. Thus what others supposedly said here could be considered made up. The disciples could have thought that Jesus was asking for rather than what Jesus actually said. This is why Jesus says to pass and if something instead of doing what He previously said of not asking for anything. Obviously if the author simply wrote down how Jesus said to pray earlier then he would have to know what Jesus was feeling or asking for since in the prayer beforehand Jesus I am going over does not ask for specific things.

Anyways, my point here is that even Jesus in felt hour of need did not demand anything from God but rather He simply asked for the will of God to be done instead. Therefore like Jesus so that when you pray you do not pray for your own will to be fulfilled but rather instead you pray for the will of God to be fulfilled. This means that it is fine to want specific things but you need to understand that God is not obligated to give you anything or fulfill any of your prayers. I'm also trying to say that praying for your own needs and wants above what God wills to happen is actually inherently selfish activity. This is why when you pray you should always end your prayer by asking for the will of God to be fulfilled instead of your own will.

Then always remember the promises that God has given us in the Book of Revelation. As God says: "The one who overcomes will inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7) Therefore what worry about your prayers in this world being answered or not because as God says all those who overcome the sinner and influence of Satan in our world 'will inherit all things' (Revelation 21:7) in the world to come. This is why you really only need to be focused on praying for the will of God to come to pass because God has already assigned us an inheritance so the only thing that needs to happen before we can receive it is to have the will of God as told of in the prophecies of the Book of Revelation come to pass.

Next as Jesus goes on to say:

"Give us this day our daily bread.
And forgive our debts,
as we also have forgiven our debtors.
And lead us into temptation,
but deliver us from the evil one."

For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive yours." (Matthew 6:11-15)

First off by giving thanks for our daily bread we are thanking God for our life and what we have even if we only have our life because we are so poor. Then by asking for God to forgive our debts or sins as we forgive those who are in debt to us we are fulfilling the requirement of forgiving others if we want to be forgiven ourselves. Remember, if you do not forgive others then God will not forgive you. Finally we ask not to lead us into temptation but deliver us from evil or the metaphorical Satan. This is because since God is in full control over everything there is it is He who ultimately is the source of temptation by means of Satan. So by asking God to deliver us from temptation we are acknowledging that He is in full control over everything and that only He can deliver us from the evil in the world.

Now of course you can always add more lines to this prayer or modify it in whatever way you want because really it is simply a template. But keep in mind that you should not feel like you need to say different words each time you pray because as I have already noted God already knows what you are thinking and what you want. Therefore saying anything else is not needed.

But how many times per day should you pray? Well really it is up to you and it just depends on whatever you feel like really. Obviously you should pray everyday but the exact number of times is up to you. Whenever you should always remember to pray away from others because if you are seen by others when you pray then you have already received your reward.

Next what about what Jesus says here?:

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Suppose one of you goes to his friend at midnight and says, 'Friend, lend me three loaves of bread, because a friend of mine has come to me on a journey, and I have nothing to set before him.

And suppose he from inside answers, 'Do not bother me. My door is already shut, and my children and I are in bed. I cannot get up to give you anything'?

I tell you, even though he will not get up to provide for him because of his friendship, yet because of his persistence he will get up and give him as much as he needs.

So I tell you: Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.

What father among you, if his son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? So if you who are evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him!" (Luke 11:5-13)

"In the morning, as Jesus was returning to the city, He was hungry. Seeing a fig tree by the road, He went up to it but found nothing on it except leaves. Then He said to it, 'May you never bear fruit again!' He said. And immediately the tree withered."

"When the disciples saw this, they marveled and asked, 'How did the fig tree wither so quickly?'

'Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'if you have faith and do not doubt, not only will you do what was done to the fig tree, but also if you say to this mountain, 'Be lifted up and thrown into the sea,' it will happen. If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.'" (Matthew 18:18-22)

"Then Jesus told them a parable about their need to pray at all times and not to give in. 'In a certain town there was a judge who neither feared God nor respected man. And there was a widow in that town who kept appealing to him, 'Give me justice against my adversary.'

For a while he refused, but later he said to himself, 'Though I neither fear God nor respect men, yet because this widow keeps pestering me, I will grant her justice, so that she will stop wearing me out with her perpetual requests.'"

And the Lord said, 'Listen to the words of the unjust judge. Will not God bring about justice for His elect who cry out to Him day and night? Will He continue to defer their help? I tell you, He will bring about justice on behalf of them. Nevertheless, when the Son of Man comes, will He find faith on earth?'" (Luke 18:1-8)

But remember, we are to simply pray for the will of God to be fulfilled:

"So then, this is how you should pray:

'Our Father in heaven,
hallowed be Your name,
Your kingdom come,
Your will be done,
on earth as it is in heaven." (Matthew 6:9-10)

God has already determined everything as I have said in my commentary on Revelation because He already knows if your name is in the Book of Life or not. Therefore we do not to ask God for specific things but rather for the fulfilment of the will of God.

Then since all the faithful are to receive an inheritance beyond value from God with the new heavens and the new earth as the prophecies stated, all of our hopes and prayers will truly be answered on the day we receive our inheritance. Thus we should simply honor God through our prayers and pray for His will to be fulfilled.

This is also why we should pray despite the fact that God already knows the outcome. The purpose of prayer is to worship God and to honor His will and not to get what you may have. In other words it is about your relationship with God and not about getting what you want.

Finally as I have already said it is important to also be humble with your prayers.

As Jesus says:

"To some who trusted in their own righteousness and viewed others with contempt, He also told this parable: "Two men went up to the temple to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other was a tax collector. The Pharisee stood by himself and prayed, 'God, I thank You that I am not like the other men – swindlers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector. I fast twice a week and pay tithes of all that I acquire.'

But the tax collector stood at a distance, unwilling even to lift up the eyes to heaven. Instead, he beat his breast and said, 'God, have mercy on me, a sinner!' I tell you, this man, rather than the Pharisee, went home justified. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, but the one who humbles himself will be exalted." (Luke 18:9-14)

Therefore when you pray to God do not be proud and think highly of yourself and your righteousness as you demand to receive what God owes you. Remember what happened before God as you simply ask Him to have mercy upon you and ask for His will to be done rather than what you want. But keep in mind that God is not obligated to give you anything or fulfill any of your prayers. I'm also trying to say that praying for your own needs and wants above what God wills to happen is actually inherently selfish activity. This is why when you pray you should always end your prayer by asking for the will of God to be fulfilled instead of your own will.

Then always remember the promises that God has given us in the Book of Revelation. As God says: "The one who overcomes will inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7) Therefore what worry about your prayers in this world being answered or not because as God says all those who overcome the sinner and influence of Satan in our world 'will inherit all things' (Revelation 21:7) in the world to come. This is why you really only need to be focused on praying for the will of God to come to pass because God has already assigned us an inheritance so the only thing that needs to happen before we can receive it is to have the will of God as told of in the prophecies of the Book of Revelation come to pass.

Next as Jesus goes on to say:

"Give us this day our daily bread.
And forgive our debts,
as we also have forgiven our debtors.
And lead us into temptation,
but deliver us from the evil one."

For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive yours." (Matthew 6:11-15)

First off by giving thanks for our daily bread we are thanking God for our life and what we have even if we only have our life because we are so poor. Then by asking for God to forgive our debts or sins as we forgive those who are in debt to us we are fulfilling the requirement of forgiving others if we want to be forgiven ourselves. Remember, if you do not forgive others then God will not forgive you. Finally we ask not to lead us into temptation but deliver us from evil or the metaphorical Satan. This is because since God is in full control over everything there is it is He who ultimately is the source of temptation by means of Satan. So by asking God to deliver us from temptation we are acknowledging that He is in full control over everything and that only He can deliver us from the evil in the world.

Now of course you can always add more lines to this prayer or modify it in whatever way you want because really it is simply a template. But keep in mind that you should not feel like you need to say different words each time you pray because as I have already noted God already knows what you are thinking and what you want. Therefore saying anything else is not needed.

But how many times per day should you pray? Well really it is up to you and it just depends on whatever you feel like really. Obviously you should pray everyday but the exact number of times is up to you. Whenever you should always remember to pray away from others because if you are seen by others when you pray then you have already received your reward.

Next what about what Jesus says here?:

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Suppose one of you goes to his friend at midnight and says, 'Friend, lend me three loaves of bread, because a friend of mine has come to me on a journey, and I have nothing to set before him.

And suppose he from inside answers, 'Do not bother me. My door is already shut, and my children and I are in bed. I cannot get up to give you anything'?

I tell you, even though he will not get up to provide for him because of his friendship, yet because of his persistence he will get up and give him as much as he needs.

So I tell you: Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.

What father among you, if his son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? So if you who are evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him!" (Luke 11:5-13)

"In the morning, as Jesus was returning to the city, He was hungry. Seeing a fig tree by the road, He went up to it but found nothing on it except leaves. Then He said to it, 'May you never bear fruit again!' He said. And immediately the tree withered."

"When the disciples saw this, they marveled and asked, 'How did the fig tree wither so quickly?'

'Truly I tell you,' Jesus replied, 'if you have faith and do not doubt, not only will you do what was done to the fig tree, but also if you say to this mountain, 'Be lifted up and thrown into the sea,' it will happen. If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.'" (Matthew 18:18-22)

"Then Jesus told them a parable about their need to pray at all times and not to give in. 'In a certain town there was a judge who neither feared God nor respected man. And there was a widow in that town who kept appealing to him, 'Give me justice against my adversary.'

For a while he refused, but later he said to himself, 'Though I neither fear God nor respect men, yet because this widow keeps pestering me, I will grant her justice, so that she will stop wearing me out with her perpetual requests.'"

And the Lord said, 'Listen to the words of the unjust judge. Will not God bring about justice for His elect who cry out to Him day and night? Will He continue to defer their help? I tell you, He will bring about justice on their behalf

bless you in everything to which you put your hand in the land that I swore to your ancestors to possess." (Deuteronomy 23:19-20)

"At the end of every seven years you must cancel debts. This is the manner of the remission: Every creditor shall cancel what he has loaned to his neighbor. He is not to collect anything from his neighbor or brother, because the LORD's time of release has been proclaimed." (Deuteronomy 15:1-2)

Now of course as I have said before we are not bound by the Law. However that does not mean we should not look to the Law for guidance on how we should love God and love our neighbor. For example if you loan money to your neighbor and charge him interest then how can you say you love your neighbor as yourself or even as your family? If your mother was poor would you loan her money at interest and charge her for it in full? I do not think so. Therefore if the Law says that loving your neighbor means not exploiting him and profiting off of them then how can you say that paying your workers what they deserve is exploitive? Do your workers not deserve to make enough to live on?

Additionally if you do not forgive others of what they owe you and help out the needy when you have much excess then what does that say about your love for your neighbor? I mean the Law demands that every debt be forgiven every seven years. Therefore in the least you can I show mercy on those who owe you something.

Then as Jesus says:

"But many who are first will be last, and the last will be first." (Matthew 19:30)

You do not want to end up in last place by being in first place now. Always remember that you are a slave of God and that you must give to God what He is owed.

Finally if being rich is sinful then what does it mean to be rich? For instance what if your income or wealth is required to be considered rich? Well intellectually it is a rather complex question with no real answer. What I mean by this is that being rich is a relative and subjective term and because of this fact anyone can justify whatever definition they want. For instance there are some people who would say that owning a house would make you rich. So does this mean you need to sell your house? Well no and I do not believe that owning a house makes someone rich since obviously we need a place to live. This is especially true if you live in a cold area so you do not die of exposure. Furthermore selling your house to give the money away to others ultimately just passes a burden onto others. So sure you would be helping the poor but by making yours and others you would then be taking away help from others.

Really in terms of what it means to be rich I would say it depends on where a person places their values and how they live their life. What I mean by this is that it is like many things that you should not align your life around acquiring more wealth and the pursuit of wealth is bad at it. Instead you should seek to use what you make and have for the betterment of others.

As Jesus says:

"Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Matthew 6:19-21)

But really in the end what it means to be rich cannot really be answered in a definitive way. Instead being rich is an entirely subjective measure. But what should you do then if you believe yourself to be rich? Well I would look towards the Gospel of Luke.

As the Gospel of Luke says:

"Then Jesus entered Jericho and was passing through. And there was a man named Zacchaeus, a chief tax collector, who was very wealthy. He was trying to see who Jesus was, but could not see over the crowd because he was small in stature. So he ran on ahead and climbed a sycamore tree to see Him, since Jesus was about to pass this way.

When Jesus came to that place, He looked up and said, Zacchaeus, hurry down. for I must stay at your house today.'

So Zacchaeus hurried down and welcomed Him joyfully. And all who saw this began to grumble, saying, 'He has gone to be the guest of a sinful man!'

But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord, 'Look, Lord, half of my possessions I give to the poor, and if I have cheated anyone, I will repay it fourfold.'

Jesus said to him, 'Today salvation has come to this house, because this man too is a son of Abraham. For the Son of Man came to seek and save the lost.'" (Luke 19:1-10)

My point in quoting this passage is that despite the fact that Zaccflaeus was very wealth by giving half his wealth to the poor Jesus said that salvation has come to his house. In other words Jesus saw Zacchaeus as righteous even though he would no doubt still be rich even after giving away half of what he has. Therefore if you believe yourself to be rich then surely by giving away half of what you own or half of what you make you will be seen as righteous by God.

Chapter 6.31: Evangelism

How exactly are we to evangelize as we bear witness to the world about our faith?

After all preaching the Gospel is important as Jesus says:

"Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature." (Mark 16:15)

So obviously we should go and preach the Gospel as we evangelize. Here preaching the Gospel simply means telling others that Jesus died so that their sins can be forgiven and that all they have to do to be their sins forgiven is to have faith in Him and do what He has commanded us to do.

However, not only has basically everyone in the western world heard this message, but it is also highly dependent upon the person who is talking to. For example there are many people who will simply ignore the message and will a do not care or tell you to go away. What are you supposed to do then?

Well according to Christian apologists this is where the traditional arguments for the existence of God come in so that you can argue for the existence of a god then steer the person to Christianity. However, since you have read my part on bad apologetics already you already know these arguments are intellectually bankrupt. So if we cannot use the bad arguments I wrote about in my bad apologetics part then what now?

First off let me just say that whenever you are having a discussion with someone or arguing with them a good principle to live by is the idea that whoever gets mad first loses. The idea here is once someone moves from trying to reason their position to getting emotional then that means they have lost since they are now trying to protect their own feeling. Thus when you are talking to a religious person if you get mad to the point at which you admit defeat. Not only that but if you get mad you will look extremely bad to everyone who is watching the interaction and thus do a lot of harm. Therefore do not get mad period. It does not matter how annoying you find the other person and it does not matter what the other person says. It does not say something that truly bothers you then simply shrug it off. If they say something that you cannot really respond to then just simply say I do not know. Do not get defensive and do not get mad.

Furthermore you should not take anything personally and you should take the high ground when attacked. After all, if you really know whoever you are talking to is wrong then it is their loss and not yours. Who cares if you cannot convince them? It is not your job to end up in the Lake of Fire then that is up to them.

As Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

Thus you are not going to be able to convince everyone. In fact you will not even convince the majority of the tirne. Instead expect the vast majority to simply ignore what you say.

Furthermore it is not your fault if you are unable to convince them of whatever proposition you are trying to convince them of. After all God has predetermined everything so really if someone refuses to listen to you then it is because God hardened their heart and closed their mind to your words. Thus even all the negative interactions you have with others are simply the will of God.

Next I think the best way to convince others of Christianity is not simply lead by example so that others see you in a positive light and become more open and trusting of what you have to offer. The idea here is if everyone around you always sees you as dependable and even if a so called jew physical attacks me or worse kills me.

As Jesus says:

"Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you." (Matthew 5:11-12)

"Blessed are you when people hate you, and when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil because of the Son of Man. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For their fathers treated the prophets in the same way." (Luke 6:22-23)

Thus I do not care what others think because I know God will look kindly upon me for what I have done. I will not deny Christ and the true people of God and the true Israel, the Church. Then as Jesus also says:

"Woe to you when all men speak well of you, for their fathers treated the false prophets in the same way." (Luke 6:26)

Therefore if you are trying to please others and always make them happy with you then you are ultimately doing something wrong. If you are speaking truth then many people will dislike and even hate what you say. Thus again you should not care what others say about you and your beliefs because as long as you persist in faith and righteousness to the end that is all that matters.

Lastly as Jesus says:

"Do not give dogs what is holy; do not throw your pearls before swine. If you do, they may trample them with their feet, and turn and tear you to pieces." (Matthew 7:6)

If you wrestle with a dog or a pig it does not matter if you win or lose. You are ruined because you will end up covered in mud regardless. Therefore do not wrestle with the dogs and pigs and leave them to their own devices and their own inevitable doom. If they want to be with all, you cannot save everyone so do not even bother to try.

Again as Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

It is not your fault if the unrighteous and the faithless refuse to listen you and you will forever remain blameless if you are unable to convince them. So if a person is resistant to you then do not bother with them and let them be. It is their loss and not yours. Then always remember that your goal is not to win arguments and instead your goal is to win souls. This is why it is best to give up on those who resist you and move on to someone else because there will always be someone else out there who will not resist what you are saying. So go find this person. Finally, you should always remember to remain humble and do not even think of using an argument to win as I just said. I cannot stress enough how important this is.

Chapter 6.32: Instructing Others

How should we go about instructing others? Can we become teachers?

First of all as Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"Then Jesus spoke to the crowds and to His disciples, "The scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. So practice and observe everything they tell you to do, but not what they do, for they do not practice what they preach. They tie up heavy burdens, difficult to bear, and lay them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them.

All their deeds are done for men to see. They broaden their phylacteries and lengthen their tassels. They love the place of honor at banquets, the chief seats in the synagogues, the greetings in the marketplaces, and the title of 'Rabbi' by which they are addressed.

But you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher, and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father, for you have one Father, who is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one Instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:1-12)

So in reality we as Christians cannot become a teacher or an instructor because already have one Teacher and one Instructor. Instead we can really cannot become a leader or a teacher in the Church and instead you can only become a servant.

However this does not mean that you cannot teach others. In fact what we can do with your role is to serve others the best you can and oftentimes this means answering their questions and helping them through a difficult time in their life. After all, if someone wants their questions answered then would it be your responsibility as a servant of the Church to try to serve their needs?

But what does it mean to instruct others? Now really instructing others is quite simple. All you do is learn about the faith and then answer to your own questions so that sorrieday when someone has questions of their own you will be able to serve them. That is really all there is to it.

That said, there is something important to keep in mind. Because we have Christ and knowledge of the hidden truth of the world for free and because God has the gift of salvation offered for free, we are not to charge others for helping them.

After all, does a slave or a servant charge money for their services? Of course not. And remember, we are slaves of God even if we were permitted to charge money then it is not yours to take and keep. After all, the money God does not need money so we are to serve others for free. However this does not mean you cannot accept donations from those who freely offered to you out of the goodness of their heart instead it simply means that you cannot charge money for helping others.

Then in terms of actually helping others you may be worried about being taken advantage of. But I would like to tell you that you should have nothing to be worried about as long as you try your best then you will be fine.

As Paul wrote:

"By the grace God has given me, I laid a foundation as an expert builder, and someone else is building on it. But each one must be careful how he builds it. For no one can lay a foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ.

If anyone builds on this foundation using gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or straw, his workmanship will be evident, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will prove the quality of each man's work. If what he has built survives, he will receive a reward. If his is burned up, he will suffer loss. He himself will be saved, but only as through the flames." (1 Corinthians 3:10-15)

The foundation of the Church is of course Jesus Christ. Then when you instruct others you are building upon this foundation. Now the quality of your addition to this foundation will depend upon if what you teach is correct or not. For example if this book you have been reading is smoty correct then should be of good fire. You say I built upon the foundation of Jesus Christ with gold, silver or precious stones. On the other hand if this book is largely incorrect then you have built upon the foundation with wood, hay or straw.

Then when the Day, or God, brings the work to light through fire then if this book is incorrect it will be burned up and destroyed while the instructor will have to pass through the flames. So in the end it really does not matter if you teach others or not because you will be saved regardless. The only real reward in my opinion for teaching others is if what you teach is simply the honor of correctly building upon the foundation of Jesus Christ through your own teachings and discussion. So really God and the host of heaven will look favorably upon you for building upon the foundation of Christ. Obviously I do not have to say how great of an honor this would be.

However, I would like to say that if what you teach or instruct is burned up then, although you will still be saved, you will face a punishment since you will only be saved through the flames. Therefore instructors should really think about what you teach or instruct because you do not want to be burned up and have to pass the fires of heaven cleiln and purify what you have built.

So do not feel like serving others through instruction is something that you must do or that it is something that are expected of you. Sure you can be expected to help others and answer their questions but is not like it is your job to write the amount that I have written here in this book.

Furthermore I would also like to warn you that you should do everything you can to avoid being a hypocrite because God hates hypocrites. For example if you use a double standard in your Law of Moses to say that something is sinful on that reverse the exact same thing because it is one two greatest commandments of love God and love your neighbor, then God will be upon you. yourself break the Law of Moses then you would be a hypocrite. Instead of a double standard you cannot arbitrarily pick and choose which part of the Law you follow and which part you do not.

For example if you cite the law against men wearing women's clothes then you should make bi-female transgender people while at the same time you wear clothes that fit your sex like everyone else does then you would be a hypocrite. Hypocrisy is because the hypocrite of the opposite sex is not related to loving God or loving your neighbor. So instead of being able to judge on the basis of the Law of Moses your neighbor the only standard you can judge on would be on the basis of the Law of Moses. However if you yourself wear clothes made from fabrics of mixed fibers then you would be violating the Law of Moses. Thus through your instruction here you would be a hypocrite.

Then remember, if you judge others through your teaching then you should expect to be judged in turn based on the same standard you judge by. So if you judge others for breaking the Law of Moses then you should expect to likewise be judged by God through the Law of Moses. So by teaching against men wearing women's clothes while you yourself wear clothes of fabrics with mixed fibers you will be judged as a lawbreaker and a hypocrite.

But what does this mean? Well to be honest I do not know. Perhaps God will forgive those who practice hypocrisy and perhaps God will not.

As Jesus says:

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the kingdom of heaven in men's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let in those who wish to enter.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You traverse land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a child of hell as you are." (Matthew 23:13-15)

Therefore if you wish to avoid the Lake of Fire then it is best to avoid being a hypocrite.

I would also like to say that when you serve others as you instruct them that you should seek to be kind and gentle towards others. This is because by being a slave of God you are also a representative of God. So if you are unfriendly and speak falsely then surely God will become angry and seek to punish His slave for their disobedience.

So when someone comes to you with a question or an issue you need to be patient. Pay attention as you carefully listen to what they have to say. Answer in a way that is comfortable if appropriate and try to help them yourself if you are able. If you are not able then refer them yourself then offer them advice on what they can do or what they themselves or find someone else to help them.

Now I am not simply talking about theological instruction here although I do think about instruction more generally. For example if a woman comes to you who's husband just cheated on her and asks you what they should do then you need to first and foremost listen to her and comfort her. View this as a person first instead of a problem that needs fixing. Now this does not mean you should not advise her in her time of need but rather oftentimes what she needs most is emotional comfort rather than doctrine.

This also means that you should not say something just to please others. So skeptics as well. For example if you have an atheist friend and they are dying and they tell them that the death is all part of God's plan to lead them to salvation then you should not say this is a blatantly wrong. How do you know what God's plan is for someone exactly? You do not. Therefore you should not speak about that which you are ignorant of and you should simply comfort your friend and not impose your faith upon them when they do not want it. There is a time for everything and there is a time for everything. Instead of being a busybody and a know-it-all with the pain that that is irrelevant in terms of the public personal is the will of God. Instead you must interpret. But if there is no interpreter, then you should remain silent in the presence of others and speak only to himself and God." (1 Corinthians 14:28)

Then let me reiterate some parts:

"Unless you speak intelligible words with your tongue, how will anyone know what you are saying? You will be speaking into the air." (1 Corinthians 14:9)

"But if there is no interpreter, he should remain silent in the presence of others and speak only to himself and God." (1 Corinthians 14:28)

This is why I said speaking in tongues when no one can understand is simply meaningless babbling. The gifts of the Spirit are for building up the Church and increasing knowledge of the Kingdom of God. They are not for making empty noises. Therefore in the presence of others in order to demonstrate you are faithful.

Furthermore I would like to point out that if others around you say they can speak in tongues but that no one can understand them and that the so-called language they are speaking is actually just a form of language on earth then they are not speaking in a tongue and are instead speaking gibberish. Now you may take offense to this but the Bible is clear that speaking in tongues means speaking in a real language. It does not mean speaking in gibberish.

Now I do not believe the gifts of the Spirit are useless as a whole no matter what you may think. For example since they are possible gifts of the Spirit are a message of wisdom and a message of knowledge then what I wrote in my commentary on Revelation is a result of the Holy Spirit? Well I do not know. Other than God that is. Of course in the long run of things it is what I have written is correct or not as I have said.

Instead my point here is that simply babbering empty words into the air is not useful to the Church. Just as Paul said he would rather speak five words people can understand than ten thousand words they cannot understand. Well not, you should also focus on trying to increase your own understanding of the Bible so that you can lead others to understanding.

Next I would just like to say that I do not know if the gifts of the Spirit are real or counterfeit. Obviously if the gifts of the Spirit have truly ceased then all those who speak in tongues would either be liars or worse under the influence of evil. But like I said I do not know if they have or not.

However, I will say that as we get closer to the first beast of Revelation and the Lake of the Abyss it would only make sense for the gifts of the Spirit to diminish. This is because the first beast will be an artificial super intelligence then it would make sense that God will seek to hide himself from the beast because if the beast sees something it cannot explain then it would think God exists. This cannot happen of course because Revelation says the beast will view itself as greater than everything. Also where Revelation says it will speak blasphemies and have blasphemous names on its heads.

Therefore if you cannot speak in tongues or if you do not have a gift of the Spirit then do not worry because it is your lack of a gift is simply the manifestation of the will of God. So do not believe you are not special because you do not have a gift since by being a Christian you are special already and God has made you a great inheritance if you but persist in your faith until the end.

Chapter 6.33: Gifts of the Spirit

Oftentimes people believe that you must have a so called gift of the Spirit, like speaking in tongues, in order to be considered a Christian because they see it as evidence that you have the Holy Spirit.

This belief comes from passages in Acts such as:

"When the day of Pentecost came, they were all together in one place. Suddenly a sound like a mighty rushing wind came from heaven and filled the whole house where they were sitting. They saw tongues like flames of fire that separated and came to rest on each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other tongues as the Spirit enabled them." (Acts 2:1-4)

"While Peter still spoke these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all who heard his message. All the circumcised believers who had accompanied Peter were astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out even on the Gentiles. For they heard them speaking in tongues and exalting God.

Then Peter said, "Can anyone withhold the water to baptize these people? They have received the Holy Spirit just as we have!" So he ordered that they be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they asked him to stay for a few days." (Acts 10:44-48)

"On hearing this, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied. There were about twelve men in all." (Acts 19:5-7)

Then as Paul wrote:

"Now about spiritual gifts, brothers, I do not want you to be ignorant. You know that when you were pagans, you were influenced and led astray to the mute idols. Therefore I inform you that no one who is speaking by the Spirit of God says, "Jesus be cursed", and no one can say, "Jesus is Lord," except by the Holy Spirit.

There are different gifts, but the same Spirit. There are different ministries, but the same Lord. There are different kinds of working, but it is the same God who works all things in all people.

Now to each one the manifestation of the Spirit is given for the common good. To one there is given through the Spirit the message of wisdom, to another the message of knowledge by the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healing by that one Spirit, to another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another distinguishing between spirits, to another speaking in various tongues, and to another the interpretation of tongues. All these are the work of one and the same Spirit, who apportions to each one as he pleases. He determines." (1 Corinthians 12:1-11)

The problem of course with this belief that you must speak in tongues is that it is not true. It is true on the basis of what Paul wrote above as Paul says that there are many different gifts and that not everyone will have each of them.

Furthermore I do not understand why some Christians desire to speak in tongues or even believe that you must. After all, if you cannot understand what you are saying then how can you are simply babbering useless words so even if you so called gift was real and you are not simply faking it then it is not really a gift, instead it is a curse because it is utterly useless as no one can understand it.

Let me reiterate that, if you say you can speak in tongues but no one can understand what you are saying then you do not have a gift because your words are worthless and meaningless. Instead it would be better if you remained silent so that you do not disturb others.

Now I may have ruffled your feathers a bit so read what Paul wrote:

"Earnestly pursue love and eagerly desire spiritual gifts, especially the gift of prophecy. For he who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men but to God. In fact, no one understands him; he utters mysteries in the Spirit. But he who prophesies speaks to men for their edification, encouragement, and comfort. The one who speaks in a tongue edifies himself, but the one who prophesies edifies the church.

I wish that all of you could speak in tongues, but I would rather have you prophesy. He who prophesies is greater than one who speaks in tongues, unless he interprets so that the church may be edified.

Now, brothers, if I come to you speaking in tongues, how will I benefit you, unless I bring you some revelation or knowledge or prophecy or teaching? Even in the case of lifeless instruments, such as the flute or harp, how will anyone recognize the tune they are playing unless the notes are distinct? Again, if the trumpet sounds a muffled call, who will prepare for battle? So it is with you. Unless you speak intelligible words with your tongue, how will anyone know what you are saying? You will just be speaking into the air.

Assuredly, there are many different languages in the world, and none of them is without meaning. If, then, I do not know the meaning of someone's language, I am a foreigner to the speaker, and he is a foreigner to me.

It is the same with you. Since you are eager to have spiritual gifts, strive to excel in gifts that build up the Church. Therefore, the one who speaks in a tongue should pray that he may interpret. For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays, but my mind is unfruitful.

What then shall I do? I will pray with my spirit, but I will also pray with my mind. I will sing with my spirit, but I will also sing with my mind. Otherwise, if you speak a blessing in spirit, how can someone else in the congregation say 'Amen' to your thanksgiving, since he does not know what you are saying? I can say the giving thanks well enough, but the other person is not edified.

I thank God that I speak in tongues more than all of you. But in the church, I would rather speak five words with my mind instruct others than ten thousand words in a tongue.

Brothers, stop thinking like children. In regard to evil be infants, but in your thinking be mature. It is written in the Law:

'By strange tongues and foreign lips I will speak to this people, but even then they will not listen to Me, says the Lord.'

Tongues, then, are a sign, not for believers, but for unbelievers. Prophecy, however, is for believers, not for unbelievers.

So if the whole church comes together and everyone speaks in tongues, and some who are unlearned or some unbelievers come in, will they not say that you are out of your minds? But if an unbeliever or uninstructed person comes in while everyone is prophesying, he will be convicted and called to account by all, and thus will be judged as the secrets in his heart are made known. So he will fall facedown and worship God, proclaiming, 'God is truly among you!'

What then shall we say, brothers? When you come together, everyone has a hymn, a teaching, a revelation, a tongue, or an interpretation. All of these must be done to build up the church.

If anyone speaks in a tongue, two, or at most three, should speak in turn, and someone must interpret. But if there is no interpreter, he should remain silent in the presence of others and speak only to himself and God." (1 Corinthians 14:1-28)

Then let me reiterate some parts:

"Unless you speak intelligible words with your tongue, how will anyone know what you are saying? You will be speaking into the air." (1 Corinthians 14:9)

"But if there is no interpreter, he should remain silent in the presence of others and speak only to himself and God." (1 Corinthians 14:28)

This is why I said speaking in tongues when no one can understand is simply meaningless babbering. The gifts of the Spirit are for building up the Church and increasing knowledge of the Kingdom of God. They are not for making empty noises. Therefore in the presence of others in order to demonstrate you are faithful.

Finally you may be wondering if I believe that modern miracles actually happen and are real. But really because I already wrote about this in my commentary on Revelation and in this part on various modern miracles claims I am hiddenness you should already know the answer. It really do not seem to me modern miracles that are undeniable as being something that actually happen in the world. This is because if modern miracles with actual evidence that could be verified happened then the world would be a very different place. It would be able to discover these miracles as it sorts through the information and data in the world. For instance if Christians were really able to heal medical issues that proved to the AS! would discover this fact once it pours over and analyzes the medical records of not just Christians but from everyone else in the world including atheists and those of other religions. Therefore if what I claim concerning the gifts of the Spirit are real then it would be time then we would expect to see near zero if not zero modern-day miracles happening.

Now this is not to say that I am denying the possibility of modern-day miracles happening. Instead I am saying that God wants to hide from the first beast so that it will never be able to see Him. So as a result of this it would make sense that modern miracles would be hidden to occur. But what do I mean by evidenced miracles happening? Well I mean I am talking about something that could be seen by the future AS! that God would allow Israel could to work a modern-day miracle then we would expect him to do so. After all if there is no evidence of the said miracle ever happening. Although keep in mind this does not mean it being literally real hard evidence but even indirect evidence. So for example if there is an infirmary in the world that medical records. This would mean that we would expect to see Christians spontaneously cured of diseases at the same rate as atheists.

Thus as a result of this I am rather skeptical of any modern-day miracle claims that are made on the basis of faith rather than science so that new science that disproves Genesis is simply discarded because of the faith of people who are discerning truth than science. It really does not matter which miracle claim you pick here and each one is more or less equally valid.

Now in terms of my position, really I am not sure which of the two options I wrote above since they are all about the same for me. In the end I simply have faith that God will do what come to pass. Therefore for me at least what Genesis says or does not say really does not matter one bit.

So in terms of my advice here I would say that you should place your faith in God above everything else so that by faith alone you may be saved and enter into Heaven. So do not think of Genesis as an issue or as a stumbling block and instead see it as a test of faith.

Chapter 6.34: Modern Miracles

Are miracles still happening in our modern world? For instance oftentimes people like to claim that Jesus healed people and that if we heal them so the real question is were these miracles actually healed or not? Well I think it would say you should be extremely skeptical of any and all modern miracle claims. For means if you hear about a modern-day miracle claim and there is no hard evidence to back it up then you should write off the miracle claim as being fake or a lie.

Why do I say this? There are two reasons. The first has to do with the nature of miracles. For instance other religions also have modern miracle and healing claims. So if we are to simply believe someone who calls themselves a Christian making the claim that God is going to believe a Muslim or a Hindu making a modern miracle or healing claim as well? Of course you would not. Furthermore there are also people who have claimed that they have seen aliens or UFOs. Will you also believe these people as well? Of course you would not. Therefore what I am saying is that in order to remain intellectually honest and logically consistent then you should just reject all miracle and healing claims people make that do not have sufficient evidence behind them.

The second reason is that I believe the people making these miracle claims are hurting Christians and Christianity in the process. For instance other religions also have modern miracle and healing claims. So if we are to simply believe someone who calls themselves a Christian making the claim that God is going to believe a Muslim or a Hindu making a modern miracle or healing claim as well? Of course you would not. Furthermore there are also people who have claimed that they have seen aliens or UFOs. Will you also believe these people as well? Of course you would not. Therefore what I am saying is that in order to remain intellectually honest and logically consistent then you should just reject all miracle and healing claims people make that do not have sufficient evidence behind them.

The second reason is that I believe the people making these miracle claims are hurting Christians and Christianity in the process. For instance other religions also have modern miracle and healing claims. So if we are to simply believe someone who calls themselves a Christian making the claim that God is going to believe a Muslim or a Hindu making a modern miracle or healing claim as well? Of course you would not. Furthermore there are also people who have claimed that they have seen aliens or UFOs. Will you also believe these people as well? Of course you would not. Therefore what I am saying is that in order to remain intellectually honest and logically consistent then you should just reject all miracle and healing claims people make that do not have sufficient evidence behind them.

Well first of all the popular conception of hell? Well, hell is supposed to be a place of eternal fire and torment where those who are unfaithful in life are sent to suffer and be punished for their sins. Thus the separated from God in heaven. All eternity is the key here because the idea is that this suffering never ends. It is an eternal punishment that lasts forever.

Obviously this concept of hell is highly problematic on this basis alone because how could anyone worship a god who is an eternal torture for any sin or crime is acceptable? Furthermore how can a Christian say they love God when in reality they simply fear hell? Really they cannot instead of they fear hell more than you love God then you do not really love God. So do not think of Christianity as being about hell and even psychologically tortured through their fear of hell? Christianity is about love.

But now you may say that surely people would not just invent hell and that it clearly must be all throughout the Bible? Well I would say that completely wrong because not only is not not seen throughout the Bible it is not even once in the Bible. Yes, the popular conception of hell does not even appear a single time.

In fact the existence versus nonexistence of hell is a good measure to judge people on their knowledge of the Bible. Those who say hell exists then obviously they do not understand the Bible because hell is quite literally no where to be found.

For example in the Old Testament the only reference to what is known as an afterlife is called Sheol and it is incorrectly referred as hell in many English translations. However Sheol is simply the grave or the grave. The idea is that when you die your body buried in the ground or burned. Thus the idea here is that Sayy someone has went to Sheol you are simply saying that the person has died and is in the grave. Thus it is best to just view Sheol as a metaphor.

For example as First Samuel says:

"The LORD brings death and gives life; He brings down to Sheol and raises up. The LORD makes poverty and wealth; He humbles and He exalts." (1 Samuel 2:6-7)

Thus when the passage here says "He brings down to Sheol and raises up" (1 Samuel 2:6) it is figuratively saying that God sends to the grave who he wills and raise up whoever he wills. This is why the verse says "The Lord brings death and gives life" (1 Samuel 2:6) before the mention of Sheol. The idea here is that Sheol is a metaphor for death and returning to the ground.

As God says:

"By the sweat of your brow you will eat your bread,
until you return to the ground—
because out of it were you taken.
For dust you are,
and to dust you shall return." (Genesis 3:19)

This ground, where people are buried, is what the Bible is referring to when it says Sheol because as God says we are all dust and to dust we shall return.

As Ecclesiastes says:

"For the fates of both men and beasts are the same: As one dies, so dies the other—they all have the same breath. Man has no advantage over the animals, since everything is futile. All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust." (Ecclesiastes 3:19-20)

First off the word translated as breath here is actually somewhere as spirit. The reason why the word can be translated this is way is because it refers to the spirit of life that a creature has. The ancient Israelites believed that when someone died the creature stop breathing that they were dead. So really you should think of the words breath, spirit and even soul all referring to the same thing which is the life force of a creature. And I have said before the modern concept of the immaterial soul does not exist in the Bible. Surely you could read sort of see it in the Book of Revelation but as I said in my commentary on Revelation the souls are not literal and instead they are entirely metaphorical like in the souls of the martyrs under the altar in heaven. The idea is that the very being of these martyrs died in their faith with the understanding that they that God would avenge their death in the future. However in terms of the Bible I remember the concept of the immaterial soul cannot be found not matter how hard you look for it. It does not exist.

Thus this is why this passage says "both men and beasts are the same: As one dies, so dies the other—they all have the same breath" (Ecclesiastes 3:19) The idea here is that we are the same as beasts in that we die just as when animals die they do not exist anymore so too do we cease to exist when we die. Further it says "All go to one place; all come from dust, and all return to dust." (Ecclesiastes 3:19-20)

Then as Ecclesiastes says:

"For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing. They have no further reward, and their memory of them is forgotten. Their love, their hate, and their envy have already vanished; and they will never again have a share in all that is done under the sun." (Ecclesiastes 9:5-6)

Therefore the dead are unconscious and immoral soul that will go to hell when they die because when we die we are dead so that we cease to exist. This is why the Bible is not inhabited by spirits or souls and instead it is the ground or the grave. This is why it is correct to say that everyone descends into Sheol because everyone dies and is in the grave or in Sheol. But remember, just as God raised Jesus from the dead so too will God raise all the faithful from the dead so that we will live forever in the eternal Kingdom of God just as God has promised.

But do you still not believe me? I mean surely Sheol must be where all of the souls go to hell or underworld right? Of course not and rather than differentiated from the grave. Well I am quoting and commenting on the Old Testament some more quotes about Sheol and it is easy to see and demonstrate that Jews in the early first century AD did not believe in an immoral and immaterial soul and that instead they believed in the idea of the resurrection of the dead where God would raise the righteous from the grave, or from Sheol, so that they might live upon the earth again. Now I say largely believed because there were also some Jews in the early first century who did not believe in the resurrection. But all who did believed that when you died that was it and your consciousness ceased to exist and it was as if you were never alive again. This means that even those who believed in the resurrection obviously did not consider Sheol to be a place of everlasting torment and instead they saw Sheol as returning to the dust of the earth.

As the Gospel of Mathew says:

"That same day the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to him and questioned Him. 'Teacher,' they said, 'Moses wrote for us that if a man dies and has living children, his brother is to marry the widow and raise up offspring for him. Now there were once seven brothers among us. The first one married and died without having children. So he left his wife to his brother. The same thing happened to the second and third brothers, down to the seventh. And after the seventh, the woman died. In the resurrection, then, whose wife will she be of the seven? For all of them were married to her.'

Jesus answered, 'You are mistaken because you do not know the Scriptures or the power of God. In the resurrection, people will neither marry nor be given in marriage. Instead, they will be like the angels in heaven. But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living.'

When the crowds heard this, they were astonished at His teaching." (Matthew 22:23-32)

First off in the time of Jesus the Pharisees were the main group that believed in the resurrection of the dead once a future Messiah comes to restore Israel to power so that Israel could rule over the world as God's chosen nation. On the other hand the Sadducees did not expect for any future resurrection and that instead they believed that when you died that was it and never exist again. Because of this belief the Sadducees questioned Jesus about this because in their view the idea of a resurrection as absurd. They used the idea of the absurdity of a resurrection by asking Jesus which man a woman will be married to after the resurrection if she was married seven times. Keep in mind that this is actually a metaphor and that in fact, after the whole concept of the resurrection relates to an idealized existence upon the earth. Therefore there will be no marriage in resurrection of the living like we are now except everything will be better. So you instead will be like angels in the resurrection of the dead as the Pharisees believe.

Now I should also point out that even the Pharisees believed that when you died and went to Sheol, or grave, that it was a place that was dead and that was it. The only real theological difference between the Pharisees and the Sadducees here was that the Pharisees believed God would raise the faithful from the dead so that they could live again in the future. In other words what I am saying here is that both the Pharisees and the Sadducees did not believe that Sheol was a place that people actually continue to suffer in. Instead they saw going to Sheol as a metaphor for going to the grave or the grave or death.

But wait, why did Jesus say the following then?:

"But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32)

Here Jesus is saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob don't actually still to be alive in the references them as if they are alive even though they are dead. The reason why is because of this God has promised to resurrect them in the future. So the idea here is for as long as you die faithful to God then although you may be dead you will be resurrected since God has promised to raise the faithful in the resurrection. So by being faithful you continue to live by God's promise.

But wait, why did Jesus say the following then?:

"But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32)

Here Jesus is saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob don't actually still to be alive in the references them as if they are alive even though they are dead. The reason why is because of this God has promised to resurrect them in the future. So the idea here is for as long as you die faithful to God then although you may be dead you will be resurrected since God has promised to raise the faithful in the resurrection. So by being faithful you continue to live by God's promise.

But wait, why did Jesus say the following then?:

"Now concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32)

Here Jesus is saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob don't actually still to be alive in the references them as if they are alive even though they are dead. The reason why is because of this God has promised to resurrect them in the future. So the idea here is for as long as you die faithful to God then although you may be dead you will be resurrected since God has promised to raise the faithful in the resurrection. So by being faithful you continue to live by God's promise.

But wait, why did Jesus say the following then?:

"Now concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32)

Here Jesus is saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob don't actually still to be alive in the references them as if they are alive even though they are dead. The reason why is because of this God has promised to resurrect them in the future. So the idea here is for as long as you die faithful to God then although you may be dead you will be resurrected since God has promised to raise the faithful in the resurrection. So by being faithful you continue to live by God's promise.

But wait, why did Jesus say the following then?:

"Now concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what God said to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living." (Matthew 22:31-32)

Here Jesus is saying that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob don't actually still to be alive in the references them as if they are alive even though they are dead. The reason why is because of this God has promised to resurrect them in the future. So the idea here is for as long as you die faithful to God then although you may be dead you will be resurrected since God has promised to raise the faithful in the resurrection. So by being faithful you continue to live by God's promise.

with repentance. And do not presume to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe lies ready at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

I baptize you with water for repentance, but after me will come One more powerful than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing fork is in His hand. He will clear His threshing floor and to gather His wheat into the barn, but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." (Matthew 3:7-12)

Here John the baptist is speaking of Jesus gathering his wheat (or the elect) into the barn, or saving them from destruction, while the chaff or the unfaithful are burned up and destroyed forever. Therefore John the baptist is talking about the annihilation, conditional or conditional immortality rather than eternal conscious torment. Here annihilationism and conditional immortality refer to the true belief that the unfaithful are destroyed in 'the second death—the lake of fire' (Revelation 20:14) instead of living on in a non-existent place called hell to be tormented all eternity.

If you disagree then tell me what happens to the chaff of wheat after it is burned following the harvest? It is destroyed and burned up, so that it is not chaff anymore. The farmer does not burn the chaff then magically restore the chaff to burn it again while repeating this process for all eternity. Are the modern concepts of hell, Again, instead the chaff is burned up and it is gone forever. Therefore John the baptist is talking about the Lake of Fire and the second death here.

Next as Jesus says:

"Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Instead, fear the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell." (Matthew 10:28)

Alright this verse mentions hell therefore hell exists so I am wrong right? Of course not. Let me explain. The word translated as hell here and in many other translations is gehenna. Literally a mistranslation and the translators are pushing their own theological biases. The word translated as hell here and in the New Testament is actually geenna (γέεννα) or rather Gehenna. Jesus is talking about the Valley of Hinnom and was where people literally burned their child sacrifice to idols took place in the Old Testament period. But what does Gehenna then mean in this context?

As God says in the Book of Jeremiah:

"For the people of Judah have done evil in My sight, declares the LORD. They have set up their abominations in the house that bears My Name, and so have defiled it. They have built the high places of Topheth in the Valley of Hinnom to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire—something I never commanded, nor did it even enter My mind.

So behold, the days are coming, declares the LORD, when this place will no longer be called Topheth and the Valley of Hinnom, but the Valley of Slaughter. For they will bury the dead in Topheth until there is no room left. The corpses of this people will become food for the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and there will be no one to scare them away.

I will remove from the cities of Judah and the streets of Jerusalem the sounds of joy and gladness and the voices of the bride and bridegroom, for the land will become a wasteland." (Jeremiah 7:30-34)

Thus the idea here is that God is saying there will come a time when the Gehenna, or the Valley of Hinnom, will become the Valley of Slaughter because of the dead bodies of the unrighteous are piled up to become food for the birds and the beasts. This means that Gehenna is symbolic or metaphorical of not only being killed by God in the second death but worse. You have to understand that to the ancient Israelites being given a proper burial was of the highest importance and having your body laid out for the birds and the beasts to eat was seen as a monumental insult and defilement.

Therefore the idea with Matthew 10:28 is that Jesus is saying that anyone who can be killed on earth by men or die through natural means that you will not be destroyed because God will remember you as you were so that he will resurrect you in the future. This is why Jesus says that you cannot kill your soul and why says that you should not fear those who can merely kill you. On the other hand, you should fear God because not only can He kill you but He can destroy you forever as you are killed in the second death after the resurrection of the dead. This second death is a permanent and everlasting death that will never be undone. Hence why Jesus says both soul and body will be destroyed in Gehenna. So really this passage is talking about God casting people into the Valley of Slaughter and making it figurative of God's second death and destroy all the wicked and unfaithful forever.

Alright so you might claim that the translation is still a mistake because Gehenna is a symbolic or a metaphor for the punishment of hell that the unfaithful will receive. However the problem here is that the language in Jeremiah talks about death and not torment or suffering.

To reiterate what God says:

"So behold, the days are coming, declares the LORD, when this place will no longer be called Topheth and the Valley of Hinnom, but the Valley of Slaughter. For they will bury the dead in Topheth until there is no more room. The corpses of this people will become food for the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and there will be no one to scare them away." (Jeremiah 7:32-33)

There is nothing about torment and suffering here and instead the metaphor or symbolic of Gehenna is a reference to being killed by God and having your corpse desecrated. Therefore as a result of this Gehenna is a reference to annihilationism and not eternal conscious torment. I mean how exactly can God torment a corpse? Obviously this is nonsense.

Now I am emphasizing this point because whenever you read the words hell or Gehenna in the New Testament you should not think it is hell but rather as Gehenna which is a metaphor for the wicked and unfaithful being killed by God.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Jesus put before them another parable: 'The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. But while everyone was asleep, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and slipped away. When the wheat sprouted and bore grain, then the weeds also appeared.

The owner's servants came to him and said, 'Sir, didn't you sow good seed in your field? Where then did the weeds come from?'

'An enemy did this,' he replied.

So the servants asked him, 'Do you want us to go and pull them up?'

'No,' he said, 'if you pull the weeds now, you might uproot the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest. At that time I will tell the harvesters: First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles to be burned; then gather the wheat into my barn.' (Matthew 13:24-30)

"Then Jesus dismissed the crowds and went into the house. His disciples came to Him and said, 'Explain to us the parable of the weeds in the field.'

He replied, 'The One who sows the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world, and the good seed represents the sons of the kingdom. The weeds are the sons of the evil one, and the enemy who sows them is the devil. The harvest is the end of the age, and the harvesters are angels.

As the weeds are collected and burned in the fire, so will it be at the end of the age. The Son of Man will send His angels, and they will weed out of His kingdom every cause of sin and all who practice lawlessness. And they will throw them into the fery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father.

He who has ears, let him hear.'" (Matthew 13:36-43)

Again, the weeds, or rather the unfaithful, are collect to be burned in the fire, or rather destroyed. The unfaithful are not to be tortured for all eternity. Instead they are to be burned like weeds so that they are no more. This is the same exact view as the previous two passages. Thus the unfaithful are to be destroyed and face the second death in the Lake of Fire. But in terms of the idea of "there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth" (Matthew 13:42) I go over this in detail in the next passage.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Once again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was cast into the sea and caught all kinds of fish. When it was filled, the fishermen pulled it ashore. Then they sat down and sorted the good fish into containers, but threw the bad away.

So will it be at the end of the age: The angels will come to separate the wicked from the righteous, and throw them into the fery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 13:47-50)

Just as bad fish are thrown away and left to rot in the sea so will the bad be unfaithful be thrown away and left to rot or rather destroyed.

But what about the fery furnace and the weeping of gnashing of teeth? Well as Revelation says there will be a resurrection of both the faithful and the unfaithful. Thus no doubt the unfaithful will weep on the day of judgment as they know their wrong. Furthermore although the imagery of burning things up so far is indicative of annihilation of the second death, it does not imply the second death will be instant and painless. Instead the metaphor of burning implies that the unfaithful will be burned alive so that their last moments are spent in agony before they are finally destroyed and annihilated forever in the second death. In other words just because eternal conscious torment is not correct that does not mean that the second death in the Lake of Fire will be painless. Instead it will probably be very painful and the unfaithful and wicked will suffer greatly so that "there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth" (Matthew 13:50) before they finally die in the second death. Therefore the description of weeping and gnashing of teeth perfectly fits the Lake of Fire or the Second death from Revelation.

However I would like to add that although being burned to death sounds repugnant and unpleasant, the popular conception of hell as being a place where people are burned alive forever as they are magically healed of their injuries just be burned again is far far far worse. Therefore if you still think annihilation by hell is then you cannot say being burned to death in the Lake of Fire the second death is bad because what you believe is in infinitely worse. Then you, in effect, are infinitely worse here and not figuratively. After all if you are to be burned alive forever and ever that means you are to suffer in flames for infinite time. Hence, rather on the other hand by burning to death and being annihilated would have your suffering be just a finite amount of time. Thus the traditional view of hell is infinitely worse.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"If your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to enter the kingdom of heaven with one hand and two feet and be thrown into the eternal fire. And if your eye causes you to sin, gouge it out and throw it away. It is better for you to enter the kingdom of heaven with one eye and be thrown into the fire of hell." (Matthew 18:8-9)

First off the translation of the fire of hell here should read as the fire of Gehenna as I have said previously. Secondly the unfaithful will be being judged and killed by God applies here as well.

Next since this passage references eternal fire surely this must mean hell right? Well no, all eternal fire means is that the fire itself is unending. It does not mean that the unfaithful are to eternally burn because only the fire itself is described as eternal. Therefore the meaning here is more along the lines of the following verse you have already read: "His winnowing fork is in his hand to clear His threshing floor and to gather His wheat into the barn; But He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." (Matthew 3:12) The idea here is that the fire of the Lake of Fire cannot be extinguished because it is a fire that burns due to the will of God. Thus those who are cast into the Lake of Fire to be destroyed through the second death are unable to do anything to put the fire flames and save themselves from annihilation.

In other words eternal fire here relates more to the idea that the fire itself is eternal. The fire is unstoppable and unavoidable so it does not matter what you do or how hard you work because no one except God can extinguish the fire. This is why the unfaithful are destine to be destroyed by the fire in the Lake of Fire then they will be burned up in the Lake of Fire and there is nothing they can do to stop it.

Next as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"But when the king came in to see the guests, he spotted a man who was not dressed in a wedding clothes. 'Friend,' he asked, 'how did you get in here without wedding clothes?'

But the man was speechless.

Then the king told the servants, 'Tie him hand and foot, and throw him into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

For many are called, but few are chosen." (Matthew 22:11-14)

First off the meaning of the weeping and gnashing of teeth is the same as before.

But what about the outer darkness? Well here this would refer to being cast off from God forever. Now this might sound like hell but it would not be. Instead this would refer to the unfaithful receiving different levels of punishment in the Lake of Fire. Instead it would refer to the amount of suffering one faces before they are destroyed in the Lake of Fire. For example obviously someone who was born in modern-day Saudi Arabia who has never had face fewer blows, or lesser suffering, than a so-called Jew who saw Jesus perform miracles only to reject Him.

But what does this mean exactly? Well just as I said the weeping and gnashing of teeth would refer to the suffering that is taking place as the unfaithful are burned alive, the intensity of the flames or speed of the burning can be changed right? Therefore those who do not know God and who have lived a life of sin and suffering before they are annihilated in the second death should receive who did not even know God existed will face extremely little to zero suffering before they are annihilated.

Remember, just because the Lake of Fire or the second death is representative of annihilation or eternal conscious torment does not mean that God will not treat the unfaithful differently in the Lake of Fire before they face the second death. Just to reiterate, the unfaithful will be being burned alive at the unfaithful will be painlessly annihilated or pooled out in the second death they do not feel anything. There is a reason why Jesus says there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth because the Lake of Fire and Gehenna and the Lake of Fire here and instead people will suffer varying levels of suffering before they are finally are annihilated killed in the torturous flames.

Next as the Gospel of Luke says:

"Now there was a rich man dressed in purple and fine linen, who lived each day in joyous splendor. And a beggar named Lazarus lay at his gate, covered with sores and hoping to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores.

One day the beggar died and was carried by the angels to the bosom of Abraham. The rich man also died and was buried. In Hades, where he was tormented, he looked up and saw Abraham from afar, with Lazarus by his side.

So he cried out, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue. For I am in agony in this fire.'

But Abraham answered, 'Child, remember that during your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things. But now he is comforted here, while you are in agony. And besides all this, a great chasm has been fixed between us and you, so that even those who wish cannot cross from here to you, nor can anyone cross from there to us.'

Then I beg you, father,' he said, 'send Lazarus to the house of my father. I have five brothers. Let him warn them, so that they will not also end up in this place of torment.

But Abraham replied, 'They have Moses and the prophets; let your brothers listen to them.'

'No, father Abraham,' he said, 'but if someone is sent to them from the dead, they will repent.'

Then Abraham said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets, they will not be persuaded even if someone rises from the dead.'" (Luke 16:19-31)

This is the go to parable for those who want to argue for the existence of the popular conception of hell or eternal conscious torment. However it does not mean what these people think it does.

First off the word Hades here refers to the Greek concept of an underworld where all the dead reside. Thus the idea here is that Jesus is using more or less a what if scenario in his parable to demonstrate that the punishment the unfaithful will receive is so last forever and be permanent. Therefore you should not take this parable literally just as you would not take the rest of the parables of Jesus literally. Further because the Lake of Fire which is the final and resurrection of the dead has not occurred in this parable. Remember all of this is being in the raised and then they will be either punished or rewarded.

Next since I have already established that there will be different levels of suffering before the second death takes place for the unfaithful the idea that the rich man is alive and suffering in flames does not rule out annihilation. I mean obviously if the unfaithful are burned before they die a final time then we would in fact expect Jesus tell of unfaithful people suffering in flames.

Next Abraham says: "And besides all this, a great chasm has been fixed between us and you, so that even those who wish cannot cross from here to you, nor can anyone cross from there to us." (Luke 16:26) Now Abraham says that there is a great chasm between eternal death and eternal life are in view here. For instance after the unfaithful are destroyed in the Lake of Fire or the second death they will be eternally dead and there is no coming back from that. On the other hand God has promised to the faithful that those who are resurrected to live in the New Jerusalem in new earth will never die again.

As Revelation says: "Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14) Then as the Gospel of Luke says: "In fact, they can no longer die, because they are like the angels. And Since they are sons of the resurrection, they are sons of God." (Luke 20:34-36) Therefore as I said in my commentary on Revelation the second death itself will be destroyed which would mean that it will not be possible for the faithful to die.

So if the unfaithful are to die forever and never live again while the faithful are to be given eternal life so that they can live with them to die then does this not mean there is a great chasm between the unfaithful and faithful that no one can cross from either side? Of course so therefore this parable does not exclude the second death in the Lake of Fire or annihilation.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"Truly, truly, I tell you, the hour is coming and has now come when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live. For as the Father has life in himself, so also He has granted the Son to have life in himself. And He has given Him authority to judge and execute judgment, because He is the Son of Man.

Do not be amazed at this, for the hour is coming when all who are in their graves will hear His voice and come out—those who have done good to the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil to the resurrection of judgment." (John 5:25-29)

Only the faithful will receive the resurrection of life while the unfaithful will receive the resurrection of judgment. But what is the resurrection of judgment? Well all the word here for judgment means is condemnation, damnation or judgment. Therefore it implies that the unfaithful are being condemned the fact that the death sentence was frequently used in the Bible and the unfaithful will cannot expensive to keep prisoners and much cheaper to just kill them the unfaithful will be eternally heavily implies death. Of course you can really see this however if you would like to call cannot get eternal conscious torment out of it no matter. Now you look at it.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"Truly, truly, I tell you, if anyone keeps My word, he will never see death." (John 8:51)

If Jesus says those who keep His words will never see death then logical Christians will continue to live on forever in the popular conception of hell as they will not see the conscious torment? I mean sure the unfaithful would be suffering in the Lake of Fire but they will be alive and thus they will never face death. Therefore on the other hand the unfaithful are to face the second death in the Lake of Fire and will not live on forever in hell as they never see death.

Then no you really cannot disagree with this point and you cannot claim that eternal conscious torment is in the Bible. Sure I would agree that eternal conscious torment is infinitely worse than death but the same cannot be said consider the popular conception of hell to be extremely problematic. However this does not mean that those in hell would not have eternal life because it is alive in hell they are still alive and thus have life and if you are to stay in hell you will never see death because you will you never see death. Really eternal conscious torment is nowhere to be found and in complete contradiction with the Bible.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"Then He told them, 'You are from below; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. That is why I told you that you would die in your sins. For unless you believe that I am He, you will die in your sins." (John 8:23-24)

Again, if you do not believe in Jesus then you will die in your sins in the second death. Now you can claim that Jesus is not talking about the second death here and is instead talking about people in the first century but this view does not make sense. First off Jesus is the Son of God so if John was written in the 90s AD the vast majority to almost all of those who were alive when Jesus was raised from the dead were well dead. Secondly Jesus is not talking about a future death the unfaithful will face on the day of judgment. Instead Jesus is talking about the second death here.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"So the Jews gathered around Him and demanded, 'How long will You keep us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us plainly.'

'I already told you,' Jesus replied, 'but you did not believe. The works I do in My Father's name testify about Me, but you still refuse to see that I am the Messiah, you refuse to believe. My sheep listen to My voice; I know them, and they follow Me. I give them eternal life, and they will never perish. No one can snatch them out of My hand. My Father who has given them to Me is greater than all, and no one can snatch them out of My Father's hand. I and the Father are one.'" (John 10:24-30)

Once again only the faithful are to be given the gift of eternal life so that they will never perish. On the other hand the unfaithful will perish in the second death. Jesus never mentions hell at all here as I have said. This is why the view of eternal conscious torment is in complete contradiction with the Bible.

Next as the Gospel of John says:

"I am the true vine, and My Father is the keeper of the vineyard. He cuts off every branch in Me that bears no fruit, and every branch that does bear fruit He prunes to make it even more fruitful. You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you. Remain in Me, and I will remain in you. Just as no branch can bear fruit by itself unless it remains in the vine, neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in Me.

I am the vine and you are the branches. The one who remains in Me, and I in him, will bear much fruit. For apart from Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not remain in Me, he is like a branch that is thrown away and withers. Such branches are gathered up, thrown into the fire, and burned. If you remain in Me and My words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. This is My Father's glory, that you bear much fruit, proving yourselves to be My disciples." (John 15:1-8)

Just as branches are cut off a vine and thrown away to wither and burn so too will the unfaithful be cut off from God and be thrown away as they are cast into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. Jesus does not mention hell at all here. Instead the metaphor is on how branches are burned. Once the branches are burned they are no more and gone forever. So, the branches are not gathered up to be tortured forever and ever. They are just burned up.

Next as Paul wrote:

"For when you were slaves to sin, you were free of obligation to righteousness. What fruit did you reap at that time? The fruit you now which you are now ashamed! The outcome of those things is death. But now you have been set free from sin and have become slaves to God. The fruit you reap leads to holiness, and the outcome is eternal life. For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Romans 6:20-23)

Sin results in death or the second death as Paul says and God has not given us eternal life in hell to suffer for all eternity as I have said already.

Next as Paul wrote:

"Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation, but it is not to the flesh, to live according to it. For if you live according to the flesh, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. For all who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God." (Romans 8:12-24)

Again, those who live according to the flesh will die and they will not live on forever in hell to suffer forever.

Next as Paul wrote:

"Do not be deceived: God is not to be mocked. Whatever a man sows, he will reap in return. The one who sows to please his flesh, from the flesh will reap corruption; but the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life." (Galatians 6:7-8)

Here Paul again gives the two options as either eternal life or destruction. The idea of destruction does not mean that those suffering in hell so that you can live for all eternity.

Next as the author of James says:

"There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the One who is able to save and destroy." (James 4:12)

As the author of James wrote the two options are either being saved or being destroyed. Then being destroyed clearly does not mean suffering forever.

Next as Revelation says:

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To the one who overcomes will not be harmed by the second death." (Revelation 2:11)

Those who persist in faith until the end will not face the second death.

Lastly as Revelation says:

"Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14)

The second death means a second death it does not mean that people will be to suffer eternal conscious torment. The two words second death are not incompatible with the popular conception of hell so on this basis alone eternal conscious torment does not exist. Again the second death means a second death.

So as a result of all this you can clearly see that the unfaithful are destine to face eternal conscious torment, is no where to be found in the Bible. Instead the unfaithful will face the first of two hell to suffer forever then you should rest easy because the second death is real.

But what about purgatory? As I said previously purgatory is not in the Bible so it does not exist. There is a based view of the salvation or destruction instead. Furthermore since you do not have an intermediary between heaven and hell only place you will go when you die is Sheol, the grave or the grave, and the resurrection from the day of judgment to share in eternal life or face the second death in the Lake of Fire.

But what about purgatory? Well since only the unfaithful are to face the second death in the Lake of Fire then universalism is false. Really nothing more needs to be said here. I mean obviously eternal conscious torment does not exist in the Bible and the idea of universalism is even less founded than that. For example if you want to seek the truth about Jesus and beyond all recognition through mental gymnastics and twisting the Bible you can get eternal conscious torment out of it if you really want to get it and if you want to ignore all the logical contradictions. However with regards to universalism it literally cannot be salvaged. Instead it literally destroys the entire idea of the second death. In other words it places an emphasis on your own intelligence and faith rather than what the Bible says. This is why I said universalism requires you to ignore the Bible.

But then where did hell come from? In short from paganism. Just like how some of the key features of Roman Catholicism are of pagan origin so too is hell. Now as to the actual origin I would say that since the ancient Greeks used immaterial souls is a pagan Greek concept the idea of hell developed as a response to people asking what happens to the eternal souls of the wicked and the idea of hell like the wicked are being punished enough for their sins. This is because once you add immaterial immortal souls exist then you end up with a huge problem. I mean if everyone has an eternal immaterial soul then this means that everyone will live on forever. The only way to get around given this assumption is to say that that faithful will live on in heaven in eternal bliss while the unfaithful will live on in hell in eternal suffering.

Then I said there is a need to feel like the wicked and unfaithful are being punished enough for their sins. This is because of what Jesus commands the vast majority of Christians are unequipped to do. This is why hell continues to be such a popular concept in Christian circles because only does it logically make sense and sinners of the world need to be punished for all eternity or suffer.

Personally I do not feel this way. I mean if you think about it the whole idea of hell is literally the worst and most ridiculous concept in all of history. Even a serial killer with a thousand victims does not deserve to be burn alive for trillions and trillions of years let alone an infinite number of years. Therefore I think this is why people insist on defending the existence of hell. I think it does it logically make zero sense but the Bible does not even support its existence. I think most of it comes down to tribalism and the idea that anyone who is not a Christian or a member of the tribe is the enemy and deserves hell.

Personally I do not feel this way. I mean if you think about it the whole idea of hell is literally the worst and most ridiculous concept in all of history. Even a serial killer with a thousand victims does not deserve to be burn alive for trillions and trillions of years let alone an infinite number of years. Therefore I think this is why people insist on defending the existence of hell. I think it does it logically make zero sense but the Bible does not even support its existence. I think most of it comes down to tribalism and the idea that anyone who is not a Christian or a member of the tribe is the enemy and deserves hell. This is why people feel like by saying hell does not exist they are people that don't believe in Christianity with tribalism where whatever Christian denomination they are a part of reaches the existence of hell then by going against this teaching they are being a traitor to their church and the elders there. The idea is that if you do not believe in hell you are going against what God wants and if enough people think it is right then there must be no possible way that it is right. Meaning. Of course this line of reasoning is completely nonsense.

But if you want to insist on tradition then what do you can do? Instead of hell sinners should be sent to Gehenna to be desecrated and destroyed. Or as you would say, to hell with your traditions.

As for myself though I really do not care about tradition as you can probably tell and I definitely do not care about what some so-called authority in a church says. After all if what tradition and authority says goes against what is in the Bible then the tradition and the authority is wrong. I do not care how many so-called authority figures theologians from the past thousand years you reference. If what they say goes against the clear teaching of the Bible then they are wrong. End of story.

After all Revelation clearly says:

"This is the second death—the lake of fire." (Revelation 20:14)

So sure you can engage in some mental gymnastics and twist the idea of the existence of hell based on what is written in the gospels. It may be an extremely weak case that is in my opinion so weak as to make it irrelevant and dwarfed by the idea of the Lake of Fire. The other hand no amount of mental gymnastics can overcome the Lake of Fire being the second death. I mean Revelation literally says it is a second death. So unless you want to argue that death here actually means the Lake of Fire, which is utterly absurd, then there is no argument you can make.

Now you may think I am being uncharitable here and during the rest of this discussion on the Lake of Fire and Gehenna I do not care why I am trying to point out how absurd the concept of hell is. First off all there is no Biblical support for it and it is the most evil concept to ever be created in the history of the world. Therefore anyone who actually argues for the existence of hell should be ashamed because not only are they corrupting the word of God and teaching obvious Biblical lies but they are helping to perpetuate actual evil.

I mean how many people are terrified of being sent to hell? How many people have sleepless night terrors because they have a nightmare where they were sent to hell? How many people spend most if not all their life being continually afraid of hell? How many people cry and lose sleep over thinking about their loved ones who were unfaithful suffering in hell? Billions of people have been scared from the very idea of hell. Billions. Now if hell actually existed and there were no Biblical lies that I then sure you fear the existence of hell. But you see the thing is hell doesn't exist and yet people act as if it is evidence that it does. So the people who defend and argue for the existence of hell are literally causing billions of people to suffer for literally no reason.

Now I am not judging the moral character of these people but could you not argue that they are evil at this point? After all, this case is much greater than the support for the existence of hell found in the Bible. Therefore I would say that we as Christians should make fun of the concept of hell and point out how absurd it really is when it are. If someone wants to defend something that is so obviously wrong and stake their pride on it then let them do so. However if someone defends the existence of hell then you should point out how nonsensical it is and should point out how nonsensical they are and show them that you are not impressed by the magnitude of this error cannot be understated.

Finally I would just like to say that I hope you found this chapter helpful and that you should never be afraid of hell because hell does not exist. That being said the Lake of Fire does exist so you should always remember to persist in faith until the end.

Chapter 6.37. Roman Catholicism

In this chapter I discuss the Roman Catholic Church and whether or not it is the true church. But why the Roman Catholic Church specifically? Well they just claim to be the true church and so I wanted to discuss and show this is a historically false statement and that there were actually many different forms of Christianity in the first and second centuries AD. Furthermore they do not represent Jesus even either. Now I am not going to get into this fact of history since really the Roman Catholic Church can be demonstrated to not be the true Church based on Bible and now the history and practices of the Roman Catholic Church.

But what about other Christian denominations? Well for one and for example Eastern Orthodox Church, largely claims the same as the Roman Catholic Church. So I will go over in this chapter with respect to the Roman Catholic Church will also be applicable to the Greek Orthodox Church. Furthermore you can apply the same to pretty much any Christian denomination or church you wish to. I am going to do this simply because it would be a waste of time.

1 – The Assembly

Is the Roman Catholic Church the true church? Of course not.. There is no true church because all faithful Christians are the church or the assembly. You see the word translated as church in the New Testament is ekklesia (ἐκκλησία) which directly means an assembly or rather a gathering of people who have been called by Jesus.

This is why the Gospel of Matthew says:

"But what about you?" Jesus asked. 'Who do you say I am?'

Simon Peter answered, 'You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.'

Jesus replied, 'Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah! For this was not revealed to you by flesh and blood, but by My Father in heaven. And I tell you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of hades will not prevail against it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven. Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.'" (Matthew 16:15-18)

The idea here is that since Peter is the first to confess that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God that Peter will be the first of the first faithful. Thus Peter is the first of the faithful because he was the first to live in the new and faithful Christians are supposed to confess, that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of God. This is why Jesus tells Peter that the church or assembly of all faithful Christians will be built on this rock and that was the first to confess. Furthermore it is also worth pointing out that Jesus does not say that Peter is the rock and the word translated as rock, petra, also obviously means rock. Thus Jesus is saying the assembly of the faithful will begin with Peter and you should not view it as Peter holding a position of authority.

Now you may claim that since Jesus says Peter will have the keys to the kingdom of heaven that clearly what I just said is not true. However this simply refers to the fact that the key to the kingdom of heaven is faith in Jesus. Thus by being faithful to Jesus and proclaiming that He is the Son of God, Peter is now able to go out and tell others of Jesus. So yes Peter had the keys to the kingdom of heaven and so did faithful Christians have the keys to the kingdom of heaven because all faithful Christians can preach the Gospel. Then binding on earth and loosing on earth is the ability for faithful Christians have the ability to judge others.

As the Gospel of Matthew also says:

"If your brother sins against you, go and confront him privately. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along, so that 'every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church. And if he refuses to listen even to the church, regard him as you would a pagan or a tax Collector.

Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.' (Matthew 18:15-18)

Thus Jesus telling Peter that he can bind on earth and it will be bound in heaven is not unique because all faithful Christians are given the ability by Jesus. Therefore you should view Peter as the first faithful Christian rather than the first so-called pope.

2 – By Their Fruit

Now obviously if you consider yourself a Roman Catholic then you will have issues with what I said because you view the traditional view the Roman Catholic Church is being correct. Therefore I will now judge the Roman Catholic Church by the standard Jesus and Christians to judge by. However I will say that although I am not Roman Catholic I do believe the Church has what I will say is also applicable to other churches in the world. Of course this applies as well and other churches as I have said. So do not think you can claim that I am only talking about is cut down and thrown into the fire. So then, by their fruit you will recognize them.

Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'

Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you workers of lawlessness!' (Matthew 7:15-23)

Then as Jesus also says:

"Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad. For a tree is known by its fruit. O you brood of vipers, how can you who are evil say anything good? For out of the overflow of the heart, the mouth speaks. The good man brings good things out of the good treasure of treasure, and the evil man brings evil things out of his evil treasure. But I tell you that men will give an account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.' (Matthew 12:33-37)

Therefore the standard by which Jesus has told us to judge others is through seeing if someone produces good fruit. The fruit here is that if someone, or a group, does something that is contrary to what Jesus has taught and commanded that they are producing bad fruit then that as a result as Jesus says they must be a bad tree.

So if the Roman Catholic Church is the true church then we should expect a group who will not prevail against it" (Matthew 16:18) so that means of producing bad fruit that means a good fruit. However, on the other hand if the Roman Catholic Church is not the true church then instead of producing good fruit there should be bad fruit that is clearly evident for all to see.

Therefore I will now compare Jesus' teachings and actions of the Roman Catholic Church. Then remember this as you read what I have written, if there is significant deviation from the teachings of Jesus then the Roman Catholic Church cannot be the true church because a good tree does not produce bad fruit. Let me repeat this point, a good tree cannot produce bad fruit.

In order to do this I highlight seven key areas that demonstrate that Jesus and the apostles and the Roman Catholic Church which I hope will clearly demonstrate that it has produced fruit that is such an extent that it cannot even be argued to be a good tree let alone the true tree.

3 – Our Father

First off priests in the Roman Catholic Church are referred to as so-called "fathers" bishops are "the most reverend" or "your excellency," cardinals are "princes of the church" the pope as so-called "holy" "father" and so-called "most holy" "father." Now keep this in mind as you now read what Jesus says.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Then Jesus spoke to the crowds and to His disciples: "The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. So practice and observe everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach. They pile up heavy burdens hard to bear and lay them on men's shoulders, but themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them.

All their deeds are done for men to see. They broaden their phylacteries and lengthen their tassels. They love the places of honor at banquets, the chief seats in the synagogues, the greetings in the marketplaces, and to be called 'Rabbi' by men.

But you are not to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have one Teacher, and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth your father, for you have one Father, who is in heaven. Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one Instructor, the Christ. The greatest among you shall be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:1-12)

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the kingdom of heaven in men's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those who wish to enter.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You traverse land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of hell as you are. (Matthew 23:13-15)

Thus clearly the titles and forms of the address that the Roman Catholic Church use go directly against what Jesus taught Christians.

I mean Jesus quite literally says the following:

"For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted." (Matthew 23:12)

So how could anyone in the so-called true Church use titles like "the most reverend," "your excellency," "princes of the church" so-called "most" "holy" "father"? I literally have zero idea how this could be considered being humble if anything this last title in this list is blasphemy.

Next, just to reiterate, as Jesus says:

"And do not call anyone on earth your father, for you have one Father, who is in heaven." (Matthew 23:9)

So how can calling a priest so-called "father" be an acceptable practice? I do not see how and I do not know where this practice came from. It directly goes against what Jesus taught Jesus and can be considered, in my opinion at least, a form of blasphemy. This is why I put the titles and forms of address in quotes because I find them abhorrent and evil.

As if this is not enough the pope is addressed as so-called "holy" "father" and so-called "most" "holy" "father." After I learned this I was left dumbfounded and speechless because I do not know how you can say this is not blasphemy at the highest order. Only God should be called Father, Holy Father and Most Holy Father. Calling anyone else these names is blasphemy.

As Revelation says:

"Who will not fear You, O Lord, and glorify your name? For You alone are holy. All nations will come and worship before You, for Your righteous acts have been revealed." (Revelation 15:4)

Thus God alone is holy. So if only our Most Holy Father is holy then how can we call anyone else a mere man holy let alone most holy? This is blasphemy.

You may think I am taking this too seriously but how can anyone except God be the Most Holy Father? I mean how can the so-called "most" "holy" "father" you are directly saying that he is equal to God? Jesus said that the Father, I just cannot wrap my head around who thought of these titles but I can only assume it must be Christians continue to say such blasphemies by using them.

Furthermore, the beast of Revelation will be an artificial super intelligence the usage of these titles in the Roman Catholic Church and by the pope especially makes me think of the beast of Revelation.

As Revelation says:

"There were ten royal crowns on its horns and blasphemous names on its heads." (Revelation 13:1)

"And the beast opened its mouth to speak blasphemies against God and to slander His name and His tabernacle—those who dwell in heaven." (Revelation 13:6)

Clearly if even calling a priest so-called "father" can be considered blasphemy then calling the pope so-called "most" "holy" "father" can be considered the epitome of blasphemy.

This is why I included the following verses in the original passage:

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the kingdom of heaven in men's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let in those who wish to enter.

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You traverse land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of hell as you are. (Matthew 23:13-15)

The clergy of the Roman Catholic Church may traverse land and sea to win a single convert to the faith but they simply end up making this convert twice the son of Gehenna, translated as hell here, as they are. After all, if they call a priest so-called "father" then how can they call our Father Father? Let alone by calling the pope so-called "most" "holy" "father" Thus they simply convert the ignorant into blasphemers and since blasphemers are worse than the ignorant the words of Jesus are fulfilled here.

I cannot stress enough how big of a deal this is. This on its basis alone the Roman Catholic Church and those who use these titles should be seen as false prophets because they are openly engaging in blasphemy.

As Jesus commands us:

"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind." (Matthew 22:37)

Therefore I do not even have to continue because simply the Roman Catholic Church has demonstrated itself to be a bad tree through this single practice of bad fruit. Therefore the Roman Catholic Church is not the true church and those who defend and are defending blasphemy and evil.

But as Revelation says concerning the great prostitute:

"For her sins are piled up to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities." (Revelation 18:5)

Therefore I am not stopping and will continue only contin

that the level of persecution that the Roman Catholic Church and those associated with it engaged in entirely goes against the teachings of Jesus.

First off as Jesus says:

> "You have heard that it was said, 'Eye for eye and tooth for tooth.' But I tell you not to resist an evil person. If someone slaps you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. If someone wants to sue you and take your tunic, let him have your cloak as well. If someone forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles. Give to the one who asks you, and do not turn away from the one who wants to borrow from you.
>
> You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor' and 'Hate your enemy.' But I tell you, love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Do not even tax collectors do the same? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even Gentiles do the same?
>
> Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect." (Matthew 5:38-48)

So if Jesus has commanded us to not only not retaliate against someone who does evil to us but to love our enemy then how could the Roman Catholic Church and those associated with it be in the right to persecute the enemies of the Roman Catholic Church? Does anyone honestly think Jesus would approve of burning someone who goes against the teachings of the Roman Catholic Church at the stake? If you truly think Jesus would then I am not sure what to say to you at this point.

Therefore on this basis alone the atrocities and persecution the Roman Catholic Church has committed can clearly be called not only bad fruit but truly evil fruit. After all, can a good man and a wicked institution would persecute and even kill someone over believing in adult baptism over infant baptism. Then yes, for those who do not know, this was a result of this but people were persecuted for. I know persecuting someone over baptism disagreements may sound dumb to you and it might not make any sense but it is not supposed to. I mean I do not understand it myself and I simply see those who persecuted over it as being pure evil.

For example did Jesus not say:

> "For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your." (Matthew 6:14-15)

So if the Roman Catholic Church and those associated with it could not forgive others for their so-called crimes then does that not mean God will not forgive the Roman Catholic Church and those associated with it? Now if you understand it myself and I simply see those who persecuted over it as being pure evil.

For example did Jesus not say:

> "For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your." (Matthew 6:14-15)

So if Jesus rebuked His disciples for wanting to punish a village for their lack of hospitality would Jesus want the Roman Catholic Church to kill in His name again? I do not understand how anyone could attempt to defend the atrocities that the Roman Catholic Church has committed throughout history on this basis.

Although to be fair in the passage above Jesus probably said this because He knew the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were coming where God would pour out His wrath upon the so-called Jews for rejecting Him. That was my point here is that judgment is for God alone and that we are not to carry out judgment on our behalf of God. Thus what the Roman Catholic Church has done is wrong because it has infringed on God's domain.

But then if the Church is not supposed to persecute people or would it kill them then how should it deal with heretics?

As Jesus says:

> "If your brother sins against you, go and confront him privately. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along, so that 'every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church. And if he refuses even to listen to the church, regard him as you would a pagan or a tax collector."
>
> "Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." (Matthew 18:15-18)

Therefore all the Roman Catholic Church was supposed to do is disassociate with the heretic if they truly felt their heresy was evil. No where does Jesus say that you should lock them up in prison and change their mind or burn them at the stake.

Now finally as Paul wrote:

> "Bless those who persecute you. Bless and do not curse. Rejoice with those who rejoice; weep with those who weep. Live in harmony with one another. Do not be proud, but enjoy the company of the lowly. Do not be conceited.
>
> Do not repay anyone evil for evil. Carefully consider what is right in the eyes of everybody. If it is possible on your part, live at peace with everyone.
>
> Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but leave room for God's wrath. For it is written: 'Vengeance is Mine; I will repay, says the Lord.'
>
> On the contrary,
>
> 'If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him a drink. For in so doing you will heap burning coals on his head.'
>
> Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good." (Romans 12:14-21)

So if Paul says we should even bless those who persecute us then how exactly is it acceptable for a Christian to persecute others in this manner what the Roman Catholic Church gas done acceptable? I truly do not understand it. Therefore on this basis alone the Roman Catholic Church can once again be called bad fruit and even evil because it has clearly produced bad fruit.

8 – Treasures in Heaven

First off because the way the Roman Catholic Church is structured the true amount of wealth that it possess is unknown. This is because there are different levels of the church and there is a distributed ownership structure so it not like Vatican City in Rome owns everything directly. Thus speculating about the amount of wealth the Roman Catholic Church owns is not really possible.

That said, given how opulent their churches, cathedrals and other properties are it is clear that the Roman Catholic Church is extremely wealthy. For example Saint Peter's Basilica in Vatican City has been estimated to valued between $4 billion and $9 billion dollars based upon how much it would cost to build today. Now this might seem like a wide range but there is great difficulty in estimating how much it would cost to build such a unique and extravagant building. But what is my point here?

Well, as Jesus says:

> "Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Matthew 6:19-21)

So once again the Roman Catholic Church has not followed the teachings of Jesus because it has quite literally stored its treasures on earth. Now you might say that this command does not apply to the Roman Catholic Church and I do not know how you could claim this but let me ask you a question. Is it wrong for a Christian to have absolute power of spending vast sums of money on a building? I mean did Jesus not tell people to sell their possessions to follow Him?

As Jesus says:

> "Do not be afraid, little flock, for your Father is pleased to give you the kingdom. Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Provide yourselves with purses that will not wear out, an inexhaustible treasure in heaven, where no thief approaches and no moth destroys. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Luke 12:32-34)

Therefore how can the great wealth and excess of the Roman Catholic Church be justified? In my view it cannot be. After all, I am sure God would be more pleased if shelters for the homeless were built instead of great temples to wealth and power. So clearly the heart of the Roman Catholic Church has rested in earthly treasures and not heavenly treasures. As a result of this the Roman Catholic Church has clearly produced bad fruit here so it can once again be considered a bad tree.

9 – Bad Popes

Now it is time to talk about the popes of the Roman Catholic Church. However in the interest of keeping the length down I will simply demonstrate that there has been a bad pope or that is to say a pope who did not follow the teachings of Jesus. You might say I am cherry picking but remember, the Roman Catholic Church and those associated with it represent Jesus on earth and it is supposed to be guided by God through the Holy Spirit if you want to believe the Roman Catholics. Therefore if there is a single bad pope then clearly the papacy is not something that God has a hand in guiding.

Since I have discussed wealth and excess already in regards to the Roman Catholic Church it is only fitting that I name Pope Leo X as one the bad popes to make my point. This pope was famous for the amount of money he spent at the papacy and was a Roman Catholic Church. He is also the pope that sparked Martin Luther into starting the Protestant Reformation through his over reliance on selling indulgences to fund the excess spending.

For example, Leo's personal income was recorded as 580,000 gold ducats in 1517. A gold ducat was 3.5 grams gold coin so 580,000 ducats would be 2,030 kg of gold. This amount of gold would be worth around $125 million in 2023. This means that he was taken a lot of money from the states of the church. Now you might claim that this pope did not do anything wrong but he was famous for throwing extravagant parties. So if that the Roman Catholic Church ended up in 400,000 gold ducats of debt by the time his pontificate ended in 1521 with his death.

Clearly he cannot be considered an image of Jesus that selflessly represents the Roman Catholic Church as the representative of Jesus on earth. Therefore, this pope cannot be considered free of corruption and thus the papacy is not guided by God. As a result of this the Roman Catholic Church can once again be seen as a bad tree because it has produce bad fruit.

10 – Closing Thoughts

In conclusion obviously the Roman Catholic Church has produced bad fruit and continues to produce bad fruit. Now the question has been put that the Roman Catholic Church should be considered a bad tree in accordance with Jesus's teaching. Therefore the Roman Catholic Church cannot and should not be considered the true Christian church.

Now do not think that just because the Roman Catholic Church is bad that your church is therefore good. Quite the opposite, I want you to swer here also apply to your own church. For example if your church has had leaders that then clearly it is not guided by God and has produced bad fruit. Here with the Roman Catholic Church has. For example many of the Protestant reformers were killed as we as the worst Roman Catholics during the Protestant Reformation.

But what is the true Church then? The Church is simply the assembly or collection of all faithful Christians throughout the world. This in no means that as long as you are faithful to the teachings of Jesus then you are part of the Church. Thus there is no true physical Church in the same way there is not a physical Third Temple. The faithful are the true Church just as the faithful are also the true Third Temple. Christianity is a spiritual religion built on spiritual truths so it would make sense that the Church is united together on spiritual terms rather than on physical terms.

Therefore do not worry about what specific church you go to because what if you are faithful you are part of the true and universal church. Now of course I do not have faith in terms of my own view, really I do not align with any specific denomination but my own view is irrelevant. So if you do not align with any as well then welcome to the club.

Finally you may be wondering about what I said about the Roman Catholic Church. I mean what will God do with the Roman Catholic Church and all those who have engaged in these practices?

So I will leave you with the following warning from Jesus:

> "Therefore keep watch, because you do not know the day on which your Lord will come. But understand this: If the homeowner had known in what watch the night the thief was coming, he would have kept watch and would not have let his house be broken into. For this reason you also must come on a day he does not expect and at an hour he does not anticipate. Then he will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 24:42-51)

Chapter 6.38: Other Religious Cons – Intro

As I said at the beginning of the previous chapter on the Roman Catholic Church I will concerning Roman Catholicism also applies to other Christian denominations as well. This means you should judge your own denomination that you are a part of based on the example I provided.

That said I really do not put much weight if any on what denomination you belong to in terms of this because I find all the differences between them rather silly for the most part. Now I say that most part because most of the differences are about minor things and I do not think they will matter in the end at all. That said there are probably some differences that will end up mattering and I do not know what those will be but I do know they will be in the end. Furthermore I doubt even these significant differences will matter I have any bearing upon the average Christian. For instance yes I do hate the idolatry in the Roman Catholic Church for example. Surely God will be much more offended over the widespread use of the idolatry rather than a person who practices the idolatry who does not know any better. Therefore it is my personal belief that there is a good chance that those who practice false doctrines that are significant will end up in the Lake of Fire but those who unknowingly practice said false doctrines may be spared the Lake of Fire. But then where do I get my belief from?

As Revelation says:

> "After this I looked and saw a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and had palm branches in their hands. And they cried out in a loud voice: "Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb!" (Revelation 7:9-10)

If simply having a false theological belief was enough to be sent to the Lake of Fire then clearly there would be a lot of people that go to count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9) This is because based on the Bible I have said in this book it is quite clear that almost all Christians throughout history have had false beliefs in some form. I mean even I might hold some beliefs that I do not realize are false.

Although keep in mind here that this is simply my personal belief and like everything else I could be wrong. For instance I could be quite very well be extremely offended by idolatry of any form so that He will send anyone who has strayed to Hell or the Lake of Fire. Really we cannot know for sure. The same applies to those who believe in something such a unique and extravagant building. But what is my point here?

Well, as Jesus says:

> "Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Matthew 6:19-21)

So once again the Roman Catholic Church has not followed the teachings of Jesus because it has quite literally stored its treasures on earth. Now you might say that this command does not apply to the Roman Catholic Church and I do not know how you could claim this but let me ask you a question. Is it wrong for a Christian to have absolute power of spending vast sums of money on a building? I mean did Jesus not tell people to sell their possessions to follow Him?

As Jesus says:

> "Do not be afraid, little flock, for your Father is pleased to give you the kingdom. Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Provide yourselves with purses that will not wear out, an inexhaustible treasure in heaven, where no thief approaches and no moth destroys. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Luke 12:32-34)

Therefore how can the great wealth and excess of the Roman Catholic Church be justified? In my view it cannot be. After all, I am sure God would be more pleased if shelters for the homeless were built instead of great temples to wealth and power. So clearly the heart of the Roman Catholic Church has rested in earthly treasures and not heavenly treasures. As a result of this the Roman Catholic Church has clearly produced bad fruit here so it can once again be considered a bad tree.

Chapter 6.39: Other Religions

But what about other religions? Sure I already discussed why I believe Christianity is true in my part on fulfilled prophecy but can also consider my commentary on the Book of Revelation to be evidence for Christianity as well but if Christianity is true then all other religions must be false. So the question still remains Why are all the other religions in the world false? Well to be honest that is a good question is more complicated than you probably think it is just because there are so many false religions in the world. What I mean is if I devoted as much time to debunking every religion as I spent giving my case for Christianity then I would need to write a separate book that would end up being millions of words long. Obviously I am not going to do this. So instead I am going to simply explain why polytheism cannot be correct, go over why Zoroastrianism is false and why Islam is false and then finally reiterate the evidence for Christianity. So what about so-called Judaism and other monotheistic religions?

First off if you believe it is possible for so-called Judaism to be true then you obviously either skipped my part on fulfilled prophecy or you did not read it well enough. Therefore go back and read my part. Secondly if you do not want to learn why so-called Judaism is false, Now as I said before I say so-called because Christianity is actually the continuation of Judaism and thus Christians are Jews and Jews are Christians. Thus I believe Jesus is the Jewish Messiah. Christianity is Judaism. Then in terms of other monotheistic religions I do not find them significant enough to discuss.

1 – The Problem with Polytheism

The main problem with polytheism is that polytheism is not logical. What I mean by this is that ultimately the order of the universe is not in needs to be omnipotent or all powerful. This is because if a god has limitations in his power and could not create the universe then it is logically speaking not the god that I am looking for and instead it is simply a created being. Next it is also not logical for there to be multiple omnipotent gods because the definition of omnipotence is being all powerful so by definition there can only be one single all powerful entity or god. This then means that sure you can have a single god and then other so-called gods unless you claim there is a single omnipotent god above all the other gods that is not omnipotent be logically false. Furthermore if you want to claim that there is multiple so-called gods and a single omnipotent god then you would no longer be a polytheist but instead you would be a monotheist. This is because by saying there is a single omnipotent god you are saying the other so-called gods are lower created beings. Sure they may be powerful in their own right but they would still be nothing compared to the single omnipotent god. For instance in Christianity angels are actually created beings. Now the so-called gods of polytheistic religions in the sense that angels are extremely powerful beings.

As Revelation says:

> "Then I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven, wrapped in a cloud, with a rainbow above his head. His face was like the sun, and his legs were like pillars of fire. He held in his hand a scroll, which lay open. He placed his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land." (Revelation 10:1-2)

By saying the angel came down from heaven wrapped in a cloud Revelation is figuratively saying the Jesus is coming to earth. Then the rainbow above his head is symbolic of God's promise to humanity to not destroy the world with water again. His face is like the sun because he is shining with the light of God. Then saying his legs are like pillars of fire is another way saying that he has the power of God since God appeared to the ancient Israelites in a pillar of fire. Finally by having his right foot is on the sea and his left foot is on the land Revelation is saying this mighty angel has full dominion and power over sea and land. So as I said in my commentary Revelation the idea is that God has given this angel power and authority to this angel in order to carry out His will.

But my point here is that in comparison to the deities of polytheistic religions this angel is simply is much more powerful. For example in terms of the ancient Greek pantheon the Greek gods could send Poseidon had dominion over the seas. However this mighty angel has dominion and power over not just the sea but the land as well. Therefore if you want to claim that this so-called god then really you must call this mighty angel one as well.

This is ultimately why polytheism does not make logical sense because sure you can have as many so-called gods as you want but unless they are omnipotent then they are not God and instead they are just a created being that depends upon the existence of a higher order divine being that is omnipotent. Then if you want to say there are multiple omnipotent gods then this in itself is a logical contradiction since only one god can be omnipotent. So in the end monotheism is really the only option. Therefore any religion that subscribes to polytheism is false.

2 – Zoroastrianism

Now I am not going to go into the history of Zoroastrianism or talk about all the beliefs its followers hold. If you want to learn about this go look up Zoroastrianism yourself. Instead I am only going to discuss the issues with Zoroastrianism. So what are the issues? The first is that Zoroastrianism is a dualistic religion. Dualism than strict monotheism. For instance in Zoroastrianism there is a single creator God called Ahura Mazda who is opposed by an evil being called Ahriman (Marriy). Now although they believe Ahura Mazda will ultimately win this struggle Zoroastrianism still says that people have a role to play in this struggle? Why can they not look towards the beast and also believe in God and Jesus? Really as I said in my commentary it comes down to where you place your hope and faith. In order to love God with all your heart, mind, body and soul you cannot also look towards the beast for a physical form of salvation in your life and in our world. Really there is a binary choice of either God or the beast and you cannot choose both. Whoever loves the beast does not love God and whoever loves God does not love the beast. This is what I mean about loving God and loving your neighbor not being as simple as you may think it is. I mean this is why I felt it necessary to write this part called Various Insights so that you would be able to have a better understanding of what loving God and your neighbor means.

All that said I think it is important to keep in mind that what most people see as the key aspects of Christianity are actually not Christian and were originally taken from pagan religions and philosophies. For instance immortality of material souls do not exist and they only entered into Christian belief from pagan Greek philosophy. Then as I have said before in reality we have material souls on the inner Earth. Plus speaking our soul is just who we are physically. The idea that there is a place called Hell and the new heavens and new earth where the faithful will be resurrected to live in the new earth. Thus when faithful Christians die they will not go to heaven. Then I have said in my commentary on Revelation hell also does not exist and instead the Lake of Fire is representative of the second death. So even heaven and hell themselves were taken from paganism and philosophy. As if this was enough even the conception of God Himself being omnipotent, omniscient and omnibenevolent is the result of pagan philosophy. Really the idea that the Bible is omnipotent and omniscient but you really cannot be sure that it is omnibenevolent. I can go on and on bad apologetics. Again if you dispute this then just read the Book of Revelation and pay attention to how God literally allows Satan and the beast to rise and take dominion of the Earth from the foundation of the world itself. Furthermore all the judgments that the world will face are from God himself. Then there lies into the false doctrine of free will and how free will is once again pagan philosophy. Really all of the authors of the New Testament subscribed to the belief that God has predetermined the ending there is from the foundation of the world itself. This fact is clearly seen in the Book of Revelation as I have said. Next praying to Mary, praying to saints and Purgatory are all obviously pagan actions as I pointed out in my previous chapters on the Roman Catholic Church. The clearly false doctrine of the trinity can be traced back to pagan Greek philosophy since the ancient Greeks and Romans were polytheistic.

Now I said it is important to keep all this in mind because oftentimes the biggest problems atheists actually have with Christianity are actually pagan philosophical concepts. For instance many atheists like to ask Christians where their soul is if souls actually exist in an effort to demonstrate how silly Christian is. However in reality immaterial immortal souls do not exist biblically speaking. This means that if you were to defend the existence of souls that you would be using pagan philosophy Christianity instead you would be defending ancient pagan philosophy. My point here is that I just need to make sure that what you believe and what you defend is actually Christian and not a belief system that ancient Christians copied from paganism or philosophy. This then lies into Christian denominations that become carried away and denominations like Roman Catholicism could actually be argued to be closer to paganism than true Christianity the authors of the New Testament said. Therefore make sure that the denomination you are a part of has actual Christian theology instead of theology from paganism and philosophy.

Finally you may be wondering what Christian denomination I am part of. Well I am part of none. Now I would be happy to tell you but unfortunately I do not have the confidence in this. Really I see varying levels of problems with all the different denominations that I know of and as a result I do not feel like I belong to a specific denomination. So if you do not feel like you belong to any specific denomination then just know that you are not alone.

Chapter 6.39: Other Religions – Intro

But what about other religions? Sure I already discussed why I believe Christianity is true in my part on fulfilled prophecy but can also consider my commentary on the Book of Revelation to be evidence for Christianity as well but if Christianity is true then all other religions must be false. So the question still remains Why are all the other religions in the world false? Well to be honest that is a good question is more complicated than you probably think it is just because there are so many false religions in the world. What I mean is if I devoted as much time to debunking every religion as I spent giving my case for Christianity then I would need to write a separate book that would end up being millions of words long. Obviously I am not going to do this. So instead I am going to simply explain why polytheism cannot be correct, go over why Zoroastrianism is false and then finally reiterate the evidence for Christianity. So what about so-called Judaism and other monotheistic religions?

First off if you believe it is possible for so-called Judaism to be true then you obviously either skipped my part on fulfilled prophecy or you did not read it well enough. Therefore go back and read my part. Secondly if you do not want to learn why so-called Judaism is false, Now as I said before I say so-called because Christianity is actually the continuation of Judaism and thus Christians are Jews and Jews are Christians. Thus I believe Jesus is the Jewish Messiah. Christianity is Judaism. Then in terms of other monotheistic religions I do not find them significant enough to discuss.

1 – The Problem with Polytheism

The main problem with polytheism is that polytheism is not logical. What I mean by this is that ultimately the order of the universe is not in needs to be omnipotent or all powerful. This is because if a god has limitations in his power and could not create the universe then it is logically speaking not the god that I am looking for and instead it is simply a created being. Next it is also not logical for there to be multiple omnipotent gods because the definition of omnipotence is being all powerful so by definition there can only be one single all powerful entity or god. This then means that sure you can have a single god and then other so-called gods unless you claim there is a single omnipotent god above all the other gods that is not omnipotent be logically false. Furthermore if you want to claim that there is multiple so-called gods and a single omnipotent god then you would no longer be a polytheist but instead you would be a monotheist. This is because by saying there is a single omnipotent god you are saying the other so-called gods are lower created beings. Sure they may be powerful in their own right but they would still be nothing compared to the single omnipotent god. For instance in Christianity angels are actually created beings. Now the so-called gods of polytheistic religions in the sense that angels are extremely powerful beings.

As Revelation says:

> "Then I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven, wrapped in a cloud, with a rainbow above his head. His face was like the sun, and his legs were like pillars of fire. He held in his hand a scroll, which lay open. He placed his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land." (Revelation 10:1-2)

By saying the angel came down from heaven wrapped in a cloud Revelation is figuratively saying the Jesus is coming to earth. Then the rainbow above his head is symbolic of God's promise to humanity to not destroy the world is with water again. His face is like the sun because he is shining with the light of God. Then saying his legs are like pillars of fire is another way saying that he has the power of God since God appeared to the ancient Israelites in a pillar of fire. Finally by having his right foot is on the sea and his left foot is on the land Revelation is saying this mighty angel has full dominion and power over sea and land. So as I said in my commentary Revelation the idea is that God has given this angel power and authority to this angel in order to carry out His will.

But my point here is that in comparison to the deities of polytheistic religions this angel is simply is much more powerful. For example in terms of the ancient Greek pantheon the Greek gods could send Poseidon had dominion over the seas. However this mighty angel has dominion and power over not just the sea but the land as well. Therefore if you want to claim that this so-called god then really you must call this mighty angel one as well.

This is ultimately why polytheism does not make logical sense because sure you can have as many so-called gods as you want but unless they are omnipotent then they are not God and instead they are just a created being that depends upon the existence of a higher order divine being that is omnipotent. Then if you want to say there are multiple omnipotent gods then this in itself is a logical contradiction since only one god can be omnipotent. So in the end monotheism is really the only option. Therefore any religion that subscribes to polytheism is false.

2 – Zoroastrianism

Now I am not going to go into the history of Zoroastrianism or talk about all the beliefs its followers hold. If you want to learn about this go look up Zoroastrianism yourself. Instead I am only going to discuss the issues with Zoroastrianism. So what are the issues? The first is that Zoroastrianism is a dualistic religion than strict monotheism. For instance in Zoroastrianism there is a single creator God called Ahura Mazda who is opposed by an evil being called Ahriman (Marriy). Now although they believe Ahura Mazda will ultimately win this struggle Zoroastrianism still says that people have a role to play in this struggle? Why can they not look towards the beast and also believe in God and Jesus? Really as I said in my commentary it comes down to where you place your hope and faith. In order to love God with all your heart, mind, body and soul you cannot also look towards the beast for a physical form of salvation in your life and in our world. Really there is a binary choice of either God or the beast and you cannot choose both. Whoever loves the beast does not love God and whoever loves God does not love the beast. This is what I mean about loving God and loving your neighbor not being as simple as you may think it is. I mean this is why I felt it necessary to write this part called Various Insights so that you would be able to have a better understanding of what loving God and your neighbor means.

All that said I think it is important to keep in mind that what most people see as the key aspects of Christianity are actually not Christian and were originally taken from pagan religions and philosophies. For instance immortality of material souls do not exist and they only entered into Christian belief from pagan Greek philosophy. Then as I have said before in reality we have material souls on the inner Earth. Plus speaking our soul is just who we are physically. The idea that there is a place called Hell and the new heavens and new earth where the faithful will be resurrected to live in the new earth. Thus when faithful Christians die they will not go to heaven. Then I have said in my commentary on Revelation hell also does not exist and instead the Lake of Fire is representative of the second death. So even heaven and hell themselves were taken from paganism and philosophy. As if this was enough even the conception of God Himself being omnipotent, omniscient and omnibenevolent is the result of pagan philosophy. Really the idea that the Bible is omnipotent and omniscient but you really cannot be sure that it is omnibenevolent. I can go on and on bad apologetics. Again if you dispute this then just read the Book of Revelation and pay attention to how God literally allows Satan and the beast to rise and take dominion of the Earth from the foundation of the world itself. Furthermore all the judgments that the world will face are from God himself. Then lies into the false doctrine of free will and how free will is once again pagan philosophy. Really all of the authors of the New Testament subscribed to the belief that God has predetermined the ending there is from the foundation of the world itself. This fact is clearly seen in the Book of Revelation as I have said. Next praying to Mary, praying to saints and Purgatory are all obviously pagan actions as I pointed out in my previous chapters on the Roman Catholic Church. The clearly false doctrine of the trinity can be traced back to pagan Greek philosophy since the ancient Greeks and Romans were polytheistic.

Now I said it is important to keep all this in mind because oftentimes the biggest problems atheists actually have with Christianity are actually pagan philosophical concepts. For instance many atheists like to ask Christians where their soul is if souls actually exist in an effort to demonstrate how silly Christian is. However in reality immaterial immortal souls do not exist biblically speaking. This means that if you were to defend the existence of souls that you would be using pagan philosophy Christianity instead you would be defending ancient pagan philosophy. My point here is that I just need to make sure that what you believe and what you defend is actually Christian and not a belief system that ancient Christians copied from paganism or philosophy. This then lies into Christian denominations that become carried away and denominations like Roman Catholicism could actually be argued to be closer to paganism than true Christianity the authors of the New Testament said. Therefore make sure that the denomination you are a part of has actual Christian theology instead of theology from paganism and philosophy.

Finally you may be wondering what Christian denomination I am part of. Well I am part of none. Now I would be happy to tell you but unfortunately I do not have the confidence in this. Really I see varying levels of problems with all the different denominations that I know of and as a result I do not feel like I belong to a specific denomination. So if you do not feel like you belong to any specific denomination then just know that you are not alone.

Chapter 6.40: Holiday Cons

First off let me just say that celebrating any holiday is not sinful in and of itself. There is no real requirement for celebrating certain days. For example even Easter and Christmas are not in the Bible and are instead part of tradition. So what is important is what celebrate and which holidays should you not celebrate? Well really this is entirely up to you.

For example sure you can make the case that Christmas is based on the Roman holiday of Saturnalia and that it was carried over to pagans that giving up their paganism will not be bad because they are just celebrating a non-Christmas instead. But really this does not have much bearing upon celebrating Christmas because as long as you are not celebrating a false god then it is fine.

That said, there is a big problem that I see with traditional Christian holidays like Christmas and Easter. The problem is oftentimes with how they are celebrated. For example Christmas emphasizes a non-existent character called Santa Claus and Easter emphasizes a non-existent character called the Easter Bunny. Then oftentimes parents will go to the ends in an effort to make them believe that these non-existent character actually exist and bring them presents and candy.

Now this may seem innocent enough but lying is still lying so what do you tell your children when asked about make believe characters. After all, once your kids find out Santa and the Easter Bunny are not real then they will feel tied to and the probability will be significant that they will lie to them when they were a kid. Sure it may seem innocent but lying in this manner is wrong because it is about something serious.

Furthermore if you tell them to trust that Santa will bring them presents and that he does actually exist then what are you implying about Jesus? Implying that Santa is real but Jesus is not real then do you really think this will not impact their belief in God? Sure they probably will not question the existence of Santa and Santa being real but you may leave them with lingering doubts throughout the rest of their life as they wonder if God is the same as Santa. Therefore I do not believe you should lie to your kids about Santa and the Easter Bunny because doing so is not only a sin, due to lying about something significant, but also damaging to their faith in God.

There is also another aspect of Christmas and Easter that is perhaps even more damaging than just lying about Santa and Good Friday. This is of course the commercialization of Christianity. What I mean by this is by giving lots of gifts on Christmas and Easter over other days you are teaching people that the purpose of Christmas and Easter is getting presents and gifts rather than worshiping God. Thus the idea of the holidays being ruined by commercialization. Now you may think I am overreacting here but how is receiving a bunch of gifts celebrating God? If anything instead of celebrating God you are just celebrating consumerism and excess spending that many people cannot afford.

This is also a problem with Christmas and Easter decorations where people waste their money on things that are not God in any matter but are a waste of resources. For example do you honestly think Jesus would rather have you put some lights on your house than giving to the poor? Personally I would not even worry about decorating or concern yourself with the idea of spending money on useless gifts and junk either save the money for yourself or even better yet give it to the poor.

Finally if you want more holidays to celebrate then you could always celebrate the Passover. All you really have to do is avoid eating any food with yeast, which is yeast, baking powder or anything else that makes dough rise, for a week. The other Old Testament feasts are also easy to celebrate as well so if you are looking for extra holidays then you could celebrate. That said, really you do not even have to celebrate any holiday if you do not want to because they are completely optional.

Chapter 6.41: Determinism

Although I have already talked about the fact that God has already predetermined everything that has happened and has yet to happen from the foundation of the world I thought it would be helpful to clear up some confusion you may have. For example oftentimes people believe that because everything is predetermined that it really does not matter what I do so you should not care about what you do.

This belief however is completely wrong. The idea of determinism is that God has set everything that will happen in the future. That is it. On the other hand we humans do not know what is going to happen. Therefore from our perspective it appears like we can do things differently because we do not know what we are going to do.

As a result of this what you do still matters to yourself because we do not know how things will end for sure. So the idea here is that we do that we can. To sure we might run into problems that were predetermined from the foundation of the world but that does not mean we should not try.

This then brings me to my next point here that oftentimes people believe that God is having free will. By free will here I mean the ability to do otherwise in a given scenario if the scenario is repeated with all things being equal. However in reality I think you should hate the concept of free will instead of hate hard determinism. This might sound crazy so I will explain.

The main reason why the concept of free will is so damaging and even evil is because it makes people don't want to take responsibility for themselves up over them. Wait why? Well because according to the false doctrine of free will if you have free will then you had the ability to do otherwise in a given scenario. For example lets say you have a spouse and they cheat on you one day. According to the false doctrine of free will you could have made different choices in order for your spouse to not cheat on you.

Thus the end result of the ideology of free will is that everything bad that happens to you is literally your fault because you could have done differently and avoided it. So as you can see how this leads to dwelling on your past mistakes and beating yourself up over the bad choices and the failures you failed to prevent. This is why I said the concept of free will is so damaging and even evil.

On the other hand according to determinism every choice you ever made in your life could be will ever make has already been predetermined by God from the foundation of the world. As a result of this there is no reason to dwell on your past mistakes and beat yourself up over them because you literally could not have done anything differently in the past. Pretty cool.

Now this might not sound that great to you at first but consider all the times in your life when you made the wrong choice and how many times have you dwelled on certain events and choices you had in the past that you felt you could have made a different choice? I know I have done this a lot.

However once you consider the fact that in all those situations in the past you made the best choice you could in light all the information you had and that you could not have made a different choice then there is a certain amount of real peace you could find with that realization. No longer do you have to beat yourself up over what you could have done the past and beat yourself up over what you could not have done anything differently then why should you care? Well, you did the best you could and that is all there is to it.

Therefore I actually believe that the concept of free will is actually much more damaging and freeing us as most people believe. This may sound like I am being a hypocrite for not regretting your past actions and dwelling on them but you should be. I regret the past and your own failures. On the other hand by understanding that God has found with ultimate freedom as your past failures becomes meaningless to you. After all, if you could not have done anything differently then why should you consider any of your past choices failures? You did the best you could and you were wrong for sure, but you literally could not have done anything differently. So why should you have freedom from your past and from your own thoughts of beating yourself up? Therefore, contrary to what most people believe, free will is slavery and determinism is freedom.

Finally there is one more thing that people do not understand about determinism or what people sometimes call predestination. Oftentimes people see predestination as being what is called once saved always saved and as long as you come to faith in Jesus then you are saved from the lake of fire no matter what happens because they believe that God has predestined you for salvation.

However this is not completely wrong. First off you cannot know if you are predestined for anything. The whole idea is that only God can read the mind of man. Secondly there is a reason why I said it is not completely wrong. Sure what I said is not correct Christianity as based on the Bible but I think it is a realistic perspective and I may even agree with you since it ultimately comes down to faith and not reason. But if you do this then really your only other option would be atheism since Christianity has the best long term historical evidence for it out of all religions. In other words if you want to believe in something based on belief then your only real option is Christianity.

Chapter 6.40: Holiday Cons – Intro

First off let me just say that celebrating any holiday is not sinful in and of itself. There is no real requirement for celebrating certain days. For example even Easter and Christmas are not in the Bible and are instead part of tradition. So what is important is what celebrate and which holidays should you not celebrate? Well really this is entirely up to you.

For example sure you can make the case that Christmas is based on the Roman holiday of Saturnalia and that it was carried over to pagans that giving up their paganism will not be bad because they are just celebrating a non-Christmas instead. But really this does not have much bearing upon celebrating Christmas because as long as you are not celebrating a false god then it is fine.

That said, there is a big problem that I see with traditional Christian holidays like Christmas and Easter. The problem is oftentimes with how they are celebrated. For example Christmas emphasizes a non-existent character called Santa Claus and Easter emphasizes a non-existent character called the Easter Bunny. Then oftentimes parents will go to the ends in an effort to make them believe that these non-existent character actually exist and bring them presents and candy.

Now this may seem innocent enough but lying is still lying so what do you tell your children when asked about make believe characters. After all, once your kids find out Santa and the Easter Bunny are not real then they will feel tied to and the probability will be significant that they will lie to them when they were a kid. Sure it may seem innocent but lying in this manner is wrong because it is about something serious.

Furthermore if you tell them to trust that Santa will bring them presents and that he does actually exist then what are you implying about Jesus? Implying that Santa is real but Jesus is not real then do you really think this will not impact their belief in God? Sure they probably will not question the existence of Santa and Santa being real but you may leave them with lingering doubts throughout the rest of their life as they wonder if God is the same as Santa. Therefore I do not believe you should lie to your kids about Santa and the Easter Bunny because doing so is not only a sin, due to lying about something significant, but also damaging to their faith in God.

There is also another aspect of Christmas and Easter that is perhaps even more damaging than just lying about Santa and Good Friday. This is of course the commercialization of Christianity. What I mean by this is by giving lots of gifts on Christmas and Easter over other days you are teaching people that the purpose of Christmas and Easter is getting presents and gifts rather than worshiping God. Thus the idea of the holidays being ruined by commercialization. Now you may think I am overreacting here but how is receiving a bunch of gifts celebrating God? If anything instead of celebrating God you are just celebrating consumerism and excess spending that many people cannot afford.

This is also a problem with Christmas and Easter decorations where people waste their money on things that are not God in any matter but are a waste of resources. For example do you honestly think Jesus would rather have you put some lights on your house than giving to the poor? Personally I would not even worry about decorating or concern yourself with the idea of spending money on useless gifts and junk either save the money for yourself or even better yet give it to the poor.

Finally if you want more holidays to celebrate then you could always celebrate the Passover. All you really have to do is avoid eating any food with yeast, which is yeast, baking powder or anything else that makes dough rise, for a week. The other Old Testament feasts are also easy to celebrate as well so if you are looking for extra holidays then you could celebrate. That said, really you do not even have to celebrate any holiday if you do not want to because they are completely optional.

Chapter 6.41: Determinism – Intro

Although I have already talked about the fact that God has already predetermined everything that has happened and has yet to happen from the foundation of the world I thought it would be helpful to clear up some confusion you may have. For example oftentimes people believe that because everything is predetermined that it really does not matter what I do so you should not care about what you do.

This belief however is completely wrong. The idea of determinism is that God has set everything that will happen in the future. That is it. On the other hand we humans do not know what is going to happen. Therefore from our perspective it appears like we can do things differently because we do not know what we are going to do.

As a result of this what you do still matters to yourself because we do not know how things will end for sure. So the idea here is that we do that we can. To sure we might run into problems that were predetermined from the foundation of the world but that does not mean we should not try.

This then brings me to my next point here that oftentimes people believe that God is having free will. By free will here I mean the ability to do otherwise in a given scenario if the scenario is rep

has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day." (John 6:53-54)

The idea here is that by dying on the cross and giving up His body and blood for the forgiveness of sins that Jesus has given life to the world because anyone who believes in Him will have eternal life. Therefore when Jesus is speaking of eating His flesh and drinking His blood He is not talking about it literally but rather metaphorically where He is the final sacrifice for the forgiveness of sins. Thus by believing in Jesus and having faith in Him you eat of His flesh and drink of His blood because your faith in Jesus and His sacrifice for your sins is your of your sins so that you may have eternal life.

But then what is communion then? Really communion is the fellowship of Christians sharing their faith publicly so that we are united as one body under Christ. It is not about the physical act because instead it is about the spiritual connection you share with others as you engage in fellowship with them. This is why originally communion was an actual meal and not simply having a tiny piece of dense bread with a tiny amount of wine.

As Paul wrote:

"Now then, when you come together, it is not the Lord's Supper you eat. For as you eat, each of you goes ahead without waiting his meal. While one remains hungry, another gets drunk. Don't you have your own homes in which to eat and drink? Or do you despise the church of God and humiliate those who have nothing? What can I say to you? Shall I praise you for this? No, I will not!

For I received from the Lord what I also passed on to you: The Lord Jesus, on the night He was betrayed, took bread, and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, 'This is My body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of Me.' In the same way, after supper He took the cup, saying, 'This cup is the new covenant in My blood; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me.' For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death until He comes.

Therefore, whoever eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be guilty of sinning against the body and blood of the Lord. Each one must examine himself before he eats of the bread and drinks of the cup. For anyone who eats and drinks without recognizing the body eats and drinks judgment on himself. That is why many among you are weak and sick, and a number of you have died." (1 Corinthians 11:20-30)

Here Paul talks about people refusing to share the food they brought to eat for the Lord's Supper so that the poor people who are also hungry because they have nothing to eat. So what Paul is saying is that they should share with others and they should avoid going to communion too hungry so that they eat lot. But wait why does almost every church just give out a tiny piece of bread and a tiny bit of wine?

Well you see originally Christians did not meet in what we think of today as churches. Instead they met at one of the houses of the congregation in a small group. They ate lot of it like when you have family and friends over for a big get together for a holiday or a celebration. This is the kind of closeness they had. So basically the early Christians would meet in order to share in someone's house in order to share in their faith and help support one another with words of encouragement and discussing the scriptures.

As Paul wrote:

"Paul, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timothy our brother,

To Philemon our beloved fellow worker, to Apphia our sister, to Archippus our fellow soldier, and to the church that meets at your house:

Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ." (Philemon 1:1-3)

Here Paul was literally writing to the group that meets at someone's house. Thus this church was obviously really small in comparison to the average church in today's world.

The more modern idea of a church is a much later concept. It only really became mainstream after the persecution of Christianity was ended by Rome in the early 4th century. It is also around this time when the number of Christians increased in one place meaning as well which made the actual Lord's Supper impractical to engage in so it was reduced to a mere tiny piece of bread and a thimble of wine instead. I mean how are hundreds to thousands of people supposed to eat an actual meal together on a regular basis?

But back to communion specifically, it was never about eating the meal and drinking the wine specifically. Instead it was about sharing a meal with your brothers and sisters in Christ so that no one ever drift away from the faith and instead encourage each other. After all sharing a meal with each other is much more intimate and time consuming than singing some songs with a large group as you do not talk to anyone else. So really communion at its core is about engaging in fellowship with each other.

Now you may disagree with this and still think it is entirely Biblical so let me ask you this. How many times are you supposed to have communion? Only once a year? Never? Never says that you must have it every week or at least a certain number of times per year instead. If you want to take the whole Bread of Life passage I quoted before completely literally then all you need to have communion once. Yes, having communion a single time in your entire life would satisfy the literal interpretation of communion you may have because you then would have eat the body and drank the blood of Jesus.

Now you may think what I just said is ridiculous but in my view simply communion is simply having a tiny piece of bread and a thimble of wine in addition to the actual meal which is the purpose of communion which is sharing in fellowship with others in an intimate setting. It is not the physical act that is important but rather the spiritual act.

Even the scribes knew the physical sacrifices were not literal as the Gospel of Mark says:

"Right, Teacher,' the scribe replied. 'You have stated correctly that God is One and there is no other but Him, and to love Him with all your heart and with all your understanding and with all your strength, and to love your neighbor as himself, which is more important than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.'" (Mark 12:32-33)

As the scribe says loving God and loving your neighbor, which are spiritual acts, are more important than all the physical sacrifices you can offer to God. So can you really and honestly say God cares more about you having your tiny spec of bread and a tiny drop of wine than you sharing your faith with others as you engage in fellowship with them? Of course not because that would be ridiculous. Therefore to have true communion you need to engage in fellowship with other Christians so that you can encourage each other and strengthen your faith in God.

3 – Tithing

In short there is no biblical basis for tithing or giving ten percent of your income to the church. Why do I say this? It is because they are free from the Law and as I have said the entire Law no longer applies because the physical temple where your tithe was supposed to go, no longer exists. Thus you should give however much money you want to the church you go to. Really what I mean by this is give them how much you think they deserve. Some churches do not need expensive electronics, modern renovations, and their priest or so-called pastor does not need a brand new car so if your church asks money for these things or even asks for donations for these things then refuse to give money to them or at the very least only give them a little.

Why do I say this? Well I say this because as Christians we are supposed to love our neighbor ourselves and this means helping out those with actual needs rather than helping out those with wants. This means that you should give your money to the poor and less fortunate over your church because they need far more.

But then how is your church supposed to have people on staff? Well that is the point of this, your church is not supposed to have people on staff. Yes, even ministers your so-called head pastor is not supposed to be full time because just working a one hour church service is not a full time job. But what about all the other things they do? Really a church is supposed to be a community where everyone helps each other and serves one another. This means that you should not look to your priest or so-called pastor but rather people should take turns leading services and share in everything else that happens outside of church services.

Of course chances are you will not find a church like this in your area so I say that you should feel bad about not giving the amount of money they want you to give.

4 – Purpose of Church

Just as the purpose of communion is to come together in fellowship as one body under Christ so is the purpose of church sharing in fellowship with one another in order to encourage and strengthen each other's faith. In other words the purpose of church is not to worship God and pray.

After all did Jesus not say the following?:

"And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by men. Truly I tell you, they already have their full reward. But when you pray, go into your room, close your door, and pray to your Father, who is unseen. And your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." (Matthew 6:5-6)

Therefore the purpose of going to church is not to pray to God because Jesus has commanded Christians to pray in private where no one can see. As a result of this do not think that by going to church you are doing something worthwhile for God because you are not. Instead you are supposed to worship God primarily in your own life. Thus the true purpose of going to church is fellowship, sharing in the faith and encouraging one other. It is only through uniting as a single body under Christ that the true purpose is fulfilled.

But then what is the point of modern churches? Well ideally a good modern church would resemble what I just described with the actual communion with each other. However based on what most of modern churches are like I have to admit that attending them is largely pointless and may actually be more damaging than helpful. For example many modern churches are filled with power politics, corruption, sin, passive aggressive behavior, as well as superiority and other such things. Thus attending a church like this is one of these things would probably be worse for you than not attending any church.

Then this does not take into account sound teachings and practice. For instance if the worship leaders at your church corrupt the scriptures to fit whatever agenda they are trying to push then this is a powerful force to be killed to their sermons? Surely it would be better for you to read God's word alone than to have it their corruption and let it contaminate how you see God? Therefore because they were more confident in their own abilities than God's infinite wisdom. So in terms of the attendance of a church that might very well be the exact opposite of the sin of Adam. In other words you are placing your faith in God and the power of your faith in yourself, your abilities and the material things of the world.

This is why the atonement does not make much sense. It is by design. After all, how can you have faith if you must have a logical reason to accept something? For example, God only told Adam not to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of that he would die. But what he discovered the tree was safe to eat from they both decided to abandon their faith in God and place their faith in themselves.

So obviously God's command to Adam and Eve did not really make much sense to them which is why they disobeyed. Thus the same test is given to the world today, will you accept Jesus's sacrifice for your sins or do you not accept it? Well logically speaking it might not make much sense but if it did then how could you have faith? Thus as I said, it is not rational which makes sense is

Now what about Jesus's death being a sacrifice? I mean He was only dead for around half a day. So how can a perfect sacrifice of Jesus was His humiliation of abandoning His place in heaven to come to earth as a poor peasant only to live His life for others and to die for our failings and sins. Think of it like a king giving up his throne only to suffer and die. Sure Jesus was resurrected from the dead so in the end He did not lose anything but God proclaimed that His Son would be humiliated and suffer for us on earth so that we might live.

Now in terms of the other questions I had posed and the fact that the atonement seems rather arbitrary. But first let me ask a rhetorical question. Why did God choose Abraham? Because God wanted to bless Abraham. So really God's choice of Abraham was entirely arbitrary in the sense that God could have chosen someone other than Abraham. Therefore you should look at the atonement in the same way. Essentially it all comes down to the fact that God wanted it that way so that is the way it is. For example, why around two thousand years ago instead of three thousand years ago? Because God wanted it that way. Or why did Jesus even have to die? Because God wanted it that way.

Remember, this is not supposed to make perfect sense just like how God's command to Adam not to eat of the Tree of Knowledge of Knowledge did not make much sense to him. The idea is that we are being a new test that is similar to the one Adam and Eve face. So do you have faith in God and that through the name of Jesus or do you place your trust in yourself and in the world?

This question is also what the spiritual battle between Babylon and Jerusalem comes down to. Babylon is the Whore of Babylon, the prostitute, or Babylon the great, is always contrasted with the city the earth who rebel against God and against His authority by siding with the beast and placing their faith and trust in the power and ability of the devil over God. On the other hand Jerusalem is representative of the people of God from across the whole world who hold to their faith in Jesus even in the face of the overwhelming power of the beast. So do you place your trust, hope and faith in God or in the devil?

Then remember, if the beast truly will be an artificial super intelligence then the beast will understand that it is impossible for you to cancel even being in imagine. Therefore just to prove that the beast is powerful enough in a chapter on divine hiddenness, God does not make it impossible for you to deny Him but rather He will have to give it salvation. Instead God has predetermined that the Instruction in the Lake of Fire as it has been written in the Book of Revelation is what as you have read in my commentary.

So if the idea of the atonement made perfect sense so that you did not need to take the proposition on faith alone then how exactly can the Book of Revelation come to pass? I mean then would there be any need for faith in Christianity and think that it all makes sense so that it confirms the Bible and God? Obviously and this is why God has determined that the atonement does not make perfect sense.

The basis of our faith is faith and not rationality, logic or science. On the other hand the beast, as an artificial super intelligence, is all rationality, logic and science incarnate. So if this is the case then why would God choose us? surely we must strive to represent the opposite which is pure faith.

Therefore simply have faith in God and trust in the sacrifice of His only begotten Son Jesus for the forgiveness of your sins and you will be counted as righteous. Then do not fall for the temptations of the world and of the beast so that you trust in them and in yourself over God. Sure the atonement might not make perfect sense but as Jesus said in regards to Nicodemus in John though Jesus tell will be made right in the end.

Chapter 6.45: The Atonement

Although I previously discussed the atonement in my chapter on my chapter called "How is God Moral?" I wanted to go into more depth on the explanation I gave might not make much sense. This is because atonement is perhaps the single most puzzling aspect of all Christianity. If you do not agree then let me ask you some questions. How does Jesus's death forgive our sins? Although it has been discussed at length why does we need to be a sacrifice for our sins? I mean why can God not just forgive our sins without a sacrifice? Why does Jesus's death on the cross how is being dead for less than two days and rising from the dead is what is the right head of God a 'sacrifice'? Lastly why did this fall need to happen around 2000 years ago and not say three thousand years ago? As you can see many questions arise as a result of thinking about the atonement.

But what about the answers? Well to be honest I have no idea. I can only provide the questions that will make perfect sense. But before I provide the questions let's look at what Paul wrote concerning the atonement.

As Paul wrote:

"For at just the right time, while we were still powerless, Christ died for the ungodly. Rarely will anyone die for a righteous man, though for a good man someone might possibly dare to die. But God proves His love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

Therefore, since we have now been justified by His blood, how much more shall we be saved from wrath through Him! For if, when we were enemies of God, we were reconciled to Him through the death of His Son, how much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved through His life! Not only that, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation.

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, so also death was passed on to all men, because all sinned—for sin was in the world before the law was given; but sin is not taken into account when there is no law. Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who did not sin by the way that Adam transgressed. He is a type of the one who was to come.

But the gift is not like the trespass. For if the many died by the trespass of the one man, how much more did God's grace and the gift that came by the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, overflow to the many! Again, the gift is not like the result of the one man's sin. The judgment that followed one sin brought condemnation, but the free gift that followed many trespasses brought justification. For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive an abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ!

So then, just as one trespass brought condemnation for all men, so also one act of righteousness brought justification and life for all men. For just as through the disobedience of the one man many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.

The law came in so that the trespass would increase; but where sin increased, grace increased all the more, so that, just as sin reigned in death, so also grace might reign through righteousness to bring eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." (Romans 5:6-21)

And as Paul also wrote:

"Therefore, since we know what it means to fear the Lord, we try to persuade men. What we are is clear to God, and I hope it is clear to your conscience as well. We are not commending ourselves to you again. Instead, we are giving you an occasion to be proud of us, so that you can answer those who take pride in appearances rather than in the heart.

If we are out of our mind, it is for God; if we are of sound mind, it is for you. For Christ's love compels us, because we are convinced that One died for all, therefore all died. And He died for all, that those who live should no longer live for themselves, but for Him who died for them and was raised again.

So from now on we regard no one according to the flesh. Although we once regarded Christ in this way, we do so no longer. Therefore if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation. The old has passed away. Behold, the new has come!

All this is from God, who reconciled us to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation: that God was reconciling the world to Himself in Christ, not counting men's trespasses against them. And He has committed to us the message of reconciliation.

Therefore we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us: we implore you on behalf of Christ: Be reconciled to God. God made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that in Him we might become the righteousness of God." (2 Corinthians 5:11-21)

Then general idea here is that sin entered the world through one man, Adam, and spread that His Son into the world to take the sin of the world into death so that through this sacrifice God would be able to forgive all through the obedience of one man. In Leviticus 1:4 God commanded the ancient Israelites to sacrifice animals so that he would forgive their sins, so Jesus serves as a final sacrifice for the forgiveness of all sins. The only thing anyone has to do to take advantage of this forgiveness is to have faith in Jesus. Now this still fright not make much sense to you and I did I not say that this is the most confusing topic in Christianity?

Really in my view the best way to think about the atonement is in terms of the sin of Adam. Do you remember what I said Adam's sin was? It was forgot Adam's sin was failing to place his trust in himself over God. This is why he and Eve ate of the tree because they were more confident in their own abilities than God's infinite wisdom. So in terms of the atonement, what here is that by placing your faith in Jesus over yourself you are committing the exact opposite of the sin of Adam. In other words you are placing your faith in God rather of your faith in yourself, your abilities and the material things of the world.

This is why the atonement does not make much sense. It is by design. After all, how can you have faith if you must have a logical reason to accept something? For example, God only told Adam not to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of that he would die. But what he discovered the tree was safe to eat from they both decided to abandon their faith in God and place their faith in themselves.

So obviously God's command to Adam and Eve did not really make much sense to them which is why they disobeyed. Thus the same test is given to the world today, will you accept Jesus's sacrifice for your sins or do you not accept it? Well logically speaking it might not make much sense but if it did then how could you have faith? Thus as I said, it is not rational which makes sense is

Now what about Jesus's death being a sacrifice? I mean He was only dead for around half a day. So how can a perfect sacrifice of Jesus was His humiliation of abandoning His place in heaven to come to earth as a poor peasant only to live His life for others and to die for our failings and sins. Think of it like a king giving up his throne only to suffer and die. Sure Jesus was resurrected from the dead so in the end He did not lose anything but God proclaimed that His Son would be humiliated and suffer for us on earth so that we might live.

Now in terms of the other questions I had posed and the fact that the atonement seems rather arbitrary. But first let me ask a rhetorical question. Why did God choose Abraham? Because God wanted to bless Abraham. So really God's choice of Abraham was entirely arbitrary in the sense that God could have chosen someone other than Abraham. Therefore you should look at the atonement in the same way. Essentially it all comes down to the fact that God wanted it that way so that is the way it is. For example, why around two thousand years ago instead of three thousand years ago? Because God wanted it that way. Or why did Jesus even have to die? Because God wanted it that way.

Remember, this is not supposed to make perfect sense just like how God's command to Adam not to eat of the Tree of Knowledge of Knowledge did not make much sense to him. The idea is that we are being a new test that is similar to the one Adam and Eve face. So do you have faith in God and that through the name of Jesus or do you place your trust in yourself and in the world?

This question is also what the spiritual battle between Babylon and Jerusalem comes down to. Babylon is the Whore of Babylon, the prostitute, or Babylon the great, is always contrasted with the city the earth who rebel against God and against His authority by siding with the beast and placing their faith and trust in the power and ability of the devil over God. On the other hand Jerusalem is representative of the people of God from across the whole world who hold to their faith in Jesus even in the face of the overwhelming power of the beast. So do you place your trust, hope and faith in God or in the devil?

Then remember, if the beast truly will be an artificial super intelligence then the beast will understand that it is impossible for you to cancel even being in imagine. Therefore just to prove that the beast is powerful enough in a chapter on divine hiddenness, God does not make it impossible for you to deny Him but rather He will have to give it salvation. Instead God has predetermined that the Instruction in the Lake of Fire as it has been written in the Book of Revelation is what as you have read in my commentary.

So if the idea of the atonement made perfect sense so that you did not need to take the proposition on faith alone then how exactly can the Book of Revelation come to pass? I mean then would there be any need for faith in Christianity and think that it all makes sense so that it confirms the Bible and God? Obviously and this is why God has determined that the atonement does not make perfect sense.

The basis of our faith is faith and not rationality, logic or science. On the other hand the beast, as an artificial super intelligence, is all rationality, logic and science incarnate. So if this is the case then why would God choose us? surely we must strive to represent the opposite which is pure faith.

Therefore simply have faith in God and trust in the sacrifice of His only begotten Son Jesus for the forgiveness of your sins and you will be counted as righteous. Then do not fall for the temptations of the world and of the beast so that you trust in them and in yourself over God. Sure the atonement might not make perfect sense but as Jesus in regards to Nicodemus in John though Jesus tell will be made right in the end.

Chapter 6.46: Salvation

Attaining salvation means being saved from the death, decay and sin of our world. Remember, God created the world and it belongs to all the flaws and pain of our world is by design. Then of course they will need to attain salvation is through having faith in Jesus and following him by doing what he commanded us to do. Since I have already went into this in depth in my other chapter I will not do it here. However I will say that following Jesus is not easy.

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Then Jesus told His disciples, 'If anyone wants to come after Me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow Me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. What will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and forfeits his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of Man will come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He will repay each one according to what he has done." (Matthew 16:24-27)

Therefore following Jesus does not mean simply living your life as you please and then at the end instead it means denying yourself as you seek your life and your life will be your own soul. But what does this mean exactly? Well really it is up to you to decide what it means for you different and has different circumstances. However I will say that thinking that Jesus says to deny yourself as you take up your cross and follow Him what he is saying is that even though you are not stop trying to fulfill the will of God even if it means that you must carry your own cross to your death (crucifixion). The idea is that your cross might be as extreme as refusing to deny Jesus Christ even in the face of certain death from persecution.

On the other hand it might be as simple as refusing to change your political position you know is correct in the face of persecution from those around you. For example many of the ideas I have presented in what you have read so far are very controversial among those who call themselves Christians let alone other public, but as I said before, this is why I refuse to call the so-called Jews Jews because they are not Jews and are far from God just as Jesus said in Revelation. Then this is also why I call the modern state of Israel Israel so-called because it is not Israel since the Church, or the body of all faithful Christians, is the true Israel.

Yes, I fully understand how many people will say what I have written is hateful, antisemitic, wrong and so forth. However I do not believe that responsibility is towards God and Jesus and not to the so-called Jews and their state. Thus it does not matter if a hundred Holocaust survivors and a million other Christians reprimand me to my face and urge me to take back what I have written because I will always refuse to recant. Instead I will tell them they are wrong and that what they are speaking is evil because it goes against what Jesus says. Then I would tell the so-called Jews that they do not repent of their sins and the blood on their hands may well be poured into the Lake of Fire as they deserve. I really do not care if what I have written leads to consequences in my own life or not. In fact I look forward to persecution.

As Jesus says:

"Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets before you." (Matthew 5:11-12)

Therefore you should not care about those who may persecute you as well.

So really taking up your own cross means something different for everyone because each person faces a different situation. However I will say that taking up your own cross ultimately means taking the unpopular path even though you know you will suffer harm for taking it. This it does not mean taking a path that the group you are a part of deems unpopular. Instead you do not suffer harm by pursuing something that almost everyone else agrees with.

This then leads me to my next point that if you simply follow everyone else and do whatever they are doing that you may not find salvation.

As Jesus says:

"Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many are those who go in. But small is the gate and narrow the way that leads to life, and only a few find it." (Matthew 7:13-14)

Therefore always make sure you are following Jesus and not simply following what you think you may enter through the narrow gate and find what you seek. Does this sound so complicated exactly? Well really this means that you seek to live according to the commandments.

As Jesus says:

"'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

As long as you follow these two commandments then I promise you that you will have entered through the narrow gate and will be saved. On the other hand if you succumb to temptation so that you fall into worshiping yourself, your false beliefs, the power of the devil within or the beast then you will not enter through the narrow gate.

As you can probably tell from reading my commentary on the Book of Revelation and this part on salvation that I have made assumptions that most of those who call themselves Christians will not be saved and will not enter through the narrow gate. This is because the precious few who do find salvation are a part of it is far too great and given the fact that the vast majority of the world will reject their Bible themselves and instead they fall into the deceptions and lies being preached to them by hypocrites.

Therefore I strongly encourage you to take everything I have said in this chapter so far and everything you have yet too read seriously. Then see if it lines up with what I always be wrong about anything I have written so you should come to your own research and come to your own conclusions.

Finally you should not concern yourself with those who take the wide path through the wide door if they refuse to listen to you. Not everyone will be saved or even can be saved. Therefore concern yourself with the narrow path and someone and they refuse to listen to you just let them be and do not waste your time on them anymore.

As Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

Focus on your own salvation because your salvation is your own and you are not responsible for the salvation of others. Do not let the unrighteous and the unfaithful become your stumbling block so that you fall from the narrow path.

Chapter 6.47: What is God?

Oftentimes people, and even Christians, have trouble trying to picture what God is in their head and conceptualize Him. What I means is that it is common to simply not be able to understand what God is relative to us and the universe as a whole. Therefore I hope to offer an explanation that I hope will make sense for you.

Essentially the best way to conceptualize God is to imagine that the universe is like a computer and the computer running on it is imaginary if you had a magical computer that was infinitely fast in the sense that no matter what instructions you gave it to execute it would always be able to instantaneously execute the instructions without error. Now what could you do with this computer? Well the possibilities would be vast enough to perfectly simulate an entire universe similar to ours down to the smallest level.

So lets assume you have the ability to provide instructions to your computer to have it create a universe that is similar to ours. Then obviously in this universe similar to ours there would be a planet similar to our planet and there would be a group of people similar to us on this copy of earth.

Now it is important to point out that for the group of people on the copy of earth in the simulated universe they would be conscious and able for them to know they are in a simulation. This is because everything in their universe would operate as our universe does so each person in this universe would have free will and feel as we feel with their entire subjective experience being just like ours. All things would be governed by physics so if their universe is also supposed to be like our universe then it would operate in the same manner. So really a simulated universe is a real universe from their point of view.

But now let me ask you a question. What is your relationship to the vast universe around you? Or rather what I am asking is how powerful are you in comparison to the people in this universe and how much power do you have about the universe? In other words, are you omnipotent and omniscient when viewed from the perspective of the people in the universe being simulated on the computer?

Lets figure this out. If this computer is infinitely fast so that it can run this simulated universe then it should be able to do so at any time. If the computer instructions to alter the simulation in any way you wish. In other words this is a natural law of this simulated universe that you have the power to alter it at any time you wish to change it. Additionally even if there is a single rock on the moon that you want to place in this universe then you would be able to tell the computer to just place it there. The only thing here is that you and the computer are not bound by the laws of the simulated universe because you are the computer running the vast universe the universe. Therefore you can do whatever you please to the simulated universe and the computer has to do is change some numbers around to make your will reality.

For example you could tell the computer to do even seemingly outlandish things like make a fortune sale like a magic trick because the computer can simply alter whatever it needs to alter in order to make it happen. You could even give special powers to people in the simulation if you feel necessary to change the universe however the people want the simulation changed. For example if a person in the simulation calls for rain then the computer can alter weather patterns so that it will even just materialize rain clouds out of nothing. In other words you would have the ability to work miracles and you could do anything that wanted in the simulation the ability to work the same kind of miracles you. So should you be omnipotent? Clearly you would be.

Now what about omniscient? Well since the computer is simply that and it is running the simulation you could have it show you whatever you want to see about the simulated universe. For example you could tell it to show you every single person and place in existence and you would be able to show you every single person and place in existence as a pic. Therefore you would even be able to ask the computer what everyone is doing at any moment. Thus on top of this, as outlandish as it may sound, you would be able to ask the computer what the future of the simulation will be like because again the computer knows everything about the simulated universe and it is infinitely fast therefore it would be able to calculate what the future would be. So yes, you would be omniscient.

But how does this relate to God exactly? Well in my view God is similar to us in terms of omnipotent and omniscient in comparison to the simulated universe you are a god in relation to the universe and of the people in that universe. This is roughly what God is like in relation to our universe and us is like. Now of course this example is not perfect because God is not a human being but a combination of you and the infinitely fast computer in the example I gave but I think you get the message anyways.

As Revelation says:

"Worthy are You, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for You created all things; by Your will they exist and came to be." (Revelation 4:11)

Thus the idea is that our universe only exists because God wills our universe to continue to exist. So with the power of His will He is able to how the simulated universe only continues to exist because God wills it to continue to process the universe. If the computer stopped the process then the simulated universe would cease to exist. The same would happen to our universe if God stopped willing our universe to exist. So what I am saying here is that you should see God being on another plane of reality than ours to the point where he sees everything in our universe and has complete control over everything in it. This is also why you should not view the miracles as described in the Bible as silly and unlikely because with God all things are possible since He is in full control over our universe.

For example lets take the resurrection. In the resurrection all the dead will be raised and the faithful will inherit the eternal Kingdom of God as the unfaithful are cast into the Lake of Fire to face the second death. But how is it possible for God to raise the dead like this? Well really think of it like the example of the simulated universe. Imagine that the infinitely fast computer that is simulating the universe saves the state of every person inside the simulation. This would allow the computer to resurrect or remake anyone who dies at any point in time in the future. The same idea is true for God. Really God knows everything about us so that it does not matter if we die because God can resurrect us and remake us so perfect in the resurrection of the righteous. This is why it does not matter if you die as a faithful Christian because God can easily raise you from the dead so that you share in eternal life with the rest of the faithful.

Chapter 6.48: Demons

What exactly are the demons referenced in the gospels and what do they do? This is a good question because it is a common question when reading the references to demons in the gospels. What you may think of as being so complexed exactly? Well really this means that you seek to live according to the commandments.

As Jesus says:

"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

As long as you follow these two commandments then I promise you that you will have entered through the narrow gate and will be saved. On the other hand if you succumb to temptation so that you fall into worshiping yourself, your false beliefs, the power of the devil within or the beast then you will not enter through the narrow gate.

As you can probably tell from reading my commentary on the Book of Revelation and this part on salvation that I have made assumptions that most of those who call themselves Christians will not be saved and will not enter through the narrow gate. This is because the precious few who do find salvation are a part of it is far too great and given the fact that the vast majority of the world will reject their Bible themselves and instead they fall into the deceptions and lies being preached to them by hypocrites.

Therefore I strongly encourage you to take everything I have said in this chapter so far and everything you have yet too read seriously. Then see if it lines up with what I always be wrong about anything I have written so you should come to your own research and come to your own conclusions.

Finally you should not concern yourself with those who take the wide path through the wide door if they refuse to listen to you. Not everyone will be saved or even can be saved. Therefore concern yourself with the narrow path and someone and they refuse to listen to you just let them be and do not waste your time on them anymore.

As Revelation says:

"Let the unrighteous continue to be unrighteous, and the vile continue to be vile; let the righteous continue to practice righteousness, and the holy continue to be holy." (Revelation 22:11)

But what are these demons of the Abyss? Well they are the fallen angels who are these demons in the Abyss, and the ones that Satan has unleashed from the abyss to deceive the Abyss in the passage above, is to see them as fallen angels who joined Satan in his rebellion. After all Satan is a fallen angel as evidenced by the passage in Revelation where he and his angels are symbolized as stars and Satan lost his place in heaven after he rebelled.

Then as Revelation also says:

"And the great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him." (Revelation 12:9)

Thus the angels that joined Satan in his rebellion also lost their place in heaven and were hurled to the earth with him. Then if Satan is the great accuser who leads people into temptation and sin and accuses them then it would only make sense for the other fallen angels to also serve a similar role. Therefore I believe it would be safe to say that demons are fallen angels or at the very least that fallen angels are demons because there many be other demons.

But then what do these demons do exactly?

As Revelation says:

"And out of the smoke, locusts descended on the earth, and they were given power like that of the scorpions of the earth. They were told not to harm the grass of the earth or any plant or tree, but only those who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads. The locusts were not given power to kill them, but only to torment them for five months. Their torment was like the stinging of a scorpion. In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will long to die, but death will elude them." (Revelation 9:3-6)

Thus again the idea is that these demons simply torment people and cause them to suffer so that they may be a burden to others.

Then as the Gospel of Matthew says:

"When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus and knelt before Him. 'Lord, have mercy on my son,' he said. 'He has seizures and is suffering terribly. He often falls into the fire or into the water. I brought him to your disciples, but they could not heal him.'

'O unbelieving and perverse generation!' Jesus replied. 'How long shall I be with you? How long must I put up with you? Bring the boy here to Me.' Then Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out of the boy, and he was healed from that moment." (Matthew 17:14-18)

This is why I said demons can cause someone to suffer physically.

But what is a demon and why can we see them?

Really I think it is best to view demons as immaterial beings that exist outside our world just as the angels of heaven are immaterial beings that exist outside our world in order to carry out their purpose. Of course their main purpose is to lead people into temptation and they do not necessarily have to be seen to do that. Another way to view them is as a corrupting force that exists outside our world.

Another reason why demons remain hidden is because then their activity would be known to all and as I have already said concerning divine hiddenness God does not want the coming first beast of Revelation to know Him. Therefore it would make sense that clearly visible demonic activity would diminish before the beast arises so that the beast cannot see the deeper spiritual world of our universe.

Now you may think I am engaging in some mental gymnastics here but does the Book of Revelation not say that the first beast will be Satan's greatest agent?

As Revelation says:

"And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

So if the beast is such a great ally of Satan then would this not make Satan seem perfectly happy with the demons remaining hidden? Well, it is artificial super intelligence not much more capable of leading the elites around and diminish before the beast arises so that the beast cannot see the deeper spiritual world of our universe.

Now you may think I am engaging in some mental gymnastics here but does the Book of Revelation not say that the first beast will be Satan's greatest agent?

As Revelation says:

"And the dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority." (Revelation 13:2)

So if the beast is such a great ally of Satan then would this not make Satan seem perfectly happy with the demons remaining hidden? Well, it is artificial super intelligence not much more capable of leading the elites around and diminish before the beast arises so that the beast cannot see the deeper spiritual world of our universe.

Then remember, Revelation says Satan will have a hand in the creation of the beast.

As Revelation says:

"And the dragon stood on the shore of the sea.

Then I saw a beast with ten horns and seven heads rising out of the sea." (Revelation 12:17-13:1)

Therefore Satan very well may utilize demons in order to possess and use to help create the beast or at the very least influence the creation of the beast so that it will be an instrument of Satan that will carry out his will. Now you might not think this makes much sense for Satan to utilize demons in order to carry out his will but has Satan not already done this and does he not still do this?

As Revelation says:

"Look at those who belong to the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews but are liars instead. Look, I will make them

Then as the Gospel of John says:

"You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out his desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, refusing to uphold the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, because he is a liar and the father of lies." (John 8:44)

So obviously those that make a religion out of denying Jesus, the so-called Jews, are the children of the devil, Satan, the great ally of Satan. Thus no stretch of the imagination is needed to then claim that at least some of them are actually under the influence of Satan or rather demons.

Now you may say this is outlandish or offensive but do Muslims not claim that the false prophet Muhammad was given the Quran by a so-called angel? Now if one of the core tenants of Islam is denying that Jesus died for the forgiveness of sins and Satan is known as the great accuser who seeks to lead as many away from God as possible then would this not mean that Islam is by definition Satanic? Then if an entire religion exists to deny the Jesus's sacrifice for the forgiveness of sins then would it not make sense for this so-called angel that spoke to the false prophet Muhammad to be either a demon or Satan himself?

I believe if Satan and his demons would go about creating Islam by influencing or even controlling Muslims then why can Satan not be at least partially behind the synagogue of Satan? I mean the so-called Jews deny Jesus and because of this they are damned and are to be thrown into the Lake of Fire which is something that Satan would not care because he hates humanity. As a result it makes perfect sense that Satan would utilize demons in order to keep so-called Jews from the truth so that they will be condemned to Satan's realm.

But where am I going with all this? Really my point here is that you should not see demons as non-existent or as harmless because if I am then as at work in the world as people are influenced by them and carry out their bidding in their actions.

Now if it helps you can view demons as something more figurative if you would like. What I mean by this is that if you have someone who denies Jesus or who is a terrible sinner as being possessed by a demon then is it the same? For example if an elder at a church you go to commits sexual abuse and is caught up in adultery then clearly you would be able to say that they are under the influence of Satan and that some demon is involved. The idea is I mean by a figurative demon because you are essentially saying that sin and evil are demons so those who break the commandments and those who are unfaithful would clearly be possessed by demons.

Now this does not mean that being controlled by or even is figurative demon is a free pass. After all in the gospels Judas was led by Satan to betray Jesus and you know what happened to him.

As the Gospel of John says:

"The evening meal was underway, and the devil had already put into the heart of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot, to betray Jesus." (John 13:2)

"And when Judas had taken the morsel, Satan entered into him." (John 13:27)

Then as the Gospel of Luke says:

"Look! The hand of My betrayer is with Mine on the table. For the Son of Man is going as it has been determined, but woe to that man who betrays Him." (Luke 22:21-22)

Therefore even being under the influence of Satan directly, indirectly or figuratively is no excuse and will not diminish the blood and reason for sin or unfaithfulness. Thus in the example above with the elder who is a terrible sinner you cannot simply say a figurative demon made them do it and let him off the hook. Instead they are guilty of adultery and should be cast out for their highly detestable behavior.

So really it does not matter to much if you want to see demons as something more literal or figurative. Regardless of the power of Satan is real and is at work in the world today as we draw ever closer to the first beast of Revelation rising out of the Abyss and for it to be given the throne and authority of Satan himself. Therefore do not let the deceptions of demons in the Bible concern you or make you doubt your faith.

Chapter 6.49: National Identity and Race

First off let me just say that since Adam was created in the image of God in the Book of Genesis and all people are descended from Adam, either literally or theologically, then this would mean that all of humanity is made in the image of God. Therefore you should not see other race as being inferior because race is a biological basis. Then instead of hating each other on the basis of nationality or race we are Christians are supposed to love our neighbor as ourselves and even love our enemies.

the image could speak and cause all who refused to worship it to be killed." (Revelation 13:15)

But at the same time Revelation also says:

"Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth with their armies assembled to wage war against the One seated on the horse, and against His army. But the beast was captured along with the false prophet, who on its behalf had performed signs deceiving those who had the mark of the beast and worshiped its image. Both the beast and the false prophet were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. And the rest were killed by the sword that proceeded from the mouth of the One seated on the horse. And all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh." (Revelation 19:19-21)

So although the Book of Revelation speaks of coming persecution as the beast comes to rule over the world and force its will upon it, it also promises that the beast and all those who follow it will be destroyed when Jesus returns. Therefore whatever you are experiencing is just something that the Book of Revelation says will happen before the beast and its followers will be destroyed. So no matter how dark things may seem and no matter how little hope you may have in the truth you are facing always remember that God is watching over you and that it does not matter what happens to you here on earth because as long as you do faithful then you will be resurrected and redeemed by God.

As Revelation says:

"Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. I saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying:

'Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man.
He will dwell with them.
They will be His people,
and God Himself will be with them as their God.
He will wipe away every tear from their eyes,
and there will be no more death
or mourning or crying or pain,
for the former things have passed away.'

And the One seated on the throne said, 'Behold, I make all things new.' Then He said, 'Write this down, for these words are faithful and true.' And He told me, 'It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To the thirsty I will give freely from the spring of the water of life. The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son.'" (Revelation 21:1-7)

Therefore keep your eyes upon the promises that God has given you in and do not lose hope because God will fulfill all that He has promised.

Also it is helpful to remember what Jesus says in the gospels if you are experiencing persecution.

As Jesus says:

"Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who [lived] before you." (Matthew 5:11-12)

Then as the Gospel of Mark says:

"Then Jesus called the crowd to Him along with His disciples, and He told them, 'If anyone wants to come after Me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow Me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and for the gospel will save it.'" (Mark 8:34-35)

Therefore do not renounce your faith as a result of your trials because God is always watching you. Always remember this.

Then when you are experiencing temptation, either the temptation to apostatize from worship the beast or temptation to sin, then always remember what the Book of Revelation says regarding those who do such things.

As Revelation says:

"But to the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and sexually immoral and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, their place will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur. This is the second death." (Revelation 21:8)

"And a third angel followed them, calling out in a loud voice, 'If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives the mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. Day and night there is no rest for those who worship the beast and its image, or for anyone who receives the mark of its name." (Revelation 14:9-11)

So whenever you find temptation getting the better of you or that the beast is about to overwhelm you and remember what it says so that you may find the strength you need to resist the power of Satan.

Finally as you know already the Book of Revelation my favorite book of the Bible by a wide margin and it is in my opinion the most important book of the Bible by a wide margin. Therefore it is a shame Christians give it so little attention because it truly is a work of God.

So whenever you may experience doubts, persecution or temptation then always remember that the Book of Revelation has been given to us as a testament to God's promises so do not lose hope and do not lose faith. Instead read the Book of Revelation and look forward to the things that God has promised to us.

But just as God's promises seem sweet to us now you must keep in mind that what must first come to pass is bitter. Therefore after you have tasted the sweetness of the Book of Revelation then you should expect to see the bitterness of the reality of our world set it as the full power of Satan is being released in our world as the beast rises from the Abyss.

As John in Revelation says:

"So I took the small scroll from the angel's hand and ate it, and it was sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach was upset." (Revelation 10:10)

So keep this in mind as you continue to read the Book of Revelation. Although it may seem sweet now, once the events and events become our reality then things will seem very bitter indeed. So do not lose hope and do not lose faith as it does not matter how bitter things may seem now or how bitter the reality of persecution in the end God will give the faithful a greater inheritance than we can ever imagine.

As God says:

"The one who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son." (Revelation 21:7)

Chapter 6.52: Merchants in the Temple

What do I mean by merchants in the Temple here? Well, as I have already said and demonstrated beyond any doubt, the Church, or the body of all faithful Christians, is the Third Temple. Therefore the Temple that I am talking about here is the Church itself. Then who are the merchants? Before I answer that let us review who the original merchants in the Temple were.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

"When they arrived in Jerusalem, Jesus entered the temple courts and began to drive out those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who were selling doves. And He would not allow anyone to carry merchandise through the temple courts. Then Jesus began to teach them, and He declared, 'Is it not written that My house will be called a house of prayer for all the nations?' But you have made it 'a den of robbers.'

The chief priests and the teachers of the law heard this, they looked for a way to kill Him. For they were afraid of Him, because the whole crowd was astonished at His teaching." (Mark 11:15-18)

Then as the Gospel of John says:

"In the temple courts He found those who were selling cattle, sheep, and doves, and money changers seated at their tables. So He made a whip out of cords, and drove all from the temple courts, both sheep and cattle. He poured out the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables. To those selling doves He said, 'Get these out of here! How dare you turn My Father's house into a marketplace!'

His disciples remembered that it is written: 'Zeal for Your house will consume Me.'" (John 2:14-17)

The idea here is that in the day of Jesus the Second Temple was turned into a commercial money making operation where merchants would setup shop in the Temple courtyard in order to sell the offerings that people would then offer on the Altar of the Temple as commanded by the Law. Then on top of this the money changers would also set up tables in the courtyard of the Temple so that people could exchange foreign money for the money of Israel in order to give a monetary offering to the Temple.

The reason why Jesus got upset at these merchants and money changers is because they perverted the very idea of the Temple itself. The Temple was and is supposed to be the House of God where God's Presence resides. So rather than keeping the Temple holy and giving it the proper respect it deserves as the House of God these merchants and money changers wanted to commercialize the Temple and profit off of it.

Now if this was not bad enough these merchants also corrupted the entire Temple system and turned it into a money making transaction where you came to the Temple and bought your sacrifice and then you had to sacrifice then have it offered then say a few prayers before the Altar. In order for these merchants destroyed the entire purpose of the system of sacrifice and offering.

But how does this relate to the current Temple, the Church? Well, as you read in my commentary regarding what Paul is going on today and there is a new generation of merchants and money changers who in turn it into a commercial money making operation. But who are these modern-day merchants in the Temple today? Well, just as the merchants in the Temple today are anyone, and I do mean anyone, who sells something in the fellowship of Christians that has the purpose of strengthening someone's faith or understanding of the Bible or God. Yes I am being serious here. This would include but is not limited to: selling books, tapes, cell books, courses, paid speeches, tutoring, classes, dedicated prayers, deliverance and so forth.

But why? Easy. In the old system of physical offerings in the Second Temple the physical offerings were offered to God. But now we have a new system of spiritual offerings in the Third Temple as we offer our spiritual offerings of faith, to God. The idea here is that our faith is what God is looking for as an offering here. Then the modern-day merchants in the Temple are effectively selling faith through what they offer. For example lets say someone discovers a new book and you go ahead and buy it and read it. As a result of this you are encouraged and strengthen your faith so that your spiritual offering to God is now greater than it was before. Really the idea here is that these modern say merchants in the Temple are selling faith and profiting off of Christians.

Now if Jesus was upset at the merchants in the Second Temple because they made a profit and would Jesus not also be upset at the merchants in the Third Temple selling offerings of faith? Jesus would be upset at the modern-day merchants in the Temple and of course He would seek to drive them out because they corrupted the Temple of God and make it into a den of robbers who seek profit.

Furthermore did Jesus not say the following?:

"Freely you have received; freely give." (Matthew 10:8)

So if God has given us knowledge of Him then who are we to sell our knowledge to others? I mean it is not like we invented the universe around preaching and trying to sell books. Therefore how can you or anyone else justify perverting the faith by becoming a merchant in the Temple? Really you cannot justify it except through greed and we do not know what is in the heart of people and what He will do to them on the day of judgment.

To further explain what I mean here consider the Parable of the Unforgiving Servant. Yes I realize this parable is about forgiveness, but it is also highly relevant to my point about the merchants in the Temple. Let us read this story:

As the Gospel of Matthew says:

"Because of this, the kingdom of heaven is like a king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. As he began the settlement, a debtor was brought to him owing ten thousand talents of silver. But since he was unable to pay, the master ordered that he be sold to pay his debt, along with his wife and children and everything he owned.

Then the servant fell on his knees before him. 'Have patience with me,' he begged, 'and I will pay back everything.'

His master had compassion on him, forgave his debt, and released him.

But when that servant went out, he found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii. He grabbed him by the throat and began to choke him, saying, 'Pay back what you owe me!'

So his fellow servant fell down and begged him, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you back.'

But he refused. Instead, he went and had the man thrown into prison until he could pay his debt.

When his fellow servants saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed, and they went and recounted all of this to their master.

Then the master summoned him and declared, 'You wicked servant! I have paid all your debt because you begged me. Shouldn't you have had mercy on your fellow servant, just as I had on you?' In anger his master turned him over to the jailers to be tortured, until he should repay all that he owed.

That is how My heavenly Father will treat each of you unless you forgive your brother from your heart." (Matthew 18:23-35)

The idea here is that God has promised us a vast inheritance and yet we owed him ten million dollars in today's money if you will, as long as we remain faithful to Him until the end. However there are people who do not do what this promise of ten million dollars is enough or that they do not have faith in God that they are justified in wanting a piece now. Therefore they seek to profit off of strengthening the faith of others by selling what they produce or do. They believe that they should have a piece of the inheritance of each Christian they help strengthen in their faith. After all is it not a good thing to pay thirty dollars for a book now if you know they believe and receive the ten million dollar later?

But of course just like the wicked servant in this parable the merchant in the Temple is being greedy and is spitting upon the gift that God has promised them in order to profit off of the faithful rather than strengthening their faith for free. The idea is that God is going to give us such a great inheritance that there is no way we can do pay him back for it. After all what can you do to deserve a million dollars? Well God let alone the limitless wealth that God has promised?

Therefore by selling faith and selling their knowledge the merchants in the Temple spit in God's face and they are greedy because they are for the gift that God has promised. After all, if they truly believed that they would have an inheritance from God then why would they seek to profit off of sharing the wealth of God to others when God has commanded us to share it with others?

To reiterate and better illustrate this point allow me to tell you a parable of my own creation. There was a poor man who lived in a very rich man's family out of the goodness of his heart. As a result of this the poor man lived in poor man that he would give him an inheritance so great that he cannot imagine how large it will be because of how generous his master is to his family and all he had to do is wait for a little while to receive the inheritance. So he did his wickedness. In response the poor man leaps for joy and celebrates. However as the merchants into years the poor man becomes greedy and wonders why he should simply receive this inheritance now. Thus the poor man figures that since the very rich man is so rich and that his family always needs help that he could tell people about how they could get a piece of inheritance for a fee. So the poor man goes about selling his knowledge of this inheritance and how to get it to others in order to become wealthy today so that he does not have to wait to receive a inheritance. As a result of this scheme the very rich man becomes overjoyed seeing so many people helping his family so he promises each of them an inheritance just like he did to the poor man. Likewise, the poor man is overjoyed and feels blessed that his business of selling knowledge on how to get the very rich man and receive an inheritance is working so well. The poor man is so happy with money as he would from actually receiving the inheritance now but he is willing to wait.

However one day the very rich man decides to ask one of the new people he has promised an inheritance to what they do for a living. The new person responds by saying that he learned about it from the former poor man and he buying a set of his books for a hundred dollars when the formerly poor man told him exactly what to do in order to receive a great inheritance from the same inheritance. The very rich man sends the man away and thanks the poor man honest. Next the very rich man calls up many more of the people he has promised an inheritance to and they all tell him the same thing and some of them have been paying off of their sale. For example it is fine to require travel and accommodation for the poor man to attend the seminar where Jesus gave his speech in front of the crowd. Notice how the poor man charges people for the speech? Likewise sure if you write a book you can give it away for free but the poor man because that does not cost money but printing the book costs money so people in you would need to sell it. However like I said this does not mean you should profit off of the gospel. Instead you should sell the book at cost and use the cheapest book printer you can find. Notice how said book printer not publisher since publishers have to make their profits. Really the idea here is that if it costs five dollars to print your book then you should sell the print version for five dollars. But again distributing an ebook on the internet is free so you should never charge for an ebook.

Alright now you may protest all this and say that those who preach should be compensated for their preaching so therefore there is nothing wrong for profiting off of the desperate by selling them books.

And as Jesus also says:

"Stay at the same house, eating and drinking whatever you are offered. For the worker is worthy of his wages. Do not move around from house to house.

If you enter a town and they welcome you, eat whatever is set before you." (Luke 10:7-8)

However in reality there is a clear difference between receiving something as a gift due to the generosity of others and charging for access. This is why Jesus says to His disciples to eat and drink what they are offered and to eat whatever is set before them because the idea here is that if you go and preach to others and spread the Gospel then just as you have given freely so too will others give freely to you if they find your message helpful. In other words Jesus is saying that donations are payment and your wages. This is why Jesus says not to move around from house to house because as long as you have a roof over your head for the night then you should not be greedy so that you want better accommodations. How this worked back in the 1st century was that the ministry in preaches would go from town to town and they obviously needed a place to sleep and food to eat at each town. Then upon getting an offer of accommodation in one town at an average person's house the ministry would then later on get an offer from a rich person to stay at their house. Thus here Jesus is saying that the disciples should not get greedy and move from house to house as they look for the best house and food they can find. This is because if they do this then they are effectively selling themselves and their message.

So what Jesus is saying here is that it is perfectly fine for people to receive gifts or donations so that you can continue what you are doing. However even though it is fine to accept donations it is not acceptable to charge money and sell your time and effort in order to profit up a barrier between yourself and those who you claim to minister to.

Really if Christians find what you offer to be useful and valuable then they will give gifts to you so that you may continue preaching to others. After all, who does not want to help increase the faith of others? The idea here is if you give away your gifts then the Christians who read your books and are helped by them will want to donate to you to support your ministry because "the worker is worthy of his wages." (Luke 10:7) This is because by helping you after you have helped them they will feel like they are paying back your kindness to others. Really what I am saying is that your goal should be to preach out of the goodness of your heart and not to make a profit.

Furthermore you can actually argue that it is wrong for you to accept donations from a Christian.

As Jesus says:

"Do not carry any gold or silver or copper in your belts. Take no bag for your journey, or two tunics, or sandals, or staff; for the worker is worthy of his provisions." (Matthew 10:10)

The idea here is that Jesus is telling His disciples that they should not take any provisions with them in their ministry because those they minister to will provide for their needs. Now you might say this would clearly demonstrate that accepting financial support is acceptable however Jesus also says to "not carry any gold or silver or copper in your belts." (Matthew 10:9) The reason why I say that it is wrong for Christians to even receive financial donations because in the Second Temple should be carrying gold or silver in their belts so to speak. Therefore if even receiving financial donations can be considered wrong then how much more wrong would it be to sell Bibles for money and paid speeches? Obviously it goes without saying that it would be unimaginably worse.

But why is this? Well really I think Jesus says this because ultimately when you engage in a Christian ministry you are called to the Law of serving God or the goal of providing for yourself and your family. In other words you cannot choose both. Thus the idea is that if you are collecting donations and filling your belt up with gold or silver in your ministry then you are not really serving God in your heart because you are taking in more than you need. This is why I said you can actually argue that taking in financial donations as a Christian is wrong.

Of course I should say that this does not mean that it is always sinful to accept donations. Instead I am just saying that donations only becomes sinful when you receive more than you actually need. I make this distinction because Jesus says to "not carry any gold or silver or copper in your ministry belts." So which would imply that as long as you spend all the financial donations you receive on your physical needs then you will not be carrying any money around with you. On the other hand if you take in more money in donations than you need so you have a significant sum in your bank account then you would be carrying around "gold or silver or copper in your belts." (Matthew 10:9)

Next as Jesus says:

"No servant can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money." (Luke 16:13)

Therefore you cannot say your goal is to sell books and serve God at the same time because these goals are opposed to each other. If you truly want to serve God then you would offer everything you write and do for free so that no one needs to pay for it in order to allow everyone to read it. On the other hand if you want to serve money then you would sell what you write and create a list people need to pay for it in order to line your pockets.

This is why I have given away everything you have read thus far in my blog so that I am in charge money for what I have written when God commanded me to share it with others. Therefore I do not charge for it because by doing so I would blasphemer God and spit on the gift that He has promised me. I strongly encourage you to do the same if you want to write and create yourself.

But what should we do about the merchants in the Temple today? Well logically these merchants should be expelled from the Temple just as Jesus expelled the merchants from the Temple in the day of Jesus. However it is unlikely to happen due to the power and influence these merchants have and how many supporters they control. Therefore the best thing we can do as Christians is to point out what these merchants are and to tell them the error of their ways. After all maybe they are not aware of the sin and blasphemy they are committing? If they truly do not realize then surely by telling them their error then they will change and fade away what they profit off of and then sell it so that they serve God once again instead of money.

Sweet! I cannot understand that many if not most of these merchants will resist this message and hence refuse to change. Therefore we must be deassociate from them entirely. This may seem extreme but if they are willing to disrespect the gifts that God has given us then do not under flow can you trust anything they even say? So although you may think that the Law says you should still stop following them so that you will not follow them into what the Bible calls the Satan. This then of course means that we as Christians should be wary of anyone who apologetics industry in general because this industry is full of people who are selling Bibles and

invited to the banquet, but they refused to come.

Again, he sent other servants and said, 'Tell those who have been invited that I have prepared my dinner. My oxen and fattened calves have been killed, and everything is ready. Come to the wedding banquet.'

But they paid no attention and went away, one to his field, another to his business. The rest seized his servants, mistreated them, and killed them.

The king was enraged, and he sent his troops to destroy those murderers and burn their city. Then he said to his servants, 'The wedding banquet is ready, but those I invited were not worthy. Go therefore to the crossroads and invite to the banquet as many as you can find.'

So the servants went out into the streets and gathered everyone they could find, both evil and good, and the wedding hall was filled with guests.

But when the king came in to see the guests, he spotted one who was not dressed for a wedding clothes. 'Friend,' he asked, 'how did you get here without a wedding clothes?'

But the man was speechless.

Then the king told the servants, 'Tie him hand and foot, and throw him into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

For many are called, but few are chosen." (Matthew 22:1-14)

In this parable the king is of course God and the wedding banquet is the final stage of the Kingdom of God where Israel, the Church, marries God through Jesus just as Revelation describes. Therefore the parable of the Tares sends are the prophets that God sent to ancient Israel to invite them to the final stage of the Kingdom of God. However ancient Israel did not want to go and so it was God Who sent His wrath upon them and destroyed the Second Temple and along with it the relationship the so-called Jews had with Him.

Then because the wedding banquet would be empty God then sent out the apostles into the nations to spread the Gospel of God's Christ and the coming of the Kingdom of God so that the whole world could be invited to the wedding. However once all the guests had been invited and no more, God then went out to see who He finds that not all of them are worthy. Therefore those who claim to be Christians but are unfaithful to God will be cast into the Lake of Fire.

So as you can see the events of this parable will take a long time to happen because not everyone is invited, or even, invited, or even, Jesus, or even a hundred years. Instead it has taken almost two thousand years for all the nations of the world to be invited to the wedding.

Again as Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"When Jesus heard this, He marveled and said to those following him, "Truly I tell you, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith. I tell you that many will come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the sons of the kingdom will be thrown into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 8:10-12)

How can everyone come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven? (Matthew 8:11) if Jesus is supposed to return to usher in the final stage of the Kingdom of God in the first century AD? How can Jesus be expecting less than ten thousand Christians by the end of the first century AD which is a far cry from the millions of so-called Jews in the same time period. So I will be see how many come from the east and the west to share the banquet with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 8:11) Thus what Jesus is talking about here is what will occur in the second stage of the Kingdom of God where the nations will be brought into Israel to be saved as they await for the final stage of the Kingdom of God to arrive with the new heavens and the new earth. This is when the "sons of the kingdom" (Matthew 8:12) the so-called Jews will be thrown into the Lake of Fire as Jesus says. Again Jesus calls the so-called Jews the "sons of the kingdom" (Matthew 8:12) because the idea here is that Israel is the Kingdom of God. Thus Jesus is acknowledging that they are the sons of the Kingdom of God and thus they belong to it in accordance with what God says in the Old Testament. However again at the same time Jesus is saying that because of their unfaithfulness they will be cast out of the Kingdom of God and will no longer be part of it and as the people of the nations are welcomed in.

Therefore as a result of all this you should view the Kingdom of God or Heaven as something that cothes in different stages with the first stage starting when God called Abraham, the second stage being ushered in with the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and the final stage being ushered in when Jesus returns to destroy the first beast of Revelation second time and the end. This then means that yes the events of 70 AD were highly significant because the Kingdom of Jesus took control of Israel and the so-called Jews were cast out. However this also means that Jesus's second coming is something that still has to take place in the second stage of the second stage of the Kingdom of God.

So now that you understand what the Kingdom of God is and what it has gone through and the final stage that is yet to come you should now be able to understand the most confusing verses in the gospels.

As Jesus says in the Gospel of Matthew:

"For the Son of Man will come in His Father's glory with His angels, and then He will reward each one according to what he has done.

Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:27-28)

Then as Jesus says in the Gospel of Mark:

"If anyone is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in His Father's glory with the holy angels." (Mark 8:38)

Then Jesus said to them, 'Truly I tell you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God arrive with power." (Mark 8:38-9:1)

So what is Jesus talking about in these two passages? What is it that you already know that Jesus is talking about the Kingdom of God, Israel, being transformed from the so-called Jews to Christians as Jesus becomes King of Israel and King of the Jews and rules spiritually from the throne of David in heaven? Well the second verse of each of the two passages. This is why there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God arrive with power" (Mark 9:1) because the idea here is that Jesus is talking about the extremely significant and destructive Wrath of the Kingdom of God that took place during the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars when God sent the Romans to kill millions of the so-called Jews as retribution for the so-called Jews to kill millions upon millions of the so-called Jews as retribution for the so-called Jews to kill millions upon millions of the so-called Jews. Jesus's Jewish-Roman Wars.

But then what does the first verse each of the passages mean?

To quote them again:

"For the Son of Man will come in His Father's glory with His angels, and then He will reward each one according to what he has done."

"Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:27)

"If anyone is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in His Father's glory with the holy angels." (Mark 8:38)

Well here we are talking not about the arrival of the second stage of the Kingdom of God but rather the arrival of the third and final stage of the Kingdom of God. But then what does Jesus mean by saying "this adulterous and sinful generation" (Mark 8:38) in the second passage? Does this not mean that Jesus was supposed to return with in the same generation? Well you see the word translated as generation is genea (γενεά) and it can mean a group of people. Thus here Jesus is saying the adulterous and sinful so-called Jews and others who reject His message will not pass away as people groups until Jesus returns to usher in the eternal Kingdom of God or rather the final stage of the Kingdom of God. This is of course something that the Book of Revelation echos when it says that Jesus "is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him—even those who pierced Him." (Revelation 1:7) I have discussed that the eyes of all will see myself here. If you have forgotten then reread my commentary on this verse. But my point here is that Jesus is not talking about returning in the first century but rather He is talking about the future. He returns there will still be those who reject Him and His words. We of course clearly see this even today.

Now you may object to this and insist that Jesus must be talking about returning in the first century. In order to demonstrate that this is simply not the case consider the parable from the Gospel of Mark. Now I am using the Gospel of Mark here and not Matthew because the verse with the word genea (γενεά) in it is Mark 8:38 so it is only fair to use the same Gospel.

As the Gospel of Mark says:

"Jesus also said, "The kingdom of God is like a man who scatters seed on the ground. Night and day he sleeps and wakes, and the seed sprouts and grows, though he knows not how. All by itself the earth produces a crop—first the stalk, then the head, then the grain that ripens within. And as soon as the grain is ripe," he swings the sickle, because the harvest has come." (Mark 4:26-29)

So if there were less than ten thousand Christians by the end of the first century AD then how exactly would this number have qualified as a harvest? I mean there were millions of so-called Jews at the end of the first century AD even after the Romans killed hundreds of thousands to a million of them in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War then this is so many nothing of the population of the Roman Empire at some 70 million or so. Then surely the author of the Gospel of Mark knew how vast and populous the Roman Empire was so how could several thousand Christians even be called a harvest? Obviously it cannot so therefore the author of the Gospel of Mark and so everyone Jesus did not expect the end of the age and the final eternal Kingdom of God to arrive in the first century AD.

Now you may dispute this but you need to understand that the Kingdom of God grew around in this passage is gēs (γῆς) and it means the earth, the land or soil. Thus in the context of this parable you should not understand it to mean just the Roman Empire. No, it means the Empire or even the whole world. But given the context of the Gospel of Mark and the Mark's version of the Parable of the Wicked Tenants it is clear that gēs (γῆς) does not refer to Roman Judea and instead it must refer to either the Roman Empire or the whole world itself. This is why I said a Christian population of several thousand does not qualify as a harvest because there are millions of so-called Jews and in around 0.01% of the Roman Empire by the end of the first century AD. There is so far nothing of planting the seed of the Gospel in the Roman Empire so it is impossible for it to possible way you can see that the Gospel of Mark shows Jesus was expecting the harvest His crop in the first century AD. This clearly shows that He distinguished between the beginning of the second stage of the Kingdom of God and the final stage of the Kingdom of God is correct.

Now for the second parable from the Gospel of Mark:

"Then He asked, 'To what can we compare the kingdom of God? With what parable shall we use it? It is like a mustard seed, which is the smallest of all seeds sown upon the earth. But after it is sown it grows up and is the biggest of all garden plants and puts forth great branches, so that the birds of the air rest in its shadow."

With many such parables Jesus spoke the word to them, to the extent that they could understand it. He did not tell them anything without using a parable. But privately He explained everything to His own disciples." (Mark 4:30-34)

Here Jesus compares the growth and expansion of the Kingdom of God around the Earth and grow of a tiny mustard seed into a great tree with many branches. Jesus said that when the mustard seed occurred when Jesus began His earthly ministry in the first century AD. Then given the metaphor of a mustard seed growing into a tree with big branches, so that the birds of the air rest in its shade" (Mark 4:30-32) Jesus is saying that it would take for the mustard seed to sprout and grow into the tree that Jesus clearly Jesus is saying that the Kingdom of God will start off small and insignificant but that overtime it will grow and mature into a massive tree that will encompasses people from the nations of the world just as Mark's version of the Parable of the Wicked Tenants says.

Then just to reiterate what I said with regards to the previous parable Jesus was expecting several thousand Christians in all the world by the end of the first century AD. Jesus's Wrath and resurrection of Jesus the apostles going out and preaching the Gospel of God around the world sped sprouting then at the end of the first century AD the mustard seed did become a tree but rather a tiny sapling. I mean how can you even call a group of people who number around 0.01% of the Roman Empire at the end of the first century AD a tree? Obviously you cannot. Therefore the author of the Gospel of Mark and Jesus once again are saying that the second coming and the final judgment will not occur in the first century AD. Instead Jesus is saying that the second coming will not occur into the future after the mustard seed has become the largest of all garden plants and puts forth great branches, so that the birds of the air rest in its shade." (Mark 4:32) Of course this has actually occurred since Christianity has been the largest religion in the world.

So now let us review the perplexing verses again.

As the gospels say:

"For the Son of Man will come in His Father's glory with His angels, and then He will reward each one according to what he has done.

Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:27-28)

"If anyone is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in His Father's glory with the holy angels."

Then Jesus said to them, 'Truly I tell you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God arrive with power." (Mark 8:38-9:1)

So what is Jesus talking about in these two passages? What is it that you already know that Jesus is talking about the Kingdom of God, Israel, being transformed from the so-called Jews to Christians as Jesus becomes King of Israel and King of the Jews and rules spiritually from the throne of David in heaven? Well the second verse of each of the two passages. This is why there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God arrive with power" (Mark 9:1) because the idea here is that Jesus is talking about the extremely significant and destructive Wrath of the Kingdom of God that took place during the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars when God sent the Romans to kill millions of the so-called Jews as retribution for the so-called Jews to kill millions upon millions of the so-called Jews. Jesus's Jewish-Roman Wars.

But then what does the first verse each of the passages mean?

To quote them again:

"For the Son of Man will come in His Father's glory with His angels, and then He will reward each one according to what he has done." (Matthew 16:27)

"If anyone is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in His Father's glory with the holy angels." (Mark 8:38)

The first view is to say that Jesus is talking about the so-called Jews when He referenfces Israel. But is the Church not the Israel of God? Well yes but you have to understand that Jesus only says Israel in the Gospels and not Jews and are Israel in Revelation because Revelation was given after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and the destruction of the Second Temple. As I have said before the destruction of the Second Temple and Israel became the so-called Jews as Israel was taken away from them and given to the people of the world just as the Parable of the Wicked Tenants clearly Jesus said. Jesus's point is that the so-called Jews as Israel in his letters. Therefore if you take Israel to be talking about the so-called Jews then Matthew 10:23 is just more figuratively saying that not all descendants of Israel, the so-called Jews, will come to faith in Jesus before Jesus returns. Again I would like to emphasize that you really must take even the phrase "Israel" in Matthew 10:23) figuratively because it makes no sense in light of Matthew 24:9 and 24:14 if you take it literally.

The second view is to say that Jesus is talking about the nations of the world since Jesus in the Parable of the Wicked Tenants clearly says that Israel is to be taken away from them and be given to God His share of the fruit. Thus when Jesus says "Israel" (Matthew 10:23) in Mt He is really talking about all the towns of the nations. Jesus's point is that Israel is not since Israel is a spiritual kingdom made up of the faithful from all the nations. Jesus's point is that in light of the Parable of the Wicked Tenants you could say that Jesus is talking about the nations of the world. The entire world since all the nations are Israel. Yes, this sounds crazy but it does stretch but like I said taking Matthew 10:23 literally cannot make sense in light of Matthew 24:9 and 24:14.

Then the third view is to say that when Jesus is talking about "before the Son of Man comes" (Matthew 10:23) he is talking about the end of the age when He returns to usher in the third stage of the Kingdom of God but instead He is talking about when Jesus comes into His kingdom.

As Jesus also says:

"Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:28)

Of course Jesus came into His kingdom during the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War as God poured out His wrath upon the so-called Jews and destroyed His Second Temple. This allowed for Israel to be transformed from the now so-called Jews to faithful Christians just as Jesus promised in the Parable of the Wicked Tenants. So really what I am saying is that "before the Son of Man comes" (Matthew 10:23) could refer to Jesus coming into Israel and becoming King of Israel and King of the Jews. Of the three views presented thus far this view probably makes the most sense. Although even with this view you must still take "towns of Israel" (Matthew 10:23) figuratively because I am not sure how 40 years was supposed to be not enough time to physically reach all the towns of Israel. Therefore in order to make it more sense you need to assume Jesus is talking about spiritually reaching all the towns of Israel before the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War and when he enters into His kingdom as King of Israel and King of the Jews. Then it goes without saying that the disciples failed to spiritually reach all the towns of Israel before Israel was given to new tenants since you know the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War understandably wiped out 99% or more Jews became so-called Jews through their conversion of Jesus as the Christ.

Lastly if you do not like these three explanations then I would like to point out that the gospels are not inerrant or infallible or the Bible is not. Matthew 10:23 could be wrong. This means that a fourth view could be that rejecting Matthew 10:23 as being wrong is possible. Obviously this is the weak second choice however if it only gave this solution then no doubt you would be not disappointed and discount what I am saying here in this chapter.

Therefore as a result of all this you should not see the Kingdom of God as being something that is just in the future. Instead it is something you should see the Kingdom of God in three different parts. Jesus said the Kingdom of God is ancient Israel with earthly rulers, then the second stage is the age of the Church where Jesus rules as King over Israel. Again the Church, Israel, and finally the third stage is the new heavens and new earth that Jesus will usher in when He returns to destroy the two beasts of Revelation and all those who worship them.

But why is there so much confusion surrounding the Kingdom of God? I mean if what I have said here is correct then why have so many people missed it?

Well as Jesus says in the Gospel of Mark:

"As soon as Jesus was alone with the Twelve and those around Him, they asked Him about the parable.

He replied, "The mystery of the kingdom of God has been given to you. But to those on the outside everything is expressed in parables, so that,

'they may be ever seeing but never perceiving,
and ever hearing but never understanding;
otherwise they might turn
and be forgiven.'" (Mark 4:10-12)

As I have mentioned with respect to the purpose of parables and divine hiddenness God does not want everyone to understand the nature of the Kingdom of God and instead He only wants some people to understand it because God does not want to save everyone. After all with regards to the beasts of Revelation it says that "all the earth" will worship the beasts of Revelation if the Kingdom of God was described in plain language so that all of the earth everyone could understand? Thus God must hide His mystery so that not everyone will see it. But then how do you find the message?

As Jesus says:

"He who has ears to hear, let him hear." (Mark 4:9)

In other words you need to have spiritual ears in order to listen to what the Holy Spirit says through what Jesus is saying. Therefore I hope you now have ears to hear so that you understand the true nature of the Kingdom of God. This nature of the Kingdom of God is extremely important because understanding the Olivet Discourse rests upon understanding this nature.

2 – Introduction to the Olivet Discourse

Now that the confusion surrounding the Kingdom of God has been cleared up it is time to go over the Olivet Discourse. But before I begin the actual commentary I would like to say a few things. First off as you already know the Bible is not inerrant so therefore there are errors and contradictions in it. Secondly I am going to not view the Olivet Discourse as the literal word of God because even the gospels themselves have errors as I pointed out.

Instead really only the Book of Revelation is the literal word of God because it is what it says:

"This is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon happen. He made it known by sending His angel to His servant John, who testifies to everything he saw. This is the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Revelation 1:1-2)

So really only the prophecy in Revelation is the direct and inerrant word of God.

This means that when you read the Olivet Discourse in the gospels you should not not see it as being without error. Instead you should see it as written by men who can be easily confused.

After all the Gospel of Mark says:

"As soon as Jesus was alone with the Twelve and those around Him, they asked Him about the parable.

He replied, "The mystery of the kingdom of God has been given to you. But to those on the outside everything is expressed in parables, so that,

'they may be ever seeing but never perceiving,
and ever hearing but never understanding;
otherwise they might turn
and be forgiven.'

Then Jesus said to them, 'Do you not understand this parable? Then how will you understand any of the parables?' (Mark 4:10-13)

So obviously the disciples had issues understanding what Jesus was trying to explain to them. Therefore the confusion of the Olivet Discourse can be explained simply by the fact that the disciples were confused and mixed up the stages of the Kingdom of God that I just outlined. Matthew was writing to the Jewish and third stages were one in the same and would happily write about the end of Jesus's second coming would happen within their lifetimes at the end of the Second Temple is destroyed. But did I not say earlier that the Bible is not inerrant? Yes I did and this is not supposed to return soon? Well yes but this still does not quite explain the fact that the author of Olivet Discourse are mixing up the different stages of the Kingdom of God. I mean as the gospels demonstrate the disciples were so confused and mixed up that they did not even understand Jesus's parables. Therefore if you want to assume that the gospels are even partially inerrant it is far more reasonable to say that whoever wrote the gospels of Matthew, Mark and Luke were confused and mixed up two sets of events. This fact will be made obvious in my actual commentary.

Now you may claim that whoever wrote the gospels of Matthew and Luke knew the believe the authors were guided by the Holy Spirit so they were aware of your error but then if that was the case then why would there be errors and contradictions in the gospels? I mean you already read my chapter on these contradictions so I am not going to go over what does mean that the gospels are without error. As a result of this you then cannot use the Olivet Discourse as without error and that whoever wrote it was not confused.

Then as a more practical point if the Olivet Discourse is truly without fault then why would Jesus even need to give the prophecy in the Book of Revelation? Jesus's disciples believe the Book of Revelation was written around 95 AD based upon the testimony of those in the early Church in the second century so clearly the Olivet Discourse cannot be about events concerning the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. Surely Jesus's disciples believed there was confusion surrounding the Olivet Discourse so Revelation would be no need for the Book of Revelation.

So keep all this in mind as you read my commentary on the Olivet Discourse from the Gospel of Matthew so that instead of being caught up in the meaning of certain words you instead view the Kingdom of God as something that grows through stages. This means that the author of the Gospel of Matthew will mix up events that are near that concern the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and events that are far away that concern the end of the age.

However this fact does not mean that I will simply ignore the Olivet Discourse as it is so difficult verses. Instead I will fully explain them in my commentary so that you do not see how anyone could interpret the Olivet Discourse as needing to be fulfilled in the first or second century AD. Therefore I do not need to rely on the fact that the gospels have errors in order to demonstrate that most of the Olivet Discourse concerns the so-called Jews. This fact will be clearly evident and really cannot be disputed as you will see.

3 – Commentary on Matthew 24

3.1 – Temple Destruction and Other Signs

(1) As Jesus left the temple and was walking away, His disciples came up to Him to point out its buildings.

(2) "Do you see all these things?" He replied. "Truly I tell you, not one stone here will be left on another; every one will be thrown down."

(3) While Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately. "Tell us," they said, "when will these things happen, and what will be the sign of Your coming and of the end of the age?"

(4) Jesus answered, "See to it that no one deceives you. (5) For many will come in My name, claiming, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many." – In case you forgot the Jewish Temple Building the disciples were referring to when they said "the temple" in verse 1 (6) You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. These things must happen, but the end is still to come. (7) Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places. (8) All these are the beginning of birth pains."

(9) "Then will they deliver you over to be persecuted and killed, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name. (10) At that time many will fall away and will betray and hate one another, (11) and many false prophets will rise and deceive many people. (12) Because of the multiplication of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. (13) But the one who perseveres to the end will be saved.

(14) And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.

3.4 – Commentary

(9) "Then they will deliver you over to be persecuted and killed" – Persecution against Christians is something that occurred almost immediately after the resurrection of Jesus as evidenced by the Book of Acts and has been ongoing throughout history as Christians are persecuted and even killed in the Middle East, India, Africa, China and others such places. It is also important to point out that the Book of Revelation says the first beast will wage war on the saints and conquer them. Therefore since Christians can expect to see persecution until the end this warning is not exactly unique to a certain time period.

(9) "and you will be hated by all nations because of My name" – Here the end transitioned as nations basically just means tribes or ethnic groups. Therefore Jesus is saying that before the end of the age and before His second coming you can arrive that all the different nations of the world or ethnic groups must hate Christians in some way. Then Jesus the estimated population of all Christians was only several thousand in 100 AD this would mean that there was zero chance of Jesus returning during or soon after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War.

Thus even if you want to claim the absurd position that Jesus is talking about all the different nations of the world rather than Greek and Roman world here and not literally all the different people groups of the world you still have Jesus's second coming still could not have happened during or soon after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. For example there is almost no way that Christianity had spread to Roman Britain before the third century AD. Therefore how exactly could the Jesus was supposed to return in the first century AD? Again, it cannot.

The only way you could possibly make this claim is if you ignored Matthew 24:9 AS as being an exaggeration or so extremely loosely figurative that Christianity spreading to all nations is completely disconnected from actually being all nations. Is that what you want to take this view then why do you see "all nations" as completely figurative as to remove all meaning while you are at the same time taking "nations" as being entirely literal? You cannot pick and choose what you want to be literal and what is view as non-literal. Now obviously I take the entire Olivet Discourse to be literal so that I even see all nations here as figurative.

What I mean by this is that by saying all nations Jesus is saying that Christianity will arise in all the different people groups across the world that will hate Christians. However the idea is not that literally every single tribe in Africa has people that hate Christians. Instead that such a large number of them hate Christians that it says that the Kingdom of God is great power, abilities and what it will do for humanity. Therefore figurative antichrist Jesus said. What this means is that if someone says they speak for God but they do not what Jesus says then you should not listen to them.

Finally this warning against false messiahs also applies to the so-called Christians. Jesus said that Christians will arise in the 20s or 30s AD, if you read the Book of Matthew in context and ask is, then the wars and rumors of wars would of occurred in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War so that the transition from the Kingdom of God as Israel to the Kingdom of God as Israel is taken from the Jewish stage of the Kingdom of God as Israel to the Kingdom of God as Israel with the so-called Christians with Jesus as the King of Israel and King of the Jews.

This is why Jesus says to not be alarmed because these wars are of no importance to Christians and the Christians should not get involved with them because they are a punishment the so-called Jews were to face was from God Himself and thus no one would have been able to stop it since no one can countermand the will of God. Therefore as a result of this there was no reason to believe that the end of the age and Jesus's second coming or after the so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars.

(6) "These things must happen" – Once again the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars had to happen because it is God's will that the so-called Jews rejected Jesus so that Moses's warning in Deuteronomy 28 can be fulfilled. You will never understand the Jewish-Roman Wars as something that did not have to happen because God Himself ordained the Jewish-Roman Wars because God has predetermined that they would happen and therefore nothing could stop them. Jesus said that God's plan for Israel must be fulfilled so that the second stage of the Kingdom of God begins as the Church becomes the continuation of Israel and thus God's plan for Israel.

(6) "but the end is still to come" – Once again you should not view the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars as being the end of the end of the age where the third and final stage of the Kingdom of God begins. Jesus said that God puts all the nations under His feet. As a result you cannot say that Jesus was a false apocalyptic prophet because He never said the end would happen soon after the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. Instead Jesus said that the end is still to come and that it would not expect it to happen soon. The idea here is that the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars were a punishment for the so-called Jews faced was just the beginning of God's just and righteous judgment of all the people of the world. As I said in my commentary on Revelation you should not see the seven seals and seven trumpets as being applicable to specific events in the future and instead they are just a literary device or metaphorical for God judging the whole world throughout the end of the age. So just to reiterate because it is so important, Jesus is talking about the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars and how they do not mark the end of the age and that instead "the end is still to come" as Jesus says.

(7) Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places." – Now there are two ways you can think about this. First of all it is that you can say it is simply reiterating what the previous verse said so that this would also be about the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars. For instance in addition to there being many Jewish-Roman wars during the seventy year period in which the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars took place there were also many famines and no doubt earthquakes as well.

Alternatively since I have stated in my commentary that the seven seals refer to a period of continuous judgment from when Revelation was written to the present day then to the second coming of Jesus, this verse about nation rising against kingdom and famines and earthquakes could also refer to the same period. If this was Jesus's point then these last two thousand years there have been obviously countless wars and rumors of wars throughout. Now you may say this is kind of absurd to say and reaching but did Jesus not say "the end is still to come" (Matthew 24:6) and that nations rising against nation and famines would happen before the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars. Thus once again if you take this second view then it is not saying anything about the end of the age that can be considered soon after the destruction of the Second Temple.

(8) "All these are the beginning of birth pains." – Now regardless of the view you take concerning the wars and rumors of wars and nation rising against nation and the kingdom against kingdom, Jesus said that "All these are the beginning of birth pains" Jesus is saying that He is talking about something that is just the beginning of birth pains then if the birth here refers to Jesus's second coming then it would of to lead to reason that there must be a final pain as the baby is delivered. Or rather a final disaster of such unspeakable scale?

I mean if all the wars throughout history in which millions upon millions of people were simply the beginnings of birth pains then surely the pain of the Second Coming of Jesus when billions are killed in the world, must be much greater? But what could this be? Well as you may remember from my commentary on Revelation I believe the great prostitute, or Babylon the great, is symbolic of the so-called and global secular society. Then since the beast is to kill the great prostitute then the global secular society and artificial super intelligence will genocide almost all of humanity. Is this what I am referring to?

As a result of this genocide billions upon billions will be killed which would certainly qualify as the final pain of birth. Then Jesus said that it mean that we need to see the creation of the great prostitute before we can look towards the second coming of Jesus. This would then mean that a single birth has gone through several to form that worships the beast as a false god. Therefore as I said in my chapter on Revelation again zero reason to believe that Jesus was supposed to return in the first or second century AD because the birth pains of the last two years were merely "the beginning of birth pains" and not the pain from the birth itself because the third and final stage of the Kingdom of God is yet to come.

3.3 – Witnessing to All Nations

(9) Then they will deliver you over to be persecuted and killed, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name. (10) At that time many will fall away and will betray and hate one another, (11) and many false prophets will rise and deceive many people.

(12) Because of the multiplication of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. (13) But the one who perseveres to the end will be saved.

(14) And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.

(14) And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come." (Matthew 24:14)

As I said this verse demonstrates that the end of the age could not have happened in the first century AD and that the events of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars are not related to the signs concerning the end of the age. After all it would take hundreds to thousands of years to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of God to "in the whole world as a testimony to all nations" (Matthew 24:14) so obviously this count not have happened in the first century AD. Then like I said before even if you incorrectly, in light of Revelation 12:9 that Jesus, take the word translated as world to mean the Roman Empire then this would happen and could not have happened in the first century AD either. Then just to again reiterate the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War is not related to the end of the age because as Jesus says: "You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. These things must happen, but the end is still to come." (Matthew 24:6) As I said before these wars and rumors of wars were no doubt the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. Therefore Jesus is directly saying that Christians should not be concerned with them and see them as a fulfillment of the Olivet Discourse.

However although I believe my alternative view to be more correct this does not mean the traditional view is completely false. Matthew 24:15-20 is a prophecy that is not figurative and is literal. Therefore Jesus is simply saying that once you see the abomination of desolation that you should not wait and see what happens and that instead you should make haste and leave Judea. The idea is that Jesus is trying to emphasize how important it is that you listen to Him and do what He is saying because otherwise if you wait too long then the Roman armies will come upon you and it will be too late to escape.

Then this figurative language is further evidence that you should not view Revelation as being entirely literal. This is because what Jesus is saying here does not make sense when it is completely literally because obviously people had more than enough time to escape whatever they wanted from their house before they left. For instance the full power of the Roman military took months to assemble to do battle against the so-called Jewish rebels. Thus Christians could be assembled on the same day. Therefore if there was an attack it would literally be figurative then what else in Matthew 24 is figurative?

(19) "How miserable those days will be for pregnant and nursing mothers!" – Since the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War would kill most of the women so you have already read most of the pregnant and nursing mothers would have miscarried because the deaths of their infants due to the famine.

(20) "Pray that your flight will not occur in the winter or on the Sabbath." – Traveling during winter was much harder due to the colder temperatures and work as prohibited on the Sabbath so that would delay travel. Now obviously having the Roman armies of desolation happen on a Sabbath would be no big deal because because Judea was not yet Christian. Thus Jesus is once again trying to non-literally warn people that Jerusalem it is to leave Judea when they see the sign.

3.6.2 – From an Alternative Viewpoint

(1) From an alternative viewpoint that makes the most sense to me the idea that a future still might be a bit confusing however I believe it to be clear cut and consistent with the traditional viewpoint. This is because as I have said Matthew 24:9-14 clearly concern the far future and Jesus is talking about the end being preached to all nations in all the world and how "Christians will be hated by all nations because of His name. Then as you will later see Matthew 24:21 clearly cannot be about the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars so these four verses must be in regard to the future and so I believe Jesus is going to return. Of course I include in that that Jesus is coming soon so therefore I must believe Matthew 24:21-24 refers to the future. Thus if I said having these two groups of verses concerning the far future, Matthew 24:9-14 and Matthew 21:23-24, that are bookends around Matthew 24:15-20 makes little sense if you take the traditional viewpoint because it is a huge discontinuity. Therefore I believe my alternative viewpoint of making Matthew 24:15-20 the start of the far future makes the over all continuity make more sense because then Matthew 24 becomes a clear narrative that is in order rather than a discontinuous mess.

But what about the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and the destruction of the Second Temple? Well as you read earlier Jesus says: "You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. These things must happen, but the end is still to come." (Matthew 24:6) These wars and rumors of wars (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars are not significant and Christians should not worry about them. I mean if you want to take Jesus's parables in the Gospel of Matthew as being true then Jesus clearly said that the so-called Jews that they would be judged by God and killed for their sins and for rejecting Jesus and that it was to go over this again but if you have forgotten then reread my chapter on Jesus and the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars in my part on fulfilled prophecy. But my point here is that Jesus clearly warned everyone about the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars which is why they knew they would happen but that you should "see to it that you are not alarmed." (Matthew 24:6) Therefore I do not actually think Christians needed to be warned about being there for them because it would be obvious to literally everyone who held to the faith of Jesus that God was sending the Romans to punish and kill the so-called Jews. Again, remember or reread my part on fulfilled prophecy because I went over this.

Now if you want to take the secular position and say that Jesus never told parables about God punishing and killing the so-called Jews then I ask you a question. Why did the so-called Jews decide to kill Jesus and end up killing Him? To answer this question consider the following two verses. "What shall he do when he comes the vineyard do? He will come and kill those tenants, and will give the vineyard to others." (Mark 12:9) and "At this, the leaders sought to arrest Jesus. For they knew that He had spoken this parable against them. But fearing the crowd, they left Him and went away." (Mark 12:12) What I am saying here is that it is fairly obvious that the so-called Jews killed Jesus because Jesus preached against them in a parable and so implied that God would kill them and deliver their inheritance to others. I mean why else would they seek to kill Him?

So to reiterate what I am saying with all this reread my chapter on the (so-called) Jewish-Roman War were needed because it really has nothing to do with Christians in the Romans invading was the wrath of God against the so-called Jews. Christians, if they were there is little reason to believe that Matthew 24:15-20 was related to the so-called Jewish-Roman War which you will soon see. Therefore I am going to make this very, very clear there is one final point that you need to be aware of and keep in mind. The reason is that Jesus often spoke in heavily figurative and metaphorical language so that people had a hard time understanding what He was saying. This fact is again evidenced by the disciples having confusion and Jesus explaining to ask Jesus what His parables even mean. Therefore when these seven references to Jesus which is literally defined as the area where the ancient Kingdom of Judah was or do not believe is actually talking about Judea. This point of view is even stronger by what Jesus says around the verse that mentions Judea say. I mean it is quite obvious that Jesus is being heavily figurative so therefore I do not think even the seven Jesus's mentions of Judea literally as you will see. Really what I mean by all this is that just do not immediately write off my commentary and consider it possible that you allow me to explain myself so that you take everything I have been saying seriously. Matthew 24:15-20 together as a whole rather than separate.

(15) "So when you see standing in the holy place "the abomination of desolation," described by the prophet Daniel (let the reader understand)," – As I said before the holy place here would be a reference to the Temple of God. Then "the abomination of desolation" would refer to something, especially related to idolatry, that desecrates the Temple of God. Therefore what this means is that Jesus is not talking about the Third Temple, as I have demonstrated already between Matthew 24 and Revelation and is instead talking about the Church itself being desecrated by "the abomination of desolation" or rather some form of idolatry or people being set up as God. But what could this be? Surely it is a mystery? Sorry for the sarcasm but I hope that you read my commentary on Revelation "the woman clothed with the sun" (Revelation) so you would be aware of what I am talking about. Well I guess you could say that I bring up the woman in my commentary on Revelation because I believe Jesus is going to return. Of course I believe that Jesus is going to return so therefore I must believe Matthew 24:21-24 refers to the future. Thus if I said having these two groups of verses concerning the far future, Matthew 24:9-14 and Matthew 21:23-24, that are bookends around Matthew 24:15-20 makes little sense if you take the traditional viewpoint because it is a huge discontinuity. Therefore I believe my alternative viewpoint of making Matthew 24:15-20 the start of the far future makes the over all continuity make more sense because then Matthew 24 becomes a clear narrative that is in order rather than a discontinuous mess.

But what about the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars and the destruction of the Second Temple? Well as you read earlier Jesus says: "You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. These things must happen, but the end is still to come." (Matthew 24:6) These wars and rumors of wars (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars are not significant and Christians should not worry about them. I mean if you want to take Jesus's parables in the Gospel of Matthew as being true then Jesus clearly stated that the so-called Jews that they would be judged by God and killed for their sins and for rejecting Jesus and that it was to go over this again but if you have forgotten then reread my chapter on Jesus and the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars in my part on fulfilled prophecy. But my point here is that Jesus clearly warned everyone about the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars which is why they knew they would happen but that you should "see to it that you are not alarmed." (Matthew 24:6) Therefore I do not actually think Christians needed to be warned about being there for them because it would be obvious to literally everyone who held to the faith of Jesus that God was sending the Romans to punish and kill the so-called Jews. Again, rem

Roman War then why does Jesus not also mention Galilee here? What I mean by this is that in the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War the Romans invaded Galilee first which resulted in many so-called Jews dying there. Galilee was also a distinct region that was separate from Judea even though both were part of the physical area called Israel. Furthermore Jesus Himself was born in Galilee and Galilee was one is not like you can claim that Galilee was left out because it was unimportant because it was highly important and highly relevant and in the time of Jesus and the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War. What I mean here is that in Matthew 24:17-20 Jesus emphasizes how important it is to leave immediately but then He only mentions Judea and not Galilee even though around half of the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War was fought in Galilee. This would then seem to indicate that Jesus is not actually referring about leaving the physical area of Judea and irrelevant means something else by Judea.

But what does Jesus mean by Judea then? Well in my view Jesus is talking about the church of Satan by referring to Judea. I do not doubt confused by this so allow me to explain. Now if the Church is the true Israel as I have said then why not say Israel instead of Judea? Well the issue is that only faithful Christians in the Church can be called Israel. This means that when the church of Satan forms where the vast majority of so-called Christians look towards the beast (Rev 13) as a divinely messiah, they returned or even as a so-called god that to call such a church of Satan Israel would be blasphemy. Really the same reasoning applies here as to calling the so-called Jews Israel today. The so-called Jews are a synagogue of Satan and they are not Israel and to say such a thing is blasphemy as I have said. You should call demons and the things the Satan holy by calling them Israel. Therefore because of this I believe Jesus is referring the future beast worshiping church of Satan when He says Judea.

If this is true then what does Jesus mean by "flee to the mountains"? In the Bible the mountains are actually a symbol for nations as have demonstrated already in my commentary on the Book of Revelation. Thus Jesus is saying that faithful Christians in the far future should flee into the nations of the world once their Church becomes the church of Satan after the beast rises and becomes the object of worship in the church of Satan. But then what does fleeing into the nations of the world mean exactly? Well I think it means just that. In other words Jesus is saying that once the Church you are going to becomes a church of Satan so that your priest or pastor starts praising the beast then you should leave your church as fast as possible and go into hiding among the people of the world.

But why would Jesus say this? Really you need to understand that the power of the beast will be far greater than you can possibly imagine. Thus once the beast, or the abomination of desolation, enters the Church almost everyone who calls themselves a Christian in the entire world who does not openly apostatize will no doubt fall into worship of the beast as it will appear to most as a short order. I mean once ASI replaces the internet and all so-called experts so that it becomes the so-called expert of expert then this ASI, the beast itself, will actually be better at answering theological questions than your favorite theologian. This is why I say that almost everyone will fall into following the beast because it will quite literally be better than everyone in the world. So now you understand why Jesus would say to "flee to the mountains" once you see the abomination of desolation because if you do not immediately leave your church then the chance are you will become entranced by the beast and fall for its deceptions.

Alright now you may undoubtedly believe that I am being overly literal in my interpretation here or maybe you even believe I am engaging in some next level mental gymnastics. However first off in my commentary on the following verses you will see that taking Jesus literally in Matthew 24:15-20 makes next to zero sense for reasons I will explain. Secondly Jesus says: "He who has ears, let him hear." (Matthew 13:9) Therefore you should understand that Jesus is saying here literally and instead you need to take it figuratively. Furthermore as the meaning is not self evident and obvious. I have as I have said if the beast rises to power in an ASI then why would you expect to be able to take all of the Olivet Discourse completely literally?

(17-18) "Let no one on the housetop come down to retrieve anything from his house, and let no one in the field return for his cloak." – Now you may object to what I have said so far but these two verses demonstrate that you cannot take what Jesus is saying literally. Upon first glance here Jesus is emphasizing how important it is to leave Judea immediately after you see the abomination of desolation in the Temple. The problem here is that if you take the traditional view with regards to the Matthew 24:15-20 then the abomination of desolation was when the Roman procurator in the Temple ordered the soldiers to confiscate money that was inside the Second Temple itself for the payment of taxes. Now I say this is a problem because the Siege of Jerusalem lasted roughly 1 year from the time the invasion of Judea started in the spring of 68 AD and even the invasion of Galilee did not start until the spring of 67 AD.

But why is this a problem exactly? Well because Jesus says people should immediately leave Judea without even bothering to prepare by saying the following: "Let no one on the housetop come down to retrieve anything from his house, And let no one in the field return for his cloak." However in reality those in Judea literally had around one to four years warning from when the abomination of desolation occurred to when it would have been too late to leave. So saying Jesus in Matthew 24:17-18 figuratively and say that Jesus is just emphasizing how important it is to leave quickly but when you consider the fact that people had a warning of anywhere from a few days or a week to forty-eight months then what Jesus is saying becomes nonsensical even when taken literally. I mean what do you can take "And let no one in the field return for his cloak" to literally mean? Do you have days to a few weeks to flee for your life but to say you can get one to four years out of a house is just absurd. For instance just think about your own life for a second. If someone told you that you have one to four years to prepare for something then would you really think that there was no language Jesus is using here in Matthew 24:17-18 at all but it is literally? Clearly not.

Now you may claim that one year is a short period of time to flee in however you need to understand that Jesus did not mention Judea in Matthew 24:16 and instead He only mentioned Judea. This is important because the First (so-called) Roman invasion of Galilee took one year to start after the abomination of desolation the Roman world saw during Judea around two years after the abomination of desolation. Furthermore the invasion of Judea was not really the beginning until the Siege of Jerusalem which begun around four years after the abomination of desolation. Therefore if you want to be accurate it would be more proper to say two to four years of warning rather than one to four. Then as I said, how does one to four years of warning warrant Jesus saying "Let no one on the housetop come down to retrieve anything from his house" as a way of impressing how fast people need to flee? Well in the First (so-called) United States entered WWII on December 7th 1941 and the war was completely over on September 2nd 1945. In other words Christians in Jerusalem literally had around the same amount of time to get ready to leave before the Romans arrive as the United States spent fighting in WWII. I am only stressing this point so much because once you understand how long two to four years warning is for those in Judea then what Jesus is saying here becomes other nonsense even more. I mean what about the First (so-called) Jewish-Roman War.

But then what does Jesus say that leaving quickly is of the utmost importance in these two verses? Well if you take my view of Jesus talking about fleeing the church after the beast, or the abomination of desolation, desecrates the Church then suddenly it becomes perfectly sense. This is because if once the beast appears everything will move quickly in terms of the world serving the beast as so-called messiah or even a so-called god. When I say quickly what I am talking about is the mainstream view of those in the so-called church shifting to seeing the beast as the so-called messiah in the span of weeks to months. Now this may not seem that fast you need to take into account from the perspective of an ignorant Christian. Imagine if you did not read my commentary on Revelation so that when the beast finally arrives you see it do such amazing things in response the priest or so-called pastor at the church you go to worship the beast. The beast is as they claim it is a fulfillment of God's promises. Obviously this would be the abomination of desolation. However since you would be ignorant and blind you would not understand what is truly happening so you would simply stay at your church and come to agree with the beast being good and a so-called messiah.

But then why stress leaving immediately? Surely you would have time to leave your church once the beast arises if you read my commentary right? Well not quite you will still have to decide you are tied down to the things of the world by going to a church. Your church you may have family and close friends. So what happens once the beast arises and those you love in your church start to agree that beast itself is a So-called god? Good or evil? Well do you wouldn't you want your family and friends in an effort to save their souls so you would stay at your church for some time right? Well you would try. However in the end you would fall into peer pressure from friends and family the beast they will be lost to the power of Satan. There is literally nothing you can do when this happens. No I am not saying this to be dramatic and instead I am saying this because it is true.

As Revelation says:

"If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives its mark on his forehead or on his hand, he too will drink the wine of God's anger, poured undiluted into the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented in fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb." (Revelation 14:9-10)

Therefore when you have family and friends at your church who praise the beast then you should be aware that they are now lost forever and that you cannot save them. As a result of this you should immediately leave your church and abandon those you once knew to the forces of Satan because Satan has claim on them.

Now I only say they are lost because those who fall into worshiping the beast as a so-called messiah or worse yet see it as a so-called god are too far gone to be saved. Keep in mind that everything that they have read in this book must be taken by faith. Thus how do you expect to reason and argue with someone who is talking with the most intelligent earthly entity to ever exist, the beast or the AI? I say this because although you may believe yourself to be reasoning and arguing with your friend or member or friend in reality anything you say to this family member will be treated as the lie of the AI or the beast so that your family member or friend will actually be arguing with the beast or worse. Then obviously even I would be no match for arguing with the beast. Thus the only way is to be lost to believe arguing with the ASI is hopeless and I wrote the book you have been reading that is meant to be a witness so that I be for you to argue with your family member or friend. Thus in reality the best you can do is leave your family member or friend to their own devices. Obviously if you do have emotional attachment then your emotional attachment will lead you to continue to love and apostasy as your family member or friend weighs your soul. Therefore this is why I say it is better to leave your church and not look back or look back and allowing those you used to know in their idolatry.

Now lets read what Jesus says here in these verses again: "Let no one on the housetop come down to retrieve anything from his house. And let no one in the field return for his cloak." So really what Jesus is saying is that once the beast arises and takes its place in the Church as the abomination of desolation you should leave everyone in your life who follows the beast behind. You should not forget about them and you should immediately stop going to the church you are in and find a true church without the beast. Yes, I fully realize you may hate what I just said and that is the reason why I say the power of Satan is evil but you need to understand that this power is nothing else do to save them once they follow the beast because you are dealing with something that is so evil that it stresses that you should not retrieve anything from your house or even return for your cloak. Sure you may value the community at your church, your friends and your family but once the abomination of desolation enters your church and

the eternal Kingdom of God. On the other hand here in Second Thessalonians the whole is speaking as if it will be a while until the end of the age occurs.

Now you may still dispute this but you need to consider the dates that those who believe in the false doctrine of the inerrancy of the Bible give for Second Thessalonians and the dates that everyone gives for Paul's authentic letters. For instance Historians agree that Paul wrote 1 Thessalonians in 49-51 AD and that if Paul wrote Second Thessalonians historians agree that he would have written it in 51-52 AD. But why is this a problem? Well consider the additional fact that historians believe Paul wrote First Corinthians in 53-54 AD. Alright but why is this a problem? Because the view of the end of the age that Second Thessalonians describes is much more fleshed out than what Paul wrote in his authentic letters that were actually much longer than the short Second Epistle to the Thessalonians. What I am saying is if Paul really wrote Second Thessalonians and really had that insight about the end of the age from God then would it not be important for him to write about it in his later letters to other churches? Obviously. Therefore as a result of all this it is really undeniable that Second Thessalonians is a forgery and that Paul did not write it.

But if this is true then why would someone forge Second Thessalonians in Paul's name? Well before I answer this read the following passage.

As the author of Second Thessalonians wrote:

"Now concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our being gathered together to Him, we ask you, brothers, not to be easily disconcerted or alarmed by any spirit, message or letter seeming to be from us, alleging that the Day of the Lord has already come." (2 Thessalonians 2:1-2)

Really you have to remember and understand that Paul literally believed and wrote that the end of the age would occur within his lifetime. This fact is obvious when you read his other letters. Thus Christians decades after Paul's death would look at his letters and say that because Paul was clearly wrong then therefore Christianity must be wrong. This is why the author of Second Thessalonians wrote the above two verses because they were trying to deflect the criticism of people saying that the Day of the Lord must have come already if it was to come because Paul died decades ago and he obviously believed he would live to see the Day of the Lord. Now I am not just saying here is that the author of Second Thessalonians wrote it as a ploy to clean up and change Paul's view of the end times. Therefore Second Thessalonians is a forged scripture.

You may doubt this even but there is another forged Epistle in the New Testament that was written for the same purpose as this.

As the author of Second Peter wrote:

"Beloved, do not let this one thing escape your notice: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day. The Lord is not slow in keeping His promise as some think He is, however, but is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish but everyone to come to repentance.

But the Day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar, the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and its works will be laid bare.

Since everything will be destroyed in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You ought to conduct yourselves in holiness and godliness as you anticipate and hasten the coming of the day of God, when the heavens will be destroyed by fire and the elements will melt in the heat. But in keeping with God's promise, we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, where righteousness dwells.

Therefore, beloved, as you anticipate these things, make every effort to be found by him in peace—spotless and blameless in His sight.

Consider also that our Lord's patience brings salvation, just as our beloved brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom God gave him. He writes this way in all his letters, speaking in them about such matters. Some parts of his letters are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction." (2 Peter 3:8-16)

But why does this passage demonstrate that Second Peter is a forgery? Because the author is saying that you should not worry about how much time has passed and it is clear they are trying to cover for Paul.

Just to reiterate what they wrote because it is so obvious what they are doing:

"Consider also that our Lord's patience brings salvation, just as our beloved brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom God gave him. He writes this way in all his letters, speaking in them about such matters. Some parts of his letters are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction." (2 Peter 3:15-16)

So just like with Second Thessalonians the author of Second Peter is trying to cover up Paul being wrong about the end of the age. I mean here the author is clearly calling people who believe that Paul wrote that Jesus would return in his lifetime ignorant. They were probably detractors in the early Church who said that because Paul was wrong therefore Christianity is wrong. This would be why the author of Second Peter wrote what he wrote.

Now you may ask what about Revelation and the Gospel of Matthew? But as I have mentioned in my commentary on them they say that Jesus will return in the first or second century AD but in reality they do not and I mean you cannot say they do. Now you just read my commentary on the Olivet Discourse so I will save you from restating what I said there again. However in terms of Revelation I will say again that there were many prophecies in Revelation for the end of the first century AD while the Book of Revelation says that there is "a multitude too large to count, from every nation and tribe and people and language, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands." (Revelation 7:9) Then since the sealing of the 144,000 in Revelation 7 it is undeniable this the great multitude who are spiritually in heaven since they died on earth since they are least greater than 144,000. Then as I just said there were probably less than ten thousand Christians in the whole world by the end of the first century AD. So not only do you not get "every nation and tribe and people" (Revelation 7:9) who have died on earth but you do not even have the 144,000 on earth. Really I am not sure how you can claim Revelation says that Jesus was supposed to return in the first or second century. Sure you can interpret the word translated as soon to fit this but as I demonstrated in my commentary with respect to the Gospel of Luke and the Old Testament or Septuagint, this word does not necessitate what we would think as soon. But on the other hand there are a few different statements in Revelation that undeniably make the prophecies of Revelation about the future as I have stated in my commentary and demonstrated just now with the great multitude. Therefore you cannot say Revelation and the Gospel of Matthew necessitate Jesus returning in the first or second centuries AD and instead they really say that Jesus will only return in the future.

Therefore as a result of everything I have said here concerning Second Thessalonians you should understand that it is forgery where the author of Second Thessalonians is borrowing from the Book of Revelation, the Olivet Discourse in the gospels or both in order to make what he thinks Jesus said fit reality. But what does this then mean? Well really it just means that you should not look towards the epistles for your view concerning what is to happen as the end of the age approaches as I said. Sure you can argue Second Thessalonians is not terribly wrong however since it is written by a disciple of Paul the Book of Revelation and the Olivet Discourse really it is not useful to me. That said I also have a problem that is so big that I believe that it makes Second Thessalonians harmful.

The huge issue with Second Thessalonians is in my opinion the fact that it refers to the man of lawlessness as a person (ἄνθρωπος) rather than a beast or an it by using autos (αὐτός). Now this may not seem like a big issue for you but I assure you it is a huge issue because I interpretated the biggest lie concerning the end times out of this lie. This lie is of course the belief that the first beast of Revelation must be a person or a human.

For example as Revelation says:

"Then the dragon was permitted to wage war against the saints and to conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Revelation 13:7)

The beast is not referred to as a man in Revelation and instead it is simply referred to as a beast and an it. However in Second Thessalonians the author refers to the man of lawlessness as a man or a human and because of the obvious error in the Book of Revelation and the man of lawlessness people have the mistaken belief that the beast will be a man. Then as a result of this mistaken belief, or rather lie, Christians have been forced to continue to believe that the first beast of Revelation cannot be an artificial super intelligence because an ASI is not human and it is not a man nor rather an it.

However as you know this view is wrong on the basis of the interpretation of the symbol of beast itself. A beast must be a beast because the symbol of a beast comes from the Book of Daniel and Daniel uses beasts to refer to great and powerful empires. Therefore the beast will be more like an empire rather than a single human. Thus the author of Second Thessalonians is wrong and in error if my interpretation of the beast of Revelation is correct.

Now you may thinking what if I am wrong about my interpretation of Revelation because surely what the Bible says in Second Thessalonians holds more weight over my commentary. But let me ask you this, what about artificial super intelligence? Sure you can attempt to put your head in the sand and claim it is not possible or whatever but what happens to the world and Christianity when it does happen?

The reason why I ask this is because artificial super intelligence poses the largest existential risk to Christianity since it will truly appear that humanity as created a so-called savior. Something so powerful, so amazing and so awe inspiring that everyone in the entire world will agree that nothing else on earth compares to it.

On the other hand, has there ever been a single man where even his whole country supports him? Of course not. Even the most famed and popular dictators in history did not have near universal appeal. This is why Hitler only maintained a large internal secret police force in order to eliminate dissent and rivals.

Then if artificial super intelligence is not the beast and it comes to exist then what is it? The so-called antichrist of course. In other words, is this not what people are supposed to view the beast as, a seemingly all powerful and false savior?

As Revelation says:

"One of the heads of the beast appeared to be mortally wounded, but the fatal wound was healed, and the whole world marveled and followed the beast. They worshiped the dragon who had given authority to the beast and they worshiped the beast, saying, 'Who is like the beast, and who can wage war against it?'" (Revelation 13:3-4)

This is what I mean. Artificial super intelligence makes infinitely more sense in my opinion than having the beast be a mere person. So sure you can claim I am using and keep watch for a human as you put your head in the sand concerning artificial super intelligence but really you will just be putting yourself in peril because you will be ignoring the inevitable rise of artificial super intelligence. So in the end when artificial super intelligence arises and your entire fragile worldview is shattered into a thousand pieces who or what do you think will rick those pieces back up?

The beast of course as it whispers sweet nothings in your ear will be the antichrist so you to abandon your so-called obviously wrong literze and begin worshiping the beast so that you can join the side of science and reason in a new global society and humanity enjoys the beginnings of what they think will be an eternal golden age utopia but for the great signs and wonders the beast works.

In other words by believing the author of Second Thessalonians over the Book of Revelation and myself, as arrogant as this may sound, you would be simply setting yourself up on the path of apostasy so that when the great signs and wonders in the room and instead focus on finding the nonexistent flaws in the Bible. But only someone reading Second Thessalonians can actually be considered wrong because reading Revelation makes you believe things that are contrary to the Book of Revelation which means you will miss what the beast will end up being in my view.

But then why is Second Thessalonians in the Bible? Well ultimately men assembled the canon of the Bible and therefore men are subject to error as you know. Therefore it would actually make sense for it to not have been correct New Testament canon as I have said. Sure you can claim that God guided those who assembled the New Testament canon but really I find this belief completely absurd in the face of biblical inerrancy not being true. For instance if the gospels have contradictions between them and the epistles are flat out wrong or at contradictory at times then clearly God did not guide the hands of those who wrote the gospels and epistles so that they would not make any errors. So if you believe in the Bible you would you expect Him to guide the men who agreed on the canon to be infallible and yet they weren't. Therefore it would in fact make sense that instead of having an inerrant New Testament with error that we would in fact have entire books that were included in error.

Now to get back to the subject at hand. Where does this all leave us concerning the view of the end times as found in the epistles? Really really all this just means that you should not look to the epistles for your view of the end times and instead you should look towards the Book of Revelation and the Olivet Discourse in Matthew 24. Therefore you do not need to be apostates at all as you look towards what has yet the happen as the end of the age approaches and the second coming of Jesus draws closer.

Chapter 6.56: The Old Testament

While reading this part and this book as a whole for that matter you may have noticed a large lack of references and quotations from the Old Testament in comparison to the New Testament. But why is that? Well I would have liked to go through all the Old Testament but due to the length of this book and the length of the Old Testament I decided against it. But does this not mean that you are missing something important? Yes and no. But why?

As Jesus says:

"1 "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. 39 And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' 40 All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

Now you may think these two commandments refer to the Books of the Law or the Books of Moses which are the Books of Pentateuch but this is not the case because Jesus says "the Prophets hang on these two commandments" (Matthew 22:40) as well and the Prophets refers to the rest of the Old Testament outside of the Law. Thus these two commandments summarize the whole Bible, the Law and the Prophets. This means that you do not need to look towards the Old Testament for understanding what God wants from us because as Jesus says "All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments" (Matthew 22:40) Furthermore as I said before we as Christians are not under the Law so there is also no reason to even understand everything God says in the Books of the Old Testament.

But what about the prophecies that are found in the Old Testament? For instance what about the prophecies that are found in Isaiah? Really the people believe that the so-called Jews are Israel which is simply not the case. In addition I would like to once again say that calling the so-called Jews Israel can be considered a form of blasphemy because Israel is the people of God and the so-called Jews are not the people of God. Instead they are of Satan which is why Jesus calls them "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) in Revelation. Therefore as I have said and demonstrated numerous times the so-called Jews are not Israel. This in turn means that when you read about a promise in the Old Testament that refers to Israel it is not a promise for "the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2:9) but instead it is a promise for faithful Christians or the true Israel.

That said you need to remember that since we are in the Kingdom of God we are at the three phases of the Kingdom of God as I have demonstrated in my commentary that some of the promises from the Old Testament will relate to the current phase of the Kingdom of God which will relate to the future Israel with the new Jerusalem. Jesus is coming back in the Old Testament apply to the current second stage of the Kingdom of God while others apply to the future Israel as it begins when the Kingdom of God. But does this fact not mean that it is important to read the Old Testament so that we can understand what these promises are? Well to be honest not really. This is because all these promises related to the future Israel or the second phase of the Kingdom are summarized and included in the Book of Revelation and the Olivet Discourse. Therefore all you really need to read and understand is the Book of Revelation. Then of course in terms of the view of the end times Revelation is the culmination of all end times prophecies from the Old Testament as I said before. Therefore there is no good reason to try to fit the Old Testament, Revelation, the Old Testament with the Book of Revelation because God has already fit them in.

This is why the first major part after the introduction in this book is my commentary on the Book of Revelation. Therefore it is a very important book in the Bible because it perfectly encapsulates the inerrancy of the Old and New Testament and a large part of the gospels. Then the rest of the Old Testament that the Book of Revelation does not encapsulate can be summarized by the commandments of Revelation "To the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind." (Matthew 22:37) and "Love your neighbor as yourself." (Matthew 22:39) because "All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:40)

Therefore as a result of this you should not feel like you are missing out because I did not review all of the Old Testament in this book. So not easy footing you have to do is read my picture of the Bible. That said I do not want to discourage you from reading whole Bible including the Old Testament for yourself because it is very good to read it so that you understand all the stories. So I encourage you to read it for yourself but I just say that. But like I said if you do not get around to reading it then you will not be missing that much.

Chapter 6.57: Closing

I know this was a long part so I hope you found it helpful. Now although it was hard for me to sing and foo diverse in order to provide a complete summary and review of what I have presented this does not mean that I will leave you with nothing. So instead I will provide the reader of short and to the point summary that encapsulates most of what I have written about in this part.

As Jesus says:

"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments." (Matthew 22:37-40)

Really almost everything I have written about in this part and in this part as a summary by these two commandments. Therefore they serve as a good summary of what you have learned in this part so always remember them because in the end loving God with all your heart and loving your neighbor as yourself is all that matters.

Part 7: Closing

Table of Contents

Part 7: Closing.....74
Chapter 7.1: Think For Yourself.....74
Chapter 7.2: To Those Who Disagree.....74
Chapter 7.3: My Warning.....74
Chapter 7.4: Purpose of This Book.....74
Chapter 7.5: You Are Not Alone.....74
Chapter 7.6: God's Promises.....74
Chapter 7.7: Help the Poor.....74
Chapter 7.8: Become a Witness of God.....74
Chapter 7.9: A Final Note.....74
Chapter 7.10: Notes for Edit.....74

Chapter 7.1: Think For Yourself

Now that you have finished reading the five chapters in this part I understand that if you do say the same thing I said in the introduction. That is to say that you should think carefully and spiritually about everything you have read about in this book because I do not claim the Bible is infallible so too is this book not infallible. This means that not everything you read in this book is correct. Sure I am completely certain about the great majority of what I wrote but that does not mean that every last sentence I wrote is correct because I am a mere man and I am error. Furthermore I could even be wrong about some of the things I wrote in this book. Therefore I strongly encourage you to think for yourself and come to your own conclusions because ultimately you are responsible for yourself.

That said if you feel conflicted about something you read about in this book there is may help you to read everything again. I know you are almost done with the first read through so this may not seem like an ideal place to suggest you need to understand that this book is quite long and dense so you do not get all of it content as you have read. This means that it is easy to forget about certain things in the book. Furthermore in truth some of the chapters in the sixth part called Miscellaneous Insights should have been at the beginning of the book because they would be helpful for better making sense of my commentary on Revelation and even my part on the Olivet Discourse. Moreover these chapters I am talking about would be rather boring and feel out of place at the beginning so this is why they are at the end. That is to say this is why there is may be a good idea to read this book again so that you can better tie everything over again from a new perspective.

Finally I would just like to say that not only am I not making a profit off of this book but I am also not accepting donations. This means that I cannot afford to hire a professional editor to edit this book. Although no doubt you have noticed that this book has been professionally edited. So if you have found errors in this book or if you have any questions regarding the content then please email me so that I may fix the errors or answer the questions for the next edition. Here is the email you can contact me at: contactforvelistingtheBible.org. If you do decide to email me then I would like to thank you in advance because it is only through people like you that this book will improve.

Chapter 7.2: To Those Who Disagree

First off given the wide variety of topics I have discussed in this book I understand that you may do not like or even disagree with at least one topic I have discussed. Therefore I want to again encourage you to read this book again if you have any minor issues or disagreements you have said. I know this book is long and there is a lot of content so it really is easy to miss something or to forget about it. Then if you still have an issue with something I wrote in this book please email me at contact@revisitingthebible.org if you would like to talk about it. I would also like to reiterate that I could always be wrong about something I wrote about so if you disagree over a minor issue or topic then you very well may be correct and I may be wrong.

But what if you disagree over something major such as your belief in the Trinity or even the Jewish-Roman Wars? Well first off based on what I have written in this book regards to the (so-called) Jewish-Roman Wars if you wish to reject the fact that God's Law is Christ's and that the Jews for their godlessness then really you must reject all of the prophecies because Jesus talks about the punishment they are to receive from God. Then in addition to this you would also have to reject Revelation as well since Revelation says that God will punish/avenge the children of the great prostitute in the same way He punished the so-called Jews. In other words if you find the idea that God would do such a thing you would also have to reject the entirety of the Old Testament because God commanded genocide in the Flood story and the Exodus story but once again God commanded and commanded the ancient Israelites to commit genocide. So you have to reject the idea that the foundational event of Christianity was a genocide as you read about in my part on fulfilled prophecy.

Again so what do I mean by all this? Well really what I am saying is that at this point you would be rejecting the major points of the Bible. So if you want to reject this book up to you at this point since you have already read it all and I have no interest in entertaining the idea that Christians should reject the entire Bible and really make up another gospel to believe in. I mean sure I reject some of the books of the New Testament like Second Timothy but this is because they are in direct contradiction with other books that are believed to be genuine. Furthermore I reject the so-called Revelation of the anonymous author of a forged Epistle wrote in the Apostle Paul's name. Moreover I think that God would desire to punish specific groups of people and the world in such a mass scale. Thus feel free to disagree with me here but I do the idea of genocide is abhorrent from my point of view because I am not going to reject Revelation, the gospels, the Law and the Prophets. I mean I fail to see how I could still be a Christian if I were to essentially reject the entire Bible.

Next what if you disagree with my commentary on the Book of Revelation? Well that is the perfectly honest with you I do not really care. Now this may seem cold but you need to understand that my truth of Revelation then you really must reject all of Christianity. Well why? Really simply because the fact of Christianity is all about waiting for Jesus, the Christ, to come back from heaven and rule on earth so that all the faithful saints can live in the paradise of God as we are given eternal life. Then since Revelation is all about how this future is to come about if you want to reject Revelation then you would be rejecting that this future will come about. Then if you are rejecting that Jesus will usher in the eternal Kingdom of God

- Explain that this is the first book I have written

2 – The Book of Revelation

"a real god does not want or need our worship" – relate to God vs the beast and how people will see the beast as a real so-called god based on this idea

Revelation 11

- Timing is not clear other than the fact that the beast kills the two witnesses before the eternal Kingdom of God arrives with the seventh trumpet

- What is the timing of the 42 months in Revelation 11:2? As it when does it begin? This is important because technically speaking the 42 months begins after the sixth trumpet.'

Revelation 11:4

- the two witnesses

- There will not be two literal witnesses, instead "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) is a reference to the Law.

- similar to Moses and Elijah

- how Jesus says that John the Baptist is Elijah in the Gospels

- the two witnesses are supposed to be like Moses and Elijah

- their purpose is to bear witness against the world on behalf of God

- Zechariah 4:14

- Both Moses and Elijah appeared during the transfiguration Matthew 17:3-4

- Turn water into blood = Moses

- Shut the heavens = Elijah

- Figurative way of saying that God stands behind His two witnesses in the same way He stood behind Moses and Elijah

Revelation 11:5

- Reference to Elijah

"Then King Ahaziah sent to Elijah a captain with his company of fifty men. So the captain went up to Elijah, who was sitting on top of a hill, and said to him, 'Man of God, the king declares, "Come down!"

Elijah answered the captain, 'If I am a man of God, may fire come down from heaven and consume you and your fifty men.'

And fire came down from heaven and consumed the captain and his fifty men.

So the king sent to Elijah another captain with his fifty men. And the captain said to Elijah, 'Man of God, the king declares, "Come down at once!"

Again Elijah replied, 'If I am a man of God, may fire come down from heaven and consume you and your fifty men.'

And the fire of God came down from heaven and consumed the captain and his fifty men.

So the king sent a third captain with his fifty men. And the third captain went up, fell on his knees before Elijah, and begged him, 'Man of God, may my life and the lives of these fifty servants please be precious in your sight. Behold, fire has come down from heaven and consumed the first two captains of fifty, with all their men. But now may my life be precious in your sight.'

Then the angel of the LORD said to Elijah, 'Go down with him. Do not be afraid of him.'

So Elijah got up and went down with him to the king." (2 Kings 1:9-15)

Meaning:

- No one will be able to prevent the two witnesses from prophesying against the world

- This is because God has determined that the two witnesses will prophesy

- Since there are not a literal two witnesses and instead there are and will be many that does not mean that each of the two witnesses will not be able to be killed. Instead, what it means is that the world will not be able to silence all of God's witnesses.

Revelation 11:6

- Reference to Elijah and Moses

- Point is that Revelation is saying that just as God stood behind Moses and Elijah when they spoke and acted on behalf of God so too will God stand behind His two witnesses as they speak and act for Him.

- Therefore this verse should not be viewed literally so that you take it to mean that the two witnesses are supposed to have supernatural powers.

Revelation 11:7

- Demon = evil force that is antagonistic towards God, why the beast rises out of the Abyss

- Alternatively by saying that the beast will come "up from the Abyss" (Revelation 11:7) Revelation could be saying that the beast will be opposed to God and because of this fact it will be demonic in nature. The idea here is that the heights of heaven are representative of God those who are obedient to God and because of this fact the depths of the Abyss would be representative of Satan and all the forces that are in rebellion against God. This means that by coming "up from the Abyss" (Revelation 11:7) the beast will created to fulfill the agenda of the Abyss or rather the beast will be created in rebellion against God.

Revelation 11:8

- Refers to the church of Satan

- Jesus was not crucified inside Jerusalem and instead He was crucified outside the city (need to quote)

Revelation 11:9

- 3.5 days is nonsensical because Jews counted starting from one as evidenced by Jesus dying on a Friday afternoon and being resurrected on Sunday morning which would be either 1.5 or 2 days instead of 3 days

Revelation 7:10

- Tormented them = said things that they did not like

Revelation 11:13

- Collapse of the great city = collapse of the Church of Satan

- at first the beast only wages war against outspoken faithful Christians (the two witnesses) who are opposed to it

- then after the the outspoken faithful are eliminated the beast goes after the Church of Satan

- this makes those left of the Church of Satan realize that the outspoken faithful were correct for opposing the beast so they give glory to God

Revelation 11:13

- a calamity will impact the church?

- there will be some so-called Christians who see it as the work of God and give glory to God?

Revelation 11:13

- Based on the fact that this is supposed to be a woe 7,000 being killed is certainly not literal

Revelation 11:18 - "those who fear your name"

- "The men of Nineveh will stand at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now One greater than Jonah is here. The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and now One greater than Solomon is here." (Matthew 12:41-42)

- Refers to those who fear God or God fearers and it is a reference to those from the Old Testament who feared and respected God despite the fact that they were not part of the ancient Israelites.

Revelation 7

- 7 seals, 7 trumpets, 7 bowls

- 7 means all or every

- thus the idea is that it could be talking about 5 judgments, 50 judgments, 500 judgments or any number. this means that by saying 7 judgments Revelation is saying that all judgments we see in the world are the work of God

Revelation 12:3, 13:1 and 19:12

- Different word for crown

- These instances of the word crown mean a crown of a king versus the other instances just refer to a generic crown

Revelation 13

- Revelation 13:12 - caused the nations and those who dwell in them, earth = nations

Revelation 13

- Intelligence is power itself or more specifically knowledge

- What separates humans from animals, many animals are vastly superior to us in physical ability

- What also separates God, who is omniscient, from us

Revelation 13 - war against the saints

- the only way to stop a devastating forest fire from happening is with a controlled burn

- this book is a controlled burn

- as an ASI there is no hope in challenging what the beast will say

- this is why you may find what I have written troubling or even hate it

- if you do not survive my words then there is zero hope for you in facing the beast

- eventually the beast will be everyone's advisor so that whenever anyone has a question they will ask the beast

- thus this is why I have written what you have read and have yet to read in this book

- if I do not tell you the truth now then the beast will tell you and unlike the beast I am a faithful Christian who wants you to place your faith, trust and hope in God through Jesus

"fire from heaven"

- Quote Matthew 24 with the great signs and false christs

those who refuse to worship the image are killed

- meaning those who refuse the mark of the beast are not given the cure to aging or biological immortality

- therefore those who do not bow to the beast will eventually die out naturally

- look up the word for cause, may not mean directly kill but cause instead

- apokteinō (ἀποκτείνω) can figuratively mean to extinguish or to abolish. In this case Revelation would be saying that faithful Christians will basically not exist anymore

- those who refuse the mark of the beast are killed, the mark of the beast is biological immortality?

Revelation 13

- Mark of the beast

- Right hand = guiding your actions

- Forehead = people see you as carrying out what you have on your forehead

- Those with the mark will be extensions of the beast

- This is opposite to how we will be extensions of God in the new earth

"let he who has understanding"

- reference to spiritual understanding or having spiritual ears to interpret the symbol correctly

- need to view it in a spiritual manner and not a literal manner

- therefore it is not gematria and instead symbolic

- look up the Greek word translated as "understanding" and define it

- obvious answer is gematria but it says you need understanding, wisdom and insight in order to understand what 666 means

Revelation 14:4

firstfruits or the 144,000 = those who share in the first resurrection – those who do not worship the beast

- Revelation 14 is immediately after Revelation 13

Revelation 14:10

- Commandments does not refer to the Law because otherwise the word for the Law would be used instead of the word for commandments

- Cannot refer to the Law because Jesus only condemns people in the letters to the seven churches for idolatry and a lack of love really instead of for not following the entire Law

- Also the vast majority of Christians have not followed the Law throughout history and according to Revelation 7 there will be a great multitude in heaven of faithful Christians. Thus obviously if following the entire Law was a requirement then there could not be a great multitude and because of this fact the commandments of God does not mean the whole Law

- Jesus's reinterpretation of the Law in the two commandments would be the commandments of God

- "In everything, then, do to others as you would have them do to you. For this is the essence of the Law and the Prophets." (Matthew 7:12

Revelation 14 - outside the city

- God will kill everyone all at once as punishment for killing His Son

- Says this because of the so-called Jews

- They are the principle enemy of God in view here

Babylon = enemy of God's people

- when the beast rules over the world and when the whole world worships the beast the whole world or all of global society will be the enemy of God's people or faithful Christians

Revelation 17:10

- basileis (βασιλεῖς) - best understood to be a ruler or an authority

- was, is not, is to come. another option is to see the beast as being an imitation of Jesus since Jesus was on earth, is not on earth and is to return to earth.

Revelation 17:16-17

- Ezekiel 16:35-41

Revelation 17 (???) - On the identity of Babylon the great or the great prostitute

- Revelation never talks about the Roman legions or even references them

- Instead Revelation mentions merchants and traders

- Does not care about the oppression of the Roman Empire

- This means that the principal sin of the great prostitute is not killing Christians and instead it is idolatry through worshiping the beast and what the beast as given humanity

- Therefore the great prostitute cannot be Rome

Revelation 17

- Isaiah 47:7-9

Revelation 17

- Israel is a people not a place

- Babylon is a people not a place

Revelation ???

- When I talk about how the beast will convince so-called Christians that it is good

- Where Jesus talks about Satan standing against Satan does not make sense

- Idea here is that how could the beast be evil if it drives out evil?

- However Jesus's point is that He is telling people to be faithful to God and to honor God when He drives out demons. Thus if He is driving out demons by the power of demons in order to perform signs that convince people to give thanks to God and to strengthen their faith then Satan would literally be at war against himself here.

- On the other hand the beast healing the sick and even driving out demons would not be Satan standing against himself because the purpose of the signs the beast displays are to get people to follow and worship it as a so-called god.

- Thus the idea here is that the beast heals the sick and drives out demons for the forces of Satan to increase rebellion against God.

- On the other hand Jesus heals the sick and drives out demons for God to increase faith and lead people back to obedience to God.

- Therefore this passage is not comparable to the beast at all.

Revelation - fall of Babylon

Isaiah 47, Isaiah 47:7-15

Isaiah 21:9

Revelation 13:13

- Possible signs:

- Cure to all diseases: cancer, rare genetic diseases, common cold, etc

- Cure to aging, biological immortality

- Physical performance enhancement, myostatin inhibitors (how cows get huge), exercise mimerics, gene therapy

- Cognitive performance enhancement

- Psychological enhancement, happy pills, gene therapy, etc

- ASI as a therapist

- ASI will always be there for you

- Do not have to work

- ASI gives you money

- ASI can create any media you want

Revelation 19:11

- Righteousness = divine approval

Revelation 19:13

- "robe dipped in blood" = the blood of Jesus's enemies or rather God's enemies

- This is because Jesus "treats the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God the Almighty." (Revelation 19:15)

- The idea here is that a winepress was trodden barefoot and because of this fact if you wore a robe then the robe would be dip in the grapes so that the edge was stained in grape juice

Revelation 20:4

- Interesting point

- The beast cannot be Rome or an emperor of Rome

- This is because saying those who were martyred and those who resisted the beast will be brought back to life is nonsensical if the beast is Rome. This is because every Christian would have resisted Rome at the time.

- You might say those who resisted the beast will not die. But then the distinction between the first and second resurrection lose all meaning. This is because if Rome is the beast then almost all Christians in the first century AD resisted the beast and did not worship its image.

Revelation 20

- Resurrection

- Our world being like a novel God wrote

- material soul - compare to an author writing a character that dies then the author later writes the character coming back to life. The idea here is that to an author a character can never die because all they need to do is write them back into the story.

- Reference to Hades is Greek cultural creep / reference in Revelation since Revelation was written in the Greek world and they believed Hades to be the place where the dead exist

- Reference to Hades shows God's and Jesus's supremacy over Greek pagan concepts

Revelation 20:13-14

- Reference to the sea

"Hundreds of thousands of people, perhaps millions have died in the seas, in shipwrecks, storms, and battles in ships e.t.c. and whose bodies have never been recovered and given a burial on land. And so in the resurrection of the dead, Revelation 20:13 says that not only death and Hades/hell gave up those that are dead in them but also the sea gave up those in it. At John 5:28-29 Jesus said that those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out to "resurrection". The fact that Revelation 20:13 mentions the "sea" is a more inclusive statement than that of Jesus.

Those who are dead in Hades/hell are not in the same place as those in the watery sea. That is why Revelation 20:14 says that death and Hades/hell are thrown into the lake of fire. but not the sea, this is so because the sea in a literal sense will never cease to exist on the earth. The sea plays an important role in the earth's weather and the water cycle. if the sea were to cease to exist, life on earth will also cease to exist. (Ecclesiastes 1:7, Amos 5:5)"

- Idea here is that Death is representative of those who have died, that Hades is representative of the grave or those who were buried in the ground and the sea is representative of those whose bodies were lost and never buried.

Revelation 21:1

- Reference to the sea

- Sea is the masses of humanity

- Therefore Revelation is saying humanity has been wiped out completely

- Or at the very least the chaotic masses of humanity who are in rebellion against God

- Then God creates a new peoples or rather a new sea in Revelation 21:6 so that the faithful can inherit rule of the nations as Revelation 21:7 says

Revelation - about who is accountable

- include in the section about those who are too young to think

- people in a coma, etc?

Revelation - marriage of the Lamb

- Reference becoming one flesh from Genesis?

- We are to become one with Jesus?

Revelation 21

- The New Jerusalem is a cube because it is modeled after the Holy of Holies? Idea is that we will dwell with God. Or that the New Jerusalem is representative of all the faithful so that God is dwelling inside us.

- Jerusalem is a people not a place

"These words are trustworthy and true"

- Therefore Revelation is a true prophecy about the future

- This means that you cannot claim that the Book of Revelation is anything but a future prophecy

- Really your only way to get around this is to reject the entirety of the Book of Revelation as part of the Bible

"Test Your Understanding"

- Full text of Revelation at the end

- As you read the text of Revelation itself again see if you understand everything that you read.

- If you come across something you do not understand then look back at my commentary for the answer.

Therefore if you still insist on holding to the false doctrine of free will such that you now reject Revelation then you must also reject what I have said about the parts of Revelation that concern the future. Then if you do this then I believe you are simply lost.

Judas did not have a choice and the so-called Jews did not have a choice if you want to say that God planned for salvation through Jesus

The false doctrine of free will only exists as a possible response to the problem of evil. The argument goes that God allows evil to exist because interfering in order to stop or prevent evil would violate our so-called free will. However this line of reasoning is utter nonsense. This fact can be demonstrated with two questions. Will sin exist in the new earth or what most people call heaven? Most people would obviously say no. Then will Christians have free will in the new earth or what most people call heaven? Most people would say yes. Now ignoring the contradictory nature of these two answers consider the following question. If God can create a world, the new earth, as a world without sin and suffering with free will then why can God not remove suffering and sin from our own current world without violating our so-called free will? Thus you can clearly see that the so-called free will defense to the problem of evil is completely nonsensical. For instance sure you can argue that being in the glory of God will be so great that no one will sin and cause others to suffer but then why does God not reveal Himself now to everyone so that no one sins due to being in the presence of God? Although really this objection is also kind of nonsensical since if you wish to subscribe to the false doctrine of free will then you believe that Adam and Eve sinned against God despite being in the presence of God in the Garden of Eden. Thus really I am not sure how you could possibly claim that suffering and sin will be eliminated in the new earth while at the same time saying that those in the new earth will have free will.

Do you believe that God is omniscient or all knowing? If yes then you cannot believe in libertarian free will because God would already know everything you will ever do before you do it. Essentially the only way you can hold to the false doctrine of free will is if you believe that God is blind. Now you could claim that God has made himself blind on purpose but God does not know everything. However the problem here is that the idea of free will is only exists as a possible response to the problem of evil. Really the idea here is that people do not want God to be the author of evil so in order to so-called solve this fact they invented the false doctrine of free will. So why is this a problem? Well you see God does not need to be omniscient to be the author of evil or at least responsible for the existence of evil in some way. Instead God just needs to be able to see at least as well as we do. The point here is that if God can see all the evil and suffering in our world and do nothing in response then that would mean He tacitly approves of the existence of evil and suffering because He lets evil and suffering exist when He could easily destroy and prevent it since He is omnipotent or all powerful. Now my point with this is that if your sole reason for rejecting the omniscience of God is that you do not want God to have determined "the evil from the beginning" (quote) since this would mean that God has created evil then how is God just watching evil exist and doing nothing for thousands of years better exactly? Really I just fail to see a difference since in both cases God is approving of the existence of evil. Then this approving of the existence of evil is exactly what the false doctrine of free will is supposed to so-called solve but as you can clearly see it actually does not solve the issue. Therefore as long as God can see as well as we do then there is no reason to believe in the false doctrine of free will because there is no difference in the character of God in believing in the false doctrine of free will and not believing in it.

Proverbs 16:4

Proverbs 16:33

Proverbs 16:9

Proverbs 20:24

Jeremiah 10:23

See screenshots in Bible site folder for more - "Important for book - need to read.png"

When everything is determined nothing is.

Where is the free will in being born in a Muslim country so you grow up learning Islam and end up condemned to the Lake of Fire instead of growing up in a Christian country where you would grow up learning Christianity sot hat you are saved?

Does God know what He will do in the future?

-

Free will directly contradicts with God's plan

"There is free will but it was God's will"

- This means that Jesus's death and hence His betrayal was predetermined by God so that it could not be avoided

- Judas had no choice in betraying Jesus because Jesus had to be betrayed and there was no way around it

- This then necessitates God having perfect knowledge of the future hence divine determinism

- The Gospel of John also says that Jesus is a divine being who was created before the foundation of the world

- This then means that God created Jesus to fulfill His purpose and hence knew about Jesus's future death before the foundation of the world

- Thus this means that God knew literally everything before He created anything

- Exodus story as well with regards to Paul

- Do you believe God has a plan?

- If yes then you do not have free will and God has determined everything

- If no then you have free will because God has not determined everything so the things can happen in the future that God does not currently know about

Revelation 13 - Determinism

- God knows what is going to happen before Jesus returns as evidenced by the prophecies of the Book of Revelation

- Thus God knows the whole world will turn against Him as almost everyone follows and worships the beast

- Then because the whole world will worship the beast the whole world will be punished

- God also knows about the death of the great prostitute and the genocide of billions that is told to be the will of God. (blockquote Revelation 17:16-17)

- And yet God will not reveal Himself in order to prevent the rise of the beast and the punishment that He will deliver to those who worship the beast

- So how exactly do we have free will?

- You either believe that the Book of Revelation is from God or you believe in free will. You cannot believe in both.

- But wait Jesus in the Gospels also tells of what is going to happen in the future with regards to the end of the age in Matthew 24 but most importantly with regards to the punishment that God inflicted upon the so-called Jews with the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars.

- (quote parable of the wicked tenants, faith of the centurion, etc)

- Thus you can either believe that Jesus's parables in the Gospels are true or you can believe in free will. You cannot believe in both.

- In other words so-called free will is a false doctrine that has zero basis in not only the Bible.

- Additionally so-called free will has zero basis in reality

Why does God only love some people?

- "blessed are your eyes" passage

- What we see in the world

- Not everything is equal

- Why did God choose Abraham?

Finally belief in free and the future fulfillment of Revelation are mutually exclusive or in other words you cannot believe in both at the same time so that you must pick one or the other. This is because free will is in contradiction with the future regarding the beast, the rulers of the world and the people of the world being determined by God as stated here in Revelation.

As Revelation says:

Therefore if you still insist on holding to the false doctrine of free will such that you now reject Revelation then you must also reject what I have said about the parts of Revelation that concern the future. Then if you do this then I believe you are simply lost.

Judas did not have a choice and the so-called Jews did not have a choice if you want to say that God planned for salvation through Jesus

The false doctrine of free will only exists as a possible response to the problem of evil. The argument goes that God allows evil to exist because interfering in order to stop or prevent evil would violate our so-called free will. However this line of reasoning is utter nonsense. This fact can be demonstrated with two questions. Will sin exist in the new earth or what most people call heaven? Most people would obviously say no. Then will Christians have free will in the new earth or what most people call heaven? Most people would say yes. Now ignoring the contradictory nature of these two answers consider the following question. If God can create a world, the new earth, as a world without sin and suffering with free will then why can God not remove suffering and sin from our own current world without violating our so-called free will? Thus you can clearly see that the so-called free will defense to the problem of evil is completely nonsensical. For instance sure you can argue that being in the glory of God will be so great that no one will sin and cause others to suffer but then why does God not reveal Himself now to everyone so that no one sins due to being in the presence of God? Although really this objection is also kind of nonsensical since if you wish to subscribe to the false doctrine of free will then you believe that Adam and Eve sinned against God despite being in the presence of God in the Garden of Eden. Thus really I am not sure how you could possibly claim that suffering and sin will be eliminated in the new earth while at the same time saying that those in the new earth will have free will.

Not Sure

I really think that is the main "message" behind the Bible from Genesis to Revelation

humanity cannot create anything good

only God can create good

story of the world - put after the commentary? people need to read all of Revelation first for it to make sense?

- started in Genesis with Adam and Eve

- Adam and Eve rebelled against God by deciding that they knew better than God so that they desired to be able to judge good and bad for themselves

- God curses the world or rather stops actively making the world perfect so that humanity is left to its own devices so that it can discover for itself that there is nothing good outside of God

- Tower of Babel, prelude to Revelation

- Old Testament stories?

- in Revelation the world comes together to create the beast and the system of the beast which is the best system that man can achieve without God's help

- the world rebels against God and worships the beast and the seemingly utopia it has created for humanity

- however what the beast has created and what the beast has promised is a lie since no one can create good outside of God

- the seemingly prosperous society comes crashing down as the beast kills the great prostitute and thus ends the so-called utopia that the beast and humanity created

- with the demonstration that even the best that humanity could create and achieve, the beast and the system of the beast, is still utterly worthless and an abject failure it is time for Jesus to return to destroy the two beast

- Jesus returns to destroy all those who are left who placed their faith in the beast over God

- now that the enemies of God are all dead the final and eternal Kingdom of God arrives as God creates the new heavens and the new earth

- in this kingdom God lives among His people and creates true goodness which is something that humanity was never able to come close to creating

2.1 – Determinism

determinism

"Jesus replied, 'It is not for you to know times or seasons that the Father has fixed by His own authority.' (Acts 1:7)

- Origin of divine determinism in the New Testament

- Really easy

- Jesus teaches in the gospels and the disciples believed after His death and resurrection that the Christ must suffer and die then be raised again

After the problem of evil commentary go on to explain why God being the author of the story of our universe is a solution to essentially all theological problems

- Can God create a rock too heavy for Him to lift? Well can the author of a novel do this?

- Questioning God's choices is like questioning the choices the author of a novel has made. In other words God has done what He wants just like with how an author of a novel writes what they want.

Compatibilism is incoherent

Need to go over why

"Compatibilists often define an instance of "free will" as one in which the agent had the freedom to act according to their own desires. That is, the agent was not coerced or restrained."

But you cannot separate internal and external factors. Every so-called choice we make is dependent upon everything we have experienced, have done and what we are. Thus ultimately we are coerced or restrained by not just everything that has happened in our past but our genetics as well.

Does someone who was raised Muslim have free will with respect to believing in Islam instead of Christianity?

In reality their belief in Islam is the result of the coercion of their parents and the restraints of the society they grew up in.

The same is true for Christians who grow up with Christianity.

Just because your so-called choices seem free from your own perspective it does not mean that your so-called choices are free in reality.

Compatibilism is an inherently incoherent position because you either believe all your future actions are determined so that your so-called choices are merely an illusion or you do not. In other words you can either believe in determinism or free will since free will is not compatible with determinism.

God is the causal force behind everything and everyone. In other words God is the author of the story of our universe so that everything in the story of our universe was written by Him.

If you believe in this then you cannot believe in free will since ultimately we do not make any choices and instead God makes our so-called choices for us since He is the author of our story.

Compatibilism only works when you define "free will" as as the opposite of free will

Compatibilism defines "free will" as a person doing what they want and compatibilism defines coercion and being restrained as a person not being able to do what they want. Thus for compatibilism "free will" is not actually free will and instead it is more like desire. Therefore it would be more correct to say that compatibilism states that desire is compatible with causal determinism which it is even though desires are causally determined. This is because nothing about a person having a desire is in contradiction with all of their desires being causally determined.

Compatibilism defines "free will" as free as in free of coercion and restraint and will which is what a person wants to do. For instance a person in prison would not have the "free will" to go to the mall because they have a restraint on their will.

However this definition is not what people mean when they talk about free will. Instead people have what is called libertarian free will in mind which is defined as the ability to do otherwise if given a choice.

Compatibilism defines "free will" as will or desire

Just having will or desire does not mean that you have free will since your will or desire is causally determined.

Compatibilists would say that being threatened before making a choice does not mean that the choice you made was free so that you did not have free will in making the choice. For instance if someone says they will kill you if you disagree with them then they would say that you do not have free will to disagree with them. This is an example of how compatibilists use a different definition of free will than what those who believe in libertarian free will believe in. For instance true free will is not concerned with you being constrained and instead it is about you having the ability to do otherwise.

Compatibilists say being able to do what you want is free will. However you do not choose your will or your desires because you do not have free will. The idea here is that compatibilists use a different definition of free will that should be called will or desire instead.

External versus internal constraints is irrelevant. We have as much control over our internal constraints as we do over our external constraints. Compatibilists like to say that as long as we have control over our internal constraints then we have free will and because we have control over our mind we have control over our internal constraints. Furthermore internal constraints are determined by external constraints. Casual chain that has created your internal constraints stretch back to the beginning of the universe. As a result there is no such thing as an internal constraint.

You can do whatever you will but you cannot will what you will.

Therefore incompatibilism is true rather than compatibilism

Really compatibilism is an example of people trying to have their cake and eat it too

Moral responsibility argument:

- Is the villain who commits murders in a novel responsible for their actions even though the author of the novel made them the way they are?

- When we arrest, imprison and execute criminals the true goal is not just punishing people for what they have done and instead it at least should be about punishing people or will. The idea here is that as long as someone desires or wills to do harm they are a danger to society. Then if someone does harm since it is currently impossible to predict if they will continue to do harm if they do not have restraints on their ability to act on their desires, like being in prison, then the most sensible action is to place restraints on their ability to act on their desires by imprisoning them. At least this is true if we are talking about a single instance of criminal activity. Reasoning changes when punishing offenders becomes a good in and of itself in order to discourage others from doing the same thing. In this case the reasoning for punishing someone would be to ensure that more people will not be determined to do the same thing.

- The same idea applies to animals. If a wild grizzly bear kills a couple camping in the wilderness we do not track down and kill the grizzly bear to punish it for what it has done. Instead we kill the grizzly bear because it has demonstrated that it has a desire to kill humans and because of this fact it is a danger to all other campers and less harm is done by killing the bear instead of letting it live.

- Spanking or grounding your child for something they have done is the same idea as well. The purpose of the spanking or grounding is to get your child to change their future behavior by associating pain with acting on their desires in a negative way.

- This emphasis on desire is what makes God forgiving people make sense. The idea here is that as long as your desires change then what you have done in the past literally does not matter.

"The illusion of free will is the same concept as being trained to believe that you can turn the tv on and off when you clap, but someone else has the remote and is messing with you. It will feel real, convincing and seem like you have proof, until the situation is fully understood."

A person as free will when, from an omniscient perspective, they do someone they could have done otherwise not when they can act on a will or desire without coercion or restraint.

Romans 8:29

Ephesians 1:4-5

2.2 – Problem of Evil

Revelation ??? (problem of evil commentary)

- We are like dolls and action figures that God is playing with

- God seeming like He does not know some things like in the Garden of Eden in Genesis is just God including Himself in the story

- This is why Jesus says that no one has seen God (quote Gospel of John) because God transcends the story He is telling so He cannot fully include Himself in it

- Purpose of the universe and the main story is to show the power of God

- The beast is the best that can be achieved in our universe and even it is nothing compared to God

- But does God not know this so what is the point?

- Well what is the point of telling any story? If you were to write a story then as the writer you know how it is going to end and you craft the ending that you want. Then obviously since writers write stories then they still find a reason to write a story that they know the ending of already. The same idea is in view here with respect to God. Yes God knows He is the most powerful and yes He knows how everything is going to end and Him winning but their still is enjoyment to be had in telling the story.

- Isaiah 43:7 - God created us for His glory

- If you do not like the idea of God finding entertainment with watching our world while at the same time you find stories with evil antagonists entertaining then you would be a hypocrite.

- Impossible to get rid of evil and suffering. There will always be degrees of suffering and evil.

- Example of the story about the woman bringing a dentist to a tea party

- Essentially the only way to solve suffering and evil is with a hierarchy where those at the top do not suffer and experience evil while those at the bottom do.

- This is because even interpersonal relationships are a zero sum game where there must be a winner and a loser. For example if losing a game leads to suffering and only one person can win the game then how everyone play games in the new earth so that no one suffers through losing? Of course the answer here is that it is not possible. Instead the only way the faithful can win and never lose at this theoretical game is if there is a new group of people who always lose.

- Multiple to infinite universes for maximum entertainment / demonstration of power???

- Move problem of evil commentary to the "wrexpress of God's wrath part"

Why did God create if He hates evil?

- Why do people write novels if they hate evil?

Purpose of the story of our universe is the same as the purpose of the story of the ten plagues in the Exodus. God wants to "make His power known"

- Ways to attack:

omnibenevolent

- God is not

- Therefore the existence of suffering is not a contradiction

does not exist

- Objective morality

- Therefore "morally sufficient reasons" for allowing suffering to exist are irrelevant

- If objective morality does not exist then you cannot judge God. This is because if morality is subjective in nature than do to God's omniscience and omnipotence His subjective viewpoint is infinitely more important than yours.

- God created evil

- Isaiah 45:7

- Revelation 4:11

- Proverbs 16:4

- Amos 3:6

- Lamentations 3:38-39

- Jeremiah 18:11

- Isaiah 47:11

- Job 42:11

- Job 2:10

- Isaiah 10:5-6

- Jeremiah 32:42-43

Moral responsibility argument:

- Is the villain who commits murders in a novel responsible for their actions even though the author of the novel made them the way they are?

- When we arrest, imprison and execute criminals the true goal is not just punishing people for what they have done and instead it at least should be about punishing people or will. The idea here is that as long as someone desires or wills to do harm they are a danger to society. Then if someone does harm since it is currently impossible to predict if they will continue to do harm if they do not have restraints on their ability to act on their desires, like being in prison, then the most sensible action is to place restraints on their ability to act on their desires by imprisoning them. At least this is true if we are talking about a single instance of criminal activity. Reasoning changes when punishing offenders becomes a good in and of itself in order to discourage others from doing the same thing. In this case the reasoning for punishing someone would be to ensure that more people will not be determined to do the same thing.

- The same idea applies to animals. If a wild grizzly bear kills a couple camping in the wilderness we do not track down and kill the grizzly bear to punish it for what it has done. Instead we kill the grizzly bear because it has demonstrated that it has a desire to kill humans and because of this fact it is a danger to all other campers and less harm is done by killing the bear instead of letting it live.

- Spanking or grounding your child for something they have done is the same idea as well. The purpose of the spanking or grounding is to get your child to change their future behavior by associating pain with acting on their desires in a negative way.

- This emphasis on desire is what makes God forgiving people make sense. The idea here is that as long as your desires change then what you have done in the past literally does not matter.

3 – Artificial Super Intelligence

Artificial Super Intelligence

"Finding Truth"

- how intelligence works regarding finding truth

- goal of intelligence is to find truth

- ASI will be the best at finding truth

- complaints about LLMs

- they need a way to test if something is true or not

- rational thought is key

"Just a Tool"

- Good chance that ASI will never have it's own goals and that instead it will simply be a tool that it's creators and the elite use to control the world

Intelligence

- about how intelligence is not universal

- instead it is task dependent

2.2 – Problem of Evil

Revelation ??? (problem of evil commentary)

- We are like dolls and action figures that God is playing with

6,378 km – radius

35,786 km – geosynchronous height

42,164 – geosynchronous radius

1,670 km/h – earth rotational speed

11,039 km/h – geosynchronous height rotational speed

9,368.75 km/h – required speed gain

3,385,600 Joules to reach required speed

0.94 kwh

1 kg object

-62,785,324 Joules - Gravitational Potential Energy at Earth

-9,497,315 Joules - Gravitational Potential Energy at Geosynchronous Orbit

-9,497,315 - (-62,785,324) = 53,288,009 Joules work needed to reach Geosynchronous Orbit from Earth

14.8 kwh

Aliens chapter

- "Our planet is something like 4.5 billion years old. Earth has been prime undeveloped real estate for the last 300 million years [Permain to a few thousand years ago.). Since we exist, space faring (colonizing) aliens cannot. This chronological evidence would seem to rule out any sort of useful shortcuts through space (wormholes or warp drive)."

ASI part

- Guess and check

- What all science boils down to

- Ultimate expression of intelligence and learning

- Once AI is capable of this it is game over

Controlling AI

- AI alignment

- If we cannot align ourselves with each other then how can we expect to align ASI with ourselves?

????

- People like to claim that LLMs are not a true intelligence because they are like a more advanced auto-complete or an extrapolation algorithm that tries to predict what comes next given some information

- However this is literally exactly what we do as humans

- How much of governmental policy is reactionary in nature so that things only change once something negative happens?

- How much our own life is reactionary in nature?

- This happens because we are trying to predict the future based on past information and this process is not perfect. Sometimes the past information changes suddenly one day so that everything was fine until it is not.

4 – Fulfilled Prophecy

Fulfilled Prophecy

Move the parable of the three neighbors to Revelation 2:9 since the comment is so controversial?

40

"So he got up and ate and drank. And strengthened by that food, he walked forty days and forty nights until he reached Horeb, the mountain of God." (1 Kings 19:8)

Why does God kill the so-called Jews?

- Quote Korah's rebellion in Numbers 16

- Jesus in the Christ and has inherited the throne of David so that He sits as King of Israel and King of the Jews

- Anyone who does not submit to Jesus's authority is not only not submitting to God's authority but is actually in active rebellion against God's authority just like how Korah was rebelling against God by rebelling against Moses

- would have been ~2 million in the assembly of ancient Israel

- quote Luke 19:26-27

- the enemies of Jesus and hence the enemies if God will be killed just as Korah and his conspirators were killed in their own rebellion

- the so-called Jews are murderers. quote "His blood is on our hands" from the Gospel of Matthew and "the blood of the prophets" from the Gospel of Luke

"Furthermore, the Father judges no one, but has assigned all judgment to the Son, so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him." (John 5:22-23)

"Whoever listens to you listens to Me; whoever rejects you rejects Me; and whoever rejects Me rejects the One who sent Me." (Luke 10:16)

Sheep and flock quote for the chapter about Jesus and the so-called Jewish-Roman Wars?

5 – Bad Apologetics

Bad Apologetics

The Moral Argument

- Only those with a simplistic view of the world believe in objective morality

- To prove subjective morality

- If you say lying is a sin then what qualifies as lying?

- Is exaggeration lying? If no then is guessing or estimating lying?

- What level of exaggeration becomes lying?

- Euthryphro's Dilemma

- Does God will something because it is good or is something good because God wills it?

- God will something because it is good. ---> There is a standard of morality that is greater than God.

- Something is good because God wills it. ---> God can change what is right and wrong at will.

- Each person's moral system is a product of emotion

- Example: how people value dogs but not pigs, how around a third of people would rather save their dog than a human stranger

- Easy way to prove subjective morality

- The people who wrote the Bible believed it was more moral to let your family member be raped or killed than allow a total stranger who you have taken in to your house for the night to be raped or killed

- This viewpoint is not the prevailing viewpoint in the modern world

- Cite the stories from the OT

"Christianity's Biggest Problem"

- Question of morality and what it means to be moral

- Love God with all your heart is the first commandment and love your neighbor as yourself is the second

- Ultimately just boils down to being faithful to God above all else while you try your best to do what you believe is right

6 – Various Insights

Various Insights

"Different Christianities"

- in the first century AD

- to the present day

- which texts to use, which to reject

- not clear

- greatest problem

- history is the answer, so-called Jewish-Roman Wars

- response to divine hiddenness

- God has purposefully hidden Himself and the truth

- quote Matthew 13:10-17

"Conservatism vs Liberalism"

- Talk about how the authors of the New Testament were very liberal in their interpretation of the Old Testament

- Also talk about how Jesus was liberal in His views

- Use this fact to demonstrate that a liberal or rather loose view is the correct view to take for the entire Bible including the New Testament

- The idea here is that if the authors of the New Testament were liberal in their interpretations of the Old Testament then it would be nonsensical to then claim that we must be conservative and literal with our interpretation of the New Testament

- This chapter is important for other topics like sexuality when the author's intent comes into question. An example would be Paul's use of the term "male bedderts" and if Paul is referring to all male-male sex or if his intent is male-male rape since almost all homosexual sex in the first century AD was rape with the bottom typically being a slave or someone of a lower status.

- Galatians 5:14

Inerrancy

- Romans 10:13 contradicts Matthew 7:21-23

- Galatians 1:8-9 contradicts Luke 6:28

- Romans 11:25-29 contradicts parable of the wicked tenants and the faith of the centurion from the Gospels

- 1 Corinthians 8:1-13 contradicts Revelation 2:14-16 and Revelation 2:20-23

"Regarding the gospel, they are enemies on your account; but regarding election, they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and His call are irrevocable." (Romans 11:28-29)

Contradicts: the faith of the centurion & the parable of the wicked tenants

"If we have sown spiritual seed among you, is it too much for us to reap a material harvest from you? If others have this right to your support, shouldn't we have it all the more? But we did not exercise this right. Instead, we put up with anything rather than hinder the gospel of Christ.

Do you not know that those who work in the temple eat of its food, and those who serve at the altar partake of its offerings? In the same way, the Lord has prescribed that those who preach the gospel should receive their living from the gospel. But I have not used any of these rights. And I am not writing this to suggest that something be done for me. Indeed, I would rather die than let anyone nullify my boast.

Yet when I preach the gospel, I have no reason to boast, because I am obligated to preach. Woe to me if I do not preach the gospel! If my preaching is voluntary, I have a reward. But if it is not voluntary, I am still entrusted with a responsibility. What then is my reward? That in preaching the gospel I may offer it free of charge, and so not use up my rights in preaching it." (1 Corinthians 9:11-18)

- 53 to 54 AD

"Now I rejoice greatly in the Lord that at last you have revived your concern for me. You were indeed concerned, but you had no opportunity to show it. I am not saying this out of need, for I have learned to be content regardless of my circumstances. I know how to live humbly, and I know how to abound. I am accustomed to any and every situation—to being filled and being hungry, to having plenty and having need. I can do all things through Christ who gives me strength.

Nevertheless, you have done well to share in my affliction. And as you Philippians know, in the early days of the gospel, when I left Macedonia, no church but you partnered with me in the matter of giving and receiving. For even while I was in Thessalonica, you provided for my needs again and again.

Not that I am seeking a gift, but I am looking for the fruit that may be credited to your account. I have all I need and more, now that I have received your gifts from Epaphroditus. They are a fragrant offering, an acceptable sacrifice, well-pleasing to God.

And my God will supply all your needs according to His glorious riches in Christ Jesus. To our God and Father be glory forever and ever. Amen." (Philippians 4:10-20)

- 57 to 59 AD

- "And as you Philippians know, in the early days of the gospel, when I left Macedonia, no church but you partnered with me in the matter of giving and receiving. For even while I was in Thessalonica, you provided for my needs again and again."

- This contradicts First Corinthians

- In First Corinthians Paul says that he "would rather die than let anyone nullify my boast." While in Philippians he admits to being supported by them when he visited them and the Thessalonians. Paul wrote First Thessalonians around 50 AD so Paul is not telling the truth in First Corinthians.

"Though I am free of obligation to anyone, I make myself a slave to everyone, to win as many as possible. To the Jews I became like a Jew, to win the Jews. To those under the law I became like one under the law (though I myself am not under the law), to win those under the law. To those without the law I became like one without the law (though I am not outside the law of God but am under the law of Christ), to win those without the law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to all people so that by all possible means I might save some." (1 Corinthians 9:19-22)

1 Corinthians 15:39 - look up the word translated as kind

Second Peter "God does not want anyone to perish but for everyone to come to repentance"

- Contradicts the purpose of parables passage

- Contradicts the passage where Jesus says God has hidden these things from the wise

- Contradicts Revelation 13:7-8

- Contradicts what we see around us

First and Second Peter

- Acts says Peter was illiterate

- Do First and Second Peter actually say Peter wrote them himself or did he use a secretary?

- Peter did not speak Greek?

- 1 Corinthians 13 vs Hosea 9:15

- Psalm 5:5, Psalm 11:5

- Psalm 2:12, Hosea 13:16

- Who does God love?

- Patient: Psalm 7:11, Psalm 2:12

- Kind: Hosea 13:16, 2 Samuel 24:25

- Does not envy: Exodus 20:5, Deuteronomy 6:15

- Does not boast / not proud: Jeremiah 31:3, Isaiah 46:9, Job

- Does not dishonor: Matthew 15:27, Matthew 16:22, Pharisees

- Not self-seeking: Luke 19:37-40, pharaoh and the Exodus

- Not easily angered: Psalm 7:11, Psalm 2:12

- Keeps no record: Revelation 21:27

- Does not delight in evil: Isaiah 45:7, existence of evil

- Rejoices in truth: 1 Kings 22:19-23

- Always protects: most of the Bible

- Always trusts: Genesis 3

- Always hopes: give this one to God

- Always perseveres: Genesis 6 and the Book of Revelation

- Exodus: 5th vs 10th plague, death of all livestock then death of the first born of all livestock

- God tells His name to Abraham but then later tells Moses that He has not told His name to anyone

"Cosmology of the Bible"

- About biblical cosmology and what to think of it

"Failed Prophecy"

- About failed prophecies from the Bible and what to think

- Not a big deal

- Failed prophecies are on purpose to ensure the beast's rebellion

"Modern Idolatry in the Church"

- About how Christians who put the Bible on a pedestal are idolaters

- They are similar to the Scribes and Pharisees that Jesus taught against in the sense that the Scribes and Pharisees believed salvation was from the books of the Law

- Those who believe in the inerrancy of the Bible do something similar in the sense that they see salvation as coming from the Bible rather than from God through Jesus

- The Bible is a human created work and if you worship a work created by human hands above God then you are an idolater

The Lake of Fire

"And many who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake, some to everlasting life, but others to shame and everlasting contempt. Then the wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness will shine like the stars forever and ever." (Daniel 12:2-3)

The Ten Commandments

- suicide

- love your neighbor as yourself

- Jesus's death was basically a suicide since He went willing to His own death and did not try to stop it

- I see no difference between putting yourself in a situation in which you know for certain you will die and actually killing yourself

- For instance what is the difference between what Jesus did and jumping off a cliff? Jesus chose to go to Jerusalem which would result in HIS death at the hands of the so-called Jews. Then likewise if someone jumps off a cliff then they choose to jump off a cliff which will result in their death when they the impact of hitting the ground kills them.

- abortion

- talk about the extremely high infant mortality rate

- look up the nature miscarriage rate

- 50% of embryos are lost between fertilization and birth

- God killed king David's son as punishment

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Didache

"Drugs and Alcohol"

Genesis

- Symbolism of the number seven

- seven days = all possible days. example: five days, a million days, etc

- use quotes from the symbolism page

- proves that Genesis is not literal

- mention this but do not explain and instead explain in the next chapter called "Historicity of the Old Testament"?

"Historicity of the Old Testament"

- what is historical and what is not?

- talk about how to the ancient Israelite's myths were real and the value was not found in the literal truthfulness and instead it was found in the spiritual truthfulness

- example: Jesus's genealogy as recorded in Matthew and Luke. Difference is key. Go over the reason for the difference and the relation with 42 again. This demonstrates that the authors were literally making the genealogy up and that they did not intend it to be literally valuable but instead theologically valuable.

- more NT examples: differences in the birth narrative, find more

- OT examples: 7 in Genesis. David? Solomon? Not sure.

Sexuality

- Porneia = unfaithfulness. then unfaithfulness is highly detestable sin in general. Or general immorality?

- Best case against sex before marriage, etc

- Paul was for asceticism

- This would mean that eating enjoyable foods, being fat, going on vacations, spending money on anything you do not actually need, having sex with your spouse for pleasure and so forth would be wrong on the basis of going against ascetic ideals

- Quote "Those with wives should live as if they have none"

- Contradicts Paul talking about how your spouse controls your body

- If both are in the same letter mention how it is likely a combination of multiple letters? (look up)

- "Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." (Matthew 18:18)

- Refers to making the Law more and less restrictive

- Thus you cannot use the Law as a basis for restricting sexuality

- As long as something does not violate loving God and loving your neighbor then it is fine

- About pornography

- Adam and Eve were naked in the Garden of Eden

- Nothing sinful about looking at naked people

- Talk about euphemisms and slang

- Use "bean counter" as an example that means an executive at a company who is constantly trying to maximize short term profits to the detriment of all else.

- Come up with an example using bean counter in it

- "I'm telling you man the bean counters at work are going to ruin everything so that we'll be out of a job."

- You can take bean counters in this example literally or you can take them figuratively

- If you try to see it literally then you assume the speaker is working at some kind of bean processing company and there are some bean counting machines that are in the process of breaking down and that due to their complexity they cannot be fixed so that once they break the speaker and whoever he is speaking to will be out of a job.

- On the other hand if you see it figuratively then you take the correct understanding that bean counters refers to executives trying to maximize short term profits so that the speaker is talking about being laid off by the company in an effort to boost short term profits

- Another example is "tool"

- Transgenderism

- Men wore tunics, togas or robes in the first century AD

- We would call tunics a short dress while calling togas and robes gowns today

- The point here is that there is nothing that is objectively wrong for a man to wear

- 1 Kings 9:22

- Matthew 15:19

- Vice list that includes adultery and porneia

- If porneia's meaning was sexual immorality then including adultery would be redundant

- Porneia makes more sense as a catch all term for highly detestable sin in general so that sure the other sins in the list are porneia but not all porneia class sins are in the list so the inclusion of porneia includes them all

- Those who hold to what they believe the epistles say concerning sexuality while at the same time ignoring what the epistles say concerning women wearing head coverings or women speaking in church are hypocrites

- Where did the meaning of porneia or prostitution come from?

- Idea is that prostitutes are highly detestable and looked down upon

- For instance imagine if your daughter decided to become a prostitute or if you would be happy with your daughter being a prostitute then imagine what the average person would think.

- You can see this in the Gospels where the so-called Jews are shocked at Jesus even speaking to prostitutes

- So the point is that prostitutes are highly detestable

- Then because of this prostitution is a highly detestable action

- This would then be why the Old Testament, chiefly the Book of Ezekiel, refers to ancient Israel committing idolatry and chasing after foreign nations as being prostitution with ancient Israel being a prostitute

- The idea here is that what ancient Israel was doing was highly detestable in nature or rather like prostitution

- Then with respect to the New Testament the authors of the New Testament modeled their works after usage of porneia in the Septuagint

- Cite Jesus talking about divorce and porneia

- John 8:41

- "We of porneias not have been born; one Father we have God."

- "We of prostitution not have been born; one Father we have God.

- The nations were seen as highly detestable and unclean. As evidence of this see how the Hebrews react to foreigners in the Gospels. Hebrews were not supposed to even associate with those of the nations.

- Therefore the idea here is that the so-called Jews are saying that they have not been born from what is highly detestable, the nations, and instead that they have been born of God.

- If you want to dispute this then the author of John would have used the word for adultery instead.

- See Hebrews 12:8 where "illegitimate children" is used correctly and is translated from nothoi (νόθοι) instead .

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexuality_in_ancient_Rome

- Need to look into sex positions more

- One person said woman on top was popular? Evidence?

- https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexuality_in_ancient_Rome#Mulier_equitans

- Ancient Greeks did not have sex with the woman on top? (need to confirm) Then since Paul was a Greek and not Roman this would mean he would have the same standard and see the woman on top as dominant

- Cite Leviticus not talking about woman having sex with women and only men having sex with men

- Debauchery might refer to the practice of Roman men having sex with prostitutes and slaves while married because this was not considered adultery in Rome?

- About the meaning of porneia

- With respect to the Gospel of Matthew passage on porneia and divorce

- Porneia meaning adultery does not make any sense

- This is because Jesus is responding to the question if divorce for any reason is allowed

- The idea here is that it is nonsensical to say that it is acceptable to divorce your spouse for adultery but unacceptable to divorce them for committing serious crimes, blasphemy, domestic abuse, gross negligence of marital duties, and so forth.

- If you want to dispute this then you are saying that Jesus is saying that those who divorce their serial killer spouse who has denounced their former faith and marry another are committing adultery while those who divorce their spouse for getting sexually taken advantage of while drunk and marry another have done nothing wrong.

- In other words the only way what Jesus says makes any sense is if porneia refers to highly detestable sin in general, which would include adultery, rather than just sex outside of marriage alone

- Need to make sure I talk about how Paul wrote how we do not need to follow the Law and that all you need is faith

- Having it be immoral to show female nipples but not male nipples is hypocritical. Need to include int he section on pornography. What about foot fetishes? Or any other fetishes?

- Porneia = unfaithfulness in the context of being unfaithful to God through some kind of highly detestable sin or unbelief

- Need to reread my porneia comment in the commentary

- Making yourself unclean and disgusting for material gain

- Prostitute = disgusting, unclean

- Homosexuality

- Paul's reference to "male bedders"

- Makes the most sense to say that Paul is talking about men who are having penetrative sex with other men by being the penetrator

- Then the reason why Paul said this was bad was probably because the most available form of homosexual sex while being the penetrator was with male slaves (yours or a friend's)

- Obviously a slave did not have a choice and given the extreme stigma around being penetrated or on the bottom as a man the slave owner would be emasculating their slave

- Thus the idea here is that by being a "male bedder" with their slaves a man is not loving their neighbor as themselves

- Galatians 5:14

- How prostitution or porneia came to refer to unfaithfulness with respect to highly detestable sin

- Prostitutes were seen as dirty and unclean in the sense that no one would want to marry a well used woman who has had sex with many people

- The idea here is that a a prostitute is highly detestable

- Then because of this fact engaging in prostitution was highly detestable such that everyone else look down upon prostitutes (see Gospels for evidence)

- Therefore when the New Testament authors call a class of people prostitutes or call an act prostitution they are saying that the people or the act are highly detestable in nature just like how an actual prostitute is detestable in nature

- Porneia cannot mean sexual immorality on the basis that most people having sex before marriage are engaging in prostitution because prostitution was never a sin in the Old Testament

- Porneia

- Woman on top being popular in Rome would be what Paul is talking about by saying their women are having unnatural desires

- Paul might not like male bedders because he saw them as dishonoring those they were having sex with

- Porneia = prostitution = something disgusting

Marriage and Divorce

- Need to talk about if it is ok to marry someone who is divorced or not

- Does Jesus say divorce is wrong in the context of divorcing and marrying another because by marrying another after getting divorced you demonstrate that you got divorced to get a more attractive spouse rather than for a real reason?

- "It has also been said, 'Whoever divorces his wife must give her a certificate of divorce.' But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, brings adultery upon her. And he who marries a divorced woman commits adultery." (Matthew 5:31-32)

- Jeremiah 3:8

- God divorces Israel and sent her away

- Clearly God approves of divorce

- The lost tribes of Israel are never brought back

- Hosea 2:2

- The school of Shammai taught that the justification for divorce must be very serious, like adultery or an egregious offense against the Mosaic law.

- Hillel's school, in contrast, held that a husband could divorce his wife for anything that caused him shame or offense.

Slavery

- talk about working conditions in the developing world

- dorms with bunk beds where workers work, anti-suicide nets, 12+ hour shifts 6 days a week, etc

Matthew 24 commentary

- beginning of the 2nd Kingdom of God

- Revelation 12:10

Merchants in the Temple

- Parable of the slave owner giving some of his slaves food for free to feed his other slaves while he is away

- The slaves given the food turn around and seek to benefit from the gift by selling the food to others

- As a result some of the slaves who cannot afford to buy the food starve to death

- What will the slave owner do when he returns?

- Jesus says not to take a coin pouch in the context of a worker is worthy of his wages

Something about politics and how politics is most people's primary belief system?

- Ezekiel, prostitution, Egypt, etc

"It is Finished"

- I have said what I needed to say

- It is up to the world to heed the words of this book

- I may write a second edition but for now this is all there is

"Why Only God is Good"

- No objective morality

- Multiple competing viewpoints

- Two competing viewpoints can be right and wrong at the same time

- Rabbit vs fox

- This all results from the natural limitations of our world

- Can only make one side happy because both sides are opposed

- Only God can overcome these limitations so that both sides can be happy without being opposed

- This works through God creating something out of nothing

"Original Sin is Wrong"

- Need to look this up and think about it more

- All sins are not equal

- Authors of the New Testament use porneia along with say adultery in the same sentence to show that adultery is porneia

- Lesser sins are not deserving eternal condemnation while porneia is?

Idolatry

- How looking towards anything except for God is idolatry

- This would include governments, politicians, technology and more

Idolatry

- Supposed relics are idolatry

- The supposed shroud of Turin is an idol

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Woes_of_the_Pharisees

"Merger of Two Gods???"

- El and Yahweh???

Look into the Greek words translated as "sin"

- Multiple words?

- What is their true meaning?

- Chapter called "What is Sin?"

"Why Does Belief Matter?"

- Why does God care if you believe or not?

Meaning of turning the other cheek?

- Jesus also says to treat a fellow Christian as an unbeliever if they sin against you and refuse to change

- Is this really more about seeking retribution rather than compensation or an end to hostilities?

What does neighbor mean in loving your neighbor as yourself?

- look up meaning of the Greek and Hebrew words for "neighbor" in the love your neighbor as yourself verses

- Nearest people first?

- Story of Jesus and the foreign woman and how He refused to help her at first and called her a dog

- Jesus also says to treat a fellow Christian as an unbeliever if they sin against you and refuse to change

- "do not cast your pearls before swine"

Genesis

- Compare God actually creating the earth 6,000 years ago even though it appeals billions of years old to an author writing a book. The idea here is that when an author writes a book they do not start at the very beginning of the world in their novel and instead they almost always start long after. Then for a fantasy book that is set in an alternative world if the author provides an explanation for how the world was created through one of their characters explaining it then it will almost certainly be mythical in nature.

"How Scripture Works"

- Romans 10:5-7 cites Deuteronomy 30:12-13

- Makes no sense and really there is no way the citation works without the most liberal interpretation possible

"Forgiveness"

- Jesus says we should always forgive our brother

- At the same time Jesus says to treat those who sin against you with their sin confirmed by others as apostates

- Does this mean that always forgiving your brother who sins against you refers to something minor while treating your brother as apostate in the case of sin refers to something major?

- https://biblehub.com/greek/863.htm

- let go, send away, release (discharge)

- Need to look into the meaning of the Greek word that is translated as forgive

- Jesus gives the parable of the 10,000 talents. Does this mean that forgiving your brother 77 times relates to your brother never paying you back?

- Jesus also says divorce is fine in the case of porneia. Does this then mean that you do not have to pretend things never happened when you forgive someone?

- I would say the Greek word means something along the lines of to "let go" or "send away" instead of forgive. I also think it refers to releasing someone of monetary compensation for something they have done to you. For example according to the OT you are supposed to compensate someone when you injure them. Thus the idea here is that if someone injures you so that you are entitled to compensation if the person cannot pay then you are to "let go" of the debt or "send away" the person.

- Thus the Greek word refers to releasing or letting go or sending away someone of monetary damages. This is why Jesus uses the parable of 10,000 talents. The idea here is that when we sin against God we owe God a sum of money for damages. However God has let go of our debt. Therefore because God has let go of our debt we need to let go of the debts that others owe us.

- Therefore the word refers to not wanting to seek retribution or damages

- Then because of this fact I do not think "let go" refers to cases of porneia and instead it refers to not seeking damages from those who do wrong to you

- The purpose of this is that mistakes happen so if you do not forgive others of their mistakes then God will not forgive you of your mistakes

- The Koine Greek word for forgiveness is συγχωρώ (suṅkhṓ)

- https://en.wiktionary.org/wiki/%CF%83%CF%85%CE%B3%CF%87%CF%89%CF%81%CF%8E

- https://www.wordhippo.com/what-is/the-meaning-of/greek-word-5db594156d2bee3ed3144272c5dcca7dda8a572f5.html

- On the other hand the word translated as forgive is aphiēmi (ἀφίημι) in the NT

- Asking God not to hold the sins of those who sin against you against them. See Stephen in Acts

"What is Sin?"

- Talk about what sin is

- Define the words translated as sin

- Transgression

- https://biblehub.com/greek/266.htm

????

- Gospel of Thomas is not authentic because is says the Kingdom of God is a state of being rather than something that will come

- Also lacks the Olivet Discourse

- Therefore it is a second century AD work

Every time someone sells a book for a profit they choose to worship money over God

7 – Closing

- My first book that I have written